

PRESENTED

V
11/ Kane



1
MS. 111

GOVERNMENT ORIENTAL SEIRES

Class B, No. 6



GOVERNMENT ORIENTAL SERIES

Class B, No. 6

PREPARED UNDER THE SUPERVISION OF
THE PUBLICATION DEPARTMENT OF
THE BHANDARKAR ORIENTAL
RESEARCH INSTITUTE,
POONA



POONA
Bhandarkar Oriental Research Institute

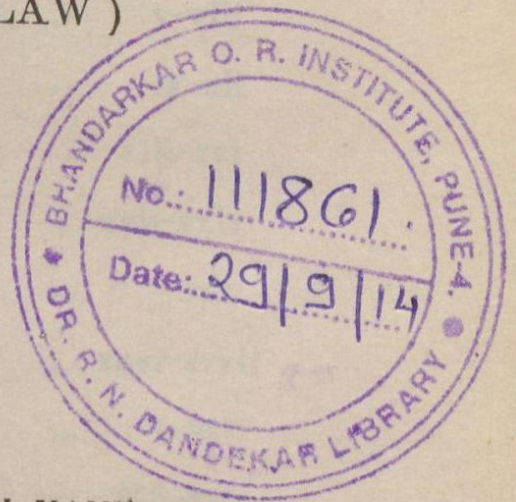
1973



Government Oriental Series Class X, No. 6

HISTORY OF DHARMAŚĀSTRA

(ANCIENT AND MEDIÆVAL
RELIGIOUS AND CIVIL LAW)



By

the late **Dr. PANDURANG VAMAN KANE**

National Professor of Indology

Vol. IV

Second Edition

Bhandarkar Oriental Research Institute, Poona

1973



Copies can be had direct from the
Bhandarkar Oriental Research Institute, Poona 4 (India)
Price Rs. 80-00 per copy exclusive of postage

Volume IV
Second Edition
1973

Printed by photo offset process by
Shri S. P. Barve, Proprietor Parashuram Process ;
16A, Shivajinagar, Poona 5

and Published by
Dr. R. N. Dandekar, M.A., Ph.D., Secretary,
Bhandarkar Oriental Research Institute, Poona 4.



TABLE OF CONTENTS

	Page
Preface	i—iv
List of Abbreviations	v—viii
Chronological Table	ix—xii
Brief Synopsis of the contents	xiii—xvi
List of works consulted	xvii—xxiv
Index of Law cases	xxv
Additions and Corrections	xxvi—xxxii
History of Dharmaśāstra, vol. IV	1—827
Appendix containing long passages in Sanskrit	828—833
General Index	835—922
Index of technical or important Sanskrit words	923—926

The fourth Volume of Professor KANE'S *History of Dharmaśāstra* had been out of print for the last many months; but, owing to the tight publication programme of the Institute, we were constrained to hold in abeyance, very reluctantly, the re-issue of that Volume. It is, therefore, indeed gratifying that it has now become possible for us to publish a photostat reprint of that Volume and thereby to meet, albeit partially, the pressing demands for the Volumes of that *magnum opus*.

Shri S. P. Barve of the Parashuram Process of Poona has taken personal interest in the reproduction of the Volume by photo offset process and has accomplished his job with great care and expeditiousness. Our best thanks are due to him.

It may be added that the printing of the second part of the first Volume (revised and enlarged edition) and the reprinting of the second Volume of the *History of Dharmaśāstra* are now in progress. It is thus hoped that the reprint of the various Volumes of this work will soon become available to the public. Till then, we crave its indulgence.

Bhandarkar O. R.
Institute, Poona
October 6, 1973

R. N. Dandekar



PREFACE TO FIRST EDITION

The third volume of the History of Dharmaśāstra was published in October 1946. In the brief preface to that volume I intimated that the remaining topics of Dharmaśāstra would be dealt with in one volume. But as I proceeded with the task I found that that was a miscalculation. To present in one volume all the topics that remained in the manner and on the scale that I had adopted in the first three volumes was found to be impossible. Besides, as my age advanced, I could not maintain the same speed and finish the whole history in a few years as I intimated I would do in the preface to the third volume. Therefore, I had to decide, however reluctantly, to spread the remaining work over two volumes. Owing to the scarcity of paper and paucity of skilled workers, this volume has been in the press for more than three years. This volume deals with eight topics, viz. Pāṭaka, Prāyaścitta, Karmavipāka, Antyeṣṭi, Āśauca, Śuddhi, Śrāddha and Tirthayātrā. These subjects are of great interest to anthropologists. There was great temptation for me, when dealing with these topics, to indulge in dwelling upon similar beliefs, usages and rites described in such works as Frazer's 'Golden Bough.' For two reasons, however, I have rarely succumbed to this temptation. In the first place, there was the fear of increasing the bulk of the work which has already assumed enormous proportions. In the second place, dwelling on comparisons of ancient and medieval Indian usages and rites with similar usages and rites found elsewhere is liable to serious misunderstanding. Frazer's volumes are largely made up of materials concerning the beliefs, usages and rites of very primitive people. It appeared to me that readers of such comparisons might be led to think that people in ancient and medieval India were at a primitive stage of culture, while as a matter of fact they had a very high culture in most matters, although they retained certain beliefs and usages derived from remote antiquity. Many cultured societies retain some usages that belong to periods of antiquity. The queen in France was not to leave for a whole year the room in which the death of her consort was announced to her. Wretched old women deemed to be witches were prosecuted and sentenced to death in England up to the beginning



of the eighteenth century, while Manu (IX. 290) more than two thousand years ago prescribed the mild punishment of a fine of two hundred *paṇas* for all incantations intended to destroy life, for magic rites and for raising ghosts and goblins. My main aim has throughout been to discover, collect, classify and interpret the facts of the various departments of Dharmaśāstra and my endeavour has been, as far as in me lies, to present the truth with detachment and intellectual integrity and without bias (except what might have been unconsciously engendered in my mind owing to my being born and brought up in a brāhmaṇa family) to show the continuity, the developments and transformations in Indian beliefs, rites and usages throughout the ages and, while bringing the past in its causal relations with the present, to indicate and suggest future trends and changes in these matters.

The fifth and last volume will mainly deal with the following subjects: *vratas* and *utsavas*; *sānti* rites; *kāla* and *muhūrta*; *paurāṇa-dharma*; the influence of the *Pūrvamīmāṃsā* and other *śāstras* on *dharmaśāstra*; the cosmological, religious and philosophical background of *dharmaśāstra*; the fundamental aspects of our culture through the ages; the impact of modern social and other ideas and trends on the dogmas and ideals of *dharmaśāstra* and the future of the latter. This by itself is rather an ambitious programme. Now that I am over seventy-three years of age and suffering from several ailments I have misgivings whether I would be able to write this last volume and publish it while all mental and physical faculties are sound. I am myself extremely anxious to write this last volume as early as possible and bring to a conclusion an undertaking to which I have devoted all my leisure for over thirty years regardless of monetary losses and bodily ailments. With that object in view I have given up either entirely or very largely most of my other activities and engagements and have thereby offended many of my friends.

This volume also is full of quotations, references to inscriptions and judicial decisions. The reasons for this have

† Prof. J. B. Bury, a distinguished Professor of History in the Cambridge University, thought that freedom from bias was not possible and was not also desirable, since a man writing history completely free from bias would produce a colourless and dull work. Vide 'Selected Essays' (edited by Harold Temperley, 1930) p. 70.

been stated at length in the preface to the second volume and therefore they need not be repeated here. The list of additions to this volume is much larger than in the preceding volumes. I may be pardoned for frankly stating the reason. The first and second volumes of the History of Dharmaśāstra were published so far back as 1930 and 1941 respectively. No second edition of these has yet been called. It seems to me quite possible that during my life-time no second edition of the volumes of the History, or at least of this volume, might appear. Therefore, I tried to incorporate by way of additions such information as had escaped me while the work was being written in order to make it as complete as possible.

I now discharge the pleasant duty of acknowledging my obligations to others. Bloomfield's Vedic Concordance, the Vedic Index of Professors Macdonell and Keith, and the volumes of the Sacred Books of the East have been very useful in preparing this volume as in the case of its predecessors. Paramahansa Swāmī Kevalānanda Sarasvatī of Wai has been a tower of strength in all matters of doubt and difficulty and has helped me by offering prompt guidance in solving some intricate problems. I am highly obliged to Mr. S. N. Savadi of the Bhandarkar Oriental Institute, Poona, for help in the correction of proofs and to Mr. P. M. Purandare, Advocate (O. S.), Bombay High Court, and Tarkatīrtha Raghunath Shāstri Kokje of Lonavla for reading the printed sheets as they came and making valuable suggestions.

It is difficult to name all those who in various ways, during the progress of this volume for over six years, kindly rendered assistance, but I should like to make special mention of Prof. K. V. Rangaswami Aiyangar, Mr. A. N. Krishna Aiyangar, Dr. A. S. Altekar, Dr. S. K. Belvalkar, Prof. G. H. Bhatt, Mr. Bhabatosh Bhattacharya, Mr. N. G. Chapekar, Dr. R. N. Dandekar, Mr. D. B. Diskalkar, Dr. G. S. Gai, Prof. P. K. Gode, Tarka-tīrtha Lakṣmanāshāstri Joshi, Mr. G. H. Khare, Pandit Balacharya Khuperkar, Dr. Umesha Mishra, Dr. V. Raghavan, Prof. L. Renou, Prof. H. D. Velankar. Thanks are due to these scholars and many others for help and interest in this volume. I am conscious that in spite of so much help and generous encouragement from friends there are in this volume several mistakes, the sole responsibility for which rests on my shoulders. In a work replete with thousands of quotations and references

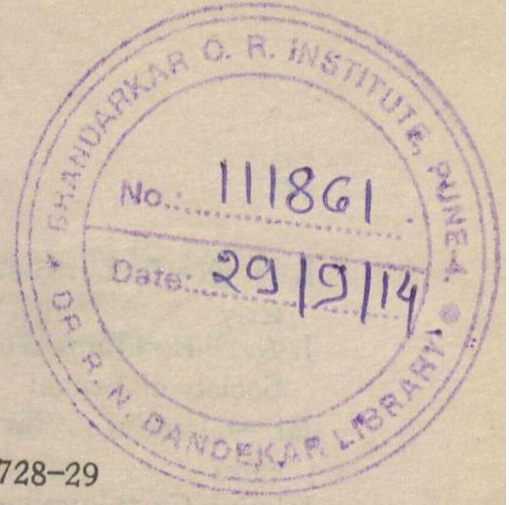
it is quite likely that many slips have escaped my attention. § For these and for the elision of a few diacritical marks and the displacement of parts of Sanskrit letters in the process of printing the indulgence and forgiveness of all readers are sought. I sincerely thank the Manager of the Aryabhushan Press Poona, for carrying out the work of printing this volume with care in spite of difficulties caused by paper and labour shortage.

BOMBAY, }
10-10-1953 }

P. V. KANE

§ I take this opportunity of correcting two mistakes that I regret I committed in the third volume of the History of Dharmaśāstra. In note 1886 on p. 968 (of vol. III) I refer to a work of Mr. Batuknath Bhattacharya that contains a full treatment of *Kalivarjya*. I suggested in that note that Mr. Bhattacharya probably retouched his thesis after 1937 though it was written in 1933, in view of the fact that he referred to the *Smṛtimuktāphala* (which was published in 1937 by Mr. Gharpure). Through oversight I forgot that Mr. Bhattacharya had expressly stated that he used the transcript of a ms. of the *Smṛtimuktāphala* specially made for him. Therefore, I was wrong in my surmise that he probably retouched his thesis and I must say that the thesis as published in 1943 is the same as that written in 1933 for the Jogendrachandra Ghose Research Prize. The second mistake refers to Dr. U. N. Ghosal on p. 32 (of vol. III). I stated 'it is not possible to hold as Jayaswal, U. Ghosal and others do that the theory of social contract was the earlier one and the theory of divine right of kings was later on propounded by the Manusmṛti to support the brāhmaṇa empire of Puṣyamitra'. In writing this sentence my memory was at fault. I find that Dr. Ghosal does not hold the view that I attributed to him. In the 'Indian Historical Quarterly' (vol. 23, pp. 68-70) Dr. Ghosal justly protests against my bracketing him with Jayaswal, but I cannot help observing that the last sentence in the paper shows unexpected acerbity. In his whole career as a writer Dr. Ghosal was not probably guilty of a single slip and could not therefore bring himself to believe that my mistake might have been *bona fide*.





ABBREVIATIONS

(Most of the abbreviations on pp. 728-29
are not included in this list)

- A. G. = Ancient Geography of India
 Ain. A. = Ain-i-Akbari of Abul Fazal
 Ait. Br. = Aitareya Brāhmaṇa
 A. I. R. = All India Reporter
 A. K. D. = Antyakarmadīpaka
 All. = Indian Law Reports, Allahabad series
 Anu. = Anuśāsanaparva
 Āp. = Āpastamba
 Āp. Dh. or Āp. Dh. S. = Āpastambadharma-sūtra
 Āp. Gr. = Āpastamba-gr̥hya-sūtra
 Āp. M. P. = Āpastamba-mantrapāṭha
 Āp. Śr. or Āp. Śr. S. or Āp. Ś. S. = Āpastamba-śrauta-sūtra
 A. S. R. = Archaeological Survey Reports
 Āśv. gr. or Āśv. gr. S. = Āśvalāyana-gr̥hyasūtra
 Āśv. Śr. S. or Āśv. Śr. = Āśvalāyana-śrauta-sūtra
 A. V. = Atharvaveda
 Baud. = Baudhāyana
 Baud. Dh. S. = Baudhāyanadharma-sūtra
 Baud. Gr. = Baudhāyana-gr̥hya-sūtra
 Baud. P. S. = Baudhāyana-pitr̥-medha-sūtra
 Baud. Śr. = Baudhāyana-śrauta-sūtra
 Beng. L. R. = Bengal Law Reports
 Bom. G. = Bombay Gazetteer Volumes
 B. I. = Bibliotheca Indica series
 Bom. = Indian Law Reports, Bombay series
 Bom. L. R. = Bombay Law Reporter
 Br. Up. = Brhadāranyakopaniṣad
 B. R. W. W. = Buddhist Records of the Western World by Beal
 Cal. = Indian Law Reports, Calcutta series
 C. I. I. = Corpus Inscriptionum Indicarum
 Chān. Up. = Chāndogyopaniṣad
 C. L. J. = Calcutta Law Journal
 C. W. N. = Calcutta Weekly Notes
 Dh. or Dh. S. = Dharma-sūtra
 ed. = edited
 E. I. = Epigraphia Indica
 Gaut. or Gaut. Dh. S. = Gautamadharmasūtra
 Gobhila Gr. = Gobhila-gr̥hya-sūtra
 G. O. S. = Gaikwad Oriental series
 G. P. S. = Gautama-pitr̥medhasūtra
 Gr. R. = Gr̥hastharatnākara
 H. of D. or H. of Dh. = History of Dharmasāstra
 Hir. Gr. or Hir. gr̥ = Hiranyakeśi-gr̥hya-sūtra
 Hir. P. S. = Hiranyakeśi-pitr̥-medha-sūtra
 I. A. = Indian Antiquary or Law Reports, Indian Appeals (according to context)
 I. L. R. = Indian Law Reports series



- I. H. Q. = Indian Historical Quarterly
 J. A. S. B. = Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal
 Jai. = Jaimini's Pūrvamīmāṃsā-sūtra
 Jaimini Gr. = Jaimini-gr̥hya-sūtra
 JBBRAS = Journal of the Bombay Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society
 Jiv. = Jivananda Vidyāsagara's edition
 J. O. R. = Journal of Oriental Research (Madras)
 J. R. A. S. = Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain
 Kāt. = Kātyāyana
 Kāt. Śr. or Kāt. Śr. S. = Kātyāyanaśrautasūtra
 Kāṭhaka Gr. = Kāṭhaka-gr̥hya-sūtra
 Kātyāyana = Kātyāyana-smṛtisāroddhāra (ed. by me)
 Kauś. or Kauśika = Kauśikasūtra
 Kauś. Up. = Kauśitaki Upaniṣad
 Khādīra Gr. = Khādīra-gr̥hya-sūtra
 m. = mentioned
 Mārka. = Mārkaṇḍeyapurāṇa
 Mit. = Mitākṣarā, commentary on Yājñavalkya
 M. S. = Maitrāyaṇī-saṃhitā
 Nir. = Nirukta
 Nirn. = Nirṇayasāgara Press ed.
 Pāṇ. = Pāṇini's Aṣṭādhyāyī
 Pār. gr. = Pāraskara-gr̥hya-sūtra
 Par. M. = Parāśara-Mādhaviya
 Pr. M. = Prāyaścitta-mayūkha
 Pr. Pr. or Pr. Prakāśa = Prāyaścitta-prakāśa
 Pr. Prakaraṇa = Prāyaścitta-prakaraṇa
 Pr. S. or Pr. sara = Prāyaścittasāra
 Pr. T. or Pr. Tattva = Prāyaścittatattva
 Pr. V. or Pr. Vi. = Prāyaścittaviveka
 q = quoted
 Q. B. D. = Queen's Bench Division
 Rg. = Rgveda
 Sāma. Br. = Sāmavidhāna Brāhmaṇa
 Śān. Br. = Śāṅkhāyana Brāhmaṇa
 Śān. gr. = Śāṅkhāyana-gr̥hya-sūtra
 Śān. Śr. or Śān. Śr. S. = Śāṅkhāyanaśrauta-sūtra
 Śat. Br. = Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa
 Sat. Śr. = Satyāśadhaśrauta-sūtra
 S. B. E. = Sacred Books of the East (ed. by Maxmuller)
 S. K. = Śuddhikaumudī
 S. K. L. = Śrāddhakalpalatā
 Sm. C. or Smr. C. = Smṛticandrikā
 Smr. M. = Smṛtimuktāphala
 Śr. P. or Śr. Pr. = Śrāddhaprakāśa
 Śr. K. K. = Śrāddhakriyākaumudī
 S. V. = Sāmaveda
 Tai. Ā. or Tai. Ār. = Taittirīya Āraṇyaka
 Tai. Br. = Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa
 Tai. S. = Taittirīya Saṃhitā
 Tai. Up. = Taittirīya-upaniṣad
 Tāṇḍya Br. = Tāṇḍyamahābrāhmaṇa
 Tir. C. = Tīrthacintāmaṇi
 Tir. K. = Tīrthakalpataru
 Tīrthapr. or Tir. Pr. = Tīrthaprakāśa
 Tri. S. = Tristhalīsetu
 T. S. = Tīrthasāra
 Up. = Upaniṣad
 Vaik. Smārta or Vaik. Sm. S. = Vaikhāṇasa-smārta-sūtra
 Vaik. Śr. or Vaik. Śr. S. = Vaikhāṇasaśrauta-sūtra
 Vāj. S. = Vājasaneyasaṃhitā
 Vas. = Vasiṣṭha-dharma-sūtra

Viṣṇu Dh. or Viṣṇu Dh. S. = Viṣṇudharmasūtra	तीर्थकल्प. = कल्पतरु on तीर्थ (G. O. S.)
Vy. M. = Vyavahāramayūkha	ती. प्र. or तीर्थप्र. = तीर्थप्रकाश
Yāj. = Yājñavalkya-smṛti	ती. चि. or तीर्थचि. = तीर्थचिन्तामणि of वाचस्पति
अ. क. दी. = अन्त्यकर्मदीपक	तै. आ. = तैत्तिरीयारण्यक
अग्नि. or अग्निपु. = अग्निपुराण	तै. उप. = तैत्तिरीयोपनिषद्
अथर्व. = अथर्ववेद	तै. ब्रा. = तैत्तिरीयब्राह्मण
अनु. = अनुशासनपर्व	तै. सं. = तैत्तिरीयसंहिता
अन्येष्टिप. = अन्येष्टिपद्धति of नारायण	त्रि. से. सा. स. = त्रिस्थलीसेतुसारसङ्ग्रह of भट्टोजि
आ. गृ. परि. = आपस्तम्बगृह्यपरिशिष्ट	त्रिस्थली = त्रिस्थलीसेतु of नारायणभट्ट
आप. = आपस्तम्बधर्मसूत्र	निर्णय० or नि. सि. = निर्णयसिन्धु
आप. गृ. = आपस्तम्बगृह्यसूत्र	पद्म. or पद्मपु. = पद्मपुराण
आप. ध. or आप. ध. सू. = आपस्तम्बधर्मसूत्र	परा. मा. = पराशरमाधवीय
आप. म. पा. = आपस्तम्बमन्त्रपाठ	पा. = पाणिनि's अष्टाध्यायी
आप. श्रौ. or आ. श्रौ. = आपस्तम्बश्रौतसूत्र	पार. गृ. = पारस्करगृह्यसूत्र
आश्व. गृ. परि. = आश्वलायनगृह्यपरिशिष्ट	पृथ्वी० or पृथ्वीच० or पृथ्वीचन्द्र. = पृथ्वी- चन्द्रोदय
आश्व. गृ. or आश्व. गृ. सू. = आश्वलायनगृह्य- सूत्र	प्राय. तत्त्व = प्रायश्चित्ततत्त्व
आश्व. श्रौ. or आश्व. श्रौ. सू. = आश्वलायन- श्रौतसूत्र	प्राय. प्रकरण or प्राय. प्रक. = प्रायश्चित्तप्रकरण
ऋ. = ऋग्वेद	प्रा. प्रकाश = प्रायश्चित्तप्रकाश
ऐ. आ. = ऐतरेय-आरण्यक	प्राय. वि. or प्रा. वि. or प्राय. वि. = प्राय- श्चित्तविवेक
ऐ. ब्रा. = ऐतरेयब्राह्मण	प्राय. म. = प्रायश्चित्तमयूख
क. उप. or कठ. or कठोप. = कठोपनिषद्	प्राय. सा. or प्राय. सार = प्रायश्चित्तसार
कल्प० = कृत्यकल्पतरु or कल्पतरु of लक्ष्मीधर	बृह. उ. = बृहदारण्यकोपनिषद्
कात्या. = कात्यायनस्मृतिसारोद्धार	बृ. सं. = बृहत्संहिता of वराहमिहिर
का. श्रौ. सू. or कात्या. श्रौ. or कात्या. श्रौ. सू. = कात्यायनश्रौतसूत्र	बौ. गृ. = बौधायनगृह्यसूत्र
कौ. ब्रा. उप. or कौषीतकि-ब्रा. उप. = कौषीतकिब्राह्मणोपनिषद्	बौ. ध. सू. = बौधायनधर्मसूत्र
गङ्गाभक्ति. or गङ्गाभ. = गङ्गाभक्तितरङ्गिणी	बौ. श्रौ. = बौधायनश्रौतसूत्र
गङ्गावाक्या. or गङ्गावा. = गङ्गावाक्यावलि	ब्रह्मपु. = ब्रह्मपुराण
गरुड or गरुडपु. = गरुडपुराण	भवि. पु. or भविष्यपु. = भविष्यपुराण
गृह. र. = गृहस्थरत्नाकर	मत्स्य. = मत्स्यपुराण
गौ. or गौ. ध. सू. = गौतमधर्मसूत्र	मद. पा. = मदनपारिजात
गौ. पि. सू. = गौतमपितृमेधसूत्र	मनु = मनुस्मृति
चतुर्विंशति. or चतुर्विंश. or चतु. सं. = चतु- विंशतिमतसंग्रह	महार्णव = महार्णवकर्मविपाक (ms.)
चतुर्वर्ग. = चतुर्वर्गचिन्तामणि of हेमाद्रि	मानवगृ. = मानवगृह्यसूत्र
छा. उप. or छां. उप. or छान्दोग्योप. = छान्दोग्योपनिषद्	मिता. = मिताक्षरा
ताण्ड्य. = ताण्ड्यमहाब्राह्मण	मेधा. = मेधातिथि, commentator of मनु
	मै. सं. = मैत्रायणीसंहिता
	या. or याज्ञ. = याज्ञवल्क्यस्मृति
	राजत. = राजतरङ्गिणी of कल्हण

वाज. सं. = वाजसनेयसंहिता	शान्ति. = शान्तिपर्व
वायु. or वायुपु. = वायुपुराण	शु. कौ. or शुद्धिकौ. = शुद्धिकौमुदी
विष्णुपु. = विष्णुपुराण	शुद्धिकल्प. = कल्पतरु on शुद्धि
वि. र. = विवादरत्नाकर	शुद्धिप्र. or शु. प्र. = शुद्धिप्रकाश
विष्णु. or विष्णुध. सू. = विष्णुधर्मसूत्र	श्रा. क. ल. = श्राद्धकल्पलता
वृद्धया. = वृद्धयाज्ञवल्क्य	श्रा. क्रि. कौ. = श्राद्धक्रियाकौमुदी
वे. सू. = वेदान्तसूत्र	श्राद्धप्र. or श्रा. प्र. = श्राद्धप्रकाश
व्यव. नि. = व्यवहारनिर्णय	सत्या. श्रौ. = सत्याषाढश्रौतसूत्र
व्य. म. = व्यवहारमयूख	साम. ब्रा. = सामविधानब्राह्मण
शत. ब्रा. or शतपथ or शतपथब्रा. = शतपथ- ब्राह्मण	स्कन्द. or स्कन्दपु. = स्कन्दपुराण
शातातप = शातातपस्मृति	स्मृतिच. = स्मृतिचन्द्रिका
शाङ्खायनब्रा. or शा. ब्रा. = शाङ्खायनब्राह्मण	स्मृतिमु. or स्मृ. मु. = स्मृतिमुक्ताफल
शां. श्रौ. or शां. श्रौ. सू. = शाङ्खायनश्रौतसूत्र	श्रा. वि. = श्राद्धविवेक of रुद्रधर
	हिर. गृ. or हिरण्य. गृ. = हिरण्यकेशिगृह्यसूत्र

CHRONOLOGICAL TABLE

OF

some important Sanskrit works and authors referred
to in volume IV

N. B.—Some dates, particularly of ancient works, are conjectural and disputed by several scholars. Most of the dates about authors from the 8th or 9th century refer to the probable periods of their literary activity except in the case of a few authors such as Śaṅkarācārya and Vidyāpati.

4000 B. C.—1000 B. C.—The period of the Vedic Saṁhitās, Brāhmaṇas and Upaniṣads. Some hymns of the R̥gveda, of the Atharvaveda, and in the Taittirīya Saṁhitā and Brāhmaṇa may possibly go back to a period earlier than 4000 B. C. and some of the Upaniṣads (even from among those that are regarded by most scholars as the earliest ones) may be later than 1000 B. C. Some scholars have criticized me for ascribing the vedic saṁhitās to such an early date as 4000 B. C. Time and health permitting, I may have to deal with this question in a separate work after I finish the 5th and last volume on which I am now engaged.

800 B. C.—500 B. C.—The Nirukta of Yāska

800 B. C.—400 B. C.—The principal śrautasūtras (of Āpastamba, Āśvalāyana, Baudhāyana, Kātyāyana, Satyāśādhā and others) and some of the gr̥hyasūtras (such as those of Āpastamba and Āśvalāyana)

600—300 B. C.—The Dharmasūtras of Gautama, Āpastamba, Baudhāyana, Vasiṣṭha and the Gr̥hyasūtras of Pāraskara and a few others.

600 B. C.—300 B. C.—Pāṇini

500 B. C.—200 B. C.—Jaimini's Pūrva-mīmāṃsā-sūtra

500 B. C.—200 B. C.—The Bhagavadgītā

300 B. C.—Vararuci Kātyāyana, author of Vārtikas on Pāṇini's sūtras

300 B. C.—100 A. D.—Arthaśāstra of Kauṭilya (rather nearer the former date than the latter)

150 B. C.—100 A. D. The Mahābhāṣya of Patañjali (probably nearer the former date than the latter)

200 B. C.—100 A. D.—Manusmṛti

H. D. ii



- 100 A. D.-300 A. D.—Yājñavalkyasmṛti
 100 A. D.-300 A. D.—Viṣṇudharmasūtra
 100 A. D.-400 A. D.—Nārada-smṛti
 200 A. D.-400 A. D.—Śabara's bhāṣya on Jaimini's Pūrva-mīmāṃsā-sūtra (rather nearer the former date)
 300 A. D.-500 A. D.—Bṛhaspati-smṛti on Vyavahāra and other topics (not yet found). Extracts on Vyavahāra were translated in S. B. E. vol. 33 and extracts on many topics of Dharma were collected by Prof. Rangasvami Aiyangar and published in Gaikwad Oriental series
 300 A. D.-600 A. D.—Some of the extant Purāṇas such as Vāyu, Viṣṇu, Mārkaṇḍeya, Matsya, Kūrma
 500 A. D.-550 A. D.—Varāhamihira, author of Pañca-siddhāntikā, Brhatsamhitā, Brhat-Jātaka and other works.
 600 A. D.-650 A. D.—Bāṇa, author of the Kādambarī and Harṣacarita
 650-665 A. D.—Kāśikā, commentary by Vāmana and Jayāditya on Pāṇini's Aṣṭādhyāyī
 650-700 A. D.—Kumārila-bhaṭṭa, author of Tantravārtika and other works.
 600 A. D.-900 A. D.—Most of the smṛtis such as those of Parāśara, Śaṅkha, Devala and some of the Purāṇas such as Agni, Garuḍa.
 788 A. D.-820 A. D.—Śaṅkarācārya, the great Advaita philosopher
 800 A. D.-850 A. D.—Viśvarūpa, the commentator of Yājñavalkya-smṛti
 825 A. D.-900 A. D.—Medhātithi, a commentator of Manusmṛti
 966 A. D.—Utpala composed his commentary on the Brhājātaka of Varāhamihira
 1000 A. D.-1050 A. D.—Dhāreśvara Bhoja, author of numerous works
 1080 A. D.-1100 A. D.—Vijñāneśvara, the author of the Mitākṣarā commentary on Yājñavalkya-smṛti
 1080 A. D.-1110 A. D. Govindarāja, a commentator of Manusmṛti
 1100-1130 A. D.—Lakṣmīdhara, the author of a vast digest on Dharmaśāstra called Kalpataru or Kṛtyakalpataru
 1100-1150 A. D.—Jīmūtavāhana, author of the Dāyabhāga, Kāla-viveka and Vyavahāramātrkā.
 1100-1150 A. D. Bhavadevabhaṭṭa, author of Prāyaścitta-prakarana and other works
 1110 A. D.-1130—A. D. Aparārka, Śilāhāra king, composed a commentary on Yājñavalkyasmṛti
 1127 A. D.-1138 A. D.—Mānasollāsa or Abhilāṣitārtha-cintāmaṇi of Someśvaradeva



- 1150 A.D.-1160 A.D.—Rājataranginī of Kalhana
- 1150 A.D.-1180 A.D.—Aniruddhabhaṭṭa, author of Hāralatā and Pitṛdayitā
- 1150 A.D.-1200 A.D.—Smṛtyarthasāra of Śrīdhara
- 1150 A.D.-1300 A.D.—Haradatta, commentator of the Dharmasūtras of Gautama and Āpastamba and some grhyasūtras
- 1200 A.D.-1225 A.D.—Smṛticandrikā of Devaṇṇabhaṭṭa
- 1150 A.D.-1300 A.D.—Kullūka, a commentator on Manusmṛti
- 1175 A.D.-1200 A.D.—Halāyudha, son of Dhanañjaya and author of Brāhmaṇasarvasva
- 1260 A.D.-1270 A.D.—Caturvargacintāmaṇi of Hemādri
- 1275 A.D.-1310 A.D.—Śrīdatta, author of Pitṛbhakti, Samaya-pradīpa and other works
- 1300 A.D.-1370 A.D.—Caṇḍeśvara, author of Gṛhastharatnākara, Vivādaratnākara, Kṛtyaratnākara and other works
- 1300 A.D.-1380 A.D.—Sāyana, compiler of bhāṣyas on Vedic Saṃhitās and Brāhmaṇas
- 1300 A.D.-1380 A.D.—Mādhavācārya, commentator of Parāśara-smṛti and other works and brother of Sāyana
- 1360 A.D.-1390 A.D.—Madanapārijāta and Mahārṇavaprakāśa compiled under king Madanapāla and his son
- 1360 A.D.-1448 A.D.—These are the dates of the birth and death of Vidyāpati, author of Gaṅgāvākyāvalī and other works. Vide Indian Antiquary vol. 14 pp 190-191 for an inscription which records in four eras the grant of the village Bisapī to Vidyapati by king Śivasimha, son of Devasimha (śake 1321, samvat 1455, La. Sam. 283 and san 807)
- 1375 A.D.-1440 A.D.—Śulapāṇi, author of Dīpakalikā, commentary on Yājñavalkya, Prāyaścitta-viveka, Durgotsavaviveka and other works.
- 1375-1500 A.D.—Prthvīcandra, son of Nāgamalla, author of a vast digest called Dharmatattvakalānidhi, divided into Prakāśas on śrāddha, vyavahāra and other topics.
- 1425-1450 A.D.—Madanaratna, an extensive digest compiled by king Madanasimbadeva
- 1425 A.D.-1460 A.D.—Rudradhara, author of Śuddhiviveka, Śrāddha-viveka and other works
- 1425-1490 A.D.—Vācaspati, author of Śuddhicintāmaṇi, Tīrthacintāmaṇi and numerous other works.
- 1450-1500 A.D.—Vardhamāna, author of Daṇḍaviveka, Gaṅgākṛtya-viveka and other works
- 1490 A.D.-1515 A.D.—Nṛsimhaprasāda of Dalapati, of which Śrāddha-sāra, Tīrthasāra, Prāyaścittasāra and several more are parts



- 1500 A.D.-1540 A. D.—Govindānanda, author of Śuddhikaumudī, Śrāddhakriyākaumudī and other works
- 1513-1580—Nārāyanabhaṭṭa, author of Prayogaratna, Antyeṣṭi-paddhati, Tristhalīsetu
- 1520-1575—Raghunandana, author of numerous works called Tattvas on Śrāddha, Tīrtha, Śuddhi, Prāyaścitta and other topics
- 1520-1589—Todarānanda compiled under the patronage of Todarmal and divided into Saukhyas on Śuddhi, Śrāddha, Tīrtha, Prāyaścitta, Karmavipāka and about 15 more topics
- 1590-1630 A.D.—Nandapandita, author of several works such as Vaijayanṭī (com. on Viṣṇudharmasūtra), Śrāddha-kalpalatā, Śuddhicandrikā, Dattakamīmāṃsā
- 1610-1640—Kamalakarabhaṭṭa, author of Nirṇayasindhu and over 20 works besides
- 1610-1640—Vīramitrodaya of Mitramiśra, of which Tīrthaparakāśa, Prāyaścittaparakāśa, Śrāddhaparakāśa are parts
- 1610-1645—Nilakanṭha, author of Bhagavantabhāskara in 12 Mayūkhas on Prāyaścitta, Śuddhi, Śrāddha and other topics
- 1700-1740—Smṛtimuktāphala of Vaidyanātha
- 1700-1750 A. D.—Nāgesa or Nāgojibhaṭṭa, author of about 30 works among which Tīrthendusekhara, Prāyaścittendusekhara, Śrāddhendusekhara were used in this volume
- 1790—Kāśinātha Upādhyāya, author of Dharmasindhu, composed it in śake 1712
- 1730-1820—Bālabhaṭṭa, author of a commentary on the Mitākṣarā, called Bālabhaṭṭī

BRIEF SYNOPSIS

OF THE

CONTENTS OF VOLUME IV

PAGES

Section I :—Pāṭaka. Prāyaścitta, Karmavipāka

Chapter I Sin in Rgveda, conception of *ṛta*, enumeration and classification of sins, grave sins and lesser lapses, doctrine of *karma* ... 1—40

Chapter II Means of reducing the consequences of sins, viz. confession, repentance, *prāṇāyāma*, *tapas*, *homa*, *japa* (muttering sacred texts), gifts, fasting, pilgrimages. ... 41—56

Chapter III Prāyaścitta (expiation), derivation of the word, origin and meaning; expiations and secular punishments; circumstances to be considered in prescribing expiations; *pariṣad* (assembly of learned men) and its duties. ... 57—86

Chapter IV Expiations for grave sins such as *brāhmaṇa* murder and for lesser sins; procedure followed; tonsure; substitutes for expiations ... 87—129

Chapter V Names and descriptions of all individual expiations. ... 130—152

Chapter VI Consequences of not undergoing expiations; historical account of the ideas of Heaven, Hells and torments; doctrine of *karmavipāka*. ... 153—178

Section II :—Antyeṣṭi (rites after death), āśauca (impurity on birth and death), Śuddhi (purification).

Chapter VII Eschatology; Rgveda X. 14—18 translated; rites on death of *āhitāgni* in Śat. Br. and śrauta and gṛhya sūtras; cremation; burial; offering



of water to deceased ; collecting charred bones and casting them into sacred waters ; *śānti* rites : graves ; persons competent to perform rites after death. ... 179-266

Chapter VIII *Śuddhi* includes purification after *āśauca* (impurity on birth and death), purification of the body, of substances (pots, wells, food), of images and temples ; derivation of the word *āśauca*, its meaning and two varieties (on birth and on death) ; circumstances on which periods of *āśauca* depended : exception to rules about observance of *āśauca* ; *Nārāyaṇabali* for those who commit suicide ; emphasis on mental purity. ... 267-333

Section III :—*Śrāddha*

Chapter IX Derivation and definition of '*śrāddha*' ; *śrāddha* and the doctrines of *karma* and *punarjanma* ; *pitṛs* ; panegyrics of *śrāddha* ; only three rites for the departed in ancient times viz. *pinda-pitṛyajña*, *mahāpitṛyajña* and *aṣṭakās* ; the *adhikārin* (person entitled to perform) for *śrāddha* ; meaning of the word '*putra*' ; proper times and places for *śrāddha* ; classification of *śrāddhas* ; qualifications of *brāhmaṇas* to be invited ; persons unfit to be invited ; food recommended and condemned in *śrāddha* ; *pinda-pitṛyajña* as described in *Taittirīya Samhitā* and *Brāhmaṇa* ; *pārvaṇaśrāddha* as described in *Āśvalāyanagr̥hya*, in *Yājñavalkya*, and in *Padmapurāṇa* ; *Viśve-devas* ; *agnau-karaṇa* ; number of *āhutis* ; number of ancestors to whom *pindas* are offered (3, 6, 9 or 12) ; description of modern *pārvaṇaśrāddha* ; meaning of *sapinda* ; *āmaśrāddha*. ... 334-515

Chapter X *Ekoddiṣṭa* and other *śrāddhas* ; *hemaśrāddha* ; procedure of *sapindīkaraṇa* or *sapindana* ; occasions for and description of *ābhyudayikaśrāddha* ; *pratisāmvatsarika śrāddha* and *mahālayaśrāddha* ;

PAGES

mātāmahaśrāddha; letting loose of a bull; gift of cow ... 516-551

Section IV :—Tīrthayātrā (pilgrimages to holy places)

Chapter XI Holy places (mountains, rivers, forests) play important part in the culture and unity of India; meaning of tīrtha in Ṛgveda and later texts; grounds on which places become tīrthas; number of tīrthas very large; four classes of tīrthas, viz. daiva, āsura, ārṣa and mānuṣa; who should go on a pilgrimage; rites on starting; tonsure and fast. ... 552-584

Chapter XII Ganges eulogised in Ṛgveda, Mahābhārata and purāṇas; Tristhalī i. e. Prayāga, Kāśī and Gayā; eulogy of Prayāga; tonsure at Prayāga; suicide at Prayāga; sub-tīrthas of Prayāga such as Akṣayavaṭa. ... 585-617

Chapter XIII Kāśī; ancient history and eulogy of Kāśī; Banaras known under five different names; derivation of the words Kāśī and Vārāṇasī; Viśveśvara and Maṇikarnikā; five essential tīrthas at Banaras; Pañcakrośī pilgrimage; sub-tīrthas, such as Jñānavāpī: numerous lingas at Banaras ... 618-642

Chapter XIV Gayā; Gayāmāhātmya in Vāyupurāṇa (chapt. 105-112); views about its date; Viṣṇupada and Gayaśiras in Nirukta; brief summary of Gayāmāhātmya; most important spots in Gayā are the Phalgu river, Viṣṇupada and Akṣayavaṭa; the five tīrthas of Gayā; offering of śrāddha and pinḍas at Gayā; the seven holy cities, twelve Jyotir-lingas, and four Dhāmas ... 643-679

Chapter XV Kurukṣetra and some other famous tīrthas. History of Kurukṣetra and its other names viz. northern Vēdi of Prajāpati and Samanta-pāñcaka; tīrthas of Kurukṣetra such as Sarasvatī,



Prthūdaka, seven forests; Mathurā, its history, twelve forests, Vṛndāvana, Govardhana, Gokula or Vraja; Puruṣottama tīrtha or Jagannātha; peculiar features of Jagannātha, viz. car festival, army of attendants; five important tīrthas; obscene sculptures on walls of Jagannātha temple. Narmadā, eulogy of and sub-tīrthas on Narmadā; Godāvarī and 100 tīrthas thereon described in Brahmapurāṇa such as Tryambaka, Janasthāna, Nāsik, Govardhana, Pañcavaṭī, Kāñcī, Pandharpur, its chief temple of Viṭhobā; large staff of priests; temple of devotee Fundalika, Vārkarīs.	... 680-722
Chapter XVI Comprehensive list of tīrthas and concluding remarks on tīrthas	... 723-827

IMPORTANT WORKS CONSULTED

(N. B.—Works referred to only once or twice have generally been omitted)

- Ānan. stands for Ānandāśrama Press edition; B. I. for Bibliotheca Indica series, Calcutta; Ghar. for Mr. J. R. Gharpure's Publications; G. O. S. for Gaikwad Oriental series; Nirn. for Nirṇaya-sāgara Press editions; Jiv. for Jivānanda Vidyāsagar's Publications and Venk. for Venkaṭeśvara Press Publications.
- Aitareya Āraṇyaka (ed. by Prof. Keith in *Anecdota Oxoniensia*)
- Aitareya Brāhmaṇa with Sāyaṇa's *bhāṣya* (Ānan.)
- Atharvaveda-saṁhitā (ed. by S. P. Pandit and sometimes the edition of Pandit Sātavalekar)
- Bṛhadāraṇyakopaniṣad
- Chāndogyaopaniṣad
- Gopatha Brāhmaṇa (B. I. series)
- Jābālopaniṣad
- Jaiminiya Saṁhitā, ed. by Dr. Raghu Vira.
- Kāthaka Saṁhitā (Pandit Sātavalekar's ed.)
- Kāthopaniṣad
- Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇa (ed. by Lindner, Jena, 1887)
- Kauṣītaki-brāhmaṇopaniṣad
- Maitrāyaṇī Saṁhitā (Pandit Sātavalekar's ed.)
- Ṛgveda Saṁhitā with Sāyaṇa's *bhāṣya* (ed. by the Poona Vaidika-saṁśodhana-maṇḍala)
- Sāmavidhāna Brāhmaṇa (ed. by A. C. Burnell, 1873)
- Śāṅkhāyana-brāhmaṇa (Ānan.)
- Śatapatha-brāhmaṇa (ed. by A. Weber)
- Taittirīya-āraṇyaka (Ānan.)
- Taittirīya-brāhmaṇa (Ānan.)
- Taittirīya-saṁhitā (Ānan.; sometimes Pandit Sātavalekar's edition has been used)
- Tāṇḍya-brāhmaṇa (also called Pañcaviṁśa-brāhmaṇa)—B. I. series
- Vājasaneyi Saṁhitā (ed. by Pandit Sātavalekar).
- Śrauta, grhya and dharma sūtras, Vedāṅgas
- Āpastamba-dharmasūtra with the commentary of Haradatta published at Kumbhakonam by Halasyanatha Sastri



Āpastamba-gr̥hya-sūtra with the com. of Sudarśanācārya (Mysore Govt. Oriental Library series)

Āpastamba-mantra-pāṭha (ed. by Dr. Winternitz, 1897).

Āśvalāyana-gr̥hya-sūtra with Nārāyaṇa's commentary (Nirn.)

Āśvalāyanaśrautasūtra with the com. of Nārāyaṇa (B. I. series).

Baudhāyana-dharmasūtra (Ānan.)

Baudhāyana-gr̥hyasūtra with gr̥hya-śeṣa-sūtra, gr̥hyaparibhāṣā and Baudhāyana-pitrmedhasūtra (ed. by Dr. Sham Sastri in Mysore University Oriental Library Publications, 1920).

Baudhāyana-śrautasūtra (ed. by Dr. Caland in B. I. series)

Bhāradvāja-gr̥hya-sūtra (ed. by Dr. Salomons, Leyden, 1913)

Brahmasūtra—see Vedāntasūtra

Bṛhad-devatā (ed. by Prof. A. A. Macdonell)

Gautamadharmasūtra (Ānan.)

Gobhila-gr̥hya-sūtra (B. I. series)

Gobhilasmṛti or Karmaṇpradīpa (Ānan.)

Hiranyakeśi-gr̥hyasūtra (ed. by Dr. J. Kirste, 1889)

Jaimini's Pūrvamīmāṃsāsūtra with the bhāṣya of Śabara and the Tantravārtika of Kumārila (Ānan.)

Kāṭhaka-gr̥hya with the commentaries of Ādityadarsana, Devapāla and Brāhmaṇabala (ed. by Dr. Caland, 1925)

Kātyāyana-śrauta-sūtra (ed. by A. Weber)

Kauśikasūtra (ed. by Prof. Bloomfield)

Kauśitaki-gr̥hya-sūtra (Benares Sanskrit series) or Madras University Sanskrit series

Khādiragr̥hyasūtra with the com. of Rudraskanda (Mysore Govt. Oriental Library series)

Mānavagr̥hyasūtra with the com. of Aṣṭāvakra (G. O. S.)

Nirukta of Yāska, ed. by Roth: sometimes the edition of Prof. V. K. Rajwade with a translation and notes in Marathi has been relied upon

Pāraskara-gr̥hyasūtra—edited by M. M. Shridharshastri Pathak with a Marathi translation

Rgvidhāna of Śaunaka (ed. by Prof. Jagadish Shastri, 1940)

Sāṅkhāyana-gr̥hya-sūtra (same as Kauśitaki-gr̥hya-sūtra)—published in the Benares Sanskrit series

Sāṅkhāyana-śrauta-sūtra (ed. by Dr. Hillebrandt)—B. I. Series

Satyāśadha-śrauta-sūtra (Ānan.)



Vaikhānasa-smārta-sūtra (edited with English translation by Dr. Caland)

Vaikhānasa-śrauta-sūtra ed. by Dr. Caland (B. I. series, 1941)

Vārāhagrhyasūtra (G. O. S.)

Vasiṣṭha-dharmasūtra (Bombay S. series)

Vedāntasūtra with the bhāṣya of Śaṅkara (Nirn.)

Viṣṇudharmasūtra (ed. by Dr. Jolly)

Smrtis

Āpastambasmṛti in verse (Ānan.)

Atri-smṛti (Ānan.)

Auśanasa-smṛti (Jiv.)

Bhagavad-gītā

Bṛhat-Parāśara-smṛti (Jiv.)

Caturvimsati-mata-saṅgraha (Benares Sanskrit Series)

Dakṣasmṛti (Ānan.)

Devalasmṛti (Ānan.)

Harivaṁśa (Chitraśālā Press ed. Poona)

Kātyāyanasmṛti on Vyavahāra (reconstructed by P. V. Kane under the title 'Kātyāyanasmṛtisāroddhāra' with English Translation and notes)

Laghu-Hārīta (Ānan.)

Laghu-Viṣṇu (Ānan.)

Laghu-Āśvalāyana (Ānan.)

Mahābhārata with the com. of Nīlakaṇṭha (oblong Bombay edition)

Manusmṛti with the commentary of Kullūka (Nirn.); where other commentaries on Manu are referred to, it is Mandlik's edition with several commentaries that is cited.

Nāradasmṛti (ed. by Dr. Jolly)

Parāśarasmṛti (Bombay S. series)

Prajāpatismṛti (Ānan.)

Samivartasmṛti (Ānan.)

Śaṅkhasmṛti in verse (Ānan.)

Vedavyāsa-smṛti (Ānan.)

Vṛddha-Gautama-smṛti (Jiv.)

Vṛddha-Hārīta-smṛti (Ānan.)

Yājñavalkya-smṛti with the com. Mitākṣarā (Nirn.)



PURĀṆAS

The Ānandāśrama editions of the Agni, Brahma, Brahmavaivarta, Matsya, Padma and Vāyu have been used; the Nirn. edition of the Bhāgavatapurāṇa (text only) and the edition of the Narasiṃhapurāṇa published by Messrs Gopal Narayan and Co. have been relied upon; the Venkateśvara Press editions of the Bhaviṣya, Brahmāṇḍa, Brhan-Nāradya (or simply Nāradya), Garuḍa, Kālikā, Kūrma, Liṅga, Mārkaṇḍeya, Viṣṇupurāṇa and Viṣṇudharmottara have been used; the Nīlamatapurāṇa, ed. by Pandits Ramlal Kanjilal and Jagaddhar Zadoo (1924)

COMMENTARIES, DIGESTS, MISCELLANEOUS
SANSKRIT, PĀLI AND PRĀKRIT WORKS AND AUTHORS.

Abhilaṣitārthacintāmaṇi (= Mānasollāsa), published by Mysore Oriental Library and in G. O. S.

Antyakarmadīpaka of Nityānanda (Kashi Sanskrit series)

Antyeṣṭipaddhati of Nārāyaṇabhaṭṭa (Nirn.) except on pp. 212, 303 where a ms. of it was used.

Aparārka's commentary on the Yājñavalkyasmṛti (Ānan.)

Arthaśāstra of Kauṭilya (ed. by Dr. Sham Shastri, second ed.)

Āśaucadāśaka of Vijñāneśvara (printed in Appendix pp. 832-833)

Āśaucāṣṭaka of Vararuci (published in Trivandrum S. series)

Bālabhaṭṭi, commentary on the Mitākṣarā on Yājñavalkya, ed. by Mr. Gharpure

Bārhaspatya-sūtra (ed. by Dr. F. W. Thomas, Lahore 1921)

Brāhmaṇasarvasva—D. C. ms. No. 9 of A 1883-84

Brhatsaṃhitā of Varāhamihira with the com. of Utpala (ed. by M. M. Sudhakara Dvivedi)

Dandaviveka of Vardhamāna (G. O. S.)

Dāyabhāga of Jīmūtavāhana (Jiv.)

Dharmadvaitanirṇaya of Śaṅkarabhaṭṭa (Ghar.)

Dharmasindhu of Kāśinātha with Marathi translation (Nirn., 6th ed. of 1936)

Dīpakalikā, com. of Śūlapaṇi on Yājñavalkyasmṛti (Ghar.)

Gaṅgābhakti-taraṅgiṇī of Gaṇapati, published at Darbhanga (oblong size) 1500-1550 A. D.

Gaṅgāvākyāvalī of Vidyāpati under patronage of Viśvāsadevi, ed. by Dr. J. B. Chaudhuri, 1940

Govindarāja's commentary on Manusmṛti (Mandlik's edition)



- Gr̥hastharatnākara of Caṇḍeśvara (B. I. Series)
- Gr̥hyāgnisāgara of Nārāyaṇa Ārḍe (ms. in the Bombay Asiatic Society)
- Halāyudha's com. on Kātyāyana's Śrāddhasūtra (ms. No 518 p. 170 of B. B. R. A. S. cat.)
- Haracarita-cintāmaṇi of Jayadratha (Nirṇ. Kāvya-mālā series)
- Haradatta's com. on Gautamadharmasūtra (Ānan.)
- Hārālatā of Aniruddha (B. I. series)
- Hemādri's Caturvarga-cintāmaṇi, section on śrāddha (B. I. Series)
- Jātakas (ed. by Fausböll)
- Kalpataru or Kṛtyakalpataru, sections on āśauca, prāyaścitta, śrāddha and tīrtha (G. O. S.)
- Kāśikā, commentary on Pāṇini's sūtras
- Kāvya-mīmāṃsā of Rājasekhara (G. O. S.)
- Kṛtyaratnākara of Caṇḍeśvara (B. I. series)
- Kṣīrasvāmin's com. on Amarakośa (ed. by K. G. Oak, Poona)
- Kullūka's com. on Manusmṛti (Nirṇ.)
- Kumārila's Tantravārtika and Tūptikā on Jaimini's sūtras (Ānan.)
- Madanapārijāta (B. I. series)
- Madanaratna (section on vyavahāra ed. by P. V. Kane for the Anup Library series, Bikaner)
- Mahābhāṣya of Patañjali (ed. by Kielhorn in Bombay S. series)
- Mahārṇavakarmavipākā of Māndhātṛ—D.C. ms.No. 239 of A 1881-82
- Medhātithi's com. on Manusmṛti (Mandlik's edition)
- Mitākṣarā of Vijñāneśvara, com. on Yājñavalkyasmṛti (Nirṇ.)
- Nandapaṇḍita, author of Vaijayantī, com. on Viṣṇudharmasūtra
- Nirṇayasindhu with Marathi translation (Nirṇ. 2nd ed. of 1935)
- Pāṇini's Aṣṭādhyāyī with Siddhānta-kaumudī of Bhaṭṭojī (Nirṇ.)
- Parāśara-Mādhavīya (Bombay S. series)
- Pitr̥bhakti of Śrīdatta—D. C. ms. No. 152 of 1892-95
- Pitr̥dayitā of Aniruddhabhaṭṭa (published by Sanskrit Sāhitya-pariṣad, Calcutta, 1930)
- Prāyaścittamayūkha of Nīlakaṇṭha (Ghar.)
- Prāyaścittamuktāvalī of Divākara, son of Mahādeva (D. C. ms. No. 249 of 1886-92)
- Prāyaścitta-prakarana of Bhavadeva, published by Varendra Research Society, Rajshahi
- Prāyaścittaprakāśa (part of Vīramitrodaya)—ms. in the Anup Sanskrit Library No. 2610 at Bikaner



- Prāyaścittasāra (part of Nṛsimhaprasāda) ed. in Sarasvatibhavana series
- Prāyaścitta-tattva of Raghunandana (Jiv.)
- Prāyaścittaviveka of Sūlapāṇi with the com. Tattvārthakaumudī of Govindānanda (Jiv.)
- Prāyaścittenduśekhara of Nāgoji supplemented by Kāśinātha-upādhyāya, son of Ananta (Ānan.)
- Prayogaratna of Nārāyaṇabhaṭṭa (Nirn. pothi size, 1915)
- Prthvīcandrodaya (section on śrāddha) ms. in the Ichcharam Suryaram Desai collection in the Bombay University. Vide No. 251 of the catalogue by Prof. Velankar
- Puruṣottamatattva of Raghunandana (Jiv.)
- Raghuvamśa of Kālidāsa (Nirn.)
- Rājataranginī of Kalhaṇa (text and English translation by Dr. Aurel Stein)
- Rāmāyana of Vālmīki (ed. by R. Narayansvami Aiyer at the Madras Law Journal Office)
- Śabara, author of bhāṣya on Jaimini's Pūrvamīmāṃsāsūtra (Ānan.)
- Śaḍaśīti of Kauśikāditya with the com. Śuddhicandrikā of Nandapāṇḍita (Chowkhamba S. series)
- Śaṅkarācārya's bhāṣya on Vedāntasūtra (Nirn.)
- Sāyana's bhāṣyas on the R̥gveda and other Samhitās, Brāhmaṇas and Āraṇyakas
- Saṁnavatīśrāddha of Śivabhaṭṭa (Bhadkamkar collection, Bombay University ms. No. 1176 p. 421 in catalogue, prepared by Prof. Devasthali)
- Smṛticandrikā of Devaṇṇabhaṭṭa (Ghar.)
- Smṛticandrikā on āśauca (published by Mysore University)
- Smṛtimuktāphala on āśauca, prāyaścitta, śrāddha (Ghar.)
- Smṛtyarthasāra of Śrīdhara (Ānan.)
- Śrāddhakalikā D. C. ms. No. 421 1891-95
- Śrāddhakalpalatā of Nandapāṇḍita (Chowkhamba S. series)
- Śrāddha-kriyākaumudī of Govindānanda (Chowkhamba S. series)
- Śrāddhaprakāśa of Mitramiśra (part of Virāmitrodaya) Chowkhamba S. series
- Śrāddhamayūkha of Nīlakaṇṭha (Ghar.)
- Śrāddharatna of Lakṣmīpati (printed at Darbhanga)
- Śrāddhasaukhyā (part of Tōḍarānanda) D. C. ms. No. 257 of 1881-1887
- Śrāddhasāra (part of Nṛsimhaprasāda) printed in the Sarasvatibhavana series, Benares

- Śrāddhatattva of Raghunandana (Jiv.)
 Śrāddhatattva of Raghunandana (a different work from the above),
 ms. in the Iccharam Desai collection of the Bombay University
 dated śake 1539
 Śrāddhaviveka of Rudradhara, Kashi S. series
 Śuddhikaumudī of Govindānanda (B. I. series)
 Śuddhimayūkha of Nīlakaṇṭha (Ghar.)
 Śuddhiprakāśa (part of Vīramitrodaya) Chowkhamba Sanskrit series
 Śuddhitattva of Raghunandana (Jiv.)
 Śuddhiviveka of Rudradhara (D. C. ms. No. 309 of 1887-1891)
 Tantravārtika of Kumārila (Ānan.)
 Tīrthacintāmaṇi of Vācaspati (B. I. series)
 Tīrthaprakāśa (part of Vīramitrodaya of Mitrāmīśra, Chowkhamba
 S. series)
 Tīrthasāra (part of Nṛsimhaprasāda) in Sarasvatībhavana series,
 Benares
 Tīrthayātra-tattva of Raghunandana
 Tristhalīsetu of Nārāyaṇabhaṭṭa (Ānan.)
 Tīrthenduśekhara of Nāgeśa or Nāgoji, Sarasvatī-bhavana series
 Tristhalīsetusāra-saṅgraha of Bhaṭṭoji (Sarasvatībhavana series)
 Trīmśat-śloki with com. of Raghunātha (Ānan.)
 Trikāṇḍa-maṇḍara
 Viśvarūpa, commentator on Yājñavalkyasmṛti (work published in
 Trivandrum S. series)
 Vivādaratnākara of Caṇḍeśvara (B. I. series)
 Vṛṣotsargatattva of Raghunandana (Jiv.)
 Yajurvedi-śrāddhatattva of Raghunandana (Jiv.)
 Yogasūtra with bhāṣya and commentary of Vācaspati, edited by
 Rajaramshastri Bōdas, 1892
 Yogayātrā of Varāhamihira. ed. by Prof. Jagadish Lal Shastri,
 Lahore, 1944

AUTHORS AND WORKS IN ENGLISH

- (Some works such as those mentioned on pp. 618, 693, 716 are not
 included here)
 Ain-i-Akbari (translated by Blochman and Jarret, three volumes)
 Alberuni's India (tr. by Sachau in two volumes, London, 1888)
 R. G. Bhandarkar's ' Vaiṣṇavism, Śaivism &c. '
 Barbour's ' Sin and the New Psychology. '
 B. M. Barua's ' Gayā and Buddha-Gayā ' (1934, in two volumes)



- Beal's Buddhist Records of the Western World
 Bloomfield's 'Religion of the Veda'
 E. A. W. Budge's 'Egyptian Heaven and Hell'
 Corpus Inscriptionum Indicarum, vol. I (ed by Dr. Hultzsch)
 Corpus Inscriptionum Indicarum, vol. III (ed. by Dr. Fleet, also
 cited as 'Gupta Inscriptions')
 G. G. Coulton's 'Five centuries of Religion' (1936)
 Cunningham's 'Mahābodhi' (1892)
 „ 'Ancient Geography of India'
 Dr. S. K. De's 'Vaiṣṇava faith and movement in Bengal'
 Nundo Lal Dey's 'the Geographical Dictionary of Ancient and
 Medieval India' (1927)
 Prof. V. R. Ramchandra Dikshitar's translation of Śilappadikāram
 Elliot and Dowson's 'History of India as told by its own historians'
 7 volumes
 Epigraphia Indica, volumes 1-28
 Fa Hien's 'Records of Buddhist kingdoms' translated by James
 Legge (1886)
 Gibbon's 'Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire' (Smith's ed.
 of 1862)
 K. P. Jayaswal's 'History of India, 150-350' (1933)
 S. N. Kanga's 'Heaven and Hell and their location in Zoroastrian-
 ism and in the Vedas'
 Prof. Keith's 'Religion and Philosophy of the Veda and Upaniṣads'
 Dr. B. C. Law Presentation vol. I and II
 Dr. B. C. Law's 'Heaven and Hell in Buddhist perspective'
 Dr. A. Lefever's 'The Vedic idea of sin'
 MacCrindle's 'Ancient India as recorded by Megasthenes,' 'Invasion
 of India by Alexander' and 'Ancient India as described by
 Ptolemy.'
 A. A. Macdonell's 'Vedic Mythology'
 Sir John Marshall's 'Mohenjo-daro' (in three volumes)
 Rajendralal Mitra's 'Buddha-Gayā' (1878)
 B. S. Puckle's 'Funeral customs'
 Reginald Reynolds on 'cleanliness and godliness'
 Sacred Books of the East, edited by F. Max-Muller
 Tawney's translation of 'Prabandha-cintāmaṇi'
 C. E. Vulliamy's 'Immortal man'

INDEX OF CASES CITED

- Akshayacandra v Haridas* 511
Chandrachoorā Das v Bibhuti Bhushan 218, 220
Darbarilal v Govindlal 569
Digambar v Motilal 510
Dinanath v Hrishikesh 569, 573n
Dwarkanath Misser v Rampertab 581
Ganpat v Tulsiram 569
Gangaram Babaji Badve v Baji Shankar 713n
Gangaram Babaji v Narayan Annaji 714n
Gooroo Gobinda Saha v Anandlal 510
Gopala Muppanar v Dharmakarta Subramania 318
Hari v Bajrand 569n
Lachman Lal v Baldeo Lal 581
Lachman Lal v Kanhaya Lal 581
Maharani Hemanta Kumari v Gaurishankar 633n
Mutteram v Gopal 569
Nalinaksha v Rajanikanto 510
Narayan Lal v Chulhan Lal 581
Narhari v Bhimrao 323
Reg. v Price 233
Sardar Singh v Kunj Behari
S. K. Wodeyar v Ganapati 318
Sakharam Bhimaji Benare v Gangaram Babaji 713n
Saklat v Bella 320
54 All. 698 27n
6 Cal. 27n
22 Cal. 609 581n
13 C. L. J. 449, 581n
15 C. L. J. 376, 581n
22 I. A. 51, 581n
41 I. A. 27n
2 Patna L. J. 581n
A. I. R. (1945) Patna 211, 220
2 Patna Law Journal 581n

ADDITIONS AND CORRECTIONS

N. B.—Some cases where the correction can be easily made [as in the elision of an anusvāra or mātṛā or a diacritical mark] have not been noted.]

Page	Line or Note	Note
8	note 17	Read न स स्वो दक्षो वरुण धृतिः
9	note 19	Add at end 'Vide also विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 33.1'
15	last line	Put a full stop after the word 'Viṣṇu'.
17	note 36	Read 'व्यापारे रुढः'.
18	line 25	Read 'selling of flesh'
19	note 43 l. 8	Read 'अग्निपुराण 173.5'
24	note 58	Read न तु गुरोरङ्गना गुर्वङ्गना
28	note 68 line 7	Read दोषो न संसर्ग०
36	line 34	Read 'they pray'.
37	note 88	Read यत्किंचेदं वरुण दैव्ये
42	line 24	Read 'to be spread over from one'
43	line 23	Read 'yadadīvyān' (Tai. Ā. II. 4.1, and Baud. Dh. S. III. 7. 10)'
44	line 29	Read 'by offering either'
46	note 107 line 4	Read अथर्वाशिरस्.
47	line 7	Read 'four pākayajñas or mahāyajñas'
47	note 109	Read 'the five mahāyajñas or pākayajñas as they are called in Manu II. 86'
54	note 133a	Add—The verse 'उपावृत्तस्य...वर्जितः' is अग्निपु. 175. 5–6 and is cited as from भविष्यपुराण by कल्पतरु on व्रत p. 3. Hemādri on vrata, vol. I. p. 1009 quotes विष्णुधर्मोत्तर on the meaning of गुण as 'तज्जाप्यजापी तदध्यान-तत्कथाश्रवणादिकम् । तदर्चनं च तन्नामकीर्तनश्रवणादयः ॥ उपवासकृतो ह्येते गुणाः प्रोक्ता मनीषिभिः ।'. The verse उपावृत्तस्य० is ascribed to Vasiṣṭha by Hemādri on vrata. vol. I. p. 1004
58	note 139 line 6	Read प्रायश्चित्तं विध्यपराधे
94	lines 19	Add at end 'It may be noted that the digests on Dharma forbid bathing in the sea at any

Page Line or Note

- time one pleases and allow it only on Full Moon, on Amāvasyā and on *parvan* days and prescribe that at Setubandha one may bathe in the sea on any day. Compare: अश्वत्थसागरौ सेव्यौ न स्पृष्टव्यौ कदाचन । अश्वत्थं मन्दवारे च सागरं पर्वणि स्पृशेत् । न कालनियमः सेतौ समुद्रस्नान-कर्मणि ॥ धर्मसिन्धु I. 1 p. 36
- 106 note 242 line 3 Read प्राय. वि.
- 108 note 247 Add at end 'Verses from गावः सुरभयो नित्यं to हविरन्यत्र तिष्ठति are अग्निपुराण 292. 14-20'
- 113 note 257 At the end add 'The Mit. on Yāj. III. 280 remarks: यदा गार्हस्थ्यपरिग्रहेण संन्यासात्प्रच्युतो भवति तदा संवर्तोक्तं द्रष्टव्यम्—संन्यस्य दुर्मतिः कश्चित्प्रत्यापत्तिं ब्रजेद्यदि । स कुर्यात्कृच्छ्रमश्रान्तः षण्मासात्प्रत्यनन्तरम् ॥' This is संवर्त 171-72
- 114 line 2 Add 'Vide the bhāṣya of Śaṅkara on Vedānta-sūtra III. 4. 43 (bahis-tūbhayathāpi)'.
○
- 116 line 23 Add after the words 'for a month'—'It appears that simply officiating as a priest or accepting a gift entailed a prāyaścitta; vide Tai. Ā. II. 16. 17 'याजयित्वा प्रतिगृह्य वानश्मन् त्रिः स्वाध्यायं वेदमधीयीत'. Mapu X. 109-111 appear to endorse this view.
- 140 line 7 Read 'and as marking'
- 149 line 23 Add at end 'Viśvarūpa on Yāj. III 248 states that in the Āngirasa-smṛti an expiation called Vajra is described and it is provided therein that those who are guilty of a mahāpātaka are purified after three years. The Mit. on Yāj. III 254 quotes the same half-verse as of Āngiras'.
- 164 n 395 line 2 Read अष्टाविंशतिकोऽथः
- 169 n 406 Add 'This verse is quoted by नीलकण्ठ in his commentary on उद्योगपर्व 33. 72 and in the सांख्यतत्त्वकौमुदी of वाचस्पति Chowkhamba S. series p. 45.'
- 185 line 11 Add after 'namo Vāsudevāya.'—Vide भगवद्गीता 8. 5-6 and पद्मपुराण V. 47. 262 'मरणे या मतिः पुंसां गतिर्भवति तादृशी', for the belief about the thoughts of a dying man.'

Page	Line or Note	
185	n 432	Read 'शान्तिपर्व, 285. 74 ff. for शिवसहस्रनाम'
192	n 443	
	last line	Read 'Fargard'
200	n 476	Read in 2nd line 'recital' and 'bones' in line 3.
212	line 12	Add a new paragraph after this line viz 'A peculiar rite called Sampratti (transmission) is described in Br. Up. I. 5. 17 and Kauṣītaki-brāhmaṇopaniṣad II. 15, wherein a father when about to die calls his son and transmits to him his own finished and unfinished work such as yajñas.
212		Add footnote 500a 'Though in modern times Nārāyanabhaṭṭa's Antyeṣṭipaddhati is generally followed, it must be stated here in order to avoid misunderstanding that now no one spreads kuśas and antelope skin on the funeral pile nor is the wife made to sit down near the deceased nor is she then raised up by anybody'.
216	n503 l. 1	Read 'मिता. on या. III. 2, मद. पा p. 395'
239	line 29	Read 'text of Samvarta that a'
244	line 6	Put the figure 555 above Rg. VIII. 95. 7-9
265	n. 594a	Read in last line but one तद्रूपं देहमन्यं
269	n 603 l. 2	Read तन्तुं तन्वन् रजसो भानुमन्विद्यक्षानहो
271	l. 35	Add after the word 'death.' 'It should be noted that in almost all parts of India except in Bengal members of all varṇas including śūdras observe by usage only ten days' impurity on death'
277	l. 13	Read 'preferably'
300	n 677, l. 3	Read 'पतितानां च'
308	l. 17	Omit the words 'with Sanskrit explanation'
310	note 695	Read 'संमार्ष्टव्या उत'
312	n 700	Add at end "Though Manu V. 130 says generally 'नित्यमास्यं शुचि स्त्रीणाम्' the words must be narrowed down to the occasions of dalliance in view of what Baud. Dh. S. I. 4. 57 (नित्यं रतिसंसर्गे), Vas. 28.8, S'ankha 16.16, and most of the commentators of Manu say.

- Page Line or Note
- 321 lines 11-15 I should have mentioned here the four verses beginning with 'Hiranyavarṇāḥ' of the Tai. S. V. 6. 1.1
- 345 10p Read 'Pañcajanāḥ'
- " n. 776 l. 4 Read 'षड् ऋतवस्तान् पितृन् परिचक्षते'
- 355 n. 807 l. 1 Read 'मेषमजं बालभते'
- 368 n. 838 l. 2 Read शकुना इव
- 377 n. 851 l. 2 Read तथैषु स्वभूमौ च प्रयत्नतः.
- 382-383 note 861 Add at end "In several works the 96 śrāddhas are enumerated somewhat differently. For example the धर्मसिन्धु II. 2 p. 39 says: 'अमा १२ युग ४ मनु १४ क्रान्ति १२ धृति १२ पात १२ महालयाः १५ ॥ अष्टका ५ अन्वष्टका ५ पूर्वयुः ५ श्राद्धैर्नवतिश्च षट् ॥ इति ज्ञेयानि ॥' For 12 Aṣṭakās there is very ancient authority; vide note 861 quoting शतपथब्राह्मण. It is very rare to find 15 Aṣṭakās mentioned; vide p. 361 and note 828 above."
- 388 note 870 In last line but one read प्रदास्यति
- 389 note 873 Read अनर्हान् हव्यकव्येषु
- 410 note 921 Read स याति नरकं घोरं
- 427 n. 959 l. 5 from end Read यमायाङ्गिरस्वते
- 441 note 985 Read अर्हणीयानां पुरतः
- 442 l. 17 Read 'then turn it'
- 457 note 1018 Add at end of note 'The विष्णुधर्मोत्तरपुराण (III. 176 1-5) reads the names of the ten विश्वेदेवाः somewhat differently'.
- 532 note 1195 Read 'विस्तृतपार्वणविधिनाऽसम्भवे (separate as विधिना and असम्भवे)'
- 534 note 1200 Add at end—"Vide 'अन्नं ह प्राणः' ऐ. ब्रा. 33.1"
- 546 l. 17 Add after 'in an intercalary month' the following:—
According to the Nirṇayasindhu (p. 12) the first year anniversary śrāddha has to be performed in the intercalary month and subsequent anniversary śrāddhas are to be performed in the pure month and not in the intercalary month, if the deceased died in an ordinary month, while at the time of the first anniversary or subsequent anniversary śrāddha

Page Line or Note

- the year has the same month as an intercalary as well as an ordinary month. The Dharmasindhu also (p. 5) holds the same view 'शुद्धमासे मृतानां तु प्रथमाब्दिकं मलमास एव कार्यं न शुद्धे द्वितीयाब्दिकं तु शुद्धे एव ।'
- 560 note 1260 After line 13 in note add 'The विष्णुधर्मोत्तरपुराण III. chap. 174 mentions *nine* mountains 'हिमवान्हेमकूटश्च निषधो नील एव च । श्वेतश्च शृङ्गवान् मेरुर्माल्यवान्गन्धमादनः । नवैतान् शैलनृपतीन्वभ्यां पजयेन्नरः ॥' (in पर्वताष्टमीव्रत)'
- 561 l. 7 Read 'a work like that of Dr. Alexis Carrel.'
- 577 n. 1308 l. 5 Read 'लभेत्तु सः and attributes it to गरुडपुराण.'
- 588 note 1333 Read 'दिवि भुव्यन्तरिक्षे च'
- 592 n. 1340 l. 21 Read 'Another rule is that one makes'
- 595 n. 1347 l. 2 Read 'जलं स मे प्रीत इति'.
- 599 note 1360 Read 'पादमोक्तेः'
- 605 n. 1372 l. 6 Read 'the Aphsad stone Inscription'.
- 609-613 The figures of the notes and the notes themselves have been wrongly arranged in these pages. On p. 609 l. 5 put the figure 1385 above the word 'Gangāvākyāvalī' and note (as printed) 1387 should be 1385 and brought under p. 609. On the same page (both in the text and notes) the figures 1384a, 1385 should be changed to 1386 and 1387. On the same page the note 1386 should really be 1393a, which figure should be placed on p. 613 in line 24 on the word 'moksa' and the footnote so numbered should be placed after footnote 1393
- 615 note 1397 last line but one—Read 'occur in नारदीय'
- 633 note 1448 line 4 Read 'तावतैव'.
- 648 n. 1473 l. 3 Read 'तर्पयेत्'
- 664 note 1500 Read 'गङ्गा पादोदकं'
- 667 line 36 After 'difficult to say.' add 'Recently the Bihar State Legislature passed 'The Bodh Gaya Temple Act' (Act XVII of 1949) for the better management of the Bodh Gaya Temple and the properties appertaining thereto. It is provided by this Act that the Government of Bihar Province shall constitute a committee for the management and control of the temple and its properties, consisting of a chairman and

Page Line or Note

- eight members, of whom four shall be Buddhists and four shall be Hindus including the Mahanth i. e. the presiding priest for the time being of the Śaivite monastery of Bodh Gaya, that the District Magistrate of Gayā shall be the ex-officio chairman, but that, if the District Magistrate happens to be a non-Hindu, the Provincial Government may nominate a Hindu as chairman and that Hindus and Buddhists of every sect shall have access to the temple and temple land for the purpose of worship and *pinda-dāna*’
- 670 l. 6 Read ‘*śrāddhas* at Gayā’
- 673 note 1524 l. 4 Read ‘*तीर्थचि.*’
- 689 n. 1565 l. 2 Add: It may be noted that in the *विष्णुधर्मोत्तर* I. chapters 201-202 it is stated that Gandharvas, sons of Śailūsa, devastated the country on both banks of the Sindhu and Rāma sent his brother भरत to chastise them; ‘*जहि शैलवतनयान् गन्धर्वान् पापनिश्चयान्*’ *विष्णुधर्मोत्तर* I. 202. 10”
- 691 n. 1568 l. 2 Read ‘*सुषुम्ना*’
- 695 line 9 Add at end: ‘Vide, for example, the statement that Puruṣottama is situated on Nīlaparvata (chap. 1), that a dialogue between Śabara (a *bhilla*) and Vidyāpati the brother of Indradyumna’s purohita took place (chap. 7), that three *rathas* were manufactured for the three images (chap. 27) for being worshipped.’
- 696 n. 1577 l. 3 Read ‘*चक्रं दृष्ट्वा*’
- 99 l. 13 Add after this line ‘Millions of devotees visit Jagannātha every year and the endowments of the principal temple and the shrines and sacred places within its premises are worth millions of rupees. Great dissatisfaction is felt about the management of the funds and about the due performance of religious rites at Purī. The State of Orissa passed the Puri Shri Jagannath Temple Administration Act (No. XIV of 1952) providing for the consolidation of the rights and duties of the *Sevaks Pujaris* and such other persons as are connected with the *Seva, Puja* and management of the *devasthāna*. But this Act does not, in the opinion of many devotees, go far enough. It only provides for some supervision.’



Page Line or Note

- 699 n. 1582 Add at the end 'The mantra occurs in the मैत्रायणी-संहिता II, 9. 10 and तै. आ. X. 45.1'.
- 709 1. 20 Read 'in Pañcavaṭī and on the left bank' &c.
- 721 1. 14 Add at end "Vide a paper on 'Identification of the idol of Viṭṭhala in the Viṭṭhala temple at Hampī' by Dr. C. Narayanrao in the Proceedings of the All India Oriental Conference held at Mysore pp. 715-728 and a very informative and exhaustive thesis for Ph. D. Degree on 'the cult of Viṭhobā' by Rev. G. A. Deleury accepted by the Poona University in 1952."
- 732 Add under Āmardaka 'Vide E. I. vol. I pp. 354 ff. for Āmardakatīrtha in Rāṇod in Gwalior State.'
- 758 Under 'Irāvati' add—'Vide Viṣṇudharmottara I. 149 (twenty-five verses) for a fine poetic description of this river and I. 162. 61-65 for the confluence of Irāvati with Sindhu and of ten more confluences of several rivers of northern India.'
- 769 Column 2 under Konārka add "Vide Proceedings of the 8th Indian Historical Congress pp. 153 ff. for an article 'Sungod of Konārak—where is he', which criticizes the article in the Modern Review."
- 796 Add under Rohitaka—'In the Madanpur plate of S'ricandra in E. I. vol. 28 at p. 53 the place of origin of the Chandra dynasty is said to be Rohitagiri (acc. to some Rohtasgadh in Bihar and Lalmai Hill, West of Comilla, acc. to others).'
- 806 Column one under Sona add—'The Nirṇayasindhu p. 110 quotes a verse of Devala enumerating seven *nadas* : शोणसिन्धुहिरण्याख्याः कोकलोहितघर्घराः। शतद्रूश्च नदाः सप्त पावनाः परिकीर्तिताः॥ It is difficult to say what rivers are meant by हिरण्य and कोक. Lohita is Brahmaputrā
- 832 line 5 Read 'अञ्जुरवश्च'
- 832 lines 8 and 10 Read मृत्यो and मृतै
- 832 line 18 Read वयं
- 832 n. 693a 1. 3 Read स्नानं

SECTION I

PĀTAKA, PRĀYAŚCITTA AND KARMAVIPĀKA

(Sins, expiations and the residual consequences of sins).

CHAPTER I

The Article on sin in Hasting's Encyclopædia of Religion and Ethics (vol. 11) will clearly show how the idea of sin varies from religion to religion, from age to age and from country to country. We are concerned here with the growth and development of the doctrine of sin in India from Vedic times to the medieval digests and commentaries on Dharmaśāstra.

Sin (*pātaka*) is a word that belongs to the terminology of religion rather than to that of Ethics.¹ It is very difficult to define sin. In a general way it may be said that it is an act which is regarded as a wilful rebellion against or disobedience of some law supposed to be laid down by God or Revelation; it is opposition to the will of God manifested in an authoritative work or at least failure to abide by the regulations contained therein.

1. In these days many people, both in the East and the West, question the very existence of sin. As Barbour puts it in his 'Sin and the new Psychology' (p. 19) "The feeling is gaining wide acceptance that there is no such thing as sin in the Christian sense. Evil may encompass a man's life and bring disaster to his personality, but it is not sin. It is psychic evil that can be explained by psychic causes and perhaps cured by psychological therapy. ... Many say 'nothing is right and nothing is wrong. Every thing is the result of complexes'. It has resulted in an easy tolerance of sin". Sir Oliver Lodge in his article on 'Christian Doctrine' in the Hibbert Journal for 1903-4 at p. 466 says 'The higher man of to-day is not worrying about his sins at all, still less about their punishments. His mission, if he is good for anything, is to be up and doing and in so far as he acts wrongly or unwisely he expects to suffer'. The followers of Cār-vāka who was the prince of Atheists in ancient India used to say 'man should live among pleasures as long as life lasts; he should feed himself sumptuously (lit. should drink *ghee*) even by borrowing money from others. There is no coming again into the world after the body is reduced to ashes by cremation'.



Bhandarkar Oriental
Research Institute

The Rgveda is full of fervent and heart-felt expressions of the sense of sin and betrays intense desire on the part of the sages of old to be free from it. The idea of sin in the Rgveda is bound up with the conception of *ṛta*. The conception of *ṛta* cannot be discussed here in detail. But a brief statement is absolutely necessary in order to be able to convey what the Vedic doctrine of sin was.²

Rta had a threefold aspect. It means 'the course of nature' or 'the regular and general order in the cosmos'; with reference to sacrifice it means 'the correct and ordered way of the cult of the Gods'; and thirdly, it also means the 'moral conduct of man'. A few passages to illustrate these three aspects of *ṛta* may be cited here. Rg. IV. 23. 8-10 are³ three verses in which the word *ṛta* occurs no less than twelve times and which breathe the all-pervading influence of *ṛta* throughout the universe. 'Plentiful waters (or riches or gifts) belong to *ṛta*; the thought (or laudation) of *ṛta* destroys crooked acts (sins), the brilliant and rousing hymn of praise to *ṛta* pierces the benumbed ears of man. The props of *ṛta* are firm, its (physical) manifestations are many and lovely for the sake of the body (i. e. man). Through *ṛta* they (people) desire food. The cows (sun's rays) entered *ṛta* by *ṛta*. He who wins over *ṛta* acquires it. For the sake of *ṛta* (heaven) and earth are wide and deep; the two highest cows (i. e. Heaven and Earth) yield milk (desires or rewards) for the sake of *ṛta*.' Some other passages are: 'The Sindhus (rivers) follow the *ṛta* of Varuṇa' (*ṛtam sindhavo Varuṇasya yanti*, Rg. II. 28. 4); similarly Rg. I. 105. 12 (*ṛtamarṣanti sindhavaḥ*); The wheel of *ṛta* (i. e. the year) revolves round the

2. For the conception of *ṛta* and the idea of sin in the Rgveda the following works may be consulted: 'The religion of the Veda' by M. Bloomfield (pp. 12, 125 ff); 'Religion and philosophy of the Veda and Upanishads' by Prof. A. B. Keith (pp. 35, 83-85 &c.); 'The Vedic idea of sin' by Dr. Henry Lefever (1935). One regrets to observe that Bloomfield's work is marred here and there by a certain levity of thought and expression out of keeping with the seriousness of the subject.

3. ऋतस्य हि शुक्रः सन्ति पूर्वाङ्गतस्य धीतिर्वृजिनानि हन्ति । ऋतस्य श्रेको बधिरा ततर्द कर्णा बुधानः शुचमान आयोः ॥ ऋतस्य दृढहा धरुणानि सन्ति पुरुषाणि चन्द्रा वपुषे वपुषि । ऋतेन दीर्घमषणन्त पृक्ष ऋतेन गाव ऋतमाविशुः ॥ ऋतं येमान ऋतमिद्वनोत्पृतस्य शुष्मस्तुरया उ गव्युः । ऋताय पृथ्वी बहुले गर्भीरे ऋताय धेनू परमे दुहाते ॥ ऋ. IV. 23. 8-10. These are rather obscure verses. The Nirukta X. 41 understands *ṛta* to mean 'water' and explains X. 23.8 as 'ऋतस्य प्रज्ञा वर्जनीयानि हन्ति ऋतस्य श्रेको बधिरस्याणि कर्णौ आतुणात्ति । बधिरः चन्द्रश्रोत्रः । कर्णौ बोधयन् दीप्यमानश्च आयोः अयनस्य मधुरयत्नः उवातिषो वा उदकस्य वा ।'

sky with twelve spokes (dvādaśāram varvarti cakram pari dyām-ṛtasya, Rg. I. 164. 11); 'the dawn, the daughter of heaven, correctly follows the path of *ṛta*' ('*ṛtasya panthānam-anveti sādhu*', Rg. I. 124. 3); the young woman (Uṣas) does not destroy (or come in the way of) the light of *ṛta* (Rg. I. 123. 9.); the sun is the bright and lovely face of *ṛta* (Rg. VI. 51. 1. '*ṛtasya śuci darśatam-anikam*'); 'the path of *ṛta* became united with the rays' (Rg. I. 136. 2); 'when exhilarated by drinking this (Soma) Indra released for the sake of *ṛta* the concealed host of cows' (Rg. I. 121. 4, probably a reference to drought and subsequent rainfall).

Many of the principal gods of the Vedic pantheon are described as the guardians, promoters or charioteers of *ṛta*. Mitra and Varuṇa rule over all the world by *ṛta* (Rg V. 63.7, *ṛtena viśvam bhuvanam vi rājathaḥ*); Mitra and Varuṇa, the protectors of *ṛta*, occupy a chariot (Rg. V. 63.1); Mitra, Varuṇa, and Aryaman are said to be charioteers of *ṛta* (*yūyamṛtasya rathyaḥ*, VII. 66.12); they and Aditi and Bhaga are protectors of *ṛta* (Rg. VI. 51.3). Agni is called 'the charioteer of *ṛta*' (*rathi ṛtasya*, Rg. III. 2.8), the protector of *ṛta*, in Rg. I. 1.8, III. 10.2, X. 8.5, X.118.7 and *ṛtāvān* (in Rg IV. 2.1). Soma is styled the protector of *ṛta* (in Rg. IX. 48.4, IX. 73.8) and is said to support *ṛta* (IX. 97.24 *ṛtam bharat subhṛtam cārwinduh*). In Rg. VII. 66.13 the Adityas⁴ are said to be *ṛtāvan* (acting according to the fixed order of nature), *ṛtajāta* (sprung from *ṛta*) and *ṛtāvṛdh* (augmenting or rejoicing in *ṛta*) and further they are said to be fierce haters of *anṛta* (what is opposed to *ṛta*).

Rta is distinguished from sacrifice (*yajña*). It is not any particular sacrificial rite itself nor the institution of sacrifice. It stands for the ordered course of sacrifice in general. In Rg. IV. 3.4. Agni is styled *ṛtacit* (conversant with or observing *ṛta*) and is invoked to know the *ṛta* (of the sacrifice); in several verses we meet with the words '*ṛtena ṛtam*' (e. g. in Rg. IV. 3.9 *ṛtena ṛtam niyatam-ila ā goḥ*, V. 15.2 '*ṛtena ṛtam dharuṇam dhārayanta yajñasya śāke*, V. 68.4 *ṛtam-ṛtena sapantā* 'conforming to or joining *ṛta* with *ṛta*', where '*ṛtena*' appears to mean the correct course of sacrificial rites and '*ṛtam*' the settled order in the universe. Soma is said to be the thread of *ṛta* spread on the *daśāpavitra* (Rg. IX. 73.9 '*ṛtasya tantur-vitataḥ pavitra ā*). In

4. ऋतावाना ऋतजाता ऋतावृधो धोरासो अनुतद्विषः । तेषां धः सुम्ने सच्छविर्मे मरु
इयाम ये च सूरयः ॥ ऋ. VII. 66.13

Rg. I. 84.4 it is said 'O Indra, drink this (soma) that is extracted ...the streams of the bright (soma) flow towards thee in the seat of *ṛta*' (i. e. in the soma sacrifice). Vide also Rg. IV. 1.13—(asmākam-atra pitaro manuṣyā abhi pra sedur-ṛtam-ā śuṣāṇāḥ) 'in this world former men, our ancestors, approached *ṛta* etc.'; Rg. I. 71.3 (dadhannṛtam dhanayannasya dhītim-ādidaryo) Rg. X. 67.2 (ṛtam śamsanta ṛju diḍhyānā...yajñasya dhāma prathamam mananta) 'the Angirases,, declaring the *ṛta* and reflecting straightforwardly first thought of the abode of Yajña'; Rg. X. 37.1 (maho devāya tad-ṛtam saparyata, 'offer this *ṛta* to the great God').

The conception of *ṛta* as a moral imperative occurs in several passages. Rg. I. 90.6 (madhu vātā ṛtāyate madhu kṣaranti sindhavaḥ) 'the winds carry sweets, the rivers do the same to him who keeps *ṛta*'; Rg. V. 12.2 'O Agni, that knowest *ṛta*, know *ṛta* alone (in me).....I shall not resort to magic either by force or by duplicity, I shall conform to *ṛta* of the reddish bull (i. e. of Agni)⁵; Rg. X. 87.11 'O Agni! may the evil spirit who injures *ṛta* by anṛta be thrice bound in thy fetters'. Yama in rejecting Yami's advances says (Rg. X. 10.4) 'What indeed we never did before (shall we do it now?); shall we who have spoken *ṛta* (so far) now speak anṛta?' (ṛtā vadanto anṛtam rapema).

In two or three instances *ṛta* appears to be almost personified and invoked as a divinity. 'O Agni! for us offer sacrifice to Mitra and Varuṇa, to the gods and to the great (bṛhat) *ṛta*' (Rg. I. 75. 5). Similarly, in Rg. X. 66.4 the great (*mahat*) *ṛta* is mentioned alongside of Aditi, Heaven and Earth, Indra, Viṣṇu, the Maruts &c.

Ṛta and *satya* were distinguished in several passages of the Rgveda. For example, Rg. V. 51.2 speaks of the Viśve Devas as 'ṛtadhīṭayaḥ' (whose thoughts were fixed on *ṛta*) and 'satyadharmāṇaḥ' (whose characteristic is truth or whose dharmas are true). In Rg. IX. 113.4 *ṛta* and *satya* both occur and appear to mean almost the same thing. In Rg. X. 190.1 *ṛta* and *satya* are distinguished as having sprung from 'tapas'. *Rta* involves a wider conception and *satya* had originally a restricted meaning (viz. truth or static order). The word anṛta, however, is the

5. ऋतं चिकित्स्व ऋतमिच्छिकिञ्चुतस्य धारा अन्तु त्वान्धि पूर्वीः । नाहं यादुःखस्य
द्वयेन ऋतं सपान्यरुचस्य वृष्णः । ऋ. V. 12.2.

opposite of both *ṛta* and *satya* as may be seen from Rg. X. 10.4, Rg. VII. 49.3 (Varuṇa who marks the *satya* and *anṛta* of people), Rg. X. 124.5 (Varuṇa who separates *anṛta* by means of *ṛta*). Gradually, however, the word *ṛta* receded into the back-ground and *satya* took its place even in Vedic literature, though here and there (as in Tai. Up. II. 1 and I.9.1) both *ṛta* and *satya* are found in juxtaposition.

The sages of the Rgveda were acutely conscious of sin or guilt and pray to the gods, particularly to Varuṇa and the Ādityas, for forgiveness and for being freed from the consequences of sin. In this connection they employ numerous words such as *āgas*, *enas*, *agha*, *durita*, *duṣkṛta*, *drugdha*, *ainhas*. A few examples of the employment of these words may be cited here. The most frequent words are *āgas* and *enas*, both of which appear to import sin in its deepest and most ethical sense. Rg. VII. 86 is a hymn to Varuṇa in which there are several verses that breathe a deep and heart-felt consciousness of guilt. The sage begins in verse 3 by saying that all wise men of whom he inquired told him the same thing viz. 'Varuṇa is angry with you'. Then the sage proceeds 'O Varuṇa! what is that great guilt (*āgas*) (of mine) whereby you desire to injure your worshipper and a friend? Declare that to me, then I shall quickly approach thee with an obeisance and be free from sin (*enas*). Cast away from us the transgressions (*drugdha*) of our father and those that we committed in our own person;...free Vasiṣṭha (from guilt) like a calf from the rope (that binds it)'. In Rg. VII. 89.5 (almost equal to Atharva-veda VI. 51.3) the sage says 'whatever transgressions (*abhidroha*) we who are mere men have practised as against the divine hosts and whatever *dharma*s laid down by you we may have confounded through our ignorance (or heedlessness) do not destroy us on account of that guilt (*enas*). It will be noticed that in these verses the words *āgas*, *abhidroha* and *enas* are employed in the same verses and therefore practically mean the same thing. In Rg. II. 27.14 the sage prays 'O Aditi! O Mitra! O Varuṇa! take pity on us though we may have committed some sin against you'. In Rg. II. 28.5 Varuṇa is implored to loosen sin (*āgas*) from the devotee just like a girdle. Rg. VIII. 45.34 states: 'O Indra! do not kill us for one sin, for two sins or three sins or for many (*āgas*).' In Rg. II. 29.1 the Ādityas are implored⁶ 'cast away from me sin (*āgas*) as a woman who gives birth to a child in secret'. For some other passages

6. धृतरता आदित्या इषिरा आरे मत्कर्तृ रहस्रविवागः । ऋ. II. 29.1.

in which *āgas* or its opposite *anāgas* occurs, vide Rg. I. 162.22, I. 185. 8, II.29.5, IV. 12.4, IV. 54.3, VII. 51.1, VII. 57.4, V. 85.7, VII. 87.7, VII. 93.7, X. 36.12, X. 37.7 and 9. *Āgas* and *enas* are employed in the same verse, Rg. IV.12.4 'O Agni! Whatever sin (*āgas*) we may have committed through heedlessness make us free from it before Aditi and loosen from us our sins (*enas*) from all sides'.

Some more passages about *enas* are: Rg. VI. 51.7 'May we not have to enjoy (i. e. suffer for) the *enas* committed by another' and Rg. VI. 51.8 'Whatever sin be committed by me I shall remove it by obeisance'; Rg. VI. 74.3 'O Soma and Rudra! Loosen from us and cast away from us whatever sin attaches to our person'; Rg. VII. 20.1 'Indra is our saviour even from a great sin'; vide also Rg. I. 189. 1, II. 28. 7, VII. 52. 2. The word '*agha*', also seems to mean sin. 'Apa naḥ śośucad-aghāṃ' (may our sins perish) is the refrain of Rg. I.97. 1-8. 'O gods! May your fetters and may sins (*aghāni*) be far away from us' (II. 29. 5, in which verse in the first half '*āgaḥ*' occurs); X. 117. 6 (kevalāgho bhavati kevalādī) 'one who simply eats food alone (without offering to others) reaps only sin'.

Another word is *amhas*. The following passages may be cited. In Rg. II. 28. 6 Varuṇa is implored 'remove *amhas* (sin) as one removes the rope from the (neck) of the calf; one has not the power even to wink without you (your favour)' ⁷. It should be noted that in the preceding verse (II. 28.5) already quoted the simile of the girdle is employed with regard to *āgas*. 'May Indra take us away from *amhas* as persons on both sides (of a river) call one who is going in a boat' (Rg. III. 32. 14.); 'No evil caused by the gods or by men reaches him from any side who worships Agni with fuel, oblation or sacrifice' ⁸ Rg. VIII. 19. 6; 'May Aditi, the mother of the affluent Mitra and Varuṇa, save us from all sin' (Rg. X. 36. 3).⁹ Rg. X. 36. 2 also prays Heaven and Earth, the upholders of *ṛta*, to protect the sage from '*amhas*'. Vide also Rg. X. 126. 2.

Another important word is *vrjina* which is often placed in opposition to *sādhu* or *rju*. The Ādityas are said to 'see inside

7. दामेव वत्साद्विमुग्ध्यहो नहि त्वदारे निमिषश्चनेशे । ऋ. II. 28-6; compare II. 28.5 'वि मच्छथाय रक्षनामिवाग ऋध्याम ते वरुण स्वायुतस्य ॥'.

8. न तमहो देवकृतं कुतश्चन न मर्त्यकृतं नशत् । ऋ. VIII. 19-6

9. विश्वस्मान्नो अदितिः पातंहसो माता मित्रस्य वरुणस्य रेवतः । ऋ. X. 36-3.

(the hearts of men) sins as well as good (thoughts and actions)¹⁰ and it is added that everything though far-off is near to them who are kings. In Rg. II. 27. 2 the Ādityas are called 'avṛjināḥ' (free from *vṛjina*). The Sun is said to mark among men their right and sinful deeds (Rg. IV. 1. 17). The same words (*rju marteṣu vṛjinā ca paśyan*) occur in Rg. VI. 51. 2 and VII. 60.2 about the Sun.

The word '*anṛta*' is often used in the Rgveda. It has already been shown how Varuṇa is said to mark the *satya* and *anṛta* of men. In Rg. VII. 60. 5 it is said 'these gods, Mitra, Aryaman and Varuṇa mark (or know) many sins; they flourish in the abode of *ṛta*'. Rg. VII. 66. 13 calling Mitra, Varuṇa and Aryaman haters of *anṛta* has already been quoted (in n. 4).

The word '*durita*' is sometimes used in the sense of sin. In Rg. I. 23. 22 the waters are invoked as follows:¹¹ 'O waters! carry away from me whatever sin may exist in me, whatever transgressions I may have been guilty of as regards my sensual appetite or whatever falsehood I may have uttered'. Here all three words '*durita*, *droha* and *anṛta*' are brought together and convey almost the same idea, viz. sin or guilt against the law of the Gods. In Rg. I. 185. 10 Heaven and Earth are called father and mother and are invoked to save the worshipper from *durita* (sin) which involves blame (*pātām-avadyād-duritād*). '*Avadya*' means '*garhya*' acc. to Pāṇ. III. 1. 101. Rg. VII. 82. 7 states 'Him neither *amhas* (sin) nor *durita* nor worry reaches from anywhere to whose sacrifice you go, O Mitra and Varuṇa!'. In Rg. X. 126. 1 '*amhas*' and '*durita*' are brought together (*na tam-amho na duritam devāso aṣṭa martyam*). In Rg. VIII. 67. 21 the words *amhati* and *rapas*¹² seem to be employed in the sense of sin. '*Duṣkṛta*' (evil deed) is used in the sense of sin in Rg. VIII. 47. 13 and in Rg. X. 164. 3 Agni is implored to keep far away from the worshipper all sins¹³. The word '*pāpa*' generally¹⁴

10. अन्तः पश्यन्ति वृजिनोत् साधु सर्वं राजभ्यः परमा चिदन्ति । ऋ. II. 27-3 ; आ सूर्यो बृहतस्तिष्ठदज्राँ ऋजु मर्तेषु वृजिना च पश्यन् ॥ ऋ. IV. 1-17.

11. इदमापः प्रवहत यत्किं च दुरितं मायि । यद्वाहमभिदुद्रोह यद्वा शेष उताचूतम् ॥ ऋ. I. 23-22. शेष (or-फ) means मेढ.

12. वि षु द्वेषो व्यंहतिमादित्यासो वि संहतिम् । विष्वग्वि बृहता रपः ॥ ऋ. VIII. 67-21 ; 'रपः रिपमिति पापनामनी भवतः' निरुक्त IV. 21.

13. यदाविर्यदपीक्ष्यं देवासो अस्ति दुष्कृतम् । त्रिते तद्विश्वमाप्त्य आरे अस्मदधातु ॥ ऋ. VIII. 47-13 ; अग्निर्विश्वान्यप दुष्कृतान्यनुष्टान्यारे अस्मदधातु ॥ ऋ. X. 164-3

14. पापमाहुः स्वसारं निगच्छत । ऋ. X. 10-12 ; पापासः सन्तो अघृता असारय इदं पदमजनता गभीरम् ॥ ऋ. IV. 5-5.

occurs in the Rg. in the sense of 'sinner' (Rg. VIII. 61. 11, X. 10. 12, IV. 5. 5) or 'sinful' or 'evil' (Rg. X. 108. 6, X. 164. 5, I. 129. 11). In Rg. VII. 32. 18, VII. 94. 3, VIII. 19. 26 'pāpatva' occurs and appears to mean 'sinfulness'. In the Brāhmaṇas 'pāpam' (neuter) occurs in the sense of 'sin' as in Śat. Br. XI. 2. 7. 19; vide also¹⁵ Ait. Br. 33. 5. In the Upaniṣads 'pāpam' means 'sin' (e. g. in Tai. Up. II. 9, Chāndogya IV. 14. 3). Certain important modifications of the doctrine about sin and *Karma* were introduced in the Upaniṣads and the Bhagavadgītā, which will be discussed later on.

In spite of the voluminous references to the consciousness of guilt and sin in the Rgveda and to the transgression of divine laws briefly indicated above, European scholars were not wanting who boldly affirmed that the idea of sin was altogether unknown to the Rgvedic sages. Vide S. B. E. vol. I. p. XXII where Max-Muller replies 'the gradual growth of the concept of guilt is one of the most interesting lessons which certain passages of these ancient hymns can teach us.'

How sin arises in the individual mind has been a difficult problem at all times¹⁶. Men are conscious of the sins they commit, though they may have no definite conclusions or theories about the origin of sin. In the Rg. VII. 86. 6 a sage¹⁷ pleads with Varuṇa that sin is not due to a man's own power, but it is rather due to fate, to *surā* (intoxicants), to anger, dice or heedlessness and even dream state leads one to commit what is not right. In the Kauṣītaki-brāhmaṇopaniṣad (III. 9) it is stated: 'the Lord of all makes that man perform good works whom He desires to raise to higher worlds

15. सहोवाचाजीर्तः सौयवसिस्तद्वै मा तात तपति पापं कर्म मया कृतम् । ऐ. ब्रा. 33.5 (= VII.17.)

16. Christianity seems to have solved it by stating that the source of actual sin is the Devil (Matthew 13. 39) and by the legend of Adam's Fall (vide Romans 5. 12 'as by one man sin entered into the world and death by sin') it affirmed that there was a dose of original sin in all men. In modern times many people don't accept the idea of 'original sin'; for example, Sir Oliver Lodge says (in his article on 'Christian Doctrine') in Hibbert Journal for 1903-4 at p. 466 "As for 'original sin' or 'birth sin' or other notion of that kind ... that sits absolutely lightly on him (the man of to-day). As a matter of fact it is non-existent, and none but a monk could have invented it'.

17. न स्त्रो दक्षो वरुण ध्रतिः सा सुरा मन्दुर्विभीदको आचिन्ति । अस्ति ज्यायाः ॥ उपारे स्वमन्त्रेनैव दत्तस्य प्रयोता ॥ ऋ. VII. 86.6.

than these and He makes that man commit bad deeds whom He wishes to drag down'.¹⁸ Here it appears to be suggested that some men are chosen by God for being saved and some are chosen for being damned. This sounds like the Calvinistic doctrine of pre-destination. In the Bhagavadgītā (III. 36) Arjuna questions Śrīkṛṣṇa as follows: 'impelled by whom does a man commit sin as if constrained thereto by force, even though he does not desire to do so'? The answer given is (III. 37) 'it is lust and anger springing from the element (*guṇa*) of *rajas* (passion) that are the enemies of man in this world. In another place the Bhagavadgītā (XVI. 21) says 'this¹⁹ is the three-fold door or entrance to Hell that is ruinous to the self viz. lust, anger and greed; therefore a man must shun these three.' But it must be said that this does not go to the real root of the matter. The question is why should carnal lust, anger or greed themselves arise in the mind of man. The only answer that is indicated is in accordance with the tenets of the Sāṃkhya philosophy viz. that there are three *gūṇas*, *sattva*, *rajas* and *tamas* which combine in various proportions in different men and that it is *rajo-guṇa* that is the cause of man's sinfulness. In the Śānti-parva, chap. 163, it is stated that there are thirteen very powerful enemies of men beginning with anger (*krodha*) and *kāma* (lust) and it is said that *krodha* springs from *lobha* (covetousness), which latter arises from ignorance (verses 7 and 11). But there is no satisfactory discussion of the origin of ignorance in that chapter. Gautama 19.2 observes²⁰ that 'man in this world is polluted by a vile action such as sacrificing for a man unworthy to offer a sacrifice, eating forbidden food, speaking what ought not to be spoken, neglecting what is prescribed and practising what is forbidden'. Yājñavalkya III. 219 prescribes: 'by

18. एष ह्येव साधु कर्म कारयति तं यमेभ्यो लोकेभ्यो उज्जिनीषते एष उ एवासाधु कर्म कारयति तं यमधो निनीषते। कौषीतकिना. उप. III. 9. This is the basis of Brahmasūtra II. 1.34 and II. 3.41.

19. त्रिविधं नरकस्येदं द्वारं नाशनमात्मनः। कामः क्रोधस्तथा लोभस्तस्मादेतत्त्रयं त्यजेत्॥ भगवद्गीता XVI. 21 = विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 33.6.

20. विहितस्याननुष्ठानाभिन्दितस्य च सेवनात्। अनिग्रहाच्चेन्द्रियाणां नरः पतन-
मुच्छति॥ या. III. 219; अकुर्वन् विहितं कर्म प्रतिषिद्धानि चाचरन्॥ प्रायश्चित्तीयते ह्येवं नरो
मिथ्या तु वर्तयन्॥ शान्तिपर्व 34.2. गौतम appears to mention the two causes of the
rise of sin stated by Yāj. in the first half of III. 219 'अथ स्वत्वयं पुरुषो याप्स्येदं
कर्मणा लिप्यते यथैतद्व्याज्ययाजनमभक्ष्यभक्षणमवद्यवदने शिष्टस्याक्रिया प्रतिषिद्धसेवनामिति।
गौ. 19.2. शबर on जै. XII. 3.16 echoes the very words of गौ. viz. शिष्टस्याक्रिया
प्रतिषिद्धसेवनामिति'.

omitting to do what is ordained, by resorting to what is condemned (prohibited) and by not controlling the senses, man incurs fall (i. e. sin). Manu XI. 44 and Śāntiparva 34.2 are similar verses. The Mitākṣarā explains that matters ordained are such as performing *Sandhyā* (morning and evening adorations) and Agnihotra and what are condemned are such actions as drinking liquor. Viśvarūpa explains that *patana* (fall or sinfulness) in Yāj. III. 219 is not used in the technical sense attached to that word by Gautama 21.4 viz. 'to be a *patita* means to be deprived of the right to follow the lawful occupations of twice-born men,' but it is used only in the sense that the man so acting (as mentioned in Yāj. III. 219) becomes liable to undergo *prāyaścitta* and that the words of Gautama (21.4) are restricted only to what are called mahāpātakas. The word *pātaka* is derived from the causal of the root 'pat.' Vide Medhātithi on Manu XI.54 'pātakasabdah pātayatīti vyutpattyā sarva-vyatikramesu vartate' and Madanapārijāta p. 786. In ancient works the word *patanīya* (meaning the cause of *patana*) has been employed as in Āp. Dh. S. I. 7.21.7. The Pr. V. (p. 35) paraphrases *patanīyāni* by 'pātakāni' and derives it from the root 'pat' (*patatyanena iti patanīyam*) with the addition of the termination 'anīya' according to Pāṇ. III. 3.113. The word occurs also in Yāj. II. 210, III. 297, Śāṅkha quoted by Viśvarūpa on Yāj. III. 237 (in prose) and other smṛtis.

The enumeration of sinful acts and the classifications of sins into several degrees or grades has gone on from very ancient times. In the Rg. X. 5. 6 it is said²¹ 'the wise made (lit. chiselled) seven limits; the man who goes against even one of them becomes sinful'. The Nirukta (VI. 27) explains that the seven sins indicated in this verse are 'theft, violating the bed (of the *guru*), murder of a brāhmaṇa, murder of a bhrūṇa, drinking of liquor, continual performance of the same sinful act, telling a lie as to a sinful matter'. Rg. VII. 86. 6 quoted above (in n. 17) makes it clear that drinking *surā* and playing with dice were regarded as sinful. From the Tai. S. II. 5. 1. 2, V. 3. 12. 1-2, Śat. Br. XIII. 3. 1. 1. and other Brāhmaṇa texts it appears that the murder of a brāhmaṇa was generally regarded in early vedic times as the gravest of all sins, though in the Kāthaka saṃhitā (31. 7) it is stated that there is no sin as

21. सप्त मर्यादाः कवयस्तत्तुस्तासामेकामिदंभ्यं हरो गात् । ऋ. X. 5.6; सप्त एव मर्यादाः कवयश्चक्रुः । तासामेकामपि अधिगच्छन् हस्वान् भवति । स्तेयं तल्पारोहणं ब्रह्महत्या भ्रूणहत्या सुरापानं दुष्कृतस्य कर्मणः पुनः पुनः सेवां पातके अच्युतोद्यमिति । निरुक्त VI. 27.

heinous as killing a bhrūṇa which is even worse than brāhmaṇa murder)²². The Tai. Br. in detailing the story of Ekata, Dvita and Trita who was made a scapegoat for keeping off sins, enumerates the following sinners, viz. sūryābhyudita (one who sleeps on when the sun rises), sūryābhinimrukta (one who slept when the sun set), one who has black nails or teeth, *agradidhuṣu* (one who married a younger sister while the elder sister was yet unmarried), the elder brother remaining unmarried even though a younger brother has married, one who allows his sacred sacrificial fires to be extinguished, the killer of a brāhmaṇa.²³ It may be noticed that most of these occur almost in the same order in Āp. Dh. S. II. 5. 12. 22 where it is²⁴ said that though

22. Bhrūṇahan is either a killer of a learned brāhmaṇa or the killer of a foetus when its sex is not known. Vide H. of Dh. vol. II, p. 148n and vol. III. p. 612n for quotations and explanations. It may be noted that the four main prohibitions contained in the Decalogue (Exodus, chap. 20. 13-16 and Deut. 5. 17-20) against killing human beings, theft, adultery and bearing false witness are to be found in all well-known religious or moral codes.

23. ते देवा आप्येवमृजत । आप्या अमृजत सूर्याभ्युदिते । सूर्याभ्युदितः सूर्याभिनिमृक्ते । सूर्याभिनिमृक्तः कुनखिनि । कुनखी श्यावदति । श्यावदन्नग्रादिधिषौ । अग्रादिधिषुः परिवित्ते । परिवित्तो वीरहाणि । वीरहा ब्रह्महाणि । तद् ब्रह्महणं नात्यच्यवत् । तै. ब्रा. III. 2. 8.11. In the corresponding story in the काठकसंहिता (31.7) we read श्यावदन्पारिवित्ते परिवित्तः परिविविदाने परिविविदानोऽग्रेदिधिषा अग्रेदिधिषुर्दिधिषूपतौ दिधिषूपतिर्वीरहाणि...ब्रह्महाणि भ्रूणहनि भ्रूणहनमेनो नात्येति । The story of Trita is briefly referred to in the Atharvaveda (VI. 113). The germ of it is found in Rg. VIII. 47.13 quoted above in n. 13.

24. अभिनिमृक्ताभ्युदित—कुनखिश्यावदाग्रेदिधिषु—दिधिषूपतिपर्याहितपरीष्ट—परिवित्त—परिवित्त—परिविविदानेषु चोत्तरोत्तरस्मिन्नष्टाचिकरानिवेशो गरीयान् गरीयान् । आप. II. 5. 12. 22. It may be noted that both brothers (elder and younger) and sisters (elder and younger) were held guilty of sin in case of supercession in marriage. परिवित्त and परिवित्त often mean the same thing (viz. an elder brother before whom a younger brother marries or consecrates sacrificial fires). Vide Manu III. 171-172. Acc. to Manu III. 173 a didhiṣūpati is one who feels love for his brother's widow and has intercourse with her under the system of *niyoga*. परिविविदान is the same as परिवित्ता. अग्रेदिधिषु or-पू is explained by Devala and by Aparārka p. 451, by Haradatta on Gaut. 15.15 and Mit. on Yāj. III. 26 as 'a younger sister who marries before her elder sister' and दिधिषु or दिधिषू is the elder sister who is thus superceded by a younger one. In Āp. the word पति is to be connected with both अग्रेदिधिषू and दिधिषू. The Amarakośa explains दिधिषू differently. शङ्खस्मृति (17. 43-44) makes even the father or other guardian for marriage getting a younger son or daughter married before an elder one and the priest officiating at such a marriage equally guilty. 'परिवित्तः परिवित्तः यया च परिविद्यते । व्रतं संवत्सरं कुर्याद्व्याजकपञ्चमाः ॥'.

these actions are not to be styled *patanīyas* according to Āp. yet they cause impurity which being greater and greater in each succeeding one requires higher and higher penances. Āp. adds a few more sinners to those in the Tai. Br. viz. *didhiṣupati* (husband of an elder sister whose younger sister was married before her), *pariyāhita* (an elder brother before whom a younger brother kindled fires), *parivividāna* (a younger brother who takes his share of the ancestral property before his elder brother), *parivinna* (an elder brother before whom a younger brother takes away his share of the ancestral property). The Chāndogya Upaniṣad²⁵ (V. 10. 9.) quotes a verse that declares that the five great sinners are the thief of gold, the drinker of *surā*, the violator of the *guru*'s bed, the murderer of a brāhmaṇa, and one who associates with any of the preceding four. The Br. Up. (IV. 3. 22) mentions as great sinners the thief and the murderer of a *bhrūṇa*.

Coming to the sūtras there is great divergence as to the classification of sins and the enumeration of sins in each class. The Āp. Dh. S. divides sins into two classes viz. *patanīya* (those that cause loss of caste), *aśucikara* (those that cause impurity, though no loss of caste is caused). Āp. Dh. S. (I. 7.21.7-11) states that *patanīya* sins are theft (of gold), crimes whereby one becomes an *abhiṣasta*, complete loss (by neglect) of the Vedic learning that one secured by study, destruction of a foetus, incestuous connection with relations born of the same womb as one's father or mother and with the children of such persons, drinking of *surā*, intercourse with persons with whom intercourse is forbidden, intercourse with the female friend of one's female guru (mother &c.) or with the female friend of one's guru (father &c.) and with the wife of any stranger, constant commission of immoral acts (*adharma*) other than those already mentioned. Āp. Dh. S. I. 7.21.10 notes that, according to some, intercourse with a woman who is not the wife of a *guru* is not a *patanīya* sin. Among acts which render a man impure are (Āp. Dh. S. I. 7. 21. 12-18) the cohabitation of an Ārya woman with śūdras, eating the flesh of forbidden animals such as that of a dog or a human being or village cock or pig or other carnivorous animals, eating the excrement of human beings, partaking of food left by a śūdra, and cohabitation by Ārya men with *apapātra*.

25. तदेव श्लोकः । स्तेनो हिरण्यस्य सुरां पिबंश्च गुरोस्तल्पमावसन् ब्रह्महत्यां च पतन्ति
चत्वारः पञ्चमश्चाचरंस्तैः ॥ इति । छां. उप. V. 10.9.

women.²⁶ According to some, those acts that are declared to be *asucikara* are also *patanīyas*. Āp. Dh. S. (I. 7.21.19) states that acts other than those enumerated are also *asucikara*. Āp. Dh. S. (I. 9. 24.6-9) enumerates those who are *abhiśasta*, viz. one who slays a person belonging to the first two varṇas (viz. brāhmaṇa and kṣatriya) who had studied the Veda or who had been initiated for the performance of a soma sacrifice, one who kills a mere brāhmaṇa (though he may not have studied the Veda or be not initiated for a soma sacrifice), also one who destroys the embryo of a brāhmaṇa even though its sex be undistinguishable, or slays a woman who is an *ātreyī* (in her monthly course). The Vasiṣṭhadharmasūtra divides²⁷ sinners into three classes, viz. those who are *enasvins*, those guilty of *mahāpātakas* and those guilty of *upapātakas* (I. 19-23). Among those who are styled *enasvinaḥ* are those mentioned in Āp. Dh. S. II. 5.12.22, with this difference that the 'brahmojjha', who is included among 'patanīyas' by Āp. Dh. S. I. 7. 21. 9 is put among 'enasvins' by Vasiṣṭha. In Vas. 20. 4-12 special *prāyaścittas* for each of these 'enasvinaḥ' (ordinary sinners) are prescribed. The *Mahāpātakas* (mortal sins) according to Vasiṣṭha are five, viz (violating) a *guru's* bed, drinking of spirituous liquor, murder of a *bhrūṇa* (a learned brāhmaṇa), stealing gold from a brāhmaṇa and associating with a *patila*. Those guilty of *upapātakas* (minor sins) are: He who forsakes sacred Vedic fires, he who offends a *guru*, an atheist, he who earns his livelihood from atheists, and he who sells the soma plant. The Baudhāyana Dharmasūtra²⁸ (II. 1) divides sins into *patanīya*, *upapātaka* and *asucikara*. Among the first it cites making voyages by sea, stealing the property of a brāhmaṇa or misappropriating a deposit, giving false evidence

26. For the meaning of *apapātra* vide H. of Dh. vol. II pp. 309n and 785n. For the meaning of *ātreyī*, vide H. of Dh. vol. III p. 527 note 970.

27. सूर्याभ्युदितः सूर्याभिनिर्मुक्तः कुनखी श्यावदन्तः परिवर्त्तिः परिवेत्ताग्नेदिधिश्चर्वि-
पूतिर्वीरहा ब्रह्मोज्झ इत्येनास्विनः । पञ्च महापातकान्याचक्षते । गुरुतल्पं सुरापानं भ्रणहत्या
ब्राह्मणसुवर्णपहरणं पतितसंयोगश्च ब्रह्मेण वा यौनेन वा । ... योगनीनपदिध्येद्वरुं च यः प्रति-
दध्नुयाज्जास्तिको नास्तिकवृत्तिः सोमं च विक्रीणीयादित्युपपातकानि । वसिष्ठ I. 19-23.

28. अथ पतनीयानि । समुद्रसंयानम् । ब्रह्मस्वन्यासापहरणम् । भूम्यक्षतम् । सर्व-
पण्यैर्व्यवहरणम् । शुद्रसेवनम् । शुद्राभिजननम् । तदपत्यत्वं च । ... अथोपपातकानि ।
अगम्यागमनं शुर्वीसखीं गुरुसखीमपपात्रां पतितां गत्वा भेषजकरणं ग्रामयाजनं रङ्गोपजीवनं
नाट्याचार्यता गोमहिषीरक्षणं यज्ञान्यदप्येवं युक्तं कन्यादूषणमिति । ... अथाशुचिकारणम् ।
यतमभिचारोऽनाहिताग्नेरुच्छृत्तिर्वा समावृत्तस्य भैक्षचर्या तस्य चैव गुरुकुले वासः । अथ
चतुर्भ्यो मासेभ्यस्तस्य चाध्यापनं नक्षत्रनिर्देशश्चेति । बौ. ध. सू. II. 1.50-56, 60-61, 63-64.

regarding land (dispute), trading with merchandise of all descriptions, serving śūdras, begetting a son on a female of the śūdra caste and begetting a child (either male or female) from her²⁹. The upapātakas, acc. to Baud. Dh. S. (II. 1. 60-61), are: intercourse with females who must not be approached, cohabitation with the female friend of a female *guru* or with the female friend of a male *guru* or with an apapātra woman or with a female outcast, following the profession of medicine, officiating as a priest for a village, living by dramatic performances, following the profession of a teacher of dancing or singing or acting, tending cows and buffaloes³⁰ and similar (low occupations) and fornication. Among āsucikara (causing impurity), Baud. Dh. S. mentions gambling, black magic, subsisting by gleanings fallen in the field by one who has not consecrated sacred fires, subsisting by begging on the part of one who has returned to his home after finishing Vedic study, staying for more than four months at his teacher's seminary on the part of him who has finished his studies, teaching one who has finished his studies, gaining livelihood by astrology. Gautama (21. 1-3) appears to include among patanīyas the usual five mortal sins and also some of those that are mentioned by Āp. Dh. S. (I. 7. 21. 9-11) and Vasiṣṭha I. 23 (such as *nāstika*) and adds a few more (such as not casting off persons guilty of patanīyas, forsaking blameless relatives and instigating others to commit acts causing loss³¹ of caste.

29. That this is the correct translation of Baud. and not the one in S. B. E. vol. XIV p. 218 'becoming thereby her son' is clear from Manu III. 16 'शौनकस्य सुतोत्पत्त्या तदपत्यतया भृगोः'. Śaunaka condemned the begetting of a son from a śūdra female (and not the begetting of a daughter), while Bhṛgu condemned the begetting of a child (whether male or female did not matter).

30. It must be supposed that these lists relate to brāhmaṇas and kṣatriyas alone. Trading with merchandise or tending cows could not have been regarded as patanīya for Vaiśyas since trade and tending cows have been always prescribed as their special avocations. Vide Āp. Dh. S. II. 5. 10. 7, Gaut. X. 50, Manu X. 79, Yāj. I. 119. Following the profession of medicine or living by teaching dancing or by going on the stage made brāhmaṇas unfit to be invited at a śrāddha. Vide Gaut. 15. 15-16 for long lists of those brāhmaṇas who were not to be invited at Śrāddha dinners &c.

31. ब्रह्महत्यापशुवत्तल्पगमातृपितृयोनिस्सम्बन्धागस्तेन नास्तिकानिर्न्दितकर्माभ्यामिषपतिता-
ह्याग्न्यपतितत्यागिनः पतिताः । पातकसंयोजकाश्च । तैश्चाब्दं समाचरन् ।... कौटिल्यस्य राजगोमि-
पैशुनं शूरोरच्यताभिर्शंसनं महापातकसमानि । अपंकत्यानां प्राणदुर्बालाद् मन्दन्तु ब्रह्म-
तन्मन्त्रकुद्वकीर्णपतितसावित्रीकेषूपपातकम् । गौतम 21.1-3, 10-11.

The above statement about the classification of sins and their inclusion among the several classes or grades of sins will show that among the early sūtra works there was no general agreement about the nature and number of mahāpātakas, upapātakas and other classes of sins, even though as early as the Chāndogya Upaniṣad the mortal sins had been declared to be five. It must be supposed that that Upaniṣad represented only one school of thought in the times of Āp., Baud. and Gaut., who did not entirely accept the tradition of that Upaniṣad, but followed other divergent ideas. It is impossible to suppose that the verse quoted in that Upaniṣad is later than the Dharma-sūtras of Āp., Gaut., Baud., and Vas.

It appears that Kātyāyana³² divided sinful acts into five classes viz. *mahāpāpa* (mortal sins), *atipāpa* (the highest sins than which there is nothing worse), *pātaka* (sins similar to mahāpātakas), *prāsaṅgika* (due to association or contact) and *upapātaka* (minor sins). The Bhaviṣya-purāṇa also says that those sins that are declared to be equal to mahāpātakas (by Manu and others) are called pātakas. Vṛddha-Hārīta also (IX. 215-216) speaks of five kinds viz. *mahāpāpa*, *pātaka*, *anupātaka*, *upapāpa* and *prakīrṇaka* (miscellaneous) and states (IX. 216-218) that those sins which are said to be like mahāpātaka are pātakas, that anupātakas are sins lesser than pātakas, that upapātakas are lesser than pātakas and *prakīrṇaka* sins are the least sinful of all. The Viṣṇudharmasūtra (33.3-5) speaks of nine kinds of lapses viz. *atipātaka*, *mahāpātaka*, *anupātaka*, *upapātaka*, *jātibhramśakara* (effecting loss of caste), *saṅkarikaraṇa*, (rendering one as degraded as a man of a mixed caste), *apātrikaraṇa* (rendering the perpetrator unworthy of receiving a gift), *malāvaha* (causing defilement) and *prakīrṇaka* (miscellaneous). *Atipātakas*, acc. to Viṣṇu Dh. S. 34.1, are sexual intercourse with one's mother, daughter or daughter-in-law and the only expiation for them is entering fire. Manu omits the separate mention of *atipātaka* and *anupātaka* and includes most of them under those that he designates as equal to one of the four well-known mahāpātakas. Kātyāyana quoted in the Prāyaścittamuktāvali of Divākara (folio 3 a) adds sexual intercourse with one's sister as *atipātaka* to the three mentioned by Viṣṇu

32. कात्यायनेन तु महापातकसमानां विष्णुनानुपातकेत्वेनोक्तानां पातकसंज्ञा विज्ञेया।
मिता. on या. III. 242.; महापातकतुल्यानि पापान्युक्तानि यानि तु। तानि पातकसंज्ञानि
ब्रूमहे चोपपातकम्। भविष्यपुराण (ब्राह्मपर्व 190.9.)

Hārta Dh. S. (it appears) quoted by the Mit. knew³³ of a variety of pātakas called anupātaka, but from the way in which the several pātakas are arranged it looks as if *atipātaka* in Hārta was a lesser sin than mahāpātaka. Manu (in chap. XI) refers to all the kinds of pātakas found in the Viṣṇu-dharmasūtra except atipātakas. Usually five mahāpātakas have been enumerated from the days of the Chāndogya Up. (quoted on p. 12) viz. brāhmaṇa murder, drinking spirituous liquor, theft (generally understood as theft of brāhmaṇa's gold), sexual intercourse with the wife of a *guru* and association with the perpetrators of any of these four (for a year³⁴). Vide Vas. I. 19-20, Manu XI. 55, 180, Yāj. III. 227, 261, Viṣṇudharmasūtra 35.1-5, Vṛddha-Hārta IX. 174. Manu mentions certain sins as equal to Mahāpātakas which are styled anupātakas by the Viṣṇudharmasūtra chap. 36. The most elaborate treatment of all kinds of sins in the smṛtis is found in Manu, Yāj and Viṣṇu. There is difference of opinion even among these three on certain points. For example, Manu³⁵ XI. 56 says that forgetting the Veda, reviling the Vedas, giving false evidence, slaying a friend, eating forbidden food and food that is unfit for eating or should not be eaten, are lapses similar to drinking *surā*; while Yāj. III. 228 states that three out of these (viz. reviling the Vedas, slaying a friend and forgetting the Veda studied by a person) along with the reviling of a *guru* by attributing false faults are similar to the murder of a brāhmaṇa. The result is that there is an option as to the expiation to be prescribed for these sins.

33. यत्तु हारीतेनोक्तं—महापातकातिपातकानुपातकोपपातकानामेकतममेव संनिपाते ऋग्-धर्मर्षणमेव त्रिर्जपेत्—इति तन्निमित्तकर्तृविषयम् । मिता. on या. III. 301; in प्रा. प्रकाश (folio 69a) हारीत is quoted as follows: 'पञ्चविधमशुभं भवति प्रासादिकोपपातकपातक-महापातकात्यन्तपातकानि' and it is remarked (folio 69 b) 'प्रासादिकपदेन जातिभ्रंश-कराणि परिशेषाद् गृह्यन्ते.'

34. In the Mahābhāṣya Patañjali mentions at least three of these five : 'यो हि अजानन्वे ब्राह्मणं हन्यात्सुरां वा पिबेत्सोऽपि मन्ये पतितः स्यात् । महाभाष्य vol. I. p. 2; ध्वंसते गुरुतल्पगः । महाभाष्य vol. II. p. 103; वृषलरूपोयस् । अप्ययं पलाण्डुना सुरां पिबेत् । महाभाष्य vol. II. p. 419 on वार्तिक 4 on पा. V. 3.66. In the Khoh copperplate of the Gupta year 214 (533-34 A.D.) it was stated that whoever interfered with the gift would incur the five mahāpātakas and the upapātakas (Gupta Inscriptions p 135).

35. ब्रह्मोज्झता वेदानिन्दा कौटसाक्ष्यं सुहृद्वधः । गर्हितानाद्ययोजग्धिः सुरापानसमानि षड् ॥ मनु XI. 56. ; गुरुणामध्याधिक्षेपो वेदानिन्दा सुहृद्वधः । ब्रह्महत्यासमं ज्ञेयमधीतश्च नानाशनम् ॥ या. III 228. मेधातिथि explains: 'गर्हितं शास्त्रप्रतिषिद्धं लघुनादि । अनाद्यस-मनस्तुष्टिकरं न भोक्ष्य इति कल्प्य (सङ्कल्प्य?) यत्तु ज्यते' ।; compare गौतम 21.10 कौटसाक्ष्यं राजगामि पैशुनं गुरोरनुताभिर्शंसनमिति महापातकसमानि ।

It would be desirable to give some details as regards each of the mahāpātakas and then to describe the other varieties of sins and then to set out the expiations prescribed for all of them. It should be noted that both the secular law of penalties and the ecclesiastical rules about expiations made a difference between a sinful act intentionally committed (*kāmataḥ*) and one committed through ignorance or heedlessness and between an act done only once (*sakṛt*) or done repeatedly (*asakṛt*)

Brahmahatyā. Hatyā or *vadha* (killing) is applied to an act which immediately or after some time results in causing loss of life directly without the intervention of any other cause.³⁶ The Agnipurāṇa (173. 1), the Mit., the Prāyaścittaviveka (p. 47) and other works define what is meant by *vadha*. A man may be the cause of the death of a brāhmaṇa in five ways, viz. he may himself kill (i. e. he becomes the *kartā*), he may incite another to kill (*prayojaka*) by ordering that other to do so (as a king or noble by ordering his servant) or by imploring another to kill and giving advice about the killing, he may encourage another to kill by his own approval (*anumantā*), or by helping the killer when he wavers or by offering protection to the killer against others (*anugrāhaka*) and by becoming a *nimitta*.³⁷

The Mit. on Yāj. III. 227 and 243 (quoting verses from Paithīnasi) explains all these at length. For the definition of *anugrāhaka* it relies on a verse of Manu 'Where many persons are armed and have a common purpose in view, if even one of them kills a person, all of them are guilty of murder', which is very much like sec. 34 of the Indian Penal Code. This distinction into several degrees of killers is an ancient one and is based on Āp. Dh. S. II. 11. 29. 1-2 'He who³⁸ instigates, he who approves, and he who commits an act—these share its results in heaven and hell; but he amongst these who contributes most to

36. हन्तिरयं प्राणवियोगकरणे व्यापारे रूढः । यद् व्यापारसमनन्तरं कालान्तरे वा कारणा-
न्तरनिरपेक्षः प्राणवियोगो भवति स ब्राह्मणं हतवानिति ब्रह्महा । मिता. on या. III. 227 ;
स्यात्प्राणवियोगफलो व्यापारो हननं स्मृतम् । अग्निपु. 173.1, quoted by प्राय०तत्त्व p. 519.

37. बाधित्वं पञ्चाविधं कर्ता प्रयोजकोऽनुमन्तानुग्राहको निमित्ती चेति । प्राय०वि. p. 47 ;
अनुग्राहकश्च यः पलायमानमभिप्रेतमुपकुण्ठन् परेभ्यश्च हन्तारं परिरक्ष्य हन्तुर्द्विमानमुपजनयन्-
पकरोति स उच्यते । अत एव मनुना ग्राहकस्य हिंसाफलसम्बन्धो दर्शितः । बहूनामेकार्याणां
सर्वेषां शास्त्रधारिणाम् । ययको घातयेत्तत्र सर्वे ते घातकाः स्मृताः ॥ इति । मिता. on या. III. 227.
The verse बहूनामेक० occurs in अग्निपु. 173.3.

38. प्रयोजयिता मन्ता कर्तेति स्वर्णनरकफलेषु कर्मसु भागिनः । यो भूय आरभति पाप्मनं
फलविशेषः ॥ आप. ध. सू. II. 11.29. 1-2.

the accomplishment of the act obtains a greater share of the results'. A *nimittin*³⁹ is defined by Mit. as one that angers another (who is a brāhmaṇa) by rebuking or beating or depriving him of wealth and the like and in whose presence and on account of whom the brāhmaṇa that is angered kills himself. The Mit. quotes a verse of Viṣṇu and also another verse (without name) on this point. If a person kills a brāhmaṇa boy whose *upanayana* had not been performed he was yet regarded as guilty of brāhmaṇa murder.⁴⁰ The Sāmavidhāna Br. I. 7. 5, Āp. Dh. S. (I. 9. 24. 6-9), Vas. 20. 34, Manu XI. 87, Yāj. III. 251 held that killing even a kṣatriya or vaiśya who had studied the Veda or had been initiated for a *soma* sacrifice rendered the killer guilty of *brahmahatyā*, as also the killing of the foetus (of brāhmaṇa parents) whose sex was unknown and of a woman who was an ātreya.⁴¹ Killing a brāhmaṇa woman other than an ātreya or other than the wife of a sacrificer engaged in a *soma* sacrifice was only an upapātaka, as Manu (XI. 66) and Yāj. (III. 236) lay down. Viśvarūpa on Yāj. III. 264 says that no *prāyaścitta* can expiate the sin of killing a woman intentionally. In the case of the three varṇas other than that of brāhmaṇa some smṛtis like that of Cyavana⁴² laid down other mahāpātakas in addition to the five, viz. punishing one who should not be punished and fleeing from the battle-field are additional mahāpātakas for kṣatriyas, employing false balances and weights for vaiśyas, the selling of flesh, injuring a brāhmaṇa, sexual intercourse with a brāhmaṇa woman, the drinking of the

39. तथा योपि भर्त्सनताडनधनापहारादिना परान्कोपयति सोऽपि मरणहेतुभूतमन्यु-
त्पादनद्वारेण हिंसाहेतुर्भवत्येव। अत एव विष्णुनोक्तम्। आक्रुष्टस्ताडितो वापि धनैर्वा विप्रयोजितः।
यमुद्दिश्य त्यजेत् प्राणास्तमाहुर्ब्रह्मघातकम् ॥ तथा। ज्ञातिमित्रकलत्रार्थं सुहृत्क्षेत्रार्थमेव च।
यमुद्दिश्य त्यजेत् प्राणास्तमाहुर्ब्रह्मघातकम् ॥ इति। The प्राय. वि. p. 57 ascribes the
first verse to षड्विंशन्मत and the 2nd to बृहस्पति and cites two more verses of
similar import from Bṛhaspati. The स्मृतिश्रु. (प्राय.) p. 862 ascribes both
verses to विष्णु and quotes similar verses from सुमन्तु. The verse आक्रुष्टः is
almost the same as अग्निपु. 173.4.

40. अत्र ब्राह्मणवधे संस्कृतवाचिद्विजपदस्य केनाप्यप्रयुक्तत्वात् सर्वैर्भुनिभिर्ब्राह्मणपद-
स्यैव प्रयोगात्तस्य च जातिवचनत्वात् अनुपजीतब्राह्मणवधेऽपि महापातकम्। प्राय. वि. p. 86.

41. पूर्वयोर्वर्णयोर्वेदाध्यायं हत्वा सवनगतं वाभिज्ञस्तः। ब्राह्मणमात्रं च। गर्भं च तस्या-
विज्ञातम्। आत्रेयीं च स्त्रियम्। आप. ध. सू. I. 9.24 6-9; राजन्यवैश्यौ सवनगतौ हत्वा
ब्राह्मणस्वकल्पेन शुद्धाशुद्धीयमुत्तरम्। सामविधानत्वा. I. 7.5.

42. क्षत्रियादीनामपरमपि महापातकमाह चयवनः। ब्रह्महत्या सुरापानं युक्तं
ब्राह्मणसुवर्णहरणं द्विजानां महापातकानि। अदण्डपदण्डनं युधि पलायनं
मानतुलावृत्तत्वं वैश्यस्य। मांसविक्रयणं ब्रह्महत्या ब्राह्मणीगमनं कपिलादुग्धपानं क्षत्रिय-
दीपकालिका on या. III, 227.

milk of a kapilā (dark-brown) cow in the case of śūdras. If a brāhmaṇa or any other human being or a cow died while a competent doctor was administering treatment to them by means of drugs, oils or food, or cauterization by cutting or by opening a vein the medical man incurred no sin.⁴³ But if a quack pretending to know medicine administered such treatment and death followed, Yāj. II. 242 prescribed various punishments. If a brāhmaṇa administers moderate corporal punishment to his son, pupil or wife for some fault and the son or pupil or wife suddenly dies he incurs no sin, according to the Bhaviṣyapurāṇa and the Agnipurāṇa.⁴⁴ Gautama (II. 48-50), Āp. Dh. S. I. 2. 8. 29-30, Manu VIII. 299-300 (= Matsyapurāṇa 227. 152-154), Viṣṇu Dh. S. 71. 81-82, Nārada (abhyupetyāśuśrūṣā 13-14) lay down that the punishment should be administered with a rope or bamboo slip on the back (but never on the head or chest) and Manu (VIII. 300) provides that if these restrictions were violated the punisher would incur the same guilt or punishment as a thief. Vide H. of Dh. vol. II. pp. 362-363 for this topic.

One important question that very much exercised the minds of ancient and medieval Dharmaśāstra writers is whether a man can kill a brāhmaṇa ātatāyin in self-defence without incurring any sin or punishment by the king. There is great divergence of views on this point, which has been dealt with at some length in H. of Dh. vol. II pp. 148-151 and vol. III pp. 517-518. The conclusion of the Mitākṣarā appears to voice the views of most writers that, if a brāhmaṇa comes as an ātatāyin (as an incendiary, as a poisoner, as a kidnapper of women or with the intention of killing or wresting a field), then in self-defence one may oppose him without incurring any sin, but that if the brāhmaṇa offender meets death though the defender did not desire to kill him (but only to stop him by causing injury short of death), the

43. क्रियमाणोपकारे तु मृते विप्रे न पातकम् । या. III. 284; औषधं स्नेहमाहारं वदद्भो-
जान्नादिषु । दीयमाने विपत्तिः स्यान्न स पापेन लिप्यते ॥ संवर्त 138 (The Ānan. ed. reads
last pāda as पुण्यमेव न पातकम्) q. by विश्वरूप on या. III. 262, by the मिता. on या.
III. 227 (with two more verses), by प्राय. वि. p 56 (reads second half as प्राणिनां
प्राणवृत्त्यर्थं प्रायश्चित्तं न विद्यते). The same verse occurs in यम 50, लघुशास्त्र 61, लघु-
हारीत 28. The मिता. and प्राय. वि. quote another verse as संवर्त's which is 'दाहच्छेद-
शिराभेदप्रयत्नैरुपकुर्वताम् । प्राणसंजानासिद्धयर्थं प्रायश्चित्तं न विद्यते' ॥. The अग्निपुराण
173 5 has 'औषधाद्यपकारे तु न पापं स्यात् कृते मृते । पुत्रं शिष्यं तथा भार्यां शासतो न मृते
ह्यपम् ॥.'

44. पुत्रः शिष्यस्तथा भार्या शासितश्चेद्विनश्यति । न शास्ता तत्र दोषेण लिप्यते
सत्तम ॥ भविष्यपु. q. by प्राय. वि. p. 58; आश्वपु. 173.5 is similar.



defender is not liable to be punished by the king and he has to undergo a light expiation (i. e. he is not guilty of brāhmaṇa's murder).⁴⁵

Surāpāna (drinking of *surā*) has been held to be a mahā-pātaka. The word *surā* occurs several times in the Rgveda (e. g. Rg. I. 116.7, I. 191.10, VII. 86.6, VIII. 2.12, X. 107.9). Rg. VII. 86.6 quoted above (in note 17) clearly indicates that *surā* was looked upon by the Rgvedic singers as a cause of sin just as much as gambling. Rg. I. 116.7 (śatam kumbhān asiñcatam surāyāḥ) read with Rg. I. 117.6 (śatam...madhūnām) implies that madhu (honey or some sweet substance) might have been used in preparing *surā*. Soma was a beverage to be offered to the gods and to be drunk by the brāhmaṇa priests and was sharply distinguished from *surā* (e. g. in Tai. S. II.5. 1.1, Vāj. S. 19.7, Śat. Br. V. 1. 5.28). The last furnishes the striking antithesis 'soma is truth, prosperity, light; and *surā* is untruth, misery, darkness'. It appears that long before the Kāthaka Samhitā brāhmaṇas had come to regard the drinking of *surā* as very sinful [XII. 12 'therefore the brāhmaṇa does not drink *surā* (with the idea) that (by drinking it) he may become affected by sin'].⁴⁶ The Chāndogya Up. (V. 10.9) speaks of the drinker of *surā* as a *patita*, while in V. 11.5 king⁴⁷ Aśvapati Kaikeya makes the boast before the five learned brāhmaṇas that had come to him for the knowledge of *Ātman Vaiśvānara* that in his kingdom there was no thief and no drinker of *madya*. Though Manu XI. 54 enumerates the drinking of *surā* among the five mahāpātakas, Yāj. III. 227 speaks of the *madyapa* (drinker of *madya*) as one of the five great sinners. Therefore we must explain what is meant by *surā* and when *surāpāna* becomes a mahāpātaka. By Manu XI. 93 *surā* is said to be the refuse of food and Manu XI. 94 states that *surā* is of three kinds, viz. that prepared from molasses, that from flour and that from madhūka flowers (or from honey). There is a great deal of discussion about *surā* in many of the digests and the propositions

45. अतश्च ब्राह्मणादय आततायिनश्च आत्मादित्राणार्थं हिंसानभिसान्धिना निवार्यमाणाः प्रमादाद्यदि विपद्येरंस्तत्र लघुप्रायश्चित्तं राजदण्डाभावश्चेति निश्चयः । मिता. on II. 21.

46. तस्माद् ब्राह्मणः सुरां न पिबति पाप्मना नेत्संसृज्या इति । काठक XII. 12 q. by the तन्त्रवार्तिक on जै. I. 3.7 p. 210 and by शङ्कराचार्य on वेदान्तसूत्र III. 4.31

47. स ह प्रातः सञ्जिहान उवाच न मे स्तेनो जनपदे न कदर्यो न मद्यपो नानामृतिपाणि-
र्नाविद्वाज स्वैरी स्वैरिणी कुतः ... । छा. उ. V. 11.5.

established by most of them are⁴⁸: (1) that all the three higher varṇas are forbidden to drink the surā prepared from flour and drinking it is a grave sin (mahāpātaka) in the case of anyone belonging to the three first varṇas; (2) All intoxicants (*madya*) are forbidden to brāhmaṇas at all stages of life (Gaut. II. 25 'madyam nityam brāhmaṇaḥ' and Āp. Dh. S. I. 5. 17-21); but a brāhmaṇa drinking surā of the gaudī or mādhvī kind would not be guilty of mahāpātaka but of anupātaka (acc. to Viṣṇu); (3) that intoxicants other than surā prepared from flour are not condemned for kṣatriyas and vaiśyas; (4) the śūdra was not forbidden to drink any kind of intoxicant (including surā made from flour); (5) brahmacārins of all varṇas studying the Veda had to abstain from intoxicants of all kinds. The Viṣṇu Dh. S. (22. 83-84) specifies ten kinds of madya (intoxicants) prepared from dates, jack fruit, cocoanuts, sugarcane &c. and Pulastya quoted by the Mit. on Yāj. III. 253, by the Prāyaścittaprakaraṇa of Bhavadeva (p. 40), the Prāyaścittaviveka of Śūlapāṇi (p. 90), Pr. Prakāśa (folio 69 b) refers to eleven kinds of *madyas* apart from *surā* (dvādaśam to surāmadyam sarveṣām adhamam smṛtam). Vide H. of Dh. vol. III pp. 964-966 for further discussion on intoxicating drinks.

The Mit. points out (on Yāj. III. 253) that the prohibition against drinking surā applies to boys who have not yet been invested with the sacred thread and also to unmarried girls, since Manu XI. 93 makes no distinction of sex but only forbids to the three first castes the drinking of surā and since the Bhaviṣyapurāṇa⁴⁹ expressly forbids to a brāhmaṇa female the drinking of *surā*. The Kalpataru appears to have held otherwise. But a woman and a minor had to undergo lesser prāyaścitta as will be shown below. Vas. 21. 11 and Yāj. III. 256 state that the wife of a brāhmaṇa, kṣatriya or vaiśya who drinks surā (made from flour) would not reach the worlds of her husband and she

48. अयमत्राथः । त्रैवर्णिकानामुत्पत्तिप्रभृति पैष्टीप्रतिषेधः । ब्राह्मणस्य तु मद्यमात्र-निषेधोऽप्युत्पत्तिप्रभृत्येव । राजन्यवैश्ययोस्तु न कदाचिदपि गौड्यादिमद्यप्रतिषेधः । शूद्रस्य न सुराप्रतिषेधो नापि मद्यप्रतिषेधः ॥ मिता. on या. III. 253 ; पैष्टीशब्दाभिधेयव्रीह्यकविकारो मुख्यसुराशब्दार्थः । तत्पानमेव त्रैवर्णिकस्य महापातकम् । गौडीमाध्वीसुरापाने तु ब्राह्मणस्य पैष्टीपानवदेव प्रायश्चित्तम् । क्षत्रियवैश्ययोस्तु तत्पाने न दोष इति । प्राय. प्रक. p. 42

49. तथा भविष्ये । तस्मात्त पेयं विप्रेण सुरामद्यं कथंचन । एतेनानुपेतविप्रस्य कुमारिका-याश्च दोषाभावो द्विजग्रहणादिति वदन् कल्पतरुः परास्तः । प्रा. प्रकाश folio 70 b. word द्विज occurs in मनु XI.90. ब्राह्मण्यापि न पेया वै सुरा पापभयावहा ॥ प्राय. वि. p. 92

would become in this world a bitch or a sow⁵⁰. The Mit. remarks⁵¹ on this verse that though a śūdra is not forbidden to drink surā, even the śūdra wife of a brāhmaṇa should not drink surā.

Drinking *surā* means taking it down the throat. Therefore if a man's lips only touch surā or if surā enters his mouth but he spits it out, then there is no *drinking* of surā (i. e. no mahāpātaka) and he would have had to undergo in such a case a light expiation for the touch of surā⁵².

Steya (theft). In order to constitute theft as a grave sin according to the commentaries the theft must be of a brāhmaṇa's gold of a certain quantity. *Steya* is defined by Āp. Dh. S. I. 10. 28. 1 as⁵³ 'a man becomes a thief by coveting another's property (and taking it) in whatever situation he may be (without the owner's consent)'. Kātyāyana (810) defines⁵⁴ it as 'depriving a man of his property, whether clandestinely or openly and, whether by night or by day, is known to be theft'. Vyāsa defines it similarly. Vācaspati in his bhāṣya on Yogasūtra II. 30 defines *steya* as taking property from another in a manner that is not allowed by the śāstras (*steyam-aśāstra-pūrvakam dravyāṇām parataḥ śvikaraṇam*). Though Manu (XI. 54) and Yāj. (III. 227) simply employ the word 'steya' (theft) or 'stena' (thief) yet in speaking of the *prāyaścitta*

50. या ब्राह्मणी च सुरापी न तां देशः पतिलोकं नयन्तीहैव सा चरति क्षीणपुण्याप्सु सुगमयति शुक्रिका वा । वसिष्ठ 21.11. This is cited as श्रुति in प्राय. वि. p. 92 and these very words occur in the महाभाष्य on वार्तिक 1-2 on पाणिनि III. 2.8 'या ब्राह्मणी सुरापी भवति नैनां देशः पतिलोकं नयन्ति' vol. II p. 99 (the वार्तिकs are सुरा-सीध्वोः पिबतेः । बहुलं तानि ।)

51. ब्राह्मणीग्रहणं चात्र 'तिस्रो वर्णान्पूर्व्येण' इति न्यायेन यस्य द्विजातेर्यावत्यो भार्यास्तासामुपलक्षणम् । अत एव मनुः । पतत्यर्थं शरीरस्य यस्य भार्या सुरां पिबेत् । पतितार्ध-शरीरस्य निष्कृतिर्न विधीयते ॥ इति ।... द्विजातिभार्यायाः शुद्धाया अपि सुराप्राप्तेऽप्यप्राप्त्यर्थम् । मिता. on या. III. 256. The verse पतत्यर्थं is not found in मनु, but is वसिष्ठ 21.15 and पराशर X.27.

52. पानं च द्रवीभूतस्याभ्यवहारः स च कण्ठदेशादधोनयनं न तु वक्त्रमात्रप्रवेशः । निष्ठीवनाद्यर्थं कपोलधारणे पानशब्दाप्रयोगात् ।... अत एवौष्ठमात्रे लेपे न पाननिष्पत्तिः ॥ अतस्त-त्रोक्तमाङ्गुलप्रमाणमित्युक्तम् ॥ प्राय. वि. p. 93.

53. यथा कथा च परपरिग्रहमभिमन्यते स्तेनो ह भवतीति कौत्सहारीतौ तथा काण्व-पुष्करसादी ॥ ... सर्वत्रानुमतिपूर्वमिति हारीतः ॥ आप. ध. सू. I. 10.28.1 and 5.

54. प्रच्छन्नं वा प्रकाशं वा निशायामधवा दिवा । यत्परद्रव्यहरणं स्तेयं तत्परिकीर्तितम् ॥ कात्या० 810, q. by दायभाग p. 224 and प्राय. वि. p. 112 ; समक्षं वा परोक्षं वा चोपलब्ध-र्येण वा पुनः ॥ परस्वानामुपादानं स्तेयमित्युच्यते बुधैः ॥ व्यास q. by स्मृतिभु० (प्रा.) p. 885 ; स्तेनो विप्रश्चामिकषोडशमाषपरिमितस्य हेमश्छलबलचौर्यान्त्यतरैरपहर्ता ॥ प्रा. प्रकाश 1010 70 b.

for steya Manu (XI. 99 'suvarṇasteyakṛt') and Yāj. III. 257 (brāhmaṇasvarṇahārī) add the qualification that he should be a thief guilty of stealing gold (from a brāhmaṇa, acc. to Yāj.). Vas. 20. 41 and Cyavana (q. by Pr. V. p. 117) mention 'brāhmaṇa-svarṇa-haraṇa' as a mahāpātaka and the Sāmavidhāna Br. (I. 6. 1) also employs the words 'brāhmaṇasvam hṛtvā'. Vide Samvarta 122 and Viśvāmitra (q. by Pr. V. p. 108). A further qualification was added by Viśvarūpa (on Yāj. III. 252 'anākhyāya &c.), the Mit. (on Yāj. III. 257), the Madana-pārijāta (pp. 827-28), Prāyaścittaprakaraṇa (p. 72), the Prāyaścittaviveka (p. 111) and other commentators that the gold stolen must be at least sixteen māśas in weight, otherwise there is no mahāpātaka⁵⁵. So, if a man steals gold belonging to a brāhmaṇa which is less than 16 māśas or steals gold of any weight (even more than 16 māśas) from a non-brāhmaṇa (i. e. from a kṣatriya or the like) he would be guilty only of a minor sin (*upapātaka*). The Mit. relies on the verses of Yāj. I. 362-363 for the technical meaning of suvarṇa (as 16 māśas). There was no guilt of theft acc. to Vārṣṇāyaṇi if (Āp. Dh. S. I. 10. 28.2) a person took only a small quantity of cereals ripening in pods (such as *mudga*, *māṣa* and gram) or took grass for his oxen while he was going (in a cart.⁵⁶) According to Gautama 12.25 a man may take (without permission and without incurring the guilt of theft) for the sake of cows and for the sake of śrauta or smārta fires grass, fuel and flowers of trees and plants as if they were his own property and the fruits (of trees and plants) that are not fenced around. Manu VIII. 339 (= Matsya 227. 112-113) is almost like Gaut. 12.25 and Manu VIII. 341 adds that a traveller of the three higher castes may, if his provisions have run short, take (without fear of punishment) from another's field two sugarcane stalks and two mūlakas (esculent roots).

Gurvaṅganāgamah (sexual intercourse with the wife of the guru). Manu (XI.54) employs this word, while Yāj. III. 227 and Vas. 20.13 speak of the offender as *gurutalpaga* (who violates the bed of the guru) and Vas. I. 20 mentions the sin as '*gurutalpam*'

55. अत्र च सुवर्णशब्दः परिमाणविशिष्टहेमद्रव्यवचनो न जातिमात्रवचनः ॥ 'जालसूर्य... कुण्डलः पञ्च ते माषस्ते सुवर्णस्तु षोडश ॥' (या. I. 362-363) इति षोडशमात्रपरिमिते हेमनि सुवर्णशब्दस्य परिभाषितत्वात् । ...अतः षोडशमात्रात्मकसुवर्णपरिमितहेमहरण एव महापातकित्वं तन्निमित्तं मरणान्तिकादिप्रायश्चित्तविधानं च ॥ द्वित्रादिमात्रात्मकहेमहरणं तु क्षत्रियादिहेमहरण-बहुपपातकमेवेति युक्तम् ॥ मिता. on III. 257.

56. सत्यपवादाः परपरिग्रहेष्विति वार्यायणिः । शम्योषा युग्यवातो न मतिषेधयन्ति । अतिव्यवहारो व्युद्धो भवति । आप. ध. सू. I. 10. 28 2-4

(the bed i. e. wife of the *guru*). *Guru* primarily means acc. to Manu II.142 and Yāj. I 34 (= Śaṅkha III.2) the father. Acc. to Gautama II.56 'the teacher (of the Veda) is the foremost amongst *gurus* while some say that the mother is so'. Samvarta⁵⁷ 160 and Parāśara X. 13 (employing the words 'pitṛdārān samāruhya') convey that the primary meaning of *guru* here is 'father' as stated by the Mit. on Yāj. III. 259. Acc. to many digests such as the Mit. and the Madanapārijāta p. 835 *gurvaṅganā* means one's own mother. Bhavadeva in his Pr. Prakaraṇa (p. 80) takes *gurvaṅganā*⁵⁸ as a *karmadhāraya* compound, following what is called the *niṣādashapati-nyāya* (Jai. VI. 1. 51). After quoting Devala's dictum⁵⁹ that there are eleven persons among males who are to be looked upon as *gurus*, and adverting to the way in which the word 'gurvaṅganā' is explained by the Pr. Prakaraṇa, the Prāyaścitta-viveka expresses its dissent from the views of the Pr. Prakaraṇa and holds that 'gurvaṅganā' or 'gurupatni' means not only one's mother but also one's step-mother of the same varṇa as the father. The Madanapārijāta (p. 835) holds the same view as the Pr. V. The Pr. M. p. 73 finds fault with Bhavadeva (author of Prāyaścitta-prakaraṇa) and also with the Pr. V. that held the view that sexual intercourse with one's Vedic teacher's wife was also a

57. पितृभार्या समारुह्य मातृवर्जं नराधमः । भगिनीं मातुरासां च स्वसारं चान्यमातृजाम् ॥ एतास्तिष्ठः स्त्रियो गत्वा तसकुच्छं समाचरेत् । संवर्त 159-160; 'शुरुशब्दश्चात्र शुरुयया वृत्त्या पितरि वर्तते ।...अतः पितृपत्नीगमनमेव महापातकम् । गमनं च चरमधातुविसर्गपर्यन्तं कथ्यते । अतस्ततोऽर्वाब् निवृत्तौ न महापातकित्वम् । मिता. on या. III. 259.

58. तेन शुर्वी (शुरुः?) चासौ अङ्गना चेति कर्मधारयसमासात् स्वमातृवचन एवायं शुर्वङ्गनाशब्दः । न तु शुरोरङ्गना शुर्वङ्गना इति षष्ठीसमासात् सपत्नीमातृवचनोऽपि ।...तेन निषाद-स्थपतिं याजयेत्-इतिवत् कर्मधारयसमासे स्वमातृवचन एवायं शुर्वङ्गनाशब्दः । प्राय. प्रकरण p. 80; शबर on जै. VI. 1.51 says 'समानाधिकरणसमासस्तु बलीयान् ।...तस्मात् निषाद एव स्थपतिः स्यात् । (and not निषादानां स्थपतिः). Vide H. of Dh. vol. II. p. 46 for निषादस्थपतिन्याय.

59. तथा देवलः । आचार्यश्च पिता ज्येष्ठो भ्राता चैव महीपतिः । मातुलः श्वशुरश्चाता मातामहापितामहौ ॥ वर्णज्येष्ठः पितृव्यश्च पुंस्येते शुरवो मताः । त्राता प्राणरक्षकः । वर्णज्येष्ठः क्षत्रियादीनां ब्राह्मणः । प्राय. वि. p 129; यद्यपि देवलवचनेनैव एकादश शुरवो दर्शिता-स्तथाप्यत्र पितैव शुरुर्ग्राह्यो नाचार्यादिः ।... मातृगमनस्यातिपातकत्वात् सपत्नीमातृगमनस्य शुर्वङ्गनागमनत्वेन महापातकत्वात् अर्थादनुपातके लघुनि हीनवर्णायाः पितृपत्न्या ग्रहणम् । प्राय. वि. pp 134-135. ... तस्माद् मातृव्यतिरिक्तैकादशशुर्वङ्गनागमनमेव महापातकमिति शुज्यते देवलवचनादिति । अत्र भवदेवेनोक्तं नात्र शुरोरङ्गना शुर्वङ्गनेति षष्ठीसमासः तत्पुरुष-समासाश्रयणे निषादस्थपतिवत्त्वर्थलक्षणापत्तेः । अतो शुरुश्चासावङ्गना चेति कर्मधारयः । शुरुत्वं च मातुरेव न मातुः सपत्न्याः । ... तदसंमतं मातृगमनं दूहितृगमनं स्नुषागमनमि-त्यतिपातकानीति विष्णुहारीताभ्यां मातृगमनस्यातिपातकत्वाभिधानात् । यद्यपि देवलवचनेनैव एकादशशुरवो दर्शितास्तथाप्यत्र पितैव शुरुर्ग्राह्यो नाचार्याद्विस्तृप्तीगमनस्य शुरुत्वेन सपत्नीगमनस्य स्नानुपपत्तेरनुपातकत्वगतेश्च । प्राय. वि. pp 129-134.

mahāpātaka. The Pr. M. relies on Yāj. (III. 233) where there is an express extension of the sin of *gurutalpagamana* to intercourse with one's teacher's wife, or one's daughter and other nearly related women. This would have been unnecessary if *gurutalpa* was primarily meant to include the teacher's wife; while the Pr. V. relies upon Gaut. II. 56 ('the ācārya is the most eminent among gurus, some say that the mother is so'), Viṣṇu Dh. S. 31.1-2 'three persons are *atigurus* (exceed even guru in their greatness) viz. the mother, the father and the ācārya and Devala who mentions eleven persons as gurus. The Pr. M. does not seem to be quite correct since the Pr. V. ultimately (pp. 134-135) states its final view that guru here means only the father and not the ācārya and others and that Viṣṇu Dh. S. 36.4-8 holds that sexual intercourse with the wife of the teacher and several other women relatives is an anupātaka.

Mahāpātakisamsarga—Association with those who are guilty of the four mahāpātakas has already been described in H. of Dh. vol. III. pp. 614, 944. Gaut. 21.3, Vas. I. 21-22, Manu XI. 180 (=Śāntiparva 165. 37), Yāj. III. 261, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 35.3, Agnipurāṇa 170. 1-2 prescribe briefly that one who closely associates or dwells with any one of the four grave sinners for one year himself incurs mahāpātaka⁶⁰ and they add that this applies when a man occupies the same conveyance or same seat (as the sinner) or dines in the same row (with the sinner), but that if a person enters into spiritual relationship (such as that of teaching the Veda to the sinner or learning it from him or of officiating as a priest for him or allowing him to officiate as a priest for himself) or into a sexual or matrimonial alliance with him (i. e. a man who cohabits with a woman that is a grave sinner or if a woman cohabits with a male that is a great sinner or if a man marries the daughter of a *patita* or if a woman marries a bridegroom that is *patita*) that person becomes guilty of mahāpātaka at once. Bṛhaspati speaks⁶¹

60. तैश्चाहं समाचरन् ॥ गौ. 21.3; संवत्सरेण पतति पतितेन सहाचरन्। याजना-
ध्यापनाद्यौनात्तु यानासनाशनात् ॥ मनु XI. 180, वसिष्ठ I. 22, बौ. ध. सू. II. 1.88, विष्णु
35.3 (only the first half of Manu), अग्निपु. 170. 1-2.

61. एकशय्यासनं पङ्क्तिर्भाण्डपक्रान्तिश्रमम् ॥ याजनाध्यापने योनिस्तथा च सह-
भोजनम् ॥ नवधा सङ्करः प्रोक्तो न कर्तव्योऽधमैः सह ॥ बृहस्पति q. by अपरार्क p. 1086,
बृह. र. 587, प्राय. प्रकरण p 101, प्राय. वि. p 143; the मित्ता° on III 261 as-
cribes it to बृहस्पति. The प्राय. म. p. 91 explains the divergence of views as
to योनिः, 'योनिः पातकिने कन्यादानं तत्कन्यापरिणयनं वेति विज्ञानेश्वरकल्पतरुकाव्याख्यानम्।
पातकिर्जीगमनमित्यपरार्कशूलपाणी। योगापरित्यागात्त्विदमेव युक्तम्।' The प्रा. प्रकरण
74a also says the same.

of nine kinds of *samsarga* (contact or association) out of which the first five were treated as light sins, but the other four were serious viz. occupying the same bed or seat, taking food in the same row with the sinner, cooking food in the sinner's cooking pots or partaking of food prepared by him, being his sacrificial priest or employing him as one's sacrificial priest, being the sinner's teacher of the Veda or employing him as one's teacher of the Veda, sexual intercourse, taking food with him in the same pot. The Pr. Prakāśa (folio 74a) holds that *samsarga* is of three kinds, the highest, middling and lowest. The first includes four viz. *yonisambandha* (marriage), *srauva* (i. e. that due to sacrificing for a sinner or making him a priest), *maukha* (about learning or teaching Veda) and eating of food from the same vessel (*ekāmatrabhojana*); the middling is of five kinds viz. using the same vehicle, seat, bed or coverlet; eating in the same row and learning the Veda together (*sahādhyayana*). The lowest is of various other kinds such as intimate talks, touching, cooking food in the same vessel, eating food at his house, receiving a gift from him &c. *Adhyāpana* in order to be a great sin must relate to the Veda, and so also *yājana* must relate to such Vedic sacrifices as *Darśapūrṇamāsa*, *Cāturmāsya*, *Agniṣṭoma*. Helping a *mahāpātaka* to perform the five daily *yajñas* or teaching him the *aṅgas* (metrics, grammar etc.) and the *śāstras* is only a minor sin. Parāśara⁶² (XII. 79) states that sins are transferred (or spread) from man to man like a drop of oil on water by sitting or sleeping together or by using the same conveyance or by speaking with or dining in the same row. Devala and Chāgaleya q. by the Mit. on Yāj. III. 261, the Pr. Prakaraṇa (p. 101), the Pr. V. (p. 145), the Par. M. (II. part 1. p. 28) and others contain similar verses. Acc. to Pr. Prakāśa (folio 75a), in order to become *patita* one must simultaneously practise these four together; if practised separately, there is no *pātitya* but only *doṣa*. Parāśara (I. 25-26) states that in the *Kṛta* age a man became *patita* by speaking with a *patita*, in *Tretā* by touching him, in *Dvāpara* by partaking of food prepared in his house and in *Kali* by actually committing a sinful act and that in the *Kṛta* age a district was abandoned (if any one therein became *patita*), in *Tretā* the village, in *Dvāpara* the family (of the *patita* was abandoned) and in *Kali* only the actual perpetrator himself (is

62. आसनाच्छयनाद्यानात्सम्भाषात् सहभोजनात् । संक्रामन्ति हि पापानि विद्वान्भस्मि ॥ पराशर XII. 79, which is the same as a verse of कण्व q. by पराशर, II. 1. p. 28.

abandoned as *patita*). It is clear from this that such contacts with a *patita* as speaking with him,⁶³ touching him or eating food (in the house of a *patita*) were not regarded as involving a man in the same sin as that of the actual perpetrator. Speaking, touching and eating are also actions (*karman*) and Parāśara did not include them in the word 'karmanā' which refers only to the actual perpetration of a murder, surāpāna etc. Therefore when some writers include such contacts as eating or touching under 'karmanā' they put two meanings on the word *karman* in Parāśara viz. perpetration of a murder or the like and also doing some of the acts (touching, eating) which are forbidden to be done in reference to a perpetrator by some *smṛtis*. This is a procedure which is against the maxim of the Mīmāṃsā that the same word conveys only⁶⁴ one sense in the same context. The reasonable inference from the words of Parāśara is that merely touching a *mahāpātakīn* or eating food in his house did not involve the toucher and eater in *pātitya*. In spite of this medieval writers gradually extended the scope of *samsarga* in a spirit of exclusiveness and of over-emphasis on ideas of ceremonial purity. For example, the *Smṛtyarthasāra*⁶⁵ (p. 112) remarks that he who associates with the person that associates with a *mahāpātakīn* has to undergo half the expiation that the first associator has to undergo. But that work does not go beyond this. The *Mit.* (on Yāj. III. 261) appears to hold that the associator even though he does not become *patita* is liable to undergo expiation and that even the 4th and 5th associators in a series are liable to undergo expiation

63. संवत्सरेण पतति पतितेन सहाचरन् । एकयानभोजनासनशयनैः ॥ यौनसौवमौरव-सम्बन्धात् सद्य एव ॥ विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 35. 3-5. यौन (derived from योनि) refers to marital connection, सौव (derived from सुव a sacrificial ladle) means 'employing as a sacrificial priest or becoming such a priest for another), मौख (from मुख) means 'teaching the Veda or learning it by word of mouth). So Viṣṇu prescribes that *pātitya* results at once from the first kind of *samsarga* referred to above. तत्र पञ्चमहायज्ञादिविषयं याजनं लभ्यते । अङ्गशाखाध्ययनं लभ्यते । दुहितृभगिनीव्यतिरिक्तो परिणयो लभ्यते ॥ पतितेन सहैकपात्रे अन्नव्यातिरिक्तसक्त्वादिभक्षणं लभ्यते ॥ प्रा. प्रकाश folio 75a.

64. सकृच्छ्रुतः शब्दस्तमेवार्थं गमयति ।, which maxim is relied upon in 6 Cal 119, 126, (FB), that is quoted with approval in L. R. 41 I. A 290, pp 303, 304, 305, 306, 307, 308, 309, 310, 311, 312, 313, 314, 315, 316, 317, 318, 319, 320, 321, 322, 323, 324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329, 330, 331, 332, 333, 334, 335, 336, 337, 338, 339, 340, 341, 342, 343, 344, 345, 346, 347, 348, 349, 350, 351, 352, 353, 354, 355, 356, 357, 358, 359, 360, 361, 362, 363, 364, 365, 366, 367, 368, 369, 370, 371, 372, 373, 374, 375, 376, 377, 378, 379, 380, 381, 382, 383, 384, 385, 386, 387, 388, 389, 390, 391, 392, 393, 394, 395, 396, 397, 398, 399, 400, 401, 402, 403, 404, 405, 406, 407, 408, 409, 410, 411, 412, 413, 414, 415, 416, 417, 418, 419, 420, 421, 422, 423, 424, 425, 426, 427, 428, 429, 430, 431, 432, 433, 434, 435, 436, 437, 438, 439, 440, 441, 442, 443, 444, 445, 446, 447, 448, 449, 450, 451, 452, 453, 454, 455, 456, 457, 458, 459, 460, 461, 462, 463, 464, 465, 466, 467, 468, 469, 470, 471, 472, 473, 474, 475, 476, 477, 478, 479, 480, 481, 482, 483, 484, 485, 486, 487, 488, 489, 490, 491, 492, 493, 494, 495, 496, 497, 498, 499, 500, 501, 502, 503, 504, 505, 506, 507, 508, 509, 510, 511, 512, 513, 514, 515, 516, 517, 518, 519, 520, 521, 522, 523, 524, 525, 526, 527, 528, 529, 530, 531, 532, 533, 534, 535, 536, 537, 538, 539, 540, 541, 542, 543, 544, 545, 546, 547, 548, 549, 550, 551, 552, 553, 554, 555, 556, 557, 558, 559, 560, 561, 562, 563, 564, 565, 566, 567, 568, 569, 570, 571, 572, 573, 574, 575, 576, 577, 578, 579, 580, 581, 582, 583, 584, 585, 586, 587, 588, 589, 590, 591, 592, 593, 594, 595, 596, 597, 598, 599, 600, 601, 602, 603, 604, 605, 606, 607, 608, 609, 610, 611, 612, 613, 614, 615, 616, 617, 618, 619, 620, 621, 622, 623, 624, 625, 626, 627, 628, 629, 630, 631, 632, 633, 634, 635, 636, 637, 638, 639, 640, 641, 642, 643, 644, 645, 646, 647, 648, 649, 650, 651, 652, 653, 654, 655, 656, 657, 658, 659, 660, 661, 662, 663, 664, 665, 666, 667, 668, 669, 670, 671, 672, 673, 674, 675, 676, 677, 678, 679, 680, 681, 682, 683, 684, 685, 686, 687, 688, 689, 690, 691, 692, 693, 694, 695, 696, 697, 698, 699, 700, 701, 702, 703, 704, 705, 706, 707, 708, 709, 710, 711, 712, 713, 714, 715, 716, 717, 718, 719, 720, 721, 722, 723, 724, 725, 726, 727, 728, 729, 730, 731, 732, 733, 734, 735, 736, 737, 738, 739, 740, 741, 742, 743, 744, 745, 746, 747, 748, 749, 750, 751, 752, 753, 754, 755, 756, 757, 758, 759, 760, 761, 762, 763, 764, 765, 766, 767, 768, 769, 770, 771, 772, 773, 774, 775, 776, 777, 778, 779, 780, 781, 782, 783, 784, 785, 786, 787, 788, 789, 790, 791, 792, 793, 794, 795, 796, 797, 798, 799, 800, 801, 802, 803, 804, 805, 806, 807, 808, 809, 810, 811, 812, 813, 814, 815, 816, 817, 818, 819, 820, 821, 822, 823, 824, 825, 826, 827, 828, 829, 830, 831, 832, 833, 834, 835, 836, 837, 838, 839, 840, 841, 842, 843, 844, 845, 846, 847, 848, 849, 850, 851, 852, 853, 854, 855, 856, 857, 858, 859, 860, 861, 862, 863, 864, 865, 866, 867, 868, 869, 870, 871, 872, 873, 874, 875, 876, 877, 878, 879, 880, 881, 882, 883, 884, 885, 886, 887, 888, 889, 890, 891, 892, 893, 894, 895, 896, 897, 898, 899, 900, 901, 902, 903, 904, 905, 906, 907, 908, 909, 910, 911, 912, 913, 914, 915, 916, 917, 918, 919, 920, 921, 922, 923, 924, 925, 926, 927, 928, 929, 930, 931, 932, 933, 934, 935, 936, 937, 938, 939, 940, 941, 942, 943, 944, 945, 946, 947, 948, 949, 950, 951, 952, 953, 954, 955, 956, 957, 958, 959, 960, 961, 962, 963, 964, 965, 966, 967, 968, 969, 970, 971, 972, 973, 974, 975, 976, 977, 978, 979, 980, 981, 982, 983, 984, 985, 986, 987, 988, 989, 990, 991, 992, 993, 994, 995, 996, 997, 998, 999, 1000.

65. महापातकिसंसर्गिसंसर्गे तु तत्संसर्गिव्रतस्यार्थं कुर्यात् ॥ स्मृत्यर्थसार p. 112

though it is lesser and lesser⁶⁶. The Pr. Prakaraṇa (p. 109), Pr. V. (pp. 169-170) and the Pr. T. (p. 547) quote certain verses of Āpastamba and Vyāsa which very much widen the circle of *samsarga*. Āpastamba-smṛti⁶⁷ (III, 1-3) states: 'if a cāṇḍāla stays in the house of any one of the four castes without being known, the latter on coming to know of the fact should undergo expiation, which is Cāndrāyaṇa or Parāka for a member of the first three varṇas and Prājāpatya for a śūdra. Those who partook of cooked food in that man's house should undergo Kṛcchra; one should prescribe one half of Kṛcchra for those who took cooked food in the house of the 2nd associator and for those who partook of cooked food in the house of these last one-fourth of Kṛcchra is prescribed'. So besides the original associator three more in succession were held to be liable for prāyaścitta. Mercifully they stopped at the 4th from the original associator. A few writers took a more reasonable view. The Par. M. (II. part 2, p. 90) remarks⁶⁸ that Parāśara did not prescribe any expiation for *samsarga* (with those guilty of grave sins) with the idea that in the Kali age

66. अतः संसर्गिसंसर्गिणां द्विजातिकर्मभ्यो हानिर्न भवति प्रायश्चित्तं तु भवत्येव ॥...तच्च पादहीनम् ॥...एवं चतुर्थपञ्चमयोरपि कामतः संसर्गिणोरर्धहीनं त्रिपादोनं च द्रष्टव्यम् ॥ मिता. on या. III. 261. प्रा. प्रकाश (folio 110a.) finds fault with this and holds on the strength of a verse of Vyāsa 'यो येन संसृज्यते स तदीयमेव प्रायश्चित्तं कुर्यात् तेन द्वितीयसंसर्गि नवाद्धानि कुर्यात् तृतीयस्तु पादोनं सप्ताद्धानि कुर्यात् । एवं चतुर्थपञ्चमादयः पूर्वपादोनं व्यासवाक्याविशेषात् ।'.

67. अन्त्यजातिरविज्ञातो निवसेद्यस्य वेश्मनि ॥ स वै ज्ञात्वा तु कालेन कुर्यात्तत्र विशोधनम् ॥ चान्द्रायणं पराको वा द्विजातीनां विशोधनम् ॥ प्राजापत्यं तु शूद्राणां तथा संसर्गदूषणे ॥ येस्तत्र भुक्तं पक्वाणं कृच्छ्रं तेषां विनिर्दिशेत् ॥ तेषामपि च यैर्भुक्तं कृच्छ्रपादो विधीयते ॥ आपस्तम्ब quoted by प्राय. वि. pp. 170 and 492, प्राय. तत्त्व p. 547. The verses occur with slight variations in the versified आपस्तम्बस्मृति (Ānan. edition) III. 1-3. The प्राय. वि. p. 169 remarks 'व्यासादिवचने तृतीयसंसर्गिपर्यन्तं प्रायश्चित्तदर्शनात् । तथा चाण्डालादिसङ्गरे व्यासः ॥ ये तदज्ञाशिनो विप्राः कृच्छ्रं तेषां विधीयते ॥ तद्भोजिनोऽर्धकृच्छ्रेण तदज्ञादाश्च पादतः ॥'.

68. आचार्यस्तु कालियुगे संसर्गदोषाभावमभिप्रेत्य संसर्गप्रायश्चित्तं नाम्यधात् । अत एव स्मृत्यन्तरे कलौ वर्ज्यानामनुक्रमणे-संसर्गदोषः पापेषु-इत्युक्तम् । परा. मा. II. part 2 p. 90. For a severe onslaught against Mādhava, vide धर्मद्वैतनिर्णय (p. 132). The प्रा. प्रकाश (folio 77a) explains away Mādhava's emphatic remarks as follows: 'कृते सम्भाषणमात्रात्पतति...कलौ तु कृत्स्नेन निषिद्धकर्मणा याजनादिभिरित्यर्थः । अन्यथा पूर्ववाक्ये कर्तारं तु कलौ न्यसोदित्यनेन साक्षात् कर्त्रादः संसर्गो निषिद्धः । द्वितीयवाक्ये तु कलौ पतति कर्मणेत्यनेन साक्षात्कर्तुरेव दोषोऽन संसर्गकर्तुरिति परस्परविरोधः स्यात् । एवं च माधवस्य कलौ संसर्गदोषाभावोक्तेरत्रैव तात्पर्यम् । तथा च कलिनिषिद्धेषु संसर्गदोषे इत्युक्तिः पातकिना सह पूर्वोक्तयाजनाद्यनेकविधसंसर्गाभावेऽपि यो देशादिमात्रसंसर्गः कृतयुगादौ सम्भाषणमात्रात् संसर्गस्तद्विषया ।'.

there is no blemish of samsarga and that it is on account of this that in the enumeration of things to be avoided or not allowed in the Kali age (*Kali-varjya*) another smṛti includes 'pollution through contact with a sinner' (as a *Kalivarjya*). The Smṛtimuktāphala (Prāyaścitta pp. 897-98) echoes the very words of Mādhava and quotes further authorities on the point⁶⁹. The Nirṇayasindhu⁷⁰ holds that though there is blame in association with a *patita* the associator does not himself become *patita*. As Yāj III, 261 employs the word 'vatsaram' and as the accusative of time is, acc. to Pāṇini, to be used only when there is '*atyantasamyoga*' of time and space (distance) it follows that the associator who is to undergo penance for contact must have been day and night in contact for a year. Devala employs the word '*sārvakālikam*' in this connection.

Though many crimes do not in so many words come within the words of the definitions of the mahāpātakas the smṛtis extend by analogy the same condemnation as the mahāpātakas in three ways. For example, Yāj. III. 251 expressly states that one who kills a kṣatriya or vaiśya engaged in (soma) sacrifice or a foetus or an ātreya woman has to undergo the same expiation as for brāhmaṇa murder (therefore this is *vācamikātideśa*). Yāj. III. 232-233 extends the sin of *gurutaḥpa-gamana* to intercourse with several near female relatives (such as mother's or father's sister). This is extension by *tādrūpya*. The smṛtis declare many actions as equal to (*sama*) mahāpātakas in general or as equal to one of the mahāpātakas. This is *atideśa* by *sāmya*. A few words must be said on this topic. The general rule is that the expiation for those lapses that are declared to be equal to a mahāpātaka is less than (i. e. half of) what would be prescribed

69. अत एव कलियुगधर्माभिधाने प्रवृत्तः पराशरः ब्रह्महत्यादिमहापातकचतुष्टयस्य प्रायश्चित्तमुक्तवान् कलियुगे संसर्गदोषाभावमभिप्रेत्य संसर्गप्रायश्चित्तं नाभ्यधात् । कर्मण एव पातित्यहेतुत्वम् । तथा कर्मणा पातित्यं कण्ठरवेणाह पराशरः (1.25) 'कृते संभाषणादेव ... कलौ पतति कर्मणा ॥...इति । ... स्मृतिकामधेनौ । संसर्गदोषो नैव स्यान्महापातकिभिः कलौ । संसर्गदोषः स्तेनाद्येन महापापानिष्कृतिः । तथा स्मृत्यन्तरे । संसर्गदोषः...पापेष्विति पठितम् ॥ कलौ संसर्गस्य पापमात्रहेतुत्वम् । संसर्गदोषस्य पातित्यापादकत्वाभावेऽपि पापमात्रापादकत्वमस्तीत्याह पराशरः । स्मृतिमु. (प्रा.) pp 897-898.

70. कलौ कर्तव्यं लिप्यते इति व्यासोक्तेः पतितसंसर्गे दोषसत्त्वेऽपि पातित्यं नेत्यर्थः । निर्णयसिन्धु III. p. 368; तत्रापि (याज्ञवल्कीये) वत्सरमिति द्वितीया श्रूयते सा च कालाध्वना रत्यन्तसंयोग इत्यत्यन्तसंयोगे स्मृता । अत्यन्तसंयोगश्च यावद्द्वारात्रसम्बन्धः । ... संसर्गः पतति पतितेन सहाचरन् । भोजनासनशय्यादि कुर्वाणः सार्वकालिकमिति देवलावक्ये सार्वकालिकशब्देन द्वितीयार्थ एवोक्तः । प्रा. प्रकाश (folio 76 b),

for the mahāpātaka itself⁷¹. And the penance for those that come under *atideśa* of the *vācanika* or *tādrūpya* kind is three fourths of that for the mahāpātaka itself. But it has to be noted that there is divergence of views about these in the sūtras and the smṛtis. Acc. to Gaut. 21. 10 giving⁷² false evidence, backbiting about another's guilt that will reach the king, falsely accusing one's *guru* with a grave sin or crime are equal to mahāpātaka. In Manu XI. 55 (= Agnipurāṇa 168. 25) the last two of these three and false statement about one's caste or learning or family (i. e. saying that one is a brāhmaṇa when one is not) for securing prosperity or eminence are stated to be equal to brāhmaṇa's murder. Acc. to Yāj. III. 228 falsely charging one's *guru* is equal to *brahmahatyā* and false statement about one's caste or learning is equal to drinking surā (Yāj. III. 229), while acc. to Viṣṇu Dh. S. 37. 1-3 the three sins mentioned in Manu XI. 55 are to be included among minor sins (*upapātakas*), while giving false evidence is declared by Viṣṇu to be equal to drinking surā (36. 2). No useful purpose would be served by dilating at great length on the divergences of smṛtis on what lapses are equal to one of the Mahāpātakas. The digests explain that where the same lapse is described as equal to surāpāna by one smṛti and as equal to brāhmaṇa-murder by another the idea is that there is an option as to the penance prescribed for that lapse. Therefore only the remarks of Manu and Yāj. will be set out here. Manu XI. 56 (= Agnipurāṇa 168. 26) prescribes that forgetting the Veda (already studied), reviling the Vedas, giving false evidence, killing a friend, eating forbidden food or food that should not be eaten, these six are equal to surāpāna. Vide Yāj. III. 228 already referred to above. Manu XI. 57 holds that stealing a deposit or a man or horse or silver or land or diamonds and other gems is equal to the theft of brāhmaṇa's gold. Yāj. III. 230, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 5. 383, Agnipurāṇa 168. 27 are to the same effect. Acc. to Manu XI. 58 (= Agnipurāṇa 168. 28) carnal intercourse with a sister by the same mother, with maidens, with females of the lowest castes (like Cāṇḍālas), with the wife of a friend or son is declared to

71. अत्र साम्यातिदेशेऽर्थं तादृष्यवाचनिकयोस्तु पादोनम् ॥ प्राय. म. p. 8; vide प्राय. प्रकरण pp. 85-87; एतेनातिदेशे पूर्णप्रायश्चित्तं वदन्तौ शूलपाणिभवदेवावपास्तौ । प्राय. म. p. 9; अत्र समत्वाभिधानात् शिष्टाचारबलेन पादोनं कल्प्यम् ॥ ऋषिसमो ब्राह्मणो राजानो मन्त्रित्यादिषु समशङ्कस्य किञ्चिन्न्यूने प्रयोगदर्शनात् ॥ मद. पा. p. 808; vide मित. III, 231 for similar words.

72. कौटसाक्ष्यं राजगामि पैशुनं गुरोरवृताभिशंसनं महापातकसमानि ॥ गौ. 21. 10



be equal to the violation of a guru's bed. Yāj. III. 231 is practically the same (but he adds intercourse with a *sagotra* woman to the list). Gaut. 23.12 and Manu XI. 170 are very similar. Yāj. III. 232-233 declare that a man who has sexual intercourse with a sister of his father or mother, with his maternal uncle's wife, with his daughter-in-law, with a co-wife of his mother, with his sister, with the daughter or wife of his Vedic teacher or his own daughter, is guilty of being a violator of the guru's bed and should have his penis cut off and be killed (by the king) and the woman concerned, if she was a willing party, should also be killed. Nārada (*striPumsayoga*, verses 73-75)⁷³ states: "If a man has sexual intercourse with any of these women viz. mother, mother's sister, mother-in-law, maternal uncle's wife, father's sister, a wife of the paternal uncle or of a friend or of a pupil, a sister, sister's friend, daughter-in-law, daughter, the wife of one's Vedic teacher, a woman of the same gotra, one who has come for protection, a queen, an ascetic woman, one's wet-nurse, a woman performing a *vrata* and a *brāhmaṇa* woman, he becomes guilty of the sin of the violator of the guru's bed (i. e. incest). For that crime no other punishment is laid down except that of the cutting of the penis." These two, Yāj. and Nārada, show that excision of the organ and death are both the expiation and the punishment for this crime. The Mit. (on Yāj. III. 233) adds that this punishment applies only to the offenders other than a *brāhmaṇa*, since Manu (VIII. 380) prescribes that a *brāhmaṇa* offender should not be punished with death whatever sin or crime he may have committed and that he is to be banished from the country unhurt and is to retain all his wealth. The Viṣṇudharma-sūtra (36 4-7) adds a few more women to the list of Yāj. and Nārada (such as a woman in her monthly illness, the wife of a learned *brāhmaṇa* or of one's sacrificial priest or of one's *Upādhyāya*).

These lapses described above from false accusation against the *guru*⁷⁴ (Yāj. III. 228 or Manu XI. 55 to Yāj. III. 233 or Manu

73. सखीसयोनिसगोत्राशिष्यभार्यासु स्तृषायां गवि च गुरुतल्पसमः ॥ गौ. 23.12; माता मातृष्वसा श्वश्रूमातुलानी पितृष्वसा । पितृष्वसखीशिष्यस्त्री भगिनी तत्सखी स्तृषा ॥ दुहिताचार्य-भार्या च सगोत्रा शरणागता ॥ राज्ञी प्रव्रजिता धात्री साध्वी वर्णोत्तिमा च या ॥ आसामन्यतमां गत्वा गुरुतल्पग उच्यते ॥ शिश्रस्योत्कर्तनं तस्य नान्यो दण्डो विधीयते ॥ नारद (स्त्रीपुंसयोग 73-75); compare आप. ध. सू. I. 9.25 (गुरुतल्पगामी सतृषणं शिश्रं परिवारयाश्च शिश्रं धाय दक्षिणां दिशमनावृत्तिं व्रजेत्) and गौ. 23.10.

74. एतानि शुर्वाधिक्षेपादितनयागमनपर्यन्तानि महापातकातिदेशविषयाणि हेतुत्वात्पातकाभ्युच्यन्ते ॥ मिता. on यāj. III. 233,

XI. 58) and said to be equal to some mahāpātaka or other are designated as pātakas by Vṛddha-Hārīta (IX. 216-17) and by the Mit. (on Yāj. III 233) and as *anupātakas* by the Viṣṇudharma-sūtra (36.8). Gautama⁷⁵ (21.1-2) adds a few more to the list of pātakas or *patitas* viz. he who has connection with the female relatives of his mother or father or with sisters and their offspring, a thief of gold, an atheist, one who constantly repeats censured acts, one who does not cast away a *patita* or who abandons blameless relatives or those who instigate others to commit pātakas. These pātakas are less than mahāpātakas in their culpability and greater than upapātakas.

Upapātakas (minor sins). The number of these has greatly varied from time to time and from smṛti to smṛti. Vas. I. 23 speaks⁷⁶ of only five upapātakas viz. forsaking the sacred fires (after beginning Agnihotra), offending the guru, being an atheist, taking one's livelihood from an atheist, selling the soma plant. Śātātapa as quoted by Viśvarūpa on Yāj. III. 229-236 mentions only eight. Baud. Dh. S. (II. 1.60-61) mentions a small number as upapātakas. Gaut. 21.11 states⁷⁷ that the guilt of upapātaka attaches to those who have been declared to defile the company at a Śrāddha dinner and have been named above before the bald man (in Gaut. XV. 18), killers of kine, those who forget the Veda, those who pronounce Vedic texts for these last, Vedic students who break the vow of chastity and those who allow the time for upanayana to pass without performing it. Sāṅkha quoted by Viśvarūpa on Yāj. III. 229-236 mentions only 18 upapātakas and styles them *upapātaniyas*. The longest lists are contained in Manu XI. 59-66, Yāj. III. 234-242, Vṛddha-Hārīta IX. 208-210, Viṣṇudharmasūtra 37 and Agnipurāṇa (168. 29-37). According to the Pr. V. (p.195)⁷⁸ the upapātakas mentioned by Manu

75. ब्रह्महत्यापशुवत्पतङ्गमातृपितृयोनिस्त्वन्धागस्तेन नास्तिकनिन्दितकर्माभ्यासिपतिता-
त्याग्यपतितत्यागिनः पतिताः ॥ पातकसंयोजकाश्च ॥ गौतम 21.1-2. गौतम 20.1 mentions the
persons whom one should abandon 'त्यजेत्पितरं राजघातकं शूद्रयाजकं शूद्रार्थयाजकं
भेदविद्भावं भ्रूणहन् यश्चान्त्यावसायिभिः सह संवसेदन्त्यावसायिन्यां वा ।'.

76. योऽग्नीनपविध्येद् शुभं च यः प्रतिदध्नुयात् नास्तिको नास्तिकवृत्तिः सोमं च विक्री-
णीयादित्युपपातकानि ॥ वसिष्ठ I. 23.

77. अपक्त्र्यानां प्राग्दुर्बालाद्गोहन्तृब्रह्मघ्नतन्मन्त्रकृदवकीर्णपतितसावित्रीकेषूपपातकम् ।
गौ. 21.11. The word दुर्बाल occurs in गौ. 15.18.

78. एवं च गोवधादिनास्तिक्यान्तानि ऊनपञ्चाशदुपपातकानि । प्राय. वि. p. 195.

come to 49. Those enumerated by Yāj. are set out below⁷⁹ (they are 51 according to Viśvarūpa on Yāj. III. 229-236, who omits one verse commented on by the Mit. viz 'śūdrapreṣyam' &c. which contains five): slaying kine, being a *vrātya* (i. e. one whose *upanayana* was not performed at the prescribed age), theft (other than that of brāhmaṇa's gold or other than what is described as equal to theft of the mahāpātaka type), non-payment of debts borrowed (and not satisfying the three debts due to gods, sages and *pitṛs*), not establishing the *śrauta* fires (even though one has the capacity to do so); selling what ought not to be sold (such as salt); parivedana (a younger brother's marrying before an elder brother or establishing sacred fires before him); learning (the Veda) from a paid teacher; teaching the Veda for payment; adultery (with women other than those referred to in *gurutalpagamana* or those lapses equal to it); an elder brother's remaining unmarried when a younger brother has married; usury (i. e. taking more interest than is allowed by the *smṛtis*); manufacture of salt; killing a woman (of any caste, except an *ātreya*); killing a *śūdra*; killing a *kṣatriya* or *vaiśya* (who is not initiated for a *śrauta* sacrifice); maintaining oneself on wealth which is condemned; atheism (denial of the soul and a world after death); giving up the observances peculiar to one's status (e. g. a vedic student having sexual intercourse or one guilty of brāhmaṇa murder or the like giving up the performance of the expiation already begun); sale of one's children; theft⁸⁰ of corn, inferior metals (like lead and copper) or cattle; officiating as a priest at a sacrifice for those who are not entitled to sacrifice (such as *śūdras* or *vrātyas* &c); driving out of the house one's father, mother or son (without a proper cause such as that

79. गोवधो ब्राह्मणस्त्येयमृणानां चानपाक्रिया । अनाहिताग्निता पण्यविक्रयः पारिवेदनम् । भृतादध्ययनादानं भृतकाध्यापनं तथा ॥ पारदार्यं पारिविष्यं वार्धुष्यं लवणक्रिया ॥ स्त्रीशूद्र-विद्वक्षत्रवधो निन्दितार्थोपजीवनम् ॥ नास्तिक्यं व्रतलोपश्च सुतानां चैव विक्रयः ॥ धान्यकुप्य-पशुस्तेयमयाज्यानां च याजनम् ॥ पितृमातृसुतत्यागस्तडागारामविक्रयः ॥ कन्यासन्दूषणं चैव परिविन्दकयाजनम् ॥ कन्याप्रदानं तस्यैव कौटिल्यं व्रतलोपनम् ॥ आत्मनोऽर्थं क्रियारम्भो मद्यप-स्त्रीनिषेवणम् ॥ स्वाध्यायाग्निमुतत्यागो बान्धवत्याग एव च ॥ इन्धनार्थं द्रुमच्छेदः स्त्रीहिंसौ-षधिजीवनम् । हिंस्रयन्त्रविधानं च व्यसनान्यात्मविक्रयः ॥ शूद्रप्रेष्यं हीनसख्यं हीनयोनिनिषेवणम् । तथैवानाश्रमे वासः पराङ्गपरिपुष्टता ॥ असच्छास्त्राधिगमनमाकरेण्वधिकारिता ॥ भार्याया विक्रय-श्रौषामेकैकमुपपातकम् ॥ या. III. 234-242.

80. 'Steya' has already been mentioned as the third upapātaka. The mention of the theft of corn &c. here either serves the purpose of showing that the theft of corn &c. will always be expiated as an upapātaka while other kinds of thefts may be dealt with more leniently. The same remark applies to पितृमातृसुतत्याग and बान्धवत्याग separately mentioned below.

mentioned by Gautama 20.1); the sale of a tank or of a park intended for a charitable object (though not actually dedicated to the public); ascribing demerits to an unmarried girl (or interfering with her private parts by means of a finger or the like); officiating as a priest (at the marriage) of one who though a younger brother marries before an elder brother; giving one's daughter in marriage to one who marries before his elder brother; cheating or following crooked ways (except against one's guru, which is equal to *surāpāna*); giving up an observance voluntarily undertaken⁸¹; cooking for the sake of oneself only (and not for deities, guests &c., which attitude is condemned by Rg. X. 117. 6 and Manu III. 118); sexual intercourse with a woman (even one's own wife) who is given to drinking wine; giving up the Veda already learnt so as to forget it by the study of other subjects); not tending one's *śrauta* or *smārta* fire; abandoning one's son⁸²; not maintaining one's relatives (such as the maternal or paternal uncle, when one has the means); cutting down a big tree for fuel (to be used only in cooking one's food⁸³); maintaining one's self on one's wife (i. e. on her immoral earnings or by means of her *strīdhana*) or by killing animals or by herbs (used as charms); setting up of machines that cause death or injury to beings (such as for pressing oil from sesame or for crushing sugarcane stalks); addiction to the vices (declared to be eighteen by Manu VII. 45-48); selling one's self (as a slave for money); being the servant of a *śūdra*; friendship with low persons; intercourse with a woman of a lower caste (either as a wife or as a concubine); living outside of the four *āśramas*⁸⁴; fattening oneself on food charitably supplied by others; studying the works of false *śāstras* (such as those of atheists like *Cārvāka*); holding the office of the superintendent of mines (of gold and the like); sale of one's wife.

81. *Vratālopa* has already been mentioned above in verse 236 as an *upapātaka*. Therefore the repetition of 'vratalopana' (in verse 238) must be differently explained as done by the *मिताक्षरा*.

82. In या. III. 237 we have *पितृमातृसुतत्यागः* and then in 239 again *स्वाध्यायाग्निसुतत्यागः*. Therefore अपरार्क p. 1051 explains: 'सुतस्यारक्षणमत्र त्यागः स्वाध्यायाग्नित्यागसाहचर्यात् । पितृमातृसुतत्याग इत्यत्र तु जातकर्मादिसंस्काराकरणं सुतस्य त्यागः ।'.

83. पाकादिप्रयोजनाग्निसमिन्धनार्थमशुष्कवृक्षभक्षणं द्रुमच्छेदः । अपरार्क p. 1051

84. अनाश्रमी न तिष्ठेच्च क्षणमेकमपि द्विजः । आश्रमेण विना तिष्ठन् प्रायश्चित्तं हि सः ॥ दक्ष I. 10; one must belong to one of the four आश्रमस, ब्रह्मचर्य, गृहस्थ, वानप्रस्थ and संन्यास and act as would befit that *āśrama*.



The above list, though long, is not thoroughly exhaustive. Vas. I. 18 quoted above mentions several persons as *enasvinaḥ* (who acc. to Viśvarūpa on Yāj. III. 229-236 are *upapātakinaḥ*), some of whom (such as one who is asleep when the sun rises or sets) are not included by Yāj. in his list of upapātakas. Though almost all of the upapātakas listed by Yāj. occur in Manu (XI. 59-66), yet some of them such as 'abhicāra' (performing a sacrifice like Śyenayāga for the destruction of an enemy), 'mūlakarma' (employment of herbs for bringing under one's control a person) are not noted by Yāj. The Mit. on Yāj. III. 242 observes that some upapātakas if repeatedly indulged in make a man *patita* (as provided by Gaut. 21. 1). Viśvarūpa, therefore, derives upapātaka as one 'that may become a pātaka by constant addition (*upacaya*) or by constant practice' (*upetya*⁸⁵).

Manu XI. 67 (= Agnipurāṇa 168⁸⁶. 37-38) and Viṣṇu Dh. S. 38. 1-6 mention certain lapses as 'jātibhramśakara' (that cause the loss of caste) viz. giving pain to a brāhmaṇa (by means of a stick or by the hand), smelling things which ought not to be smelt at (such as garlic, ordure &c.) and smelling spirituous liquor, cheating (saying one thing and doing another), an unnatural offence with a man (or beast also, acc. to Viṣṇu). According to Manu XI. 68 (= Agnipurāṇa 168. 38-39), killing a donkey, a horse, a camel, a deer, an elephant, a goat, sheep, fish, a snake or a buffalo must be known to be *saṅkarikarāṇa* (reducing one to a mixed caste). Viṣṇu 29. 1 says that *saṅkarikarāṇa* is the killing of village or forest animals. Manu XI. 69 holds that accepting presents from condemned men (such as those mentioned in Manu IV. 84), trading, serving śūdras and speaking a falsehood make a man unworthy to receive gifts (*apatrīkarāṇa*). The Viṣṇu. Dh. S. 40. 1. adds 'maintaining one's self by usury' to these. Manu XI. 70 prescribes that killing insects, small or large, or birds, eating any thing kept close to spirituous liquors, stealing fruits, fuel and flowers and unsteadiness of mind are *malāvaha* (which make a man impure). Viṣṇu Dh. S. 41. 1-4 are similar. Viṣṇu Dh. S. 42. 1 says all other lapses not specifically mentioned in

85. उपपातकसंज्ञाप्येवमर्थेव । उपचयेन उपेत्य वा सेव्यमानं पातकमेव स्यादिति । अत एव गौतमेन पातकमध्ये निन्दितकर्माभ्यासी दर्शितः । विश्वरूप on या. III. 229-236. The reference is to गौतम 21.1, quoted above in note 75.

86. The printed अग्निपुराण reads भैक्ष्यं for जैष्टं in मनु XI.67 and अग्नि 168.39 reads नकुल for महिष.

the several kinds are styled miscellaneous (*prakīrṇaka*). *Vṛddha-Hārta* (IX. 210-215) specifies several lapses as *prakīrṇaka* viz. cutting big trees for fuel (used for cooking one's food); killing insects, big and small; eating of food that has become uneatable owing to *bhāva*⁸⁷ (i. e. its resemblance in colour or flavour to some forbidden food or because it is offered with disrespect) or *kāla* (food on *ekādaśī* or in an eclipse, or in a mourner's house &c. or that is stale) or *kriyā* (action, such as food served with the bare hand or seen by a *patita*, *cāṇḍāla* or a dog &c.); theft of clay, skin, grass, wood; over-eating; falsehood; restlessness about pleasures; sleep by day; spreading false rumours; making others hear false rumours; eating at another's house; sexual intercourse by day; seeing women in their monthly illness or just after delivery; looking at others' wives; sexual intercourse on a fast, on a *śrāddha* day, on a *parvan* day; service of a *śūdra*; friendship with the low; touching the leavings of food; broad laughs with women; talking at random (or love prattle); looking at women that have untied their hair. It will be noticed that some of these like the cutting of big trees for fuel, service of a *śūdra*, friendship with low persons have been already included by Yāj. under *upapātakas*.

Having dealt at length with several classes or grades of sins, we have now to address ourselves to the question of the consequences of sins and the means recommended or adopted for removing sin and its consequences.

It has already been shown above how the sages of the *Rgveda* prayed to the gods, particularly to Aditi, Mitra, Varuṇa, the *Ādityas* and Agni to free them from *āgas* or *enas* etc. They often say that they violated the *dharma*s or the *vrata*s (ordinances) of the gods and implore forgiveness. They were afraid of the consequences of their guilt, viz. the god's anger. They thought that when God was angered by their transgressions he smote them with adversity, destruction, disease and death. For example, they pray: 'whatever ordinance (*vrata*) of yours we may violate every day like subjects (in the case of a king's ordinances) do not subject us to your death-dealing blow' (*Rg. I. 25.2*); 'O Varuṇa! whatever transgression we men have committed towards the divine host and whatever rules of yours we may have confounded through heedlessness, do not, on

87. For भावदुष्ट, कारदुष्ट and क्रियादुष्ट food mentioned in *Vṛddha-Hārta* IX. 211 vide H. of Dh. vol. II. pp. 771-772.

account of that sin (*enas*), 'strike us down' (Rg. VII. 89.5)⁸⁸. In Rg. X. 89.8-9 it is said that Indra hurls his sharp and deadly weapon at those who break the settled order (*dharman*) of Mitra, Varuṇa and Aryaman. The gods are implored to save the worshipper from the deadly attacks of the wolf and from sinking into a pit (in adversity) in Rg. II. 29.6. In Rg. IX. 73.8 it is said that the wise God has his eye on all worlds and he pierces in pits those who do not observe his ordinances and who are therefore not liked by him⁸⁹. On the other hand, when God is pleased with the worshipper, he is implored to lead the latter by the path of virtue (Rg. I. 189.1), to confer happiness on the worshipper's offspring (Rg. I. 189.2, IV. 12.5) and to bestow wealth on him (Rg. VIII. 45.40).

In the Rgveda the first means of removing the consequences of sin appear to be prayers for mercy and for the remission of sin as in Rg. VII. 86. 4-5, VII. 88. 6-7, VII. 89. 1-4 (where 'mṛlā suksatra mṛlaya' is the refrain of all four verses). Even in the Rgveda water was supposed to remove sin, e. g. I. 23. 22 says 'O water! carry away whatever sin (*durita*) may exist in me'. This shows that sin was supposed to have physical effects like a disease, which were removed by water. Sacrifices were offered to the gods in order to win their favour and in order that the sacrificer may be freed⁹⁰ from the consequences of even grave sins. The Tai. S. V. 3. 12 1-2 and the Śat. Br. XIII. 3. 1. 1 (S. B. E. vol. 44 p. 328) state that the gods redeemed themselves from all sin by means of this (Aśvamedha sacrifice), they even redeemed themselves from the sin of brāhmaṇa murder. That a confession of sin was deemed to remove sin is illustrated in a striking way by what happened in the Varuṇapraghāsa (one of the *cāturmāsya* sacrifices). In that⁹¹ sacrifice the wife of the sacrificer had to confess whether she had any lovers and if she felt ashamed to

88. यत्किंचेदं दैव्ये जनेऽभिद्रोहं मनुष्याश्चरामसि ॥ अचिन्ती यत्तव धर्मा युयोपिम मा नस्तस्मादेनसो देव रीरिषः ॥ ऋ. VII. 89.5

89. विद्वान्त्स विश्वा भुवनाभिपश्यत्यवाञ्जुष्टान् विध्यति कर्ते अन्नतान् । ऋ. IX. 73.8.

90. सर्वं वा एतेन पाप्मानमतरन्नापि वा एतेन ब्रह्महत्यामतरन्सर्वं पाप्मानं तरति तरति ब्रह्महत्यां योऽश्वमेधेन यजते । तै. सं. V. 3.12.1-2.

91. यज्जारं सन्तं न प्रब्रूयादभियं ज्ञातिं रुन्ध्यात् । असौ मे जार इति निर्दिशेत् । निर्दिश्यैवैनं वरुणपाशेन ग्राहयति । तै. ब्रा. I.6.5. Vide Kātyāyana śr. 6-10 'संमार्जनाय प्रेषितेऽसंमृष्टे प्रतिप्रस्थाता पत्नीमानेऽप्यन्नाह केन चरसीति । अस्तुवाचोऽष्टे । तृणानि वोदृक्ताति यथासंस्तुतम् । अनाख्यातमहितं ज्ञातिभ्य इति श्रुतेः । आख्यातं प्रधासिन इत्येनां वाचयति नयन् । 'प्रधासिनो हवामहे' is वाज. सं III. 44.

reply in so many words she had only to raise up in her hand small pieces of grass blades to indicate the number of lovers, if any. If she confessed she had to recite the verse, Vāj. S. III. 44 and was allowed to take further part in the sacrifice. If she concealed the truth, it was stated in the Tai. Br. that evil would befall her near and dear relatives (her son or husband). It is said by many European scholars who have written on the religion of the Veda that sacrifice became a sort of magic rite to wrest from gods or independently of them what the worshipper desired (e.g. see Keith's Religion and Philosophy of the Veda and Upanishads pp. 260-268).⁹² But this is an over-statement. When initiated for a sacrifice the sacrificer and his wife had to observe a fast or live on a low diet, both were called upon to observe many strict rules such as telling the truth, they had to make large preparations and spend wealth on the materials and the fees to the priests. These things were deemed to cleanse the mind and soul of the taint of sin. There is no reason to suppose that it was only the ritual that was thought to bring about the desired result (and not all the other matters referred to above).

We shall now discuss the prescriptions of the sūtras and smṛtis about the consequences of sins.

In this connection the doctrines of *Karma* and *Punarjanma* must be well remembered. The details of the origin and development of those doctrines will be discussed in a later section. Here it is enough to state the few main propositions of the doctrine of Karma. The fundamental proposition is that cause and effect are as inseparably linked in the moral sphere as assumed in the physical sphere by science. A good action has its reward and a bad act leads to retribution. If the bad actions do not yield their consequences at once or in this life, the soul begins another existence and in the new environment undergoes suffering for its past bad deeds. The theory of karma and

92. Christ gave a model prayer to his disciples in Luke 11. 2-4 and Matthew 6. 9-13, where after invoking the heavenly Father the first thing asked for is the daily bread, then the forgiveness of sin and deliverance from evil. Pious Christians have an easy and complacent self-assurance of getting the things prayed for, since Christ himself has said that they have only to ask and it shall be given to them (Luke 11.9). This also is a sort of magic but it is simple as compared with elaborate Indian sacrifices. It seems rather perverse for a Christian who believes in Luke 11.9 to say that if an Indian believes that a sacrifice will yield some reward it is all magic and nothing more.

the theory of transmigration of souls (of pre-existence and post-existence) are inextricably mixed up in Indian thought from at least the ancient times of the Upanisads. The general rule is that *Karma*, whether good or evil, cannot be got rid of, except by enjoying or undergoing its consequences. This is said by Gaut. 19. 5, Mārkaṇḍeya-purāṇa and many other works. 'Because the deed does not perish' Gaut. ⁹³; 'whatever human action it may be, whether good or evil, it cannot be got rid of except by enjoying its consequences; know from me that a man gets rid of good and evil deeds by enjoying (their consequences)'. This doctrine is based on the Sat. Br. V. 2.2.27, Br. Up. IV. 4 and VI. 2, Chān. Up. III. 14, and V. 3-10, Kāṭha 5. 6-7 and other Upaniṣad texts.

Therefore they say, 'a man is born again in that world for which he has worked.' 'According as a man acts and according as he believes so will he be; a man of meritorious acts will be meritorious, a man of evil deeds sinful. He becomes pure by pure deeds and evil by evil deeds. And here they say that a person consists of desires. And as is his desire, so is his will; and as is his will, so is his deed; and whatever deeds he does that he will reap' (Br. Up. IV. 4. 5); 'a man is made up of will; whatever he wills in this world the same he becomes after departing from this world' (Chān. Up. III. 14. 1); 'some human beings enter the womb in order to have an embodied existence; others go into inorganic matter (the stump of a tree and the like) according to their deeds and according to their knowledge' (Kāṭha Up. 5. 7). ⁹⁴

'Actions done by a man do not perish unless they (i. e. their consequences) are enjoyed even after crores of years; (the fruits of) actions whether good or evil must of necessity be enjoyed⁹⁵.'

93. न हि कर्म क्षीयते । गौ. ध. सू. 19.5 q. by शङ्कराचार्य in his भाष्य on वेदान्त-सूत्र IV. 1. 13; न तु भोगादृते पुण्यं पापं वा कर्म मानवम् । परित्यजति भोगाच्च पुण्यापुण्ये निबोध मे ॥ मार्कण्डेयपुराण 14.17; तस्मात्कृतस्य पापस्य प्रायश्चित्तं समाचरेत् ॥ नाभुक्तस्यान्यथा नाशः कल्पकोटिशतैरपि ॥ भविष्यपुराण I. 19.27.

94. यथाकारी यथाचारी तथा भवति साधुकारी साधुर्भवति पापकारी पापो भवति पुण्यः पुण्येन कर्मणा भवति पापः पापेन । अथो खल्वहः काममय एवायं पुरुष इति स यथाकामो भवति तत्क्रतुर्भवति यत्क्रतुर्भवति तत्कर्म कुरुते यत्कर्म तदभिसंपद्यते ॥ बृह. उ. IV, 4.5; अथ खलु क्रतुमयः पुरुषो यथाक्रतुरस्मिँल्लोके पुरुषो भवति तथेतः प्रेत्य भवति ॥ छा. III. 14.1; योनिमन्ये प्रपद्यन्ते शरीरत्वाय देहिनः । स्थाणुमन्येऽनुसंयान्ति यथाकर्म यथाश्रुतम् ॥ का. उप. 5.7.

95. नाभुक्तं क्षीयते कर्म कल्पकोटिशतैरपि ॥ अवश्यमेव भोक्तव्यं कृतं कर्म शुभाशुभम् ॥ स्मृति quoted by गोविन्दानन्द on प्राय. वि. p. 17 and by सायण in his भाष्य on तै. आ. 8.2. In परा. मा. II part 1 p. 11 the verse is read as अवश्यमेव भोक्तव्यम्

Vide also Āp. Dh. S. II. 1. 2. 2-7 and Viṣṇu Dh. S. XX. 47 'just as a calf finds out its own mother from among thousands of cows, so actions done in a former life unerringly reach the perpetrator thereof.'

But this general principle was modified in various ways by the smṛtis and later writings. Gautama 19.11 (= Vasiṣṭha 22.8) states: 'Reciting the Veda inaudibly (japa), austerities, a sacrifice, fasting and giving gifts are the means of expiating that (i. e. a blamable act).' Vas. 20. 47 and 25. 3 lay down 'A sinner is freed from sin by tormenting his body, by austerities, by reciting the Veda and also by making gifts' and 'those who are constantly engaged in *prāṇāyāmas* (suppression and regulation of breath), reciting purificatory texts, giving gifts, offering sacrifices, muttering sacred texts will undoubtedly be freed from sins'. Manu III. 227 observes: 'by confession, by repentance, by austerity, by reciting Vedic texts (sacred Gāyatrī or other texts), a sinner is freed from guilt and in case of difficulty (i. e. if he is unable to perform austerities or to recite Vedic texts) by liberality'. Similar provisions occur in Parāśara X. 40, Śātātapa I. 4, Saṁvarta 203, Hārīta (q. in Pr. T. p. 467), Yama, (q. in Pr. V. pp. 30, 31), Bhaviṣyapurāṇa (q. by Pr. V. p. 31.)

Before proceeding with the subject of *prāyaścittas* we shall speak briefly about the other means of reducing the consequences of sin. And first comes confession. With reference to the confession of paramours by the wife in the Varuṇapraghāsa, the Tai. Br. (I. 6. 5. 2)⁹⁷ says 'He makes the wife confess, thereby he renders her pure and then he leads her to penance'. The Śat. Br. (II. 5. 2. 20) puts it in this form 'for when confessed the sin becomes less, since it becomes truth'. This was a confession before God (Fire) and men (the priests) to restore one to divine forgiveness and favour. As regards several lapses, confession was part of the procedure prescribed for atoning for the sin.

96. तस्य निष्क्रयणानि जपस्तपो होम उपवासो दानम् । गौ. 19.11 = वसिष्ठ 22.8 = बौ. ध. सू. III. 10.9. The word निष्क्रय occurs in Jai. VI. 4.33 (*niskraya-vādacca*) which refers to a vedic passage about विश्वजित् 'सर्वाभ्य एष विश्वनाभ्य आत्मानं निष्क्रीणीते' quoted by Śabara on जै. VI. 4.32.

97. पत्नीं वाचयति मेध्यामेवैनां करोति । अथो तप एवैनामुपनयति । यज्जारं... ग्राहयति । प्रवास्यान् हवामहे इति पत्नीमुदानयति । तै. ब्रा. I. 6.5; vide note 91 above for the passage यज्जारं... ग्राहयति.

CHAPTER II

MEANS OF REDUCING CONSEQUENCES OF SINS

Confession—In Āp. Dh. S. I. 9. 24. 15, I. 10. 28. 19, I. 10. 29. 1 it is prescribed that the person undergoing a penance for being an *abhiśasta* or for unjustly forsaking his wife or for the murder of a learned brāhmaṇa has to declare his misdeed while begging for alms to support himself. The Vedic student who was guilty of sexual intercourse had also to proclaim his lapse while begging at seven houses (Gaut. 23.18, Manu XI. 122).⁹⁸

Repentance (anutāpa)—Manu⁹⁹ XI. 229–230 (= Viṣṇudharmottara II. 73.231–32) provide : “ The more a man’s mind loathes his own evil deed the more does his body become freed from the unrighteousness (committed by him). If after committing a sin a man feels repentance for having done it he becomes free from that sin. He becomes purified only by the resolution of ceasing to sin and thinking ‘ I shall not do so again ’.”¹⁰⁰ The Viṣṇupurāṇa II. 6.40 lays emphasis on repentance and humble devotion to Kṛṣṇa. Pr. V. (p. 30) quotes a verse of Āṅgiras ‘ A man after committing sins, if he is consumed by repentance and is sorry day and night (for his misdeed), is purified by prāṇāyāma ’. The view of digests like the Pr. Prakāśa is that

98. Confession of sins has played a prominent part in early and medieval Christianity. For example, (First epistle of) John I. 9 says ‘If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and cleanse us from all unrighteousness’.

99. Manu XI. 229 also occurs in ब्रह्मपुराण 218. 5.

100. Compare Christ’s call to repentance in Matthew 4. 17 and Mark I. 15 and his last words (in Luke 24. 47) that ‘repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations’. शोचेत मनसा नित्यं दुष्कृताच्यनुचिन्तयन् । तपस्वी चाप्रमत्तश्च पापेभ्यः स प्रमुच्यते ॥ इति कल्पतरुदाहृत-
वाक्येन तपस्विपदोपादानात् ।... पुनरङ्गिराः । विकर्मणा तप्यमानः पापाद्धि परिमुच्यते । इति ।
अत्रानुतापमात्रस्य पापनाशकत्वानुपपत्तेः पापनाशकप्रायश्चित्ते अधिकारिविशेषणत्वेन पापनाश-
प्रयोजकत्वमुक्तम् । विष्णुरपि । मनःसंतापनात्तीव्रमुद्बुद्धेच्छोकमन्ततः ।... अत्र सर्वत्राज्ञास्य
विहितत्वेन नखानि निकृन्तति इत्यादिवद् दीक्षितत्ववैराग्यवच्चाधिकारिविशेषणत्वमेव ।
प्रकाश folio 11; यमः । पश्चात्तापो निवृत्तिश्च स्नानं चाङ्गतयोदितम् । नैमित्तिकानां स्वातन्त्र्ये
तद्विधिः स्यादनर्थकः ॥ महाक्लेशसाध्यं हि प्रायश्चित्तम् । अल्पक्लेशा हि पश्चात्तापादयः¹⁰¹ तः
प्रायश्चित्तफले कृते प्रायश्चित्तविधिरफल इति स्पष्टम् । अपरार्क p. 1231.

repentance by itself is not enough to destroy sins, but that repentance renders the sinners fit to receive penance, just as paring the nails and the like make the person intending to perform a Vedic sacrifice fit to be a *dikṣita*. Yama quoted by Aparārka (p. 1231) states that repentance and stopping from repeating the sin are merely the *aṅgas* (subsidiary elements) of *prāyaścittas* and cannot independently take the place of penances.

Prāṇāyāma (restraint of the breath). Vide H. of Dh. vol. II. p. 317 for a description of this. Manus XI. 248 (which is the same as Baud. Dh. S. IV. 1.31, Vas. 26.4, Atri II. 5, Saṅkhasmṛti XII.18-19) lays down: 'sixteen *prāṇāyāmas* attended by the *Vyāhrtis* and the *Pranava* (*omkāra*), if performed every day, would purify after a month even the murderer of a *bhrūpa* (a learned *brāhmaṇa*)'. Viṣṇu Dh. S. 55.2 (in prose) is to the same effect. Vas. 26.1-3 provide that on the proper performance of three *prāṇāyāmas* all the sins committed by day or in the night are at once destroyed. Yāj. III. 305 states that for the removal of all sins, of *upapātakas* and of sins for which no special expiation is provided by the texts one hundred *prāṇāyāmas* should be performed. This refers to sins not known to others for which expiation is to be performed secretly. Baud. Dh. S. (IV.1.5-11) provides for varying numbers (3, 7, 12) of *prāṇāyāmas* to be spread over one day to a year for different kinds of sins ranging from the eating of the food of a *śūdra* to *brāhmaṇa* murder. This whole passage is quoted by the Mit. on Yāj. III.305 which points out the kinds of sins it deals with. The Agnipurāṇa 173.21 has the same half verse as Yāj. III.305 (first half).

Tapas (austerity). Even Rg. X. 154. 2 speaks of *tapas* as leading to heaven and as unassailable. The Chān. Up. V. 10. 1-2, Muṇḍaka Up. I. 2. 10-11 place *tapas* over *yajña*. Gaut. 19.15 says that celibacy,¹⁰¹ truthfulness, bathing thrice daily (in the morning, at noon and in the evening), wearing wet clothes (till they are dried on the body), sleeping on the ground (on a raised part or altar) and fasting constitute austerities. Baud. Dh. S. III. 10. 13 adds to these '*ahimsā*' (non-injury to any being), *astainya* (not depriving any one of his property) and *guru-śrūṣā* (attendance upon a teacher). Gaut. 19. 17 states that

101. ब्रह्मचर्यं सत्यवचनं सवनेषूदकोपस्पर्शनमाद्रवस्तथाधःशायित्वमनाशक इति तपोसि । गौ. 19.15.

the periods for which *tapas* is to be observed are a year, six months, four months, three months, two months, one (month), 24 days, 12 days, 6 days, 3 days, a day and a night (according to the nature of the sin). Manu XI. 239-241 declare that those guilty of mahāpātakas and others guilty of evil deeds are freed from sins by well-practised *tapas* and that whatever sins are committed by people in thought, word and bodily actions are all quickly burnt by *tapas*. This doctrine is shared by the Jainas as stated in the Uttarādhyayana XXIX. 27 'by austerities he cuts off karman' (S B. E. vol. 45 p. 166).

Homa (sacrifice into fire). The Tai. Ā. (II. 7-8) describes¹⁰² the kṛsmāṇḍa homa and dikṣā and II. 8 prescribes that the man who regards himself as impure should offer a sacrifice with the kṛsmāṇḍa mantras (mentioned in Tai. Ā. II. 3-6, viz 'yaddevā deva-hedaṇam' (Vāj. S. 20.14-16 = Tai. Ā. II. 3.1). The Mahārṇava-karmavipāka (folio 8 a) prescribes the procedure of Kṛsmāṇḍa homa taken from Jamadagni which is brief. It is as follows:— After shaving the hair on the head and the moustache and taking a bath in holy water one should offer the ājyabhāgas and then offer oblations of clarified butter with the three *Anuvākas* beginning with 'yad devā devahedaṇam,' and then he worships fire with the verses beginning with 'Vaiśvānarāya pratipādayāmi.' He then offers *samidh* with the mantra 'yadadivayam' and then he repeats the Jayā mantras. He has to observe the rules for a dikṣita viz. not eating flesh, avoiding sexual intercourse, not telling a falsehood and not sleeping on a cot. He has to subsist on milk (if he is a brāhmaṇa), on barley gruel if a kṣatriya and on āmiksā if he is a vaiśya. The Kṛsmāṇḍa-homa as prescribed by Baudhāyana is a longer one. The Baud. Dh. S. III. 7.1 prescribes that he who considers himself impure should offer burnt oblations reciting the kṛsmāṇḍa mantras, that he who has had forbidden intercourse becomes even like a thief or even like a slayer of a learned brāhmaṇa

102. अथ कृष्माण्डैर्जुहुयाद्योऽपूत इव मन्येत यथा स्तेनो यथा भ्रूणहैवमेष भवति योऽयोनौ रेतः सिञ्चति । यद्वर्जचीनमेनो भ्रूणहत्यायास्तस्मान्मुच्यत इति । तै. आ. II. 8, which is repeated in बौ. ध. सू. III. 7.1, that is q. by the मिता. on या. III. 303. यच्च कर्मणि यदेवा देवहेडनमित्यादयो मन्त्रास्तैत्तिरीयारण्यके समागताः स कृष्माण्डहोमः परिमिश्र अग्रे नय सुपथेति च तथा अग्रे मत्वे प्रथमस्य प्रचेतस इत्याद्या ऋचस्तैत्तिरीयाखाया समागताः स गणहोमः । महार्णवकर्मविपाक folio 7 b. For अग्ने नय vide Rg. I. 1. 1. 1. Tai. S. I. 1. 14.3, Tai. Ā. I. 8.8.

and that (by performing homa with kūṣmāṇḍas) he becomes free from any sin that is less than the murder of a learned brāhmaṇa. Yāj. III. 309 provides that whenever a twice-born man feels himself mixed up in heavy sins he should perform a homa with sesame with the sacred Gāyatrī mantra. The Mit. following a verse of Yama says that one lakh of offerings of sesame must be made. Both Manu XI. 34 and Vas. 26. 16 say that a brāhmaṇa becomes free from all distresses by Vedic recitations (japa) and sacrifices (homa). When the wife confessed to the existence of a paramour, the Śat. Br. II. 5. 2. 20 states that she made an offering into the Dakṣiṇāgni with the mantra (Vaj. S. III. 45) 'whatever¹⁰³ sin we have committed, whether in the village, in the forest, in society or by the organs of sense, we cast that away by this sacrifice, svāhā.' Both Manu (VIII. 105) and Yāj. (II, 83) prescribe that when a witness tells a falsehood in order to prevent an accused person from being sentenced to death, he should offer for expiating his perjury an oblation of boiled rice to Sarasvatī. There are other homas also prescribed such as the Gaṇahoma, in which such verses as 'agne naya supathā' from the Taittirīya śākhā are recited (Mahārṇava).

The old idea of sacrifice seems to have been that it was propitiatory in character. Sacrifice was not demanded or required by God. Sacrifice was probably regarded as a gift which pleased God, induced Him to forgive a man for his transgressions and enabled erring man to regain God's favour which had been lost by some shortcoming or some sinful act. Sacrifices therefore had an expiatory or cleansing function or character. Sacrifices may be performed by offerings either an animal (meant as substitute for the sinner himself who had forfeited his life for his sins and transgressions) or a burnt offering or any other thing offered to God and then distributed to others.

Japa (muttering of Vedic passages as prayers). *Japa* is of three kinds, *vācika* (audibly uttered), *upāṁśu* (inaudibly uttered) and *mānasa* (mentally revolved), each succeeding one being ten times superior, acc. to Laghu Hārīta IV. 186,

103. यद् ग्रामे यदरण्ये यत्सभायां यदिन्द्रिये । यदेनश्चकुमा वयमिदं तत्सर्वजगामहे
स्वाहा ॥ वाज. सं III. 45; vide also तै. सं. I. 8.3 for a similar passage



(Jivananda I.).¹⁰⁴ Śabara (on Jai. XII. 4. 1) distinguishes *japa* from *stuti*, the former being simply an utterance or recitation of a *mantra* or *mantras*¹⁰⁵. Inaudible *japa* is praised¹⁰⁶ in Śāṅkhāyana Br. 14. 1. The Āśv. Śr I. 1. 20 provides that *japa*, *anumantraṇa*, *āpyāyana* and *upasthāna* are uttered *upāṁśu*. The Āp. Śr. (24. 1. 8-10) provides that *mantras* from the Rgveda and the Sāmaveda are uttered in sacrifices loudly and that passages of the Yajurveda are muttered *upāṁśu* and the Tai. Prātiśākhya 23. 6 states that *upāṁśu* recitation is made by means of the effort of speech organs but without sound (i. e. in a very low voice) and without the mind being directed (to utterance with *udātta* and other accents) i. e. 'Karaṇavad-aśabdam-amanah-prayogam-upāṁśu'. Gaut. 19. 12 (= Baud. Dh. S. III. 10. 10 = Vas. 22.9) prescribes the following Vedic texts as purifiers: Upaniṣads, Vedānta texts, the Samhitā texts of all the Vedas (and not the *padapāṭha* or *kramapāṭha*), the *Yajus* texts in which the word 'madhu' occurs, the Aghamaṣaṇa hymn (Rg. X. 190. 1-3), the Atharvaśiras, (the *anuvākas* called) Rudras, the Puruṣa hymn (Rg. X. 90), the two *sāmans* called Rājata and Rauhiṇeya, the Brhat-sāma and the Rathantara, the Puruṣagati sāman, the Mahānāmni verses, the Mahāvairāja (*sāman*), the Mahādivākīrtiya (*sāman*), any of the Jyestha sāmans, the Bahispavamāna (*sāman*), the Kūsmāṇḍas, the Pāvamānis (Rg. IX) and the Sāvitrī (Rg. III. 62.10).¹⁰⁷ The

104. अत्र जपयज्ञं प्रकृत्य नरसिंहपुराणम् । त्रिविधो जपयज्ञः स्यात्तस्य भेदं निबोधत । वाचिकाख्य उपांशुश्च मानसस्त्रिविधः स्मृतः । त्रयाणां जपयज्ञानां श्रेयान् स्यादुत्तरोत्तरम् । इति । अत्र हारीतः । उच्चस्वेकगुणः प्रोक्तो ध्यानाद्विगुणः स्मृतः । उपांशुः स्याच्छतगुणः सहस्रो मानसः स्मृतः । स्मृतिच. I. p. 149. The verses त्रिविधो...उत्तरोत्तरम् occur in नृसिंहपुराण 58. 78-79 and also in लघुहारीत IV. p. 186 (Jiv. I). Both these also define वाचिक and उपांशुजप as follows: 'मन्त्रमुच्चारयन् वाचा जपयज्ञस्तु वाचिकः । शनैरुच्चारयन्मन्त्रं किञ्चिदोष्ठौ प्रचालयेत् । किञ्चिच्छ्रवणयोग्यः स्यात्स उपांशुजपः स्मृतः ॥'

105. वचनं जपनमिति समानार्थः, यस्मात् जप व्यक्तायां वाचीति स्मर्यते । तेन यत्र वचनमात्रं मन्त्रस्य क्रियते न स्तुयते नाश्रयते स जपः । शबर on जै. XII. 4.1.

106. अथात आज्यमाज्येन वै देवाः सर्वान्कामानाजयन्त सर्वममृतत्वं...तद्वा इदं षड्विधमाज्यं तूष्णीं जपस्तूष्णीं शंसः पुरोरुक्स्तुक्थवीर्यं याज्येति । ... अथ यत्पुरस्तात् तूष्णीं जपं जपति स्वर्गो वै लोको यज्ञस्तद्यत्पुरस्तात्तूष्णीं जपं जपति स्वस्त्ययनमेव तत्कुर्वते स्वर्गस्य लोकस्य समष्टयै । शांखायनब्रा. 14.1.

107. 'Madhūni' are explained by Haradatta as 'मधुशब्दयुक्तानि यजुषि ब्रह्ममेतु मामित्यादीनि'. These occur in तै. आ. X. 38. It is better to hold as done by the मद. पा. p. 761, by Maskarin in his bhāṣya on Gaut. and by Pt. Prakāśa (folio 86a) that the word मधूनि refers to the three verses beginning with the words 'Madhu vātā' that are Rg. I. 90. 6-8 and occur in Tai. S. IV. 2.0 and

(Continued on the next page)

original idea of japa was highly spiritual. Deep knowledge of the Upaniṣads and other texts would have made the soul pure and enabled it to realize the supreme reality and induced in the mind love of all human beings as sparks of the one Divine Essence. Japa at the highest level was contemplation of God and endeavour to attain unity with God. The habit of repeating the sacred texts should lead to maintaining the soul in the presence and thought of God. Japa demands three things, purity of heart, detachment and placing oneself in the hands of God.

Manu XI. 46 provides that a sin unintentionally committed is expiated by the recitation of Vedic texts as prayers, but that which men in their folly commit intentionally is expiated by *prāyaścitta*.

(Continued from the last page)

Vāj. s. XIII. 27-29 also, since they are styled *प्रधुमती* by आश्व. गृ., पार. गृ. I. 3, मानवगृ. I. 9.14. Atharvaśiras is an उपनिषद् which begins with देवा ह वै स्वर्गं लोक-मायंस्ते रुद्रमपृच्छन् को भवानिति. Vide the Nir. edition of 108 Upaniṣads (printed in 1925) for the अथर्वशिखम्. The अवमर्षण is highly eulogized as a destroyer of sins like Aśvamedha in Manu XI. 259-60, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 55.7, Vas. 26.8, Baud. Dh. S. IV. 2.20. Rudras are the eleven *anuvākas* of Tai. S. IV. 5. 1-11 beginning with नमस्ते रुद्र मन्यवे. Acc. to Haradatta the two *Sāmans* Rājata and Rauhina are sung on the Rk verse 'Indram naro nemadhitā havante' (Rg. VII. 27.1, Sāmaveda, Pūrvārcika 318). The बृहत्साम is sung on the verse त्वामिद्धि हवामहे (ऋ. VI. 46.1, Sāmaveda Pūrvārcika No. 234), the Rathantara on the verse अभि त्वा शूर (ऋ. VII. 32.22, Sāmaveda Pūrvārcika 233). In the भगवद्गीता X. 35 SriKṛṣṇa puts the Bṛhatsāma as the foremost among *Sāmans* (बृहत्साम तथा साम्नां). Puruṣagati Sāman is sung on the verse 'Aham-asmi prathamajā rtasya,' (Sāmaveda, Aranyakāṇḍa VI. 1 594). महानाम्नी verses are those beginning with विदा मधवन् विदा which occur in the ऐ. आ. IV, in the जैमिनीयसंहिता of the सामवेद (ed. by Dr. Raghuvira) and in other संहिताs. The महावैराज (सामन्) is sung on the verse पिबा सोममिन्द्र मन्दतु त्वा (ऋ. VII. 22.1, सामवेद पूर्वार्चिक 398, उत्तरार्चिक 927); the महादिवाकीर्त्य is sung on विभ्राड्बृहत्पिबतु सोम्यं (ऋ. X. 170.1, सामवेद अरण्यकाण्ड 628, उत्तरार्चिक 1453); about the ज्येष्ठसामानि हरदत्त mentions two interpretations (of the तलवकार शाखा and छन्दोगs), one holding that they are sung on उडु त्य (Rg. I. 50.1, सामवेद पूर्वार्चिक 31) and चित्रं देवानां (Rg. I. 115.1), the other that they are three *Sāmans* sung on मूर्धानं दिवो (Rg. VI. 7.1, सामवेद पूर्वार्चिक 67, उत्तरार्चिक 1140). Maskarin holds that ज्येष्ठसामानि are those sung on the verses इं नो देवी- (Rg. X. 9.4) and चित्रं देवानां (Rg. I. 115.1). The बहिष्पवमान is sung on उपास्मे गायतो नरः (Rg. IX. 11 1, सामवेद उत्तरार्चिक 651, 763). Vide H. of Dh. vol II pp. 1169-1170 for further details of the बहिष्पवमान. For the कूष्माण्डमन्त्र, vide तै. आ. I. 1. 1. पावमान्यः are the verses about soma in the 9th Maṇḍala of the Rgveda. Sāvitrī is the famous Gāyatrī mantra (Rg. III. 62.10.)

Manu II. 85-87 (which are the same as Vās. 26. 9-11 and Viṣṇu Dh. S. 55. 10-21) lay¹⁰⁸ down: 'the performance of *japa* is ten times more efficacious than the sacrifices (like Darśapūrṇamāsa) prescribed by the rules (of the Veda), *japa* when carried on inaudibly is a hundred times superior (to sacrifices) and mental revolution of mantras is a thousand times superior. The four pākayajñas¹⁰⁹ (Vaiśvadeva, *bali*, daily *śrāddha*, and honoring guests) together with the Vedic sacrifices do not come up to even the 16th part of *japa*. A brāhmaṇa attains perfection (the highest goal) by *japa*; he may or may not engage in other duties (such as Vedic sacrifices); a brāhmaṇa befriends all creatures'. Great eulogy is bestowed on the inaudible *japa* of the Gāyatrī mantra (Rg. III. 62.10) for which pp. 303-305 of H. of Dh. vol. II may be consulted. Where no particular number is specially mentioned the recitation of a mantra is to be performed a hundred times.¹¹⁰

Manu^{110a} XI. 261-262, Vās. 27. 1-3, Āṅgiras 101 and other works go so far as to assert that the fire of Veda study consumes guilt caused by evil deeds just as a fire burning strongly consumes even green trees or that a brāhmaṇa who remembers Rgveda (studied by him) is not tainted by any guilt, though he may have destroyed the three worlds and have eaten the food of any person whatever. But these are simply laudatory (*arthavādas*) and are not to be taken literally, as Vās. 27. 4¹¹¹ (= Āṅgiras 102) gives the warning 'one should not become addicted to (or take pleasure in committing) evil deeds relying on the power of the Veda (stated in some smṛti passages). (The effects of) actions done through ignorance and negligence are alone consumed (by Veda study) and not those of other actions (intentionally done).'

Many smṛtis such as Manu XI. 249-257 (which are almost the same as Viṣṇudharmottara II. 74. 4-13), Vās. 26. 5-7 and 28. 10-15 (the former of which are the same as Manu XI. 249-251), Viṣṇu

108. Manu II. 87 occurs in Śaṅkhasmṛti also (XII. 28).

109. The five pākayajñas are enumerated in Manu III 70 and the four meant are all of them except brahmayajña (teaching and studying Veda).

110. 'जपस्तु शतसंख्याकः, अनादेशे शतमिति सूत्रादिति शूलपाणि ; । प्र. प्रकाश, folio 143a.

110a. Manu XI. 262 and Vās. 27. 3 are identical.

111. न वेदबलमाश्रित्य पापकर्मरतिर्भवेत् । अज्ञानाच्च प्रमादाच्च दहते कर्मनेतरम् । बसिष्ठ 27.4, आङ्गिरस् 102.



Dh. S. 56. 3-27, Atri VI. 1-5 (which are almost the same as Vas.¹¹² 28. 10-15), Śaṅkha, chap. 11 (= Vas. 28. 10-15), Samvarta 227-228, Baud. Dh. S. IV. 2. 4-5, IV. 3. 8, IV. 4. 2-5, Yāj. III. 302-305, prescribe several Vedic hymns or single Vedic verses or prose passages as specially efficacious for removing all sins. It is not possible nor necessary to set down all of them, but by way of sample the verses of Manu (XI. 249-257) are translated here. 'Even a drinker of *surā* becomes pure if he mutters the hymn (seen) by Kutsa¹¹³, the three verses beginning with '*prati*' (Rg. VII. 80. 1-3) seen by Vasiṣṭha, the Māhitra hymn (Rg. X. 185), the verses called Śuddhavadis (Rg. VIII. 95. 7-9 where the word 'śuddha' occurs 13 times in different connections). Even he who has stolen gold (of a brāhmaṇa) instantly becomes free from guilt if he once mutters (the hymn) beginning with '*asya vāmasya*' i. e. Rg. I. 164. 1-52), and the Śivasankalpa (Vāj. S. XXXIV. 1-6). The violator of a guru's bed is freed from sin if he repeatedly recites the hymn beginning with '*haviṣpāntam*' (Rg. X. 88. 1-19) and the hymn beginning with '*na tam-amho*' (i. e. Rg. X. 126. 1-8), the hymn beginning with '*iti*' (i. e. Rg. X. 119) and the hymn addressed to *Puruṣa* (Rg. X. 90). He who desires to do away with sins, great and small, should mutter during a year the verse beginning with '*ava*' (i. e. '*ava te heḥo varuṇa namobhiḥ*' Rg. I. 24. 14, Tai. S. I. 5. 11. 3), or the verse '*yat kim ca*' (Rg. VII. 89. 5) or the verse '*iti vā*' (Rg. X. 119. 1). That man who, having accepted a gift that ought not to be accepted, or having eaten forbidden food, mutters the hymn beginning with '*tarat sa mandī*' (Rg. IX. 58. 1-4)¹¹⁴ becomes pure after three days. He who has committed many sins becomes pure if he recites for a month the hymn beginning with '*Somā rudrā*' (Rg. VI. 74. 1-4) and the three verses beginning with '*Aryamaṇam*' (Rg. IV. 2. 4-6) while he bathes in a river (and not in a pond or other reservoir of water). One guilty of a grievous offence should mutter the seven verses beginning with '*Indram*' (Rg. I. 106. 1-7). A twice-born man removes even very great guilt by offering clarified butter for a year (in fire) with the mantras for the Śākalahomas (Vāj. S. VIII. 13) or by muttering the

112. Vas. 28.10-15 are quoted in स्मृतिच. I. p. 187. Atri VI. 1-5 are quoted as Atri's in Gr. R. p. 245.

113. The Kautsa hymn is Rg. I. 97. 1-8, all of which have as their refrain अप नः शोशुचदधम्, 'may he burn away our sin.'

114. तरत्स मन्दी धावति is the refrain of all four verses of Rg IX. 58. It means 'He who presses (soma) gets over (all sins), he runs (to higher worlds)'.
Vide Nir. XIII. 6.



mantra 'nama id-ugram' (Rg. VI. 51. 8). One who is stained by mortal sin becomes pure if with a concentrated mind he attends cows for a year, reciting the Pāvamānī hymns (the whole of Rg. IX) and subsisting on alms.^{114a}

So much importance and such occult powers came to be attached to the words of the Rgveda that the Rgvidhāna of Śaunaka (which is later than Manu) concerns itself with prescribing numerous hymns of the Rgveda for the removal of various diseases, of sins, for the conquest of enemies.

The Sāma. Br. I. 5. 2 says¹¹⁵ generally that when no particular hymns are prescribed for the removal of sins Vedic mantras are powerful and become purifiers if accompanied by *tapas* and the Sāmans may be repeated for the same purpose from ten times as the minimum to 100 times as *prāyaścitta*. Gautama 19. 13 prescribes the kind of food on which one should subsist when one is engaged in *japa* viz. one was to live on milk alone, to eat vegetables only, to eat fruits only, to live on barley gruel prepared from a handful of grain, to eat gold¹¹⁶, to eat clarified butter, and to drink *soma* and so forth. Gautama 19. 14 further lays down that all mountains, all rivers, holy lakes, places of pilgrimage, the dwellings of sages (*ṛṣis*), cowpens and temples of the gods are places (which help to destroy sin).

As the Veda could be studied in and after the *sūtra* period only by the male members of the first three classes, the *japa* of Vedic texts for the removal of sins was not possible for *śūdras*; therefore, the Mit. (on Yāj. III. 262) says that although the *śūdra* (and women and those born of *pratiloma* marriages also) has no *adhikāra* (power or capacity or authority) for the recitation of *Gāyatrī* and other Vedic mantras, still the *śūdra* and women after revolving in the mind the name of the deity put in the dative case can engage in *japa* with the word *namaḥ* (i. e. he can only utter the words 'namo namaḥ' and not *om* &c)

114a. In Rg. I. 106. 1-7 the first six verses have the refrain विश्वमाप्नो अहसो निष्पिपर्तन ('May you take us beyond all sin').

115. अनादेशे मन्त्रा बलवन्तस्तपोन्विताः पावना भवन्ति। आपन्नः प्रायश्चित्तं चरेत्। अभ्यासः साम्नां शतं दशावरम्। सामविधानम्। I. 5. 2-4.

116. 'To eat gold' is explained by हरदत्त as 'सर्पिरादौ हिरण्यं निघृण्य प्राशनम्'.

as stated by Gaut. Dh. S. X. 66-67 and Yāj. I. 121¹¹⁷. When Manu IV. 80 says 'let him not explain to a śūdra the sacred law (*dharma*) nor impose upon him a *vrata*' all that is meant is, according to the Mit. on Yāj. III. 262, that it applies only to a śūdra who does not wait upon or serve higher varṇas. Similarly, when Gaut. IV. 20 says that those born in the inverse order are outside the pale of the sacred law, the meaning is that *samskāras* like upanayana are not to be performed on them. The mystic syllable 'om' is said by Āp. Dh. S. (I. 4. 13. 6) to be the door to heaven and was to be employed before the recitation of any Vedic passage. The Yogasūtra (I. 27) avers that *om* (called *praṇava*) is expressive of the idea of God and that the repetition of *om* and revolving the meaning of it in the mind lead to concentration.¹¹⁸

Not only were certain Vedic hymns and passages recommended for recitation with the object of removing sins some works, particularly the Purāṇas, proposed an easy way for all viz. that the remembrance of God Nārāyaṇa (or Hari or Kṛṣṇa) removed all sins. The Brahmapurāṇa (chap. 176) contains a stotra (hymn of praise) of Viṣṇu, which when recited is said to free a man from all sins (mental, vocal or bodily). The Pr. V. p. 31 quotes a verse from the Bhaviṣyapurāṇa^{118a} and three verses from the Viṣṇupurāṇa as follows:—'even a great sin is removed by (the resolve of) not doing it again, by gifts, by confessing it to others, and by meditation (on Viṣṇu) and not only by *prāyaścittas*' (Bhaviṣya); 'of all the expiations (for sins declared by the sages) such as *tapas* (Cāndrāyana and others) and other actions (*japa*, *homa*, gifts) the meditation on

117. अनुज्ञातोऽस्य नमस्कारो मन्त्रः । पाकयज्ञैः स्वयं यजेतेत्येके । गो. X. 66-67, on which हरदत्त comments 'अस्य शूद्रस्य वैश्वदेवादिषु तत्तद् देवतापदं चतुर्थ्यन्तं मनसा ध्यात्वा नमो नम इत्येवंरूपो मन्त्रोऽनुज्ञातो धर्मज्ञैः ; नमस्कारेण मन्त्रेण पञ्चयज्ञाच्च हापयेत् ॥ या. I. 121. Vide H. of Dh. vol. II. p. 158 note 371 for further details. मनु. X. 41 says that all pratilomas are like śūdras.

118. ओङ्कारः स्वर्गद्वारं तस्माद् ब्रह्माध्येष्यमाणं एतदादि प्रतिपद्येत । आप. ध. सू. I. 4.13.6; 'तस्य वाचकः प्रणवः । तज्जपस्तदर्थभावनम् । योगसूत्र I. 27-28; वाचस्पति comments: प्रणवस्य जपः प्रणवाभिधेयस्य चेश्वरस्य भावनम् । तदस्य योगिनः प्रणवं जपतः प्रणवार्थं च भावयतश्चित्तमेकाग्रं सम्पद्यते ।

118a. भविष्यपुराणम् । अपुनः करणात्यागात्स्वयापनादनुचिन्तनात् । व्यप्रेति सहवृत्त्येनः प्रायश्चित्तैर्न केवलम् ॥ विष्णुपुराणम् । प्रायश्चित्तान्यशेषाणि तपःकर्मात्मकानि न । याज्ञि तेषाम-शेषाणां कृष्णानुस्मरणं परम् ॥ प्रातर्निशि तथा सन्ध्यामध्याह्नादिषु संस्मरन् । गिरायणं नवामोति सद्यः पापक्षयं नरः ॥ प्राय. वि. p 31. The verse प्रायश्चित्त...परम् is विष्णुपुराणम् II. 6.39. The verse प्रातर्निशि is q. by अपरार्क p. 1232 and by प्राय. तत्त्व also (p. 524) The two verses are also respectively ब्रह्मपुराण 22.37 and 39.

Kṛṣṇa is the highest. If a man remembers Nārāyaṇa in the morning, at night, at twilight, at midday and the like, he at once secures the removal of sin' (Viṣṇupurāṇa). The Brahma-purāṇa¹¹⁹ (216. 87-88) gives expression to a popular belief as follows:—"Men, even after committing sins many times through folly, do not go to Hell if they prostrate themselves before Hari who destroys all sins. Those men also who always remember Janārdana even by roguery go to the world of Viṣṇu after death." The Viṣṇupurāṇa affirms that those who contemplate upon the mantra of twelve letters (viz. 'om namo bhagavate Vāsudevāya') do not return to the cycle of births and deaths. The great power of mantras is mentioned in the Ādiparva (161. 14) by Kuntī. The Nṛsimha-purāṇa in chap. 18 eulogises the mantra of eight letters (om namo Nārāyaṇāya) and chap. 63.6, states "what is the use of many mantras and the performance of many *vratas*, when the mantra 'om namo Nārāyaṇāya' is capable of securing all desired objects". The mantra of five letters 'namaḥ Śivāya' is dealt with in Lingapurāṇa (pūrvārdha, chap. 85) and Saurapurāṇa 65. Brahma-purāṇa speaks of *vaidika* mantras and *āgamokta* mantras (41. 63). The Nityācāra-paddhati (p. 67) says that it is necessary to understand the meaning of vedic mantras in śrauta rites but in smārta rites it is not so.

Dāna (gifts). Gaut. XIX. 16 provides¹²⁰ that gold, a cow, a dress, a horse, land, sesamum, clarified butter and food are the gifts (that destroy sin) and may be optionally undergone as penance if no express mention is made thereof. Vas. quotes several verses on gifts one of which (29. 16) states: "whatever sin a man distressed for livelihood commits he is purified from that by giving land even if it be as small in extent as 'gocarma'"¹²¹. Viṣṇu Dh. S. 92.4 is to the same effect. Samvarta¹²² (204) prescribes that the gifts of gold, cow and land

119. कृत्वापि बहुशः पापं नरा मोहसमन्विताः ॥ न यान्ति नरकं नत्वा सर्वपापहरं हरिम् ॥ शाठ्येनापि नरा नित्यं ये स्मरन्ति जनार्दनम् । तेषां यान्ति तज्जं त्यक्त्वा विष्णुलोकमनामयम् ॥ ब्रह्मपु. 216.87-88: अद्यापि न निवर्तन्ते द्वादशाक्षरचिन्तकाः । विष्णुपुराण I. 6.39.

120. हिरण्यं गौर्वासोऽश्वो भूमिस्तिला घृतमक्षमिति देयानि । एतान्येवानादेशे विकल्पेन क्रियेरन् । गौ. 19.16 and 18.

121. अथाप्युदाहरन्ति । यत्किञ्चित्कुरुते पापं पुरुषो वृत्तिकर्षितः । अपि गोचर्ममात्रेण भूमिदानेन क्षुध्यति ॥ वसिष्ठ 29.16. For the meaning of गोचर्म, vide H. of Dh. III. p. 432, n. 718.

122. सुवर्णदानं गोदानं भूमिदानं तथैव च । नाशयन्त्याशु पापानि अन्यजन्मकुतस्तथा ॥ संवर्त 204 q. by प्राय. तत्त्व p. 483 (which reads 'महापातकजान्यपि at the end') हिंसायां दानमेव मुख्यमित्युक्तं भविष्ये । हिंसात्मकानां सर्वेषां कीर्तितानां मनीषिभिः । श्वित्तकदम्बानां दानं प्रथममुच्यते ॥ प्रा. प्रकाश (folio 86a).

quickly destroy sins even if committed in former lives. Medhātithi (on Manu XI. 139) remarks that the verse implies that as to sins arising from injury to living beings gifts are the principal expiations. The subject of *dāna* has been dealt with at length in H. of Dh. vol. II pp. 837-888. A few further remarks may be made here. In many inscriptions and copperplate grants of lands or villages the donor usually states that the grant is made for the increase of the merit of himself and of his parents (e. g. E. I. vol. XI. p. 219 at p. 221). Brhaspati¹²³ as quoted in the Madanaratna (vyavahāra p. 66) expressly provides that in land-grants the king should state that he made the gift for securing merit to his parents and to himself¹²⁴. The Rājatarāṅgiṇī (I. 143)¹²⁵ refers to the founding of *viḥāras* (monasteries).

Upavāsa (fasting). Fasting strictly means total abstinence from food and drink, but generally it means light diet restricted in quantity and also as regards the nature of the articles taken. Even the Tai. S. (I. 6. 7. 3-4) refers¹²⁶ to three ways of observing *vrata* on the days of the *Darśapūrṇamāsa-īṣṭi* either by subsisting only on food available in the village or on forest food or partaking of no food at all. Gaut. 19.11 includes *upavāsa* among the several means of removing sins. Tapas is also one of such means acc. to him. But in Gaut. 19.15 as stated above, Gaut. includes fasting (*anāśaka*) among 'tapāmsi'.

123. दत्त्वा भूम्यादिकं राजा ताम्रपट्टे पटेऽथवा । शासनं कारयेद्धर्म्यं स्थानवन्द्यादि-
संयुतम् । मात्रापित्रोरात्मनश्च पुण्यायामुक्तसूत्रे । दत्तं मयामुक्तायाद्य दानं सन्नद्धाचारिणे ॥
बृह. in मदनरत्न p. 66 on व्यवहार.

124. In Europe the same practice prevailed in the middle ages. 'The founder (of monasteries) constantly tells us that this sacrifice is made for the atonement of his own sins and those of his progenitors and kinsfolk' G. G. Coulton in 'Five centuries of Religion' (1936) vol. III. p. 27. Redemption of sin by monetary payments or by leaving property to the churches and monasteries was a very firm belief in the Middle Ages in Christian countries, so much so that men who had earned properties made large gifts to the church when the prospect of death was near and vast estates accumulated in the hands of churchmen, which led to the passing of the Statute of Mortmain in England.

125. तस्मिन् कृते न जायेत विहारच्छेदवैशसम् । तस्य तत्प्रेरकाणां च प्रायश्चित्तं कृतं
भवेत् ॥ राजतरङ्गिणी I. 143.

126. यद्ग्राम्यानुपवसति तेन ग्राम्यानवरुन्धे यद्वारण्यस्याइनाति तेनारण्यान् यद्वान्ना-
नुपवसेत् पितृदेवत्यः स्यात् । तै. सं. I. 6. 7. 3.

Haradatta explains *upavāsa*¹²⁷ as giving up the eating of boiled rice (*bhaktatyāga*) and adds that *upavāsa* is again included under *tapāmsi* to show the great importance attached to it. Haradatta notes that a predecessor of his relying on a Purāṇa passage explained *upavāsa* in Gaut. 19.11 as 'restraint of senses'. In many of the Gr̥hya sūtras *upavāsa* means only eating light food prepared from corn usable in sacrifices (such as rice) once in the day excluding vegetables, māṣa (pulse), salt and flesh (compare Gobhila gr. I. 5.26, Khādīra gr. II. 1.4 and 6, Kausika-sūtra I. 31-32, Kāthakagr̥hya 46.2¹²⁸). The Br. Up. IV. 4. 22 closely associates 'anāsaka' (fasting) with *tapas* as a means to the mystic realisation of the Supreme Soul¹²⁹. Jaimini (III. 8. 9-11) appears to regard fasting as *tapas*¹³⁰. Manu XI. 203 (= Viṣṇu Dh. S. 54.29) provides that fasting (for a day) is the penance for omitting the rites ordained by the Veda (such as the Darśapūrṇamāsa sacrifice and the performance of *sandhyā* adoration) and for neglecting the special duties of a *snātaka* (laid down in Manu IV. 34 ff). When a person was observing a fast he had to avoid doing certain other actions. Acc. to Devala a fast becomes bereft of its good results by drinking water often, ✓ by chewing *tāmbūla* ✓ by sleep in the day-time and by sexual intercourse¹³¹; but the Garuḍapurāṇa I. 128. 6 and Bhaviṣya-purāṇa (I. 184.27) allow even when one is fasting the use of ✓ flowers, ornaments, rich clothes, garlands, unguents, applying collyrium to the eye and the cleansing of teeth. Dakṣa quoted by the Par. M. states that if a man observes a fast for the day and night on the day on which the sun first turns towards the

127. उपवासो भक्त्यागः । स एव तपः स्वपि पुनः पठ्यते आदरख्यापनार्थम् । अपर आह । निष्क्रयणेषु पठित उपवास इन्द्रियनिग्रहः । व्यावृत्तस्यैव दोषेभ्यो यस्तु वासो गुणैः सह । उपवासं तमाहुस्तु न शरीरस्य शोषणात् ॥ इति पुराणे दर्शनादिति । हरदत्त on गौ. 19. 11. The स्मृतिच. II. p. 355 attributes the verse to व्यास and it and अपरार्क p. 199 read it as उपावृत्तस्य पापेभ्यो...सर्वभोगविवर्जितः . प्रा. प्रकाश. (folio 44a) reads as अपरार्क does and says it is taken from अग्निपुराण.

128. काठकश्रृङ्गा 46.2 is औपवस्त्रं भुक्त्वा and the com. of देवपाल says: उपवस्तु-रशनमौपवस्त्रं तत्पुनर्व्रत्यं हविष्यान्नं शाकमाषलवणमांसवर्जम् । व्रीहियवयोधृतप्रभृतिभिर्भुक्त्वा ।

129. स वा एष महानज आत्मा...तमेतं वेदानुवचनेन ब्राह्मणा विविदिषन्ति यज्ञेन दानेन तपसाऽनाशकेन । बृह. उ. IV. 4. 22. Vide शाङ्करभाष्य on वेदान्तसूत्र III. 4.26 and 33 for the explanation of this Up. passage.

130. तपश्च फलसिद्धित्वालोकवत् । जै. III. 8. 9; शबर 'तपः श्रूयते द्वयहं नाश्रमाति द्वयहं नाश्रमाति इति । तत्र सन्देहः किमात्विजं तपः याजमानमिति । याजमानं तप इति ।

131. असकृज्जलपानाच्च ताम्बूलस्य च भक्षणात् । उपवासः प्रदुष्येत्तु दिशः स्वापा-मैथुनात् ॥ देवल q. by अपरार्क p. 199, स्मृतिच. II. p. 355. The गरुडपुराण I. 128, 7-8) has almost the same verse.



north or south, or on the Viṣuva day (day of equinox), and on an eclipse of the sun or the moon and bathes he is freed from all sins¹³². Manu XI. 166 (= Agnipurāṇa 169.31) prescribes a fast for three days as a penance for theft of grass, firewood, tree, dry food (i. e. grains of rice), jaggery, clothes, hide and flesh. The Anuśāsanaparva (106.1) remarks¹³³ that men of all varṇas and even Mlecchas thought highly of fasts and that chapter contains an exaggerated eulogy of fasting. Almost all religions (except Zoroastrianism) such as the Hebrew, Christian (in Lent) and Moslem (in Ramjan) emphasize the necessity of fasting as a discipline or as a preparation for penitence. The Bhaviṣya-purāṇa (I, chap. 16. 12-14) states that those who have not kindled sacred fires can please the gods by *vratas*, restraints, gifts and particularly by *upavāsas* and points out (verses 18-22) what substances (eatables) should be given up from the first to the 15th *tithi* in each fortnight. In the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa and the śrauta and grhya sūtras the word upavasatha is used in the sense of 'upavāsa' and is derived from 'vas' (to dwell) with 'upa'. Vide. H. of Dh. vol. II. p. 1010 and n. 2276 for the Śat. Br. The Khādīra gr II. 1.4, Gobhila. gr. I. 6.2, Kauśika-sūtra I. 31 employ the word upavasatha. Āp. Dh. S. II. 1. 1.4-5. prescribe an upavāsa for husband and wife on *parvan* days and if they cannot totally abstain from food they should eat only once by day food proper for upavāsa. Aparārka p. 199, Smṛ. C. (śrāddha p. 355) and Kṛtya-ratnākara quote a verse from Vyāsa deriving the word upavāsa^{133a}. The Āp. Dh. S. II. 5. 9-13, Baud. Dh. II. 7.32, Vas. 6.21 and Śān. gr. II. 16.5 have the same verse viz. 'an āhitāgni, a draught ox and brahmacārin, these three fulfill (their work) by eating; they cannot fulfill their duties by non-eating'. This is explained as not applying to prāyaścittas (Baud. Dh. Ś II. 7.34) and to fasts on Ekādaśī. The Śāntiparva 323.17 states 'Just as a dirty garment is afterwards cleansed by water, so to those who are heated in (the fire of) fasting inexhaustible happiness for a long time comes.' Sānti 79.18, however, says 'merely emaciating the body by fasting is not *tapas*, but *ahimsā*, truthfulness, freedom from cruelty, restraint and compassion are *tapas*'.

132. अयने विषुवे चैव चन्द्रसूर्यग्रहे तथा । अहोरात्रोषितः स्नात्वा सर्वपापैः प्रमुच्यते ॥
दक्ष q. by परा. मा. I. 1 p. 438.

133. सर्वेषामेव वर्णानां म्लेच्छानां च पितामह । उपवासे मतिरियं कारणं च न विमह ॥
अनुशासन 166.1.

133a. 'उपावृत्तस्य पापेभ्यो यस्तु वासो गुणैः सह । उपवासः स विज्ञेयः सर्वभोगविवर्जितः'
अपरार्क p. 199. गुणैः means 'क्षमादिभिः' and वासः means 'नियमेनावस्थानम्'.



Tīrthayātrā :—Pilgrimage will be dealt with exhaustively in a later section. It was believed that going on a pilgrimage and bathing in such holy rivers as the Ganges freed a man from sins. Viṣṇu Dh. S. (35.6) lays down that those guilty of *mahāpātakas* may become pure by Aśvamedha sacrifice or by visiting all the sacred places on the earth. Devala says that a man removes the consequences of such grave sins as the murder of a brāhmaṇa that he may have committed unintentionally by the performance of great sacrifices or by going on a pilgrimage. Parāśara (XII. 58 ff) prescribes¹³⁴ pilgrimage to see Rāma's bridge to Lankā for a murderer of a brāhmaṇa who has studied the four Vedas. Devala states: 'a man becomes freed from sin by approaching holy places and shrines, brāhmaṇas that practise austerities, that all rivers that fall into the ocean, all great mountains, all shrines and all forests are holy.' The Matsyapurāṇa (184.18) says that a heap of sins as big as the mountain Meru or Mandara becomes destroyed when man reaches Avimukta (Benares). The Kūrmapurāṇa¹³⁵ (pūrvārdha 29.3) says: 'I do not see any other expiation for destroying all sins in the Kaliyuga for all beings except Benares'. Even in the times of the Peshwas of Poona pilgrimage was prescribed for brāhmaṇa murder (vide 'Selections from Peshwa Records,' vol. 43 p. 107) and the brāhmaṇas were ordered that after the sinner performed the penance they were to dine with him and recognize that he had been purified. In an order dated śake 1659 (1737 AD) the Peshwa Bajirao the first informs the Deshmukhas, Deshpandes and Mukadams that four brothers named Zende approached him with the story that their father was born when their paternal grandmother lived with one Pilaji Zende after she became a widow and that she intended to remarry that man but that had to be postponed owing to famine, that the caste meeting were prepared to take them into the

134. चातुर्विधोपपन्ने तु विधने ब्रह्मघातके । समुद्रसेतुगमनं प्रायश्चित्तं विनिर्दिशेत् ॥ पराशर XII. 58 q. by अपरार्क p. 1061, प्राय. वि. p. 45. The मा. प्रकाश (folio 66 a and b) remarks: 'ब्रह्महत्याव्रतमुपक्रम्य भविष्यपुराणे । विन्ध्यादुत्तरतो यस्य निवासः परिकीर्तितः । पराशरमतं तस्य सेतुबन्धस्य दर्शनम् ॥ इति ।...अत्र च विन्ध्योत्तरवर्तिनः षष्ठ्यधिकशतत्रययोजनगमनेन तावत्संख्याकप्राजापत्यापनोद्यब्रह्महत्यापनोदोक्तस्तीर्थासुक्कलैकैकयोजनगमनस्यैकैकप्राजापत्यतुल्यत्वमर्थादुक्तं भवति ॥'

135. नान्यत्पश्यामि जन्तूनां मुक्त्वा वाराणसीं पुरीम् । सर्वपापप्रशमनं प्रायश्चित्तं कलौ युगे ॥ कूर्मपुराण (पूर्वार्ध 29.3) q. by परा. मा. II. 2 p. 162; अभिषेकस्य तीर्थानि पुण्यान्यायतनानि च । नरः पापात्ममुच्येत ब्राह्मणांश्च तपस्विनः ॥ सर्वाः समुद्रमा पुण्याः सर्वे पुण्या नगोत्तमाः । सर्वमायतनं पुण्यं सर्वं पुण्या वनाश्रयाः ॥ देवल q. by परा. मा. II. 2.p. 201, मा. प्रकाश folio 66 b,

caste and hold them pure if a Government order was issued. Then the Peshwa issued an order that they should go to Tulapur on the banks of the Bhīmā river and that they and their male progeny together with their wives should be restored back to the caste and complete association with them as to taking food and marriage be carried on with them from generation to generation.¹³⁶ The Pr. Prakāśa quotes a verse from the Bhaviṣya-purāṇa about the penance for brāhmaṇa murder to the effect that for him who dwells to the north of the Vindhya mountain Parāśara prescribes the sight of Setubandha as a penance and then remarks that a man from the north of Vindhya has to travel 360 yojanas to reach Setubandha and that since 360 Prājāpatya penances are declared to be enough to remove the sin of brahmahatyā, it impliedly follows that each yojana towards a tīrtha is equal to one Prājāpatya. The Smṛtyarthasāra (pp. 149-150) quotes several verses from the Purāṇas stating that gods like Brahmā, Viṣṇu and Śiva, great sages like Bhṛgu, Vasiṣṭha and Viśvāmitra, great kings like Hariścandra, Nala, Sagara obtained greatness by means of tīrthas and that Pāṇḍavas, Śrī Kṛṣṇa, Nārada, Vyāsa and other sages engaged in pilgrimages for securing kingdoms and for removal of evil fortune. This subject of tīrthas will be dealt with at length in a separate section.

136. Vide राजवाहे खण्ड 6 letter 113 p. 225.

CHAPTER III

PRĀYAŚCITTA; ITS ORIGIN, DERIVATION AND MEANING

It is now necessary to turn to *prāyaścittas* as removers of sin. A number of subjects will fall to be treated here.

First, an attempt must be made to understand the etymology and meaning of the word '*prāyaścitta*' in ancient times. There are two forms of the word, *prāyaścitti* and *prāyaścitta*, which occur in Vedic works without distinction of meaning and both forms are fairly old, though *prāyaścitti* appears to be the older of the two. The form *prāyaścitti* frequently occurs in the Tai. S. (as in II. 1.2.4, II. 1.4.1, III. 1.3.2-3, V. 1.9.3, V. 3.12.1)^{136a}. In some of these passages no question of sin arises. The word means 'doing some thing which would get rid of some accidental happening or mishap such as the breaking of an *ukhā* (a pot or saucepan for boiling or cooking) or the sun's losing its brilliance.' In Tai. S. V. 3.12.1 the word is used in the sense of an expiation for a sin. So even in very old books the word had two shades of meaning. The Kauṣītaki¹³⁷ Br. (vi. 12) states: "they say 'whatever mistake or excess occurs in the sacrifice that affects the priest *brahmā*, that he treats with the three-fold learning (i. e. the three Vedas)". The word also occurs in the Atharvaveda XIV. 1.30, Vāj. S. 39.12 (in close proximity to *niṣkṛti*), in the Ait. Br. V. 27, in the Śat. Br. IV. 5.7.1, VII. 1.4.9, XI. 5.3.8, XII. 4.1.6 and in other works also. The form *prāyaścitta* occurs in Kauṣītaki Br. V. 9, VI. 12 and elsewhere. The Āśv. Śr. III. 10.38 and Śāṅkhāyana Śr. III. 19.1 respectively employ the words *prāyaścitti* and *prāyaścitta*¹³⁸. In Pār. gr. I.

136 a. असावादित्यो न व्यरोचत तस्मै देवाः प्रायश्चित्तिमैच्छन् । तै. सं. II. 1.2.4, II. 1.4.1; यदि भिद्येत तैरेव कपालैः संसृजेत्सैव ततः प्रायश्चित्तिः । तै. सं. V. 1.9.3; एष वै प्रजापतिं सर्वं करोति योऽश्वमेधेन यजते सर्व एव भवति सर्वस्य वा एषा प्रायश्चित्तिः सर्वस्य भेषजम् । तै. सं. V. 3.12.1.

137. यद्वै यज्ञस्य स्खलितं बोलवणं वा भवति ब्रह्मण एव तत्प्राहुस्तत्तत्र यथा विप्रश्चरन् भिषज्यति । कौषीतकि ब्रा. VI. 12.

138. विध्यपराधे प्रायश्चित्तिः । आश्व. श्रौ. III. 10; विध्यपराधे प्रायश्चित्तम् । अथर्वश्रौ. प्रतिलाधिः । शां. श्रौ. III. 19.1; विध्यपराधे प्रायश्चित्तं दोषनिघातार्थं विधीयते । नैखानसश्रौतसूत्र 20. 1 विशेषे ध्यानं नारायणस्य तज्जपेज्याहोमाश्च हननार्थेति । वैखानसश्रौतसूत्र 20. 1

(Continued on the next page)

10 the form 'prāyaścitti' is employed. Jai. in several places employs the word prāyaścitta (as in VI. 3.7, VI. 4.10, VI 5.45 and 49, XII. 3.16). Śabara¹³⁹ on the last sūtra (XII. 3.16) explains that the prāyaścittas (in the Śruti texts) are of two kinds, viz. some are meant to make good the defect in the procedure and materials of sacrifice which arises or befalls through some neglect or heedlessness, while others are subsidiary parts of a rite when an occasion arises i. e. they are undertaken to atone for not doing what is ordained or doing something which is forbidden (e. g. non-performance of daily Agnihotra even though the sun rises). The Śat. Br.¹⁴⁰ XII. 4 and Ait. Br. 32.2-11 provide some interesting and amusing examples of the mishaps for which prāyaścittas are provided e. g. when a vicious boar, ram or dog runs between the sacrificial fires, or if Agnihotra milk gets spilled while the cow is being milked or if the milk pot is turned upside down or if it were to break or if the cow were to lie down while being milked, or if the fire were to go out after the first libation is offered etc. Vide also Mānava-grhya I. 3, Hir. gr. I. 5.1-16, Bhāradvāja gr. II. 32, Kauśika-sūtra 46. 14-55, Āśv. Śr. III. 10 and Āśv. gr. III. 6-7 for similar occurrences and prāyaścittas. The Mahābhāṣya on Pāṇ. VI. 1.157 explains¹⁴¹ both prāyaścitti and prāyaścitta on the analogy of the word *Pāraskara*. Prāyaścittas may be said to be, in the language of the Mīmāṃsā, either *kratvartha* or *puruṣārtha*. The former are prescribed in the Śrautasūtras. It is the latter kind of prāyaścittas that are generally dealt with in Smṛti works on prāyaścitta. In this work the prāyaścittas mentioned in Śrauta

(Continued from the last page)

Caland). The com. Nārāyaṇa explains आश्व. श्रौ. III. 10 as follows: विहितस्याकरणेऽन्यथाकरणे च प्रायश्चित्तिः कर्तव्या । प्रायो विनाशः चित्तिः सन्धानम् । विनष्टसन्धानं प्रायश्चित्तिरित्युक्तं भवति ।

139. 'प्रायश्चित्तानि द्विप्रकाराणि । कानिचिद्वैगुण्यस्य प्रमादादापतितस्य समाधानार्थानि कानिचिन्निमित्ते कर्माङ्गानि । तत्र समाधानार्थानि यथा यद्वृत्तो यज्ञ आर्तिमियात् भूः स्वाहेति गार्हपत्ये जुहुयात् । शबर on जै. XII. 3.16 ; 'यानि तु न दोषनिर्घातार्थानि तेषु समुच्चयः । कानि पुनस्तानि यानि श्रुतस्याक्रियया प्रतिषिद्धसेवनानि तान्युच्यन्ते । यथा यस्याहतमग्निहोत्रं सूर्योऽभ्युदियान्मैत्रं चरुं निर्वपेत् सौर्यमेककपालम् । शबर on जै. XII. 3.17. Compare आप. श्रौ. IX. 1. 1 श्रुतिलक्षणं प्रायश्चित् विध्यपराधे विधीयते । जपो होम इज्या च । दोषनिर्घातार्थानि भवन्ति ।

140. यस्याग्निहोत्रं दोह्यमानं एकन्देत् किं तत्र कर्म का प्रायश्चित्तिरिति शतपथ XII. 4.1.6.

141. प्रायस्य चित्तिचित्तयोः । महाभाष्य on 'पारस्करप्रभृतीनि च संज्ञायाम्' पा. VI. 1.157 (ed. by Kielhorn, vol. III. p. 96)



works are passed over, as they have either been mentioned in vol. II. or were of rare occurrence even in olden days.

Most digests and commentaries derive the word *prāyaścitta* relying on a verse (attributed to *Āṅgiras*¹⁴² by some) from *prāya* (meaning 'tapas') and *citta* (meaning resolve or firm belief), the idea being that *prāyaścittas* are so called because of their association with or emergence from a resolve to undergo *tapas* or because of the firm belief that it will be a means of the removal of sin. Various other derivations are suggested by some writers. The *Bālabhāṭṭi*¹⁴³ on *Yāj. III. 206* quotes a half verse to the effect that 'prāya' means 'sin' and 'citta' means 'purification', which had been quoted by *Pakṣadharamiśra*¹⁴⁴, *Bhaktūpādhyāya* and the *Todarānanda*, but the *Pr. M.* (p. 2) says that the source or authenticity of that verse is doubtful. *Hemādri* refers to an unnamed *bhāṣyakāra*'s explanation viz. 'prāya' means 'destruction' and 'citta' means 'joining together' and *prāyaścitta* means the making good what is lost and that the word denotes a *naimittika* action on sin.

The *Par. M.* quotes a *smṛti* text¹⁴⁵ and says that that is *prāyaścitta* whereby the 'citta' (the mind) of a repentant sinner is made generally (*prāyaśaḥ*) free (from emotion i. e. brought to a normal state) by the *parṣad* (assembly of learned *brāhmaṇas*). Here 'prāyaḥ' seems to be taken as equal to 'prāyaśaḥ' and 'citta' has its usual sense. In *Sāyana*'s¹⁴⁶ comment on the

142. प्रायो नाम तपः प्रोक्तं चित्तं निश्चय उच्यते । तपोनिश्चयसंयोगात्प्रायश्चित्तमिति स्मृतम् ॥ अङ्गिरस् acc. to हरदत्त on गौ. 22.1., प्राय. वि. p. 2 (° निश्चयसंयुक्तं). मरुकारि on गौ. 19.20 quotes व्याघ्र as प्रायो....चित्तं संयम उच्यते । तपःसंयमसंयुक्तं°, while प्राय. प्रकरण p. 8 reads चित्तं नियम उच्यते.

143. तदुक्तम् । प्रायः पापं विनिर्दिष्टं चित्तं तस्य विशोधनम् । इति । चतुर्विंशतिमते ऽप्येवम् । तथा पापनिवर्तनक्षमधर्मविशेषे योगरूढोऽयं शब्द इति तत्त्वम् । बालम्भट्टी on या. III. 206.

144. यत्तु पक्षधरमिश्रभक्तूपाध्यायटोडरानन्दकृतः—प्रायः पापं विजानीयाच्चित्तं तस्य विशोधनमिति च पेटुस्तत्राकरश्चिन्त्यः । प्राय. म. p. 2; भाष्यकारस्तु प्रायो विनाशः चित्तं सन्धानं विनष्टस्य सन्धानमिति विभागयोगेन प्रायश्चित्तशब्दः पापक्षयार्थं नैमित्तिके कर्मविशेषे वर्तते । हेमाद्रि (on प्राय.) p. 989.

145. प्रायश्च समं चित्तं चारयित्वा प्रदीयते । पर्षदा कार्यते यत्तु प्रायश्चित्तमिति स्मृतम् ॥ पापिनोनुतापिनश्च चित्तं व्याकुलं सत् विषमं भवति तच्च पर्षदा येन व्रतानुष्ठानेन प्रायश्चोऽवश्यं समं कार्यते तद्व्रतं प्रायश्चित्तम् । व्रतं चारयित्वा चित्तवैषम्यानिमित्तं पापं प्रदीयते खण्ड्यते विनाश्यते इत्यर्थः । परा. मा. II. part 1 p. 3.

146. अयं अयः प्राप्तिः प्रकर्षणायः प्रायः । विहितधर्माकरणस्य प्राप्तिरित्यर्थः । तत्पूर्वकानुष्ठानानि प्रायश्चित्तानि । com. on सामविधानम् I. 5.1.

Sāmavidhāna Br. I. 5.1 another derivation is suggested viz. that 'prāyah' is composed of two parts 'pra' and 'ayah' and means 'happening or finding' (of the non-performance of what is ordained) and 'citta' means 'knowledge'; and so religious observances after knowing a certain happening are called prāyaścittas. The Pr. Vi. p. 3 and Pr. Tattva p. 467 quote Hārta and give¹⁴⁷ yet another derivation (from 'prayata' pure and 'cita' collected), in accordance with which 'prāyaścitta' means such actions as *tapas*, gifts and sacrifices whereby a man becomes purified (*prayata*) and destroys his accumulated sins ('cita' being equal to 'upacita'), just as clothes are made clean by the employment of salts, moist heat, putting in boiling water on a fire, and washing in water. Hence, as the Mit. says, the word prāyaścitta conventionally¹⁴⁸ denotes a certain act or rite of the *naimittika* type (since it takes place only when an occasion arises) intended for the destruction of sin (and therefore being desired for removal of sin it may also be called *kāmya*). The Par. M. quotes verses from Brhaspati's¹⁴⁹ work of which the section on prāyaścitta holds at the beginning and at the conclusion thereof that prāyaścitta is *naimittika*¹⁵⁰ (to be performed when a cause

147. तत्र हारीतः । प्रयतत्वाद्दौषचित्तमशुभं कर्म नाशयतीति प्रायश्चित्तमिति । यत्तपः-प्रभृतिकं कर्म उपचितं सञ्चितमशुभं पापं नाशयतीति । कृततत्कर्मभिः कर्तुः प्रयतत्वाद्वा । शुद्धत्वादेव तत्प्रायश्चित्तम् । तथा च पुनर्हारीतः । यथा क्षारोपस्वेदचण्डनिर्णोदनप्रक्षालनादिभिर्वासांसि शुद्ध्यन्ति एवं तपोदानयज्ञैः पापकृतः शुद्धिमुपयन्ति । प्राय. तत्त्व p. 467; vide also प्राय. वि. p. 3 for the first sūtra and p. 17 for the rest of the passage of हारीत. The मद्. पा. p. 703 quotes the passage from यथा क्षारोप. मद्. पा. p. 704 explains चण्डनिर्णोदन as 'चुल्लचधिश्चयणादिना तत्क्लेदनम्' and प्रा. प्रकाश (folio 9a) 'चण्डः अग्निः निर्णोदनं तस्मिन्नाधिश्चयणं क्लेदनमिति'.

148. प्रायश्चित्तशब्दश्चायं पापक्षयार्थं नैमित्तिके कर्मविशेषे रूढः । मिता. on या. III. 220, which is q. by स्मृतिमु. (प्राय.) p. 859, परा. मा. II. part 1 p. 3.

149. तथा च बृहस्पतिः प्रायश्चित्तप्रकरणस्योपक्रमोपसंहारयोः नैमित्तिकत्वं दर्शयति । नैमित्तिकं धर्मजातं गदतो मे निबोधत । विहितस्याननुष्ठानात् प्रतिषिद्धनिषेवणात् । प्रायश्चित्तं यत्क्रियते तन्नैमित्तिकमुच्यते । इत्युपक्रमः । नैमित्तिकं समाख्यातं प्रायश्चित्तं समासतः । इत्युपसंहारश्च । परा. मा. II. part 1 p. 7; also in बालम्भटी on या. III. 206 and प्राय. प्रकाश folio 7 b. तथा च जाबालः । अतः काम्यं नैमित्तिकं च प्रायश्चित्तमिति स्थितिः प्रा. प्रकाश folio 8a.

150. Actions are divided into three kinds, *nitya*, *naimittika* and *kāmya*. *Nitya* acts are those like *sandhyā-vandana* (which are obligatory and performed daily as a duty and which if not performed lead to sinfulness); *naimittika* are those acts which have to be done only on some occasion (as a bath on an eclipse) and *kāmya* rites are those which are performed out of a desire to secure some object (as the sacrifice called *putrestī* for the son). Manu in XI. 53 says: 'therefore (because of the remnants of the

(Continued on the next page)



or occasion arises). Jābāla q. in the Pr. Prakāśa holds that *prāyaścitta* partakes of the nature of both *naimittika* and *kāmya* actions. The Pr. Prakāśa finds fault with the definitions of *prāyaścitta* proposed by the Kalpataru, Śūlapāṇi and others and ultimately arrives at the conclusion that those alone are *prāyaścittas* which are so spoken of by the learned, just as on Jaimini II.1.32 (tac-codakeṣu mantrākhyā) Bhaṭṭācārya explains that mantras are those which the respectable *yājñikas* and those who studied the Vedas so designate^{150a}

Sins as stated by Brhaspati¹⁵¹ and others are of two kinds, viz. intentionally committed and unintentionally committed.

Great divergence of views has prevailed from very ancient times as to whether *prāyaścittas* can destroy sins intentionally committed. Manu XI. 45 and Yāj. III. 226 are positive that sins committed unintentionally are destroyed by *prāyaścittas* or by the study of the Veda. The difficulty arises about sins committed intentionally or with full knowledge. Gaut. (19. 3-6 = Vas. 22. 2-5) states two views,^{151a} one holding that *prāyaścitta* should not be performed since deeds (here sinful deeds) are not destroyed (except by experiencing the consequences thereof), the other view holding that *prāyaścitta* should be per-

(Continued from the last page)

crimes in former lives men are born blind or idiots &c.) penances must always be performed for the sake of purification, because those whose sins have not been expiated are born with disgraceful marks.' Though Manu employs the word 'nityam' here, what is meant is that when a sin is committed, a *prāyaścitta* must necessarily be performed and it is not left to the volition of the sinner whether to perform it or not. Vide Mit. on Yāj. III. 220. But it does not follow from this that if *prāyaścitta* for removing a sin is not performed, another sin is thereby committed, for in that case there would be *anavasthā* (regressus ad infinitum).

150 a. 'यथा भट्टाचार्यैस्तत्रोदकेषु मन्त्राख्येति...यत्र वैदिकयाज्ञिकानामभियुक्तानां मन्त्र इति प्रसिद्धिः स मन्त्र इति सूत्रतात्पर्यं वर्णितमेवमिहापि यत्राभियुक्तानां प्रायश्चित्त-प्रसिद्धिस्तत्प्रायश्चित्तमिति लक्षणे मनुयाज्ञवल्क्यवाक्यानां तात्पर्यमुल्लेख्यम् । folio 76 of प्रा. प्रकाश Ms.

151. कामाकामकृतं त्वेवं महापापं द्विधा स्मृतम् । पुरुषापेक्षया चैव निष्कृतिर्द्विविधा स्मृता ॥ बृहस्पति q. by प्राय. वि. p. 24, परा. मा. II part 1 p. 13 (first half).

151 a तत्र प्रायश्चित्तं कुर्यान्न कुर्यादिति मीमांसन्ते । न कुर्यादित्याहुः । न कुर्यादित्यपरम् । गौ. 19.3.6 = वसिष्ठ 22. 2-5 (the last being कुर्यादित्यपरम् तस्माच्छ्रुतिनिर्देशात्) न कुर्यादित्याहुः । This is the पूर्वपक्ष view. The is 'कुर्यात्' which is supported by indications derived from vedic passages.



formed (for the removal of the effects of sin). The latter relies upon certain indications in Vedic passages. Gaut. relies upon four such passages. The first says "152 'after performing the *punaḥstoma* 153 one can come back to (become fit for) *soma* sacrifice (i. e. for Vedic rites in general). Another indication is: 'after performing *Vrātyastoma* (one becomes fit for Vedic sacrifices).' A third is: 'He, who offers the *Aśvamedha* sacrifice, crosses beyond all sin, beyond *brāhmaṇa* murder'. The fourth is: one should make a person charged with grave sins perform the *Agniṣṭut*. Vasiṣṭha also (20. 1-2) gives expression to the two views about the efficacy of penances. 154 *Manu* XI. 45 (latter half) states, that according to some, *prāyaścittas* may be prescribed for the removal of intentionally committed sins from indications contained in the Vedas. It cannot be said that these *Śruti* passages are mere *arthavādas* (i. e. laudatory texts). They must really be taken, though expressed in the form of ordinary *arthavādas*, as laying down (a *vidhi*) that one desirous of destroying his sins should perform *Aśvamedha* and the other sacrifices mentioned. In this case the maxim of *rātrisattra* 155 applies (vide *Jai*. IV. 3. 17-19). There are certain *sattras* (sacrifices extending over more than twelve days) called *Trayo-*

152. पुनः स्तोमेनेष्ट्वा पुनः सवनमायान्तीति विज्ञायते । व्रात्यस्तोमैश्चेष्ट्वा । तरति सर्वं पाप्मानं तरति ब्रह्महत्यां योऽश्वमेधेन यजते । अग्निष्टुताभिः शस्यमानं याजयेदिति च । गौ. 19.7-10. वसिष्ठ (22.6) is the same as गौ. 19.9, while it (22.7) reads इति चाभिः शस्तो गोसवेनाभिष्टुता यजेत. तरति सर्वं is तै. सं. V. 3.12.2 quoted above and शतपथब्रा. XIII. 3.1.1. गोसव and अभिष्टुत are different sacrifices. The गोसव is a strange rite, for which vide H. of Dh. vol. II p. 1213 n. 2644. It is described in तै. ब्रा. II. 7.6.

153. The *Punaḥstoma* is a *śrauta* sacrifice, of the class called *ekāha* (i. e., performed in one day) acc. to Haradatta. Vide *Lāṭyāyana-śrauta* IX. 4 and 5 for its efficacy. The *Vrātyastoma* is also an *ekāha*, which was prescribed for those whose *upanayana* was not performed at the proper time (and who had therefore become *patita-sāvitrika*). *Yāj.* I. 38 provides *vrātyastoma* for *patitasāvitrika*. Vide H. of Dh. vol. II p. 377 and p. 385 (for its description from the *Tāndya Brāhmaṇa*). The *Agniṣṭut* is an *ekāha* (vide *Tai. Br.* II. 7. 12 and *Āśv. Śr.* IX. 7 22-25). *Manu* XI. 74 prescribes *Aśvamedha*, *Gosava* or *Agniṣṭut* and several other sacrifices for the removal of the grave sin of *brāhmaṇa* murder.

154. अनभिसन्धिकृते प्रायश्चित्तमपराधे । अभिसन्धिकृतेऽप्येके । वसिष्ठ 20. 1-2.

155. रात्रीः प्रकृत्य श्रूयते प्रतितिष्ठन्ति ह वा य एता रात्रीरुपयन्ति । ब्रह्मवर्चसिनाऽऽदा भवन्ति य एता उपयन्ति । इति । तत्र सन्देहः । किं ते फलार्थवादा उत फलविधय इति । शबर on जैमिनि IV. 3. 17. The second alternative is the सिद्धान्त view.. ताण्ड्यब्राह्मण 23.2.4 for the passage प्रतितिष्ठन्ति...उपयन्ति ।



daśarātra, Caturdaśarātra and so on. All these are called rātrisattras. With reference to these a Vedic passage says 'those who approach (i. e. perform) these rātrisattras attain stability (long life or super-eminence)'. In the text prescribing the rātrisattras there is no mention of any special reward for performance. Therefore 'stability' (*pratiṣṭhā*) contained in the passage must be held to be the reward of the performance of rātrisattras and not mere heaven (which is the reward of all sacrifices for which no special reward is mentioned, according to Jai. IV. 3. 15-16). The same maxim applies to passages like Yāj. III. 226 which say that sin is removed by penances¹⁵⁶. Medhātithi draws attention to the story in the Tai. S. VI. 2.7.5, Kāthaka S. VIII. 5, Ait. Br. 35.2 that Indra consigned yatis to *Śālāvṛkas* (dogs or wolves) and had to perform the rites called Upahavya to get rid of the sin. Manu states his own opinion in the next verse (XI. 46) that sins committed unintentionally are destroyed by the recitation of Vedic texts and sins committed intentionally through folly are destroyed by various *prāyaścittas*. Yāj. III. 226 (latter half) appears to hold that *prāyaścittas* do not destroy sins intentionally committed, but the sinner undergoing the prescribed penance becomes fit to be associated with other people on account of the texts (laying down the *prāyaścittas*); but Yāj. implies, it seems, that the results of sin intentionally committed (such as Hell and the like) are not got rid of. Manu XI. 189 prohibiting social intercourse with sinners who have not performed penance practically conveys the same idea as that of Yāj. in III. 226 (latter half). Yāj. III. 220 observes that a man guilty of *pātakas* should perform *prāyaścitta* for his own purification (here and in the next world); in this way (i. e. if he performs penance) his inner soul recovers its composure and the people also become satisfied. This verse puts in a nutshell the purposes of *prāyaścittas* as conceived by the *smṛtis*, viz. purging of sin (or purification), the satisfaction of the sinner's mind, admission to intercourse with

156. 'पुनःस्तोमेनेष्ट्वा...यजते इति ।...न चेदमर्थवादमात्रम् । अधिकारिविशेषणा-
कांक्षया रात्रिसत्रन्यायेनार्थवादिकफलस्यैव कल्पनाया न्याय्यत्वात् । अतो युक्तं प्रायश्चित्ते-
परेत्येन इति । मिता. on या. III. 226; vide प्राय. वि. p. 9 and p. 18 for similar views
'अतो रात्रिसत्रन्यायेनार्थवादिकपापक्षयकामिना प्रायश्चित्तं कर्तव्यमिति निर्णीतम्' प्राय. वि.
p. 18. The उपहव्य sacrifice is prescribed for one desirous of prosperity,
ownership of a village or offspring. Vide कात्या. श्रौ. सू. 22.8.7 'भूमिकामो वा
ग्रामकामो वा प्रजाकामो वोपहव्येन यजेत.'

all people. Chāgaleya¹⁵⁷ holds that *prāyaścittas* free the sinner from the consequences of sins committed unintentionally, but no penance exists which frees a man from the consequences of sins knowingly committed except in the case of *upapātakas* and in suicides or attempts at suicide. The Par. M. (II. 1. pp. 200-201) cites a verse of Jābāli and verses of Devala setting forth the two views about the efficacy of *prāyaścittas*, while it also cites the view of Baudhāyana-smṛti that there is no *prāyaścitta* for sins committed knowingly and the view of Āṅgiras that the penance is double in the latter case¹⁵⁸. Āṅgiras further says that *prāyaścittas* do destroy the sin arising from committing acts that are forbidden and the like, just as the rising sun removes darkness. Manu XI. 47 provides: 'A twice-born man having become liable to perform a penance (for a sin), whether he committed it through fate or by some act committed in a former existence, must not have intercourse with virtuous men until he performs the proper penance.' Āp. Dh. S. (I. 9. 24. 24-25) provides 'If a man slays a *guru* (father, Vedic teacher &c.) or a *brāhmaṇa* who has studied the Veda and finished the ceremonies of a soma sacrifice he shall live according to these very rules (contained in Āp. Dh. S. I. 9. 24. 10-32) until his last breath. He cannot be purified (of the sin of the murder of a *guru* or learned *brāhmaṇa*) in this life. But his sin is removed (at his death)'.¹⁵⁹ It appears to follow from Āpastamba's words that penance ending in death destroys the sin. The same was the view of Āṅgiras, Yama and others.

157. छागलेयेऽपि । प्रायश्चित्तमकामानां कामावासौ न विद्यते । उपपातक एव स्यात्तथा चात्मोपघातने ॥ अस्यार्थः । कामावासौ ज्ञानपूर्वकपापे नरकभोगनिवारकं प्रायश्चित्तं न विद्यते । उपपातकात्महननयोस्तु ज्ञानपूर्वकत्वेऽपि स्याद्विद्यत एवेति । आत्महननार्थं विषभक्षणे कृते यदि जीवति तदा प्रायश्चित्तं विद्यते यदा मृतस्तदा तद्वितेऽप्युना कर्तव्यमित्युभयथापि प्रायश्चित्तं विद्यते इति न विरोधः । मद्. पा. p. 705. The half verse प्रायश्चित्त...विद्यते occurs in परा. मा. II. part 1 p. 201.

158. अकामतः कृते पापे प्रायश्चित्तं न कामतः । स्यात्त्वकामकृते यत्तु द्विगुणं बुद्धिपूर्वके ॥ अङ्गिरस् q. by परा. मा. II. part 1 p 201; अस्ति निषिद्धक्रियाजन्यं पापं तन्नाशकत्वं तु प्रायश्चित्तस्य । तथा चाङ्गिराः । उद्यन्यद्वदथादित्यस्तमः सर्वं व्यपोहति । तद्वत्कल्याणमातिष्ठन् सर्वं पापं व्यपोहति । पापं चेत्पुरुषः कृत्वा कल्याणमभिपद्यते । मुच्यते पातकैः सर्वैरिहाभैरिव चन्द्रमाः ॥ कल्याणं प्रायश्चित्तम् । प्रा. प्रकाश folio 6a.

159. गुरुं हत्वा श्रोत्रियं वा कर्मसमाप्तमेतेनैव विधिनोत्तमादुच्छ्वासाच्चरेत् । नास्य स्मिँल्लोके प्रत्यापत्तिर्विद्यते कल्मषं तु निर्हण्यते । आप. ध. सू. I. 9. 24. 24-25. Vide also आप. ध. सू. I. 10. 28. 18 for the same words. हरदत्त gives his own and another's interpretation of आप. ध. सू. I. 9.24 24-25 'अस्मिँल्लोके जीविते प्रत्यापत्तिः शुद्धिर्नास्तीत्यर्थः । कल्मषं तु निर्हण्यते । तस्य पुत्रादिभिः संस्कारादिः कर्तव्य इति अन्ये तु पूर्वं सूत्रं तन्निवृत्त्यर्थं मन्यन्ते । प्रत्यापत्तिः पुत्रादिभिः पुत्रादिभावेन सम्बन्ध इति



In this conflict among the authors of smṛtis the solution proposed by the Mit. on Yāj. III. 226 has been accepted by most medieval writers and is as follows¹⁶⁰: The potentialities and consequences of sins are twofold, viz those leading to Hell and the others preventing intercourse with members of the society to which the sinner belongs. Therefore, even though a prāyaścitta may not be efficacious to prevent the first mentioned consequence (viz fall into Hell), there is nothing improper in prāyaścitta being effective in removing the obstacle to association with other people. As to sinful acts that are not *patanīya* (do not cause loss of caste) prāyaścitta does destroy such sinfulness as expressly stated by Manu. XI. 46. Even as to sins that are *patanīya* and are committed intentionally, if a penance ending in death is undergone as laid down by Manu XI. 73, Yāj. III. 247-248 and Gaut. 22. 2-3 for brāhmaṇa murder; Manu XI. 90-91, Yāj. III. 253, Gaut. 23.1 for drinking *surā*; Gaut. 23.8-11, Manu XI. 103-104 and Yāj. III. 259 for sexual intercourse with the *guru*'s wife; Manu XI. 99-100 and Yāj. III. 257 for theft of brāhmaṇa's gold; then the sin is destroyed as stated by Āp. Dh. S. I. 9.24. 25 and I. 10. 28.18 quoted above. When Manu says (in XI. 89 latter half) that there is no penance for the sin of slaying a brāhmaṇa intentionally, the proper interpretation of this read along with Manu XI. 46 quoted above is not that there is total absence of prāyaścitta in such a case, but that ordinary prāyaścittas (such as those in Manu XI. 72) would not do in such a case, but only very heavy ones that would end in death. Medieval digests like the *Prāyaścitta-muktāvali* (folio 32a) hold that according to the *Kalivarjya* section penance ending in death is forbidden in the case of brāhmaṇa sinners and therefore a

160. यत्तु मनुवचनं 'इयं विशुद्धिरुदिता' इत्यादि (11.89) तदपीयमिति सर्वनाम-
परामृष्टादशवार्षिकादिब्रतचर्याया एव 'कामतो...विधीयते' इत्यनेन प्रतिषेधो न पुनः
प्रायश्चित्तमात्रस्य । मरणान्तिकादेः प्रायश्चित्तस्य दर्शितत्वात् ।...हे हि पापस्य शक्ती नरकोत्पादिका
व्यवहारनिरोधिका चेति । तत्रेतरशक्त्याविनाशेऽपि व्यवहारनिरोधिकायाः शक्तेर्विनाशो नानुपपन्न-
स्तरमात्पापानपगमेऽपि व्यवहार्यत्वं नानुपपन्नम् । यत्तु मनुवचनं (11.45) 'अकामतः...निदर्शनात्'
इति तदपि कामकृते प्रायश्चित्तप्राप्त्यर्थं न पुनः पापक्षयप्रतिपादनपरम् । अपतनीये पुनः कामकृतेऽपि
प्रायश्चित्तन पापक्षयो भवत्येव 'अकामतः...पृथग्विधैः ॥' इति मनुस्मरणात् (11.46) । पतनी-
येऽपि कर्मणि कामकृते मरणान्तिकप्रायश्चित्तेषु कल्मषक्षयो भवत्येव फलान्तराभावात् ।
'नास्यास्मिँल्लोके...निर्हन्त्यते' इत्यापस्तम्बस्मरणात् । मिता. on या. III. 226. वृद्धहारीत IX.
173 and Yama hold the view that intentional sins are destroyed by penances
that end in death: प्रायश्चित्तरूपैत्येनो यदकार्यकृतं महत् (यदकामकृतं?) कामतस्तु
कृतं यत्तु मरणात्साद्धिमृच्छति ॥ ; महापातककर्तारश्चत्वारो मतिपूर्वकम् । अग्निं प्राविश्य
शुद्ध्यन्ति स्नात्वा महति वा क्रतौ ॥ यम q. by प्रा. प्रकाश, folio 16 (b); अपराक 1039
reads चत्वारोऽप्यविशेषतः'. The words of the मिता. are quoted or paraphrased by
subsequent works such as the *Prāyaścittasāra* (p. 4).

brāhmaṇa murderer can only be made to undergo the twelve years' penance.

The Par. M. (II. part 1 pp. 201-203) sets out this view of the Mit. and appears to hold it itself. It sets out another view also. Those who hold this latter view read Yāj. III. 226 as 'kāmatoṣvyavahāryastu' with an *avagraha*. The meaning then is that one who has performed the penance prescribed for a sin does not fall into Hell, but he cannot be allowed to associate with good men (*śiṣṭas*) if he is guilty of a wilful sin. There is a verse of Manu (XI. 190 = Viṣṇu Dh. S. 54.32) that one should not associate with those who slay children, who return evil for the good done to them, who slay those that come for protection and who kill women, even though they might have become purified by undergoing the appropriate penance. There is a similar verse of Yāj. III. 298 on which the comment of Vijñāneśvara is most interesting as indicative of the spirit of our medieval writers who were always oppressed by the might of words (Vedic or *smṛti*) deemed as authoritative. The Mit. remarks:¹⁶¹ 'the prohibition (contained in Yāj. III. 298) is based on the text alone (and not on logic or reasoning). What cannot a text do? There is nothing too heavy for a text. Therefore, even though a light penance is prescribed for slaying an adulterous woman, still there is a prohibition against associating with such slayers based on the words of the text'.

161. प्रायश्चित्तेन क्षीणदोषानपि न संव्यवहरोदिति वाचनिकोऽयं प्रतिषेधः । 'किमिति वचनं न कुर्यान्न हि वचनस्यातिभारोऽस्ति' । अतश्च यद्यपि व्यभिचारिणीनां वधेऽल्पीय एव प्रायश्चित्तं तथापि वाचनिकोऽयं संव्यवहारप्रतिषेधः । मिता. on या. III. 298. The words किमिव हि वचनं...भारः occur frequently in शाबरभाष्य, e.g. on जै. II. 2.27, III. 2.3, III. 7.11, IV. 3.38, V. 4.17 etc. On जै. VI. 1.44 (about the privilege of the rathakāra to consecrate Vedic fires) Sabara employs slightly different words 'न हि वचनस्य किञ्चिदलभ्यं नाम.' Even Śaṅkarācārya relies on these words of Sabara in his bhāṣya on Vedāntasūtra III. 4.32. When Yāj. I. 58 says that a son born of a brāhma form of marriage renders 21 generations holy (10 paternal ancestors, ten descendants and himself) Viśvarūpa says that this is all laudatory of the brāhma form and not to be taken seriously as it would be contrary to the doctrine of *Karma*; but then he turns round and says that it may be taken literally as stated by those who know Mīmāṃsā 'स्तुतिमात्रमेतच्छ्रुतानां भाविनां पावनानुपपत्तेः । उपपत्तौ वा कृतनाशाकृताभ्यागमप्रसङ्गात् । यद्वास्तु फलविधिः । विवाहविशेषस्य फलविशेषापेक्षत्वात् । न चागमानुसारिण्यर्थेऽनुपपत्तिरिति शङ्क्यं वक्तुम् । तथा च नैयायिकाः—न हि वचनस्यातिभारोऽस्तीत्याहुः ।' विश्वरूप on या. I. 58. Vide Aparārka on Yāj. II. 73-75 (p. 673) who says that one man's merit (*punya*) cannot be transferred to another and that Yāj. II. 73-75 are simply intended to frighten away witnesses from perjury as Nārada (Nārada 200) clearly states,

This maxim is taken from the bhāṣya of Śabara and is a favourite device with all Dharmaśāstra writers from Viśvarūpa downwards to justify any statement of the smṛtis however illogical or exaggerated it might appear to be. The Pr. T. (pp. 544-545) quotes ¹⁶² the Mit. about the two śaktis of sin and its remarks on Yāj. III. 298 and does not approve of them, relying on the words of Bṛhaspati that no decision should be arrived at on the bare words of the śāstra, but it should also be supported by reasoning and that the words 'slayers of women' do not refer to adulterous women but to innocent women (such as the wives of one's enemies). Nārada (sāhasa, verse 11) holds that those who are punished by the king with a fine of the first or second (madhyama) kind can be allowed to associate with other members of society but those who are awarded the highest fine should not be spoken to by others ^{162a}. Those who take the view of the sinner's inability to associate with other men even after undergoing penance rely also upon Vedānta-sūtra III. 4. 43 (bahis-tūbhayathāpi smṛterācārācca). The Par. M. very rightly points ¹⁶³ out that the sūtra refers to those who after going in for life-long celibacy abandon the duties of that stage of life (āśrama) and that it does not refer to householders and quotes a verse of Kauśika in support. The Smṛti-muktāphala (Pr., pp. 867-868) refers to this discussion contained in the Par. M. The Pr. M. (p. 7) appears ¹⁶⁴ to hold that the great Śaṅkarācārya explained

162. एतेन यद्यपि व्यभिचारिणी...प्रतिषेध इति मिताक्षरोक्तं न युक्तिसहम्। केवलं शास्त्रमाश्रित्य न कर्तव्यो विनिर्णयः। युक्तिहीनविचारे तु धर्महानिः प्रजायते। प्रायेण गुरुणि गुरुणि स्वल्पान्यल्पे च तद्विदः। प्रायश्चित्तानि मैत्रेय जगुः स्वायम्भुवादयः। इति बृहस्पति-वचनात्। प्राय. त. p. 545.

162 a. स्यातां संव्यवहार्यौ तु धृतदण्डौ तु पूर्वयोः। धृतदण्डोऽप्यसम्भाव्यो ज्ञेय उत्तम-साहसे ॥ नारद (साहस, 11).

163. अयं हि बहिष्कार ऊर्ध्वरेतोविषयः न तु गृहस्थविषयः। ऊर्ध्वरेतोविचारणामेव तत्र प्रस्तुतत्वात्। इदं च कौशिकेन स्पष्टीकृतम्। नैष्ठिकानां वनस्थानां यतीनां चावकीर्णनाम्। शुद्धानामपि लोकेऽस्मिन् प्रत्यापत्तिर्न विद्यते ॥ इति। परा. मा. II part 1 p. 205. प्रा. प्रकाश (folio 17 b) quotes कौशिक's verse.

164. श्रीशङ्कराचार्यास्तु 'कामतोऽव्यवहार्यस्तु' इति अकारप्रश्लेषेणेदं याज्ञवल्क्यवचो 'बहिस्तुभ्यथापि स्मृतेराचाराच्च' इति सूत्रे कृतप्रायश्चित्तनैष्ठिकब्रह्मचार्यादिपरम्। आरूढो नैष्ठिके धर्मे यस्तु प्रच्यवते पुनः। प्रायश्चित्तं न पश्यामि येन शुध्येत्स आत्महा ॥ इति। प्राय. म. p. 7. The verse आरूढो is अत्रि VIII. 16 and is quoted by शङ्कर without citing the name. The प्रा. प्रकाश (folio 17 a) also refers to Śaṅkara's comment on Vedāntasūtra III. 4.43 and the two verses quoted by him. It observes: एवं तावत्सकलनिबन्धसंमतं व्यवहार्य इति पदच्छेदेन याज्ञवल्क्यवाक्यस्य व्याख्यान-युक्तम्। शारीरकमीमांसायां तु०

Vedāntasūtra III. 4. 43 after reading Yāj. III. 226 as 'kāmatos vyavahāryastu' and that those who fell from the vow of life-long celibacy (either as naiṣṭhika brahmacārins or as sannyāsins) were to be excommunicated (and not to be associated with). The printed editions of the bhāṣya contain no express quotation of Yājñavalkya's verse, but from the fact of his quoting Atri's verse it is possible to hold that Śaṅkarācārya understood Yājñavalkya as the Pr. M. says he did.

A question may naturally be asked: why should it be accepted that penances destroy sin (as stated in Yāj. III. 226). The answer is: what ¹⁶⁵ actions are grave sins or minor sins or not sins at all is laid down by the śāstra (śruti and smṛtis). For example, it is not clear to ordinary people why being an officer over mines or making friends of low people or being a servant of a śūdra should be a sin at all. But the smṛtis say so. If the smṛtis are to be relied upon for determining what acts are sinful, then it follows as a matter of course that the same smṛtis which speak of penances as removers of sins must also be accepted and that no other means for determining the efficacy of penances can be appealed to. So also the Bhagavad-gītā (IV. 37) states that the fire of spiritual knowledge consumes all (accumulated, *sañcita*) actions (and their consequences).

Many of the sins (though not *all*) for which penances are provided in the smṛtis are also offences punishable by the king or State. For example, murder, theft, incest, perjury are acts punishable by the State in almost all countries even now and were so in ancient and medieval India. Persons guilty of these were also liable to undergo *prāyaścittas*. It is probably due to this double liability that punishments for crimes in ancient and medieval India were light as compared with the heavy punishments for even trifling crimes inflicted in western countries only a century or two ago. But there are other acts which are not punishable by the State now and were not probably punished even in ancient or medieval India by the king. For example, forgetting Veda studied by a person, not tending Vedic fires consecrated by a person himself, sleeping till after sun-rise and sleeping at sunset are *pātakas*, acc. to Vas. I. 19 and some of those are *upapātakas* acc. to Yāj. III. 239. It does not seem

165. ननु प्रायश्चित्तैरपैत्येन इति न युक्तम्। फलविनाश्यत्वात्कर्मणः। मैवम्। यथा पापोत्पत्तिः शास्त्रगम्या तथा तत्परिक्षयोपीति। नात्र प्रमाणान्तरं क्रमते। अत एव पूर्वोत्तरपक्षभङ्ग्यायमर्थो दर्शितः। मिता. on या. III. 226.

likely that an Indian king ever punished any person for these. On the other hand, obstructing the road, prying when the king is taking his meals, sitting before the king on one's haunches, speaking loudly before the king are among the fifty *chalas* of which the king could take cognisance *suo motu* and award suitable punishment (vide H. of Dh. vol. III. p. 266). But there is nothing to show that such actions ever fell within the purview of the rules about *prāyaścittas*. The important questions are: What was the relation of the rules about *prāyaścittas* which were to be prescribed by a *pariṣad* (a meeting of learned *brāhmaṇas*) to punishments by the king as regards actions which were both *pātakas* inviting penances and crimes entailing punishments by the King? Which of these two sets of rules was earlier? Were penance and punishment cumulative or alternative? It is difficult to give definite opinions on these questions. We know that *prāyaścittas* like *Aśvamedha* are spoken of even in the Tai. S. We also know that the *praśnavivāka* (which is quite close to *prādvivāka* in derivation and meaning) occurs in the Vāj. S. XXX. 10 and Tai. Br. III. 5. 6. Therefore it follows that judicial functions were very early separated from the executive functions of the king. The reference to the ordeal of fire in the Tāṇḍya Br. 14. 6. 6 (vide H. of Dh. vol. III p. 361) and the grasping of a red-hot hatchet in the hand by a person accused of theft and his being killed show that ordeals were administered and the punishment for theft was death. *Brhaspati*, quoted in the *Vivādaratnākara*, says 'When a man of good character and a diligent reader of the Veda has committed theft he shall be kept in prison for a long time and shall be caused to perform penance after having been compelled to restore the goods' (S. B. E. vol. 33 p. 362 ¹⁶⁶).

The *pariṣad* made its own rules about *prāyaścittas* and the king awarded punishments. Which set of rules was earlier it is difficult to say. The king did not very probably interfere with the ecclesiastical jurisdiction of the *pariṣad* and the *brāhmaṇas* helped the king in the administration of justice by being judges and by advising him as to the punishments to be imposed (vide

166. वृत्तस्वाध्यायवान् स्तेयी बन्धनात् क्लिश्यते चिरम् । स्वामिने तद्वस्तु प्राप्यः प्रायश्चित्तं तु कारयेत् ॥ बृहस्पति q. by विवादरत्नाकर p. 331. It is possible that this verse means that a learned *brāhmaṇa* who has been well conducted but fell a victim to the temptation of theft should not be jailed for a long time because jail life torments his mind and therefore he should be made to restore stolen property and given penance.

Viṣṇu Dh. S. V. 194). Gautama VIII.1, echoing the words of the Śat. Br. V. 4. 4. 5, observes:¹⁶⁷ 'the king and the brāhmaṇa with profound learning uphold the moral order in the world (or are upholders of the sacred law). The Āp. Dh. S. (II. 5. 10. 12-16) contains very important information: 'The ācārya shall order those who, while participating according to the śāstras (in the privileges and responsibilities of their castes), have gone astray through the weakness of their senses to perform penances according to the dictates (of the smṛtis) commensurate with their (sinful) acts. If they transgress their ācārya's order he shall take them to the king. The king shall send them to his *purohita* proficient in dharmaśāstra and the science of government. He (*purohita*) shall order them to perform (proper penances) if they are brāhmaṇas. He shall reduce them by forcible means except corporal punishment and slavery.' So this passage shows that the king helped in carrying out *prāyaścittas*. Nārada includes 'neglect of penances' among matters solely dependent on the king (*prakīrṇaka*, verse 3) and not on complaints by private individuals. Devala¹⁶⁸ probably conveys the real position when he says: 'The king is the giver of *kṛcchras* (i. e. his consent is required for actually undergoing the prescribed penances), the learned man who has studied Dharmaśāstras prescribes the *prāyaścitta*, the sinner carries out the penance and the king's officer sees to the safe performance of the prescribed penance.' Parāśara VIII. 28 says 'an assembly should point out the proper penance after getting the permission of the king, it should not be done without reference to him, but slight penance may be done without informing him'. The Par. M. II. part 1. p. 232 explains that this applies to *prāyaścittas* for sins like *govadha* or those that are greater than it. Devala¹⁶⁹ also has similar verses.

167. द्वौ लोके धृतव्रतौ राजा ब्राह्मणश्च बहुश्रुतः । गौ. VIII. 1. शतपथ V. 4. 4. 5 has 'निषसाद् धृतव्रत इति धृतव्रतो वै राजा... एष च श्रोत्रियश्चेतौ ह वै द्वौ मनुष्येषु धृतव्रतौ.'

168. कृच्छ्राणां दापको (दायको v. 1.) राजा निर्देष्टा धर्मपाठकः । अपराधी प्रयोक्ता च रक्षिता कृच्छ्रपालकः॥ देवल q. by मद. पा. p. 777; प्राय. सा. p. 8. राज्ञश्च/नुमते स्थित्वा प्रायश्चित्तं विनिर्दिशेत् । स्वयमेव न कर्तव्यं कर्तव्या स्वल्पनिष्कृतिः ॥ पराशर VIII. 28, on which परा. मा. II. 1. p. 232 says: अत्र गोवधस्य प्रकृतस्वात्तमारभ्याधिकेषु राजानुज्ञयैव व्रतं निर्दिशेत् ।

169. याचितास्तेन ते चापि ब्राह्मणाः पापभीरुणा । निष्कृतिं व्यवहारार्थं कृत्वा तस्मै वृषाज्ञया ॥ स्वयं वा ब्राह्मणैः कृच्छ्रमल्पदोषे विधीयते । राजा च ब्राह्मणैश्चैव महत्सु सुपरीक्ष्य च ॥ देवल q. by परा. मा. II. part 1 p. 232-233 and by प्राय. सा. p. 21. (folio 25 a) reads देवल's verse as स्वयं तु ब्राह्मणा ब्रूयुरल्पदोषेषु निष्कृतिम् । राजा... महत्सु परिचक्षते ॥

Parāśara VIII. 29 states that the king also should not ignore the *parīṣad* and should not by himself prescribe penance. Paithinasi quoted by the *Dandaviveka* (p. 76) provides¹⁷⁰ for both *prāyaścitta* and punishment and from the tenor of the verse it appears that both were to be enforced by the king. The position is tolerably clear as to mediæval times. One feels great hesitation in stating definitely the relation of punishment to penances and the king's position as to both in ancient times. *Āp. Dh. S. I. 9. 24. 1-4* provide¹⁷¹ that one who kills a *ksatriya* or a *vaiśya* or a *śūdra* shall respectively give one thousand cows, a hundred cows and ten cows for the purpose of removing the enmity and that in each of these cases one bull was to be given in addition for the purpose of expiation. *Āpastamba* does not expressly state to whom the cows were to be given. The commentator *Haradatta* explains that they were to be given to *brāhmaṇas*. *Manu XI. 127, 129, 130, and Yāj. III. 266-267* have similar provisions but in the chapter on penances. On the other hand, *Baud. Dh. S. I. 10. 23.* expressly states that the cows are to be given to the king. As both the words '*vairaniryātanārtham*' and '*prāyaścittārthaḥ*' are employed by *Āp.* it may be said that the cows were to be made over to the king even according to *Āpastamba*. The cows were to be made over to the king for bestowal on the family of the murdered person to mollify them and if they refused to receive them the king was not to retain them for himself but was to distribute them among *brāhmaṇas*. We know that *Manu (IX. 243-245)* provides that the fine recovered from a man guilty of mortal sins was not to be taken for himself by the king but was to be offered to *Varuṇa* and thrown into water or was to be distributed among learned *brāhmaṇas*. *Manu IX. 236* provides that for those who were guilty of the four grave sins (*brāhmaṇa* murder &c.) and did not undergo penance for the same the king should inflict corporal punishment (branding on the forehead) together with fine in accordance with the *śāstra*. *Manu IX. 237*

170. अकार्यकारिणामेषां प्रायश्चित्तं तु कल्पयेत् । यथाशक्त्यनुरूपं च दण्डं चैषां प्रकल्पयेत् ॥ पैठीनसि q. by दण्डविवेक p. 76.

171. क्षत्रियं हत्वा गवां सहस्रं वैरनिर्यातनार्थं दद्यात् । शतं वैश्ये दश शूद्रे ऋषभश्चात्राधिकः सर्वत्र प्रायश्चित्तार्थः । आप. ध. सू. I. 9. 24.1-4; क्षत्रियगणनादिसूत्रे ऋषभैकाधिकं राज्ञ उत्सृजेद्वैरनिर्यातनार्थम् । शतं वैश्ये दश शूद्रे ऋषभश्चात्राधिकः । आप. ध. सू. I. 10. 23-24.

(= Matsya 227. 164) and Viṣṇu V. 4-7 say that on the forehead a mark of female private parts with red-hot iron should be branded in the case of incest, the mark of a tavern flag in the case of drinking *surā*, the mark of dog's foot in the case of theft (of brāhmaṇa's gold) and the mark of a headless trunk in the case of a brāhmaṇa-murder. Manu IX. 240 further prescribes that men of all castes guilty of the four mahāpātakas committed unintentionally that perform the proper penance should not be branded on the forehead by the king but should be awarded the highest fine. Manu IX. 241 and 242 provide that a brāhmaṇa guilty of these grave sins unintentionally may be punished with the middle amercement (if he himself be possessed of good qualities) but if he was guilty of the grave sins committed intentionally he should be banished from the kingdom being allowed to take with him his wealth and paraphernalia; while persons other than brāhmaṇas when guilty of grave sins unintentionally committed were to be deprived of all their wealth and if guilty intentionally they were to be sentenced to death. These verses show that though *prāyaścitta* be performed persons guilty of grave sins were liable to undergo punishment and if no penance was performed then they were liable to branding and also fines etc. Manu XI. 56 provides that bearing false witness is similar to the drinking of *surā* and Manu XI. 57 and Yāj. III. 230 hold that misappropriation of a deposit is like the theft of gold. Viṣṇu Dh. S. (V. 169) provides that the misappropriator of a deposit was to be made to return the deposit or its price with interest and was to be punished like a thief by the king and V. 179 that a false witness had all his property confiscated. These instances establish that both fines by the king (i. e. *rāja-daṇḍa*) and penances prescribed by the assembly of learned men (i. e. *pariśaddaṇḍa* or *daiva daṇḍa*) had to be undergone by those guilty of some grave sins that were also looked upon as crimes. In some cases the penance and the punishment were the same. For example, Gaut. 23. 10-11, Vas. 20. 13, Manu XI. 104, Yāj. III. 259 and several other *smṛtikāras* prescribe for incest the penance of the excision of the testicles and penis and proceeding toward the south or south-west till the body falls. Nārada as quoted above prescribes for incest the *punishment* (*daṇḍa*) of the excision of the testicles. The Mit. on Yāj. III. 233 quotes Nārada and remarks that the punishment of excision and death prescribed by Yāj. III. 233 applies only to non-brāhmaṇas and that in such cases the punishment of death itself is the

prāyaścitta. There were works like the Madanapārijāta¹⁷² (p. 827) and the Mitākṣarā that held that the prohibition against corporal harm to brāhmaṇas (Manu VIII. 380) applies only to matters other than prāyaścittas and that since the Manusmṛti itself (XI. 100) states that a brāhmaṇa guilty of theft of brāhmaṇa's gold may go to the king with an iron club and have his head smashed by the king, the death of a brāhmaṇa as a penance for theft by being struck with a club presented by himself was not ruled out. In some cases punishment by the king was deemed to have purged a man of sin and no penance seems to have been thought necessary, as Manu VIII. 318 (= Vas. 19.45) says 'men that commit sins and are punished by the king become purified and reach heaven like good men who perform meritorious deeds.' The Mit. on Yāj. III. 259 explains that this holds good only where the punishment is death, as in the case of incest noted above. Āp. Dh. S. II. 10.27. 15-16 provide¹⁷³ that a person guilty of slaying a man, of theft and of forcible seizure of land was to be deprived of his wealth by the king and was to be sentenced to death and that if the offender was a brāhmaṇa he was to have a piece of cloth tied over his eyes for the whole of his life (i. e. he was not to be sentenced to death). It appears that in very ancient times as provided by Āp. Dh. S. I. 9.25.4 the thief approached the king¹⁷⁴ with a club (of iron or *khadira* wood) on his shoulder and announced his guilt, when the king struck him with the club; on his being killed he became free from guilt. This was a penance as well as a legal punishment. Manu has a similar rule in his chapter on punishments (VIII. 314-316) providing that the thief should carry a weapon (called *musala*) or a club of *khadira* wood or a double-edged *śakti* or an iron staff and that if the king strikes him once with the club and he is killed

172. अयं च लिङ्गच्छेदवधात्मको दण्डो ब्राह्मणव्यतिरिक्तस्य । न जातु ब्राह्मणं हन्यात्सर्वपापेष्ववस्थितम्—इति तस्य वधनिषेधात् (मनु. ८.३८०) । वधस्यैव प्रायश्चित्तरूपत्वात् । मिता. on या. III. 233; but on या. III. 257 the मिता. says 'मनुना सुवर्णस्तेयकृद्भिर्-इत्याभिप्रायं गृहीत्वा सुसलं राजा सकृद्जन्यात्तु तं स्वयमिति सर्वनाम्ना प्रकृतब्राह्मणपरमर्शनेनैव हननविधानात् । न जातु ब्राह्मणं हन्यादित्यस्य प्रायश्चित्तव्यतिरिक्तदण्डरूपहननविषयत्वेनाप्युपपत्तेः ।' ; vide also मद्. पा. p. 827 for the same view.

173. पुरुषवधे स्तेये भूम्यादान इति स्वान्यादाय वध्यः । चक्षुर्निरोधस्त्वेतेषु ब्राह्मणस्य । आप. ध. सू. II. 10, 27. 15-16.

174. स्तेनः प्रकीर्णकेशोऽसौ सुसलमाधाय राजानं गत्वा कर्माच्छीत तेनेन हन्यादिति श्रावः । आप. ध. सू. I. 9. 25. 4. ; ब्राह्मणसुवर्णहरणे प्रकीर्ण केशान् राजानमभिधावेत्स्वर्णमात्रं भाष्ये शास्त्रं मां भवानिति तस्मै राजौदुम्बरं शस्त्रं दद्यात्तेनात्मानं प्रमापयेन्मरणात्पूतो भवतीति निज्ञास्यति । वासिष्ठ 20 41. औदुम्बर means 'made of udumbara wood' or may also mean 'red in colour' (i. e. made of copper).

or if he is not killed but is allowed to go half dead and lives, the thief is freed from the guilt. The Mit. on Yāj. III. 257 quotes a prose passage from Śaṅkha and a verse from Samvarta (122) to the same effect. Manu in the chapter on penances (XI. 100-101 = Agnipurāṇa 169. 20-21) provides the same procedure for theft as a penance. Vas. 20. 41, Yāj. III. 259, Viṣṇu 52. 1-2 and Parāśara XII. 69-70 provide a somewhat similar penance for the thief of brāhmaṇa's gold. Vasiṣṭha introduces an important change viz., that the king hands over to the thief a weapon made of udumbara wood (or probably of copper) with which the thief is to kill himself. It appears that gradually the king gave up this unpleasant method of awarding punishment personally. Nārada¹⁷⁵ (pariśiṣṭa, verses 46-47) provides that after the thief comes running to the king and announces his guilt, the king was to touch him (with the club, as a symbolic gesture) and then let him off and the thief became freed from sin by his confession of guilt. It has to be remembered, however, that the thief had to restore, even when he underwent penance, stolen property, as stated by Manu VIII. 40, Yāj. II. 36 and 270, Bṛhaspati and by digests¹⁷⁶ like the Pr. Prakaraṇa. If it were impossible to make the thief restore the stolen property the king had to make it good from his own treasury¹⁷⁷ (Gaut. X. 47, Śāntiparva 75. 10, Kautilya III. 16) or he had to make his officers¹⁷⁸ entrusted with the duty of preventing thefts pay the price of the stolen property (Āp. Dh. S. II. 10. 26. 8). Vide for further details H. of Dh. vol. III. pp. 166-168. It appears that the actual carrying out of the sentence of death was later on assigned to Cāṇḍālas as stated by Manu X. 56 and Viṣṇu Dh. S. 16. 11 (vadhyā-ghātītvaṃ cāṇḍālānām).

175. राजा स्तेनेन गन्तव्यो मुक्तकेशेन धावता । आचक्षणेन तस्तेयमेवंकर्मास्मि शाधि माम् ॥ अनेना भवति तेन स्वकर्मप्रतिपादनात् । राजा ततः स्पृशेदेनमुत्सृजेत् ह्यकिल्बिषम् ॥ नारद, परिशिष्ट 46-47.

176 दस्त्रैवापहतं द्रव्यं धनिकस्याप्युपायतः । प्रायश्चित्तं ततः कुर्यात्कल्मषस्यापनुत्तये ॥ विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 52. 14; सर्वमेव सुवर्णहरणादिस्तेयप्रायश्चित्तं विद्यमानस्यापहतद्रव्यस्य त्यागपुरःसरमेव कर्तव्यम् । इतरथा कृतप्रायश्चित्तस्यापि पुनस्तद्द्रव्यस्वीकारे तथैव स्तेयप्रसङ्गात् । विनष्टे तु द्रव्ये पुनःस्वीकाराभावात्प्रायश्चित्तमेवेति । प्राय.प्रक. on p 77.

177. चौरहतमपजित्य यथास्थानं गमयेत् । कोशाद्वा दद्यात् । गौ. X. 46-47; प्रत्याहर्तुमशक्यं स्याद्धनं चौरहतं यदि । तत् स्वकोशात्प्रदेयं स्यादशक्तेनोपजीवितुं शक्नोति 75.10 q. by the मित्ता. on या. II. 36 ; चौरहतमविद्यमानं स्वद्रव्येभ्यः प्रयच्छेत् । कौटिल्य III. 16 p. 190.

178. तत्र यन्मुष्यते तैस्तत्प्रतिदाप्यम् । आप. ध. सू. II. 10. 26. 8.



Another point to be noted is that as regards the awarding of punishments and prescribing of penances, the matters to be considered were the same viz. whether the lapse was intentional¹⁷⁹ (*kāmataḥ*) or unintentional (*akāmataḥ*) or whether it was the first offence or whether it was repeated and what the circumstances as to the time, the place, the caste, the age, the capacity, learning, wealth were. Compare Kautilya IV. 10, Gaut. XII. 48, Manu VII. 16 and VIII. 126, Yāj. I. 368, Viṣṇu V. 194, Vas. 19. 9 about punishments with Baud.¹⁸⁰ Dh. S. I. 1. 16, Yāj. III. 293 (= Atri verse 248 and Agnipurāṇa 173. 6), Āṅgīras 143, Viśvāmitra, Vṛddha-Hārīta IX. 297, and Vyāghra as regards penances. It is on account of this close connection between punishments and penances that the Prāyaścittatattva, after quoting Devala to the effect that if a man makes no move for taking prāyaścitta for one year, he has to undergo double penance thereafter and to pay a double fine to the king, remarks that the maxim is that prāyaścittas are to be moulded on the lines of punishments¹⁸¹. The Pr. M. (pp. 124-125) quotes Kāśyapa who provides a penance for one that causes mischief to a well, public park, bridge, rampart wall or a temple or idol, then quotes Viṣṇu V. 169 which prescribes the highest fine for a breaker of idols, Manu IX. 285 which provides a fine of 500

179. ज्ञात्वापराधं देशं च कालं बलमथापि वा । वयः कर्म च विसं च दण्डं दण्डेषु पातयेत् ॥ या. I. 368 ; अनुबन्धं परिज्ञाय देशकालौ च तत्त्वतः । सारापराधौ चालोक्य दण्डं दण्डेषु पातयेत् ॥ मनु. VIII. 126, on which मेधातिथि remarks that this is the fundamental or basic verse on the question of punishment 'उक्तानुक्तदण्डेष्वपराधेषु मानुकाश्लोकोयम् । एतदर्थानुसारेण सर्वदण्डकृतिः कर्तव्या'.

180. शरीरबलमायुश्च वयः कालं च कर्म च । समीक्ष्य धर्मविद् बुद्ध्या प्रायश्चित्तानि निर्दिशेत् ॥ बौ. ध. I. 1.16 ; देशं कालं वयः शक्तिं पापं चावेक्ष्य यत्नतः । प्रायश्चित्तं प्रकल्प्य स्याद्यत्र चोक्ता न निष्कृतिः ॥ या. III. 293 ; सर्वत्र चैव प्रायश्चित्तप्रकरणे-जातिशक्तिगुणापेक्षं सकृद्बुद्धिकृतं तथा । अनुबन्धं परिज्ञाय प्रायश्चित्तं प्रकल्पयेत् ॥ इत्येतदेव संक्षेपसूत्रम् । विश्वरूप on या. III. 262. The verse is quoted as विश्वामित्र's in प्राय. प्रकरण. p. 8, प्राय. वि. p. 29, परा. मा. II. part 1 p. 235 and as देवल's by the मिता. on या. III. 243. Vide also व्यात्र. q. by परा. मा. II. part 1, p. 24.

181. यथा स्मृतिसागरे देवलः । कालातिरेके द्विगुणं प्रायश्चित्तं समाचरेत् । द्विगुणं राजदण्डं च दत्त्वा छुद्भिर्मवाप्नुयात् ॥ कालातिरेके संवत्सरातिरेके । संवत्सराभिशातस्य दुष्टस्य द्विगुणो दमः-इति मनुवचने (8.373) संवत्सरात्परतो द्विगुणदण्डदर्शनेन दण्डवत्प्रायश्चित्तानि भवन्तीति न्यायेन एकत्र निर्णीतः शास्त्रार्थो बाधकमन्तरेणान्यत्रापि तथेति न्यायाच्च । प्राय. तत्त्व p. 474 ; vide p. 530 of the same work for the same न्याय. 'अथ मण्ड-पोद्यानादि-देवतागारादि-भेदने काश्यपः । वापीकूपारामसेतुलतातडागवप्रदेवतायतनभेदने प्रायश्चित्तम् । ...ब्राह्मणान्भोजयेत् । इति । एतच्चाल्पोपघाते । महतोपघातेऽभ्यासे राजापर्यादि कल्पनीयम् । देवता चात्र मृन्मयी पूजोज्झिता च ग्राह्या । प्रायश्चित्तस्याल्पत्वात् न्यूनं दण्ड-गौरवदर्शनेन प्रायश्चित्तगौरवं कल्प्यं दण्डवत्प्रायश्चित्तानि भवन्तीति वचनात् । तथात्र दण्डगौरवमाह कात्यायनः । ...विष्णुरपि...मनुः...इति ।

paṇas for a breaker of idols and re-instatement of the idol by him and then remarks 'daṇḍavat prāyaścittāni bhavanti'. Nārada divided *sāhasa* into three kinds viz. *prathama*, *madhyama* and *uttama*, the last of which consisted in killing a person with poison or weapon, adultery and rape and injury to life. He then provides that when offenders guilty of the first two kinds were punished by the king, they became fit for association with the people, but that one guilty of the *uttama-sāhasa*, though punished by the king, was not fit even to be talked to (Nārada, *sāhasa*, verse 11).

The king had jurisdiction¹⁸² to punish sinners if they did not agree to undergo the *prāyaścitta* prescribed by the *pariṣad* but it is extremely doubtful whether he exercised that jurisdiction in all cases. Society or the caste also had a weapon in its hand viz. that of excommunication by *ghaṭasphoṭa* if one guilty of a grave sin refused to perform the *prāyaścitta* prescribed (i. e. it was *jātidanḍa*). Vide Gaut. 20.2-9, Manu XI. 182-185 and Yāj. III. 294 and H. of Dh. vol. II. p. 388 and vol. III. p. 1009-1010 for the rite of *ghaṭasphoṭa* and re-admission to caste after *ghaṭasphoṭa*. Many of the *prāyaścittas* prescribed for the grave sins were terrible (such as throwing oneself into fire, drinking boiling *surā* or water or cow's urine or milk or ghee for drinking *surā*, Manu XI. 73, 90-91, 103 &c.) and were to be self-inflicted and were not to be prescribed by the *pariṣad* as the words of Manu in XI. 73 'icchayātmanah' and 'prāsyed-ātmānam-agnau vā' clearly convey and as some of the digests expressly provide¹⁸³. In order to enable a man to become fit for intercourse with his caste men he had to give a dinner to them or distribute sweetmeats even after undergoing *prāyaścitta*. So it follows that a man guilty of a crime was liable to three burdens, punishment by the king, penance prescribed by learned *brāhmaṇas* and giving dinner or sweetmeats to castemen. Vide H. of Dh. vol. II. p. 971.

182. दण्डं कुर्यान्नुपो नृणां प्रायश्चित्तमकुर्वताम् । कामतोऽकामतो वापि प्रायश्चित्तं कृतं चरेत् ॥ अग्निपुराण 168 1. प्रायश्चित्तैः शमं याति पापं कृतमसंशयम् । राजदण्डाच्छमं याति प्रायश्चित्तमकुर्वताम् । प्रायश्चित्तविहीना ये राजभिश्चाप्यदण्डिताः । नरकं प्रतिपद्यन्ते तिर्यग्योनिं तथैव च ॥ विष्णुधर्मोत्तरपुराण II. 73.3-4 q. by परा. मा. II. part 2 p. 210, प्रा. प्रकाश folio 102 a.

183. प्राणान्तिकप्रायश्चित्तं तु पर्षदा न देयम् । तत्स्वयमेव ज्ञात्वा कुर्यात् । प्रायश्चित्तं प. 41 ; एतच्च मरणान्तिकं प्रायश्चित्तं पर्षदा नादेष्टव्यमपि तु व्युत्पन्नश्चेत्स्वयमेव ज्ञात्वा कुर्यात् । अव्युत्पन्नश्चेत् प्रायश्चित्तस्वरूपं शिष्टेभ्यो ज्ञात्वा तदनुज्ञामन्तरेण स्वयमेव कुर्यात् । मय. प्रा. p. 817.

The literature on *prāyaścittas* is vast in extent, since in ancient times they loomed very large in the popular mind. Out of the 28 chapters of the Gautamadharmasūtra, ten (i. e. more than one-third of the whole) are devoted to penances. Out of the 30 chapters of the printed Vasīṣṭha-dharmasūtra, *prāyaścittas* cover nine (20-28). Manus devotes verses 44 to 265 (in all 222) of chapter eleven to penances and the Yājñavalkyasmṛti containing 1009 verses deals with *prāyaścittas* in 122 verses (III. 205-327). Several printed smṛtis such as those of Āṅgīras (168 verses), Atri (chapters 1-8), Devala (90 verses), Brhad-Yama (182 verses), Śātātāpasmṛti (in 274 verses) from the Ānandāśrama collection of smṛtis alone deal only with *prāyaścittas*. Many other smṛtis and several purāṇas, such as the Agni (chap. 168-174), Garuḍa 52, Kūrma (Uttarārdha 30-34), Varāha 131-136, Brahmāṇḍa (Upasamhārapāda chap. 9), Viṣṇudharmottara (II. 73, III. 234-237) contain hundreds of verses on *prāyaścittas*. Besides commentaries like the Mitākṣarā, Aparārka, Par. M. and others and digests like Madanapārijāta (pp. 691-994), there are special digests dealing with *prāyaścittas* alone such as Hemādri on *Prāyaścitta* (which is of doubtful authenticity), the *Prāyaścittaprakaraṇa* of Bhavadeva, *Prāyaścittaviveka*, *Prāyaścittatattva*, *Smṛtimuktāphala* (*prāyaścitta* section), *Prāyaścittasāra* (part of Nṛsiṃhaprasāda), *Prāyaścittamayūkha*, *Prāyaścittaprakāśa* (ms. in the Anūp Sanskrit library, Bikaner, No. 2610), *Prāyaścittenduṣekhara* of Nāgojibhaṭṭa, which have been utilised in this work. The most elaborate treatment is found in *Prāyaścittaviveka*, Par. M. II parts 1 and 2, and *Prāyaścittaprakāśa*.

The commentators discuss the question about the persons who have *adhikāra* (capacity) for having penances prescribed for them. Since Manus XI. 44 (*prāyaścittīyate naraḥ*) and Yāj. III. 219 (*naraḥ patanam-rechatī*) both employ the word 'man' without ¹⁸⁴ any qualification, the commentators and digests say that penances are meant for men of all varṇas, for all persons born of unions in the reverse order (*pratilomajas*) and for even cāṇḍālas. Yāj. III. 262 states that a śūdra sinner

184. नरग्रहणं सार्ववर्णिकप्रदर्शनार्थम् । विश्वरूपेण या. III. 210; नरग्रहणं प्रतिलोमजातानामपि प्रायश्चित्ताधिकारप्राप्त्यर्थम् । तेषामप्यहिंसादिताधारणधर्मव्यतिरेकसम्भवात् । मिता. on या. III. 219; नर इत्यनेन ब्राह्मणादिचाण्डालान्तानां सर्वेषां प्रायश्चित्तं दर्शयति । अस्ति च चाण्डालादीनामपि विधिनिषेधश्च । यथा देवलः । स्वजातिशोचनं सर्वजनप्रणामरितिक्षा व्यवहारशुद्धिरपरापमानं स्वभृत्यपोषणं प्रधानकर्मपरिवर्जनमिति चाण्डालेभ्यः । मनुः । गवार्थे...चाण्डालानां शुद्धिकारणम् ॥ (10.62) अतो वेदार्थव्यवहारिणामेव प्रायश्चित्तं प्रोक्तम् । प्राय. वि. p. 12.



though he has no *adhikāra* (for recitation of Vedic *mantras* and *homa*), yet becomes purified by undergoing the observances (except *japa* and *homa*) for the periods prescribed. Āngiras¹⁸⁵ provides that penance may be administered to a *śūdra* devoid of *japa* and *homa*. Even as to *japa* and *homa* there were works like the *Madanapārijāta* p. 749 and *Vy. M* (p. 112) that relying on a verse of *Parāśara* VI. 63-64 held that a *homa* could be performed for women and *śūdras* in the ordinary fire through a *brāhmaṇa*¹⁸⁶. The *Pr. V.* relies on *Manu* X. 62 and a prose passage of *Devala* for the proposition that even *Cāṇḍālas* have to perform penances, if they act contrary to the rules and prohibitions laid down for them. Since the non-performance of what is prescribed and doing what is forbidden lead to sin, the person guilty of these or the person who has a desire to destroy his sins is a person entitled to perform *prāyaścitta*, as also one who repents of his guilt.

Before going into the subject of the several *prāyaścittas* prescribed for each grave or minor sin, some questions of a general character have to be disposed of.

Some *smṛtis* like *Bṛhad-yama* III. 1-2 and *Śaṅkha* state that a boy over five years of age and less than eleven years old, if guilty of some *pātakas* such as drinking *surā*, has not to undergo penance personally, but his brother, father or other

185. तस्माच्छुद्धं समासाद्य सदा धर्मपथे स्थितम्। प्रायश्चित्तं प्रदातव्यं जपहोमविवर्जितम्॥ अङ्गिरसु q. by the मिता. on या. III. 262, प्राय. म. p. 12, प्रा. सार p. 173.

186. स्त्रीशूद्रयोरपि ब्राह्मणद्वारा लौकिकाग्नौ होमो भवत्येव। अत एव धर्मविवृतौ 'उपवासो व्रतं होमस्तीर्थस्नानं जपादिकम्। विप्रैः सम्पादितं यस्य सम्पूर्णं तस्य तत्फलम्॥ इति।' मद्. पा. p. 749. This is *Parāśara* VI. 63-64 (the printed edition in B. S. Series reads व्रतं चैव स्नानं तीर्थं जपस्तपः). It is rather inexplicable how while *Nīlakaṇṭha* in his *Vyavahāramayūkha* holds, relying on *Parāśara*, that the *dattahoma* may be performed by a *śūdra* or a woman through a *brāhmaṇa*, the *Prāyaścittamayūkha* of the same author propounds a different view in the words 'एतेन यन्महार्णवमदनरत्नयोः स्त्रीशूद्रादेर्विप्रद्वारा समन्त्रकौ जपहोमौ भवत इति तत्परास्तम्' (p. 13). Did the author change his views or is the text of one of the two *Mayūkhas* tampered with by his successors? The *प्रा. प्रकाश* (folio 30 b) explains *Parāśara* VI. 63-64 in a different way. It says that the verse does not lay down generally that a woman or any one else can in every case have a *homa* performed for her through a *brāhmaṇa*, but that where in a rite *japa* and *homa* are obligatory and the person concerned is unable to perform *japa* and *homa* in person there alone he can appoint a *brāhmaṇa* as *pratinidhi*. अस्य प्राप्तेषु जपहोमादिषु अशकौ विप्ररूपप्रतिमाधीनं यममात्रार्थत्वात्। प्रायश्चित्ताङ्गजपहोमयोस्तु निषेधादेवाप्रवृत्तेस्तत्र तस्याप्रवृत्तिः। एतेन यन्महार्णवमदनरत्नयोः स्त्रीशूद्रादेर्विप्रद्वारा समन्त्रकौ जपहोमौ भवत इति तत्परास्तम्। प्रा. प्रकाश. folio 30 b.

relative or friend has to undergo it for him and that if a child is less than five then whatever act it may do it is not deemed a crime, nor is it a sin and it is not liable to any legal penalty nor to any¹⁸⁷ prāyaścitta. The Mit. (on Yāj. III. 243) comments that these verses are not meant to prescribe a total absence of prāyaścitta in the case of children of five or less but are meant to convey that they are not liable for the full prāyaścitta prescribed for a sin. Its argument is that the texts lay down generally without any reference to the stage of life that a brāhmaṇa should not be killed or that a person belonging to the three higher castes should not drink *surā*.¹⁸⁸ Hence any one of whatever age who is guilty of having done such prohibited acts is liable and the words of Gaut. II. 1 and of Kumāra are to be interpreted as not excusing altogether the drinking of *surā* by a child but as referring to minor lapses. Brhaspati expressly states that the dictum about a child being allowed to eat what it likes is confined to such matters as will not fall under grave sins.

It has already been stated above (n. 180) that the prāyaścitta to be undergone depended upon many circumstances such as the time, the place, the age &c. And first as to age, several smṛtis¹⁸⁹ provide that a man 80 years old or a boy less than

187 ऊनैकादशवर्षस्य पञ्चवर्षात्परस्य च । प्रायश्चित्तं चरेद् भ्राता पिता वान्यः सुहृज्जनः ॥ अतो बालतरस्यास्य नापराधो न पातकम् । राजदण्डो न तस्यास्ति प्रायश्चित्तं न विद्यते ॥ शङ्ख, quoted by the मित्ता. on या. III. 243, बृहद्यम III. 1-2 (reads वान्योपि बान्धवः). These are quoted by हरदत्त on गौ. II. 6 (without name) and the first occurs in आपस्तम्बस्मृति III. 7 as चरेद्गुरुः सुहृद्वापि प्रायश्चित्तं विशोधनम्. The first verse is देवल 31. Both are ascribed to अङ्गिरस् by प्राय. वि. p. 29.

188: प्रागुपनयनात् कामचारः कामवादः कामभक्षः । गौ. II. 1; मध्यमूत्रपुरीषाणां भक्षणे नास्ति कश्चन । दोषस्त्वा पञ्चमाद्वर्षादूर्ध्वं पित्रोः सुहृद्विरोः ॥ कुमार q. by मित्ता. on या. III. 253, by प्राय. प्रक. p. 50; स्यात्कामचारभक्षोक्तिर्महतः पातकादृते । बृहस्पति q. by प्रा. तत्त्व p. 551.

189. अशीतिर्यस्य वर्षाणि बालो वायूनषोडशः । प्रायश्चित्तार्धमर्हन्ति स्त्रियो रोगिण एव च ॥ विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 54. 33, लघुहारीत 33, देवल 30, आपस्तम्बस्मृति III. 3, बृहद्यम III. 3 (reads अशीत्यधिकवर्षाणि). This verse is ascribed to अङ्गिरस् by the मित्ता. on या. III. 243 and to भार्गव by हरदत्त on आप. ध. सू. I. 9. 26, 5. The मद. पा. p. 796 ascribes it to विष्णु, पराशर, बृहस्पति and अङ्गिरस्. तथा बालवृद्धादीनां साक्षात्कर्तृत्वेऽप्यर्धमेव । अशीति...रोगिण एव चेत्यङ्गिरःस्मरणात् । तथा । अर्वाक्तु द्वादशाद्वर्षादशीतेरूर्ध्वमेव वा । अधमेव भवेत्पुंसां तुरीयं तत्र योषिताम् ॥ इति । तथानुपनीतस्यापि बालकस्य पादमात्रमेव प्रायश्चित्तम् । स्त्रीणामर्धं प्रदातव्यं वृद्धानां रोगिणां तथा । पादो बालेषु दातव्यः सर्वपापेष्वयं विधिरिति विष्णुस्मरणात् । मित्ता. on या. III. 243. The verses अर्वाक्तु and स्त्रीणामर्धं are ascribed to विष्णु, पराशर, बृहस्पति and अङ्गिरस् by मद. पा. p. 796 and the latter is ascribed to लघुविष्णु by प्राय. वि. p. 28 and to बृहद्विष्णु by प्राय. प्रकरण p. 17.

16 years of age, women and diseased persons should be liable only to half the *prāyaścitta* (prescribed for able-bodied men). The *Mit. on Yāj. III. 243* quotes a verse of Sumantu that for a male below twelve and above eighty years of age the penance is half (of that for ordinary men) and one fourth for women within the same limits and a verse of Viṣṇu that for women, old men and diseased persons half the penance should be prescribed and for boys (before *upanayana*) only one-fourth. Some say that for boys less than five the penance is one-fourth. Cyavana (prose) prescribes half *prāyaścitta* for boys, old men and women and declares that a person is a *bāla* up to 16 years and a man is to be regarded as similar to a *bāla* after 70. Kātyāyana provided generally that the fines to be levied from females were to be half of those leviable from male offenders as regards all offences and when the punishment for a male would be death, a woman criminal was to be punished with the cutting of a limb (nose, ears &c.)¹⁹⁰

The difference between a sin committed unintentionally (*akāmataḥ*) and the same sin committed with full knowledge (*kāmataḥ*) is this that for the latter the *prāyaścitta* is double of what is prescribed for the former as provided by Āṅgiras,¹⁹¹ Vyāsa and the *Agnipurāṇa*. As *Yāj. III. 226* employs the word 'ajñāna' in the first half and the word 'kāmataḥ' as its opposite in the second half instead of the word 'jñānataḥ' it follows that *Yāj.* makes no difference between the consequences of *jñāna* (knowledge) and *kāmanā* (desire).

The caste of the offender as well as of the victim made a difference in the *prāyaścitta* as well as in the legal punishment. Vide H. of Dh. vol. III. pp. 395-399 as to punishments for crimes dependent on caste. Viṣṇu¹⁹² provides that the *prāyaścitta* for

190. बालवृद्धस्त्रीणामर्धं प्रायश्चित्तम् । आ षोडशाब्दवालः । सप्तत्यूर्ध्वगता वृद्धाः । च्यवन
q. by परा. मा. II. part 1 p. 122 and प्राय. वि. p. 28. सर्वेषु चापराधेषु पुंसो योर्धदमः
स्मृतः ॥ तदर्थं योषितो दद्युर्वधे पुंसोऽङ्गकर्तनम् ॥ कात्या. 487.

191. स्यात्त्वकामकृते यत्तु द्विगुणं बुद्धिपूर्वके । अङ्गिरस् q. by प्राय. वि. pp. 22 and
24 ; विहितं यदकामानां कामान्तु द्विगुणं स्मृतम् । अग्निपुराण 173. 9, q. by the मिता. on
या. III. 226 (without name) ; and as that of अङ्गिरस् by प्राय. प्रकरण p. 12 and
as of मध्यमाङ्गिरस् by प्रा. प्रकाश (folio 16b). गत्वैतदेव कुर्वीत गुरुतत्पमकामतः
कामतो द्विगुणं प्रोक्तं पूर्वेषु च यदुच्यते ॥ व्यास q. by प्राय. वि. p. 24.

192. विप्रे तु सकलं देयं पादोनं क्षत्रिये मतम् । वैश्येर्धं पादशेषस्तु शूद्रजातिषु शस्यते
विष्णु q. by प्राय. वि. p. 102 where it is stated that जिकन noted that this verse
was not found in the विष्णुसंहिता. It is ascribed to बृहद्विष्णु by प्राय. प्रकरण
p. 16 and to बृहद्विष्णु by मिता. on या. III. 267.

a kṣatriya, vaiśya and śūdra sinner should be respectively $\frac{3}{4}$, $\frac{1}{2}$ and $\frac{1}{4}$ of what is prescribed for a brāhmaṇa sinner. The Agni-purāṇa says¹⁹³ the same thing. The Par. M. II. 1. p. 231 quotes the Caturviṃśatimata¹⁹⁴ to the same effect. The Mit. on Yāj. III. 250 explains that the verse of Caturviṃśatimata applies to all cases except where any one of the four sāhasas is committed by a man of a lower caste as against one of a higher caste. Brhad-Yama (IV. 13-14) in prescribing penance for the killing of a cow provides the same scale of 4, 3, 2, 1 for the four varṇas. Āngiras (verse 3) prescribes the penances of Kṛcchra and Cāndrāyana for a brāhmaṇa partaking of the food of an *antyaja*, half of these for a kṣatriya or vaiśya guilty of the same. Yāj. II. 206-207 provide that the punishments for defamation depend upon the higher or lower varṇa or caste of the offender as well as of the person defamed and that if a kṣatriya or vaiśya defames a brāhmaṇa the fines are respectively twice or thrice as high as the fine for a brāhmaṇa defaming a brāhmaṇa and conversely if a brāhmaṇa defames a kṣatriya or a vaiśya the fine is reduced by half in each successive caste. The Mit. quoting Āngiras says that the rules about punishments apply to prāyaścittas for slaying a person i. e. if a brāhmaṇa slays anybody and a certain penance is prescribed for him, then a kṣatriya killing the person would have to perform double the penance prescribed for the brāhmaṇa and a vaiśya offender three times as much.¹⁹⁵ It may be pointed out here that though the smṛtis provided for different punishments according to the castes of the offender and of the person wronged and though some commentaries and digests went into all those details for the sake of presenting a

193. सर्वत्र शूद्रे पादः स्याद् द्वित्रयं वैश्यभूपयोः । अग्निपुराण 168.13.

194. प्रायश्चित्तं यदाग्नातं ब्राह्मणस्य महर्षिभिः । पादोनं क्षत्रियः कुर्यादर्थं वैश्यः समाचरेत् । शूद्रः समाचरेत्पादमशेषेष्वपि पाप्मसु ॥ चतुर्विंशतिमत q. by the मिता. on या. III. 250. देवल 28 is a verse of similar import. यत्तु चतुर्विंशतिमतवचनं प्रायश्चित्तं...पाप्मसु-इति प्रतिलोमाशुष्टितचतुर्विधसाहसव्यतिरिक्ताविषयम् । तथा मूर्धावासिक्ता-दीनामप्यशुलोमोत्पन्नानां दण्डवत्प्रायश्चित्तमूहनीयम् ॥ मिता. The four साहसs are 'मनुष्यमारणं स्तेयं परदाराभिर्भर्जनम् । पारुष्यमुभयं चेति साहसं स्याच्चतुर्विधम् ॥'

195. यथाहाङ्गिराः । पर्षद्या ब्राह्मणानां तु सा राज्ञां द्विगुणा मता । वैश्यानां त्रिगुणा प्रोक्ता पर्षद्वच्च व्रतं स्मृतम् ॥ इति ।...अनयैव दिशा क्षत्रियवैश्यादावपि हीनेनोत्कृष्टवर्णोद्गौरवा-त्प्रायश्चित्तस्यापि द्वैगुण्यादि कल्पनीयम् । दोषगौरवं च दण्डगौरवादवगम्यते । मिता. on या. III. 250. Vide मिता. on या III 267 also. This verse is q. by परा. म. II. part 2 p. 67: while the प्राय. वि. p. 102 ascribes it to देवल; 'परिषद्या...स्मृता-इति देवल-वचनं ब्रह्मवध एव द्वैगुण्यादिकं बोधयति.' The प्राय...प्रक. p. 16 reads 'the verse of अङ्गिरस् as 'वैश्यानां...प्रोक्ता शूद्राणां तु चतुर्गुणा ॥ परिषद्वच्च व्रतं प्रोक्तं शूद्रये पयस्कमजायम् ।'

complete statement or digest of the *smṛti* material, such discriminatory punishments had mostly ceased to be enforced by the rulers from about the 12th century A. D. at least, as stated by the *Smṛticandrikā*, the *Madanaratna* (*vyavahāra*) and the *Sarasvativilāsa*. Vide H. of Dh. vol. III p. 512 note 924 for the relevant quotations from the three works. Since, as stated above (n. 181), *prāyaścittas* were to be moulded on the lines of legal penalties, it appears that the discriminatory treatment about *prāyaścittas* depending upon the *varṇa* of the sinner must also have gradually fallen into disuetude with the disappearance of the more severe *prāyaścittas* and the substitution of cows and monetary equivalents in later digests. And some digests expressly state this to have been the case in relation to *prāyaścittas*. For example, the *Pr. Prakaraṇa*, after quoting Gaut. 22. 14-16 about the *prāyaścitta* for killing a *kṣatriya* or *vaiśya* or *sūdra* under certain circumstances, remarks that in its day those *prāyaścittas* were no longer part of the practices of the people.¹⁹⁶

Whether an act made a man liable to undergo *prāyaścitta* depended in some cases on the country also. For example, marrying a maternal uncle's daughter was and is allowed in certain countries and among certain castes in the Deccan and Southern India on the ground of custom, but such a practice was severely condemned by Manu XI. 171-172 and Baud. Dh. S. I. 1. 17-24 and other *smṛtis*. *Bṛhaspati* refers to this custom as prevalent among southerners and states that in these countries persons following it are not liable to undergo *prāyaścitta* or penalty (at the hand of the king). Vide H. of Dh. vol. II. p. 462 for *Bṛhaspati*'s verses.

Severity and extent of *prāyaścitta* depended also on the question whether a sinner had repeated the lapse or was a first offender. The *Āp. Dh. S.* (II. 10. 27. 11-13) prescribes that a *brāhmaṇa* who has once committed adultery with a married woman of equal class shall perform one-fourth of the penance prescribed for a *sūdra* having intercourse with a woman of the three upper castes, that for every repetition (of the crime) one

196. यच्च गौतमेनोक्तं राजन्यवधे...गा दद्यात् (२२. १४-१६)-एवमादीनि नानाविधविषयानि नानाविधप्रयाश्चित्तोक्तप्रतिपादकानि तानि ब्राह्मणजातवृत्तस्थ-यागस्थ-षड्विधेन्द्रिय-नादिगुणयुक्त-कामाकामादेकतक्षत्रियादिवधविषयाणि यथायोग्यं व्याख्येयानि तथाविधक्षत्रियाद्यभावेन व्यवहारानङ्गत्वात् न प्रत्येकं विषयव्यवस्थया व्याख्यातव्यं चेदं ब्राह्मणस्य क्षत्रियादिवधप्रयाश्चित्तमुक्तम् । प्राय. प्रक. p. 22.

fourth of the penance must be added and if (he commits adultery) for the fourth time, the whole penance (of 12 years must be performed ¹⁹⁷). The Mit. on Yāj. III. 293 remarks that for a sin that is committed knowingly the *prāyaścitta* is double of what is prescribed for the same sin if committed unintentionally and that if a sin is committed intentionally and is repeated then for the repeated lapse *prāyaścitta* is four times as much as that for the same deed done unintentionally. Similarly, the *āśrama* to which the sinner belonged made a difference in the *prāyaścitta* as stated by Āṅgiras 'when persons in other *āśramas* are guilty of sins for which penance is prescribed if committed by householders, then the *prāyaścitta* is increased in the same proportion that is laid down for *śauca* (bodily purity ¹⁹⁸). Manu V. 137, Vas. VI. 19, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 60. 26, Śaṅkha 16. 23-24 provide that Vedic students, forest hermits and *sannyāsins* have respectively to perform twice, thrice and four times as much *śauca* as is prescribed for householders (e. g. by Manu V. 136 = Viṣṇu 60. 25).

One convenient and merciful rule laid down by the *smṛtis* was that if a man died in the midst of the period for which penance had to be performed (sometimes it extended to twelve years or more) he became free from the sin here and in the next world as stated by Hārīta, Vyāsa and Yama¹⁹⁹.

Though the *smṛtis* have entered into very great details about the *prāyaścittas* for different individual lapses, still they cannot be supposed to have dealt with every lapse. Therefore,

197. सवर्णायामन्यपूर्वायां सकृत्संनिपाते पादः पततीत्युपदिशन्ति। एवमभ्यासे पादः पादः। चतुर्थे सर्वम्। आप. ध. सू. II. 10.27.11-13.

198. तथाश्रमिणामपि अङ्गिरसा विशेषो दर्शितः। गृहस्थोक्तानि पापानि कुर्वन्त्याश्रमिणो यदि। शौचवच्छोधनं कुर्युर्वाग्ब्रह्मनिदर्शनादिति। शौचवदिति - एतच्छौचं गृहस्थानां द्विगुणं ब्रह्मचारिणाम्। त्रिगुणं तु वनस्थानां यतीनां तु चतुर्गुणम्॥ इति (मनु ५.१३७) वचनाद्यथा ब्रह्मचार्यादीनां शौचं द्वैगुण्यादिक्रमेण वर्धते तथा शोधनं प्रायश्चित्तमपि भवतीत्यर्थः। ब्रह्मचारिणस्तु प्रायश्चित्तद्वैगुण्यं षोडशवर्षादूर्ध्वमेव॥ मिता. on या. III. 250. On ब्रह्मनिदर्शनात् the प्राय. म. p. 3 says 'ब्रह्मनिदर्शनं तत्त्वज्ञानम्। ज्ञानोत्पत्त्यनन्तरं तत्पक्षपापं ज्ञानेनैव नाशयते। ज्ञानाग्निः सर्वकर्माणि भस्मसात्कुरुतेऽर्जुनेति भगवद्गीतोक्तेः' (गीता ४ ३७).

199. न च द्वादशवार्षिके चतुर्गुणे कियमाणे मध्ये विपत्तिशङ्कया समाप्यनुपपत्तेः प्रवृत्तिरेव नोत्पद्यत इति शङ्कनीयम्। यतः प्रक्रान्तप्रायश्चित्तस्य मध्ये विपत्तावपि पापक्षयो भवत्येव। तथा हारीतः। प्रायश्चित्ते व्यवसिते कर्ता यदि विपद्यते। पूतस्तदहरेः प्रसविह लोके परत्र च॥ इति। व्यासोऽप्याह। धर्मार्थं यतमानस्तु न चेच्छङ्कनोति मानवः। तत्पुण्यमत्र वै नास्ति संशयः॥ इति॥ मिता. on या. III. 250. बृहद्यम II. 7.3 almost the same as हारीत. प्राय. वि. p. 86 ascribes the verse प्रायश्चित्ते व्यवसिते अपरार्के p. 1058 ascribes it to यम.

Gaut. (19. 18-20) provides that these acts (viz. Vedic recitation, *tapas*, fasting, gifts &c.) may be optionally performed, when no (particular penance) has been prescribed, that for grave sins difficult penances and for trivial faults easy ones may be prescribed and that *Kṛcchra*, *Atikṛcchra* and *Cāndrāyana* are penances for all sins.²⁰⁰ Manu XI. 209 (= Viṣṇu 54.34) provides that for the expiation of offences for which no particular atonement has been prescribed, let (the *pariṣad*) prescribe a penance after considering the (offender's) strength and the nature of the offence. Parāśara (XI. 55-56) provides that the recitation of the *Gāyatrī* ten thousand times is the best penance for all sins and that *Cāndrāyana*, *Yāvaka*, *Tulāpuruṣa* and serving cows destroy all sins. Yāj. III. 265 provides that a man is purified from all sins by undergoing the penance for cow-killing or by *Cāndrāyana*, observance for a month of the milk *vrata* or by *Parāka*. Manu XI. 117 provides for all *upapātakas* except the sin of sexual intercourse by one who is in the stage of Vedic student the penance prescribed for *govadha* or *cāndrāyana*.

One guilty of a sin, even though he may himself be a learned man, should approach an assembly of learned *brāhmaṇas* and after making some present (a cow or the like) announcing the nature of his lapse seek their decision about the proper penance for his lapse (Yāj. ²⁰¹ III. 300 and Parāśara VIII. 2). The Mit., Par. M., Pr. S. and other digests quote long passages in verse from *Āngiras* ²⁰² who provides that the sinner should

200. एतान्येवानादेशे विकल्पेन क्रियेरन् ॥ एनःसु गुरुषु गुरुणि लघुषु लघूनि ॥ कुच्छ्रा-
तिकृद्भौ चान्द्रायणमिति सर्वप्रायश्चित्तम् ॥ गौ. 19. 18-20. Vide ब्रह्मपुराण 22. 36 and
विष्णुपुराण II. 6. 38 for very similar words 'पापे गुरुणि गुरुणि स्वल्पान्यल्पे च तद्विदः ।
प्रायश्चित्तानि विप्रेन्द्रा जगुः स्वायंभुवादयः ॥. Instead of विप्रेन्द्राः the विष्णुपुराण has
मैत्रेय. This very verse is quoted as बृहस्पति's in प्राय. तत्त्व. p. 545 (with मैत्रेय
for विप्रेन्द्राः).

201. विख्यातदोषः कुर्वीत पर्षदोऽनुमतं व्रतम् । या. III. 300. This is ascribed
to both बृहस्पति and या. by परा. मा. II part 2 p. 153. Vide शङ्ख 17. 62 also.

202. A few of the verses of अङ्गिरस् are cited here: कृत्वा पापं न गूहेत गूह-
मानस्य वर्धते ॥ सचैलं वाग्यतः स्नात्वा क्लृप्तवासाः समाहितः । क्षत्रियो वाथ वैश्यो वा परि-
षद्युपतिष्ठति । उपस्थाय ततः शीघ्रमार्तिमान्धरणीं व्रजेत् । गात्रैश्च शिरसा चैव न च
किञ्चिदुदाहरेत् । ततस्ते प्रणिपातेन दृष्ट्वा तं समुपस्थितम् । वृद्धाः पृच्छन्ति किं
कार्यमुपाविश्याग्रतः स्थितम् । किं कार्यं का च ते पीडा किं वा मृगयसे द्विज । एवं तैः समनुज्ञातः
सर्वं ब्रूयादशेषतः । तस्मिन्निवेदिते कार्ये निष्कास्यो यस्तु कार्यवान् । सर्वेषां निश्चितं यस्मात्
यच्च प्राणान् न घातयेत् । आहूय श्रावयेदेकः पर्षदा यो नियोजितः । शृणुष्व भो इदं विप्र यस्मै
आदिश्यते व्रतम् । वचः पूर्वमुदाहार्यं यथोक्तं धर्मकर्तृभिः । पश्चात्कार्यानुसारेण शक्यं कुर्यात्
ब्रुहम् ॥ अङ्गिरस् q. by परा. मा. II. 1. p. 206-207 and 235-236. प्राय. सा. pp. 17-20, प्राय. म. pp. 11-12, प्रा. प्रकाश (folio 27b and 28a).

not conceal his lapse and lose time; he should bathe with his garment on, and with the garment still wet approach the assembly and should prostrate himself on the ground. Thus the elders of the assembly ask the man prostrating himself before them 'what is your business, what is the trouble and what do you seek from us'. The assembly then asks him to go aside a little and debate among themselves what the penance should be, considering all the circumstances of time, place, nature of the lapse, age &c. Then one of them at the desire of the assembly should declare the assembly's decision as to the proper penance after citing the *smṛti* passages and reducing the penance in view of the weakness and other circumstances of the offender. It has already been stated that the *pariṣad* acted under the direction of the king in matters of *prāyaścitta* and that the king was not to interfere with the decision of the assembly. The principal stages in a penance were four viz. approaching the *pariṣad*, the declaration of the appropriate penance by the *pariṣad*, the actual performance of the penance declared and the announcing of the sinner's freedom from taint (Āṅgiras q. by Pr. Prakāśa folio 27a 'upasthānam vratādeśaścaryā śuddhi-prakāśanam : prāyaścittam catuṣpādam vihitam dharmakartrbhiḥ " ").

It is not necessary here to set out the details of the constitution of the *pariṣad*, of the qualifications of the *śiṣṭas* who were to be the members of the *pariṣad* and their privileges and duties. These points have already been discussed at length in H. of Dh. vol. II. pp. 966-974. A few matters not stated there are mentioned here. Caste exclusiveness and pride had gone so far that Parāśara (VIII. 25) and the Caturviṃśatimata quoted by Par. M. state that a *dviḥja* though he may be of bad character is to be honoured and not a *śūdra* who may have controlled his senses, that the advice of a *śūdra* even though learned and devoted to the knowledge of the *śāstras* should not be accepted like sacrificial food when licked by a dog²⁰³. Instead of the word '*pariṣad*' the word *parṣad* (which is an irre-

203 दुःशीलोपि द्विजः पूज्यो न तु शूद्रो जितेन्द्रियः । कः परित्यज्य मां दुष्टं दुहे-
च्छीलवर्ती खरीम् । पराशर VIII. 25 on which परा. मा II. 1. p. 228 observes :
जातिशीलयोर्मध्ये जात्युत्कर्ष एव प्राधान्येनोपादेयः । शीलं तु यथासम्भवम् । अत एव
मते शूद्रोपदेशस्यानुपादेयत्वं प्रपञ्चयति । श्वचर्मणि यथा क्षीरमपेयं ब्राह्मणादिभिः । तद्वत्
सुखाद्वाक्यं न श्रोतव्यं कथञ्चन ॥ पण्डितस्यापि शूद्रस्य शास्त्रज्ञानरतस्य च ॥
ग्राह्यं शूनोच्छिष्टं हविर्यथा ॥

gular abbreviation) is employed in several smṛti passages^{203a}. Parāśara (VI. 55-57) provides that the assembly should take compassion on the weak, on boys and old men and should reduce the penance, but not otherwise and that if learned men through affection, greed, fear or ignorance reduce the penance that should be prescribed they themselves incur the sin.^{203b} Devala says the same and adds²⁰⁴ that the reduction in the penance should not be directed by one man alone or by a person ignorant of Dharmaśāstra and that it is only a number of brāhmaṇas who are proficient in Dharmaśāstra that are entitled to reduce the penance through compassion for the sinner. The decision of the assembly should be unanimous²⁰⁵ as far as possible.

If the learned brāhmaṇas of the assembly knowing the proper prāyaścitta do not declare it in the case of those who are distressed by their own sin and seek direction, they incur sin similar to that of the seeker after proper penance²⁰⁶.

203a. पर्षच्छब्दोऽत्र पृषोदरादित्वात्साधुः । प्राय. वि. p. 26, on which गोविन्दानन्द says 'परिषीदन्त्यस्यामिति पर्षत् पृषोदरादित्वादिकारलोपो विकल्पितः'. पाणिनि provides पृषोदरादीनि यथोपदिष्टम् । VI. 3. 109.

203 b. दुर्बलेऽनुग्रहः प्रोक्तस्तथा वै बालवृद्धयोः । अतोऽन्यथा भवेदोषस्तस्मान्नानुग्रहः स्मृतः ॥ स्नेहाद्वा यदि वा लोभाद्वादादज्ञानतोऽपि वा । कुर्वन्त्यनुग्रहं ये तु तत्पापं तेषु गच्छति ॥ पराशर VI. 55-57.

204. प्रायश्चित्तं यथोद्दिष्टमशक्यं दुर्बलादिभिः । इष्यतेऽनुग्रहस्तेषां लोकसंग्रहकारणात् ॥ एको नार्हति तत्कर्तुमज्ञो वा नाप्यनुग्रहम् । धर्मज्ञा बहवो विप्राः कर्तुमर्हन्त्यनुग्रहम् ॥ देवल q. by परा. मा. II.1. pp. 130-131, प्राय. म. p. 12.

205. विचारस्तादृशः कार्यो यथा सर्वे सभासदः । एकवाक्यतया ब्रूयुस्तथा श्रेयसाधि- गच्छति ॥ q. by प्राय. सा p. 18.

206. आर्तानां मार्गमाणानां प्रायश्चित्तानि ये द्विजाः । जानन्तो न प्रयच्छन्ति तेषां प्रायश्चित्तं समतां तु तैः ॥ अङ्गिरस् q. by मिता. on या. III. 300, प्राय. तत्त्व. p. 512, परा. मा. II. part 1 p. 234.



CHAPTER IV

PENANCES FOR PARTICULAR SINS

It is now proper to turn to the penances prescribed for individual sins of different types (grave sins, minor sins and the like). It may be noted that the *smṛtis* contain numerous *prāyaścittas* for the same sin and that it is often difficult to reconcile all the dicta. The commentaries and digests such as the *Mit.* and the *Prāyaścitta-viveka* therefore try to assign to each penance an appropriate provision, looking to all the circumstances noted above (i.e. they are bent on 'viṣayavyavasthā').^{206a} In this work, it is not necessary to set out in detail the numerous penances for numberless lapses that are prescribed in the several *smṛtis* and digests. In the *Śabdakalpadrūma* (part III) there is an analysis from the *Prāyaścitta-viveka* alone of the several lapses, the penances for them, the number of cows to be donated as substitutes, the monetary equivalents when even cows cannot be donated and the *dakṣiṇā* in each case, which occupy pages 321 to 364. Setting out all these lapses together with the penances for them would only be a matter of academic interest and of no practical value, as almost all the *prāyaścittas* have become antiquated and are hardly ever performed now except in the form of gifts of cows or money to *brāhmaṇas*, pilgrimages and recitation of Vedic mantras or *japa* of the names of some favourite deity such as Viṣṇu or Śiva. Therefore only a few typical sins alone will be taken for treatment here and later on a list of all penances with brief descriptions will be furnished.

First come the *Mahāpātakas*. Śaṅkha²⁰⁷ (17. 1-3) prescribes the following penance for the four *mahāpātakas*: the sinner should bathe thrice every day, should erect in a forest a cottage thatched with leaves, should sleep on the ground, should subsist

206 a. एवमादीन्यन्यानि उत्कर्षापकर्षप्रतिपादकवचनानि ब्राह्मणादिजातत्वं वृत्तस्था-
वृत्तस्थत्वं—वेदान्यादियुक्तत्वायुक्तत्वं—कामाकामकृतत्वं—व्यवस्थया व्याख्येयानि प्राय. वि.
p. 220; vide also प्रा. वि. pp. 338-39 for a similar passage.

207. नित्यं त्रिव्रणस्नानी कृत्वा पर्णकुटीं बने । अधःशायी जटाधारी पुण्यमूलसल्ला-
शनः॥ ग्रामं विशेषं भिक्षार्थं स्वकर्म परिकीर्तयन् । एककालं समश्नीयाद्वर्षं तु द्वादश गते॥
हेमस्तेयी सुरापश्च ब्रह्महा शुरुतल्पगः । व्रतेनैतेन छुध्यन्ते महापातकिनस्त्वमे ॥ शङ्ख 17-1-3
q. by अपरार्क pp. 1053-54, परा. मा. II. part 1 p. 320-321, प्रा. प्रकाश 1910 87b,

on leaves, roots and fruits, should enter a village for alms all the time declaring his misdeed, should eat only once a day. When the 12th year passes in this way, the thief of gold, the drinker of surā, the murderer of a brāhmaṇa and one who is guilty of incest become free from sin. Viṣṇu Dh. S. 34.1 speaks of sexual intercourse with one's mother, daughter or daughter-in-law as *atipātaka* and (34.2) provides that there is no penance except entering fire for this grave sin. The Bhaviṣyapurāṇa, Hārta and Saṁvarta (q. by the Pr. V. p. 43) say the same. But other smṛtis like Manu XI. 54 and Yāj. III. 227 treat *mātr-gamana* as a *mahāpātaka* (*gurutalpa-gamana*) and intercourse with the daughter or daughter-in-law as equal to violating guru's bed (Manu XI. 58, Yāj. III. 233-234). Therefore we begin with the *mahāpātakas* the first of which is the murder of a brāhmaṇa. Gaut. 22. 2-10, Āp. Dh. S. I. 9. 24. 10-25 and I. 9. 25. 12-13, Vas. 20. 25-28, Viṣṇu Dharmaśūtra 35. 6 and 50. 1-6 and 15, Manu. XI. 72-82, Yāj. III. 243-250, Agnipurāṇa 169. 1-4 and 173. 7-8, Saṁvarta 110-115 and many others prescribe various penances for brāhmaṇa-murder. As the treatment of Manu is tolerably long, an analysis of it alone will be given here. Manu as stated by the Bhaviṣyapurāṇa (quoted by Kullūka on Manu XI. 72-82, Aparārka p. 1055 and Pr. V. p. 63) speaks of 13 separate penances for *brahmahatyā*.²⁰⁸ The general rule was that for a man of any class who is directly guilty of intentional murder of a brāhmaṇa the penance was to end in death²⁰⁹. The thirteen penances as set out by Govindānanda in his commentary (called *Tattvārthakaumudī*) on *Prāyaścittaviveka* (p. 63) are as follows:—

(1) The murderer of a brāhmaṇa should construct a hut in a forest and dwell therein for twelve years, should subsist on alms and should carry a piece of the head-bones of the murdered man on a staff. This is a very ancient penance and other smṛtis add some details. For example, Gaut. 22. 4 provides that the sinner should submit to observances meant for a Vedic student (such as not partaking of flesh, honey etc. stated in

208. तथापि ब्राह्मणवधे प्रायश्चित्तानि सुव्रत । मनुना कीर्तितानीह त्रयोदश यथाक्रमम् ।
भविष्यपुराण q. by अपरार्क p. 1055, प्राय. वि. p. 63.

209. तत्र कामतः साक्षाद् ब्रह्मवधे विशेषाश्रवणात् सर्वेषामेव वर्णानां मरणान्तिकं प्रायश्चित्तम् । यदाह याज्ञवल्क्यः (3. 247.) 'लोमयः स्वाहेत्येवं... । तथा च मर्यादा-
ङ्गिराः... प्राणान्तिकं तु यत्प्रोक्तं प्रायश्चित्तं मनीषिभिः । तत् कामकृतं प्राप्य विज्ञेयं नात्र संशयः ।
प्राय. प्रक. pp. 8-9 ; परा. भा. II. part 2. p 72 and प्रा. प्रकाश 94 a, quote the verse
of मध्यमाङ्गिरसः .



Gaut. 2. 19), should announce his sin and enter a village only for begging alms. Yāj. III. 243 prescribes that the sinner should have a piece of the head-bone in the hand (left) and another placed on a staff (in the right hand) and that he should eat a moderate quantity (i. e. only once a day). The carrying of the piece of the head-bone in one hand is not meant for begging alms therein but only as a symbol. There was some divergence of views on this point^{209a}. Āp. Dh. S. I. 9. 24. 14 further provides that he should beg for alms at seven houses in only a broken reddish vessel (of clay or copper) and wear a piece of hempen cloth round his waist that will reach a little above his knees and that if he got no food at the seven houses he had to go without food that day and that he should protect cows and may for that purpose (for taking them out for grazing or bringing them back) enter the village again. The Mit. (on Yāj. III. 243) adds that the staff with head-bone on and the head-bone carried in the left hand are merely symbolic (in order to remind him and others of his being guilty of brāhmaṇa murder), that he should on seeing an ārya avoid his path (Gaut. 22. 5), that he should keep standing by day and only sit down at night (Gaut. 22. 6) and bathe thrice in the day (Gaut. 22. 6). It is added by the Mit. that, if the murdered brāhmaṇa's head-bone cannot be had, that of any other brāhmaṇa would do. The Mit. adds that this *vrata*²¹⁰ for twelve years propounded by Gautama, Manu, Yājñavalkya and others is one and not different for each smṛti and therefore all the details that are not opposed to each other should be included. Aparārka p. 1053 (on Yāj. III. 243) relies on the 'sarvasākhāpratyaanyāya'²¹¹ and states

209 a. स्वव्यापादितविप्रस्यैव शिरो द्वेधा कृत्वार्धं ध्वजदण्डाग्रे स्थापयेद्वर्धं च हस्ते
युक्तीयादिति...केचित् । अपरे तु द्वेधाकरणे प्रमाणाभावात् कृत्वा श्वशिरोध्वजमिति मनुवाक्ये
अखण्डितशिरःप्रतीतिश्चान्यशिरःकपालं हस्ते ग्राह्यं स्वव्यापादितविप्रशिरस्तु दण्डाग्रे स्थापयामि-
त्याहुः । इत्थमेव विज्ञानेश्वरशूलपाण्यादयः । वयं तु स्वव्यापादितशिरःकपालं हस्ते ग्राह्यं
अन्यदीयशिरसा तु ध्वजः कार्यः । प्रा. प्रकाश folio 88a.

210. इयं च मनुयाज्ञवल्क्यगौतमादिप्रतिपादिता द्वादशवार्षिकव्रतचर्या एकैव न
पुनर्भिन्ना । परस्परसापेक्षत्वादविरोधाच्च । तथाहि—भिक्षाशी कर्म वेदयन्—(या. 3. 243)
इत्युक्ते किं भिक्षापात्रं केषां वा गृहेषु कतिपु वेत्याकाङ्क्षा जायेतैव । तत्र-लोहितकेन खण्डशरा-
वेण (आप. ध. सू. 1. 9. 24. 14.)—इत्यापस्तम्बवचनैः परिपूर्णमविरुद्धम् । अतः सर्वैक-
कल्पोपदेशात्कैश्चिदुक्तं मनुगौतमाद्युक्तेतिकर्तव्यतायाः परस्परसापेक्षत्वेऽपि विकल्प इति
तदनिरूप्यैवोक्तमिति । मिता. on या III. 243.

211. अत्र च सर्वशाखाप्रत्ययमेकं कर्मेति न्यायेन स्मृत्यन्तरोक्ता अविरुद्धा धर्माः सन्-
न्त्येन कर्तव्याः । विरुद्धास्तु विकल्पेन । अपरार्क p. 1053. Vide H. of Dh. vol. III.
p. 870 for explanation of this Nyāya (maxim) which is based on जे. 11. 4. 9
and Śābara's bhāṣya thereon.

that there would be an option where the details of several smṛtis are in conflict. It was Viśvarūpa²¹² on Yāj. III. 237 who held that the procedure prescribed by each smṛti was separate and that all details taken from different smṛtis were not to be mixed up. According to the Mit. and Kullūka (on Manu XI. 72) this vrata for 12 years is appropriate in the case where a brāhmaṇa is murdered unintentionally and Kullūka quoting Āngiras provides that for intentional brāhmaṇa murder the penance will be double (i. e. 24 years). The Mit. (on Yāj. III. 243) states that this observance for twelve years applies only to one who was himself directly the murderer of a brāhmaṇa and that the *anugrahaka* has to undergo only 9 years' vrata, the *prayojaka* only six years, the *anumantū* only 4½ years and the *nimittin* only three years. It is further provided by the Mit. (on Yāj. III. 243) following a verse ascribed to Manu (not found in the printed text) and Devala²¹³ that if a man commits several murders of brāhmaṇas one after another, and performs penance at one time for them, for two murders he has to undergo the penance for 24 years and for three murders 36 years and when he commits the 4th murder there is no penance (but only death is the penance). The Pr. T. (p. 468) on the other hand,²¹⁴ following the Bhaviṣya-purāṇa holds that one performance of the 12 years' penance is enough penance for the murder of several brāhmaṇas, on the analogy of the *Kṣāmavatī iṣṭi* (Jai. VI. 4. 17-20) which is performed when both the purodāśas and the house are totally burnt up by accident before the oblations are offered. The Pr. Prakāśa (folio 19 a) also says the same and adds that Devala's verse is to be interpreted as laying down that repetition of the same sinful act is more blamable. If the murderer of a brāhmaṇa

212. न चैकमेवैतत् सर्वस्मृतिसिद्धं द्वादशवार्षिकं व्रतमित्याशङ्कनीयं प्रतिस्मृति प्रयोग-
भेदस्य-वक्तारो धर्मशास्त्राणामित्यत्र श्लोके (या. १.४) अभिहितत्वात्। विश्वरूप on या. III.
237 (शिरःकपालवान्.).

213. यच्च मनुदेवलाभ्यामुक्तं विधेः प्राथमिकादस्माद् द्वितीये द्विगुणं भवेत्। तृतीये
त्रिगुणं प्रोक्तं चतुर्थे नास्ति निष्कृतिः ॥ तच्च प्रतिनिमित्तं नैमित्तिकशास्त्रमावर्तते इति न्यायेन।
मिता. on या. III 243. प्राय. वि. pp. 25 and 77, प्राय. प्रकाश (19a) ascribes the verse
to देवल alone, while परा. मा. II part 2 p. 60 ascribes to both and स्मृतिसु. (प्राय.)
p. 872 attributes it to मनु and गालव (if the ms. was properly read by the
editor). हरदत्त on गौ. 22.6 ascribes it to मनु alone.

214. तथा नानाब्रह्मवधसत्त्वे सर्वोद्देशेन सकृत्प्रायश्चित्ते कृते सर्वब्रह्मवधजन्यपापमोक्ष-
यथा वधावृत्तौ भविष्ये। ब्राह्मणस्य ब्राह्मणयोर्ब्राह्मणानां च पुत्रक। प्रायश्चित्तस्य
जातिमाश्रित्य लक्ष्यते। क्षाप्रवत्यादिना यद्वत् कर्मणा पृथनापते। देवदोषादकरणे
दोषकदम्बके। होमेनैकेन दोषाणां सर्वेषां क्षयमादिशेत्। प्रा. तत्र p. 468.



was a kṣatriya or a vaiśya or a śūdra he had to perform the penance above described respectively for 24, 36 or 48 years (Smṛtyarthasāra p. 105). Instead of staying in a hut for twelve years he may stay at the end of a village or a cowpen and should tonsure his head and the hair on the lips or he may stay in an hermitage or at the foot of a tree and should devote himself to doing good to brāhmaṇas and cows and should observe celibacy (Manu XI. 78 and 81). At the end of 12 years he destroys the sin of brāhmaṇa-murder.

(2) According to Ap. Dh. S. I. 9.25.12, Gaut 22. 3, Manu XI. 72, Yāj. III. 248, if a kṣatriya intentionally killed a brāhmaṇa he may at his will enter a fight and if he were killed by his opponents who knew that he was a brāhmaṇa murderer or even if he was wounded and left unconscious on the field but subsequently recovered he should be free from the sin of brāhmaṇa-murder.

(3) According to Āp. Dh. S. I. 9.25.13, Vas. 20. 25-26, Gaut. 22.2, Manu XI. 74, Yāj. III. 247, he may cut off with an axe his hair, skin, blood, flesh, muscles, fat, bones and marrow and offer them into an ordinary fire kindled by him for the purpose and offer these eight offerings into it for Death ²¹⁵ (Mṛtyu) as the deity and then throw himself into fire (thrice with head downwards, according to Manu XI. 73). This penance is for intentional murder of a brāhmaṇa by a kṣatriya acc. to the Madanapārijāta and Bhaviṣyapurāṇa q. by Pr. Prakāśa folio 95 a.

(4)–(8) The murderer of a brāhmaṇa may perform the Aśvamedha sacrifice or Gosava or Abhijit or Viśvajit or the threefold Agniṣṭut (Manu XI. 74). The Aśvamedha could be performed only by a king or an emperor (samrāj). The others could be performed by any one belonging to the three higher classes. This applies only where the murder was unintentional as stated by Kullūka following the Bhaviṣyapurāṇa.²¹⁶ Viṣṇu

215. अग्नौ सक्तिर्ब्रह्मघ्नस्त्रिरवच्छातस्य । गौ. 22.2 ; अपि वा लोमानि त्वच्चं मांसमिति हावयित्वाग्निं प्रविशेत् । आप. ध. I. 9. 25.13 : भ्रूणहाग्निमुपसमाधाय जुहुयादेताः । लोमानि मृत्योर्जुहोमि लोमभिर्मृत्युं वासय इति प्रथमाम् ।...मज्जानं मृत्योर्जुहोमि मज्जाभिर्मृत्युं वासय इत्यष्टमीम् । वसिष्ठ 20.25-26. When यज. III. 247 prescribes that he should utter लोमभ्यः स्वाहा, the देवता is मृत्यु and लोम, त्वक् and all others are the आहुतिसः.

216. तदुक्तं भविष्यपुराणे-स्वर्जितादेश्च यद्दीर कर्मणां पृतनापते । अनुष्ठानं हि ज्ञानां यथेह्यमतिपूर्वकं ॥ कुल्लूक on : मनु XI.74. For the Aśvamedha, vide H. of Dh.



dharmasūtra (chap. 35 last verse) states that all persons guilty of any of the mahāpātakas are purified by the performance of Aśvamedha or by going to all the *tirthas* on the earth.

(9) Manu XI. 75 provides that for the removal of the sin of *brahmahatyā*, the sinner may walk one hundred *yojanas*, subsisting on limited food, controlling his senses and reciting one of the four Vedas. Kullūka says that this applies only where the killing is unintentional and the victim is a mere brāhmaṇa by caste (i. e. has not studied the Veda &c.). For *yojana*, vide H. of Dh. vol. III. p. 145 note 185.²¹⁷

(10) Manu XI. 76 provides that the murderer of a brāhmaṇa may make a gift of all his wealth to a brāhmaṇa who has studied the Veda.

(11) Manu XI. 76 and Yāj. III. 250 provide that the murderer may donate to a worthy brāhmaṇa (who has studied the Veda and whose character is good) as much wealth as would suffice to maintain the latter throughout his life and a house with all paraphernalia. This is the view of Govindānanda. But the Mit. on Yāj. III. 250 appears to hold that Nos. 10 and 11 are not separate penances. It combines the two into one, viz. that if the murderer has no offspring then he was to donate all his wealth or if he had offspring he was to donate a house with paraphernalia. This explanation is certainly preferable. The Smṛtyarthasāra (p. 105) states that if the murderer is devoid of qualities but is well-off he may give a house and lands sufficient for the maintenance of a worthy brāhmaṇa or he may donate a house with appurtenances or if he be childless all his wealth.

(12) Manu XI. 77²¹⁸ and Yāj. III. 249 provide that the murderer subsisting on sacrificial food (such as *nīvāra*, milk or

(Continued from the last page)

vol. II. 1228-1237. The *Viśvajit* and *Abhijit* are *ekāhas* and the first and last rites of the *Aṣṭarātra* and *Abhijit* follow the procedure of *soma* sacrifice. Vide Jai. VI. 7. 14 and VIII. 1.16 and Āśv. Śr. VIII. 5.13. In the *Viśvajit* one has to make a gift of all his wealth; vide H. of Dh. vol. II. p. 1212 n. 2644. For Gosava and *Agnistut* vide note 153 above.

217. तथा च भविष्यपुराणेऽयमेव श्लोकः पठितः व्याख्यातश्च जातिमात्रं यदा विप्रः हन्यादमतिपूर्वकम् । वेदविज्ञाग्निहोत्री च तदा तस्य भवेदिदम् ॥ कुल्लूक on मनु XI. 75

218. हविष्यभुग्वाजुसरेत्यतिस्रोतः सरस्वतीम् । मनु XI. 77; मेधातिथि comments 'हविष्यं मुख्यं नीवारादि ग्राम्यमपि पयोद्वतादि । प्रतिस्रोतः स्रोतः स्रोतः प्रति यावन्ति'

(Continued on the next page)



ghee) should follow the course of the (holy) river Sarasvatī in all its branches. This, acc. to the Bhaviṣyapurāṇa and Kullūka, applies where a mere brāhmaṇa by caste (without Vedic learning) is killed intentionally by a man who is himself rich but has no vedic learning. The words 'pratisrotah sarasvatīm' have been variously explained. Medhātithi explains as above. Aparārka, Sarvajñanārāyaṇa and Rāghavānanda explain that the murderer should follow the course of the Sarasvatī in the opposite direction from the sea to its origin. This appears to be a better explanation, since it brings out the force of 'pratisrotah' more clearly.

(13) It is provided by Manu XI. 77 and Yāj. III. 249 that the murderer should recite in a forest thrice the *saṃhitā* text of the Veda, while subsisting on limited food. The express mention of *saṃhitā* text precludes the *pada* text or *krama*. The Bhaviṣyapurāṇa and Kullūka hold that this penance is proper where a mere brāhmaṇa by birth (without Vedic learning) is killed unintentionally.

Manu XI. 79, Yāj. III. 244 and 246, Vas. 20. 27-28 and Gaut. 22. 7-8 and 11 mention three more penances, but they are not independent ones (as is made clear by Śaṅkha). If a murderer, while undergoing the 12 years' penance, fights him who attacks a brāhmaṇa and saves him (or fights for the king, acc. to Vas.) or dies in the attempt, he becomes at once free from the sin and if he lives after the fight he had not to continue the penance for the whole period. The same applies to the saving of 12 cows by the murderer by putting his own life in danger²¹⁹. Similarly, if a murderer fights a marauder depriving a brāhmaṇa of all his wealth and restores the wealth to a brāhmaṇa or dies in the attempt or is severely wounded (thrice acc. to Yāj, Vas. and Gaut.) and is unable to restore the wealth to the brāhmaṇa he becomes free from the grave sin of brāhmaṇa murder.

(Continued from the last page)

सरस्वत्याः स्रोतांसि तावन्त्यनुसरेत् ॥. अपरार्क p. 1060 says 'सरस्वतीं प्रति स्रोतोऽन्तादार-
ग्योद्धमं यावदपि गत्वा ह्रुष्यति'; सर्वज्ञनारायण explains प्रतिश्रोतः प्रभासमारभ्य प्लक्षप्र-
वणान्तं यत्र यत्र सरस्वती तत्र तत्र स्रोतो लक्षीकृत्य तीरेण गमनम् ॥. The मितः on या. III
249 explains प्लक्षात् प्रस्रवणादारभ्य पश्चिमोदधेः प्रतिश्रोतः स्रोतः प्रति सरस्वतीं हत्वा गत्वा.
For the sacredness of the Sarasvatī, vide H. of Dh. vol. II. pp. 12-13 and
later on under *tīrthas*.

219. अन्तराले वा ब्राह्मणं मोचयित्वा गवां वा द्वादशानां परित्राणात् । इति ।
p. by हरदत्त on गौ. 22.14 and मितः on या. III. 244.



Manu XI. 82, Yāj. III. 244, Śaṅkha and Gaut. 22.9 lay down that if the murderer of a brāhmaṇa announces his sin when the king and priests have met together for the ceremonial bath after the Aśvamedha sacrifice and being permitted by them bathes along with them, he becomes free from the sin.²²⁰ According to Haradatta this is an independent penance, while according to the Mit. on Yāj. III. 244, Aparārka p. 1057 and others it is not so but is to be performed while undergoing the 12 years' penance.

Yāj. III. 245 provides that if the murderer treats and cures a brāhmaṇa or a cow (or cows) lying helpless on the public road suffering from a long-standing and serious ailment he becomes free from the sin.

Parāśara (XII. 65-67) prescribes for *brahmahatyā* the penance of going to the sea and Rāma's bridge, begging and declaring on the way one's sin, walking without an umbrella or shoes and residing in cowpens, forests, *tirthas* and river streams; on seeing the *setu* he was to bathe in the ocean and on return to feed brāhmaṇas at a dinner and to donate 100 cows to learned brāhmaṇas.

There are other penances for *brahmahatyā* mentioned by Jamadagni, Atri, Kaśyapa and others quoted by Aparārka (pp. 1064-1065) and others which are passed over here for want of space.

If a brāhmaṇa killed his own father, mother, full brother, his teacher of the Veda, a brāhmaṇa who has studied the Veda or has consecrated sacred Vedic fires, he had to undergo penance till his last breath (acc. to Pr. Prakaraṇa p. 13 quoting Bhaviṣya-purāṇa, Pr. V. pp. 70-71, Smṛtimuktāphala Pr. p. 873 quoting Dakṣa III. 27-28 and Āp. Dh. S. I.9.24). If a man killed a priest that was engaged at a *soma* sacrifice the penance was double (Yāj. III. 252). The Pr. Prakaraṇa (p. 13) says that this means that the murderer should perform 12 years' penance and then donate cows²²¹ in proportion to the difference between his

220. अश्वमेधावभृथं गत्वा तत्रानुज्ञातः स्नात्वा सद्यः पूतो भवति । शङ्ख q. by मिता. on या. III. 244. अपरार्क p. 1057 (on या. III 244) and प्राय. सा. p. 33 combine the two sūtras of Śaṅkha into one,

221. तथा च भविष्यपुराणम् । मातरं पितरं हत्वा सोदर्यं भ्रातरं तथा । गुह्यं हत्वा श्रोत्रियं च आहिताग्निमथापि वा ॥ आ उत्तमादुच्छ्वासाद् व्रतं चीर्णो विशुध्यति । अथ घण्टा सङ्कलनायां जीवनकालस्यानियतत्वाद् विंशत्युत्तरं शतं परमायुरेव ग्राह्यम् । तेन द्वादशवार्षिकं कृत्वा वधकालादूर्ध्वं विंशत्यधिकशतस्य यावद्वशिष्टं तावत्परिमणद्वादशवार्षिकव्रतानुरूपं धनं दातव्यम् । प्राय. प्रक. p. 13.



age at the time of finishing twelve years and 120 years (which is regarded as the highest limit of life). If a person strikes a brāhmaṇa intending to kill him but only injures him he should perform the *vrata* for *brahmahatyā* (acc. to Yāj. III. 252, Gaut. 22.11). The Mit. explains that this is an extension (*atideśa*) of the rules about *brahmahatyā* and so the penance is a little less than the full one (i. e. 9 years). Where certain sins are said to be equal (*sama*) to *brahmahatyā* or *surūpāna*, the penance for them is half of what is prescribed for the latter. If a person intending to commit suicide by entering water or fire or by hanging himself or by taking poison or by falling from a precipice or the dome of a temple or by cutting his belly with a weapon or by fasting, does not die, but luckily lives, he has to undergo a *prāyaścitta* for three years (acc. to Pr. Prakaraṇa p. 15). Vas. 23.18-19 and Parāśara XII.5-8 prescribe other *prāyaścittas* for such persons (who are styled '*pratyavasita*'). Pr. Prakaraṇa (p. 15) and Pr. V. (p. 75) quote two verses of Yama^{221a} for nine kinds of *pratyavasita* and prescribe Cāndrāyana or two Taptakṛcchras for them.

If a kṣatriya, vaiśya or śūdra intentionally and directly killed a brāhmaṇa, the expiation was death, but otherwise each had respectively to undergo twice, thrice or four times as much *prāyaścitta* as a brāhmaṇa sinner would have had to undergo for killing a brāhmaṇa.²²² Conversely, if a brāhmaṇa killed a kṣatriya or vaiśya or a śūdra the sin was only an upapātaka (acc. to Yāj. III. 236 and Manu XI. 66), unless the kṣatriya or vaiśya victim was engaged in performing a soma sacrifice (Śamavidhāna Br. I. 7. 5, Yāj. III. 251, Vas. 20. 34) when the penance was heavy. Yāj. III. 266-267, Manu XI. 126-130 and Āp. Dh. S. I.9.24. 1-4 prescribe other penances for killing a kṣatriya, a vaiśya or a śūdra. The penance for a kṣatriya

221. a जलाग्न्युद्धन्धनभ्रष्टाः प्रव्रज्यानाशकच्युताः । विषप्रपतनप्रायश्चिद्वातहताश्च ये ॥ नवैते प्रत्यवसिताः सर्वलोकबाहिष्कृताः । चान्द्रायणेन शुध्यन्ति तप्तकृच्छ्रद्वयेन वा ॥ यम, verses 22-23, बृहद्यम 3-4, नारदपुराण. These include those who give up *sannyāsa* and those who sit down at the door of another for killing themselves (प्राय).

222. प्राय. प्रक. p. 16 says: तत्र क्षत्रियादीनां साक्षाद्ब्रह्मवधे विशेषाश्रवणात् प्राणान्तिकमेव । इतरत्र तु यद् ब्राह्मणस्य ब्रह्मवधे प्रायश्चित्तं तत् क्षत्रियवैश्यशूद्राणां यथाक्रमं द्विगुणं त्रिगुणं चतुर्गुणमिति बोद्धव्यम् ।... तथा च ब्रह्मवधप्रकरणेऽङ्गिराः । परिषद्या 0 (vide note 195 for the quotation); vide the प्राय. वि. p. 75 (which quotes अङ्गिरसपुराणम् that quotes the verses of अङ्गिरस्, स्मृत्यर्थसार p. 105, स्मृतिशु. (प्रा.) p. 87, प्रा. मा. II part 2 p. 74 and प्रा. प्रकाश (folio 94 a) quote a verse of प्रजापति द्विगुणं त्रिगुणं चैव चतुर्गुणमथापि वा । क्षत्रविद्दशूद्रजातीनां ब्राह्मणस्य वधे व्रतम् ॥ .')

killing a kṣatriya is a little less (i. e. by $\frac{1}{4}$) than the penance for a brāhmaṇa killing a kṣatriya. Vide the verse 'vipre tu sakalam deyam' quoted above (note 192).

Women victims were placed on the same footing as kṣatriya, vaiśya and śūdra males (Yāj. III. 236 and Manu XI. 66), except the cases where the woman was an Ātreya or pregnant or in her monthly illness (Gaut. 22.17, Āp. Dh. S. I. 9. 24. 5 and 9, Baud. Dh. S. II. 1.10, 12-13, Vas. 20.34, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 50. 7-9) or the wife of a twice-born performing a soma sacrifice, when the penance was heavy (like the one for *brahmahatyā*). The period of soma-yāga was reckoned from the *Dikṣanīyā* isti to the *Udavasānīyā* (acc. to the Mit.) or up to the end of *avabhṛtha* bath (acc. to Aparārka). For killing women guilty of adultery the penances were higher and varied according to the caste of the paramour and of the woman (vide Gaut. 22.26-27, Manu XI. 138, Yāj. III. 268-269).

Manu (XI. 208=Viṣṇu Dh. S. 54.30) and Yāj. III. 293 prescribe that for threatening to beat or strike a brāhmaṇa the penance is kṛcchra, for striking him it is Ati-kṛcchra, for shedding his blood a Kṛcchra and Atikṛcchra. The Sāmavidhāna Br. I. 7. 4 prescribes other penances (i. e. recitation of certain *sāman* texts) for these.

Gaut. 23.1, ²²³ Āp. Dh. S. I. 9. 25.3, Baud. Dh. S. II. 1. 21., Vas. 20.22, Manu XI. 90-91, Yāj. III. 253 and Brhaspati prescribe that if a brāhmaṇa drinks intentionally spirituous liquor prepared from flour even once he has to undergo a penance that ends in death, viz. he has to drink that liquor boiling hot or to drink boiling hot cow's urine, milk, ghee, water or liquid cow-dung, and when his body has been completely scalded thereby and he dies he becomes free from that sin. Some like Haradatta on Gaut. 23. 1 hold that this horrible penance is meant for one who knowingly and repeatedly drinks *surā* (manufactured from rice flour). Manu XI. 92 and Yāj. III. 254 prescribe another penance in place of the one ending in death viz. that the sinner should eat during one year (during three

223. सुरापोऽग्निस्पर्शां सुरां पिबेत् । आप. ध. सू. 1.9.25.3 ; सुरापस्य ब्राह्मणस्यो-
ष्णामासिञ्चेयुः सुरामास्ये मृतः शुध्येत् । गो. 23.1 ; सुरापाने कामकृते ज्वलन्तीं तां विनिक्षिपेत् ।
मुखे तथा विनिर्दग्धे मृतः शुद्धिमवाप्नुयात् ॥ बृहस्पति q. by मिताः on या. III 253 अपराध-
p. 1071; प्राय. प्रक. p. 43; प्रायेण धर्मशास्त्रेषु सर्वेष्वेव नराधिप । मतिपूर्वे सुरापाने प्राणहानिक-
मुदाहृतम् ॥ पैष्टीपाने तु ऋषिभिर्नेतस्स्यां कदाचन । भविष्यपुराण q. by दीपकालिका on या.
III. 253.

years, acc. to Yāj.) once (a day) at night the (boiled) small grains of rice, or oilcake, should wear clothes made of cow's hair, should have matted hair on his head and carry a flagstaff (with a wine cup thereon). The same rules apply to a kṣatriya or vaiśya drinking *surā* (manufactured from rice flour). Only they have as stated above (in note 192) to undergo three-fourths and one-half respectively of the penance for a brāhmaṇa sinner. This penance was to be undertaken after vomiting the contents of the stomach. According to the Madanapārijāta (p. 818), Pr. V. p. 104, Pr. Prakaraṇa p. 43, Mit. (on Yāj. III. 24) and other works the twelve years' penance is meant for one who drinks *surā* (made from flour) through ignorance or force. According to Gaut. 23. 2-3, Yāj. III. 255, Manu. XI. 146, Atri 75, for drinking intoxicants or human semen, ordure or urine through ignorance a person of the three first classes had first to undergo the penance called Taptakṛcchra and then his *upanayana* was again performed. Vasīṣṭha 20.19 prescribes for drinking any intoxicant unintentionally the penances of Kṛcchra and Atikṛcchra, the drinking of ghee and the performing of *upanayana* again. There is great divergence of views about Manu XI. 146 and Yāj. III. 255 which is passed over here. Brhaspati ²²⁴ quoted by the Mit., Aparārka and others prescribes that a brāhmaṇa who drinks *surā* prepared from raw sugar, flour and honey (or madhūka flowers) should respectively undergo Taptakṛcchra, Parāka and Cāndrāyana. This light penance is restricted acc. to the Mit. and others to cases where *surā* is drunk for curing a malady which no other medicine could cure. If a brāhmaṇa drank *surā* (not manufactured from flour) or any other intoxicant, various easy penances were prescribed for him (such as undergoing Cāndrāyana on a river falling into the sea, feeding brāhmaṇas and donating a cow and a bull to the brāhmaṇas, Parāśara XII. 75-76). Vide Yāj. III. 255 and the Mit. thereon. Kṣatriyas and vaiśyas incurred no sin by drinking intoxicants other than *surā* (made from flour) and the sūdra incurred no sin even by drinking *surā* of the

224. गौडीं पैष्टीं तथा माध्वीं पीत्वा विप्रः समाचरेत् । तप्तकृच्छ्रं पराकं च चान्द्रायण-
मनुक्रमात् ॥ बृहस्पति q. by मित्ता. on या. III. 254, अपरार्क p. 1073, परा. मा. II part 2 p.
84, मद्. पा p. 821, प्राय. सा. p. 42. The मित्ता. comments: यत्तु बोधायनीयं त्रैमसिकं
ममत्या सुरापाने कृच्छ्रान्दपादं चरित्वा पुनरुपनयनमिति, यच्च याम्यं 'सुरां पीत्वा द्विजन्मनः
रुक्मं हत्वा द्विजन्मनः । संयोगं पतितैर्गत्वा द्विजश्चान्द्रायणं चरेत् ॥' इति, यदपि 'महर्षयः
'गौडीं...क्रमात् ॥' इति तत्त्रितयमप्यनन्यौषधसाध्यव्याधुपशमार्थं पाने वेदितव्यं प्रायश्चित्तम्
लपत्वात् ।

paṣṭi variety. The Mit. (on Yāj. III. 243) holds that since Manu XI. 93 generally forbids the drinking of *surā* on the part of brāhmaṇas, kṣatriyas and vaiśyas the prohibition applies even to boys who have not undergone the rite of *upanayana* and girls who are not yet married and adds that for drinking *surā* the child has to undergo only one-fourth penance (for 3 years) if the offence was unintentional and double of that (6 years) if it was intentional (vide also Pr. prakaraṇa p. 48). The Kalpataru, it appears, held, relying on Gaut. II. 1 ('before *upanayana* a child may do as it pleases as regards behaviour, speech and eating'), that no sin (*doṣa*) was incurred by a child before *upanayana* and by a girl before marriage for drinking *surā*. The Pr. V. (p. 104) and Pr. Prakāśa criticize the Kalpataru for this view.²²⁵ As Brhaspati states (vide n. 188 above) the license allowed by Gautama is limited by the Mit. and other digests to the partaking of sour or stale drinks and the like and is not extended to drinking *surā* which is a mahāpātaka. Jātūkarnya²²⁶ (q. by the Par. M.) provides that if a boy whose *upanayana* has not been performed drinks an intoxicant (*madya*) through foolishness, his father, mother or brother should perform three kṛcchras as an expiation for him. Āngiras (Jiv. p. 557), Āpastamba-smṛti III. 7, Laghu-Hārita 34-35, Brhad-yama III. 1-2 also provide that a *pratinidhi* (brother, father, friend) may undergo an expiation for a boy who is himself unable to do so or is less than eleven and above five years of age.

The Āśv. gr. (I. 22.22-26)²²⁷ prescribes what is to be done and what is to be omitted in *punar-upanayana*. It provides that the rites of the cutting of the hair and the production of intelligence are optional, there are no express rules about giving the person in charge (of the deities) and as to the time, and the verse to be recited as the Sāvitrī is Rgveda V. 82.1 instead of the usual Gāyatrī (tatsaviturvareṇyam, Rg. III. 62.10).

225. अत्रानुपनीतब्राह्मणकुमारानूहब्राह्मणकुमारिकयोः सुरापाने दोषाभावः सुरां पीत्वा द्विजो मोहादित्यादि प्रायश्चित्ते द्विजग्रहणादिति कल्पतरुस्तत्र तस्माद् ब्राह्मणराजन्यौ इति मनुवचनात् सुरापाननिषेधोऽयं जात्याश्रय इति स्थितिः । न पिबेद् ब्राह्मणो मद्यं निषिद्धमपि चापरम् ॥ इति कुमारवचनाच्च द्विजग्रहणस्य जात्युपलक्षणार्थत्वात् । प्राय. वि. pp. 104-105.

226. अनुपेतस्तु यो बालो मद्यं मोहात्पिबेद्यदि । तस्य कुच्छत्रयं कुर्यान्माता भ्राता तथा पिता ॥ जातूकर्ण्य q. by परा. मा. II part 2 p. 80.

227. अथोपेतपूर्वस्य । कृताकृतं केशवपनं मेधाजननं च । अनिरुक्तं परिदानम् । कालश्च । तत्सवितुर्वर्णमहे इति सावित्रीम् । आश्व. गृ. I. 22. 22-26, q. by मद. p. 821.



Vasiṣṭha 20.18 quotes Manu XI. 151 on this point²²⁸ and Viṣṇu (Dh. S. 51.4-5) in prose is to the same effect. Viṣṇu (Dh. S. 51. 2-3) provides Cāndrāyana for drinking any of the (twelve) unclean excretions of the body (Manu V. 134) or any of the several kinds of intoxicating drinks and for eating garlic or onion or red garlic or any plant having a similar flavour or the flesh of village pigs, of tame cocks, of apes and of cows and then adds (in sūtra 4) that they (the sinners) must undergo fresh *upanayana* also. The smṛtis provide different prāyaścittas for various lapses about drinking and eating such as drinking water from a pot which had already been used for holding surā, for drinking water from the water vessel of a cāṇḍāla or of a washerman or from a śūdra's house or for drinking milk which should not be drunk (Gaut. 17.22-26, Yāj. I. 170, Manu V. 8-10), for eating forbidden food, which must be passed over here, because²²⁹ they are too many and too various and depend on circumstances for their application as observed by the Pr. V. and because they are now of academic interest alone. Some reference, however, may be made to show how some of these lapses were treated. Śaṅkha states that there are many articles that are allowed or forbidden to men, particularly to brāhmaṇas and in cases of transgressions the decision rests with the *śiṣṭas* (the *pariṣad* of respectable people). Brhaspati²³⁰ (quoted by Aparārka) prescribes that in the case of the partaking of things that should not be licked or drunk or eaten or in case of taking in human semen, urine or ordure, the penance of a cāndrāyana is the purification. Some of the sages such as Samvarta, Śaṅkha-likhita took a lenient view, prescribed Cāndrāyana even for eating cow's flesh and human flesh.²³¹

228. मानवं चात्र श्लोकमुदाहरन्ति । वपनं मेखला दण्डो भैक्षचर्या व्रतानि च । एतानि तु निर्वर्तन्ते पुनःसंस्कारकर्मणि ॥ इति । वसिष्ठ 20. 18. The verse is मनु XI. 151.

229. यानि चान्यानि मुन्यन्तरोक्तानि अभक्ष्यभक्षणे अपेयपाने गुरुलघुप्रायश्चित्तानि तानि कामाकामकृतसकृदभ्यासापेक्षया योज्यानि द्रव्याणामानन्त्यात्यतिव्यक्तिषु अभक्ष्यत्वमभिधातुमशक्यमिति तत्स्मृत्यन्तरादेवावगन्तव्यम् । शिष्टवाक्याच्च । यथा शङ्खः । भक्ष्याभक्ष्याण्यनेकानि ब्राह्मणस्य विशेषतः । तत्र शिष्टा यथा ब्रूयुस्तथा कार्यो विनिश्चयः ॥ q. by प्राय. वि. p. 339. The verse is quoted by परा. मा. II. part 1 p. 462.

230. अलेह्यानामपेयानामभक्ष्याणां च भक्षणे । रेतोमूत्रपुरीषाणां शुद्धिश्चान्द्रायणं स्मृतम् ॥ बृह. q. by अपरार्क p. 1164, परा. मा. II part 1 p. 367.

231. गोमांसं मानुषं चैव सूनिहस्तात्समाहृतम् । अभक्ष्यं तद्भवेत्सर्वं भुक्त्वा चान्द्रायणं चरेत् ॥ संवत् 197 q. by अपरार्क p. 1165, परा. मा. II part 1 p. 367; शृंगारकृत-वृष्टि-कव्याद-वानर-खरोष्ट्र-गजवाजि-विडुराह-गोमानुषमांसभक्षणे चान्द्रायणम् ॥ लिखित q. by अपरार्क p. 1166, परा. मा. II part 1 p. 368; vide गौ. 23. 30, मनु XI. 156, विष्णु 51. 3-4 for similar provisions.

The general rule stated by the Sāma. Br. I. 5.13, Manu XI. 160 and others is that one desirous of inner purity should not eat forbidden food, that if he eats it through ignorance he should make efforts to vomit it and if that is impossible he should quickly take some *prāyaścitta* (which is slight in the case of ignorance). It may be mentioned that even from very ancient times exceptions were recognised to the prohibitions against the partaking of forbidden food. The Chāndogya Upaniṣad (I. 10)²³² narrates the story of Uṣasti Cākṛāyaṇa, who when the country of the Kurus had been devastated by hailstones (or by locusts), begged (along with his very young wife) of a chief eating beans and took from the latter the beans that had been put away for the chief (and so were *ucchiṣṭa*), but when asked to take water for drinking meant for the chief replied that if he drank of it he would be drinking what was unclean, since he could get water whenever he liked. This Vedic passage indicates that even unclean things may be eaten when there is distress (*āpad*) or danger to life, but that when there is no distress or danger even one who has knowledge of *brahmavidyā* should not violate the injunctions of *śāstra* about eating. The Vedāntasūtra (III.4.28) has an aphorism on this incident. Manu X.104 provides that he who, when in danger of losing his life, accepts food from any person whatsoever is not tainted by sin as the sky is not tainted by mud. Manu then refers (X.105-108) to the stories of Ajigarta who, when famished, approached for slaying his own son, of the sage Vāmadeva who when tormented by hunger desired to eat the flesh of a dog in order to save his life and did not sully himself, of Bharadvāja who when distressed by hunger along with his son in a lonely forest accepted many cows from the carpenter Vṛdhu (Brbu?) or of Viśvāmitra who, well knowing what was right or wrong, proceeded, when tormented by hunger, to eat the haunch of a dog, receiving it from the hands of a Cāṇḍāla.^{232a}

232. स हेभ्यं कुल्माषान्खादन्तं विभिक्षे तं होवाच नेतोऽन्ये विद्यन्ते यज्ञ ये म इम उपनिहिता इति । एतेषां मे देहीति होवाच तानस्मै प्रददौ हन्तानुपानमित्युच्छिष्टं वै मे पीतं स्यादिति होवाच । न स्विदेतेष्युच्छिष्टा इति न वा अजीविष्यमिमांश्च खादन्निति होवाच कामो म उदपानमिति । छा. उप. 1. 10. 2-4; सर्वाङ्गानुमतिश्च प्राणात्यये तद्दर्शनात् । वेदान्तसूत्र III 4.28; on this शाङ्करभाष्य observes: तदेतदुच्छिष्टोच्छिष्टपर्युषितभक्षणं दर्शयन्त्याः श्रुतेराशयातिशयो लक्ष्यते प्राणात्ययप्रसङ्गे प्राणसन्धारणायामभक्ष्यमपि भक्षयितव्यमिति । स्वस्थावस्थायां तु तन्न कर्तव्यं विद्यावतापीत्यनुपानप्रत्याख्यानाद्भ्रम्यते ।

232a For the legend of Ajigarta, vide Aitareya Br. VII.13-16 (33.1 ff) and H. of Dh. vol. III pp. 563-64, 660, 663. In Rg. VI. 45.31-33 Brbu is described as the carpenter of the Panis and his liberality is highly praised. For Viśvāmitra trying to steal from a hamlet of cāṇḍālas a dog's leg, when famished, vide Śāntiparva 141.26-96



For eating the flesh of various birds Viṣṇu Dh. S. 51. 29 and 31 and others prescribe fasting for three days or one day and also for eating several varieties of fish (Viṣṇu 51.21).

We may now revert to the penances for the other Mahāpātakas. It has already been seen how the thief that had stolen a brāhmaṇa's gold of a certain weight was to approach the king with a club (p. 73 above). Even Āp. Dh. S. I.9.25.4 refers to this and prescribes as an option (Āp. Dh. S. I.9.25.6-7) entering into fire as an expiation for theft or starving oneself by reducing the intake of food. Therefore, the penance for the theft of brāhmaṇa's gold of the weight of 80 *raktikās* or more (Manu VIII. 134 and Yāj. I.363) was death for the offenders of all varṇas, except a brāhmaṇa offender, who clad in rags (or bark garment) was to undergo a penance in a forest for twelve years of the same kind as for brāhmaṇa murder (Manu XI. 101) or for the drinking of *surā* prepared from flour (Yāj. III. 258). The offender may also give as much gold (if he is rich) as his own weight or as much wealth as would be required for the maintenance of a brāhmaṇa's family for the latter's lifetime (Yāj. III. 258 and Mit. thereon). The Āp. Dh. S. I. 9.25.8 provides the observance of the penance of Kṛcchra for one year (as defined in Āp. Dh. S. I. 9.27. 7-8) and quotes a verse "those who have committed a theft (of gold), drunk spirituous liquor, or had connection with a *guru's* wife, but not those who have slain a brāhmaṇa, shall eat every fourth meal-time a little food, bathe thrice a day, pass the day standing and the night sitting; after the lapse of three years they cast off their sins."^{232b} The digests contain numerous and varying expiations for theft depending upon the weight of gold stolen, upon the qualities of the man robbed and of the thief, upon the caste of both, upon whether it is a first offence or a repeated one, on the price and nature of the thing stolen and on the time and place and so on. Vide Pr. V. pp. 117-127, Pr. Sāra p. 49, Madanapārijāta pp. 828-834, Smṛtyarthasāra pp. 108-109, Smṛtimuktāphala pp. 883-885. These have to be passed over here for reasons of space.

If the gold stolen (even from a brāhmaṇa) was less than 80 *raktikās* or if gold of any weight was stolen from a *ksatriya*

232 b. कृच्छ्रसंवत्सरं वा चरेत् । अथाप्युदाहरन्ति । स्तेयं कृत्वा सुरां पीब्यांश्च दुराचर्यं गत्वा ब्रह्महत्यामकृत्वा चतुर्थकाला मितभोजनाः स्युरपोभ्यवेयुः सवनानुकल्पम् । रक्षणा-सनाभ्यां विहरन्त एते त्रिभिर्वर्षेण पापं नुदन्ते । आप. ध. सू. I. 9. 25. 8-10.

or any other non-brāhmaṇa, the expiation would be as one for an upapātaka. Manu (XI. 162-168 = Matsyapurāṇa 227. 41-47) and Viṣṇu 52. 5-13 prescribe various penances such as kṛcchra for a year for the theft of corn or cooked food or wealth; cāndrāyana for abducting men and women (slaves) or for appropriating a field or house and the water of wells and cisterns; sātāpana for thefts of objects of small value; pañcagavya for stealing eatables of various kinds or a vehicle or a bed or a seat or flowers or roots and fruits; fasting for three days and nights in the case of theft of grass, wood, trees, dry food, molasses, clothes, leather (or armour) and flesh; subsisting for twelve days on small grains of rice for stealing gems, pearls, coral, copper, silver, iron, bell-metal or stones; subsisting on milk alone for the theft of cotton, silk, wool, animals with cloven hoofs (cows &c.) or uncloven hoofs (horses &c.), birds, perfumes, medicinal herbs or a rope (used for drawing water). It must be remembered as stated above (p. 74) that the thief had to restore to the owner the thing stolen and then undergo a penance (Manu XI.164 and Viṣṇu Dh. S. 52.14) and Medhātithi (on Manu XI. 164) adds that if he is unable to restore the thing (or its price) the penance is to be double. Besides, in certain cases of theft if corporal punishment or death was not inflicted by the king, the thief was fined eleven times the price of the thing stolen (Manu VIII. 321, 323, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 5.82).²³³

Steala (theft) is of two kinds, by force (such as robbery and dacoity and called *sāhasa*) and by clandestine means. In the former case the penance goes on increasing (twice, thrice) according as the offender is a kṣatriya or vaiśya (*parśadyā brāhmaṇānām*, quoted above, Par. M. II part 1 p.231). In the case of theft by clandestine means if the owner whose gold or wealth is stolen is a brāhmaṇa and the thief a kṣatriya or vaiśya, then also the penance must be higher than for a brāhmaṇa thief (since, as, Nārada says in his chapter on *sāhasa* verse 16, the wealth belonging to idols, brāhmaṇas and kings is the best). But conversely, if the owner of stolen property is of lower class than the thief then the verse of Brhad-Viṣṇu ('vipre tu sakalam deyam,' quoted above in note 192) will apply.

233. द्वित्रादिमाषात्मकहेमहरणं तु क्षत्रियादिहेमहरणवदुपपातकमेवेति युक्तम् । किञ्च सुवर्णस्यूनपरिमाणहेमहरणे प्रायश्चित्तान्तरोपदेशात्तत्परिमाणस्यैव हेम्नो हरणे मरणान्तिकी प्रायश्चित्तमिति युक्तम् । तथा चोक्तं षट्त्रिंशन्मते । मिता. on या. III 257.

The penance for incest with the *guru's* wife was prescribed from very ancient times as follows: Gaut. ²³⁴ 23. 8-11, Āp. Dh. S. I. 9.25. 1-2, Baud. Dh. S. II. 1. 14-16 (almost in the same words as in Gaut), Vas. 20. 13-14, Manu XI. 103-104 prescribe that the offender shall confess his guilt and then extend himself on a red-hot iron bed or embrace the red-hot iron image of a woman or having himself cut off his organ and testicles and having taken them in his joined-hands may walk straight towards the south or south-west until he falls down dead and that he becomes purified by death. According to the Mit. on Yāj. III. 259 the three are not distinct penances, but that two of them, viz. embracing the red-hot iron image of a woman and sleeping on a bed of red hot iron form one penance. The words of Yāj. no doubt convey that the two together are one penance (viz. sleeping on red hot bed and clinging to a red hot image). Others like the Madanapārijāta (p. 837), Medhātithi ²³⁵ on Manu XI. 103 do not accept this interpretation. The latter moreover relies on Gautama who employs the word 'vā' (or) in the two latter of his three sūtras on this point. The Pr. V. (p. 138) points out this difference between Gaut. and Yāj. Manu XI. 58 and 170-71, Yāj. III. 231, Samvarta 159 regard sexual intercourse with a friend's wife or a maiden of a higher caste and the wives of one's son or of sagotras and women born of the same womb (sister &c.) or with an *antyaja* woman as equal to *gurutalpagamana* and the penance is only a little less than for the latter. Manu XI. 105 and Yāj. III. 260 prescribe a penance (other than one ending in death), viz. that the sinner should dwell in a tenantless forest, allow his beard to grow, should wear tattered garments and practise Prājāpatya Kṛcchra for one year (three years acc. to Yāj.). The commentators say that this was meant where the sin was committed by mistake. Manu XI. 106 and Yāj. III. 260 provide another penance viz. Cāndrāyana for three months, Manu prescribing that the sinner should subsist on sacrificial food (fruits, roots or *nivāra* grain) or on barley gruel and Yāj. adding that he should recite for the three months the Vedasamhitā. The commentators say that this applies in cases where the *guru's* wife is of a lower varṇa or of the sūdra class.

234. तस्मै लोहशयने गुरुतल्पगः शयीत । सुप्तौ वा श्लिष्येज्ज्वलन्तीम् । लिङ्गं वा सवृषणमुत्कृत्याञ्जलावाधाय दक्षिणाप्रतीचीं व्रजेदजिह्वमा शरीरपातात् । गो. 23. 8-11.

235. आचार्याणीं गत्वेदं प्रायश्चित्तमपरा मातैव । समानजातीयगमने इयानि प्रीति प्रायश्चित्तानि कल्पन्ते । मेधातिथि ०३ मनु XI. 103.



Parāśara (X. 10-11) provides three different *prāyaścittas*, viz. excision of the organ, three *kṛcchras* or three *cāndrāyaṇas* if a man commits incest with his mother, sister, or daughter and in X. 12-14 prescribes other penances for adultery with other near female relatives. The Mit. on Yāj. III. 259 quotes Śaṅkha for twelve years' penance for all four kinds of Mahāpātakas, which applies acc. to it to intercourse with guru's wife of the same class. It is not necessary to quote further *smṛti* passages which vary greatly as to the extent of the penance. Manus XI. 178 (= Viṣṇu Dh. S. 53. 9 = Agnipurāṇa 169. 41), Śānti 165. 29 state that the sin which a twice-born man commits by sexual intercourse for one night with a *vṛṣālī*²³⁶ (a *cāṇḍāla* woman) is removed by him by the penance of subsisting on alms for three years and reciting mantras (like the Gāyatrī). Āp. Dh. S. I. 9. 27. 11 has a somewhat similar verse about a brāhmaṇa's intercourse with a *sūdra* woman²³⁷. Yāj. III. 233 prescribes for women death as a legal penalty and the same *prāyaścitta* as for a male if a man has sexual intercourse with his paternal or maternal aunt, or daughter-in-law, maternal uncle's wife and others (enumerated above) with their consent. Manus XI. 175 (= Laghu-Śātātapa 155 = Agnipurāṇa 169. 38) holds that a brāhmaṇa, who has sexual intercourse with a *cāṇḍāla* woman or *mleccha* woman or dines with *cāṇḍālas* or *mlecchas* or accepts gifts from them, has to perform penance as if he were *patita* if he unknowingly did these things, and becomes like them by committing these sins knowingly. Compare Vasistha 23. 41, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 53. 5-6.

If a woman be guilty of a Mahāpātaka the general rule stated by Manus XI. 176 (latter half), Kātyāyana and Brhaspati²³⁸ was that whatever penance was prescribed for a male in cases of adultery with other's wives the same was to be administered to women in case of adultery with males. In this parti-

236. *वृषली* in Manus XI. 177 is explained as *चण्डाली* by कुल्लुक and मिता. on या. III. 260, which quotes a *smṛti* verse 'चण्डाली बन्धकी वेद्या रजःस्था या च कन्यका । ऊढा या च सगोत्रा स्याद्दृष्टव्यः पञ्च कीर्तिताः ॥' शूलपाणि understands *वृषली* as *शूद्रा*; vide Pr. Prakāśa folio 111 b for this difference.

237. यदेकरात्रेण करोति पापं कृष्णं वर्णं ब्राह्मणः सेवमानश्चतुर्थकाल उदकाभ्यवायी त्रिभिर्वर्षैस्तदपहन्ति पापम् ॥ आप. ध. सू. I. 9. 27. 11. शान्तिपर्व 165. 29 reads 'निकृष्टवर्णं and 'स्थानासनाभ्यां विहरन् व्रती स त्रिभिर्वर्षैः शमयेद्वात्मपापम् ॥'.

238. यत्पुंसः परदारेषु समानेषु व्रतं चरेत् । व्यभिचारानु भर्तुः स्त्री तदशेषं समाचरेत् । बृह. q. by अपरार्क p. 1124, प्राय. वि. p. 371; एवं दोषश्च छुद्भिश्च पतितानामुदाहृता । स्त्रीणामपि प्रसक्तानामेष एव विधिः स्मृतः । कात्या. q. by मिता. on या. III. 260.



cular case the rule about half penance being prescribed for women did not hold good when a woman with full knowledge committed adultery and half penance was to be prescribed only where the adultery was through mistake. A similar rule was laid down by Āṅgiras^{238a}. If a woman became *patita* and did not undergo *prāyaścitta* she could be excommunicated by the process called *ghaṭasphoṭa* (described in H. of Dh. vol. III pp. 615-616 and 1009). But there was a difference between a male and a woman in this respect. A woman, however, was not to be altogether abandoned on the street and left to fare for herself, though she be *patita*, but she was to be lodged in a cottage thatched with grass near the house and was to be guarded against further lapses and given bare maintenance (enough to keep body and soul together) and (dirty) clothes (Yāj. III. 296, Manu XI. 176). There were certain acts, however, which were specially condemned in women (Yāj. III. 297) viz. sexual intercourse with a man of a lower class, causing abortion and killing the husband. Vas. 21.10 provides²³⁹ that four classes of women may be altogether abandoned (and not given even starving maintenance &c.) viz. a woman who has sexual intercourse with (her husband's) pupil or with his *guru* or one who kills her husband or one who sexually approaches a man of a lower degraded class. Women, however *patita* they may be, were to be dealt with as stated in Yāj. III. 296 even if they did not perform any penance. Vas. 21.12 states that women of the *brāhmaṇa*, *kṣatriya* and *vaiśya* classes, if guilty of sexual intercourse with a *śūdra*, can be purified by penance if they do not give birth to a child, but not those others (who give birth to a child born of the condemned connection). Vide H. of Dh. vol. III. pp. 946-949 for penance and other matters in relation to adultery by men and women.

It is now necessary to turn to the penance for association with those that are guilty of grave sins (*mahāpātakas*). Manu XI. 181, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 54.1, Yāj. III. 261 provide that whoever associates with (for a year, acc. to Yāj.) a person guilty of one

238a. व्रतं यच्चोदितं पुंसां पतितस्त्रीनिषेवणात् । तच्चापि कारयेन्मूढां पतितसेवनात् स्त्रियम् ॥ अङ्गिरस् q. by प्राय. वि. p. 372.

239. चतस्रस्तु परित्याज्याः शिष्यगा गुरुगा च या । पतिघ्नी च विशेषेण जुद्धिमता च या ॥ वसिष्ठ 21.10 q. by the मिता. on या. III. 297 and अपरार्क p. 1708 on या. I. 72. The मिता. attributes the verse to व्यास and explains जुद्धिमता as 'प्रतिलोमजश्चर्मकारादिः'. The दीपकालिका explains as 'कुत्सितः प्रतिलोमजः'. The प्राय. वि. p. 374 attributes it to अङ्गिरस् and explains 'जुद्धितः कुत्सितो हीनवर्णः'.

of the four mahāpātakas has to undergo the *vrata* (the observances) prescribed for that grave sinner in order to free himself from the sin of association. Kullūka, the Pr. sāra (p. 61) and others state that the penance here referred to is the one for twelve years and not death since it is the word *vrata* that is employed by Manu and *vrata* does not ordinarily convey the idea of death.²⁴⁰ If the association was due to ignorance the penance was half. Vyāsa prescribed²⁴¹ for the knowing associator $\frac{3}{4}$ ths of the penance provided for the sinner himself. According to the Pr. V. (p. 171) there was no difference in the extent of the penance for association with a sinner in the case of a brāhmaṇa²⁴² and a śūdra, though in other cases penance was reduced by one quarter for each varṇa. If the association was for less than one year, then the penance was proportionately reduced. Not only was the *patita* condemned but even his son born after he became *patita* and he was excluded from inheritance. But the daughter of a *patita* was treated differently and she could be married without any stigma being attached to the husband. Vide Vas. 13.51-53, Yāj. III. 261, Baud. Dh. S. II. 1. 73-74, Hārīta q. by Pr. V. p. 174 and Pr. prakaraṇa p. 110 and H. of Dh. vol. III. pp. 614-616.

Viṣṇu Dh. S. (chap. 36) speaks of certain sins as *anupātakas* which are declared by Manu (XI. 55-58) and Yāj. (III. 228-233) to be equal to or like one or other of the mahāpātakas and provides that those guilty of them become pure by Āśvamedha sacrifice or by resorting to pilgrimages. It has also been seen that such sins are removed by the penances that are slightly less (i. e. by $\frac{1}{4}$ th) than those for the mahāpātakas themselves.

The penances for *upapātakas* must now be briefly dealt with. The number of upapātakas is very large and it is of no practical importance to deal with each of them separately. First of all, some general rules about them will be stated and

240. अत्र च ब्रह्महादिषु यद्यपि कामतो मरणान्तिकमुपदिष्टं तथापि संसर्गिणस्तन्नातिदिश्यते। स तस्यैव व्रतं कुर्यादिति व्रतस्यैवातिदेशात्। मरणस्य च व्रतशब्दवाच्यत्वाभावात्। अतोऽत्र कामकृतेऽपि संसर्गे द्वादशवार्षिकमकामतस्तु तदर्थम्। मिता. on या. III. 261; vide also मद्. पा. p. 853.

241. यो येन संवसेद्वर्षे सोऽपि तत्समतामियात्। पादहीनं चरेत्सोऽपि तस्य तस्य व्रतं द्विजः॥ व्यास q. by the मिता. on या. III 261, कुल्लूक on मनु XI.181.

242. अतः संसर्गिणि ब्राह्मणे शूद्रे च न प्रायश्चित्ते विशेषः। तथा निरन्तरसंवत्सरसंयुक्तं यत् प्रायश्चित्तमुक्तं तस्य च संवत्सरासम्पूर्तौ भागहारः कार्यः। तथा च बृहस्पतिः। पाण्ड्यायनस्य तु संयोगे याजनाश्यापनादिना। एकत्रासनशय्याभिः प्रायश्चित्तार्थमाचरेत्। प्राय. pp. 171-172.

a few of them that are of some importance will be dealt with individually. The Sāmavidhāna ²⁴³ Br. (I. 5.14) states that on committing several upapātakas a man becomes pure by reciting thrice the whole of the veda while fasting. Manu XI. 117, Yāj. III. 265, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 37.35 prescribe that purification from all classes of upapātakas (except the sin of the *avakirṇin*) is effected by the same penances that are prescribed for *govadha* or by *cāndrāyana* or by subsisting on milk alone for a month or by *Parāka* or *Gosava*. The digests prescribe that *Parāka* is meant for him who is strong enough to undertake it, *Cāndrāyana* for him who is weak, *Gosava* for him who repeatedly commits the same upapātaka or is guilty of several at the same time (vide Pr. Prakāśa, folio 122 a).

Govadha stands at the head of upapātakas in Manu, Yāj., the Agnipurāṇa (168. 29-37). Several smṛtis provide different penances for the sin of killing a cow. Gaut. 22. 18 prescribes²⁴⁴ the same penance for *govadha* as for killing a vaiśya (Gaut. 22. 15) viz. staying for three years in a forest, subsisting on alms, observing celibacy and donating one hundred cows together with a bull. In Āp. Dh. S. I. 9. 26. 1 for killing a milch cow or a full grown ox the penance is said to be the same as for killing a śūdra. Vas. 21. 18 provides that if a man kills a cow he should cover himself with the raw hide of the cow (that is killed) and should observe Kṛcchra or Atikṛcchra for six months. Manu²⁴⁵ XI. 108-116, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 50. 16-24, Samvarta 130-135, Parāśara VIII. 31-41 (q. in Smṛtimuktāphala p. 875, prāyaścitta section) prescribe elaborate observances as penances for *govadha*. Yāj. (III. 263-264) provides four separate prāyaścittas, viz (1) the killer of a cow should control his senses for a month, should subsist on *pañcagavya* (cow's urine, cow-dung, milk, curds and ghee), should sleep in a cowpen, should follow the cows so penned (by day) and at the end of a month donate a cow; (2) or he should perform Kṛcchra penance while sleeping in a cow-pen and following cows by day; (3) or should perform an *atikṛcchra* in the same way; (4) or should fast for three days and donate ten cows together with

243. बहुन्युपपतनीयानि कृत्वा त्रिभिरनश्नन्परायणैः पूतो भवति । सामवेदान्वा. I 5. 14.

244. गां च वैश्यवत् । गौ. 22. 18; धेन्वनहुहोश्वाकारणात् । आप. ध. सू. I. 9. 26. 1.

245. अग्निपुराण 169. 5-7 are the same as मनु XI. 108-110 ; संवत् 130-134 are quoted (with slight variations) by विश्वरूप on या. III. 262.



one bull. Śaṅkha provides²⁴⁶ that the killer of a cow should fast for 25 days and nights subsisting on pañcagavya, should tonsure his head together with the top-knot, should wear as an upper garment cow-hide and should follow cows, lie down in a cow-pen and donate a cow. Some of the smṛtis and digests declare that the penance differed according as the cow that was killed belonged to a learned brāhmaṇa or to a mere brāhmaṇa by caste, to a kṣatriya or vaiśya or śūdra. For example, Devala (q. by Pr. V. p. 202) states that if a cow belonging to a brāhmaṇa were killed, then the sinner should wear as upper garment that cow's hide for six months, should bring fodder for cows, should imitate cows, should subsist on barley gruel, should move among cows and then he becomes free from the sin. Śātātapa (q. by Pr. V. p. 203) states that one killing the cow of a vaiśya should subsist on pañcagavya for a month, should recite the Gomatī-vidyā²⁴⁷ and stay in a cowpen for a month. Viśvāmitra (Pr. V. p. 203) says about the killer of a cow belonging to a śūdra that he should undergo four kṛcchras if he kills intentionally and two if unintentionally. The Gomatī-vidyā as quoted by Aparārka (p. 1102), the Madana-pārijāta (p. 862) and Pr. T. p. 522 (which takes it from the Prāyaścitta section of the Kalpataru that takes it from Yama) is a laudation of cows: 'cows always emit fragrance, they have the smell of guggulu (bdellium), they are the support of beings, they are a great blessing; cows are (yield in their milk) the best food and the best offerings for gods; they are purifiers of all beings and offerings ooze from them; they please the gods in heaven by the offerings (of milk and ghee) that are rendered pure by the mantras recited over them; in the agnihotra (keeping up the sacred fire) of sages cows help

246. गोधनः पञ्चगव्याहारः पञ्चविंशतिरात्रमुपवसेत् सशिखं वपनं कृत्वा गोचर्मणा प्रावृतो गाश्चाक्षुगच्छन् गोष्ठेशयो गां च दद्यात् । शङ्ख q. by विश्वरूप on या. III. 262, मिता. on या. III 264, हरदत्त on गौ. 22. 18, अपरार्क p. 1094. The मिता. and हरदत्त ascribe the passage to both शङ्ख and प्रचेतस्.

247. गोमतीविद्यामाह प्रायश्चित्तकाण्डकल्पतरौ यमः । गोमतीं कीर्तयिष्यामि सर्वपाप-प्रणाशिनीम् । तां तु मे गदतो विप्राः कृणुध्वं सुसमाहिताः ॥ गावः सुरभयो नित्यं गावो शुग्गुल-गन्धिकाः । गावः प्रतिष्ठा भूतानां गावः स्वस्थयनं महत् । अक्षमेव परं गावो देवानां हविरुत्तमम् । पावनं सर्वभूतानां क्षरन्ति च हवींषि च ॥ हविषा मन्त्रपूतेन तर्पयन्त्यमरान्दिवि । ऋषीणामग्नि-होत्रेषु गावो होमप्रयोजिकाः ॥ पावनं सर्वभूतानां गावः शरणमुत्तमम् । गावः पवित्रं परमं गावो मङ्गलमुत्तमम् । गावः स्वर्गस्य सोपानं गावो धन्याः सनातनाः । नमो गोभ्यः श्रीमतीभ्यः सौरभेयीभ्य एव च । नमो ब्रह्मसुताभ्यश्च पवित्राभ्यो नमो नमः । ब्राह्मणाश्चैव गावश्च कुलमेकं द्विधा कृतम् । एकत्र मन्त्रास्तिष्ठन्ति हविरन्यत्र तिष्ठति ॥ प्राय. तत्त्व pp. 522-523, अपरार्क and प्रा. प्रकाश folio 1166 with some variations such as 'सर्वभूतानां रक्षन्ति च वहन्ति च.' अपरार्क p. 1102 quotes the verses from गावः सुरभयो to पवित्राभ्यो नमो नमः ।

to bring about *homa*; cows are the holy and eminent protection for all beings; cows are extremely holy and most auspicious; cows are blessed; salutation to cows that abound in wealth and are called *saurabheyī*! salutation to the cows that are holy and the daughters of Brahman. Brāhmaṇas and cows are (really) one family divided into two parts, in one (brāhmaṇas) reside the (vedic) *mantras* and in the other reside offerings (to Gods of ghee &c.).” The Pr. prakaraṇa ²⁴⁸ (p. 33) says that Kātyāyana, Gautama, Saṁvarta, Parāśara and other sages prescribe differing penances for *govadha*, which are to be explained away by reference to the killing being intentional or unintentional or to the fact of the cow being owned by a brāhmaṇa engaged in a *soma* sacrifice or by a brāhmaṇa who has studied the Veda with the six auxiliary śāstras, or by the fact that the cow was useful for the *homa* of a brāhmaṇa possessed of good qualities or was a pregnant cow or of the *kapilā* (brown or tawny) variety. It adds the important statement that in its days such cows being not found in ordinary life it is not necessary to expressly assign to each of those texts its appropriate subject matter.

Yāj. III. 284, ²⁴⁹ Saṁvarta 137, Agnipurāṇa 169.14 provide that if a cow or bull dies while being treated with medicine or while an attempt is being made to help the cow in delivery, or being branded (as a treatment) there is no sin. This applies as an exception in all cases of injury or death of brāhmaṇas, cows or other animals. Parāśara (IX. 4 ff.) and Āṅgiras (q. by Pr. T. pp. 526-527) prescribe $\frac{1}{4}$, $\frac{1}{2}$ and $\frac{3}{4}$ of the *prāyaścitta* for killing out-right a cow, if the death is due to putting an obstacle in the cow's or bull's free movement or to tying it up or to yoking it with thongs. Before undergoing a penance for *govadha*, the sinner had to make good the price of the animal to the owner, according to the Brahmapurāṇa and Parāśara. ²⁵⁰

248. यत्पुनः कात्यायनेन...पराशरादिमुनिभिरपि न्यूनाधिकप्रायश्चित्तान्युक्तानि तानि कामाकामकृत-सवनस्थ-श्रोत्रिय-षडङ्गवेदाध्यायि-ब्राह्मणसम्बन्धिगुणवद्भूमधेनु-गर्भिणी-कपिलादिवधविषयाणि यथायोग्यं व्याख्यातानीति । इदानीं तु तथाविधगवाभवेन व्यवहारानङ्ग-स्वाङ्ग प्रत्येकं विषयव्यवस्थया व्याख्यातानीति । प्राय. प्रक. p. 33.

249. क्रियमाणोपकारे तु मृते विप्रे न पातकम् । विपत्तेः गोवृषाणां तु भेषजाभिक्रियास्तु च ॥ या. III. 284; यन्त्रणे गोचिकित्सार्थं गृहगर्भविमोचने । यदि तत्र विपत्तिः स्यान्न स पापेन लिप्यते ॥ संवर्त 137 q. by the mīta. on ya. III. 284, प्राय. प्रकरण p. 33

250. गोवधे तु स्वामिने गोमूल्यं दत्त्वा व्रतं करणीयम् । आदौ गोपतये दत्त्वा गोमूल्यं साधुकल्पितम् । इति ब्रह्मपुराणात् । न चैतद्ग्रहणे दोषः । ...तथा च पराशरादिप्रमाणेषु प्राणभृतां प्रदद्यात् प्रतिरूपकम् । तस्यानुसृत्य मूल्यं वा दद्यादित्यब्रवीन्मनुः । प्राय. प्रमाण p. 513. The verse प्रमाणे is quoted as कात्यायन's (792) by the परा. मा. III. p. 425 and वि. र. p. 284.

The Sāmavidhāna Br. (I 7.8.) prescribes that on killing any animal (except a cow or bull) the guilty person should fast for one night and recite the sāmaveda verse 'Agnis-tigmena' (I. 1. 3. 2). Āp. Dh. S. (I. 9.25.14) provides for killing a crow, a chameleon, a peacock, a *chakravāka*, *hamsa*, *bhāsa*, a frog, ichneumon, musk-rat, a dog the same penance as for killing a śūdra. Gaut. 22. 19-22, 24-25, Manu XI. 133-137, Yāj. III. 269-274, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 50.25-32, Parāśara VI. 1-15 prescribe several penances for killing an elephant, a horse, a tiger, a monkey, a cat, a serpent and numerous other animals, which are passed over here. Some smṛtis such as Samvarta 10 and Paithīnasi make a difference between *grāmya* and *āranya* (forest) animals, in each class seven being specified by Paithīnasi.²⁵¹ The great concern of the sages for anything possessed of the principle of life or growth went so far as to prescribe the penance of reciting one hundred ṛk verses if a man cut off big trees (like mango or jack-fruit tree) or shrubs and creepers, except for purposes of sacrifices or agriculture ²⁵² (Manu XI. 142, Yāj. III. 276, Vas. 19. 11-12). These provisions tended against wanton destruction of trees, shrubs and forests that are so beneficent to humanity and lend a charm to the landscape.

It is remarkable that in case a man was bitten by a harlot or a monkey or an ass or by a dog or jackal or a camel or a crow he had to perform (in addition to the pain of the bite) *prāṇāyāma* while standing in water and to drink ghee for purification (Manu XI. 199, Yāj. III. 277, Vas. 23. 31). Parāśara V. 1-9 prescribe elaborate rules of purification for bites by wolves, dogs and jackals (such as a bath and *japa* of Gāyatrī &c.).

PARADĀRYĀ (adultery with another's wife)—is a minor sin (acc. to Yāj. III. 235, Manu XI. 59). This excludes intercourse with *guru's* wife and other intercourse declared to be like *gurutalpagamana* or with *cāṇḍāla* women (Manu XI. 170-172, 175, 178, Yāj. III. 231-233, Vas. XX. 15-17 and XXIII. 41). Āp. Dh. S. I. 10.28.19 is very severe on a male adulterer who transgresses his vow of loyalty to his wife; one who proves false to his wife shall put on the skin of an ass with the hair turned

251. ग्रामारण्यपशुविवेके पैठीनासिः । ग्राम्यारण्याश्चतुर्दश । गौरविरजोऽश्वोऽश्वतरो गर्दभो मनुष्यश्चेति सप्त ग्राम्याः पशवः । महिषवानरक्रक्षसरीसृपकुरुपृषतसृगाश्चेति सप्तरण्याः पशवः । प्राय वि. p. 233. Even the तै. सं. VII. 2.2. 1 says 'सप्त ग्राम्याः पशवः सप्तरण्याः'.

252. पुष्पफलोपगान्पादपात्र हिंस्यात् । कर्षणकारणार्थं चोपहस्यात् । वसिष्ठ 19.11.12

outside and beg at seven houses saying 'give alms to him who played false to his wife'. This should be his livelihood for six months". Conversely, Āp. (I. 10.28.20) provides that if a wife plays false to her husband she should perform for as many months (i. e. six months) the twelve night *kṛcchra* penance. In another place Āp. Dh. S. (II. 10. 27. 11) states that if a brāhmaṇa commits adultery once with a married woman of equal class he shall perform one-fourth of the penance prescribed for an outcast. Gaut. (22. 29-30, 34) provides penances for two years generally and three years if the woman be the wife of a learned brāhmaṇa. The Mit. on Yāj. III. 265 quotes numerous texts dealing with the penance for adultery that does not amount to a mahāpātaka and tries to evolve order by assigning to each its proper province. This is passed over here. A woman guilty of adultery with a male of the same or higher caste than herself had to undergo the same penance as a male adulterer (Manu XI. 176 and Brhaspati), but if she committed adultery with a male of lower caste, then the penances differed as stated above (vide Vas. 21. 1-5 and Samvarta 167-172). Brhadyama IV. 48 states that adultery in the inverse order of classes is a grave sin, but adultery in the *anuloma* order of classes entails different penances for purification from it.²⁵³

Vrātyatā (failure to have upanayana performed at the right time)—A person whose upanayana is not performed at the proper time is called *vrātya* or *patitasāvitrika*. Vide Āśv. gr. I. 19. 5-7, Āp. Dh. S. I. 1. 1. 22-26, Baud. gr. III. 13. 5-6, Vas. XI. 71-75, Manu II. 38-39, Yāj. I. 37-38. The penances also such as the performance of *Vrātyastoma* and *Uddālakavrata* (Vas. XI. 76-79, Gaut. 19.8) are prescribed by some of these works, while Manu XI. 191 (=Viṣṇu Dh. S. 54. 26-27 = Agni-purāṇa 170. 8-9) prescribes a milder penance of three *kṛcchras* and then *Upanayana* is to be performed again. Vas. XI. 77 describes *Uddālakavrata* as follows: 'for two months he should subsist on barley gruel, for a month on milk, for half a month on *āmikṣā*, for eight days on ghee, for six days on food obtained without begging or asking for it, for three days on water and he should observe a complete fast for one day.' Āp. Dh. S. (I. 1.1. 24-27) prescribes another penance for *vrātyatā*. For *vrātya* or *patitasāvitrika*, vide H. of Dh. vol. II. pp. 96, 376-379. Haradatta as

253. संवर्त 167-168 are q. by प्राय. वि. p. 358 and परा. मा. II part. I p. 330; संवर्त 169 is q. by विश्वरूप on या. III. 254 p. 132; बृहद्यज. IV. 48 is प्रातिलोम्ये महत्यापं प्रवदन्ति मनीषिणः। प्रायश्चित्तं चानुलोम्येन भवत्येव चान्यथा।

quoted in H. of Dh. vol. II, p. 379 appears to hold that even if generations before the great-grand-father of a man had been without *upanayana*, still proper penance should be prescribed and the man taken in the fold of Hinduism. But there were others who stuck literally to the words of Āp. and Parāśara and hold that if all the generations from the father of the great-grand-father of a man were without *upanayana* then nothing could be done for that man.^{253a}

Vratatopa (non-observance of the vow of celibacy on the part of a brahmacārin). A Vedic student who has sexual intercourse with a woman is technically called *avakīrṇin*. The Tai. Ā. II. 18 contains the penance for *avakīrṇin* first promulgated by Sudeva Kāśyapa²⁵⁴. Āp. Dh. S. (I. 9. 26. 8-9) provides²⁵⁵ that such a student shall offer to Nirṛti (goddess of Hell or death) an ass according to the manner of *Pākayajñas* and that a śūdra shall eat the remainder of the offering. Jaimini (VI. 8. 22) provides that the offering is to be made in the ordinary fire (*laukikāgni*) and not in the consecrated Vedic fire.²⁵⁶ Vas. (23. 1-3) prescribes 'if a Vedic student approaches a woman, then he should offer an ass to the goblins (*rakṣas*) in a forest where four roads meet, kindling an ordinary fire or he may offer an oblation of boiled rice to Nirṛti and throw into the fire four oblations of that food saying 'To lust, *svāhā*; to him

253a. इदं व्याख्यातं हरदत्तेन भाष्यकृता । ... यस्य प्रपितामहस्य पितुरारभ्य नानुस्मर्येत उपनयनं तस्य प्रायश्चित्तं नोक्तमिति । तथा च संस्कार्यस्य त्रिपुरुषोर्ध्वमपि ब्राह्मण्यत्वे कथमपि संस्कार्यस्य उपनयनं न भवतीति फलितम् । प्राय. सुक्तावली folio 80 a.

254. यो ब्रह्मचार्यवकिरेदमावास्यायां रात्र्यामग्निं प्रणीयोपसमाधाय द्विराज्यस्योपघातं जुहोति कामावकीर्णोऽस्म्यवकीर्णोऽस्मि कामकामाय स्वाहा कामाभिद्रुग्धोऽस्म्यभिद्रुग्धोऽस्मि कामकामाय स्वाहेत्यमृतं वा आज्यममृतमेवात्मन्धत्ते । तै. आ. II. 18.

255. गर्दभेनावकीर्णी निर्ऋतिं पाकयज्ञेन यजेत् । तस्य शूद्रः प्राश्नीयात् । आप. ध. सू. I. 9.26.8-9; ब्रह्मचारी चेत्त्रिषुपेयादरण्ये चतुष्पथे लौकिकेग्नौ रक्षोदेवतं गर्दभं पशुमालभेत् । नैऋतं वा चरुं निर्वपेत् । तस्य जुहुयात्कामाय स्वाहा कामकामाय स्वाहा नैऋत्यै स्वाहा रक्षोदेवताभ्यः स्वाहेति । वसिष्ठ 23.1-2. अवकीर्णन् is explained by क्षीरस्वामी on अमरकोश as 'अथ अन्तरे कीर्णं रेतोऽस्यावकीर्णी.' The वैखानसस्मार्तसूत्र VI.8 employs the word in a wider sense 'सप्तरात्रौ हीने नित्यकर्मणि अवकीर्णी भवति'. For पाकयज्ञः which are ordinarily said to be seven, vide H. of Dh. vol. II, p. 194. The Āśv. gr. I.1.2-3 speaks of three and quotes Rg. VIII. 19.5 in support. The commentator explains 'पाकयज्ञाः अल्पयज्ञाः प्रशस्तयज्ञा वा' and quotes Rg. VII. 104.8 in support for the latter meaning. The खादिरगृह्य I. 1.20 defines 'पाकयज्ञ इत्याख्या यः कश्चैकाग्नौ'. वृद्धगौ. VIII. p. 557 speaks of five पाकयज्ञः.

256. अवकीर्णिपशुश्च तद्वदाधानस्याप्राप्तकालत्वात् । जै. VI. 8.22, on which says 'अस्त्यवकीर्णिपशुः, ब्रह्मचार्यवकीर्णी नैऋतं पशुमालभतेति । ... तस्मादिदमपि लौकिकेष्वाति ।'



who follows his lust, svāhā; to Nirṛti svāhā; to the deities called *Rakṣas*, svāhā'. Gaut. 23. 17-19, Manu XI. 118-123, Baud. Dh. S. II. 1. 35-43; Yāj. III. 280, Agnipurāṇa 169. 15-18, Pār. gr. III. 12 contain similar provisions, Gautama adding that he shall beg for a year at seven houses with a red vessel (earthen) in his hand and proclaim his misdeed. The Baud. Dh. S. and Pār. gr. furnish elaborate details. The former states that the Paśupuroḍāśa may be offered to Rakṣas or to Yama or he may offer on the Amāvāsyā at night two offerings of clarified butter in fire after performing the preparatory rites of a *darvi-homa* and that he may then invoke fire with the verse (Tai. Ā. II. 18) 'Sam mā ciṅcantu marutaḥ &c.' (may the Maruts grant me long life and strength).

If an ascetic reverted to the life of a householder, Samvarta (171-172) prescribes the penance of *kṛcchra* for six months²⁵⁷. Such a man is called *pratyavasita*. The *pratyavasitas* are said to be of nine kinds²⁵⁸ by Yama (22-23), Bṛhad-Yama (3-4) and others viz. those who turn back from water, fire, halter (by means of which they wanted to kill themselves), those who revert back from the stage of *sannyāsa* or from a fast (unto death), or from poison, precipice or sitting *dharṇā* and those who (desiring to commit suicide) strike themselves with a weapon (but are not killed); these nine are called *pratyavasita* and are beyond commerce with people, become pure by the penance of *Cāndrāyana* or two *Taptakṛcchras*. Vṛddha-Parāśara quoted by Par. M. and Prāyaścitta-muktāvali provides that *sannyāsins*, who revert to the life of the householder, are to be treated as *cāṇḍālas* even after undergoing penance and their children born after they fall from the ascetic stage are to be made to dwell among *cāṇḍālas*. This explains the harsh treatment alleged to have been meted to the great saint Jñāneśvara and his brothers at Paithan in the 13th century. A person who after becoming a *sannyāsin* reverts to another āśrama or acts contrary to the

257. संन्यस्य दुर्मतिः कश्चिदपत्यार्थं स्त्रियं व्रजेत् । कुर्यात्कृच्छ्रं समानं तत्षण्मासां-
स्तदनन्तरम् ॥ संवत् 171-172, quoted in परा. मा. II part 2 p. 129 (reads प्रत्यापत्तिं
व्रजेद्यदि । स कुर्यात्कृच्छ्रमश्रान्तः षण्मासान्प्रत्यनन्तरम्) and प्राय. सा. p. 123 (reads
प्रत्यापत्तिं चिकीर्षति). 'सत्यपि प्रायश्चित्ते लुप्तधर्माः परिव्राजका गृहिता इत्याह वृद्धपराशरः ।
लुप्तधर्मास्तु चाण्डालाः परिव्राजकतापसाः । तेषां जातान्यपत्यानि चाण्डालैः सह भक्षयन्ति ॥
इति । प्राय. मुक्तावली folio 73 b, परा. मा. II part 2 p. 11.

258. जलाग्न्युद्वन्धनभ्रष्टाः प्रव्रज्यानाशकच्युताः । विषप्रपतनप्रायशस्त्रघातहताश्च ॥
नवैते प्रत्यवसिताः सर्वलोकबहिष्कृताः । चान्द्रायणेन शुध्यन्ति तप्तकृच्छ्रद्वयेन वा ॥ यम. 77-23
q. by प्राय. सा. p. 126.

rules of his āśrama is called *ārūḍhapatita* also (vide Par. M. II. part. I. p. 373 quoting Hārīta).

Elaborate purifications are prescribed for removing the taint of touching certain men, unclean objects like bones (Manu V. 87), women in their monthly illness or within certain days after delivery and animals (like dogs, village pigs, cocks, crows). They have to be passed over here for reasons of space. But a few passages may be cited by way of sample. Gautama ²⁵⁹ (14, 28) provides that on touching *patita*, *cāṇḍāla*, a woman freshly delivered, a woman in her monthly illness, a corpse, or on touching any one who has touched any one of these or any one who is the third in contact, the purification is brought about by a bath with the clothes on. Manu V. 84 and Yāj. III. 30 contain similar provisions. The Pr. V. (pp. 495-499) discusses the question whether *sparśa* ²⁶⁰ (touch) means direct touch or includes even indirect touch and ultimately arrives at the conclusion that indirect touch also is included and cites Āpastamba-smṛti in support that if a brāhmaṇa and a *cāṇḍāla* or the like are both seated on the same branch (without actually touching each other) the brāhmaṇa can become purified only by a bath. A verse quoted as Yājñavalkya's by Pr. Prakaraṇa ²⁶¹ p. 110 (not found in the printed text) states: 'on touching a *cāṇḍāla*, *pukkasa*, *mleccha*, *bhilla*, a *pārasika* (one coming from Persia) and the like and persons guilty of grave sins one should bathe with the clothes on.' The Śaṭ-trimśan-mata ²⁶² provides 'on touching

259. पतितचण्डालंस्त्रिकोदकयाश्वस्पृष्टित्स्पृष्ट्युपस्पर्शने सचैलोदकस्पर्शनाच्छुध्येत ।
गौ. 14. 28. The मित्ता. on या. III. 30 reads it as सचैलमुदको and हरदत्त observes that the latter is the better reading.

260. उपस्पर्शो यद्यपि न स्पर्शशब्दस्यार्थः तथाप्यत्र वचनादेकावयविद्वारा परम्परा-
स्पर्शोऽपि ग्राह्यः । तथा चापस्तम्बः । एकशाखां समारूढश्चाण्डालादिर्यदा भवेत् । ब्राह्मणस्तत्र
निवसन् स्नानेन शुचितामियात् ॥ आदिशब्दादुदकयादीनां ग्रहणम् । शाखाग्रहणमेकावयव्यु-
पलक्षणार्थं तेनैकपाशागादेरपि ग्रहणम् । प्राय. वि. p. 496. The verse is आपस्तम्बस्मृति
VII. 14 (reads somewhat differently). It is quoted in प्रा. प्रक. p. 111 also.

261. तत्र याज्ञवल्क्यः । चाण्डालपुक्कसम्लेच्छभिल्लपारसिकादिकान् । महापातकिनश्चैव
स्पृष्ट्वा स्नायात्सचेलकः ॥ प्रा. प्रक. p. 110. This verse is quoted as वृद्धयाज्ञवल्क्य's
by अपरार्क p. 923.

262. षट्त्रिंशन्मतम् । बौद्धान्पाशुपतान्श्चैव लौकायतिकानास्तिकान् । विकर्मस्थान्
द्विजान् स्पृष्ट्वा सचेलो जलमाविशेत् ॥ चैत्यवृक्षश्चितिरूपश्चाण्डालः सोमविक्रयी । पतांस्तु
ब्राह्मणः स्पृष्ट्वा सचेलो जलमाविशेत् ॥ प्रा. प्रक. p. 110, and स्मृतिच. I p. 118 (which
reads पाशुपतान् जैनान् लौकायतिककापिलान्). The first verse is quoted as from
the Brahmanḍa-purāṇa by the मित्ता. on या. III. 30 and by स्मृतिच. I p. 118
(reads शैवान् पाशुपतान् स्पृष्ट्वा and जूदान् for स्पृष्ट्वा) and the 2nd is ascribed to
पराशर by अपरार्क p. 923.

Bauddhas, Pāsupatas, Laukāyatikas, atheists and those who follow forbidden actions, one should plunge in water together with the clothes on. On touching a *caitya* tree (such as a fig tree round which a platform is built), a funeral pile (or brick altar prepared in the śrauta rite called Agnicayana), a sacrificial post, a cāṇḍāla, one who sells the soma plant, a brāhmaṇa should enter water with the clothes on.' Samvarta ²⁶³ requires a *dvija* to sip water on touching a shoemaker, a washerman, a *veṇa* (Manu X. 19, 49, one who beats drum &c.), a fisherman, a dancer (*nata*) and Śātātapa ²⁶⁴ provides that if any limb of a *dvija* (except the head) is touched by one who colours clothes, a shoemaker, a hunter, a fisherman, a washerman, a butcher, a *thaka* (*Thug*), an actor, one who allows sexual intercourse in the mouth, a dog, a prostitute allowing men of all varṇas to visit her, an oil-grinder, the keeper of a tavern, an executioner, a village pig or cock, he should wash the limb with water and perform *ācamana*. If the head is touched by any one of these, then he should bathe. In this connection it may be noted that Hemādri quotes (on p. 38) the Garuḍapurāṇa and (on p. 316) Parāśara for the 16 castes in a village that were treated as cāṇḍālas in the matter of touch, speech or sight. Devala (q. by Hemādri on prāyaścitta p. 312) says that Cāṇḍāla and Turuṣka (Turk) are equally low. The chapter on untouchables in the 2nd vol. of the H. of Dh. pp. 165-179 may be consulted in this connection. On pp. 175-176 of the same work references are given to verses of Atri, Śātātapa, Bṛhaspati and others stating that no purification is required on the ground of untouchability in the case of religious festivals and marriage processions, in battle, in the case of fire or invasion and similar calamities. By no stretch of imagination can these verses be restricted to the untouchability arising from death or birth as some propose

263. चर्मरं रजकं वेणं धीवरं नटमेव च । एतान् स्पृष्ट्वा द्विजो मोहादाचामेत् प्रयतोऽपि सन् ॥ संवर्त q. by प्राय. वि. pp. 472-473.

264. रजकश्चर्मकृच्चैव व्याधजालोपजीविनौ । निर्णेजकः सौनिकश्च ठकः शैलूषकस्तथा ॥ मुखेभगस्तथा श्वा च वनिता सर्ववर्णगा । चक्री ध्वजी वध्यधाती ग्राम्यशूकरकुट्टौ । एभिर्ददङ्गं संस्पृष्टं क्षिरोवर्जं द्विजातिषु । तोयेन क्षालनं कृत्वा आचान्तः शुचितमियात् ॥ ज्ञातातप q. by प्राय. वि. p. 473 and स्मृतिच. I p. 119. The word ठकः explained by प्राय. वि. as धूर्तः may be noted as the original word for the modern word 'Thug'. The word स्मृतिच. reads नटः for ठकः and explains as जातिविशेषः. रजकश्चर्मकारश्च नटा वरुडो एव च । कैवर्तमेदभिल्लाश्च स्वर्णकारश्च सौविकः (सौविदः ?) ॥ कारुको लोहकारश्च शिखीभदी च नापितः । तक्षकस्तिलयन्त्री च सूनश्चक्री तथा ध्वजी । एते षोडशधा प्रोक्ताश्चाण्डाला ग्राम्यवर्जिनः । गरुडपुराण q. by हेमाद्रि (on प्रा. p. 38 and also पराशर on p. 316.)

to do. The words are too sweeping for this explanation and there being no untouchability on birth for any one except the mother and persons in mourning not being likely to join religious festivals and marriage processions those verses cannot be so construed.

The smṛtis were very keen on keeping a high ideal before brāhmaṇas as regards receiving gifts. The Sāma. Br. (I. 7. 1-2) prescribes that if a brāhmaṇa receives a gift from a kṣatriya when not in distress (or difficulty) he should eat only one meal by day for a month and recite the Sāma verse 'mahat tat somo mahiṣaścakāra' (Sāmaveda I. 6. 1. 5. 10, No. 542) for one month, while standing in water and if he accepts a gift from any one else from whom he should not accept it, he should undergo *kṛcchra* penance and recite the sāma verse 'trikadrukeṣu' (Sāmaveda I. 5. 2. 3. 1, No. 457). Yāj. I. 140 provides that a brāhmaṇa should not accept a gift from a king who is parsimonious (or greedy) and acts against the dictates of śāstra and Manu XI. 194 (= Viṣṇu Dh. S. 54.24) provides that a brāhmaṇa becomes free from the sin of the acceptance of a thing which should not be accepted or of the acceptance of a gift from a condemned donor by reciting the Gāyatrī three thousand times (in a month) or subsisting on milk alone or staying in a cowpen for a month. It may be noted that Manu X. 102-103 and Yāj. III. 41 allow a brāhmaṇa when in distress to accept a gift from anybody or to take food from anyone whatever or to maintain himself by teaching any one whatever and state that he is not tainted by sin in so doing, since he is like fire and water (like that of the Ganges) and since it is unreasonable (or impossible) to assert that what is pure can be sullied. Manu X. 109, however, regards acceptance of a gift from an unworthy (or low) person as worse than teaching an improper person or officiating for him. A brāhmaṇa was not to sell things declared to be unfit to be sold by him such ^{264 a} as sesame, oil of sesame, curds, bees' wax (kṣaudra), salt, grapes, wine, cooked food, female or

264 a. अथाविक्रेयविक्रयप्रायश्चित्तानि । शङ्खलिखितौ । न विक्रीयादविक्रेयाणि । तिलतैलदधिक्षौद्रलवणद्राक्षामद्यमांसकृतास्त्रीपुरुषहस्त्यश्ववृषगन्धरसक्षौमकृष्णाजिनसोमोदकनीलीविक्रयात् सद्यः पतति ब्राह्मणस्तत्र प्रायश्चित्तमकामावासौ कामकृतेत्येके पतितौ ह्यात्मानमुद्धरेत् । संवत्सरं तप्तकृच्छ्रमाचरेत् । कृतवापनः शुचिरपोभ्युपेयात् त्रिरेकाद्रवासाः काष्ठमौनी वीरासनमासीत रात्रौ दिवा तिष्ठेद्यत्कोऽग्निः कार्यपरः (शिकार्यपरः ?) सावित्रीं सप्तधा पूजयेत् । जपेत्स्रव्यं व्रतमभ्युपगम्य कुशचीरवासा मौञ्जी मेखली दण्डी पवित्रपाणिर्हविष्यं वा भैक्षमदुष्टं वा यात्रिकमश्नीयात् द्वादशरात्रं चोपवासो ब्राह्मणतर्पणं गवाहिकमित्येवं न्यथा पतितः शिष्टैरसंभाष्यः शुद्धधर्मेति । प्रा. प्रकाश folio 127b.

male slaves, elephants, horses, bulls, fragrant substances, liquids, silken cloth (kṣauma), black antelope hide, soma plant, water, indigo; by selling these he at once incurs sin. As penance he should practise *Tapta-kṛcchra* for a year after tonsuring his head, he should enter water thrice, wear only one wet piece of cloth, should observe silence, should practise the *Virāsana*, should sit up at night and stand by day, should recite the *Gāyatrī*.

One important matter dealt with by a few of the *smṛtis* and some of the digests is the re-admission into the Hindu fold of those who were converted by force by the invading *mlecchas*. About the meaning of the word *mleccha*, there is some divergence of views. From the *Śat. Br.* (III. 2.1. 23-24) it appears that the *mlecchas* spoke a degraded and corrupt speech (such as saying 'helavaḥ' for 'heṣrayaḥ'). *Parāśara* (IX. 36) refers to the *mlecchas* as the eaters of cow's flesh. The *Pr. T.* (p. 549) quotes a *smṛti* ²⁶⁵ text to the effect that a *mleccha* is an eater of cow's flesh and talks much that is contradictory, and cites a passage from the *Harivaṃśa* for the manner of the dress and of the trimming of hair in the case of *Śakas*, *Yavanas*, *Kāambojas*, *Pāradas*, *Pahlavas* &c. Vide for *mleccha* and for the return to the Hindu fold of those that were forcibly carried away as slaves by *mlecchas* and robbers or made to kill cows or to eat the flesh of asses, camels, village pigs, H. of Dh. vol. II. p. 92, 383-385, 389-392 (where verses of *Devala* ascribed by some like the *Mit.* to *Āpastamba-smṛti* are set out), 973-974. A few matters not dealt with there may be added here. The *Viṣṇudharmottara* ²⁶⁶ *purāṇa* (II. 73. 203-206) provides that when persons are kidnapped by *mlecchas* or raiders or persons passing through forests are so treated and return to their own country, the penances for purifying them from the sin of eating forbidden food are to be prescribed after considering their class (*varṇa*), viz. that a

265. गोमांसखादको यश्च विरुद्धं बहु भाषते । सर्वाचारविहीनश्च म्लेच्छ इत्यभिधीयते ॥
बोधायन q. by प्रा तत्त्व p. 549; रायमुकुट as q. by प्राय. मुक्तावली (folio 104 b)
reads गो. ...भक्षको यस्तु अपशब्दं च भाषते । सदाचारविहीनश्च०; सगरः स्वां प्रतिज्ञां च
गुरोर्वाक्यं निशम्य च । धर्मं जघान तेषां वै वेषान्यत्वं चकार ह ॥ अर्धं शकानां शिरसो मुण्डं
कृत्वा व्यसर्जयत् । यवनानां शिरः सर्वं काम्बोजानां तथैव च ॥ पारदा मुक्तकेशाश्च पल्लवाः
श्मश्रुधारिणः । निःस्वाध्यायवषट्काराः कृतास्तेन महात्मना ॥ शक्रा यवनकाम्बोजाः पारदाश्च
विज्ञापते । कोलिसर्पा समहिषाः दार्द्याश्चोलाः सकेरलाः ॥ सर्वे ते क्षत्रियास्तात धर्मस्तेषां
निराकृतः । हस्तिंश्च, हस्तिंश्चपर्व 14.15-19 q by प्राय. तत्त्व p. 549.

266. म्लेच्छैर्हृतानां चौरैर्वा कान्तारे वा प्रवासिनाम् । भक्ष्याभक्ष्याद्विमुक्त्यर्थं तेषां
वक्ष्यामि निष्कृतिम् ॥ पुनः प्राप्य स्वदेशं च वर्णानामनुपूर्वशः । कृच्छ्रस्यापि वादनात् पुनः
संस्कारमर्हति ॥ पादोनान्ते क्षत्रियस्तु अर्धार्धं वैश्य एव च । पादं कृत्वा तथा यदा दत्तं दत्त्वा
विशुध्यति ॥ विष्णुधर्मोत्तर II. 73.203-206.

brāhmaṇa should undergo half kṛcchra penance and should have the Upanayana performed again, a kṣatriya should undergo three-fourths of Kṛcchra (and also upanayana), a vaiśya one-fourth Kṛcchra and a śūdra becomes pure by undergoing only $\frac{1}{4}$ of a kṛcchra and by making a gift. In view of the fact that Manu VIII. 169, Viṣṇu Dh. S. VII. 6-7, Yāj. II. 89 declare that what is given by force, what is enjoyed by force and what is caused to be written by force and all transactions whatever that are brought about by force are void, and the burning desire of many people forcibly converted in times of disturbances to return to the Hindu fold and to the religion of their forefathers, the movement now called *suddhi* should be encouraged by all interested in the well-being and stability of Hindu society. It is better to call this return by the name of 'parāvartana'. A model but brief rite for the *parāvartana* of those who were forcibly converted or for those who voluntarily left the Hindu fold but want to return to it is given in the Appendix. The same *prayoga* with suitable changes may be employed for taking into the Hindu fold any one who was not born a Hindu. In ancient times such people appear to have been taken into the Hindu fold by the performance of *Vrātyastoma*. For this latter, vide H. of Dh. vol. II pp. 385-387 and for the spread of Hinduism in Java, Bali, Sumatra, Siam and other countries of South-East Asia, vide H. of Dh. vol. III. pp. 934-935. Recently, through the kindness of Dr. J. M. Unvala, I had an opportunity of reading several inscriptions of the 18th and 19th centuries at the fire temple called Jvālāji at Suruhani near Baku, the capital of Russian Azerbaijan, situated on the northern shore of the Caspian sea, which were inscribed by Hindu pilgrims or visitors, that begin with obeisance to Ganeśa and in one of which occurs the verse quoted below.²⁶⁷

Manu XI. 124 (= Viṣṇu Dh. S. 38.7) prescribes the penance of Sāntapana for committing with full knowledge any of the deeds described above as *jātibhramśakara* and the penance of Prājāpatya for doing it unintentionally. For doing any of the deeds called *saṅkarīkaraṇa* or *apātrīkaraṇa* described above, Manu XI. 125 prescribes the penance of cāndrāyana for a month and for doing any of the deeds called *malāvaha* prescribes that the perpetrator should scald himself with barley gruel for three

267. श्लोकः। देवयज्ञे व्रते तीर्थे सत्पात्रब्रह्मभोजने। पित्र्यश्राद्धे जटीहस्ते धनं
व्रजति धर्म्यताम्॥

days. Those two verses of Manu occur in Agnipurāṇa (170. 23-25). Viṣṇu Dh. S. (39.2, 40.2, 41.5) prescribes somewhat different penances for saṅkarikarāṇa, apātrikarāṇa or malinikarāṇi deeds. Vide also the Mit. on Yāj. III. 290 for the penances prescribed for these deeds by Yama and Bṛhaspati. About miscellaneous *pātakas* the rule laid down by Manu XI. 209, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 42.2, Yāj. III. 294 and others is that the penance should be prescribed by the brāhmaṇas after taking into account the nature of the deed, the ability of the perpetrator and other circumstances of time and place &c.

Some of the digests prescribe certain times for the performance of penance. The first rule is laid down by Hārta that having done something sinful or improper through trustfulness, affection, greed, fear or heedlessness one should resort to purification at once. Dakṣa²⁶⁸ II. 73 also states that all *naimittika* and *kāmya* matters must be performed as they fall due and no delay should be caused. If more than a year is allowed to pass after the sin is incurred the penance would have to be double of what it otherwise would have been, according to Devala and Manu.^{268a} The Pr. T. (pp. 474, 512) quotes a verse from the Vyavahāra-cintāmaṇi²⁶⁹ and an astrological work to the effect that a penance or ordeal should not be administered on the 8th or 14th *tithi* of a month, nor should an ordeal or marriage take place on a Saturday or Tuesday. The Prāyaścittenduṣekhara (p. 15) says that according to respectable people (*śiṣṭas*) the *saṅkalpa* (declaration of undergoing a penance) should be made on the 14th *tithi* and the actual rite should be performed on the *amāvāsya*. If the guilty person is in mourning he may perform penance after the period of mourning is over.

The procedure for undergoing penances for sins and lapses prescribed by the assembly of learned men has varied in details from time to time. The Gaut. Dh. S. 26.6-17 prescribes

268. नैमित्तिकानि काम्यानि निपतन्ति यथा यथा । तथा तथा हि कार्याणि न कालं तु विलम्बयेत् ॥ दक्ष II. 73 q. by प्रा. तत्त्व p. 512.

268 a. यथा स्मृतिसागरे देवलः । कालातिरेके द्विगुणं प्रायश्चित्तं समाचरेत् । द्विगुणं राजदण्डं च दत्त्वा शुद्धिमवाप्नुयात् ॥ कालातिरेके संवत्सरातिरेके । संवत्सराभिर्निरुद्धस्य द्विगुणो दमः । इति मनुवचने । प्रा. तत्त्व p 474. This is मनु VIII.374.

269. 'तस्माद्विश्रम्भात् स्नेहात् लोभाद्भयात्प्रमादाद्वा अशुभं कृत्वा सद्यः शौचमारभेत्-इति हारीतेन सद्यःकरणमुक्तम् । अत्रापि व्यवहाराचिन्तामणौ विशेषः । नाष्टम्या न चतुर्दश्यां प्रायश्चित्तपरिक्षणे । न परीक्षा विवाहश्च शनिभौमदिने तथा ॥ प्रा. तत्त्व p. 474. The words 'तस्मात्...चरेत्' (for आरभेत्) are quoted from हारीत by मद्. पा. 703-704.

the method of performing Kṛcchra penance. It is briefly as follows: The sinner desiring to be free of sin quickly should stand by day and sit up by night (i. e. should take sleep in a sitting position and not lie down), he should speak the truth and should not hold conversation with *anāryas* (śūdras &c.), should bathe thrice in the day, should perform *mārjana* (splashing or sprinkling water on the head and other limbs by means of *kuśas* dipped in water after repeating sacred mantras) with the three verses 'āpo hi śthā' (Rg. X.9.1-3), with the verses called Pavitravatī and with the eight verses beginning with 'hiraṇyavarṇāḥ śucayaḥ pāvakāḥ' (Tai. S. V. 6.1.1-8). Then he should perform the *tarpaṇa* ²⁷⁰ (satiating with water) with thirteen mantras beginning with *namaḥ* and ending with *namaḥ* (each respectively containing 6, 4, 4, 13, 2, 2, 2, 6, 5, 2, 2, 6, 2 names of deities). This constitutes for him the worship of Āditya (the Sun) and he offers oblations of clarified butter with these thirteen *mantras* and, after he passes twelve days in this way, on the 13th he offers nine oblations of boiled rice to Agni, Soma, Agni and Soma, Indra and Agni, Indra, the *Viśve Devas*, Brahman, Prajāpati, Agni Sviṣṭakṛt. Then he serves dinner to brāhmaṇas. The Āp. Dh. S. II. 6.15.9 states ²⁷¹ the general rule that in all religious observances one should give dinner to brāhmaṇas that are pure (in conduct) and that have studied the Veda. The Baud. Dh. S. (II. I. 95-99) prescribes that in a kṛcchra penance one has to bathe thrice in the day, to lie down on the ground (not on a cot &c.), to wear only one piece of cloth, to shave one's hair on the head, the moustache and the body and to pare one's nails, and that the same mode is prescribed also for women (sinners) except the tonsure of the head. Manu (XI. 222-225) prescribes that in all penances there is *homa* with the mahāvvyāhṛtis every day, the sinner has to practise *ahiṃsā* (non-injury to all sentient beings), truthfulness, absence of anger and straight forwardness, has to bathe thrice by day and thrice by night together with the clothes on, he should not talk with women, śūdras and *patitas*, he should stand by day and sit down at night or if unable to do so he should sleep on the ground (raised platform called *sthaṇḍila*), should observe celibacy and the rules of a student, such as wearing girdle of *muñja* grass and carrying a staff (of *palāśa* &c.), should honour gods, brāhmaṇas and his elders, should always recite the Gāyatrī and sacred texts

270. For the usual tarpaṇa, vide H. of Dh. vol. II. pp. 689-695.

271. शुचीन्मन्त्रवतः सर्वकृत्येषु भोजयेत्। आप. ध. सू. II. 6. 15. 9.



Vas. 24.5 (a long prose passage) contains similar provisions. Yāj. III. 312-13 are very important. They prescribe the practice of certain virtues and rules of conduct called *yamas* (such as *brahmacarya*, kindness, forbearance, truthfulness, *ahimsā* &c.) and *niyamas* (such as bath, silence, fasting, purity of body &c.) as necessary adjuncts in all penances. The Laugākṣigṛhya (V. 3-11) prescribes the procedure for all penances. Yāj. III. 325 holds that one should, while performing the penance of *kṛcchra* or *cāndrāyana*, bathe thrice daily, recite holy mantras (as stated in Vas. 28.11-15) and should eat balls of rice over which the *Gāyatrī* has been recited. Śāṅkha²⁷² (18.12-14) also summarises the different items that have to be gone through in undergoing a penance. The Madanapārijāta (pp. 781-784), Pr. V. (pp. 503-506), Pr. Sāra (pp. 21, 22 and 200-203), Pr. T. pp. 497-510, 523-524, Pr. Mayūkha pp. 18-21, Pr. Prakāśa (folios 38b to 43b), Prāyaścittenduśekhara (pp. 15 and 88) and other works provide elaborate rules about the procedure of undergoing *prāyaścittas*. It is not possible nor necessary to set out these in detail here. Briefly put, on the day previous to the actual day of commencing penance the sinner should pare his nails, shave his head, bathe with clay, cow-dung, holy water &c., drink clarified butter, make a declaration of performing the penance indicated by the assembly of learned men. On the next day he should bathe, perform *śrāddha*, drink *pañcagavya*, should perform *homa*, give *dakṣiṇā* (gold, cows &c.) to the *brāhmaṇas* and feed them. Parāśara (XI. 3) says that at the end of the rite of penance *pañcagavya* should be taken and one, two, three or four cows should be donated respectively by a *brāhmaṇa*, a *kṣatriya*, a *vaiśya* and a *śūdra*. Yama (verse 63) says that *brāhmaṇas* should be fed on the performance of a penance and a *dakṣiṇā* of one golden *māṣa* should be given to each *brāhmaṇa*. Jābāli says that at the beginning and close of all penances the sinner should offer in the *smārta* fire oblations of clarified butter to the accompaniment of the *Vyāhrtis*, perform *śrāddha* and offer *dakṣiṇā* consisting of a cow or gold. Vide Aparārka (p. 1230) and Par. M. II part 2 p. 195 for Jābāli's verses. The Pr. Prakāśa (folio 30a) adds that according to the Mahārṇava the number of *vyāhrti-homas* should be 28 or 108.

272. मुण्डस्त्रिषवणस्नायी अधःशायी जितेन्द्रियः। स्त्रीशूद्रपतितानां च वर्ज्यन्त-
भाषणम्॥ पवित्राणि जपेच्छकृत्या जुहुयाच्चेव शक्तिः। अयं विधिः स विज्ञेयः सर्वदा। शङ्ख 18. 12-14, which are a'most the same as the last two
विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 46.

A few words may be said about the tonsure of the head (*vapana* or *muṇḍana*). The Tai. Br. (I.5.6.1-2) states²⁷³: 'The Asuras first shaved the hair on the head, then the moustache and then the armpits; therefore they went down (or with face downwards) and were defeated, while the gods first shaved the armpits, then the moustache and then the hair on the head.' The Pr. Prakāśa quotes this passage in a mutilated form and then states that *vapana* is of three kinds, *daiva* (of the gods), *āsura* (of the *asuras*) and *mānuṣa* (of men), that the *āsura* method is condemned, that in consecrating the Vedic fires, in the *istis* and *soma* sacrifices the *daiva* method is ordained, while in *prāyaścittas*, there being no special *vidhi*, there is an option. Tonsure of the head is enjoined on several occasions e. g. the Viṣṇupurāṇa provides: ²⁷⁴ 'Tonsure should be carried out at Prayāga when on a pilgrimage, and on the death of one's father or mother; one should not in vain (lightly) tonsure the head'. To these occasions may be added penances. The idea seems to have been entertained that whatever sin a man commits it becomes centered in the hair, as a verse quoted by the Madanapārijāta and Pr. M. states. ²⁷⁵ Gaut. (27.3), Vas. ²⁷⁶ (24.5), Baud. Dh. S. (II.1.98-99) and others provide for the tonsure of the hair on the head and lips (except those on the eye-brows, the hair on the trunk and the top knot). Exceptions were introduced to the rule about tonsure. Dakṣa²⁷⁷ forbade tonsure, the offering of *piṇḍas* and the carrying of a corpse and all funeral rites to

273. तेऽसुरा ऊर्ध्वं पृष्ठेभ्यो नापश्यन् । ते केशानग्रेऽवपन्त अथ इमश्चूणि अधोपपक्षौ । ततस्तेऽवाञ्च आयन् पराभवन् । यस्यैवं वपन्ति अवाङ्मेति ।...अथ देवा ऊर्ध्वं पृष्ठेभ्योऽपश्यन् । ते उपपक्षौ अग्रेऽवपन्त अथ इमश्चूण्यथ केशान् । सुवर्गं लोकमायन् । ते ब्रा. I. 5.6. 1-2 (about the *vapana* of a *Cāturmāsya-yājīn*); वपनं त्रिविधं दैवमासुरं मानुषं चेति । आसुरं निन्दितं मानुषदैवयोर्विकल्पः । आधानेष्टिसोमेषु दैवस्य विहितत्वात् । प्रायश्चित्तेषु तु विशेषविध्यभावाद् विकल्प एव । प्रा. प्रकाश folio 31 b.

274. प्रयागे तीर्थयात्रायां पितृमातृवियोगतः । कच्चानां वपनं कार्यं न वृथा विकचो भवेत् ॥ विष्णुपुराण q. by प्राय. तत्त्व p. 489.

275. यानि कानि च पापानि ब्रह्महत्यासमानि च । केशानाश्रित्य तिष्ठन्ति तस्मात्केशान्वपाम्यहम् ॥ इति मन्त्रमुक्त्वा कक्षोपस्थशिखावर्जं क्रमेण इमश्चूपपक्षकेशानुदकसंस्थान् वापयेत् । यतिविधवादीनां सशिखं वपनम् । ब्रह्महत्यादिष्वपि सशिखं सर्वाङ्गलोम्नां च । प्राय. म. p. 19.

276. कुच्छ्राणां व्रतरूपाणि इमश्चुकेशान् वापयेद्भ्रुवोक्षिरोमशिखावर्जम् । वसिष्ठ 24.4-5 ; कुच्छ्रे त्रिषवणमुदकोपस्पर्शनम् । अधः शयनम् । एकवस्त्रता । केशइमश्चूलोमनखवापनम् । एतदेव स्त्रियाः केशवपनवर्जम् । बौ. ध. सू. II. 1. 95-99. The *mita*. on या. III. 325 reads वसिष्ठ as इमश्चुकेशादे वापयेत् कुक्षिरोमशिखावर्जम् । ; should it not be अक्षिरोम-

277. मुण्डनं पिण्डदानं च प्रेतकर्म च सर्वशः । न जीवत्पितृकः कुर्याद् गुणिनिर्वातितं चेति दक्षीयनिषेधस्य रागप्राप्तविषयत्वाद् विधिस्पृष्टे निषेधानवकाशात् । प्रा. प्रकाश folio 31 b.

one whose father was alive and to a man whose wife was pregnant. But this prohibition did not apply to penances. The Baud. Dh. S. already referred to prohibits the tonsure of women in penances. Āngiras 163, Āpastamba-smṛti I. 33-34, Brhad-Yama IV.16, Vṛddha-Hārta IX. 386, Parāśara IX. 54-55, Yama 54-55 provide ²⁷⁸ that in the case of married women whose husbands are alive and in the case of maidens all their hair should be held together and only two finger-breadths of hair should be cut off. In the case of widows and ascetics the entire head was to be shaved. It was further provided by Parāśara (IX 52-54), Śaṅkha (q. by Par. M. II. part I, pp. 290-291) that in the case of a king or prince or a learned brāhmaṇa tonsure of the head should not be insisted upon, but that they should have to undergo double the usual penance and the *dakṣiṇā* would have to be double. ²⁷⁹ The Mit. on Yāj. III. 325 quotes a verse of Manu ²⁸⁰ (not found in the printed text) 'tonsure of the head is not desired in the case of learned brāhmaṇas and kings except in the case of those guilty of mahāpātakas, of cow-killing or of being an *avakīrṇin*'. The Mit. (on Yāj. III.264) further quotes Samvarta ²⁸¹ to the effect that when the penance prescribed is only a quarter then only the hair on the body below the throat is to be shaved, when half is prescribed then in addition the hair on the lips is to be cut, when three-fourths then all the hair on the body except the knot is to be cut and in the case of the full penance all hair including the *śikhā* (the top-knot) also are to be cut off. The Par. M. (II part 1. p. 300) while describing cāndrāyana penance requires the cutting of the hair on all parts

278. सर्वान्केशान् समुद्धृत्य छेदयेदङ्गुलिद्वयम्। एवं नारीकुमारीणां शिरसो मुण्डनं स्मृतम्। न स्त्रियाः केशवपनं न दूरे शयनाशनम्॥ पराशर IX. 54-55.

279. केशानां रक्षणार्थाय द्विगुणं व्रतमाचरेत्। द्विगुणे व्रत आदिष्टे द्विगुणा दक्षिणा भवेत्। राजा वा राजपुत्रो वा ब्राह्मणो वा बहुश्रुतः। अकृत्वा वपनं तस्य प्रायश्चित्तं विनिर्दिशेत्। पराशर IX. 52-54, नारदपुराण, पूर्वार्ध 14.52-54; for the half केशानां, vide वृद्धहारीत IX. 387. The मित्ता. on या. III. 325, प्राय. वि. p. 503, प्राय. सा. p. 22, मद. पा. p. 782 quote these verses as हारीत's in a different order and प्राय. तत्त्व. p. 519 ascribes almost similar verses to लघुहारीत.

280. विद्वद्विप्रवृषस्त्रीणां नेष्यते केशवपनम्। ऋते महापातकिनो गोहन्तुश्चावकर्मिणः॥ मनु. q. by मित्ता. on या. III. 325, प्राय. सा. pp. 22-23 (as महर्षि). The प्राय. तत्त्व. p. 516 expressly refers to this text as cited by the मित्ता.

281. पादेऽङ्गरोमवपनं द्विपादे श्मश्रुणोऽपि च। त्रिपादे तु शिखावर्जं सशिखं तु चिपादे॥ संवर्त q. by मित्ता. on या. III 264, प्राय. म. p. 14, प्रा. प्रकाश folio 31a, which remarks: 'शिखावर्जमिति शिखावतामेव तेन यतिविधवादीनां सर्ववपनमेव। यतिविधवा सशिखं वपनं चरेदिति वचनाच्च।'



of the body (including private parts).²⁸² The tonsure is to be performed by a barber and yet the *saṅkalpa* is 'vapanam karisyē' and not 'vapanam kārayisyē'. From Gaut. 27.3 (vapanam vratam caret) prescribing tonsure in cāndrāyana Haradatta and others infer that *vapana* is unnecessary in kṛcchra penance.

Baths that are subsidiary to prāyaścitta are performed with ashes, cowdung, clay, water, pañcagavya and water in which *kuśa* grass has been dipped. *Mantras* that are to be recited at the time of bath are laid down in the *Linga-purāṇa*, the *Bhaviṣyapurāṇa* and elsewhere.

There are certain virtues to be cultivated as being common to all prāyaścittas whether secretly or openly undergone. They are called *yamas* and *niyamas* and have been set out above (p.121) from Yāj. III. 312-313. Atri (verses 48-49) sets them out somewhat differently. Manu IV. 204 (= Atri verse 47) refers to *yamas* and *niyamas* which Medhātithi explains as follows: viz. *yamas* are in the nature of prohibitions (e. g. a brāhmaṇa should not be killed), while *niyamas* consist of what is to be done (such as one should always recite the Veda, as in Manu IV. 147).

While undergoing prāyaścittas certain rules about food and other matters were to be observed. For example, Hārīta²⁸³ prescribes that the person undergoing penance should omit on all days *māṣa* and *masūra* pulse, honey, taking food at the house of or belonging to others and sexual intercourse, should not speak at an improper time, should perform *ācamana* if he speaks with women or śūdras or those who are *ucchiṣṭa*. Yama ordains that one who is undergoing a penance should omit massaging the body or head with oil, the chewing of *tāmbūla*, applying unguents and every thing else that causes one to feel strength or sexual passion.

According to the Pr.²⁸⁴ Prakāśa when undertaking a penance one should begin with the mantra 'Agne vratapate

282. पौर्णमास्यामुपेतस्तु ब्राह्मणः सुसमाहितः। केशश्मश्रूणि लोमानि कक्षोपर्यं च वापयेत् ॥ q. by परा. मा. II. part 1 p. 300.

283. माषमसूरमधुपराक्षमैथुनानि प्रत्यहं वर्जयेत्। व्रतोपेतो नाकाले वाचं विसृजेत्। स्त्रीशूद्रोच्छिष्टाभिभाषण आचामेत्। हारीत q. by अपरार्क p. 1230; गात्राभ्यङ्गं शिरोभ्यङ्गं ताम्बूलमनुलेपनम्। व्रतस्थो वर्जयेत्सर्वं यच्चान्यद्बलरागकृत् ॥ यम q. by परा. मा. II. part 2 p. 196.

284. व्रतनिवेदनविमोचनमन्त्रौ तैत्तिरीयशाखायां अग्रे व्रतपते व्रतं चरिष्यति तदुक्तं केयं तन्मे राधयताम्, अग्रे व्रतपते व्रतमचारिषं तदुक्तं तन्मे राधि इति तु व्रतसमाप्तौ ॥ प्रा. folio 37 b; अग्रे...राधयताम् is तै. सं. I 5.10.3 = वाज. सं. I.5 and अग्रे व्रतपते व्रतमचारिषं is तै. सं. I.6 6.3 = वाज. सं. II.28.



vrataṃ carisyāmi' (O! Fire, lord of vrataṣ! I shall perform a vrata) and when finishing a penance one should repeat the mantra 'agne vratapate vrataṃ-acāriṣam tad-aśakam tan-me rādhi' (O! Fire, lord of vrataṣ; I have performed the vrata, I had the strength to do it, may it be propitious for me &c.').

Prāyaścittas are of two kinds, *prakāśa* (undergone openly) and *rahasya* (undergone secretly). A few words must be said about the latter. Gaut. (24.1-11), Vas. (25.1-3), Manu XI. 248-265, Yāj. III. 301-305, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 55 and other smṛtis lay down rules about secret prāyaścittas. Where a man's²⁸⁵ sin is not known to anyone except himself he may perform secret expiation. In the case of adultery and in the case of association with one guilty of a grave sin, one may still perform a secret penance, even though the adultery is known to the adulteress and even though the man guilty of a mahāpātaka is aware of the association. Vas.²⁸⁶ 25.2 states the general rule that secret penances are meant for those who have consecrated the Vedic fires, who are disciplined, old or learned and that the openly undergone penances are meant for others. If such a man is himself aware of the proper penance, he should perform it without going to an assembly (*parṣad*), but if he is not so aware he may consult some knowing person privately, asking him in a general way what the penance for a particular sin may be. Vas. 25.3 provides that those who are always intent on *prāṇāyāmas*, holy texts, gifts, *homas* and *japa* are released from sin. Manu XI.226 states that those whose sins have not become public may be purified by *homas* and *mantras*. Even women and *śūdras* can perform penance in secret, since, though they cannot perform *homa* and repeat Vedic *mantras*, they can, as the Mit. on Yāj. III.300 says, perform expiation by means of gifts and *prāṇāyāmas*. Gaut. 26.2 and Manu XI. 253 prescribe that one who desires to receive a gift which he should not accept or who receives such a gift should recite in water (navel-deep according to some) the hymn of four verses beginning with 'tarat

285. हारीतोऽप्याह । अथ ब्राह्मणस्य श्रुतधर्मशास्त्रस्य रहस्यमनुक्रमिष्यामः । रहस्ये रहस्यं प्रकाशे प्रकाशमिति । प्राय. सा. p. 161, परा. मा. II. part 2 p 153; ^{वसिष्ठ} प्रा. सार p. 161 and प्राय. वि. p. 500 for रहस्ये...प्रकाशमिति as from यम.

286. आहिताग्नेर्विनीतस्य वृद्धस्य विदुषोऽपि वा । रहस्योक्तं प्रायश्चित्तं पूर्वोक्तमित्यत्र जनाः ॥ प्राणायामैः पवित्रैश्च दानैर्होमैर्जपैस्तथा । नित्ययुक्ताः प्रमुच्यन्ते पातकेभ्यो नृसंसृजः ॥ वसिष्ठ 25. 2-3 ; the first verse is q. by अपराक p. 1212 as from चतुर्विंशतिपाद Research Institute reads इतरस्य तु).

sa mandī' (Rg. X.58.1-4). For one who is guilty of brāhmaṇa murder Gaut. (24.6) prescribes that for the first ten days he should subsist on milk alone, on clarified butter for a further ten days, on water for another period of ten days, that he should partake of the articles specified only once in the morning, should wear wet clothes and should offer every day eight symbolic *homas* with clarified butter, of his hair on the body, nails, skin, flesh, blood, muscles, bones and marrow with the words 'I offer in the mouth of Death' added at the end.²⁸⁷ Yāj. III.301 prescribes that the murderer of a brāhmaṇa should fast for ten days, should recite the Aghamarṣaṇa hymn (Rg. X.190) while submerged in water, donate a cow yielding milk, while Viṣṇu prescribes that he should bathe for a month in a flowing stream or river, should perform every day 16 prāṇāyāmas, should eat only once a day sacrificial food and may then become purified. Viṣṇu provides that the drinker of *surā* becomes pure by observing the *vrata* (as stated) for brāhmaṇa murder and reciting Aghamarṣaṇa; while the thief of brāhmaṇa's gold becomes pure by fasting for three days and reciting the sacred Gāyatrī ten thousand times and one guilty of incest by the repeated recital of the hymn beginning with 'sahasraśīrṣā' (Rg. X. 90).

The sages observed that some of the penances mentioned in old smṛtis were terrible and involved loss of life. Therefore, gradually more humane and easier penances came to be prescribed. For example, Hārīta²⁸⁸ states 'brāhmaṇas who have studied dharmaśāstra should prescribe a penance appropriate to the age, the time and the strength of the brāhmaṇa (sinner), the penance being such that he may not lose his life and yet may be purified; one should not prescribe an observance that will cause great distress (to the sinner). Angiras also says that the *parṣad* should indicate the penance resolved upon by all the members which would not cause loss of life. Śaṅkha

287. हरदत्त on गौ. 24.6 explains that he will have to say लोमानि आत्मनो मुखे मृत्योरास्ये जुहोमि स्वाहा नखान्यात्मनो मुखे मृत्योरास्ये जुहोमि स्वाहेत्येवंप्रकारा होमाः.

288. यथावयो यथाकालं यथाप्राणं च ब्राह्मणे । प्रायश्चित्तं प्रदातव्यं ब्राह्मणैर्धर्मपाठकैः ॥ येन जुद्धिमवाप्नोति न च प्राणैर्विशुज्यते । आर्तिं वा महतीं याति न चैतद् वतमादिशेत् ॥ हारीतः q. by परा. मा II. part 1 p. 235 ; पर्वत्संचिन्त्य तत्सर्वं प्रायश्चित्तं विनिर्दिशेत् ॥ सर्वेषां निश्चितं यत्स्याद्यच्च प्राणान् न घातयेत् ॥ अङ्गिरसः q. by परा. मा. II part 1 p. 236, मव पा. p. 779,



declares:²⁸⁹ 'a brāhmaṇa should never practise the performance of a penance in a forest full of thieves, ferocious beasts, elephants and other animals through fear of injury to life. The body that is the all in all (i. e. the only source) of (the observance of) dharma must be protected with efforts; just as water oozes down from the mountain, so dharma springs from the body'.

As times changed easier substitutes (called *pratyāmnāyas*) were found and prescribed. The word *pratyāmnāya* was used in this sense in the Āp. Śr. S. V. 20.18 (*yadyanādhyo-gnīn-ādadhīta kāmam-evaikām gām dadyāt sā gavām pratyāmnāyo bhavātī vijñāyate*), 6. 30.9 and Śān. Śr. S. 14.51.6 and other sūtras. Samvarta²⁹⁰ states that if a sinner is unable to undergo the Prājāpatya penance, he may donate instead a cow yielding milk and if he cannot donate such a cow he may donate the full price of such a cow. Parāśara²⁹¹ (XII. 63-64) provides four substitutes for a Prājāpatya penance viz. the recital of the famous Gāyatrī mantra (Rg. III. 62.10) ten thousand times or 200 prāṇāyāmas, or bathing twelve times in a sacred watery place after drying the head on each bath, or taking to a journey of two *yojanas* towards a holy place. From the words of Gaut. 19.16 and 18 (quoted above in note 120) it follows that gold is a substitute for a cow by way of penance. The Brahmapurāṇa²⁹² provides that in the absence of a cow a *niṣka* or half *niṣka*

289. तस्करश्चापदाकीर्णे बहुव्यालमृगे वने । न व्रतं ब्राह्मणः कुर्यात्प्राणबाधाभयात्सदा । शरीरं धर्मसर्वस्वं रक्षणीयं प्रयत्नतः । शरीरात्स्रवते धर्मः पर्वतात्सलिलं यथा । शङ्ख 17. 63 and 65 q. by मद. पा. 728, अपरार्क p. 1231 (which inserts one more verse between the two (सर्वतो जीवितं रक्षेज्जीवन्पापं व्यपोहति । व्रतैः कुच्छ्रैस्तथा दानैरित्याह भगवान्यमः ॥)). This is शङ्ख. 17.64.

290. प्राजापत्यव्रताशक्तौ धेनुं दद्यात्पयस्विनीम् । धेनोरभावे दातव्यं तुल्यं मूल्यं न संशयः ॥ संवर्त q. by परा. मा. II. part 2 p. 197, प्रा. सार. p. 203, प्राय. तत्त्व pp. 517 and 541. The मिता. on या. III. 326 quotes this verse as स्मृत्यन्तर and adds another half as 'मूल्यार्धमपि निष्कं वा तदर्थं शक्त्यपेक्षया'. The verse is q. from मार्कण्डेयपुराण by अपरार्क p. 1248.

291. प्राजापत्यकुच्छ्रस्य चतुरः प्रत्याम्नायानाह कुच्छ्रं देवयुतं चैव प्राणायामशतद्वयम् । पुण्यतीर्थेऽनार्द्रशिरःस्नानं द्वादशसंख्यया ॥ द्वियोजने तीर्थयात्रा कुच्छ्रमेकं प्रकल्पितम् ॥ पराशर XII. 63-64 and परा. मा. II part 2 p. 47.

292. मूल्यं च यथाशक्ति देयम् । अत एव ब्रह्मपुराणे गवामभावे निष्कं स्यादित्यर्थः पाणिनेव वा । परा. मा. II part 2 p. 197, प्रा. सार p. 203. The मिता. on या. III. 326 quotes it without name.

or a quarter niṣka may be given. The Caturviṃśatimata²⁹³ provides several *pratyāmnāyas* for Prājāpatya viz. recital of Gāyatrī ten thousand times, standing in water, gift of a cow to a brāhmaṇa—these four (including Prājāpatya) are equal, as also a thousand *homas* with sesame, recitation of the whole *saṃhitā* of the veda, feeding twelve brāhmaṇas, Pāvakeṣṭi are equal. The Caturviṃśatimata²⁹⁴ stated that one should substitute the gift of one cow for Prājāpatya penance, of two cows for Śānta-pana, of three cows for Parāka, Tapta-kṛcchra and Ati-kṛcchra and eight for Cāndrāyana. The result was that from medieval times at least even in the case of mahāpātakas there was a sliding scale of penances ultimately ending in feeding brāhmaṇas or making monetary or other presents to them. For example, the Mit. (on Yaj. III. 326) says that in the case²⁹⁵ of the twelve years' penance, optionally 360 prājāpatyas could be performed, each prājāpatya extending over twelve days, that if a man was unable to undergo this he should donate as many (i. e. 360) milch cows, if that was impossible he may donate their price or 360 niṣkas or even half or quarter thereof &c. Yāj. III. 309 provides (a lakh of) *homas* with sesame to the accompaniment of the Gāyatrī or making brāhmaṇas recite the Veda by the gift of sesame. Vas. 28.18-19 (=Atri VI. 7-8) and Viṣṇu Dh. S. 90.10 state that by feeding seven or five brāhmaṇas on the Full moon of Vaiśākha with sesame and honey a man becomes free of all sins. These provi-

293. कुच्छोऽयुतं च गायत्र्या उदवासस्तथैव च । धेनुप्रदानं विप्राय सममेतच्चतुष्टयम् । तिलहोमसहस्रं तु वेदस्याध्यायमेव च । विप्रा द्वादश वा भोज्याः पावकेष्टिस्तथैव च । अन्यानि वा पवित्राणि समान्याहुर्मनीषिणः । चतुर्विंशतिमत q. by परा. मा. II. part 2 p. 47 and also p. 196 (with some variations), प्रा. मयूख p. 26. The मित्ता. on या. III. 326, प्रा. सार p. 204 ascribe the first verse to पराशर and the latter reads उपवासः for उदवासः. There are similar verses in the षट्त्रिंशन्मत also (vide प्रा. सार p. 204).

294. प्राजापत्ये तु गामेकां दद्यात्सान्तपने द्वयम् । पराकतप्तातिकृद्धे तिस्रस्तिस्रस्तु गास्तथा ॥ अष्टौ चान्द्रायणे देवाः प्रत्याम्नायविधौ सदा । यथा विभवसारेण दानं दद्याद्वि- ह्युद्धये । चतुर्विंशतिमत q. by परा. मा. II part 2 p. 200, अपरार्क p. 1248, प्रा. सार p. 204 (first verse).

295. न च महापातकमनुकृतिनिष्कृतिकं सम्भवति कस्मादनुकृतिनिष्कृतिकेऽपि प्राजापत्यादयो योजनीयाः । तत्र द्वादशवार्षिकव्रते द्वादश द्वादश दिनान्येकैकं प्राजापत्यं परिकल्प्य गण्यमाने प्राजापत्यानां षष्ठ्यधिकशतत्रयं द्वादशवार्षिके वैकल्पिकमनुष्ठेयं भवति । तदशक्तौ तावत्यो वा धेनवो दातव्याः । तदसम्भवे निष्काणां षष्ठ्यधिकशतत्रयं दातव्यम् । तथा स्मृत्यन्तरम् । प्राजापत्य ...मूल्याधर्मपि निष्कं वा तदर्थं शक्यपेक्षया । गवामभावे निष्कः स्यात्तदर्थं पाद एव वा इति स्मरणात् । मित्ता. on या. III. 326. The प्रा. प्रकाश says 'सुवर्णचतुष्टयसमतोलितं रूपं निष्क इत्यर्थः' (folio 62 b). This is the view of the Prāyaścitta-muktāvali (folio 17 a) which remarks, 'तथा च धरण-पुराण-कार्षापणशब्दा अन्योन्यं पर्याया भासन्ते'.



sions are maintained in almost all medieval works such as the *Smṛtyarthasāra* pp. 149, 155, *Prāyaścittasāra* p. 203, *Pr. T.* pp. 517, 541, *Pr. Mayūkha* p. 18 &c. The same method is followed in penances for lesser periods. It is due to this provision in the *smṛtis* that in modern times men, when on death-bed, perform *prāyaścittas* for all their sins by donating a cow or more or by monetary presents to priests.^{295a}

Some interesting sidelights are thrown on the prices of milch cows, cows and bulls by the medieval writers. The *Pr. V.* (p. 199) states that the price of a milch cow (*payasvinī*) was 3 *purāṇas*, that of an ordinary cow (*go*) one *purāṇa* and that of a bull was five *purāṇas*. The *Pr. T.* (pp. 517-18) quotes *Kātyāyana* to the effect that the price of a cow (*go*) is 32 *pañas* and that of a male calf one *purāṇa*, that a *pañā* is copper weighing 80 *raktikās* or equal to 80 *varātakas* (cowries), that 16 *pañas* were equal to one *purāṇa* (following *Bhaviṣya* and *Matsya purāṇas*), that by *niṣka* is not meant the one indicated by *Manu* (VIII. 137) but a *dīnāranīṣka* i. e. gold weighing 32 *raktikās*. The *Prāyaścittendusekhara* p. 7 follows *Yāj. I.365* and holds that *niṣka* is silver equal (in weight) to four *suvarṇas* or a *pala*. A *raktikā* weighs on an average 1.8 grains; so a copper *pañā* of 80 *raktikās* would weigh about 144 grains. Therefore a *dhenu* was equal to 32 *pañas* (or two *purāṇas*) i. e. about 26 *tolas* of copper (one *tola* being taken as equal to 180 grains). Vide H. of Dh. vol. III pp. 120-121 notes 161 and 162 for information about ancient coins and their weights. There appears to be owing to lapse of centuries some difference in the views of several writers. According to *Vijñāneśvara* four *suvarṇas* are equal to a silver *niṣka*. According to the *Lilāvati* 20 *varātakas* are equal to a *kākinī*, 4 *kākinīs* are equal to a *pañā* and a *niṣka* is equal to 256 *pañas*.

295a. There was a parallel to this method of *pratyāmnāya* in Europe as remarked by Gibbon 'A year of penance was appreciated at 26 *solidi* of silver, about four pounds sterling, for the rich, at 3 *solidi* or nine shillings for the indigent; and these alms were soon appropriated to the Church which derived from the redemption of sins an inexhaustible source of opulence and dominion' *Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire*, vol. VII. p. 187 (Smith's ed. of 1862).



CHAPTER V

NAMES OF ALL PRĀYAŚCITTAS

Now all the prāyaścittas mentioned in the smṛtis and digests will be arranged in alphabetical order (Sanskrit, transliterated into English), excepting mere hymns, fasts, &c. and brief explanations and references will be added to each.

AGHAMARŚANA—(The hymn Rg. X.190.1-3).

This is prescribed as a penance for all sins by even the most ancient Dharmaśāstra works such as Gaut. 24.11, Baud. Dh. S. IV. 2.19-20, Vas. 26.8, Manu XI.259-260, Yāj. III.301, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 55.7, Śaṅkha 18.1-2 and others. They prescribe that if a man recites (for three days, according to Haradatta) the Aghamarśana hymn thrice in the day while immersed in water for a bath, he is freed from all sins and that this penance is equal in sanctification to the bath at the end of the Āsvamedha sacrifice. The Pr. Sāra p. 199 speaks of the Aghamarśana-vrata. He has to fast for three days and stand up by day and sit up by night and donate a milch cow at the end. Śaṅkha 18.1-2 and Viṣṇu Dh. S.46.1-9 prescribe the details.

ATIKRCCRA—Vide under Kṛcchra. Manu XI. 213 prescribes that this penance is constituted by eating only one morsel of food for three days in the morning only, for three days in the evening only, for three days eating one morsel got without asking for it and observing a complete fast for the next three days. Yāj. III.319, on the other hand, prescribes the eating of just as much food as would fill the hand (and not merely one morsel). The Mit., Pr. Sāra (p. 176) and others state that the rule of Manu applies to those who are able to undergo it, while that of Yāj. is meant for those who are unable (*aśakta*). The Sāmavidhāna Br. I.2.6-7, Gaut. 26.18-19, Viṣṇu Dh. S.54.30, Laugākṣigṛhya V.12-13, Parāśara XI.54-55, Vas. 24.1-2, Baud. Dh. S. IV.5.8 also speak of this. Manu XI.208 (= Viṣṇu 54.30) prescribes this penance for striking a brāhmaṇa with a weapon or a cudgel. Gaut. 26.22 states that this penance purifies a man of all sins except the *mahāpātakas*.

ATISANTAPANA—See under Mahā-sāntapana. This is variously defined. According to the Agnipurāṇa 171.10 and Manu Dh. S. 46.21 it lasts for 18 days (3 times of the Mahā-sāntapana) in which for six days one has to subsist on cow's urine and five



other things). The Mit. on Yāj. III. 315 quotes a verse of Yama according to which this penance lasts for 12 days. ²⁹⁶ The Pr. M. (p. 23) speaks of it as lasting for 15 days.

ARDHAKRCCHRA—See under Krcchra. According to the Āpastamba-smṛti 9.43-44, this is constituted by taking food only once in the day for one day, only once in the evening for one day, taking food for two days without asking for it and completely fasting for two days ²⁹⁷ (in all six days). The Mit. quotes another variety of it, viz. subsisting for three days on food obtained without asking for it and thereafter observing a complete fast for three days.

ĀSVAMEDHAVABHARTHASNANA—the ceremonial bath in the sea or a holy river at the end of an Āsvamedha sacrifice. Viṣṇu Dh. S. 36 (last verse) prescribes for those guilty of mahāpātakas and anupātakas the Āsvamedha sacrifice. It is only an emperor or a crowned king who is entitled to perform an Āsvamedha, at the end of which comes a ceremonial bath. Vide H. of Dh. vol. II, pp. 1228-1236 for a description of the Āsvamedha. According to Pr. V. p. 65 only a kṣatriya could perform Āsvamedha and so this bath was a penance for him alone. But according to Kullūka (on Manu XI 92) and Pr. T. (both quoting a verse from Bhaviṣya-purāṇa) even a brāhmaṇa could participate in the bath at the end of the Āsvamedha and become free from the sin of brāhmaṇa murder if committed unintentionally. ²⁹⁸

AGNEYA KRCCHRA—According to the Agnipurāṇa and Viṣṇudharmottara if a man subsists for twelve days on sesame alone that is āgneya Krcchra. ²⁹⁹ Vide also Pr. Pr. (folio 48 b.)

296. यदा तु षण्णां सान्तपनद्रव्याणामेकैकस्य द्व्यहमुपयोगस्तदाऽतिसान्तपनम् । यथाह यमः । एतान्येव तथा पेयान्येकैकं तु द्व्यहं द्व्यहम् । अतिसान्तपनं नाम श्वपाकमपि शोधयेत् ॥ इति । मिता. on या. III. 315, प्राय. सा. p. 191, अपरार्क p. 1234 (reads द्व्यहं त्र्यहम्).

297. सायंप्रातस्तथैकं दिनद्वयमयाचितम् । दिनद्वयं च नाश्नीयात्कृच्छ्रार्थं तद्विधीयते ॥ आपस्तम्बस्मृति 9 43-44 q. by मिता. on या. III. 318, प्रा. वि. p. 509, परा. मा. II part 2 p. 173, प्राय. सा. p. 172.

298. अश्वमेधप्रायश्चित्तं तु राज्ञ एव तत्र तस्यैवाधिकारात् । ...अश्वमेधावभृथस्नाने विप्रस्याप्यधिकारः । तथा च कल्पतरुधृतं भविष्यपुराणम् । यदा तु गुणवान् विप्रो हन्यामिषं तु निशुण्णम् । अकामतस्तदा गच्छेत्स्नानं चेवाश्वमेधिकम् । ततश्चावभृथस्नानं क्षत्रियविप्रयोर्मते प्रायश्चित्तविवेकोक्तं हेयम् । प्राय. तत्त्व p. 544. Vide प्राय. वि. p. 65 for the referred to.

299. तिलैर्द्वादशरात्रेण कृच्छ्रमाग्नेयमार्तिभुत् । अग्निपुराण 171. 14; विष्णुधर्मोत्तरम् in प्रा. प्रकाश folio 48b (reads ० त्र्यहमुच्यते).

RSICANDRĀYANA—According to Brhad-Viṣṇu quoted by Pr. Prakaraṇa p. 132 this penance requires that one should take only three mouthfuls of sacrificial food every day for a month.³⁰⁰

EKABHAKTA—According to Pr. Pr. (folio 48a) if one takes for a month only one meal a day it is ekabhaktaka.³⁰¹

KṚCCHRA—This is the general word for several penances. The Sāma. Br. (I.2 1) starts³⁰² by saying 'we shall now expound three kṛcchras' and adds that one should eat sacrificial food for three days only by day and eat nothing at night, then for three days more one should eat at night only, then for three more days one should not beg or ask for food from others and should then observe a complete fast for three days. If he is in a hurry to purify himself he should pass the day standing and the night in a sitting posture. Gaut. (26.2-16) describes the procedure of the first Kṛcchra (called Prājāpatya by later writers), then Atikṛcchra (26.18-19), and then Kṛcchrātikṛcchra (26.20). Baud. Dh. S. (II.1.91) speaks of Parāka as Kṛcchra. Āp. Dh. S. (I.9.27.7) describes the Kṛcchra penance of twelve days. The Kṛcchra penance described by Gaut. 26.2-16 is one for twelve days and is called Prājāpatya by Manu (XI.211), Śaṅkha (18.3), Yāj. III 319 and others. Laugākṣi Gr. (5.3-11) describes Kṛcchra. According to the Par.³⁰³ M. (II. part 1 p. 30) and Pr. Pr. (folio 64a) the word Kṛcchra without any qualifying epithet (*upapada*) means Prājāpatya. The Pr. T. (p. 481) states that the Kṛcchra described by Gaut. (26.1-5) is given the name of Prājāpatya by Manu (XI. 211). Besides the rules about the intake of food, Gaut. prescribes certain other observances viz. speaking the truth, not holding conversation with

300. तथा बृहद्विष्णुः । त्रींस्त्रीन् पिण्डान् समश्नीयास्त्रियतामा दृढव्रतः । हविष्यान्नस्य वै मासमृषिचान्द्रायणं चरन् । प्राय. प्रक. p. 132. This verse is quoted as Yama's by Pr. V. p. 520, Pr. T. p. 544, प्राय. सा. p. 196 (reads ग्रासान् for पिण्डान्).

301. एकभक्तेन मासेन कथितं वैकभक्तकम् । नक्तकृच्छ्रं तु नक्तेन महत्संवत्सराद्भवेत् । प्रा. प्रकाश (folio 48 a).

302. प्रातराशान् भुक्त्वा तिस्रो रात्रीर्नाश्नीयात् । अथापरं त्र्यहं नक्तं भुञ्जीताथापरं त्र्यहं न कञ्चन याचेदथापरं त्र्यहमुपवसेत् तिष्ठेदहनि रात्रावासीति क्षिप्रकामः । साम. ब्रा. I. 2. 1-4. गौ. (26. 1-6) is word for word the same except that Gaut. omits the word त्रीन् in the first sūtra. अथातस्त्रीन् कृच्छ्रान् व्याख्यास्यामः । हविष्यान् त्र्यहमनक्ताश्च दिवाशी ततस्त्र्यहं त्र्यहमयाचितव्रतस्त्र्यहं नाश्नाति किञ्चनेति कृच्छ्रद्वादशरात्रस्य विधिः । आप. ध. सू. I. 9. 27. 7.

303. स्मृतिशास्त्रेषु निरुपपदस्य कृच्छ्रशब्दस्य प्राजापत्य एव प्राचुर्येण प्रयोगात् कृच्छ्रमिति प्राजापत्यमिति देवलस्मरणाच्च । परा. मा. II. part 1. p. 30.

men and women that are *anāryas* (not of the three higher castes), always singing the *sāmans* called 'Raurava' and 'Yaudhājapa', bathing thrice in the day in the morning, the noon and the night, then performing *mārjana*³⁰⁴ (sprinkling of water) with the three verses beginning with 'Āpo hi ṣṭhā' (Rg. X.9.1-3), with the mantras called 'pavitravati' viz. those beginning with 'pavamānaḥ suvarjanaḥ' (Tai. Br. I 4.8.1) and the eight verses beginning with 'Hiranyavarṇaḥ' (in Tai. S. V. 6.1), he should perform *tarpaṇa* with water with 13 mantras (Gaut. 26.12); he performs the worship of Āditya (the sun) with the same mantra (i.e. after *tarpaṇa* with the 13 mantras, he is to perform the worship of the sun with the same thirteen mantras) and offers oblations of clarified butter with the same 13 mantras and then on the 13th day he cooks boiled rice and offers oblations into ordinary Agni ('svāhā' added at the end of each, such as 'agnaye svāhā'), Soma, Agni and Soma, Indra and Agni, Indra, Viśve devāḥ, Brahman, Prajāpati and Agni Śviṣṭakṛt and then feeds the brāhmaṇas.

Kṛcchra-samvatsara—Āp. Dh. S. I. 9.27.8 speaks of this as a penance in which Kṛcchras are undergone continuously in a cycle for one year.

Kṛcchrātikṛcchra—Gaut. 26.20 and Sāma. Br. I. 2. 8, Vas. 24.3 define it as a kṛcchra where only water is drunk on those days on which food is allowed and Gaut. 26.23 and Sāma. Br. I. 2. 9 state that this penance frees a man from all sins.³⁰⁵ Yāj. III. 320 (= Devala 86, first half) and Brahmapurāṇa q. by Pr. Pr. (folio 40 a) prescribe that in this one has to subsist on water alone for 21 days. This difference between the views of Yāj. on the one hand and of Gaut. on the other is reconciled by the digests by saying that the period depends on the capacity of the sinner. According to Pr. Pr. (folio 46b) and Aparārka p. 1238, Yama prescribed a kṛcchrātikṛcchra for 24 days.³⁰⁶ Vide Par.

304. For *mārjana* vide H. of Dh. vol. II pp 317, 812 n and for *tarpaṇa* the same vol. pp. 668-9, 689-695. Raurava Sāman is sung on the ṛk 'punānaḥ soma dbārayā' (Rg. IX. 107.4=Sāmaveda Nos. 511 and 675) and Yaudhājapa on 'Duhāna ūdhar' (Rg. IX. 107.5=Sāmaveda No. 676).

305. अबभक्षस्तृतीयः स कुच्छ्रातिकुच्छ्रः । ..तृतीयं चरित्वा सर्वस्मादेनसो मुच्यते । गौ. 26, 20, 23; कुच्छ्रोऽबभक्षः स कुच्छ्रातिकुच्छ्रः । वसिष्ठ 24, 3.

306. चतुर्विंशतिरात्रं तु नियतात्मा जितेन्द्रियः । कुच्छ्रातिकुच्छ्रं कुर्वन् एकस्थाने द्विजोत्तमः ॥ यम q. by अपराकं p. 1238, मद. पा. p. 716; महार्गव folio 182 explains: पूर्वोक्तद्वादशाहसाध्यातिकुच्छ्रद्वयेन एकः कुच्छ्रातिकुच्छ्रो भवतीत्यर्थः ।



M. II part 1 p. 179 and Madanapārijāta p. 716. According to Manu XI. 208 (= Viṣṇu Dh. S. 54.30) when a person strikes a brāhmaṇa with a weapon and draws blood, he has to undergo this penance. The Pr. Prakaraṇa (p. 15) states that for those unable to undergo Kṛcchra, one milch cow is a substitute, for Atikṛcchra two milch cows and for Kṛcchrātikṛcchra four.

10 *GOMŪTRA-KṚCCHRA*—The Pr. Sāra p. 187 quotes a verse about this: one should make a cow eat to satiety grains of wheat mixed with barley and then may collect the yava grains that are to be found in her dung and then drink the gruel of those yavas cooked in cow's urine.³⁰⁷

GOVRATA—Pr. Prakaraṇa (p. 132) quoting the Mārkaṇḍeya describes this as follows: One should bathe with cow's urine, should subsist on cow-dung, should always stand among cows, should sit down on cowdung, should drink water only when cows have drunk water; one should not eat when they have not eaten, should stand up when they stand, should sit down when they sit down. This should be continued for a month.

CĀNDRĀYAṆA—The word is derived in this way. That rite, where there is action by means of increase and decrease (in the intake of food) in imitation of the course of the phases of the moon, is cāndrāyaṇa.³⁰⁸ The word occurs in Pāṇ. V. 1. 72 (pārāyaṇa-turāyaṇa-cāndrāyaṇam vartayati). From very ancient times Cāndrāyaṇa has been divided into two varieties, called Yavamadhya³⁰⁹ (lit. being large in the middle like a grain of yava, and therefore tapering or thin at the ends) and Pipīlikāmadhya (lit. having a middle like that of an ant, that is, slender in the middle and large at the ends). Baud. Dh. S. III. 8. 33 names these two varieties. According to Jābali³¹⁰ there are five

307. अ तृप्तिश्चरयित्वा गां गोधूमान्यवमिश्रितान् । तान् गोमयोत्थान् संगृह्य पिबेद्गोमूत्र-
यानकम् ॥ q. by प्राय. सा. p. 187. This is quoted as from योगयाज्ञवल्क्य by महर्षिणा
folio 185a (which reads पचेत् for पिबेत्.)

308. चन्द्रस्यायनमिवायनं चरणं यस्मिन् कर्मणि ह्रासवृद्धिभ्यां तच्चान्द्रायणम् ।
संज्ञायां दीर्घः । मित्ता. on या. III. 323. These very words are quoted in प्राय. सा. (p. 192), प्रा. प्रकाश (folio 50b) and other works. The word should be चन्द्रायण,
but being a technical term the first syllable is lengthened.

309. तदेतच्चान्द्रायणं पिपीलिकामध्यं विपरीतं यवमध्यम् । बौ. ध. III. 8. 33. 'यववत्
प्रान्तयोरणीयो मध्ये च स्थवीय इति' प्राय. सा. p. 192. पिपीलिकावन्मध्ये ह्रासिष्ठं भवतीति
पिपीलिकामध्यमिति कथ्यते' मित्ता. on या. III. 323.

310. पिपीलिकायवमध्यं च यतिचान्द्रायणं तथा । चान्द्रायणं तथा ज्ञेयं चतुर्थं सर्वतो-
मुखम् ॥ पञ्चमं शिशुसाहं च तुल्यपुण्यफलोदयम् । जाबालि q. by दीपकालिका on या. 325
प्राय. वि. p. 517.



varieties of Cāndrāyana viz. Yavamadhya, Pipilikāmadhya, Yaticāndrāyana, Sarvatomukha and Śisucāndrāyana. These will be described later on. Yājñavalkya says (III. 326) that where no specific penance is prescribed in the smṛti texts, cāndrāyana effects purification and cāndrāyana may be undergone not as a penance but for the purpose of accumulating merit and that in the latter case (when performed for a year) the performer enjoys the happiness of going to the world of the moon after death.³¹¹ Manu XI. 221 and Gaut. 27.18 state the same view about cāndrāyana for accumulating merit. When the *vrata* of cāndrāyana is performed for the sake of merit, there is no tonsure (vide Gaut. 27.3 'vapanam vrataṃ caret' and Haradatta thereon). Gaut. 19.20 (= Vas. 22. 20) prescribes that Kṛcchra, Atikṛcchra and Cāndrāyana are the same penance for all sins (collectively for grave sins, for lesser ones separately, according to Haradatta and others). Compare Manu V. 21 and XI. 215 (= Baud. Dh. S. IV. 5. 16). Manu XI. 27, Yāj. III. 323, Vas. 27.21, Baud. Dh. S. IV. 5.18 and others define Cāndrāyana (of the Yavamadhya type) as follows: On the first day of the bright half of a month only one morsel of food (*grāsa* or *piṇḍa*) is taken, on the second *tithi* two and so on; on the full moon (Purnamāsī) 15 morsels are taken; then on the first of the dark half 14 morsels, one being reduced on each succeeding day. So on the 14th of the dark half only one morsel is eaten and on the Amāvāsyā there is a complete fast. Here in the middle of the month of thirty days the largest number of morsels is taken (and so this is Yavamadhya) just as on the Purnamāsī day the moon becomes full and begins to wane from the next day. Here Purnamāsī is in the middle of the period of the observance as Viṣṇu Dh. S. 47.6 says. If one begins the *vrata* on the first *tithi* of the dark half, he reduces one morsel on the 1st i. e. takes 14 morsels on that day, 13 on the 2nd *tithi* of the dark half and so on. On the 14th of the dark half he eats one morsel and on the amāvāsyā he eats nothing. Then on the 1st of the bright half he takes one morsel and goes on increasing the intake till on the Purnamāsī he takes 15 morsels. The month is taken in this latter case to be Pūrṇimānta. Here in the middle of the observance there is no food taken and a large number of morsels is taken at the beginning and at the end. So this is called Pipilikāmadhya. This latter is described by Vas. 23.45

311. अनादिष्टेषु पापेषु शुद्धिश्चान्द्रायणेन तु । धर्मार्थं यश्चरेदेतच्चन्द्रस्यैतं सलोकतामप्नोति ॥ या. III. 326; संवत्सरं चाप्त्वा चन्द्रमसः सलोकतामाप्नोति । गौ. 27. 18.

and Manu XI. 216. Viṣṇu Dh. S. 47.5-6 say : Yasyāmamāvāsyā madhye bhavati sa pipīlikā-madhyah yasya paurṇamāsī sa yavamadhyah. If there are 14 or 16 tithis in any particular pakṣa (half of a month) then the number of *grāsas* must be regulated accordingly. There are other descriptions of cāndrāyana. Vide Haradatta on Gaut. 27.12-15. The Kalpataru appears to have held (explaining two verses of Jābāla) that on the first of the dark half of a month 15 morsels were taken, then one morsel less was taken on each succeeding tithi; so that on amāvāsyā one morsel was eaten, then on the first of the bright half two morsels were eaten and one morsel was added every day so that on the 14th of the bright half fifteen morsels were taken and there was a complete fast on Paurṇamāsī. But this seems to be opposed to the very idea of increase and decrease of the intake of food on the analogy of the waxing and waning of the Moon and to several smṛti texts such as Vas. 23.45 and Parāśara X. 2. Therefore the Pr. Prakāśa (folio 58b) finds fault with it.^{311a} Cāndrāyana may be divided from another point of view into two varieties : (1) *MUKHYA* (in the primary sense, viz. following exactly the waxing and waning of the moon) and *GAUNA* (having a secondary or metaphorical sense). The former is either *yavamadhya* or *pipīlikā-tanumadhya*), while the latter is of four kinds, viz. *sāmānya*, *ṛṣi-cāndrāyana*, *śisucāndrāyana* and *yaticāndrāyana*. The last two will be described later. The *Sāmānya* (or *sarvatomukha*) consists in eating only 240 morsels of sacrificial food in a month of 30 days, distributing them according to one's choice (not necessarily in imitation of the phases of the moon) as stated by Manu XI.220, Baud. IV. 5.21, Yāj. III. 324 and the Mit. (on Yāj. III. 324), the Madana-pārijāta and other works. Here the penance, though it is not regulated by the phases of the moon, is called Cāndrāyana for the purpose of prescribing the same procedure and observances in it as in the Cāndrāyana which follows the phases of the moon. Here the Mīmāṃsā rule of Kuṇḍapāyinām-ayana applies.³¹² From the words of Gautama

311a. अत्र कल्पतरुव्याख्यानम् । एकैकं द्वासयेद् ग्रासमिति कुष्णप्रतिपदि पञ्चदशग्रासानाम् एकैकाय च येनामावास्यायामेको ग्रासः । तदनन्तरं प्रतिपदि द्वौ ग्रासौ एवं वृद्धिक्रमेण चतुर्दश्यां पञ्चदशग्रासाः संपद्यन्ते पौर्णमास्यां चोपवास इति पिपीलिकातनुमध्यं चान्द्रायणम् । प्राय. वि. p. 519.

312. अत्रायं क्रमः । दिने दिनेष्टौ ग्रासान् भुञ्जीत, अथवा नक्तं चतुरो दिवा चतुर इति । अथैकस्मिन्दिने चतुरोऽपरस्मिन् द्वादश तत्रैकरात्रमुपोष्यापरस्मिन् षोडश । यद्वा दिन-द्वयमुपोष्य तृतीयादिने द्वात्रिंशदित्यादिप्रकाराणां मध्ये शक्यपेक्षया भुञ्जीतेति । अत्र तिथ्यपेक्षया

(Continued on the next page)



Bhandarkar Oriental
Research Institute

27.12-15 it appears that he envisaged a cāndrāyana of 32 days (pipilikāmadhya) or 31 days, when he says that the performer should fast on the 14th of the bright half, eat fifteen morsels on the Full Moon day, then reduce it by one morsel, so that there is a total fast on the amāvāsyā and then on the first of the bright half one morsel is taken until on the full moon 15 morsels are taken. Thus from the 14th of the bright half (when there is a complete fast) to the full moon of the succeeding month there are in all 32 days and the penance is of the pipilikā-madhya type.

As regards the size of the morsels, different views are expressed. Gaut. 27.10 and Viṣṇu Dh. S. 47.2 prescribe that the size of a morsel shall be such as not to cause a distortion of the mouth (while swallowing it). Yāj. III. 323 allows that the morsels may be as large as the egg of a peahen, and Parāśara X.3³¹³ prescribes the size of a hen's egg and Sāṅkha that of an undried āmalaka fruit (*myrobalan*). The Mit. explains that Gautama's words apply to boys and young people and that the other sizes confer an option according to the capacity (śakti) of the man undergoing penance. The procedure of cāndrāyana is described in Gaut. 27.2-11, Baud. III.8, Manu XI.221-225, Vṛddha-gautama chap. 16 and other works. The one given by Gautama, being probably the oldest among Dharmaśāstra works, is here set out.

The general rules prescribed for the Kṛcchra penance in Gaut. 26.6-11 are applicable to Cāndrāyana also. If it is performed as a penance the performer must tonsure his hair and observe a fast on the day preceding the Full Moon. He offers libations of water, oblations of clarified butter, consecrates the sacrificial food and worships the moon, reciting 'āpyāyasva' (Rg. I. 91. 17), 'san te payāmsi' (Rg. I. 91. 18). He shall offer clarified butter, reciting the four (ṛks) beginning with 'yad devā devahedanam' (Vāj. S. 20.14 or Tai. Br. II. 6. 6.1). These

(Continued from the last page)

ग्रासनियमो नास्ति उपक्रमस्तु शुक्लकुण्डप्रतिपदोरन्यतरत्र एव कर्तव्यः। मद्. पा. p. 743; अत्र तु चत्वारिंशदधिकशतद्वयग्रासानां मासेन यथाकथञ्चिद्भक्षणं तत्र चन्द्रगत्यनुविधानाचरणभावेन चान्द्रायणशब्दः कुण्डपायिनामयने अग्निहोत्रशब्दवत्तद्धर्मप्राप्त्यर्थो गौण इति। प्रा. मुद्रापाय-
folio 56b. Vide मद्. पा. p. 743 for the maxim of the Agnihotra in Kuṇḍapaya-
ināmayana and Jai. VII. 3. 1, where शबर says 'कुण्डपायिनामयने श्रूयते ग्रास-
मग्निहोत्रं जुहोतीति। तत्रैतत्समधिगतं नैयमिकादग्निहोत्रात्कर्मान्तरमेतदिति। अधुना आग्निहोत्र-
शब्दाश्चिन्त्यन्ते।...नैयमिकस्याग्निहोत्रस्य ये धर्मास्तेऽस्मिन्नेन नाम्नातिदिश्येरन्। १७.

313. कुकुटाण्डप्रमाणं तु ग्रासं वै परिकल्पयेत्। पराशर. X.3; vide also प्राय. म. p. 211

four together with the preceding are seven oblations of clarified butter that have to be offered. At the end of the offering of clarified butter he shall offer pieces of sacred fuel while reciting the (eight) texts beginning with 'devakṛtasya' (Vāj. S. VIII. 13). Each mouthful must be consecrated by (mentally) reciting one of the ³¹⁴ following words 'om bhūh, bhuvaḥ, svaḥ, tapaḥ truth, fame, prosperity, vigour, refreshment, strength, lustre, brightness, soul, dharma and śiva' ³¹⁵; or he may consecrate all of them at once saying 'adoration! svāhā'. The sacrificial food must be one of the following: boiled rice, food obtained by begging, ground barley, grain separated from the husk, barley gruel, vegetables, milk, sour milk, clarified butter, roots, fruits and water. Among these each succeeding one is preferable to that enumerated earlier.

JALA KṚCCHRA—See under Toyakṛcchra.

TAPTAKṚCCHRA—There is great divergence of views about this penance. Manu XI. 214, Vas. 21.21, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 46. 11, Baud. Dh. S. IV. 5.10, Śaṅkha-smṛti 18.4, Agnipurāṇa 171. 6-7, Atri verses 122-123, Parāśara IV. 7 speak of it as of 12 days' duration comprising four periods of three days each. In this one drinks hot water, hot milk, hot ghee for three days each and then for three days there is a complete fast when he inhales hot vapour or atmosphere (acc. to Manu XI. 214). Manu adds that the performer has to bathe only once (and not thrice as in some other penances) and that he should practise self-control. Yāj. III. 317 (= Devala 84) speaks of this as of four days' duration, viz. he takes hot milk, hot ghee and hot water for one day each and observes a total fast on the 4th day. The Mit. on Yāj. III. 317 calls this *mahātapta-kṛcchra* and also mentions a *taptakṛcchra* of two days, viz. on the first day the sinner takes all the three, viz. hot water, hot milk and hot ghee and observes a total fast on the 2nd day. The Pr. Prakāśa (folio 50a) remarks that the authority for the two days' taptakṛcchra spoken

314. Haradatta says that on the days when the performer eats less than fifteen morsels, the counting is to be from the beginning and the later mentioned texts must be left out and that, while eating, the performer must employ the Prāṇāhuti mantras, viz. 'prāṇāya svāhā, apāṇāya svāhā'.

315. The words of the Mantras are 'ओं भूभुवः स्वस्तपः सत्यं यज्ञः श्रीस्तुतिर्वाज-
स्तेजो वर्चः पुरुषो धर्मः शिव इत्येतैर्ग्रासानुमन्त्रणं प्रतिमन्त्रं मनसा । नमः स्वाहेति वा सर्वम् ।'
गौ. 27. 8-9; some MSS omit वर्चः.



of by the Mit. has to be found out. The Pr. Prakāśa refers to a *tapta-kṛcchra* for 21 days. It may be said, as done by the Pr. Prakāśa, that the penance of *tapta-kṛcchra* for twelve days is meant for great sins and that the one for four days is meant for lesser sins. The quantity of water, milk and ghee, that was to be taken is laid down by Parāśara ³¹⁶ IV. 8, Atri 123-124 and Brahmapurāṇa (q. by Pr. V. p. 511) viz. that hot water, hot milk and hot ghee should be six *palas*, three *palas* and one *pala* respectively. The Brahmapurāṇa adds that water, milk and ghee are to be taken respectively in the evening, morning and noon.

TULĀPURUṢA KṚCCHRA—Jābāli speaks ³¹⁷ of the duration of this penance as eight days; Śaṅkha (18.9-10) and Viṣṇu Dh. S. 46.22 describe one of ten days where oil-cake, the foamy scum of cooked rice, butter-milk, water and barley meal are to be eaten, each respectively on one day, followed by a fast on the next day. Yāj. III. 322 (= Atri verses 129-130) describes one of 15 days where the above five ingredients are eaten for three days each. Yama on the other hand speaks of Tulāpuruṣa for 21 days, when the five things are separately eaten for three days (vide Mit. on Yāj. III. 322). Aparārka pp. 1239-1241, Par. M. II. part 2 pp. 184-189, Madanapārijāta pp. 718-727, Pr. Sāra pp. 179-181 set out at length the mode of the performance of Tulāpuruṣa as a penance. In this penance two images of the performer made of fragrant *uśīra* grass were to be prepared and placed in the pan of a balance a span high made either of gold or silver or sandalwood and were to be weighed against pebbles and placed in another pan and worship was to be offered to Mahādeva and Umā and many other subordinate deities such as Agni, Vāyu, the sun.

316. षट्पलं तु पिबेदम्भस्त्रिपलं तु पयः पिबेत् । पलमेकं पिबेत्सर्पिस्तसकृच्छ्रं विधीयते ॥ पराशर IV. 8 (B. S. series) vol. II part 1 p. 26. It may be noted that the Mit. on Yāj. III. 317, the Pr. Sāra p. 136 read पराशर's verse as 'अपां पिबेत्तु त्रिपलं द्विपलं तु पयः पिबेत् । पलमेकं पिबेत्सर्पिस्त्रिरात्रं चोष्णमारुतम् ।' and that the Mit. explains 'त्रिरात्रमारुतस्य पूरणे उष्णोदकवाष्पं पिबेदित्यर्थः' । The मद्. पा. pp. 735-736 contains both these verses and ascribes both to पराशर. According to Yāj. I. 363-64 a *pala* is equal to 4 or 5 *suvarṇas* and a *suvarṇa* is equal to 80 *kṛṣṇa*las (guṇjas) in weight.

317. तत्र जाबालिः । पिण्याकं च यथाचामं तक्रं चोदकसक्तवः । त्रिरात्रमुपवासश्च तुलापुरुष उच्यते ॥ q. by मा. सार p. 178, परा. मा. II. part 2 p. 183.



TOYA-KṚCCHRA—This is also called Varuṇa-kṛcchra by Yama (q. in Pr. Prakāśa, folio 48 a) and by Śaṅkha (q. in Pr. Sāra p. 182). Viṣṇu Dh. S. (46. 14) states ³¹⁸ that subsisting on nothing but ground barley mixed with water for one month is called *Udakakṛcchra*. Since Varuṇa was regarded as the lord of waters even from the times of the Rgveda (e. g. in Rg. VII. 49. 3) and to mark the truth and falsehood among men, this Toya-kṛcchra was called Vāruṇa. The Pr. Prakāśa (folio 47 b)³¹⁹ quotes Jābāla to the effect 'If a sinner remains immersed in water for a whole day and night without taking food and recites mantras (addressed to Varuṇa) he removes by the *jalakṛcchra* the sins which he may have committed for a year'. According to Yājñavalkya (q. in Pr. Sāra p. 187) this penance consists in observing a fast for a day and night standing up the whole day and passing the night without sleep in water and reciting the next day the sacred Gāyatrī mantra 1008 times. According to Śaṅkha (q. by Madana-pārijāta p. 737) this penance is constituted either by subsisting on lotus stalks grown in water or on *saktus* boiled in water.

DADHIKṚCCHRA—This is spoken of by the Pr. Prakāśa quoting from the Viṣṇudharmottarapurāṇa as a penance in which the sinner subsists on curds alone for a month.³²⁰

DEVAKṚCCHRA—Yama quoted by Par. M. (II. part. 2 pp. 191-192) describes this as follows ³²¹: One should partake

318. उदकसक्त्तूनां मासाभ्यवहारेणोदककृच्छ्रः । विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 46. 14 ; 'विसान्युदकसिद्धानि मासमश्नीत संयतः । सक्त्तून्वा सोदकान्मासं कृच्छ्रो वारुण उच्यते ॥' शङ्ख q. by बालम्भट्टी on या. III. 318, प्रा. सार. pp. 186-87.

319. अनश्नञ्जलमध्यस्थस्त्वहोरात्रं जपन्बुधः । संवत्सरकृतं पापं जलकृच्छ्रे व्यपोहति ॥ जाबाल q. by प्रा. सार p. 187, प्रा. प्रकाश folio 47 b, where it is said जपश्च वारुणमन्त्राणाम् ; as to योगियाज्ञवल्क्य 'वायुभक्षो दिवा तिष्ठेद्वात्रिं नीत्वाप्सु सूर्यदृक् । सहस्राष्टाधिकं जप्त्वा गायत्रीं जलसंज्ञकः ॥', vide द्वितीयेह्नि सूर्ये दृष्ट्वाष्टोत्तरसहस्रगायत्रीजपं कृत्वा पारणं कुर्यादिति । प्रा. सार p. 187. This is q. by प्रा. प्रकाश folio 47 b. The first half is या. III. 311.

320. विष्णुधर्मोत्तरे । दध्ना क्षीरेण तत्रेण पिण्याकाचामकैस्तथा । शाकैर्मासं तु कार्याणि स्वनामानि विचक्षणैः ॥ प्रा. प्रकाश folio 48a.

321. यवागूं यावकं शाकं क्षीरं दधि घृतं तथा । इयहं इयहं तु प्राश्नीयाद्वायुभक्षस्यहं परम् । मरुद्भिर्वसुभी रुद्रैरादित्यैश्चरितं व्रतम् । व्रतस्यास्य प्रभावेन विरजस्का हि तेऽभवन् ॥ कृच्छ्रं देवकृतं नाम सर्वकल्मषनाशनम् । यम q. by परा. मा. II. part 2 pp. 191-192 and by प्रा. सार. pp. 183-184 (which omits the last verse मरुद्भिः). लौगाक्षिगृह्य VI. 3 reads 'यवागूं...शाकं पयः सर्पिः कुशोदकम् । इयहं...इयहम् ॥'. देवपाल explains 'यवागूरपासिततुण्ययम् सम्पाद्या जेयप्राया प्रासिद्धा यावकोपि तद्वत्स तु भक्तप्रायः कठिनः.'

of only rice gruel, barley gruel, vegetables, milk, curds, ghee each for a period of three days in succession and then should observe a complete fast for three days; this is called *Devakṛta* (performed by the gods) penance and destroys all sins. It was practised by the Maruts, the Vasus, Rudras, and Ādityas. By the power of this penance they became free from *rajas* (impurity). Thus this penance lasts for 21 days. The Pr. Prakāśa (folio 48 b) refers to another variety of it and quotes a long prose passage on it, which is passed over here for want of space.

DHANADAKṚCCHRA—See under *Vāyavya-kṛcchra*. According to the *Viṣṇudharmottara* ³²² (q. by Pr. Prakāśa) this penance consists in subsisting for a month on food just sufficient to fill the extended but hollowed palm, mixed with gold (i. e. in which gold is rubbed or boiled).

20 *NITYOPAVĀSA KṚCCHRA*—The Pr. Prakāśa (p. 48 a) states that this is constituted by a man eating only twice in the day (in the morning and evening) for six years and not drinking even water between the two meals. ³²³

PAÑCAGAVYA—For the various details connected with *pañcagavya* prepared from cow's urine, dung, milk, curds and ghee, vide H. of Dh. vol. II. pp. 773-774. *Pañcagavya* is to be offered into fire with the mantras 'Irāvati' (Rg. VII. 99.3), 'idam Viṣṇur' (Rg. I. 22. 17), 'mā nastoke' (Rg. I. 114. 8), 'Śam no devir' (Rg. X. 9. 4) and then the remainder is to be drunk. It is to be drunk with the middle of a sprig of three *Palāśa* leaves or with a lotus leaf. Manu. XI. 165 (= Agnipurāṇa 169. 30) prescribes this drinking of *pañcagavya* as the penance for petty thefts. Similarly, Yāj. III. 263 prescribes that one guilty of killing a cow should drink *pañcagavya* for a month. The Mit. on Yāj. III. 263 quotes Viṣṇu to the effect that one who kills a cow should perform one of three penances, viz. drinking three *palas* of *pañcagavya* every day for one month or undergoing the penance of *Parāka* or *Cāndrāyana*. ³²⁴ Though Viṣṇu 54. 7 and Atri (verse 300) state that a *brāhmaṇa*

322. वाजप्रसूतिमप्येकां कनकेन समन्विताम्। शुभ्रानस्य तथा मासं कृच्छ्रं धनददैवतम्॥
विष्णुधर्मोत्तर q. by प्रा. प्रकाश folio 48 b.

323. सायं प्रातश्च शुभ्रानो नरो यो नान्तरा पिबेत्। षड्भिर्वर्षैरिदं प्रोक्तं कृच्छ्रं नित्योप-
वासिता॥ प्रा. प्रकाश p. 48a.

324. गोधनस्य पञ्चगव्येन मासमेकं पलत्रयम्। प्रत्यहं स्यात्पराको वा चाण्डालोऽपि वा॥ विष्णु q. by मिता. on या. III. 263 and परा. मा. II. part 1 p. 243 (which reads मासमेकं निरन्तरम्। प्राजापत्यं पराको वा).

drinking *surā* and a *śūdra* drinking *pañcagavya* both went to hell (Mahāraurava, according to Viṣṇu), yet Devala (verse 61) and Parāśara XI. 3 and 27 and medieval works like the Pr. M. (p. 13) and Śūdrakamalākara (p. 42) allowed *śūdras* to take *pañcagavya* without Vedic *mantras*. And women of all *varṇas*, being treated like *śūdras* for certain purposes, were also allowed optionally to do the same.

PATRAKṚCCHRA—Vide Parna-kūrca below.

PARAKA—Manu XI. 215 (= Baud. Dh. S. IV. 5.16), Yāj. III. 320 (= Śaṅkha 18.5 = Atri 128), Agnipurāṇa 171, 10, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 46. 18 and Br. ³²⁵ prescribe that this penance is constituted by not taking any food for twelve days, while the performer controls his senses and remains vigilant, and that this penance removes all sins.

PARNAKŪRCA—This is a more severe type of *patra-kṛcchra*. Yāj. III. 316 (= Devala 83) and Śaṅkha-Likhita ³²⁶ define *Parnakṛcchra* as one where the leaves of *palāśa*, *udumbara*, *lotus*, and *bilva* are boiled separately on each day in succession and the decoction of each is drunk on each day separately and then water in which *kuśas* have been dipped is drunk. Thus *parnakṛcchra* is a penance of five days. The Mit. on Yāj. III. 316 quotes a verse of Yama to the effect that when a sinner fasts for three days and nights and thereafter he drinks together the decoctions of all the four and *kuśa* water on the same day then the penance is called *parnakūrca*. The Par. M. (II. part 2 p. 181)³²⁷ regards *Parnakūrca* as a variety of *Parnakṛcchra*. Vasistha, Jābali and Atri (116-117) make *Parnakṛcchra* a penance of six days by adding the leaves of *Aśvattha* to the five mentioned above. Viṣṇu Dh. S. 46. 23 mentions another variety of *Parnakṛcchra* for seven days. ³²⁸

325. जपहोमरतः कुर्याद् द्वादशाहमभोजनम् । पराक एष विख्यातः सर्वपापप्रणाशनः ॥ बृह q. by प्राय. वि. p. 515.

326. शङ्खलिखितौ—पद्मबिल्वपलाशोदुम्बरकुशोदकान्येकैकमभ्यस्तानि पर्णकृच्छ्रः । मद्. पा. p. 733, दीपकालिका on या. III. 317; while अपरार्क p. 1234 reads एकैकमभ्यस्तानि पर्णकृच्छ्रः समस्तान्येतानि त्रिरात्रेणोपयुक्तानि च पर्णकृच्छ्रः (0 कृच्छ्रः?) The मद्. पा. p. 734 reads पर्णकृच्छ्रः.

327. तथा वसिष्ठः । पद्मोदुम्बरपलाशबिल्वश्वत्थकुशानामुदकं पीत्वा षड्रात्रेणैव क्षुध्यति । प्रा. प्रक. p. 128.

328. कुशपलाशोदुम्बरपद्मशङ्खपुष्पीवदब्रह्मसुवर्चलानां पत्रैः कथितस्याम्भसः प्रत्येकं (प्रत्यहं?) पानेन पर्णकृच्छ्रः । विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 46. 23. बालम्भटी on या. III. 316 remarks on this 'इति विष्णुना सप्ताहसाध्य उक्तः'; मद्. पा. p. 733 explains 'शङ्खपुष्पीलताविशेषः । ब्रह्मसुवर्चला ब्राह्मीविशेषः' ।

PARNĀKṚCCHRA—Vide Parnakūrca above.

PĀDAKṚCCHRA—According to Yāj. III. 318 (=Devala 85) this is defined as a penance where a sinner takes food one day only once by day, only once by night, then once only (by day or night) but without asking for it from any one (a stranger, a servant or even his own wife) and observes a total fast for one day. Thus this penance lasts for four days. There was difference of view as to the number of mouthfuls to be eaten, Āpastamba (q. by Mit. on Yāj. III. 318) saying that the mouthfuls are respectively 22, 26 and 24 when food is taken only once in the evening or morning or without asking for it, while Parāśara states the number of mouthfuls to be 12, 15 or 24 respectively when food is taken only at night or in the morning or without asking for it. The Caturvimsatimata (q. by Par. M. II part 2 p. 172) puts them as 12, 15 and 10 respectively.

PĀDONAKṚCCHRA—This lasts for nine days³²⁹ only instead of the 12 days of the Prājāpatya and in it one eats by day only for three days, eats food once only for three days without asking for it from any one and observes a complete fast for three days (i. e. three days when food is eaten by night only are omitted here).

PUṢPAKṚCCHRA—According to the Agnipurāṇa 171. 12 and the Mit. on Yāj. III. 316 (quoting Mārkaṇḍeyapurāṇa) this penance is constituted by drinking for a month the decoction of flowers boiled in water.³³⁰

PRASRTA-YĀVAKA or **PRASRTIYĀVAKA**—Viṣṇu Dh. S. chap. 48 and Baud. Dh. S. III. 6 contain elaborate descriptions (which agree with each other in many respects almost *verbatim*) and so does Hārīta (q. by Par. M. II. part 2 pp. 192-194) who has many sūtras and verses in common with Viṣṇu and Baud. Prasṛti means the hand with all fingers stretched out, the palm being hollowed. The yavas taken out were as many as could be placed on the palm of the hand thus stretched

329. सायं प्रातर्विनार्थं स्यात्पादोनं नक्तवर्जितम् । आपस्तम्बस्मृति I. 14, q. by मिता. on या. III. 318, प्राय. सार. p. 172, परा. मा. II. part 2 p. 173.

330. यथाह मार्कण्डेयः । फलैर्मासेन कथितः फलकृच्छ्रो मनीषिभिः श्रीकृच्छ्रः । श्रीफलैः प्रोक्तः पञ्चाक्षरपरस्तथा । मासेनामलकैरेवं श्रीकृच्छ्रमपरं स्मृतम् । पञ्चैतः पञ्चकृच्छ्रः पुष्पैस्तत्कृच्छ्र उच्यते । मूलकृच्छ्रः स्मृतो मूलैस्तोयकृच्छ्रो जलेन तु ॥ मिता. on या. III. 316, मद. पा. p. 734. We should read कथितः for कथितः as मद. पा. 702a, which remarks 'शरीरयात्रामात्रप्रयुक्तफलानि मासं भक्षयेत् तत्र सर्वव्रतसाधारणोक्तं कृतं न्यायि कर्तव्यम् । तानि च फलानि कानीत्याकाङ्क्षायामाह श्रीकृच्छ्रः ०' ।

out and hollowed. Some passages from Baud. who is probably the oldest of the three authors may be set out here. ³³¹ "Now if a man feels his conscience heavy with bad actions committed by himself, let him boil for himself, when the stars have risen, a handful of barley and prepare gruel with that. Let him not perform (the Vaiśvadeva) offering with (a part of) that nor a *Bali* ³³² offering. Let him consecrate the barley before it has been placed on fire, when it is being boiled and after it has been boiled with the following mantras 'thou art barley, the king of grains, thou art sacred to Varuna and mixed with honey, the sages have declared thee to be an expeller of all sins and a means of purification.' Then there are five verses more invoking the barley grains to purify the performer from all sins whether due to deeds, words, or thoughts, to destroy distress and evil fortune, to free him from the food of *gaṇas* (guilds or multitudes of men), harlots, śūdras, or food offered at śrāddhas by persons in impurity due to birth or death, food of a thief, food at navaśrāddha (i. e. on 1st, 3rd, 5th, 7th, 9th, 11th days after death) or from dreadful mortal sins or from guilt against children and guilt due to serving in a royal court, from sin of stealing gold, sin of the violation of a *vrata* or sacrificing for an unworthy person and sin of speaking ill of brāhmanas. Then Baud. proceeds "while the barley is being boiled he should guard it and recite 'Adoration to Rudra, lord of created beings; pacified

331. अथ कर्मभिरात्मकृतैर्गुरुमिवात्मानं मन्येतात्मारथं प्रसृतयावकं अपयेदुदितेषु नक्षत्रेषु। न ततोऽग्नौ जुहुयात्। न चात्र बलिकर्म। अकृतं अप्यमाणं कृतं चाभिमन्त्रयेत्। यवोसि धान्यराजोसि वारुणो मधुसंयुतः। निर्णोदः सर्वपापानां पवित्रमुषिभिः स्मृतम्॥...सर्वं पुनथ मे यवाः॥ इति। अप्यमाणे रक्षां कुर्यात्। नमो रुद्राय भूताधिपतये द्यौः शान्ता कृणुष्व पाजः प्रसितिं न पृथ्वीमित्येतेनानुवाकेन। ये देवाः पुरःसदोऽग्निनेत्रा रक्षोहण इति पञ्चभिः पर्यायैः। मानस्तोके ब्रह्मा देवानामिति द्वाभ्याम्। कृतं च लघ्वश्नीयात्प्रयतः पात्रे निषिच्य। ये देवा मनोजाता मनोयुजः सुरक्षा दक्षपितरस्ते नः पान्तु ते नोऽवन्तु तेभ्यो नमस्तेभ्यः स्वाहेति। आत्मनि जुहुयात् त्रिरात्रं मेधार्थं षड्वरात्रं पीत्वा पापकृच्छुद्धो भवति। सप्तरात्रं पीत्वा भ्रूणहननं गुरुतल्प-गमनं सुवर्णस्तैन्यं सुरापानमिति च पुनाति। एकादशरात्रं पीत्वा पूर्वपुरुषकृतमपि पापं निर्णुदति। अपि वा गोनिष्क्रातानां यवानामेकविंशतिरात्रं पीत्वा गणान्पश्यति गणाधिपतिं पश्यति विद्यां पश्यति विद्याधिपतिं पश्यतीत्याह भगवान् बोधायनः। बौ. ध. सू. III. 6. The verses eulogising yava (यवोसि) are Baud. III. 6. 5-10, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 48. 17-22 and Hārīta (q. in Par. M. II. part, 2 p. 193) with some variations and omissions. As to the rest Hārīta agrees closely with Baud. while Viṣṇu differs a good deal from Baud. as to the mantras. Viṣṇu has a verse referring to food licked by dogs and pigs and food defiled by leavings and the sin of disobeying parents, but omits two verses that occur in Baud. about mahāpātaka. Viṣṇu 48.6 prescribes Rg. IX. 96. 6 (ब्रह्मा देवानां) as the mantra to be recited at the time of guarding the grains that are being cooked.

332. For Vaiśvadeva and Bali, vide H. of Dh. II pp. 741-747.



is the sky'. He should recite the text beginning with 'Kṛṇuṣva pājah' (Tai. S. I. 2. 14. 1), the five sentences beginning with 'Ye devā' (Tai. S. I. 8. 7. 1), the two texts 'mā nastoke' (Rg. I. 114. 8 and Tai. S. III. 4. 11. 2) and 'Brahmā devānām' (Rg. IX. 96. 6, Tai. S. III. 4. 11. 2). "Then having sipped water he should eat a little of the boiled food after pouring it into another vessel. Let him offer it as a sacrifice to the soul reciting 'ye devā' (Tai. S. I. 2. 3. 1)."

Then Baud. prescribes: "one desirous of wisdom must perform this rite for three days and nights. A sinner who drinks it during six days becomes pure, he who drinks this during seven days becomes purified from the mahāpātakas, he who drinks during eleven days removes even the sins committed by his ancestors. But he who during 21 days drinks gruel of barley grains which have passed through a cow (i. e. cowdung) sees the *Gaṇas*, the lord of the *Gaṇas*, the goddess of learning and the lord of learning."

PRĀJĀPATYA—Vide under *Kṛcchra* above where it is shown that the word *Kṛcchra* without any qualifying epithet means *Prājāpatya*. *Manu* XI. 211, *Yāj.* III. 319, *Viṣṇu Dh. S.* 46. 10, *Atri* 119–120, *Śaṅkha* 18. 3, *Baud. Dh. S.* IV. 5. 6 mention the word *Prājāpatya* and define it. This *Prājāpatya* has several varieties. The first is that described by *Manu* XI. 211 and *Vas.* 21. 20 viz. four periods of three days each following one another in which there is respectively eating once only by day, once only by night, eating once only without asking for it and complete fast. The second is that described by *Vas.* 23. 43, where on the first day food is taken only by day, on the 2nd only at night, on the 3rd day food got without asking for it is taken and on the 4th a complete fast is observed and where the same process is repeated for two periods of four days each. The first ³³³ is called *Prājāpatya* by 'sthānavivṛddhi' and the 2nd is called 'Dandakalita'. Further, both these are said to be made 'ānulomyena' (by the proper and straightforward order). If the sequence described above is reversed i. e. if for three days there is first a total fast, then subsisting for 3 days on food got without asking for it, then for three days eating at night only

333. अयमेव पादकृच्छ्रः यथाकथंचिद्वण्डकलितवदावृत्त्या स्वस्थानविवृद्ध्या वा तत्राप्यानुलोम्येन प्रातिलोम्येन वा तथा वक्ष्यमाणजपादियुक्तं तद्वहितं वा त्रिरभ्यस्तः प्राणजपः १९१७
त्योऽभिधीयते । मिता. on या. III. 319. The मद्. पा. p. 710 explains 'तत्रात्रैकपक्षमात्रं
मनुः—अयहं प्रातः...॥ अत्रैकभक्तादीनां स्वस्थान एवाभिवृद्धत्वात् स्वस्थानवृद्धिः ।' Bhandarkar Oriental

and for three days eating by day only, it is Prājāpatya by 'prātilomya'. Further it may be performed with recitation of Vedic texts or without (for women and śūdras).³³⁴

PHALAKṚCCHRA—Subsisting on fruits alone for a month. Vide the passage from Mārkaṇḍeya quoted above (n. 330). Śrīkṛcchra mentioned below will be also phalakṛcchra. The fruits of Bilva and of Āmalaka and lotus seeds were the only fruits to be employed and they were to be eaten only for bare subsistence.

BĀLAKṚCCHRA—See Śisukṛcchra.

BRHAD-YĀVAKA—The Pr. Pr. (folio 49 a) quoting Brahmapurāṇa describes it as follows:—One should feed cows on plenty of yavas anointed with clarified butter. Then he should mix water with the dung of those cows and take out the grains of barley which are voided by them after eating them. He should then dry them in the sun, should grind them on a clean stone and cook them mixed with sesame and anointed with ghee in cow's urine on a fire brought on an altar. He should place the boiled holy grains in a vessel of gold or in a cup made of *palāśa* leaves and present them to the gods and *manes* and he may eat them. He should carry this on for twelve, twenty-four or thirty-six years for the removal of all sins. This is prescribed as a penance for killing one's *guru*, brother, friend or a near relative &c.

BRAHMAKŪRCA—The Mit. ³³⁵ on Yājñavalkya III. 314 states that when a man fasts on one day and on the next day mixes up the ingredients of pañcagavya with Vedic *mantras* and drinks it with *mantras* it is called Brahmakūrca. According to Śaṅkha cow's urine is taken with the Gāyatrī (Rg. III. 62. 10), cowdung with the mantra 'Gandhadvārām' (Tai. Ā. X. 1), milk with 'āpyāyasva' (Rg. I. 91.16), curds with 'dadhikrāvno' (Rg. IV. 39. 6), ghee with 'Tejosi' (Vāj. S. 22. 1) and Kuśa water with 'devasya tvā' (Vāj. S. 22. 1, Ait. Br. 37. 3 &c.). Jābāla ³³⁶

334. तस्माच्छुद्धं समासाद्य सदा धर्मपथे स्थितम् । प्रायश्चित्तं प्रदातव्यं जपहोमविजितम् ॥ अङ्गिरस् q. by the मित्ता. on या. III. 319 and महार्णवः folio 182 a.

335. यदा पुनः पूर्वेषु रूपेषु परेषुः समन्त्रकं संयुज्य समन्त्रकमेव पञ्चगव्यं पीयते तदा ब्रह्मकूर्च इत्याख्यायते । मित्ता. on या. III. 314. Vide लघुशातातप 156-166 for ब्रह्मकूर्च which is the penance for all sins where no specific penance is prescribed.

336. अहोरात्रोषितो भूत्वा पौर्णमास्यां विशेषतः । पञ्चगव्यं पिबेत् प्रातर्ब्रह्मकूर्चं वा ॥ जाबाल q. by प्रा. वि. p. 515, प्रा. प्रकाश folio 50a and प्राय. म. p. 22.

prescribes that when a man observes a fast for the whole day and night on a day and particularly on a Full Moon day and then drinks pañcagavya the next morning this is called the rite of Brahmakūrca. Parāśara (XI. 27-28) appears to hold that *Pañcagavya* and *Brahmakūrca* are synonyms. The Madana-pārijāta p. 729 and Pr. Sāra. p. 189 state that the Sāntapana described by Yāj. (III. 314) is styled Brahmakūrca.³³⁷

BRAHMAKŪCCHRA— Vide Hemādri's work on Prāyaścitta p. 964 quoting Devala and Mārkaṇḍeya. It is a penance for 12 days on each of which one has to drink in the noon Pañcagavya in a temple or cowpen after offering it with mantras in fire; one has to contemplate on Viṣṇu till the evening and should sleep near an idol and give up tāmbūla and unguents.

MAHĀTAPTAKŪCCHRA—Vide Taptakūcchra.

MAHĀSĀNTAPANA—Sāntapana, according to Yāj. III. 314, Manu XI. 212 (=Baud. Dh. S.IV. 5.11=Śaṅkha 18.8=Brhad-Yama I. 13), Atri 117-118, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 46.20, lasts for two days; on the first the sinner drinks together cow's urine, dung, milk, curds, ghee and kuśa water and on the second day he fasts altogether. Mahāsāntapana penance consists, according to Lau-gākṣigṛhya VII. 3, Yāj. III. 315 (=Devala 82=Atri. 118-119), in drinking separately for six days in succession the six ingredients mentioned above and fasting on the next day (i. e. it lasts for 7 days). According to Śaṅkha 18.9, Baud.Dh. S.IV.5.17 and Jābāla³³⁸ the Mahāsāntapana lasts for 21 days, each of the six ingredients referred to above being taken for three days and a fast being observed for three days. Yama speaks³³⁹ of a mahāsāntapana for 15 days viz. when each of cow's urine, dung, milk, curds and ghee is taken as subsistence for three days consecutively.

337. ततश्च योगीश्वराभिहितं सान्तपनमेव ब्रह्मकूर्च इत्युच्यते । स एव ब्रह्मकूर्चोपवास इति । प्रा. सार p. 189 ; vide also मद्. पा. p. 729. The reference is to the verse 'यस्मिन्नाग्निं गतं पापं देहे तिष्ठति मानवे । ब्रह्मकूर्चोपवासस्तु दहत्यग्निरिवेन्धनम् ।' cited as पराशर's in प्रा. सार p. 189, while पराशर (XI. 37-38 reads) यस्व...देहिनाम् । ब्रह्मकूर्चो दहेत्सर्वं प्रदीप्ताग्निरिवेन्धनम् ॥

338. षण्णामेकैकमेतेषां त्रिरात्रमुपयोजयेत् । त्र्यहं चोपवसेदन्त्यं महासान्तपनं विदुः ॥ जाबाल q. by अपरार्क p. 1234, परा. मा. II. part 1 p. 31.

339. त्र्यहं पिबेत्तु गोमूत्रं त्र्यहं वै गोमयं पिबेत् । त्र्यहं दधि त्र्यहं क्षीरं त्र्यहं स्ततः शुचिः ॥ महासान्तपनमेतत्सर्वपापप्रणाशनम् । यम. q. by मिता. on या. III. 314 प्रा. सार p. 191, परा. मा. II part 1 p. 31.



MAHEŚVARA KR̥CCHRA—Vide Hemādri (on Prāyaścitta) p. 961, which sets out a passage from Devala, that states that Brahmā prescribed it for Maheśvara on the burning of Madana. In this penance in the after-noon one should carry a broken jar (kapāla) and beg at three houses of learned brāhmanas for vegetables, offer them to God and eat them and should sleep in the evening near an idol. After getting up the next day he should donate a cow and drink pañcagavya.

MŪLAKR̥CCHRA—Viṣṇu Dh. S. 46. 15³⁴⁰ states that it is so called when one subsists on lotus stalks alone and the Mit. on Yāj. III. 316 quotes Mārkaṇḍeya to the effect that one must subsist on mūlas (edible roots) alone.

MAITRAKR̥CCHRA—The Pr. Prakāśa (folio³⁴¹ 53 a) mentions it. Its peculiarity is that in the Sāntapana on the third day milk of a *kapilā* (tawny) cow is to be partaken of. The same work notes that the Kalpataru states that this is a sāntapana in which on the first day all the six ingredients (cow's urine &c.) are taken followed by two days of fasting.

YAJÑAKR̥CCHRA—This is a penance for one day laid down by Āṅgiras (q. by Pr. Sāra p. 183, Smṛti-muktāphala p. 939) as follows: The sinner should bathe thrice, should be self-controlled and silent; and after the morning bath he should recite the sacred Gāyatrī 1008 times together with *om* and the Vyāhrtis at the beginning. When reciting he should be in the Virāsana³⁴² posture. He should drink cow's milk only once either sitting down or standing or curds of cow's milk (if he cannot secure cow's milk) or butter-milk or barley gruel mixed with cow's urine (in the absence of milk, curds or butter milk). This one-day penance called Yajña-kṛcchra removes all sins.

340. विसाभ्यवहारेण मूलकृच्छ्रः। विष्णुध. सू. 46.15.

341. द्वितीयसान्तपने तृतीयदिने कपिलाक्षीरपानमधिकम्। एष मैत्रकृच्छ्रेपीति प्रायश्चित्तविवेके। कल्पतरौ तु गोमूत्रादिकमेकस्मिन्नहनि द्वावुपवासाविति दिनत्रयसाध्यं सान्तपनमिति यज्ञस्वामी। प्रा. प्रकाश folio 53a; कपिलायास्तु दुग्धाया धारोष्णं तु पयः पिबेत्। एष मैत्रकृतः कृच्छ्रः सर्वपापप्रणाशकः। यम in प्राय. वि. p. 513; the words द्वितीयसान्तपने... कृच्छ्रेपीति (in प्रा. प्रकाश) are taken from प्राय. वि. p. 513.

342. वीरासनं निराश्रयमुपवेशनम्। तथा विष्णुधर्मोत्तरे। उत्थितस्तु दिवा तिष्ठेद्भुविष्टस्तथा निशि। एतद्वीरासनं नाम महापातकनाशनम्॥ प्राय. वि. pp. 197-198. The word occurs in several smṛtis such as Saṅkha 18.2, Laghu-Viṣṇu III. 9. The Agni-purāṇa (171. 3-4) defines it in the same way.

YATICĀNDRĀYANA—Manu XI. 218 (= Baud. Dh. S. IV. 5.20), Agnipurāṇa 171. 4, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 47. 7 define³⁴³ it as a penance where the sinner eats only eight mouthfuls of sacrificial food only once in the noon for a month and exercises control over himself.

YATISĀNTAPANA—When the ingredients³⁴⁴ of Pañcagavya are mixed together (with kuśa water) and drunk for three consecutive days it is Yati-sāntapana according to the Mit. on Yāj. III. 314. The Pr. Prakaraṇa p. 128 adds that the three days must be followed by a fast for one day.

YĀMYA.—According to Viṣṇudharmottara-purāṇa quoted by Pr. Prakāśa (folio 48 b) this consists in subsisting for a month on *saktu* grains found in cowdung.

YĀVAKA—Śaṅkha³⁴⁵ (18.10-11) states that partaking of boiled yavas obtained from cowdung for a month is the Yāvaka penance for destroying all sins. The Par. M. and Pr. Prakāśa quote a prose passage from Devala,³⁴⁶ according to which the penance may last for seven days, a fortnight or a month and which states that the procedure of Prājāpatya will apply to this penance.

VAJRA—Atri 164 defines³⁴⁷ it as a penance, where barley grains fried in clarified butter and mixed with cow's urine are partaken of.

343. अष्टौ ग्रासान् प्रतिदिवसं मासमश्नीयात् स यतिचान्द्रायणः । विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 47. 7, q. as बृहद्विष्णु by प्रा. प्रकरण p. 131. As to हविष्य food, vide कात्यायन 'हविष्येषु यवा मुख्यास्तदनु व्रीहयः स्मृताः । अभावे व्रीहियवयोर्दध्नापि पयसापि वा । तदभावे यवाग्वा वा जुहुयादुदकेन वा । q. by स्मृतिच. I. p. 163. गोभिलस्मृति I. 131 has हविष्येषु...स्मृताः । and then adds 'माषकोद्वगौरादि सर्वालाभे विधर्जयेत् । and गोभिल III. 114 has the verse अभावे व्रीहिः. On आश्व. गृ. I. 9.6 (हौम्यं च मांसवर्जम्) हरदत्त quotes 'पयो दधि यवागूश्च सर्पिरोदनतण्डुलाः । सोमो मांसं तथा तैलमापश्चैव दशैव तु ॥'. Vide कृत्यरत्नाकर p. 400 and नित्याचारपद्धति (p. 320) for this last verse and further details about हविष्यान्न.

344. यदा त्वेते देव मिश्रितं पञ्चगव्यं त्रिरात्रमभ्यस्यते तदा यतिसान्तपनसंज्ञां लभते । एतदेव त्र्यहस्यस्तं यतिसान्तपनं स्मृतम्-इति शङ्खस्मरणात् । मिता. on या. III. 314.

345. गोपुरीषाशनो भूत्वा मांसं नित्यं समाहितः । व्रतं तु यावत् कुर्यात् सर्वपापापनुत्तये ॥ शङ्ख. 18.10-11 q. by परा. मा. II. part 2 p. 192 (reads=रीषयवाभ्यासो) and प्राय. सार p. 199, मद. पा. p. 746 (reads=रीषायवाकं च).

346. देवलोऽपि । यवानामप्सु साधितानां सतरात्रं पक्षं मांसं वा प्राशनं यावत् । एतेन यावत्पायसौदकानि व्याख्यातानि । q. by परा. मा. III. part 2 p. 192 and प्रा. प्रकाश folio 49 a.

347. गोमूत्रेण तु संयुक्तं यावत् घृतपाचितम् । एतद्वज्रमिति प्रोक्तं भगवति श्रुतं । अत्रि 164.

VĀYAVYA-KṚCCHRA—According to the Agnipurāṇa³⁴⁸ and Viṣṇudharmottara this penance consists in subsisting for a month every day on food that will just fill the extended palm.

VRDDHAKṚCCHRA—**VRDDHI-KṚCCHRA**—This is a penance for eight days, according to Śāṅkha-Likhita³⁴⁹ and Yama, in which one takes food only by day for two days, only by night for two days, without asking for food for two days and fasts for two days.

VYĀSAKṚCCHRA—This is the same as Maitra-kṛcchra,³⁵⁰ for which see above p. 148.

ŚISUKṚCCHRA—also called Bālakṛcchra by Śāṅkha-Likhita and Pādakṛcchra by Devala and Prāyaścittamuktāvali (folio 10 a) and is the same as Laghu-kṛcchra.³⁵¹ It lasts for four days, eating once only in the day, eating once only by night, eating food got without asking for it only once on one day and fast on one day. Vide Vas. 23.43 (q. by Haradatta on Gaut. 26.5), Baud. Dh. S. II. 1. 92. Yāj. III. 318.

ŚISU-CĀNDRĀYAṆA—Manu XI. 219, Baud. Dh. S. IV. 5.19, Agnipurāṇa 171.5 state that when a brāhmaṇa eats (for a month) four mouthfuls in the morning and four after sun-set, that is Śisu-cāndrāyaṇa (cāndrāyaṇa for boys, old men &c.).

ŚĪTAKṚCCHRA—This is the reverse of Taptakṛcchra, as here all the articles are to be taken when they are cold^{351a} and not hot (as in Tapta-kṛcchra). Vide Viṣṇu Dh. S. 46.12, Agnipurāṇa 171. 7 and Mit. on Yāj. III. 317. According to Viṣṇu quoted by Pr. Sāra (p. 185) and Madana-pārijāta (p. 736) this is a penance for 10 days (and not for twelve days as the Mit. states), viz. cold water, cold milk and cold ghee are drunk three days each and there is a total fast for one day.

348. मासं वायव्यकृच्छ्रं स्यात्पाणिपूरान्नभोजनात् । अग्निपु. 171. 14; वायव्यं कृच्छ्रमुक्तं तु पाणिपूरान्नभोजनम् । मासेनैकेन धर्मज्ञ सर्वकल्मषनाशनम् ॥ विष्णुधर्मोत्तर q. by प्रा. प्रकाश folio 48 a.

349. तत्र शङ्खलिखितौ । प्रातः सायमयाचितमुपवासस्यहं त्र्यहमिति प्राजापत्यं द्व्यहं द्व्यहमिति वृद्धकृच्छ्रः, एकैकमिति बालकृच्छ्रः । प्राय. वि. p. 511. The प्राय. सार p. 177 quotes a verse of यम to the same effect.

350. The प्रा. प्रकाश (folio 56b) cites a verse of अङ्गिरस् which is कापिलायां...एष व्यासकृतः कृच्छ्रः श्वपाकमपि शोधयेत् ॥

351. लघुकृच्छ्रस्यैव शिशुकृच्छ्र इति नामान्तरम् । प्राय. म. p. 21.

351a. यदा तु शीतं क्षीरादि पीयते तदा शीतकृच्छ्रः । त्र्यहं शीतं पिबेत्तोयं त्र्यहं शीतं पयः पिबेत् । त्र्यहं शीतं घृतं पीत्वा वायुभक्षः परं त्र्यहम् ॥ इति यमस्मरणात् । मिता. on या. III. 317.



ŚRĪKR̥CCHRA—According to Viṣṇu Dh. S. 46.16, Agnipurāṇa ³⁵² 171.12 and Mit. on Yāj. III. 316 (quoting Mārkaṇḍeya) this is constituted by subsisting on Bilva fruit or lotus seeds or āmalaka fruit for a month. The Madanapārijāta (p. 737) quotes a verse of Sāṅkha to the same effect.

SĀNTAPANA—Vide Mahāsāntapana and Atisāntapana above. It is of five kinds, viz. the first for two days, the 2nd for seven days, the third for twelve (Atisāntapana), the 4th for 15 days and the fifth for 21 days.

SURACĀNDRĀYANA—The Agnipurāṇa defines it as one where somehow or other (and not in a rising or falling scale) a man partakes of 240 morsels of food in a month. Yāj. III. 324 speaks of it as a variety of Cāndrāyana. Viṣṇu. Dh. S. (47. 9) calls it 'sāmānyacāndrāyana'. ³⁵³

SUVARṆA-KṚCCHRA—Vide Hemādri on Prāyaścitta pp. 969-972 quoting Devala and Mārkaṇḍeyapurāṇa, in which a *varāha* or a half of it or quarter of it had to be donated. A Varāha was equal to nine *rūpakas* and a rūpaka was one māṣa of five *guñjas* (of silver it seems). For killing a brāhmaṇa secretly or for the guilt of incest one had to perform ten thousand or 40 thousand suvarṇa-kṛcchras and a lesser number for various other lapses.

SOMĀYANA—According to the Madanapārijāta pp. 744-746 (quoting Hārītadharmasūtra and Mārkaṇḍeya) and Pr. Prakāśa (folio 60b) the penance lasts for thirty days divided into five periods of 7, 7, 7, 6, 3 days, in which the milk of all the four udders of a cow, of three udders, of two udders and of one udder is respectively drunk and for the last three days there is a complete fast. There is another variety which lasts for 24 days from the 4th tithi of the dark half of a month to the 12th of the bright half of the next fort-night; the 24 days are divided into eight periods of three days each; in the first four

352. बिल्वाभ्यवहारेण श्रीफलकृच्छ्रः पञ्चाक्षैर्वा । विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 46.16; फलेर्मासं फलं कृच्छ्रं बिल्वैः श्रीकृच्छ्र ईरितः । पञ्चाक्षैः स्यादामलकैः पुष्पकृच्छ्रं तु पुष्पकैः । अग्निपु. 171.12. Vide note 330 above for मार्कण्डेय.

353. यथा कथंचित्पिण्डानां चत्वारिंशच्छतद्वयम् । मासेन भक्षयेदेतत्सुरवाच्यायणं चरेत् ॥ अग्निपु. 171.5-6. या. III. 324 reads the 2nd half as मामेतेवापमुञ्जीत चान्द्रायणमथापरम् ॥. The Mit. explains यथाकथंचित् as 'प्रतिदिनं मध्याह्नेऽथौ मासान्, अथवा नक्तंदिनयोश्चतुरश्वतुरो वा, अथवैकस्मिंश्चतुरोऽपरस्मिन्द्वादश वा तथैकरात्रमुद्योऽथवापरस्मिन्षोडश वेत्यादिप्रकाराणामन्यतमेन शक्याद्यपेक्षया मुञ्जीत'. यथाकथंचित्पिण्डानां चत्वारिंशच्छतद्वयम् । मासेनाश्नीयात्स सामान्यचान्द्रायणः । विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 47.9

periods of three days each the milk of a cow's four udders, three udders, two udders and one udder is respectively drunk and then in the next four periods of three days each the milk of one udder, two, three and four udders is respectively drunk. Vide also Prāyaścittendu-śekhara p. 12.

58. SAUMYAKRCCRA—According to Yāj. III. 321 this penance lasts for six days, in the first five of which one subsists in succession upon oilcake alone, foamy scum of boiled rice alone, butter-milk alone, water alone and *saktus* (barley) alone and on the last day a total fast is observed. The Mit., Madanapārijāta p. 717, Pr. Sāra p. 178 and other digests state that one has to partake of the five ingredients in quantities just sufficient to keep body and soul together. Jābāla (quoted by the Mit., Par. M. II part 2 p. 183 and others) makes it a penance of four days' duration, in the first three of which one partakes successively of oilcake, *saktus* and butter-milk and observes a fast on the 4th day. Atri (128-129) also mentions it. The Pr. Prakāśa (quoting Brahmapurāṇa) speaks³⁵⁴ of another variety of six days' duration, on the first of which there is a complete fast and on the last of which the sinner subsists on *saktus* alone and in the intervening four days he subsists on the thick gruel of barley cooked in cow's urine.

354. प्रकारान्तरेण षडहः सौम्यकृच्छ्र उक्तो ब्रह्मपुराणे । प्रथमेऽहनि नाशनीयात्सौम्य-
कृच्छ्रेऽपि सर्वदा । गोमूत्रयावकाहारः षष्ठे सक्तुश्च तत्समानं ॥ इति । प्रा. प्रकाश. folio 46b.

CHAPTER VI

CONSEQUENCES OF NOT UNDERGOING PENANCES

If a sinner did not undergo a *prāyaścitta*, the *Smṛtis*, *Purāṇas*, medieval digests declared that he had to suffer dire and far-reaching consequences. *Yāj. III. 221* declares that men addicted to sins, who feel no repentance and who (therefore) do not undergo the proper penances, fall into painful and horrible hells. *Manu XII. 54 ff* and *Yāj. III. 206 ff* provide that those guilty of grave (and other) sins after having passed numbers of years in hells and suffered the tortures of horrible hells are born again in this world because of (the remnants of their) evil actions in different forms such as lower animals, insects, trees and shrubs &c. *Manu XI. 53* ordains that one should always perform penance in order to free oneself from sins, since those who have not destroyed their sins (by means of *prāyaścittas*) are born again endowed with disgraceful marks (such as having bad nails, black teeth &c.). *Manu XI. 48* also emphasizes that wicked men suffer mal-formations owing to their wicked deeds committed in this very life or in a former life. The *Viṣṇu-purāṇa*³⁵⁵ echoes the words of *Yāj. III. 221*. The *Viṣṇudharmottara* declares³⁵⁶ that those (sinners) who do not undergo penances nor are punished by the king fall into hell and are born also as lower animals and even after attaining human bodies they become marked (with bodily defects). *Viṣṇu Dh. S. (44. 1-10)* prescribes³⁵⁷ that evil-doers, having experienced the horrors of hell pass into animal bodies and that those guilty of *atipātakas*, *mahāpātakas*, *anupātakas*, *upapātakas*, *jāti-*

355. पापकृच्छ्राति नरकं प्रायश्चित्तपराङ्मुखः । विष्णुपुराण IV. 5 21. q. by परा. मा. II. part 2 p. 209.

356. प्रायश्चित्तविहीना ये राजभिश्चाप्यवासिताः । नरकं प्रतिपद्यन्ते तिर्यग्योनिं तथैव च ॥ मानुष्यमपि चासाद्य भवन्तीह तथाङ्किताः । विष्णुधर्मोत्तर II. 73. 4-5 q. by परा. मा. II. part 2 p. 210 and प्राय. वि. p. 120 (both of which read अदण्डिताः for अवासिताः of the printed ed.).

357. अथ पापात्मनां नरकेष्वनुभूतदुःखानां तिर्यग्योनयो भवन्ति । अतिपातकिनां पक्षियो नयः । महापातकिनां च कृमियो नयः । अनुपातकिनां पक्षियो नयः । उपपातकिनां जलजयो नयः । कृतजातिभ्रंशकराणां जलचरयो नयः । कृतसङ्करीकरणकर्मणां मृगयो नयः । कृतपात्रीकरणकर्मणां पशुयो नयः । कृतमालिनीकरणकर्मणां मनुष्येष्वस्पृश्ययो नयः । प्रकीर्णेषु प्रकीर्णा हिंसाः क्रव्यादा भवन्ति । विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 44. 1-10.

bhramśa-kara actions, saṅkarikarāṇa, apatrikarāṇa, malini-karāṇa and miscellaneous sins, respectively enter the bodies of all plants, of worms (or insects), of birds, of aquatic animals, of animals roving in waters, of deer, of cattle, of untouchables among men, of miscellaneous and cruel carnivorous animals (like tigers). Viṣṇu Dh. S. 45.1 provides³⁵⁸ that sinners, after having undergone the horrors of hells and after having passed through the bodies of lower animals, are born as human beings with certain marks (indicative of their sins). So the teaching of these and other authorities comes to this that sins when not expiated by penances or by State punishment, lead to hell, that then, owing to some remnants of the evil deeds, to birth as lower animals and then as decrepit or diseased human beings.

It is now necessary at this stage to enter upon a historical though brief account of the idea of Hell and of its opposite Heaven.³⁵⁹ There are in the Rgveda hardly any clear or express references to Hell. In Rg. II. 29.6 the sage prays to the Viśve-Devas 'save me from the pit, from falling down into it' (trādhvam kartād-avapado yajatrāḥ). In Rg. IV. 5. 5 it is said³⁶⁰ that those men who are bereft of *ṛta* and *satya*, being sinful, create a deep place for themselves. In Rg. VII. 104.3 the poet calls upon Indra and Soma to strike down³⁶¹ into bottomless darkness evil-doers; and in VII. 104.11 the poet prays that whatever enemy desires to harm the poet by day or night may be deprived of his body and progeny and may be hurled below the three earths. Indra is implored in Rg. X. 152.4 by the sage to send down into darkness whoever attacks him and his people. In Rg. IX. 73.8 Soma is said to throw down in a pit those who do not observe Soma's ordinances and who are disliked by him. From these passages what emerges is that the sages of the Rgveda had some faint glimmerings of (or belief in) the idea of a dark

358. अथ नरकाभिभूतदुःखानां तिर्यक्त्वमुत्तीर्णानां मनुष्येषु लक्षणानि भवन्ति । विष्णु-धर्मसूत्र 45 1.


359. Vide for 'Heaven' and 'Hell' in Vedic Literature 'Vedic Mythology' by Prof. A. A. Macdonell, pp. 167-170 ; 'The religion and Philosophy of the Veda and Upaniṣads' by Prof. Keith pp. 405-410, Journal of American Oriental Society, Vol. 13 pp. ciii ff, Vol. 61 pp. 76-80, Vol. 62 pp 150-156,

360. पापासः सन्तो अचृता असत्या इदं पदमजनता गभीरम् ॥ ऋ. IV. 5. 5.

361. इन्द्रासोमा दुष्कृतो वज्रे अन्तरनारम्भणे तमसि प्र विध्यतम् । ऋ. VII. 104. 3
परः सो अस्तु तन्वा तना च तिस्रः पृथ्वीरथो अस्तु विश्वाः । ऋ. VII. 104. 11; यो अग्निं
अभिदासत्यधरं गमया तमः । ऋ. X. 152. 4; विद्वान्स विश्वा भुवनाभिपश्यत्यवाजुधनं
विध्यति कर्तुं अवतान् । ऋ. IX. 73.8.

deep pit below the earth to which wicked persons were relegated by the gods. But there is no mention in the Rgveda of the tortures of Hell. It is in the Atharvaveda that we find the clearest references to Hell (Naraka). Sorcerers and demons dwell in a house below (the earth), according to A. V. II. 14. 3. Atharvaveda V. 30. 11 asks a man to come out from death, from the deep and black darkness. In Atharvaveda ³⁶² V. 19. 3 it is asserted that those who spat in the face of a brāhmaṇa or who imposed a levy of money on him remain biting hair in the midst of a river of blood. Atharvaveda XII. 4. 36 mentions 'Nāraka-loka'. In the Vāj. S. XXX. 5 the *Vīrahan* ³⁶³ (i. e. one who gives up or extinguishes the consecrated Vedic fires) is relegated to *nāraka* (*nārakāya vīrahaṇam*). A *vīrahan* may also mean 'one who kills a valiant man' but that does not seem to be a proper sense in this passage of the Vāj. S. In the Śat. Br. XI. 6. 1. 4 we find a reference to torments of Hell, viz. men cutting up the limbs of others one by one for crimes committed. The Tai. Ā. I. 19 speaks of four *narakas* called Visarpin, Avisarpin, Viṣādin and Aṣādin in the south-east, south-west, north west and north-east. From the Kathopanishad it appears that at that time there was a belief that those foolish men who do not know the Reality and who only believe in the existence of the mundane world alone have to be born again and again and fall into the hands of Yama ³⁶⁴ (II. 5-6). The same Upanishad (V. 7) states that after the death (of the body) some enter the womb in accordance with their actions and knowledge to have an embodied existence, while others go into fixed matter (the form of trees and the like). But that Upanishad says nothing about the torments of Hell. They were therefore probably not believed to exist in those days, at least, to the same degree as in the days of the Epics and Purāṇas. The very words at the beginning of the Katha Up. (I. 21 'devair-atrāpi vicikitsitam') indicate that there were even then various views about the fate of the departed. The Kauṣītaki Br. (XI. 3) propounds the remarkable proposition that

362. ये ब्राह्मणं प्रत्यष्टीवन्त्ये वास्मिन् शुल्कमीषिरे । अस्नस्ते मध्ये कुल्यायाः केशान् खादन्त आसते ॥ अथर्व. V. 19. 3.

363. अथाहुर्नारिकं लोकं निरुन्धानस्य याचिताम् । अथर्ववेद XII. 4. 36;  एष देवानां योऽग्निमुद्वासयते । ते. सं. II. 2. 5. 5.

364. न साम्परायः प्रतिभाति बालं प्रमाद्यन्तं वित्तमोहेन मूढम् । अयं लोकाः साक्षिणः इति मानी पुनः पुनर्विशमापद्यते मे ॥ कठोप० II, 6; vide p. 94 above for कठोप०

just as men in this world eat the (flesh of) beasts, so in the next world the beasts eat men.³⁶⁵

As regards the opposite idea of *svarga* (Heaven) the matter is much clearer. In certain Rk verses there are said to be three heavens (e. g. Rg. I. 35. 6, VIII. 5. 8, VIII. 41. 9, IX. 113. 9). The generous donor or worshipper is said to occupy heaven and to mix among gods; and gods like Mitra and Varuṇa are implored to give the worshipper immortality³⁶⁶ (Rg. I. 125. 5, V. 63. 2, X. 107. 2.). Life in heaven is full of joys and delights and the denizen of heaven has all his desires fulfilled (Rg. IX. 113. 10-11).³⁶⁷ In Rg. IX. 113.8 the poet prays 'make me immortal (in heaven) where dwells king Vaivasvata, where the sun is confined (i. e. where it never sets) and where the divine waters flow'. A person who neither offers sacrifices to gods, nor worships, and observes ordinances other than those of Indra is thrown down from Heaven³⁶⁸. A sage exultingly addresses Soma 'we have drunk soma, we have become immortal, we have reached Light (Heaven) and we have known the gods; what will an enemy or harmful person do to us who have been mortals so far?'³⁶⁹ The pious dead become united in Heaven with their *Iṣṭāpūrta* (merit due to sacrifices and charitable acts) and with their fore-fathers and become endowed with a refulgent body (Rg. X. 14.8). Those who practise *tapas* or those who perform sacrifices in which the fees run to thousands (of cows) reach Heaven (Rg. X. 154. 1-3)³⁷⁰, and Soma, ghee and honey flow for them there. Heaven is said to be the abode of Yama and there resounds the sound of flutes and of songs.³⁷¹ The Atharvaveda, being more popular in

365. तद्यथा ह वा अस्मिँल्लोके मनुष्याः पशून्शनन्ति यथैभिर्भुञ्जत एवमेवासुष्मिँल्लोके पशवो मनुष्यान्शनन्त्येवमेभिर्भुञ्जते । कौषी. ब्रा. XI. 3.

366. नाकस्य पृष्ठे अधि तिष्ठति श्रितो यः पृणाति स ह देवेषु गच्छति । ऋ. I. 125. 5; उतो अश्मानमृतत्वे दधातन । ऋ. V. 55. 4 ; वृष्टिं वां राधो अमृतत्वमीमहे । ऋ. V. 63. 2 ; उच्चा दिवि दक्षिणावन्तो अस्थुर्ये अश्वदाः सह ते सूर्येण । ऋ. X. 107. 2.

367. यत्रानन्दाश्च मोदाश्च मुदः प्रमुद आसते । कामस्य यत्राप्ताः कामास्तत्र माममृतं कृधीन्द्रायेन्दो परिस्रव । ऋ. IX. 113. 11.

368. अन्यव्रतममानुषमयज्वानमदेवयुम् । अव स्वः सखा दुधुवीत पर्वतः सुघ्नाय दस्युं पर्वतः ॥ ऋ. VIII. 70. 11.

369. अपाम सोमममृता अभूमागन्म ज्योतिरविदाम देवान् । किं नूनमस्मान्कृणवदरातिः किमु धूर्तिरमृत मर्त्यस्य ॥ ऋ. VIII. 48. 3.

370. ये युध्यन्ते प्रधनेषु शूरासो ये तनूत्यजः । ये वा सहस्रदक्षिणास्ताँश्चिदेवापि मरुतात् ॥ ऋ. X. 154. 3.

371. इदं यमस्य सादनं देवमानं यदुच्यते । इयमस्य धम्यते नाळीरयं गीर्भिः परिष्कृतं ॥ ऋ. X. 135. 7.



character, contains much more information about Heaven. In Atharvaveda III. 29.3 it is said that a donor goes to Heaven where a weak man has not to render to the strong any contribution.³⁷² In Atharvaveda IV. 34.2, 5-6 it is stated that in the heavenly world there are bevvies of women (for the denizens), that there the dwellers get many edible plants and flowers and that there are ponds of ghee, streams of milk and honey, wine flows like water and lotus lakes surround the denizens. In Heaven the meritorious enjoy delight, their bodies being free from disease³⁷³. Atharvaveda VI. 120.3 and other verses express a yearning to meet one's parents, wife and sons (vide Atharva XII. 3.17).³⁷⁴ The Tai. S. is full of references to Heaven and so no quotation is cited here except one where it is said that he who offers the Adābhya cup in Jyotiṣṭoma goes to heaven while still living in this world.³⁷⁵ The Tai. Br. appears to hold that those who offer sacrifices become shining stars in the firmament (I. 5. 2. 5-6)^{375a}. The Śat. Br. (XI. 1. 8. 6) states 'that sacrificer who offers a sacrifice as this redemption is born in the next world (Heaven) with his body entire'.³⁷⁶ Survival of the soul after death is emphatically asserted in the Tai. Br. III. 10. 11. These passages are enough to establish that the state of the pious after death and of heroes killed in battle was one of happiness in heaven, that there the food and material things (such as honey, ghee) that a person required in this world were also available in greater perfection and abundance. The remark of Macdonell 'Heaven is a glorified world of material joys as pictured by the imagination not of warriors but of priests' (Vedic Mythology p. 168) is not (in view of Rg. X. 154.3) quite accurate or justified. There is nothing to show

372. स नाकमभ्यारोहति यत्र शुल्को न क्रियते अबलेन बलीयसे ॥ अथर्व. III. 29. 3.

373. नैषां शिश्रं प्र दहति जातवेदाः स्वर्गे लोके बहु स्त्रैणमेषाम् ॥ घृतद्वदा मधुकूलाः सुरोदकाः क्षीरेण पूर्णा उदकेन दध्ना । एतास्त्वा धारा उप यन्तु सर्वाः स्वर्गे लोके मधुमल्पिन्वमाना । उप त्वा तिष्ठन्तु पुष्करिणीः समन्ताः ॥ अथर्व. IV. 34.2 and 6.

374. यत्रा सुहार्दः सुकृतो मदन्ति विहाय रोगं तन्वः स्वायाः । अश्लोणा अङ्गैरह्वताः स्वर्गे तत्र पश्येम पितरौ च पुत्रान् ॥ अथर्व. VI. 120. 3; स्वर्गे लोकमभि नो नयासि सं जायया सह पुत्रैः स्याम ॥ अथर्व. XII. 3.17.

375. किं तद्यज्ञे यजमानः कुरुते येन जीवन्सुवर्गे लोकमेतीति जीवग्रहो वा एष यददाभ्योऽनभिषुतस्य गृह्णाति जीवन्तमेवैनं सुवर्गे लोकं गमयति ॥ तै. सं. VI. 6.9.2.

375 a. 'यो वा इह यजते असुं स लोकं नक्षते ... देवगृहा वै नक्षते' वा. I.5.2.5-6.

376. स ह सर्वतनूरेव यजमानोऽमुष्मिँल्लोके सम्भवति य एवं विद्वान् निष्कृत्वा यजते । शतपथ. XI.1.8.6.

that the warriors of Vedic times did not believe what the priests believed. In later times (as in the Bhagavadgītā II. 37 'hato vā prāpsyasi svargam' or in the Raghuvamśa VII. 51) warriors killed in battle were supposed to go to heaven and were privileged to have the company of beautiful damsels. Heaven as a place or state of eternal bliss to which the spirits of the religious or meritorious people or warriors go, is an idea common to most ancient peoples and was probably based on the idea that the Earth was flat and the sky was a dome carrying various celestial objects. In the Brhadāranyaka Up. (IV. 3. 33) and Tai. Up. (II. 8) it is³⁷⁷ stated that the joys of the world of gods are hundreds of times more delightful than those of the mortal world³⁷⁸. In the Kathopanishad (I. 12) it is stated by Yama himself that in Heaven there is no fear and no old age, that the denizen of Heaven is beyond hunger, thirst and sorrow and is in the midst of all delights. The Kauṣītaki Br. Up. as quoted by Śaṅkarācārya on Vedāntasūtra I. 1.28 contains the statement that the abode of sinners is below this world or³⁷⁹ the earth. The Chāndogya Up. in one place remarks³⁸⁰ 'those whose conduct has been good will quickly attain some good birth, the birth of a brāhmaṇa or a kṣatriya or vaiśya. But those whose conduct has been evil will quickly attain an evil birth, the birth of a dog or a hog or a cāṇḍāla'.

We have here a complicated blending of two theories. The original theory of early Vedic times was that of Heaven and Hell which is also that of most religions. Later on when the doctrines of *karma* and *punarjanma* came to be universally believed in India the theory of Heaven and Hell came to be modified by holding that the pleasures of heaven and the torments of Hell both came to an end some time or other and the author of sins was born again as an animal or a tree or a human being suffering from diseases and defects.

377. तस्येयं पृथिवी सर्वा वित्तस्य पूर्णा स्यात् । स एको मानुष आनन्दः । ते ये शत मानुषा आनन्दाः स एको मनुष्यगन्धर्वाणामानन्दः ।...ते ये शतं देवानामानन्दाः स एक इन्द्रस्यानन्दः । तै. उप. II.8.

378. स्वर्गे लोके न भयं किञ्च नास्ति न तत्र त्वं न जरया बिभेति । उभे तीर्त्वा शिनायापिपासे शोकातिगो मोदते स्वर्गलोके ॥ कठोप. I.12.

379. एष उ एवासाधु कर्म कारयति तं यमेभ्यो लोकेभ्योऽधो निनीषते । कौ. ब्रा. उ III.9.

380. तद्य इह रमणीयचरणा अभ्याशो ह यत्ते रमणीयां योनिमापद्येरन्ब्राह्मणयोनिं वा क्षत्रिययोनिं वा वैश्ययोनिं वा । अथ य इह कपूयचरणा अभ्याशो ह यत्ते कपूयां योनिमापद्येरन् शूद्रयोनिं वा सूकरयोनिं वा चण्डालयोनिं वा । छान्दोग्योप. V. 10.7.



The fate of the departed soul after the death of the body will be touched upon in the section on Antyestī and Śrāddha, but in connection with the doctrine of Hell it is necessary to say something about Yama. In Rg. X. 58. 1 Yama is called Vaivasvata (son of Vivasvat, the Sun). Yama is at least an Indo-Iranian deity. Yama is eulogised in Rg. X. 14. He is called a king and is credited with the task of gathering together people (X. 14. 1); he is said to have been the first to make a way (to Heaven) which was followed by former ancestors of mankind (X. 14. 2 'Yamo no gātum prathamo viveda...yatrā naḥ pūrve pitarāḥ pareyuḥ'). The soul when departing from this world is told that when he follows the paths of the ancient ancestors he would see the two kings Yama and Varuṇa. In Rg. X. 14. 13-15 the priests are asked to press Soma for Yama, to offer oblations to him and it is said that *yajña* reaches Yama, Agni being the messenger. In Rg. X. 135. 1 Yama is stated to drink in the company of gods, he is the lord of men. Yama owns two dogs each having four eyes who guard the way, who are the spies of Yama and who move among men and mark their doings. In Rg. X. 97. 16 the sage prays 'May the plants release me from the (effects of the) violation of oaths, from the violation of the ordinances of Varuṇa, from the fetters which Yama claps on the feet of sinners and from all sins against the gods.'³⁸¹ In Rg. X. 165. 4 Yama is identified with Mr̥tyu (death) and the owl (an evil omen) or a *kapota* is said to be the *dūta* (harbinger) of Yama. Rg. I. 38. 5 (addressed to the Maruts) appears to crave for something which is opposed to what other references to Yama state 'May not the singer of your praises go by the path of Yama'.³⁸² Thus, though in the Rgveda, Yama is a god and mostly a beneficent ruler of men, there is an element of fear associated with him as the two prying dogs that guard the way to heaven and his being called Mr̥tyu would suggest. The Atharvaveda refers to Yama in several places in the same strain as in the Rg. In A. V. 18. 3. 13 it is said ³⁸³ 'serve the king Yama with offering, who was the first to die among men, who was the first to depart from this world and who, the son of Vivasvat, is the gatherer of men'. In Tai. S. V. I. 8.2 and V. 2. 3. 1 it is stated that Yama is the lord of all mortals and of

381. मुञ्चन्तु मा शपथ्यादथो वरुण्यादुत । अथो यमस्य पद्वीशात् सर्वस्य हविषा कलिष-
णात् ॥ ऋ. X. 97.16.

382. मा वो मृगो न यवसे जरिता भूदजोष्यः । पथा यमस्य गादुप ॥ ऋ. X. 165. 4.

383. यो ममार प्रथमो मर्त्यानां यः प्रेयाय प्रथमो लोकमेतम् । वैवस्वतं सङ्गमन् अजानां
यमं राजानं हविषा सपर्यत ॥ अथर्व. 18.3.13.

the whole extent of the earth. In Tai. S. III. 3. 8. 3-4 it is declared ³⁸⁴ 'Yama is indeed Agni and this (earth and altar) is Yamī. When a sacrificer strews *Oṣadhis* on the Vedi it is indeed tantamount to taking up a debt from Yama. If he (the sacrificer) were to go from this world without burning them they (Yama's men) might take him to the next world with fetters round his neck.' In Rg. X. 14. 10³⁸⁵ the *pitṛs* are said to enjoy delights in the company of Yama. In the Ait. Br. ^{385a} (XII. 3) Mṛtyu is credited with having fetters (*pāśas*) and wooden maces (*sthānu*) for catching erring men. It has already been seen how Yama is said to have within his powers again and again foolish men who believe in the existence of this world alone and deny the existence of the next. Thus, from being a beneficent ruler of the departed souls in the very early Vedic times, Yama came gradually to be looked upon as a dreadful punisher of men.³⁸⁶ The Purāṇas contain graphic descriptions of Yama's abode and of his assistants, chief among whom is Citragupta. For example, the Varāhapurāṇa ^{386a} chap. 205 contains a dialogue between Yama and Citragupta, in which the latter recommends the fate that a dead person deserves for his actions. The Agnipurāṇa chap. 371. 12 states that a sinner falls into horrible hells that are declared by Citragupta at the order of Yama.

(197) 384. अग्निर्वायु यम इयं यमी कुसीदं वा एतद्यमस्य यजमान आदत्ते यदोषधीभिर्वेदिं स्तृणाति यदनुषौष्य प्रयायाद् ग्रीवबद्धमेनममुष्मिँल्लोके नेनीयेरन् । तै. सं. III.3.8.3-4.

385. अथा पितृन्सुविदत्राँ उपेहि यमेन ये सधमादं मदन्ति । ऋ. X. 14. 10.

385a. स सर्वान्पाशान्सर्वान् स्थाणून् मृत्योरतिमुच्य स्वस्त्येवोदमुच्यत । ऐ. ब्रा. XII.3.

386. Vide an article in the Journal of the Benares Hindu University, vol. IV pp. 19-46 on 'Yama and the Pitṛs' (where Vedic, Avestic and Norse evidence is led and a naturalistic explanation is given such as Yama being the light of dawn, pitṛs as 'rays of light' and saramā 'light of twilight'). Vide Dr. R. N. Dandekar in B. C. Law Presentation vol. I. pp. 194-209, where most of the theories of Western scholars about Yama are presented and examined. The naturalistic explanations have been in vogue from very ancient times, as the Kāṭhaka Samhitā VII.10 implies 'अहर्वासीन्न रात्री सा यमी भ्रातरं मृतं नामृष्यत तां यदपृच्छन् यमि कर्हि ते भ्रातामृतेत्यद्येवाब्रवीत्'.

386 a. अयं वृक्षस्त्वयं तिर्यगयं मोक्षं व्रजेन्नरः ॥...2 अयमायोधने शत्रुं हत्वा तु निधनं गतः । ब्राह्मणार्थं गवार्थं वा राष्ट्रार्थं निधनं गतः । शक्रस्य ह्यमरावत्यां निवेदयत मा चिरम् । verses 9-10 of chap. 205 of बराहपुराण; अन्यच्छरीरमादत्ते यातनीयं स्वकर्मभिः । शुंक्तेथ पापकृदुःखं सुखं धर्माय सङ्गतः ॥ यमाज्ञतैः किङ्करैस्तु पात्यते नरकेषु च । अग्निपु. 203. 4-5; गृह्णाति तत्क्षणाद्योगे शरीरं चातिवाहिकम् । आकाशवायुतेजांसि विग्रहादूर्ध्वगामिनः ॥ ...यम इष्ट्वा यमोक्तेन चित्रशुतेन चेरितान् । प्राप्नोति नरकान्तौद्रान् धर्मा शुभपथैर्दिवम् ॥ अग्निपु. 371. 9 and 12.



We must now turn to the ideas of Heaven and Hell contained in the post-Vedic Literature, sūtras, smṛtis, purāṇas and digests. The Nir. (I. 11) quotes³⁸⁷ a quarter of a Vedic verse which means 'for fear that if we (women) acted crookedly (towards our husbands) we might fall into Hell.' The word Naraka is derived by it in two ways (*ni + araka*), viz. as meaning 'going below' (the earth) or (*na + ra + ka*) 'where there is not the slightest place for joy'. In another place, while deriving the word 'putra' (son) the Nir. (II. 11) declares that the son is called *putra* because he saves (the father) from the hell called *put*. The same derivation of the word *putra* is offered by Manu IX. 138 (= Ādiparva 229.14 = Viṣṇudharmasūtra 15.44). Gautama (13.7) promises³⁸⁸ heaven to the witnesses in a cause if they speak the truth, but Hell (*naraka*) if they tell the opposite (of truth). After defining *patana* as loss of the capacity to perform the privileged acts of twice-born classes (such as Veda study &c.) and stating that by being guilty of sins a man does not in the next world reap the fruits of his good actions, Gautama states the striking view of other sages that *naraka* is nothing more than this loss of capacity and of the fruits of good acts, his own view however being that *naraka* is a particular place where a man has to dwell solely in distress and sorrow. It was the emphatic view of Gautama that men of the several *varṇas* and *āśramas* that are devoted to the actions prescribed as peculiar to each, enjoy after departing from this body, the fruits of their actions and then owing to some remainder of their total actions are born in bodies in appropriate circumstances as to the country, caste, family, appearance, length of life, learning, conduct, wealth, happiness and intelligence, while those who act contrariwise

387. अथापि न इत्येष इत् इत्यनेन संप्रयुज्यते परिभये नेज्जिह्वायन्त्यो नरकं पताम इति। नरकं न्यरकं नीचैर्गमनं नास्मिन्मरणं स्थानमल्पमप्यस्तीति वा। निरुक्त I. 11. Some editions give the whole verse हविर्भिरके स्वरितः सचन्ते सुन्वन्त एके सवनेषु सोमाग्र। शचीर्मदन्त उत दक्षिणाभिर्नो. This is a खिल verse after Rg X. 106.1. विश्वरूप on या. III. 217 quotes नेज्जि. and explains 'जिह्वायन्त्यः कौटिल्येन प्रवृत्ताः कामकार-प्रवृत्ता इति यावत्। अतश्चाकामकृते नैव नरकप्राप्तिः'; पुत्रः पुरु त्रायते निपरणाह पुत्र नरकं ततश्चायत इति वा। निरुक्त II. 11.

388. स्वर्गः सत्यवचने विपर्यये नरकः। गौ. 13.7. द्विजातिकर्मभ्यो दद्यात्तन्मरणम् तथा परत्र चासिद्धिः। तमेके नरकम्। गौ. 21. 4-6, on the last of which हर्षदेव remarks 'स्वमतं तु विशिष्टे देशे दुःखैकतानस्य वासो नरक इति'; vide also अपरार्क p. 1045 for the view of Gautama.

pass into all sorts of births and are ruined³⁸⁹. Āp. Dh. S. holds that a man becomes fit for Naraka if he follows activities solely dictated by sensual pleasures.³⁹⁰ In another place Ap. Dh. S. affirms that *Naraka* is indeed one's lot when one transgresses one's *dharma*. It also states that rewards without end are denominated *svargya*. The Vedāntasūtra III. 1.13 makes it³⁹¹ clear that after enjoying the fruits of one's actions in the abode of Yama (*Samyamana*) evil-doers ascend to this mortal world. In Vedāntasūtra III. 1.15 the *narakas*³⁹² are said to be seven. Pāṇini VI. 2.38 teaches the accent of *mahāraurava*. In the Kāśikā com. on Pāṇini III. 2.88 a vedic verse is cited according to which one who kills his mother enters the 7th *naraka*. The Viṣṇupurāṇa I. 6.41 names seven hells, Tāmisra, Andhatāmisra, Mahāraurava, Raurava, Asipatravana, Kālasūtra and Avīci and (in II. 6. 2-5) names 26 *narakas*. Śaṅkha-Likhita as quoted by the Madanapārijāta pp. 694-695 mentions in detail the torments that evil-doers undergo in the hells called Kumbhīpāka, Raurava, Mahāraurava &c. Manus IV. 88-90, Yāj. III. 222-224, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 43. 2-22, Agnipurāṇa 371. 20-22, Nārada (*prakīrṇaka* 44) enumerate 21 *narakas*. The names are almost the same in all these works, the variations being due mostly to the scribes having read certain letters differently. The 21 names are generally significant and may be set out from Manus as follows: Tāmisra (darkness), Andhatāmisra (blinding darkness), Mahāraurava, Raurava (abounding in paths with heated surfaces, according to Pr. V. p. 15), Kālasūtra (like the thread on the wheel with which the potter cuts off a raw earthen pot in two), Mahānaraka, Sañjivana (where one is made to revive and is again killed), Mahāvīci (where one is submerged in surging waves), Tapana (as burning hot as fire), Sampratāpana (same as Kumbhīpāka, according to Pr. V. p. 15), Saṅghāta (making many stay in a small place like the legendary Black-

389. वर्णाश्रमाः स्वस्वधर्मनिष्ठाः प्रेत्य कर्मफलमनुभूय ततः शेषेण विशिष्टदेशजाति-कुलरूपायुःश्रुतवृत्तवित्तसुखमेधसो जन्म प्रतिपद्यन्ते। विष्वञ्चो विपरीता नश्यन्ति। गौ. XI. 29-30, q. by शाङ्कर in his भाष्य on वेदान्तसूत्र III. 1.8

390. तदनुवर्तमानो नरकाय राध्यति। आप. ध. सू. I.4.12.12; दृष्टो दर्पति दृष्टो धर्ममतिक्रामति धर्मातिक्रमे खलु पुनर्नरकः। आप. ध. सू. I.4.13.4; ततः परमनन्त्यं फल स्वर्ग्यशब्दं श्रूयते। आप. ध. सू. II.9.23.12.

391. संयमने त्वनुभूयेतरेषामारोहावरोहौ तद्गतिदशनात्। वेदान्तसूत्र III.1.13. शाङ्कर in his भाष्य relies on Kathopaniṣad II. 6 and Rg. X.14.1 (both quoted above) in support.

392. अपि च सप्त। वेदान्तसूत्र III.1.15; अपि च सप्त नरका रौरवप्रमुखा दुष्कृतफलाः। पभोगभूमित्वेन स्मर्यन्ते पौराणिकैः। शाङ्करभाष्य.



hole of Calcutta), Kākola (where one is preyed on by crows), Kudmala (where one is bound with ropes into a bundle, which looks like a closed bud), Pūtimṛttika (where the clay has a putrid smell), Lohaśaṅku (piercing one with iron nails), Rjīṣa (where boiled flour is thrown about), Panthāḥ (where one is made to walk constantly to and fro), Śālmali (where one is struck with thorns like those of the silk-cotton tree), Nadi (i. e. where one is carried away by a river such as the Vaitaraṇī), Asipatravana (where one is cut up by a forest of sword blades), Lohadāraka (which cuts up limbs with iron). Manu (XII. 75-76) again mentions the Tāmisra, Asipatravana and Kumbhīpāka narakas and Manu III. 249 Kālasūtra. Kullūka (on Manu. IV. 88-90), Pr. V. (p. 16), the Dipakalikā (on Yāj. III. 222-224) and other commentaries say that the conditions in the hells may be read in the Mārkaṇḍeya-purāṇa and other works. Vide Agnipurāṇa 203 and 371 (where Hells are said to be 144), Brahmapurāṇa, chap. 22 (which names 25 narakas and states what sinners fall into which of them), chap. 214 (verses 14-17 of which speak of 22 narakas and verses 51-103 contain harrowing descriptions of the horrible torments of hell), chap. 215. 83. ff. (for names and descriptions of several narakas).³⁹³

Brahma-vaivarta (prakṛtikhaṇḍa chap. 29 which names 86 *narakakuṇḍas*³⁹⁴ and chap. 33), Nārada-purāṇa, pūrvārdha 15.1-20 (for narakas and torments), Padmapurāṇa (Uttara, chap. 227 for 140 narakas and Pātālakhaṇḍa chap. 48 for several narakas), Bhaviṣyapurāṇa (Brahmaparva, chap. 192.11-27 for torments of Hell and Uttaraparva Chap. 5-6 for sins and narakas). The Bhāgavatapurāṇa V.26.6 states that there are 28 narakas, though according to some there are 21. Vide also Viṣṇupurāṇa

393. Yāj. and Viṣṇu read 'avīci' 'for mahāvīci. Yāj. reads Sampratāpana (throwing down in a pit) for Sampratāpana and adds Kumbhīpāka separately, which latter means 'heating after placing inside a jar'. The printed Manusmṛti reads 'Pratimūrtikam', which is a misreading of some mss. Some Mss read 'Lohacāraka' which may mean 'being made to walk over red hot iron' or 'being fettered with irons' (Pr. V. p. 16). All the names are explained by Pr. V. (pp. 15-16) and by some of the commentators of Manu. According to Jamadagni quoted in Pr. V p. 16 Vaitaraṇī is a river in the nether regions which is full of foul smell and blood, which has hot water, is very rapid and has on the crest of its waves bones and hair. Saṅkha-Likhita (q. by Madanapārijāta p. 695) describes Vaitaraṇī as 'taptodakā' (having hot water).

394. नरकाणां च कुण्डानि सन्ति नानाविधानि च। नानापुराणभेदेनासम्भेदानि तानि च।...षडशीतिश्च कुण्डानि संयमन्यां वसन्ति च। ब्रह्मवैवर्त, प्रकृतिखण्ड 29.4.6.

II. X. 6.2-5, Skandapurāṇa I, chap. 39 and VI 226-227. In the Mārkaṇḍeyapurāṇa (chap. 12) we have a description of several narakas like the Raurava, Mahāraurava, Asipatravana &c. and chap. 14 (verses 39-94) mentions the punishments meted out to perpetrators of various sins. In the Mahābhārata also narakas and the torments thereof are frequently referred to. For example, Śāntiparva 321.32 speaks of Vaitaraṇī and Asipatravana, Anuśāsana (23.60-82) speaks of the actions that lead to hell (each verse having the refrain *te vai niraya-gāminah*) Anuśāsana 145.10-13. Svargārohanika-parva (2.16-26) describes the several horrible sights and torments of such hells as 'Asipatravana' (named in verse 23) and Kūṭasālmali (named in Svargārohanika 3.4). The Vṛddha-Hārīta-smṛti (IX. 167-171) mentions almost the same 21 narakas as the Manusmṛti does. The craze for multiplying narakas went so far that the Brahmapurāṇa, the Viṣṇudharmottara³⁹⁵, the Garuḍa-purāṇa and others declared that there were thousands, lakhs and crores of narakas.

The Viṣṇu Dh. S. (46. 23-29) provides that those guilty of atipātakas, anupātakas, saṅkarikarāṇa, who have not undergone prāyaścittas suffer respectively for one Kalpa,^{395a} for one Manvantara, for four Yugas, for a thousand years in the 21 narakas in rotation and the other sinners for many years. Yama quoted by the Madanapārijāta p. 696 says that those guilty of Mahāpātakas stay in Hell with face downwards for a *yuga* and Yama has numerous other verses stating what sinners undergo which horrors of Hell.

Buddhists appear to have borrowed the doctrine about hells from Brahmanical writers. Vide Dr. B. C. Law's monograph on 'Heaven and Hell in Buddhist perspective' (1925), pages 111-113, which refer to eight Mahānirayas and there are other lesser Hells. The eight Mahānirayas are Sañjīva, Kālasutta, Saṅghāta, Roruva, Mahāroruva, Tapa, Mahātapa and Avīci. It will be noticed how those names agree closely with Manu's list

395. खड्गशूलनिपातैश्च भिद्यन्ते पापकारिणः । नरकाणां सहस्रेषु लक्षकोटिशतेषु च स्वकर्मोपार्जितैर्दोषैः पीड्यन्ते यमकिङ्करैः । ब्रह्मपुराण 215. 82-83 ; अष्टाविंशतिकोट्यस्युर्ध्वोराणि नरकाणि वै । महापातकिनश्चात्र सर्वे स्युर्नरकाब्धिषु ॥ आचन्द्रतारकं यावत्पीड्यन्ते विविधैर्वधैः । अतिपातकिनश्चान्ये निरयार्णवकोटिषु । विष्णुधर्मोत्तर q. in स्मृतिमु. (प्रा.) p. 859 ; गरुडपुराण (प्रेतखण्ड) chap 3. 3 नरकाणां सहस्राणि वर्तन्ते ह्यरुणानुज ।

395a. For Kalpa, Manvantara and Yuga, vide H. of Dh. vol. III pp. 890-891.



of hells. For the gruesome details of Hell and torments therein in ancient Jain works, vide Uttarādhyayana-sūtra (S.B.E. vol. 45 pp. 93-97) and Sūtrakṛtāṅga I. 5 (S. B. E. vol. 45 pp. 279-286). Similarly, for the ideas of Heaven and Hell in Zoroastrianism, vide Mr. S. N. Kanga's 'Heaven and Hell and their location in Zoroastrianism and in the Vedas' (1933).

The Buddhists held their penitential meetings (Pātimokkha), for which see S. B. E. vol. XIII. pp. 1-69 and for the 92 *pācittiya* (Prāyaścittiya) rules, vide pp. 32-55 of the same volume.

There are very glowing descriptions of Heaven (*svarga*) in the Mahābhārata, the Purāṇas and other works. We have already seen how Heaven was supposed to be a place of delights in the R̥gveda and even in the Upaniṣads like Kātha (I. 12-13 and 18 'śokātigo modate svargaloke'). R̥g. X. 107.2 affirms that those who give (large) *dakṣiṇā* stand high in the Heavens (as stars), those that donate horses go in the company of the Sun and those that donate gold become immortal. An³⁹⁶ echo of this is found in Vanaparva 186.9. The Kauṣ. Up. 1.3 speaks of several worlds (*lokas*) of the gods such as those of Agni, Vāyu, Varuṇa, Āditya, Indra, Prajāpati, Brahmā and a similar gradation of higher worlds is described in Br. Up. III.6 (such as Devaloka, Indraloka, Prajāpatiloka, Brahmaloaka). The Br. Up. I.5. 16 speaks of manuṣyaloka, pitṛloka and devaloka and holds that devaloka is the best of all worlds.³⁹⁷ Kauṣ. Up. 1. 4 implies that in the heavenly world divine nymphs, garlands, collyrium, fragrant powder, garments wait upon the fortunate denizens. Śāṅkara on Vedānta-sūtra (IV. 3.4) says that the word 'loka' means 'a place for enjoying the fruits of one's actions' (*bhogāyatana*) and that Hiranyagarbha is the *adhyakṣa* of *Brahmaloka* (on Vedānta-sūtra IV. 3.10). In the Vanaparva (54. 17-19) it is stated that *svarga* is the place for those who die in battle. How *svarga* is like and what the pleasures of heaven are is described in Vanaparva, chap. 186.6-7, viz. that there are extensive lakes full of golden lotus flowers and fish and devoid of mud, that on the banks of those lakes dwell the meritorious honoured by Apsarases who apply fragrant cosmetics to their

396. परं लोकं गोप्रदास्त्वाप्नुवन्ति दत्त्वा नहुं सूर्यलोकं व्रजन्ति । वासो दत्त्वा मसं तु लोकं दत्त्वा हिरण्यममरत्वमेति । वनपर्व 186.9.

397. त्रयो वाव लोका मनुष्यलोकः पितृलोको देवलोक इति सोऽयं मनुष्यलोकः पितृलोको जय्यो नान्येन कर्मणा कर्मणा पितृलोको विद्यया देवलोको देवलोको वै लोकानां श्रेष्ठः । वृह. उप. I.5.16.

bodies, wear ornaments and have brilliant golden complexions. Similar pleasures enjoyed in the Nandana park are promised in Brahmapurāṇa, 225. 5-6. Vanaparva (chap. 261 verses 28-29) says that there is one great draw-back in going to heaven, viz. that there one simply enjoys the rewards of one's good actions, no new merit is accumulated there, one simply subsists on the accumulated principal or store of merit and that when that store is exhausted one has to fall down, the only good point about this being that one is born a man and that too in such a way that he enjoys³⁹⁸ happiness. Anuśāsana (23. 84-102) sets out numerous actions whereby a man attains heaven (each verse having the refrain '*te narāḥ svarga-gāminah*'). Similarly, in Brahmapurāṇa 224. 9-14, 18-25 and 30-37 we have the same refrain. Vide also Anuśāsana chapters 144 (verses 5-15, 19-26, 31-39) and 145. Śānti (99. 4-5) states that svarga is full of those fallen in battle, there are Gandharva damisels there for the brave (and there is hell for the coward) and that svarga yields all desires that one may entertain. The Śāntiparva (192. 8 and 21) states that svarga was in the North, that (Śānti 191. 13, 193. 27) there was neither hunger nor thirst nor weariness nor old age nor sin (in Heaven), that good men (Śānti 271. 24) are seen as stars (or become stars). In the Matsyapurāṇa (276. 17) it is³⁹⁹ stated that he who performs Brahmāṇḍadāna (one of the 16 *mahādānas*) reaches the world of Viṣṇu and delights in the company of Apsarases. The Brahmapurāṇa (225. 6-7) assures us that a generous donor goes to heaven where he enjoys the best pleasures in the company of Apsarases and in the heavenly garden called Nandana and when he falls down from heaven he is born as a mortal in a rich and noble family. Vide also Garuḍapurāṇa II. 3.86-89. It is not necessary to multiply passages. There are two matters to be noted in connection with Heaven and its pleasures. One is the calculating or bargaining spirit which the smṛtis and purāṇas display viz. make this or that gift and then there is so much delight to be enjoyed in heaven, a sort of profit and loss account; and the second is that the highest

398. कृतस्य कर्मणस्तत्र भुज्यते यत्फलं दिवि । न चान्यत् क्रियते कर्म मूलच्छेदेन भुज्यते ॥ सोऽत्र दोषो मम मतस्तस्यान्ते पतनं च यत् । सुखव्याप्तमनस्कानां पतनं यच्च मुद्वल ॥ अयं त्वन्यो गुणः श्रेष्ठः च्युतानां स्वर्गतो मुने । शुभानुशययोगेन मनुष्येषूपजायते । तत्रापि स महाभागः सुखभागभिजायते । वनपर्व 261.28-29 and 33.

399. इत्थं य एतदखिलं पुरुषोऽत्र कुर्याद् ब्रह्माण्डदानमधिगम्य महद्भिमानम् । निर्वृतकल्मषविशुद्धतनुर्मुरोरानन्दकृत्यदमुपैति सहाप्सरोभिः ॥ मत्स्यपु. 276.17 q. by अपरार्क p. 323.

pleasures of Heaven have a time limit, i. e. they are to come to an end one day and the meritorious have to be born again in mortal bodies. The doctrine was gradually evolved that there is no final release from the cycle of births and deaths by the performance of meritorious deeds alone.

It is not necessary to set out at length the gruesome torments of Hell described in great detail in several smṛtis and purāṇas. By way of a sample, the following description taken from a Dharmaśāstra work (viz. Viṣṇu Dh. S. 43.32-45) will be quite enough. "Sinners guilty of having committed (one or more of the nine kinds of) sins have to endure terrible sufferings when they have left this life and reached the path of Yama. Being dragged hither and thither by the fierce servants of Yama they are led (to hell) by them with frightening gestures. (In Hell) they are devoured by dogs, jackals, crows, herons, cranes and other birds eating raw flesh, by snakes and scorpions that have fire in their mouths (i. e. that emit stinging poison). They are scorched by fire, pierced by thorns, divided into parts by saws and oppressed by thirst. They are afflicted with hunger and by terrible hordes of tigers and they faint away at every step on account of the stinking smell of pus and blood. Desiring to secure the food and drink of others they are beaten by the servants (of Yama) whose faces are similar to those of such horrible animals as crows, herons and cranes. In some places they are boiled in oil, in others they are pounded with pestles or ground down in iron or stone vessels. In some places they (have to) eat what is vomitted or pus or blood or excrements, and hideous meat smelling like pus. In one place they have to stay in terrible darkness, and are devoured by horrible worms having flames in their mouths. In some places they are overwhelmed by cold or have to pass through the midst of unclean things and in other places the departed devour each other, thus becoming most horrible. In some places they are beaten on account of their former deeds and are suspended in other places (from trees &c.) or are struck with heaps of arrows or are cut into pieces. In other places they have to tread upon thorns and they are encircled by the hoods of serpents, they are tormented with machines and are dragged by their knees. Their backs, heads and necks are fractured, they become terrible (to look at), their throats being reduced to the size fit for a cave shelter and they become unable to bear torments. Sinners are being tormented in this way and having suffered intense



pain undergo various further sufferings in their passage through animal bodies (in which they are thereafter born).”

That *naraka* is a place below the earth is frequently stated in the Purāṇas. For example, in the Garuḍa and Brahmāṇḍa purāṇas all Hells such as Raurava are stated to be situated below the earth. Vide Viṣṇupurāṇa II. 6.1 also. The Bhāgavatapurāṇa states that Hells are below the earth and above water to the south of the three worlds and hang without support, in which dwell the troupes of pitrs called *Agniśvāta* and others.⁴⁰⁰ The Agnipurāṇa (371. 13-14) avers that the 28 groups of *narakas* are below the earth and even below the 7th *Pātāla*.

We come across Vedic passages such as these ‘This sacrificer who is possessed of the utensils of *yajña* directly reaches Heaven’ (Śat. Br. XII. 5. 2. 8.)⁴⁰¹, ‘one who desires Heaven should offer the Darśapūrṇamāsa sacrifice’, ‘one desirous of attaining heaven should perform the Jyotiṣṭoma sacrifice’. What is meant by *svarga* or *naraka* has given rise to hot discussions from very ancient times. The popular view as reflected even in the Vedas, the smṛtis and purāṇas was that *svarga* was a place above the earth and *naraka* was a place of actual torments below the earth. Even ancient astronomical works located *svarga* thousands of *yojanas* above the earth. Parāśara,⁴⁰² an astronomer and a predecessor of Varāha-mihira quoted by Utpala on Br. Sam. I. 11, stated ‘Bhū (the earth) is 67080 crores of *yojanas* and it is the expanse of the earth; beyond it there is impenetrable darkness, in the midst of which there is the golden

400. भूमेरधस्तात्ते सर्वे रौरवाद्याः प्रकीर्तिताः । गरुड (प्रेतखण्ड) 3. 55, ब्रह्माण्ड, उप-संहारपाद chap. 2.52 ; ततश्च नरकान् विप्र भुवोऽधः सलिलस्य च । पापिनो येषु पात्यन्ते तान् शृणुष्व महामुने ॥ ब्रह्मपुराण 22. 6. 1. राजोवाच । नरका नाम भगवन् किं देशविशेषा अथवा बहिःस्थितोऽस्या आहोस्विदन्तराल इति । ऋषिरुवाच । अन्तराल एव त्रिजगत्यास्तु दिशि दक्षिणस्यामधस्ताद्भूमेरुपरिष्ठाच्च जलाद्यस्यामग्निष्वात्तादयः पितृगणाः...निवसन्ति । भागवत पुराण V. 26. 3-4.

401. Vide H. of Dh. Vol. II. p. 985 note of 2233 for enumeration of the ten *yajñāyudhas* from Tai. S. I. 6. 8. 2-3 and Śat. Br. I. 1. 1. 22.

स एष यज्ञायुधी यजमानोऽञ्जसा स्वर्गं लोकं याति । शतपथब्रा. XII. 5. 2.8 quoted by शबर on जै. I. 1. 5 in the पूर्वपक्ष ; ‘दर्शपूर्णमासाभ्यां स्वर्गकामो यजेत’ q. by शबर on जै. II. 1. 1.

402. सप्तषष्टिसहस्राण्यशीतियोजनकोट्यो भूर्यत्पृथिवीमण्डलं परस्मादगम्यं तमः । तन्मध्ये हिरण्यमयो मेरुश्चतुरशीतियोजनसहस्रोच्छ्रितो षाडश चाधस्तात् । त्रिगुणविस्तारायामो यं स्वर्गमाचक्षते तन्मध्येनार्कचन्द्रौ ज्योतिश्चक्रं च पर्येति । पराशर q. by उत्पल on बृ. सं. I. 11.



mountain Meru, 84000 *yojanas* high and sixteen below and thrice as much in length and width, which is called *svarga*. But it would be far from the truth to say that all eminent writers were agreed on the actual existence of *svarga* and *naraka* as *places*. It has already been shown how several centuries before Christ Gautama refers to the view of some predecessors of his that *naraka* is *not a place*, but simply means the loss of the capacity to perform the peculiar actions of one's *varṇa*. There were others who argued in the same strain. Śābara (on Jai. IV. 3. 27-28) quotes a Vedic passage where the view of the sage appears to be that sacrifices yield the reward promised by śruti in the next life and where Kumārila ⁴⁰³ in his brief comment propounds the view that the injunctive passage (*vidhi*) of the Veda only promises a reward but does not state that it follows immediately in this life, that *svarga* which means unsurpassed joy, can happen only in another life. On Jaimini VI. 1. 1. Śābara first puts forward the *prima facie* view that *svarga* ⁴⁰⁴ imports in popular language such things (*dravya*) as fine silken clothes, sandalwood paste, young damsels only 16 years old and that the word *svarga* is also popularly applied to a particular *place* where there is neither heat nor cold, neither hunger nor thirst, neither distress nor fatigue and where only those that have done meritorious deeds can reach and not others. Śābara refutes this view and holds that the primary meaning of the word *svarga* is joy ⁴⁰⁵ or delight and not a thing (*dravya*) which brings joy.

There is a well-known and oft quoted verse which defines *svarga* as follows: ⁴⁰⁶ that happiness which is not mixed up with

403. फलं भवतीत्येतावति विधिः शब्दोऽस्ति । न त्वनन्तरत्वे । तस्मादनियमः । स्वर्गस्तु जन्मान्तर एव । स हि निरतिशया प्रीतिः कर्मानुरूपा चेति न शक्येह जन्मन्यनुभवितुम् । यतोऽस्मिंल्लोके क्षणेक्षणे सुखदुःखे अनुभवन्ति । ... देहान्तरं तु निरतिशयप्रीत्यनुभवनायान्यथानुपपत्त्या कल्पयते । तच्चासृत्तस्य न भवतीत्यतो जन्मान्तरे स्वर्गः । दुपटीका on जै. IV.3. 27-28.

404. सर्वेषामेव शब्दानामर्थज्ञाने लौकिकः प्रयोगोऽभ्युपायः । तस्मिंश्च लौकिके प्रयोगे द्रव्यवचनः स्वर्गशब्दो लक्ष्यते । कौशेयानि सूक्ष्माणि वासांसि स्वर्गः, चन्दनानि स्वर्गः, द्रव्यद्वयः स्वर्ग इति । यद्यत् प्रीतिमद् द्रव्यं तत्तत्स्वर्गशब्देनोच्यते । ... ननु स्वर्गशब्दो लोके प्रसिद्धो विशिष्टे देशे यस्मिन्लोके न शीतं न क्षुब्धं न तृष्णा नारातिर्न ग्लानिः पुण्यकृत एव प्रेत्य तत्र गच्छन्ति नान्ये । शबर on जै. VI.1.1.

405. तत एतच्चावद्वर्णयन्ति । प्रीतिः स्वर्ग इति । कुतः । एवमुक्तं भवता प्रीतिविशिष्टे द्रव्ये स्वर्गशब्दो वर्तत इति । यद्येवं पूर्वं तर्हि प्रीतिं वर्तितुमर्हति । तां हि स न व्यभिचरति । व्यभिचरति पुनर्द्रव्यम् । शबर on जै. VI.1.2. On जै. VI.1.1 the दुपटीका remarks 'एकस्य सिद्धांतवादिनः) प्रीतिः स्वर्गशब्दवाच्या, अपरस्य (पूर्वपक्षवादिनः) प्रीतिमद्द्रव्यम् । विशिष्ट देशोऽभ्युपायः । किं कारणं, तस्याप्रत्यक्षत्वेन व्यवहाराभावः । तेन व्यवहाराभावात्प्रयोगाभावः ।'

406. यच्च दुःखेन संभिन्नं न च अस्तमनन्तरम् । अभिलाषोपनीतं तत्सुखं स्वःपदारूपदम् ॥

pain, which is not immediately afterwards overwhelmed (by pain) and which is present whenever desired, is denoted by the word *svah* (or *svarga*). The *Prakarana-pañcikā* of Śālikanātha,^{406a} one of the early works of the Prabhākara Mīmāṃsā school, affirms that in such sentences as 'one desirous of heaven should perform the Jyotiṣṭoma' the rite is simply commended by Vedic passages, which are no more than *arthavādas*, as a means of securing long-enduring happiness which is free from the taint of all kinds of sorrow and which is present at the mere desire of the enjoyer. The Śāntiparva expressly states 'The wise do not regard the other world as directly seen by anyone; one has to entertain faith (in the existence of the other world) because otherwise one may run counter to the Vedas.'⁴⁰⁷ The Brahmapurāṇa and the Viṣṇupurāṇa speak in the same strain as Śābara that *svarga* is what causes happiness to the mind, that *naraka* is the opposite of it and that meritorious deeds and wicked deeds are designated as *svarga* and *naraka* respectively and that *svarga* and *naraka* are really states of the mind characterised by happiness and pain respectively.⁴⁰⁸

One need not wonder at the crude ideas of *naraka* and *svarga* entertained by most ancient Indian writers and works. The same ideas were prevalent among peoples of all religions all the world over. For example, The Egyptians whose dynastic history covers a period of about 5000 years had very remarkable beliefs about Heaven and Hell which were illustrated with pictorial representations copiously (as no other nation had ever done), although the oldest Books of the Dead are without illustrations of any sort (vide E. A. W. Budge's 'Egyptian Heaven and Hell', 1905 p. XI and 2). Sheol was the name the Hebrews gave to the gloomy abode of the dead in the lowest parts of the earth and it was a land of darkness, which was appointed as the house for all living (Job 10. 21-22 and 30. 23). The Greek Hades closely resembles the Hebrew Sheol in its chief characteristics. In the New Testament also Hell is a land of everlasting fire prepared for the devil and his angels and it is a place where the wicked go into everlasting torment

406 a ज्योतिष्टोमेन स्वर्गकामो यजेतेत्येवमादिसमाम्नायं सकलदुःखसम्भेदरहिताभिलाषोपनीतदीर्घतरसुखसाधनत्वेनार्थवादैः स्तूयमानं कर्म दृश्यते । प्रकरणपञ्चिका (p. 102).

407. न दृष्टपूर्वं प्रत्यक्षं परलोकं विदुर्बुधाः । आगमांस्त्वनतिक्रम्य श्रद्धातव्यं बुभूषता ॥ शान्ति. 28.42.

408. मनःप्रीतिकरः स्वर्गो नरकस्तद्विपर्ययः । नरकस्वर्गसंज्ञे वै पापपुण्ये द्विजोत्तमाः ॥ ब्रह्मपु. 22.44, विष्णुपु. II.6.46; मनसः परिणामोऽयं सुखदुःखादिलक्षणः । ब्रह्मपु. 22.47,



and punishment, while the righteous attain life eternal (Matthew 25. 41 and 46, Luke 16.23). The words of the New Testament are plain enough that Heaven was supposed to be a *place* above the earth and the clouds and that Hell was a place below the earth full of darkness and torments. Vide Luke 23. 43, Ephesians I. 3 and 20, II. Cor. 12. 4, Rev. 2. 7; and Luke 12.5 and 16.23; II. Peter 2.4 and Rev. 6.8, 20. 13-14. Bloomfield in his 'Religion of the Veda' p. 252 remarks 'In later Hindu times Hell is filled out with the usual gruesome stage-setting in the style of Dante's Inferno or the wall painting in the *campo santo* at Pisa'. Even men of genius like Shakespeare and most Christian theologians⁴⁰⁹ down even to modern times believed in a literal interpretation of passages from the Bible which speak of Heaven and Hell as places. It is only recently that many Christians have begun to hold that the language of the Bible about Heaven and Hell is purely symbolical in character⁴¹⁰.

409. Vide William James in 'Varieties of religious experience' p. 264, where he says that the fear of the old-fashioned Hell fire was employed by Christianity to extract from it fruits for repentance and conversion value and Pringle-Pattison in 'Idea of Immortality' pp. 15-19. Vide for the Quranic ideas of Hell, SBE, vol. IX p. 317 'Hell is a reward for the outrageous to tarry therein for ages. They shall not taste therein cool nor drink but only boiling water and pus'. Vide also SBE, vol. VI p. 247 (Hell contains seven divisions), vol. VI p. 165 (for the misbeliever is the torment of hell fire), vol. XIV p. 317 and p. 340 (for boiling water, pus and fire). In the Quran Heaven was supposed to consist of seven divisions viz Garden of Eternity, Abode of peace, Abode of rest, Garden of Eden, Garden of Resort, Garden of pleasure, the Garden of the most High, the Garden of Paradise.

410. The Report on the 'Doctrine of the Church of England' published in 1938 by a Commission consisting of some of the highest dignitaries of the English Church makes interesting reading, though to a non-Christian the language appears rather full of circumlocution and far from clear and definite. On p. 206 the Report states "The drama of the Last Things as set forth in the medieval 'Doom' pictures rests on a tradition which makes use of a more or less literal conception of heaven and hell as specific 'places', of which a picture was formed by drawing upon traditional material, more especially the imagery of the Book of Revelation, which is itself largely drawn from Jewish and other pre-Christian sources.....A quasi-literal interpretation of the imagery has in fact generally prevailed among Christians and has been wide-spread even in educated circles almost down to the present day." On p. 219 the above Report remarks "As the essence of Hell is exclusion from the fellowship of God, so the essence of Heaven is that fellowship. It is not a selfish happiness offered in reward for

(Continued on the next page)

The Smṛtis had evolved the doctrine, as stated above, that if a sinner did not undergo prāyaścitta, he had to suffer torments in hell, thereafter he became born as some insect or lower animal or a tree on account of some remnants of his sins and that he was born as a human being afflicted with certain diseases or with defects.⁴¹¹ These last two consequences are described under the title *karmavipāka* (the fruition of evil deeds). Śātātapa (I. 1-5) asserts that men guilty of grave

(Continued from the last page)

self suppression at an earlier time; it is fellowship with God who is love..... This is *infinite bliss* to the soul which is purged of self-interest. Heaven is also a fellowship of finite spirits." It will be patent how modern European minds have begun to think of Heaven and Hell in terms analogous to those in which some of the best minds of India thought of them centuries before and after the Christian era. In spite of the glowing pictures of the pleasures of Heaven and terrifying descriptions of the torments of Hell detailed in many of the sacred and popular works in Sanskrit and other Indian languages people have gone on committing all sorts of sins. The ancient machinery of Heavens and Hells must be deemed to have largely failed of its purpose in these days. Large masses of men appear to be slipping into an abyss of despair, misery, hardness of heart, wanton brutality and lawlessness. The lurid accounts of bombings and night raids on big cities, the reports of the bloody battles for six years in the World War No. 2, the harrowing tales of tortures in such prisoners' camps as at Belsen, the phenomenal rise in the prices of all necessities of life (food, clothing and shelter), frequent strikes and struggles between the employed and the industrialists, growing indiscipline, arson, plunder and bestial treatment of human beings on the ground of race or religion have produced hardness of heart and debased large masses of Indian people. It is a very difficult question for our leaders how to revive among the common people of India, (whom Westerners dubbed mild Hindus) the old characteristics of tolerance, peacefulness, goodwill and respect for human life and property, how to build up a new fabric of society, a new civilization and culture on the ancient Upaniṣadic foundations of the pursuit of Reality, brotherhood of man, the unity of all life, and love of mankind even without pressing into service the ancient and medieval literal conceptions of Heaven and Hell,

411. प्रायश्चित्तविहीनानां महापातकिनां वृणाम् । नरकान्ते भवेज्जन्म चिह्नाङ्कित-
शरीरिणाम् ॥ प्रतिजन्म भवेत्तेषां चिह्नं तत्पापसूचकम् । प्रायश्चित्ते कृते याति पश्चात्तापवतां
युनः ॥ महापातकजं चिह्नं सप्त जन्मनि जायते । उपपापोद्भवं पञ्च त्रीणि पापसमुद्भवम् ॥ दुष्कर्मजा
वृणां रोगा यान्ति चोपक्रमैः शमम् । जाप्यैः सुरार्चनैर्होमैर्दानैस्तेषां शमो भवेत् ॥ शातातप
I. 1-4. The verses 5-10 (about the diseases) and the following verses about
the gift of cows, bulls, land and gold are quoted in the महार्णवकर्मविपाक of
मान्धातु (folio 4a and 4b) as from शातातपीयकर्मविपाक. The प्राय. वि. p. 106 remarks
'पूर्वजन्मकृतयोः सुवर्णापहारसुरापानपापयोर्नरकोपभोगक्षीणयोरपि सुवर्णचौरः कौनख्यं
सुरापः श्यावदन्तताम् (मनु ११.४९)-इत्यनुमितयोः किञ्चित्सावशिष्टत्वादल्पप्रायश्चित्तमाह
वसिष्ठः (20.6) ।'



sins that have not undergone *prāyaścitta* are, after undergoing the torments of Hell, born with bodies marked with certain condemned signs. One guilty of grave sins bears such signs for seven births, one guilty of *upapātaka* for five births and one guilty of *pāpa* for three births. These marks indicative of their having committed a particular sin are observed in each life and only disappear after they repent and perform *prāyaścitta*. Similarly, the diseases arising from sinful deeds subside by adopting the remedies of the recitation of Vedic texts, worship of gods, homas and gifts.' Verses 6-10 specify the diseases that arise in consequence of sins such as leprosy, tuberculosis, gonorrhœa, dysentery, kidney trouble, stone in the bladder, cough, fistula &c. A man may commit sins of three kinds viz. by the body, in words and mentally (Manu XII. 3). Really speaking, it is the mind that is the spring of all actions (Manu XII. 4), but for the sake of convenience, this threefold division is made. Coveting another's wealth by unfair means, desiring that evil should befall another and persistence in false ideas (such as the one that there is no soul, but that the body is the soul)—these three are mental sins (Manu XII. 5). Harshness of speech, falsehood, backbiting and irrelevant prattling—these four are vocal sins (*ibid* XII. 6). Appropriating to oneself another's wealth without his consent, injury to sentient beings against the injunctions of *śāstra*, sexual intercourse with another's wife—these three are bodily sins (*ibid* XII. 7). * Manu provides that bodily sins reduce a man to the state of a fixed object (tree &c.), vocal sins reduce him to the state of birds and beasts and mental sins to the lowest castes (Cāṇḍāla and the like). Hārīta (q. by Par. M.)⁴¹² speaks of 18 evil actions that lead to hell, of which six are mental, four vocal and the rest are bodily sins. Manu XII. 54-59 and 62-68, Yāj. III. 131, 135-136, 207-208 and 213-215, Viṣṇu Dh. S. Chap. 44, Atri. Chap. 4.5-14, 17-44 (in prose) state into what animals, trees and creepers sinners are born after undergoing hell torments. The statements of Yāj. being concise are set out here. 'This soul enters into hundreds of bodies in this *samsāra*, viz. as one of the lowest castes, bird or fixed object (tree &c.) on account of his lapses springing from the mind, speech and body (Yāj. III. 131); a man who

412. सर्वाभक्ष्यभक्षणमभोज्यभोजनमपेयपानमगम्यागमनमयाज्ययाजनमसत्पतिग्रहणं परद्वाराभिगमनं द्रव्यापहरणं प्राणिहिंसा चेति शारीराणि । पारुष्यमवृत्तं विवादश्चतिविक्रयश्चेति वाचिकानि । परोपतापनं पराभिद्रोहः क्रोधो लोभो मोहोऽहङ्कारश्चेति मानसानि । तदेतान्यष्टादश नैरेयाणि कर्माणि... । हारीत q. by परा. मा. II part 2 pp. 212-213.

tells lies, who is a back-biter, whose speech is harsh and who babbles what is irrelevant is reduced to being a bird or a beast (*ibid* III. 135); one who is addicted to misappropriating another's wealth and to sexual intercourse with another's wife, who injures another against *śāstric* rules is born as a fixed object; the murderer of a brāhmaṇa becomes born in the body of a beast (deer &c.), a dog, a pig or a camel; the drinker of *surā* is born as an ass, a *pulkasa* (one born from śūdra woman of a *niṣāda*), or a *veṇa* (one born of an Ambaṣṭha woman from a vaidehaka); the thief of gold reaches the state of a worm, an insect (an ant &c.) or a moth and one guilty of incest becomes grass, a bush or a creeper (Yāj. III. 207-208). On stealing leafy vegetables one is born as a peacock, on stealing perfumes one is born a *chuchundarī* (musk-rat); the thief of corn, of a vehicle, fruits, water, milk, domestic utensils (like pestle), honey, flesh, a cow, fire, cloth, juice (of sugarcane or the like) and salt is born respectively as a mouse, a camel, a monkey, a plava (duck), a crow, a sparrow, bee, vulture, *godhā* (iguana), crane, a man suffering from white leprosy, a dog, *cīrī* (cricket bird). The Brahmapurāṇa (chap. 217 verses 37-110) contains a long disquisition on the different kinds of animal births that sinners of various kinds have to undergo. Vide also Garuḍapurāṇa (Pretakhaṇḍa) 2.60-88, Agni 371.30-32 (which latter states that the murderer of a brāhmaṇa is born as a beast or deer or a dog, hog, or camel, the drinker of wine as an ass or *pukkasa* or *mleccha*, the thief of gold as a worm or pest or moth, one guilty of incest as grass or a bush).

It was believed in very ancient times that diseases were the consequences of sins⁴¹³. In the Atharvaveda VIII. 7.3 plants are said to have destroyed from each limb the disease due to sin⁴¹⁴. Manu XI. 49-52, Vas. 20.44, Yāj. III. 209-211, Viṣṇu Dh. S. Chap. 45, Śātātapa I. 3-11 and II. 1, 30, 32, 47, Gautama-smṛti in verse chap. 20 and Gautama (in prose q. by the Mit. on Yāj. III. 216) or Vṛddha-Gautama (according to Smṛtimuktāphala

413. This belief is not confined to India. In the Gospel of St. John (9.1-3) when a man blind from birth came before Jesus the disciples asked him 'who did sin, this man or his parents that he was born blind'. Jesus is said to have rejected that idea and performed a miracle by restoring to him his sight after applying to the man's eyes clay mixed with the spittle of Jesus and washing his eyes in a pool.

414. आपो अग्रं दिव्या ओषधयः । तास्ते यक्षमेनस्यमङ्गादङ्गादनीनशन् ॥ अथर्व. VIII.7.3.

p. 861), Yama (q. by Pr. M. p.9), Śaṅkha (q. by the Mitākṣarā on Yāj. III. 216), Smṛtyarthasāra pp. 99-100 state the diseases and bodily defects from which sinners suffer after they are born as men. As a sample Yāj. III. 209-211 may be cited here; the murderer of a brāhmaṇa suffers from Tuberculosis, a drinker of *surā* has black teeth, the thief of brāhmaṇa's gold has diseased nails, one guilty of incest suffers from leprosy; the thief of food suffers from dyspepsia, one who stealthily learns without permission (or one guilty of plagiarism) is born dumb, one who mixes up inferior corn with superior corn is born with excessive limbs (with six fingers &c.), a backbiter is born with pus in the nose; a thief of oil is born as *tilapāyī* and one who falsely reports faults in others has a foetid breath. Yāj. III. 217 states that after reaping the consequences of their (evil) deeds (by falling into Hell and) by reaching the state of lower animals, sinners are born as human beings of a low order, poor and with condemned marks on the body; even medical works like the Carakasamhitā held the belief that diseases were the consequences of actions done in past lives (vide Sūtrasthāna, Chap. I 116),

The smṛtis are not in complete agreement about the diseases or bodily defects that sinners of various grades suffer. For example, though Vas. 20.44 and Śaṅkha (q. by Mit. on Yāj. III. 216) state that the murderer of a brāhmaṇa suffers from leprosy, Manu XI. 49, Yāj. III. 209, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 45. 3, Agni. 371. 32 aver that he suffers from phthisis. For want of space the long lists of the births as lower animals and the diseases and deformities from which sinners suffer contained in Śaṅkha, Hārīta, Gautama, Yama and the Purāṇas quoted by the Mit. on Yāj. III. 216, the Par. M. II. part 2 pp. 230-240, 242-272, Madanapārijāta pp. 701-702, the Mahārṇava-karmavipāka are passed over here.

Āp. Dh. S. (II. 1. 2. 6-7) states that a brāhmaṇa, kṣatriya or vaiśya sinner guilty of brāhmaṇa murder, after undergoing the torments of Hell is born again respectively as a Cāṇḍāla, Paulkasa and Vaina and that other sinners who have become outcasts by their sins are born on account of these as certain animals (like pigs). Similarly, Manu XII. 61 provides that one who from greed steals precious stones, pearls, corals and jewels of various kinds is born as a goldsmith.

Although the word *Karman* is ordinarily employed to denote good as well as evil actions still in the section on penances the word 'Karman' prominently presents to the mind the idea of evil deeds. Hence *Karmavipāka* means the ripening (or fruition) of evil actions or sins. This fruition takes three forms, as stated in the *Yogasūtrā*⁴¹⁵ II. 13, viz. *jāti* (birth as a worm or animal &c.), *āyuh* (life i. e. living for a short period such as five or ten years) and *bhoga* (experiencing the torments of Hell &c.). The word *Karmavipāka* appears to have been known to Yāj. III. 131 (*vipākaḥ karmaṇām pretya keśām cid-īha jāyate*) and it occurs frequently in the *Purāṇas* (e. g. in *Brahma-purāṇa* 224. 41, 225. 43 and 59, *Matsya* 115. 14 &c.). The *Pr. Sāra* pp. 219-231 contains probably the longest treatment of *Karmavipāka*. The doctrine of *Karmavipāka* was well known to the Buddhist philosopher Nāgārjuna, who in his *Ratnāvali* refers to it⁴¹⁶. The Buddhist *Avadānaśatakas* also refer to the doctrine of *Karmavipāka*. Vide also *Suttanipāta* (S. B. E. vol 10 part 2) p. 38 and S. B. E. vol. 21 p. 130 (*Saddharma-puṇḍarīka*). In some medical works also such as the *Hārītasamhitā* it is said that the murderer of a brāhmaṇa suffers from white leprosy and the killer of a cow from black leprosy; a regicide suffers from phthisis, and the destroyer of a park from dysentery &c.⁴¹⁷. In the *Vivāgasuyam* (*Vipākaśrutam*), which is the 11th *aṅga* of the *Jaina-āgama* and an edition of which was brought out by Dr. P. L. Vaidya (in 1933) we have stories of persons who suffered from evil diseases owing to their committing evil deeds in former lives and other stories of the fruits of good deeds.

The doctrine based upon the implications of *Manu* XII⁴¹⁸. 3, 9 and 54 and Yāj. III. 206 was that it is human beings alone (and not lower animals like tigers &c.) that have to experi-

415. सति मूले तद्विपाको जात्यायुर्भोगाः । योगसूत्र II.13. The ब्रह्मपुराण 217.40 illustrates both *jāti* and *āyuh* viz. 'पतितं याजयित्वा तु कृमियोनौ प्रजायते । तत्र जीवति वर्षाणि दश पञ्च च भो द्विजाः ॥'

416. Vide JRAS for 1934 p. 307 at p. 311 for the views of नागार्जुन on कर्मविपाक. Verse 14 is: हिंसया जायतेऽल्पायुर्बद्धाबाधो विहिंसया । चौर्येण भोगव्यसनी सशत्रुः परदारिकः ॥

417. Vide Journal Asiatique (Paris) for 1934, pp. 125-139 for the text of the हारीतसंहिता. 'ब्रह्मघ्नो जायते पाण्डुः कुष्ठी गोवधकारकः । राजघ्नो राजयक्ष्मी स्यादारामघ्नोऽतिसारवान् ॥ स्वाम्यङ्गनाभिगमने मेहरोगा भवन्ति हि । गुरुजायाप्रसङ्गेन मूत्ररोगोऽश्मरीगदः ॥ स्वकुलजाप्रसङ्गेन जायते च भगन्दरः । शूली परोपतापी च पैशुन्यान्धुः कासिनः ॥ verses 12-14 at p. 134.

418. कर्मजा गतयो नृणामुत्तमाधममध्यमाः ॥ मनु XII. 3 ; शरीरजैः कर्मदोषैर्याति स्थावरतां नरः । मनु XII. 9.



ence in Heaven and Hell the consequences of their deeds. The Visnudharmottara explicitly states so⁴¹⁹.

The Mit. (on Yāj. III. 216), the Smṛtyarthasāra, Par. M., Pr. Sāra and other works state that the disquisition on Karmavipāka⁴²⁰ is merely an *arthavāda*, that it is not to be taken literally, but is meant to induce sinners to undergo such *prāyaścittas* as *Prājāpatya* which entail great worry and trouble and which no one might willingly undertake. The Mit. points out that the description of the diseases (like pthisis) is not intended for requiring those who suffer from them to undergo the penances for twelve years or the like nor for inducing people to avoid contact with such persons, that *śiṣṭas* do not avoid contact with those who have bad nails, that in the case of such persons the disease or defect is the last result of what little sin remained attached to them and that by the very fact of their having the disease or defect mentioned in the texts they become free from the last remnants of their sins and therefore they do not stand in need of any further penance and as their sin is finally removed by suffering the disease or defect their fitness for being allowed to mix among people is established.

The teaching of the works on Karmavipāka, though dismal and terrifying, comes to this that no soul need be without hope provided it is prepared to wait and undergo torments for its misdeeds, that it need not be appalled by the numerous existences foreshadowed in those works and that the soul may in its long passage and evolution be ultimately able to discover its true greatness and realize eternal peace and perfection.

Manu XII. 69 (almost the same as Viṣṇu Dh. S. 44.45 and Garudapurāṇa II. 2. 89) states that women guilty of the sin of theft become the wives of men who are guilty of the same offences.

VĀMANAPURĀṆA, chap. 12 is called *Karmavipāka* and Mārkaṇḍeyapurāṇa chap. 15 treats of the same subject. The

419. मनुष्याः प्रतिपद्यन्ते स्वर्गे नरकमेव वा । नैवान्ये प्राणिनः केचित्सर्वे ते फलभोजिनः ॥ शुभानामशुभानां च कर्मणां भृशुनन्दन । सञ्चयः क्रियते लोके मनुष्यैरेव केवलम् ॥ तस्मान् मनुष्यस्तु मृतो यमलोकं प्रपद्यते । नान्यः प्राणी महाभाग फलयोनौ व्यवस्थितः ॥ विष्णुधर्मोत्तरपुराण II, 102. 4-6 q. by परा. मा. II. part 2 pp. 208-209, प्रा. सार p. 215 (after affirming मनुष्याणामेव शुभाशुभकर्मफलोपभोगः ।).

420. इदानीन्तनपापिनां प्रायश्चित्तोन्मुखत्वार्थं पूर्वजन्मकर्मविपाका दर्शिताः ॥ सार p. 100 : ननु नायं विपाको विधातुं प्रतिषेद्धं वा शक्यतेऽननुष्ठेयत्वादवर्जनीयत्वाच्च । अत एवेतस्मिन्विधिप्रतिषेधपरे शास्त्रे तन्निरूपणमयुक्तम् । नायं दोषः । प्रायश्चित्तार्थवादत्वेन ननु प्रायश्चित्तोन्मुखत्वाच्च । प्राजापयाशुनुष्ठानरूपस्य प्रायश्चित्तस्य क्लेशात्मकत्वाद्वागतः प्रवृत्तिर्न सम्भवतीति तत्र प्रवृत्तिसिद्धये प्ररोचना कर्तव्या । परा. मा. II. part 2 pp. 206-207.

Varāhapurāṇa (chap. 203. 21 ff.) expatiates at length upon the topic how sinners endure torments in Hell for innumerable years, how after their evil deeds have been almost wiped out they become human beings suffering from various diseases or deformities.

In the Mahārṇava-karmavipāka of Māndhātṛ it is stated that there are two means of destroying the consequences of (evil) actions, viz. kṛcchra (penances) and the reversal (or remedies) against diseases⁴²¹. The latter consists in making golden images of the sun (as the superintending deity of good health) and of the deity of a disease and offering worship to both these in a *maṇḍapa* on a raised *vedikā* (platform). The work expatiates at length on the Vedic verses employed according to Āśvalāyana and the Taittirīya Śākhā for *ghoṣa-śānti* (propitiatory ceremonies with loud recitation of Vedic mantras); the worship of the sun with Vedic mantras and of the planets, the offerings of *āhutis*, the Rudraikādaśīni, Mahārudra (11 times as many as the preceding) and Atirudra, repeating the thousand names of Viṣṇu, Vināyaka-śānti (as laid down by Yāj. I. 271-294), Navagraha-yajña in which it assigns each planet to some country and some gotra⁴²². It also prescribes how for the removal of particular diseases particular *dānas* may be given (such as *Kadalidāna* i. e. manufacturing a kadali plant from one *pala* of gold and donating it). It deals with the gifts of the images of all diseases supposed to be incurable and quotes Śātātapa II. 47-48 in connection with the removal of *rājayakṣmā* (phthisis). It deals at length with fevers and other diseases and bodily defects such as greenish or cat-like eyes, deafness &c. But the detailed treatment of all these matters is passed over here from considerations of space, and also for the reason that these prescriptions are now either hardly believed in by people or hardly ever performed.

421. अथ कर्मक्षयोपायौ कुच्छव्याधिर्विपर्ययौ । तत्राथ व्याधिर्विपर्यय इत्यनेन व्याधिप्रतिकृतिदानं वक्ष्यत इति । ...प्रतिमा द्विप्रकारा अधिदेवता देवतात्मिका च । आतङ्गो देवतास्तत्र तत्र पूज्याधिदेवता प्रायेण सूर्यः सर्वेषां रोगाणामधिदैवतं-आरोग्यं भास्करादिच्छेत्-इति ब्रह्मया श्रुतिः स्मृतिः । तत्र व्याधिप्रतिमायामातङ्गनाम्नी देवता भवति । महार्णव folios 33b and 34a; रोगप्रतिमादाने सर्वत्र सूर्य एवाधिदेवता व्याधिदेवता च भिन्ना व्याधीनां भिन्नत्वात् । अतश्च जलरोगादिषु वरुणादयो देवता भवन्तीति । *ibid.* folio 44a.

422. 'ओं भूर्भुवः स्वः कलिङ्गदेशोद्भव काश्यपसगोत्र सूर्य इहागच्छेत्यावाह्य इति छेति रक्तपुष्पाक्षतैः स्थापयेत् । ओं भूर्भुवः स्वः, अवन्तीसमुद्भव भरद्वाजसगोत्र भौम इहागच्छेत्यावाह्य...स्थापयेत् । ओं...स्वः मागधदेशोद्भव आत्रेयसगोत्र बुध इहागच्छे... । महार्णव folio 157 b.



SECTION II

ANTYEṢṬI (rites after death), **ŚUDDHI** (purification from impurity due to death, birth and other causes)

CHAPTER VII

ESCHATOLOGY

What happens after death to a human being (which is the subject matter of Eschatology) has been a great mystery that has intrigued and baffled mankind in all ages and was a question of vital importance among almost all ancient peoples such as the Indians, Egyptians, Chaldeans, Greeks and Persians. The word Eschatology is derived from a Greek term meaning 'last things' and is applied to the study of opinions that men have held from time to time concerning the future, including such matters as the state of man after life on this earth and the end of the world. It exercises a great fascination over most people and speculation on it can be carried on endlessly. Every religion has its own eschatology. There are two aspects of Eschatology; one is concerned with the destiny of the individual after death, immortality of the soul, sin and punishment, the meaning and content of 'Heaven' and 'Hell'; the other aspect of eschatology has relation to the whole universe, its creation, destination and renovation, and the ultimate end of all things. The first aspect and matters relevant to it from the ancient Indian point of view will be dealt with in this section and the second aspect of Eschatology is reserved for treatment in a later section. In ancient works far more emphasis was laid on the first than on the second, while modern men with a more or less scientific outlook and attitude are inclined to think more of the second aspect.

Death has been generally looked upon with feelings of awe and terror, though there were men (often philosophically minded) who looked upon it as a blessing and as a release of the spirit from the shackles imposed upon the latter by the body. The terror of death was in many cases due not so much to the pain

caused at the time of death but rather to the mystery that surrounds what happens after death and to the thoughts about what the survivors would have to undergo. It is said by C. E. Vulliamy in his work 'Immortal man' (p. 2): 'although the idea of that life (ghostly life) ranges from the most dismal and horrible fantasies to the most sublime imaginations, the fundamental thought is always the same, the body dies but not the spirit'. There were several attitudes adopted by primitive as well as civilized people towards death. In the Kathopanishad we read (I.1.20) 'When a man dies there is a doubt, some saying that there is survival after the death of the body and some denying any survival' and Naciketas requests the dreaded God Yama to solve this doubt. There are several beliefs^{422a} even among those who hold that there is survival after death. Some say that there is a world of the dead to which whatever survives goes after death. Others believe that the surviving part goes to Heaven or Hell according as the man has been virtuous or sinful in his life on earth. Others believe in transmigration and re-incarnation. Several of the great writers in ancient Greece believed in this last doctrine, as Pindar (in second Olympian Ode), Plato (in Phaedrus and Timaeus) and Herodotus (II.123) indicate.

The Brahmapurāṇa (chap. 214 verses 34-39) sets out the persons to whom death is happy and easy and not a source of misery and sorrow. A few may be mentioned here. - 'He who did not tell lies, he who did not prove false to affection or friendship, who is an *āstika* (a believer in God and the life to come), who is devoted to the worship of gods and the honouring of brāhmanas, he who does not bear malice to anyone—these have a happy death.' Similarly, the Anuśāsanaparva of the Mahābhārata (chap. 104. 11-12, chap. 144. 49-60) states at length the causes of premature death and of long life. Some of them may be translated here. 'Those who are atheists, do not perform the acts (or sacrifices) proper for them, violate the (dictates of) elders and of śāstras, who do not know what *dharma* is and are evil-doers are short-lived. Those who have no character, who always break all rules of conduct, who have promiscuous sexual intercourse become short-lived and go to Hell. One who is not irritable by temper, speaks the truth, does not cause injury to beings, who bears no malice to any one and who is not crooked—these live for a hundred years' (104. 11-12 and 14).

^{422a}. Compare C. E. Vulliamy's 'Immortal man' (p. 11),

Several works specify the signs indicative of the approach of death. The Śāntiparva of the Mahābhārata (chap. 318: 9-17), Daṇḍa quoted in the Mokṣakāṇḍa of the Kalpataru (pp. 248-250, about 20 verses), the Vāyupurāṇa (chap. 19 verses 1-32), the Mārkaṇḍeyapurāṇa 43. 1-33 (chap. 40 verses 1-33, Venkateśvara Press ed.), Liṅgapurāṇa (pūrvārdha chap. 91) and other Purāṇas contain long lists of the signs of approaching death. It is impossible for want of space to set out in detail these signs. But the gist of a few verses is mentioned by way of sample. The Śāntiparva (chap. 318) states that a man who is not able to see the star of Arundhatī which he could formerly see, nor the pole-star nor the full moon, nor his own reflection in another man's eye has only one year to live; he has only a span of six months of life left to him who sees the orb of the moon with a hole in it; a man has only seven days left of life who sees a hole pierced in the orb of the Sun, who smells the odour of a corpse when fragrant substances are near; when the nose and ears bend down, when his teeth and eyes become discoloured, when there is loss of consciousness, and loss of bodily heat, when smoke emerges from the crown of the head, when the left eye begins to ooze moisture all of a sudden—these are indications of the immediate approach of death. Daṇḍa states indications that prognosticate life for only one year, 11, 10, 9, 8, 7, 6, 5, 4, 3, 2 months, one month, half a month, 12 days, 4 days, 3 days, 2 days and winds up by saying that one who cannot hear the humming sound in his ear (when closed with fingers) or cannot see the light in the eye is going to die immediately. The Vāyupurāṇa (19.28) and Liṅgapurāṇa 91.30 regard the last two as the worst indications of approaching death⁴²³. The Liṅgapurāṇa (pūrvabhāga chap. 91.24) states that he who cannot see his own reflection in another's eye will not live. There is an interesting paper by Dr. R.G. Harshe in the Munshi Diamond Jubilee volume (pp. 246-268) where the learned writer gives the text of two mss. on the prognostications derived from dreams e. g. if a man sees an ass in a dream he is sure to die, or if he sees an old maid then it is an indication of danger, disease and death (p. 251) or if he sees a trident death is indicated (p. 254).

423. हे चात्र परमेश्वरिष्टे एतद्रूपं परं भवेत् । घोषं न शृणुयात्कर्णे ज्योतिर्नेत्रे न च दृश्यते ॥ वायुपुराण 19.27 ; नयं वा श्रमणं दृष्ट्वा विद्यान्मृत्युमुपस्थितम् । लिङ्गपुराण (पूर्वभाग 91.19)

When a man is sinking and is almost on the point of death it was and even now is the practice in many parts of India to take the dying man down from the bedstead and place him on a bed spread on the earth⁴²⁴. For example, the Kauśika-sūtra (80.3) prescribes⁴²⁵: When the man is losing all strength, he (the son or other attending relative) spreads *kuśas* on the grass growing in the shed and takes him down (from the bedstead) with the *mantra* 'syonāsmāi bhava' (mayst thou be good to this man, Oh Earth). The Baud. P. S. III. 1.18 says that sand should be spread on the ground in the sacrificial shed when it is feared that the sacrificer is dying and *darbha* grass should be strewn on the sand with the sharp ends turned to the south and the dying man should be placed thereon and one (son or the like) should repeat in his right ear the *anuvāka* beginning with 'āyusaḥ prāṇam santanu'. The Gobhilasmṛti III. 22 and later works like the Pitrdayitā provide the same procedure.

Medieval digests like the Śuddhiprakāśa (pp. 151-152) state that when a person is moribund, has half closed his eyes and is taken down on the ground (from a bedstead), his son or other relative should make him give one or more of ten gifts viz. of cows, ⁴²⁶ land, sesame, gold, clarified butter, clothes, grain, jaggery, silver, salt. These gifts are superior even to a śrāddha performed at Gayā or to even hundreds of Aśvamedhas. The

424. In Europe a very widespread custom is to take a dying man out of bed and to lay him on the earth or on straw. Vide Prof. Edgerton's very exhaustive article on 'the Hour of Death' in Annals of the Bhandarkar O.R. Institute, vol. VIII pp. 219-249.

425. दुर्बलीभवंतं शालातृणेषु दर्भानास्तूर्यं स्योनास्मै भवेत्परोहयति । मन्त्रोक्तावनु-
मन्त्रयते । स ते कृष्णेत्वंदीपयति । कौशिक 80.3-5. अथर्व० 18.2-19. is 'स्योनास्मै भव
पृथिव्यक्षरा निवेशनी । च्छलास्मै शर्म सप्रथाः ॥' ऋ. I.22.15 and वाज. सं. 36.13 are
almost the same, reading स्योना पृथिवि भवानक्षरा० and स्योना पृथिवि नो भवा०
respectively ; vide निरुक्त 9.32 for explanation of this verse. The पितृदायिता
(p. 74) states यदा कण्ठस्थानगतजीवो विह्वलो देही भवति तदा बहिर्गोमयेनोपलिप्तायां भूमौ
कुशान्दक्षिणाग्रानास्तूर्यं तदुपरि दक्षिणाशिरसं स्थापयित्वा सुवर्णरजतगोभूमिदीपतिलपात्राणि
दापयेत् । गोभिलस्मृति III. 22 'दुर्बलं स्नापयित्वा तु शुद्धचैलाभिसंवृतम् । दक्षिणाशिरसं
भूमौ बहिर्गमत्वा निवेशयेत् ॥'

426. दानानि च जातुकर्ण्य आह । उत्क्रान्तिवैतरण्यौ च दश दानानि चैव हि । प्रेतोऽपि
कृत्वा तं प्रेतं शवधर्मेण दाहयेत् ।... दश दानानि च तेनैवोक्तानि । गोभृतिलहिरण्याज्यवासोधान्य-
गुणानि च । रूप्यं लवणमित्याहुर्दश दानान्यनुक्रमात् ॥ शुद्धिप्रकाश p. 152 ; for a similar
verse about ten dānas vide गरुडपु. (प्रेतखण्ड) 4.4. An Inscription of
Vikramāditya, a chieftain under the Kalachuri king Saṅkama (published in
E. I. vol. XIX pp 230) records the gifts of land, coins, house and gold on
the occasion of the prāyaścitta in honour of his deceased father.



sankalpa (verbal declaration of the gift) is made in the words 'I shall make ten gifts for the attainment of heaven (*abhyudaya*), or for the removal of all sins'. After the ten *dānas*, a cow with a calf should be donated if possible ⁴²⁷ (this cow being called *utkrānti-dhenu* 'a cow donated in view of death') and then another cow called *Vaitaranī* with gold (or two pieces of cloth &c) should be donated. The *Antyestipaddhati* and the *Suddhi-prakāśa* (pp. 152-153) set out all the mantras (not vedic) that are to be recited at the time of making the several gifts, which (mantras) are passed over here for want of space. The *Antyestipaddhati*, the *Antyakarmadipaka* and other works prescribe that when a person is near death, his son or other relative should make him perform *Vratodyāpana*, *sarvaprāyaścitta* and the gift of ten *dānas* or if the dying man is unable to do these himself, the son or the other relative should perform these and give the merit thereof to the dying man. A person often resolves upon observing certain *vratas*, but fails to carry out all the details of those *vratas* to the end. The *Vratodyāpana* for the dying man is meant to cure all such unfinished *vratas*. The *A. K. D.* (pp. 3-4) has a long note about the performance of *vratodyāpana*. Briefly it comes to this. The son or other relative having brought about the purity of the dying man's body by a bath or by sprinkling it with holy water (*mārjana*) or by making him drink Ganges water, having himself taken a bath and performed his daily duties (of *sandhyā*), having lighted a lamp, having bowed to *Gaṇeśa* and prayed to god *Viṣṇu*, having placed before him the materials of worship and having repeated the usual *sankalpa* (see note ⁴²⁸), he should honour a *brāhmaṇa*

427. आसन्नमृत्युना देया गौः सवस्त्रा तु पूर्ववत् । तदभावे तु गौरेव सरकोत्तरणा च वै । तदा यदि न शक्नोति दातुं वैतरणीं तु गाम् । शक्तोऽन्योऽरुक् तदा वस्त्रा दद्याच्छेवो नृपस्य च ॥ व्यास. q. by शुद्धितत्त्व p. 300, शुद्धिप्रकाश p. 153. अ. क. बी. p. 7. पूर्ववत् means देमशृणादिना. The गरुडपुराण (प्रेत०) 4.6 says 'नदीं वैतरणीं तर्ह्ये दद्याद्वैतरणीं च याम् । कुण्डस्तनी सकुण्डाङ्गी सा वै वैतरणी स्मृता ॥'. The idea was that at the door of वम there was a river called वैतरणी, full of blood and sharp weapons and that there those who donated a cow at the time of death cross that terrible river by holding the cow's tail; vide स्कन्दपु. VI. 226.32-33 for वैतरणी and verse 34 is 'मृत्युकाले प्रयच्छन्ति ये धेनुं ब्राह्मणाय वै ॥ तस्याः पुच्छं समाश्रित्य ते तरन्ति च तौ ह्य ॥'. The भाद्रपद of लक्ष्मीपति prescribes two mantras at the time of donating the वैतरणी cow, one of which is : उङ्गे सर्पति शीते वा मारुते वाति वा शुश्रम् । दातारं द्रापते यस्मात्तस्माद्वैतरणी स्मृता ॥

428. अत्र पृथिव्यां जम्बूद्वीपे भरतखण्डे आर्यावर्तकदेशे विष्णोराज्ञया प्रवर्तमानस्य ब्राह्मणो द्वितीयपरार्थः...अमुकतिथौ अमुकगौत्रः...अमुकशर्माहं समात्मनः (मम पित्रादेः)

(Continued on the next page)

already invited and should give to him the gold (or silver) set apart for the purpose and the brāhmaṇa should pronounce the words "May all vratas be fulfilled! May there be the attainment of the fruits of *udyāpana* (accomplishment of vrata)". In the sarvaprāyaścitta the son approaches 4 or 3 learned men or one man knowing *adhyātma* (metaphysics) and offers the substitutes (of gold &c.) for sins that involve penances for 6, 3 or $1\frac{1}{2}$ years or makes a declaration and performs the prāyaścitta, after the days of impurity.

✓ The sarvaprāyaścitta was to be performed by the dying man or by his son or other relative who was to shave himself, take a bath, drink *pañcagavya*, honour a brāhmaṇa with sandal paste and other things; after having honoured the cow or the money to be paid in lieu of it, and after referring to the several kinds of sins that one may be guilty of (vide note ⁴²⁹) he is to make a gift of a cow (with a calf) to the brāhmaṇa or in lieu of it, of some money. After sarvaprāyaścitta come the ten *dānas* stated above. In the *dānas* the *Kāmastuti* ⁴³⁰ as studied by the followers of each veda was to be recited. The *Garudapurāṇa* (II. 4. 7-9) further prescribes other *dānas* called *mahā-dānas* viz., of sesame, iron, gold, cotton, salt, seven kinds of corn, land and cows, when a man is dying and also other gifts called *padadānas* such as of umbrella, sandals, ring, water-jar, seat, food. The *Garudapurāṇa* (II. 4. 37) further provides that if a man about to die takes *sannyāsa* according to the rules laid

(Continued from the last page)

व्रतग्रहणदिवसादारभ्य अथ यावत्फलाभिलाषादिगृहीतानां निष्कामतया गृहीतानां च अमुकामुकव्रतानामकृतोद्यापनदोषपरिहारार्थं श्रुतिस्मृतिपुराणोक्ततत्त्वव्रतजन्यसाङ्गफलप्राप्त्यर्थं विष्ण्वादीनां तत्तद्देवानां प्रीतये इदं सुवर्णमाग्निदेवतं (तद्भावे इदं रजतं चन्द्रदेवतं) अमुकगोत्राभ्यामुकशर्मणे ब्राह्मणाय दास्ये ओं तत्सत् न मम इति सङ्कल्प्य etc. अ. क. दी. p. 4.

429. देशकालौ संकीर्त्य मम (मत्पित्रादेर्वा) ज्ञाताज्ञातकामाकामसकृदसकृत्कृतकार्यैकवाचिकमानसिकसांसर्गिकस्पृष्टास्पृष्टशुक्ताशुक्लपीतापीतसकलपातकानुपातकोपपातकलुपातकसङ्करीकरणमलिनीकरणापात्रीकरणजातिभ्रंशकरप्रकीर्णकादिनानाविधपातकानां निरासेन देहावसानकाले देहशुद्धिद्वारा श्रीपरमेश्वरप्रीत्यर्थमिमां सर्वप्रायश्चित्तप्रत्याम्नायभूतां यथाशक्त्यलंकृतां सर्वसां गां रुद्रदेवताममुकगोत्राभ्यामुकशर्मणे ब्राह्मणाय तुभ्यमहं संप्रददे ओं तत्सत् न मम। अ. क. दी. p. 5. अन्त्योष्टिप. of नारायण has also the words ज्ञाताज्ञात...पातकानां निरासार्थं.

430. क इदं कस्मा अदात्कामः कामायादात्। कामो दाता कामः प्रतिग्रहीता। कामः समुद्रमाविवेश। कामेन त्वा प्रतिगृह्णामि कामैतत्ते। अथर्ववेद III. 29. 7, तै. ब्रा. II. 2. 5. 9 (where this *Kāmastuti* is explained) and Tai. A. III. 10. This *कामस्तुति* occurs in many ceremonies (such as marriage, adoption etc.). Vide H. of Dh. vol. II. p. 1069, and आश्व. श्रौ. V. 13. 15 (which reads कामं समुद्रमाविश) and आप. श्रौ. 14. 11. 2.



down for what is called *āturasannyāsa* he never returns to the cycle of births and deaths.

From ancient times it was a firmly held belief that the thoughts that a dying man entertains at the time of death determine what will happen to his spirit after physical death (this is expressed in the well-known words 'ante matiḥ sā gatiḥ'), that therefore a man should, when death approaches, give up all thoughts of mundane affairs and all earthly attachments, should think of his favourite deity (Hari or Śiva), should inaudibly recite such *mantras* as 'om namo Vāsudevāya'. Several texts insist on making the dying man listen to holy Vedic texts. The Gautamapitr-medhasūtra (I. 1-8) prescribes that one should at the time when one's father, mother, brother, teacher or a brāhmaṇa friend is on his death-bed make the dying man hear the first and last verses of the Veda and certain *sāmans* and should mutter in the dying man's right ear (one *sāman*). The Rgvidhāna provides that one should repeat at the time of death the *sūkta* beginning with 'trātāram' ⁴³¹ (?)

The Hir. P. S. I. 1 provides that when it is thought that the *āhitāgni* is going to die, he (the son or the like) should mutter in the dying man's ear (if he is a knower of Brahma) the two *anuvākas* of the Tai. Up. II. 1 (beginning with 'brahmavidāpnoti param') and III. 1 (beginning with 'Bhrgurvai vāruṇiḥ'). The A. K. D. (p. 18) says ⁴³² that if the dying man is unable to engage in *japa* he should revolve in his mind the benign form of Viṣṇu or Śiva and should listen to the thousand names (of Viṣṇu or Śiva), the Bhagavadgītā, the Bhāgavata, Bhārata, Rāmāyaṇa, the Upaniṣads like Īśāvāsyā and hymns to Soma.

431. त्रातारमिति सूक्तं तु अन्तकाले सदा पठेत् । जप्त्वा चैव परं स्थानममृतत्वाय कल्पते । ऋग्विधान q. in शुद्धिप्रकाश p. 154. The अन्त्येष्टिपद्धति of नारायणभट्ट (Nir. edition, pothi size p. 163 b) reads नानानमिति ... स्थानममृतत्वं स गच्छतीति ऋग्विधानवचनात् ॥. The Rgvidhāna edited by Jagadish Shastri reads (III.19-20) नानानमिति सूक्तानि अन्तकाले जपेत्सकृत् । नानानं is the first verse of Rg. IX.112. It is likely that the editor of शुद्धिप्रकाश misreads नानानमिति as त्रातारमिति, since त्रातारम् is not a sūkta (hymn) but only one stanza in a hymn.

432. जपेऽसमर्थश्चेद् हृदये चतुर्भुजं शङ्खचक्रगदापद्मधरं पीताम्बरकिरीटकेतुक्ताम्बरं वनमालाधरं रमणीयरूपं विष्णुं त्रिशूलदमरुधरं चन्द्रचूडं त्रिनेत्रं गङ्गाधरं शिवं वा भावयन् सहस्रनामगीताभागवतभारतरामायणेशावास्याद्युपनिषदः पावमानादीनि सूक्तानि च यथासम्भवं शृणुयात् । अ. क. दी. p. 18. For विष्णुसहस्रनाम vide अनुशासनपर्व 149.14-120 and अनुशासन 17.31-153 for 1008 names of शिव; vide also शान्तिपर्व 285.74 ff.

The germs of this idea are found even in the Upaniṣads. The Chāndogya Up. (in the famous Śāṇḍilya-vidyā, III. 14. 1) remarks 'All this is Brahman. A man should meditate on that (all this) as beginning, ending and subsisting in it (Brahman). Now man is a creature of his will. According to whatever is his will (or thought) in this world, so will he become after departing from this world.'⁴³³ The Praśna Up. III. 10 contains a similar idea. It is here asserted that it is thought power or the will that raises the soul higher and higher, and that the human mind should try to realize the idea that behind all physical transformations the Universe is one and is informed by one all-pervading Essence. Similarly, the Bhagavadgītā puts this idea in a much more clear way. 'The man, who remembering me alone in his last moments, departs from this life, comes to me; there is no doubt about this' (8. 5). But in order to guard against the possible inference that it is only the thoughts at the approach of death that matter whatever the past life led by a dying man may have been, the next verse emphasizes that a man's spirit is engrossed by the thoughts that he has entertained throughout life and that a man can think of spiritual matters or about God at the time of death only if he has been thinking about such matters or about God throughout his life. That verse (8.6) is 'whichever form (or thing) a man remembers when he leaves the body at death, to that alone he goes, having been always (throughout his life) engrossed in meditating over it.'

Some of the digests, on the authority of several Purāṇas, prescribe that the dying man should be taken, if possible, near a holy place (*tirtha*) such as the Ganges. For example, the Śuddhitattva⁴³⁴ (p. 299) quotes a passage from the Kūrmapurāṇa to this effect: 'a man attains *mokṣa* (final release from *samsāra*) by dying in the waters of the Ganges, on land or in water at

433. सर्वं खल्विदं ब्रह्म तज्जलानिति शान्त उपासीताथ खलु क्रतुमयः पुरुषो यथाक्रतुरास्मिँल्लोके पुरुषो भवति तथेतः प्रेत्य भवति स क्रतुं कुर्वीत । छा. उप. III. 14.1, अन्तकाले च मामेव स्मरन्मुक्त्वा कलेवरम् । यः प्रयाति स मद्भावं याति नास्त्यत्र संशयः ॥ यं यं वापि स्मरन्भावं त्यजत्यन्ते कलेवरम् । तं तमेवैति कौन्तेय सदा तद्भावं भावितः ॥ भगवद्गीता 8.5-6; vide शाङ्करभाष्य on वे. सू. I. 2.1 for the explanation of तज्जलान् and on वे. सू. IV. 1.12 for quoting the छा. उप. and भगवद्गीता 8. 5-6.

434. कूर्मपुराणम् । गङ्गायां च जले मोक्षो वाराणस्यां जले स्थले । जले स्थले चास्तारिषे गङ्गासागरसङ्गमे ॥ तथा (स्कन्दे) । तीराद्रव्युत्तिमात्रं तु परितः क्षेत्रमुच्यते । अत्र दाम् होमो गङ्गायां नात्र संशयः । अत्रस्थास्त्रिदिवं यान्ति ये मृता न पुनर्भवाः । शाङ्करभाष्ये pp. 299, 300, शुद्धिप्रकाश p. 155, गव्यूति is equal to two क्रोशः.

Vārāṇasī (Benares) and at the confluence of the Ganges with the sea either on land, in water or in the air.' Another passage to the same effect is quoted from the Skanda-purāṇa and it is further said in the same Purāṇa that for one *gavyūti* from the banks of the Ganges is a *kṣetra* (holy place): 'gifts, *japa* (muttering of sacred texts), *homa* performed within this extent is equal to doing the same on the Ganges itself; those who die within this *kṣetra* go to heaven and are not born again.' In the Pujāratnākara⁴³⁵ it is said: 'Hari is present wherever there is the Śālagrāma stone; one dying near a Śālagrāma stone reaches the highest abode of Viṣṇu'. It was said that a person (even a non-Aryan) dying within one krośa of a Śālagrāma reaches Vaikunṭha (world of Viṣṇu). Similarly, one dying in a garden of *tulasī* (Basil) plants or with Tulasī leaf placed in his mouth at the time of death attains *mokṣa* even if guilty of crores of sins. These are popular notions held even up to this day among common people, not thoroughly affected by modern ideas.

There are also dicta about the time when it is best to die. The Śāntiparva of the Mahābhārata states: 'he who dies after the sun has gone to the northern direction (i. e. when the apparent motion of the sun towards the north begins) and on any auspicious *nakṣatra* and *muhūrta* is really one who has a store of merit (with him)'⁴³⁶. This is based on the ideas of death in *Uttarāyana* and *Dakṣiṇāyana* found in the Upaniṣads. For example, the Chāndogya Up. (IV. 15. 5-6) states 'Now (if one who knows this dies) whether people perform obsequies for him or not he goes to light (*arcis*), from light to day, from day to the bright half of the moon, from thence to the six months during which the sun goes to the north, from the months to the year, from the year to the sun, from the sun to the moon, from the moon to

435. पूजारत्नाकरे । शालग्रामशिला यत्र तत्र संनिहितो हरिः । तत्सन्निधौ त्यजेत् प्राणान् याति विष्णोः परं पदम् ॥ लिङ्गपुराणे । शालग्रामसमीपे तु क्रोशमात्रं समन्ततः । कीकटेषु मृतो याति वैकुण्ठभवनं नरः ॥ वैष्णवामृते व्यासः । तुलसीकानने जन्तोर्यादि मृत्युर्भवेत् कश्चित् । स निर्भर्त्स्य नरं पापी लीलयैव हरिं विशेत् ॥ प्रयाणकाले यस्यास्ये दीयते तुलसीदलम् । निर्वाणं याति पक्षीन्द्र पापकोदियुतोपि सः ॥ शुद्धितत्त्व p. 299, शुद्धिप्रकाश p. 155. कीकट is the country of Magadha, which was regarded as a land beyond the pale of Aryanism in the Rgveda (III. 53.14). Vide Nir VI 32 where the country of कीकट is said to be अनार्यनिवास. The शुद्धिप्रकाश reads कीटको (even a worm) for कीकटेषु, which is better, but might be an emendation.

436. आपन्ने तूत्तरां काष्ठां सूर्ये यो निधनं व्रजेत् । नक्षत्रे च सुहृते च पुण्ये राजन् स पुण्यकृत् ॥ शान्तिपर्व 298.23 q. by the मोक्षकाण्ड of कल्पतरु p. 254.

lightning. There is a person who is not human that leads them to Brahman. This is the path of the Devas, the path that leads to Brahman. Those who proceed on that path do not return to the life of man, yes, *they do not return*'. There is a similar passage in Chāndogya Up. V. 10.1-2 where it is said that even householders who know the doctrine of the five fires (*Pañcāgni-vidyā*) and those who in the forest follow the path of faith and austerities (i. e. *vānaprasthas* and *parivrājakas* who do not yet know Highest Brahman) go by the path called Devayāna, while (V. 10. 3-7) those, who, living in a village, practise sacrifices, works of public utility and alms, go to smoke, from smoke to night, from night to the dark half of the moon, from thence to the six months when the sun goes to the south, from thence to the worlds of the fathers, from thence to ether (*ākāśa*) and to the moon, where they consume their works and return again the way they came. The Chān. Up. (V. 10. 8) refers to a third place where small creatures (like flies, worms &c.) are continually going and returning. The Br. Up. (VI. 2. 15-16) contains similar passages about Devaloka, Pitṛloka and the third world of worms, birds and creeping beings. The Bhagavadgītā, basing itself on these Upaniṣad passages, puts the matter succinctly (in 8. 23-25) as follows:—'I shall state the times at which devotees departing from this world go, never to return or to return. The fire, the flame, the day, the bright fortnight, the six months of the northern (apparent) motion of the sun; departing from the world in these those who know the Brahman go to Brahman. Smoke, night, the dark fortnight, the six months of the southern (apparent) motion of the sun; dying in these the devotee goes to the lunar light and returns. These two paths, bright and dark, are deemed to be eternal in this world. By the one a man goes never to return, by the other he comes back'. The Vedāntasūtra (IV. 3. 4-6) explains that the words 'light' 'day' and others are not to be taken in their literal sense (i. e. as signposts or stages on the paths) but they are to be understood as referring to superintending deities that help the spirits and lead them on the path to the worlds of the Devas or of Pitṛs (i. e. they are *ātivāhikas* and *abhimānidevatās*). Śaṅkara on Vedāntasūtra IV. 2. 20 (*ataścāyanepi dakṣiṇe*) explains that the waiting for the day of Uttarāyana on the part of Bhīṣma (narrated in the Mahābhārata) is only meant as a eulogy of the path called 'arcirādi', that one who has realized Brahma, even if he dies in dakṣiṇāyana, does secure the fruits of his knowledge.

reaching Brahma), that Bhīṣma waited for the beginning of *uttarāyana* to abide by popular ideas and practices and to show that he possessed the power to depart from the world at his will owing to the boon conferred on him by his father. The Yājñavalkya-smṛti refers to the path (*devayāna*)⁴³⁷ that leads to Devaloka (in III. 193-194, where it reads 'mānasaḥ' for 'amānavaḥ' of the Ch. Up.) and the Pitṛyāna (in III. 195-196). In spite of the interpretations of the Vedāntasūtra (and of Śaṅkara) the popular belief that death in Uttarāyana is best persisted and still persists. For example, the Baud. P.S. (II. 7. 21) remarks '(the sages) provide that death during the northern path of the sun, in the bright half of a month, during the day and at the end of a Śrauta sacrifice is best'⁴³⁸. The G. P. S. (II. 7.1-2) remarks: 'It is desirable to avoid dying in the dark half of a month or at night and the following sūtras provide for the offering of certain oblations if the death occurs in the dark half or at night.'

FUNERAL RITES (*antyeṣṭi*) are a *saṃskāra*. *Antyeṣṭi* is one of the 16 (or more) *saṃskāras* of a twice-born person

437. The words '*devayāna*' and '*pitṛyāna*' are a legacy from the hoary past. Even in the Rg. there are frequent references to them. In Rg. III. 58.5 the Aśvins are addressed a prayer 'may you come here (to this sacrifice) by the paths leading to the abode of the gods' (*eha yātam pathibhirdevayānaih*). Rg. VII. 38.8 also has a similar idea 'may you, being gratified, go by the *devayāna* paths' (*trptā yātam pathibhir-devayānaih*). In Rg. VII. 76.2 (addressed to Uṣas) the sage Vasiṣṭha exclaims that he has seen the *Devayāna* paths when the dawn shone in the East (*pra me panthā devayānā adṛśran*). Agni is asked to make the *devayāna* paths easily accessible and to carry the offerings in a pleased mood (Rg. X.51.5, *sugān pathaḥ kṛṇuhi devayānān vaha havyāni sumanasyamānaḥ*). Rg. X.98.11 describes Agni as knowing the *devayāna* paths according to the seasons and a prayer is offered to him to place Aulāna (son of Śantanu) in heaven among the gods (*vidvān patha ṛtuśo devayānān-apyaulānam divi deveṣu dhehi*). In Rg. X.18.1 it is stated that the path of Death is different from *devayāna* (*param mṛtyo anu parehi panthām yaste sva itaro devayānāt*). In Rg. X. 2.7 Agni is said to know the *pitṛyāna* path (*panthāmanu pra vidvān pitṛyānam*). In the Tai. Br. II.6.3.5 it is said 'I have heard of two paths of the Fathers; I have heard about the paths of the gods and mortals' (*dve srutī aśṇavam pitṛnām aham devānām-uta martyānām*). The Śat. Br. I.9.3.2 remarks 'this is the path called *Devayāna* or *Pitṛyāna*.' In the Br. Up. I.5.16 it is said 'there are indeed three worlds, viz. the world of men, the world of *pitṛs* and the world of gods'.

438. उदगयने आपूर्यमाणपक्षे दिवा कृत्वन्ते श्रेयो मरणमित्युपदिशन्ति॥ वा. पि. च. II. 7.21 (ed. by Dr. Shamsastri, Mysore).

performed with Vedic mantras according to Manu II. 16, Yāj. I. 10, Jātūkarnya⁴³⁹. These saṃskāras were formerly performed for women also (Āśv. gr. I. 15.12, I. 16.6, I. 17-11, Manu II. 66) but without Vedic mantras (except in marriage) and for śūdras also (Manu X. 127, Yāj. I. 10) but without Vedic mantras. The Baud. P. S. III. 1.4 states that there are two saṃskāras of every human being and they are like a debt i. e. they must be performed, just as a debt must be discharged viz. the saṃskāra on birth and the one on death (mṛtasamskāra). Funeral rites and rites after death varied according as the deceased was an āhitāgni (one who had consecrated the śrauta fires) or one who had only kindled the smārta fire, or one who had neither the śrauta fires nor the smārta fire, or a woman, a child, an ascetic (*parivrājaka*), or one dying in a distant land or one dying by accident or committing suicide &c. The śrauta and gṛhya-sūtras differ among themselves in many details even on the same topic and the procedure becomes more elaborate in medieval and later times. It would be impossible to state all the differences on each topic in this section. A separate volume would have to be written for the purpose of setting out all the variations and additions from ancient times to modern times, to discuss why and how they arose or were made, to compare the various sūtras and to compare these again with the purāṇas and medieval digests, and to appraise their worth or usefulness. All that can be attempted here is to give the bare outlines of the procedure in different sūtras, smṛtis and digests by way of sample in a chronological order. The Nirṇayasindhu (p. 569) expressly says that the last rites differ in each Śākhā, though certain things are common to all. ^{439a} Chronological conclusions have been drawn about the relative ages of the sūtras (as Dr. Caland does), of the smṛtis, purāṇas and nibandhas from the presence or absence of this or that detail or the elaboration of this or that ritual. But with all respect to the industrious scholars of the West such conclusions are often tentative or misleading and are purely subjective in many cases and are often due to ignorance or loss of ancient works.

439. निषेकादिश्मशानान्तो मन्त्रैर्यस्योदितो विधिः । तस्य शास्त्रेधिकारोऽस्मिच्छ्रेयो नान्यस्य कस्यचित् ॥ मनु II. 16 ; ब्रह्मक्षत्रियविद्वद्वा वर्णास्त्वाद्यास्त्रयो द्विजाः । निषेकाद्याः श्मशानान्तास्तेषां वै मन्त्रतः क्रियाः ॥ या. I. 10 ; आधानपुंससीमन्तजातनामास्तुलकाः मौञ्जी व्रतानि गोदानं समावर्तविवाहकाः ॥ अन्त्यं चैतानि कर्माणि प्रोच्यन्ते षोडशैव ॥ जातृकर्ण्य q. in संस्कारप्रकाश p. 135 and अन्त्यकर्मदीपक p. 1.

439 a. प्रतिशास्त्रं भिद्येप्यन्त्यकर्मणि साधारणं किञ्चिदुच्यते । निर्णय० p. 569.



Before setting out the rites of cremation contained in the Śrauta sūtras, Grhya sūtras and later works, it would be best to give here a translation of the five hymns from the Rg. (X. 14-18) ⁴⁴⁰. The verses in these hymns are employed by most of the sūtras and are used even now in the cremation rites and most of them occur in the other Vedic Samhitās. Varying interpretations have been given of some of these stanzas by Indian and Western commentators and critics. Only a few of these have been mentioned in the notes. Besides some stanzas are employed for different details of the cremation rites by the different sūtras. All such differences cannot be set out for want of space. The five hymns are so placed that they follow the order of the stages in which the funeral ritual proceeded in fact and is performed even now to a great extent. Vide Appendix for the text of the Rgveda hymns without accents. ⁴⁴¹

X. 14. 1 (O! sacrificer!) worship with an offering Yama, king (of pitrs), son of Vivasvat, the gatherer of men (that are dead), who sought out the way for many (men who do meritorious acts) and who passed along great (non-terrestrial) heights ⁴⁴². 2. Yama was the first to know (find out) the path for us men; that is a pasture (abode) that cannot be taken away (by anybody), that is (an abode) where our ancient

440. The work of Bertram S. Puckle on 'Funeral customs' (London, 1926) is a very interesting and instructive one. It describes at great length funeral customs in various parts of England, France and other countries in Europe and among Jews and also in other parts of the world. Many of the customs and beliefs that he records bear a close resemblance to customs and beliefs in ancient and modern India, such, as, for example, the alighting of a raven or other black feathered bird on a cottage where a man is very ill as a death warning (p. 17), washing and anointing of dead bodies before burial (pp. 34, 36), the hiring of professional women for wailing and shrieking for the dead (p. 67), condemning burial at night (p. 77), the cutting of the hair as a sign of mourning (p. 91), placing meat and drink on the grave for the spirit of the departed (pp. 99-100), refusal of burial in the churchyard by the Church for unbaptised children, suicides, lunatics, and those excommunicated (p. 143).

441. Vide Appendix.

442. X.14.1. This verse is explained in Nir. X 20. 'Pareyivāmsam' may also be taken with 'panthām'. The meaning of 'pravatah' is rather uncertain. The Tai. Ā. VI.1.1, Sat. Sr. 28.1.20, Baud. P. S. 4.1.1. Vāk, Sr. S. 20.22 (p. 311) read 'pareyuvāmsam'.



ancestors went, each knowing his own way thereto⁴⁴³. 3. Mātali (Indra's charioteer or Indra himself) with the (pitrs) called *kavya*, Yama with the Āṅgirasas and Bṛhaspati with the Ṛkṡvas become prosperous (or increase in strength); whom (the pitrs) the gods support and who support the gods; some of them (the gods, Indra and others) are delighted by *svāhā* (by offerings given after uttering that word) and others (pitrs) are delighted by *svadhā*⁴⁴⁴. 4. O! Yama! Being of one mind with the pitrs called Āṅgirasas come to this (sacrifice) and sit down on the seat (of kuśas). May the *mantras* recited by the wise (priests) bring you (here). May you (O king) delight yourself with this offering! 5. O Yama! (come with the adorable) Āṅgirasas and Vairūpas and delight (or exhilarate) yourself. I invoke Vivasvat, your father; (May he delight himself) after sitting on the kuśa grass (spread) in this sacrifice.⁴⁴⁵ 6. The Āṅgirasas, the Navagvas,⁴⁴⁶ the Atharvans, the Bhṛgus are our pitrs and love soma (drink). May we secure the good will of those adorable ones! May we be in their gracious favour also! 7. Hasten, hasten⁴⁴⁷ by the ancient paths (to that place) where

443. It is quite possible to understand 'eva jajñānāḥ' as meaning 'being thus born' (like ourselves), 'eva' being taken adverbially and 'jajñānāḥ' from 'jan' (to be born). Compare A. V. 18.3.13 यो ममार प्रथमो मर्त्यानां यः प्रेयाय प्रथमो लोकमेतम्। The Parsi scriptures also speak of Yama (Yima) as the first mortal and as the son of Vivanghat. Vide Vendidad, Farard II. 1. p. 11. (SBE. vol. IV).

444. Kāvyas, Āṅgirasas and Ṛkṡvas are different classes of Pitrs. In Rg. VII.10.4 the Ṛkṡvas (singers) are associated with Bṛhaspati. In other places they are associated with Viṣṇu, Aja-Ekapāt and Soma also. The exclamation *svāhā* is uttered when making an offering to Gods and *svadhā* when making an offering to pitrs.

445. 'Niṣadya' is really a gerund and not a finite verb. We have to supply some verb like 'mādyatām' understood from the preceding half. Vairūpas are a subdivision of the Āṅgiras group.

446. Navagvas seem to be a subdivision of Āṅgirasas, just as 'daśagvas' are, as in Rg. III.29.5; IV.51.4; V.29.12; X.62.6. The late Mr. Tilak in his 'Arctic home in the Vedas' (pp. 162-169) gave a somewhat far-fetched interpretation of these two words which can hardly be accepted as satisfactory in the presence of words like 'atithigva' (Rg. I.53.8, I.30.7, II.14.7, IV.26.3, VIII.68.17), 'abhiyugvan' (Rg VI.45.15), 'etagva' (Rg. VIII.70.7). This verse is explained in Nir. XI.19.

447. This and the following three stanzas are addressed to the departed man. For the meaning and history of the word *Iṣṭāpūrta*, vide H. of Dh. vol. II, pp. 843-845. It means 'the cumulative spiritual result or merit due to the performance of sacrifices and charitable acts'.



our forefathers that went before us passed. May you (the departed) see the two kings Yama and god Varuṇa rejoicing as they will. 8. (O departed one!) be united in the highest heaven with the pitṛs, with Yama and with your *iṣṭāpūrta*; leaving here blamable acts (sins), come back to your home! Being endowed with bright lustre, be united with a (new) ⁴⁴⁸ body! 9. (Ye evil spirits!) Go away, depart, move aside from this place (the cemetery); the pitṛs made (or assigned) for him (the departed person) this abode. Yama gives to him (this) resting place characterized by waters, days and nights. 10. (O departed!) proceeding by a good path, hurry on past the two dappled dogs (of Yama), offspring of Saramā, each having four eyes. Thus approach the pitṛs who will recognize ⁴⁴⁹ you and who enjoy delight in the company of Yama. 11. O king Yama! Give him (the departed one) in charge of those two dogs of yours, who are guards, having four eyes each, who guard the path (to pitṛ-loka) and who watch men. May you bestow on him happiness and health! 12. The two messengers of Yama, that have wide nostrils, that are very strong, that are satisfied with difficulty, move among the people. May those two (messengers) restore to us to-day auspicious life in order that we may see the Sun! ⁴⁵⁰ 13. Extract Soma juice for Yama (O priests!), offer oblation to Yama. ⁴⁵¹ Sacrifice, in which Agni is messenger (carrier) to the gods and which is well prepared reaches Yama. 14. (O priests) offer oblation sprinkled with ghee to Yama and then start. May he keep us (tied) to the worship of gods, ⁴⁵² so that we may live a long life! 15. Offer to king Yama an oblation which is extremely sweet. Here is salutation to the sages who were born before us and who made the path for us.

448. This appears to postulate the acquisition of a new ethereal body for the departed enabling him to enjoy the pleasures of pitṛloka.

449. 'Suvidatrān'—who will know or recognize you. The Nir. VI.14 explains 'suvidatrāḥ kalyāṇavidyāḥ'.

450. The life implored for here is that of the persons related to the deceased who are left behind on the earth. 'Asutrpa' according to Sāyana and Oldenberg means 'who steal away the lives of men'. This is a good meaning in view of what is stated in the last *pāda* of the verse. In translating as done above the word is taken as 'a+su+trpa', while Sāyana takes it as 'asu+trpa'.

451. This and the following two verses are addressed to the priests.

452. 'Sa no deveṣvāyamad'—For the translation of these words given above, compare Rg. IX. 44.5.

16. The one great (Br̥hat-sāman) passes in three sacrifices (called Jyotir-gaur-āyuh) to the six wide expanses ⁴⁵³. Triṣṭubh, Gāyatrī and the metres are all centered in Yama.

X. 15. 1. May the Soma—loving ⁴⁵⁴ pitṛs, whether of the lower, middling or higher grade, come forward, those pitṛs that attained life (an eternal life or a life of spirit) being kind-hearted and knowing *ṛta* (the rule of right)! May those pitṛs protect us when invoked! 2. Today may this be our salutation to the pitṛs who went (died) before (the birth of this departed one) or who went after (the birth of the departed ⁴⁵⁵), also (those pitṛs) that are seated in this world or those who have places among the powerful people. 3. I have known the pitṛs as those who will recognize (me, their descendant) and I have known the stride of Viṣṇu and the child (viz. Agni), the pitṛs who sit on kuśa grass and partake of food and Soma offering at their will, repeatedly come here. ⁴⁵⁶ 4. O pitṛs, that occupy kuśa grass! (come) down towards us with your protection; we have prepared for you these offerings; accept them. May you come with very blissful protection and then may grant us happiness that is free from trouble (or evil)! ⁴⁵⁷ 5. May the Soma-loving pitṛs invited by us to the dear treasures (offerings) placed on the kuśa grass come! May they hear (our prayers) here! May they speak

453. This is rather a very obscure stanza. The A. V. reads 'pavate' for 'patati'. 'Triakadruka' occurs frequently in connection with Soma (as in Rg. II.22.1; VIII.92,21). Sāyaṇa explains that for the performance of Triakadruka sacrifices Yama gives protection and that he comes to the six wide ones for supervising over what was done or not done. The six are mentioned in Śat. Br. I.5.1.22 as fire, earth, water, wind, day and night. The six wide ones are referred to in Rg. VI.47.3. The conception is rather vague. The meaning probably is that in the Triakadruka sacrifices the Br̥hatsāma is sung and it reverberates throughout the universe (symbolized as the six wide ones) and that all the verses recited in the several metres do the same.

454. X. 15. 1. This and the following seven stanzas were employed as mantras in offering oblations to pitṛs in the rite performed on the day previous to the day (8th tithi) of Aṣṭakā-śrāddha; vide Āśv. gr. II. 4.6.

455. X. 15. 2. 'Purvāsah' and 'uparāsah' may simply mean 'ancient and modern'. 'Pārthive rajasi'—here probably means 'the regions contiguous to or just above the earth.'

456. X. 15. 3. 'Napātam' is difficult to construe: probably it refers to Agni who is often addressed as 'ūrjo.napāt' (Rg. I. 58.8, II. 6.2, VI.48.2).

457. X. 15.4. 'Sam yoh' is explained by the Nir. IV. 21 च रोगाणां यावनं च भयानाम् and रपः in अरपः as meaning पप .



in favour of us and may they protect us! 6. O Fathers! May you all, bending your knee and sitting to the right side (of the offering) commend our sacrifice; whatever fault we may commit in reference to you through our being (erring) men, do not injure us for the sake of that. 7. O Fathers! sitting in front of (in the lap of) brilliant (flames) may you bestow wealth on (me) the mortal sacrificer! May you give wealth to the sons (of the deceased mortal) and may you impart vigour (to them)! 8. May Yama desiring offerings and enjoying the company of our ancient and rich pitrs, who came to (or valued) Soma drinks one after another, who were glorious and in whose company Yama (the king of pitrs) found great delight, partake of (eat) the offerings (given by us) according to his liking⁴⁵⁸. 9. O Agni! come down towards us with the pitrs that were thirsting and gaping (to reach the world of the gods), that knew about sacrifice and that were authors of *stomas* by means of prayers (that they offered), that know us well, that are unfailing (in responding to our call), that partake of the *kavya* offering and that sit round the heated milk. 10. O Agni! come with the pitrs earlier and later (in time) that are unfailing, that partake of the offerings (presented to them), that drink the offerings, that are seated in the same chariot with Indra and the gods, that make obeisances to the gods in their thousands, that sit round the hot milk. 11. O pitrs called Agniṣvāta⁴⁵⁹, that are good guides! Come (to this rite) and sit down each on his proper seat. Eat (partake of) the pure offerings (offered) on the sacred kuśa grass and then bestow wealth (or prosperity) together with all heroic sons. 12. O Agni Jātavedas! when praised (by us) you, having made the oblations savoury, have carried them and presented (them to the pitrs). May they eat them as is their wont (or as they are offered with the word *svadhā*)! O God! May you eat (partake of) the pure offerings! 13. O Jātavedas! you know how many (pitrs) are there, viz. those who are here (near us), those who are not here, those whom we know and those whom we do not know (because they are remote ancestors). Be gracious to accept as is your habit this

458. X. 15. 8.—अनुहिरे is perfect of either वह् with अनु or of ऊह् with अनु. वसिष्ठा: may be taken as meaning 'Vasiṣṭha, his descendants and others' and as the worshippers of Pitrs or simply means 'rich or dressed in rich clothes.'

459. X. 15. 11. अग्निष्वात् = अग्नि + स्वात् (from स्वाद्) means 'tasted or licked by Agni'.

sacrifice which is well prepared. 14. (O Agni) Resplendent (or self-ruling) along with those (pitrs) who (whose bodies) were burnt by fire and also whose bodies were not burnt and who enjoy delight (on account of offerings made) with *svadhā* (or as is their wont) in the midst of the heavens. May you arrange a body as (the deceased) desires that will inspire him to a (new) life (in heaven)!

X. 16. 1. O Agni! Do not burn out this (departed person?), do not singe him all round, do not throw here and there (parts of) of his skin or his body; O Jātavedas (fire)! when you burn him completely, may you send him (the deceased) on to the pitrs! 2. O Jātavedas! When you thoroughly burn this (departed person), then may you hand him over to the pitrs! When he (the dead person) follows this (path) that leads on to a (new) life, may he become one that carries out the wishes of the gods⁴⁶⁰! 3. May your eye (of the deceased) go to the Sun, your breath to the wind, may you go to Heaven and earth by your merit or you may go to the waters if you find pleasure there (or if that be your lot)! May you rest (stand) with all your limbs in the herbs! 4. O Jātavedas! May you burn by your heat the goat that is your share! May your flame, may your bright light burn that goat; ⁴⁶¹ carry this (departed) to the world of those who do good deeds by means of your beneficent bodies (flames). 5. O Agni! discharge again towards the pitrs (this deceased) who being offered on to you moves about (or wanders) as is his habit. O Jātavedas! may he take on (a new) life and increase his offerings and be united with a new (ethereal) body.⁴⁶² 6. (O dead man!) May Agni who consumes all make free from blemish that limb of yours which the dark bird (crow) has pierced or an ant or a snake or a wild beast struck at and may Soma that entered into the brāhmaṇas do the same ⁴⁶³.

460. X. 16. 2. The words असुनीतिमेतां have in view the words असुनीतिमेतां यथावशं तत्त्वं कल्पयस्व in X 15.14 above.

461. X. 16. 4. अजो भागः—This refers to the goat that was optionally carried with the dead body. Vide note 486 below and Rg. X. 16.7 where the cow is mentioned as being burnt with the dead body.

462. X. 16. 5. For the meaning of शेषस्, compare Rg. VII. 4.7 (न शेषो अग्ने अन्यजातमस्ति).

463. X. 16. 6—For सोम...आविवेश, compare 'सोमोऽस्माकं ब्राह्मणानां रात्रिः' शतपथब्रा. V. 4.2.3 and 'स यदि सोमं ब्राह्मणानां भक्षः' ऐ. ब्रा. 35.3. In X. 16.7 the idea seems to be that when the corpse is covered with the parts of a slaughtered animal the corpse may not be burnt too quickly.

7. (O deceased) put on (yourself) with cows an armour (i. e. against fire flames) of Agni (i. e. with the skin of the cow) and surround yourself with the thick fat (of the cow), so that (Agni) that overwhelms with his lustre, that takes delight (in destroying things), that is bold and seeks to burn completely may not scatter (all your parts). 8. O Agni! do not destroy this cup that is dear to the gods and the Soma-loving (pitrs). In this cup from which the gods drink, the immortal gods take delight⁴⁶⁴. 9. I send far away the fire that eats raw flesh: may Agni that carries evil (or sins) go (to regions) where Yama reigns! The other Agni (Jātavedas), knowing everything, may take even here the offering to the gods. 10. I, observing the other Agni (Jātavedas) for the purpose of offering a sacrifice to the pitrs, leave aside the fire that devours raw flesh and that entered your house; may he (the other fire) urge on to the highest world the *gharma* (heated milk or sacrifice⁴⁶⁵). 11. May that fire which carries the *kravyā*⁴⁶⁶ offerings offer them to the pitrs that prosper according to *ṛta*! May he offer the oblations to the gods and pitrs! 12. (O Agni!) we who love you have established you and have kindled you. May you loving (the pitrs) bring here the pitrs that love us in order that they may partake of the offering! 13. O Agni! May you extinguish (with water) that spot which you burnt (at the) time of cremation! May Kiyāmbu (plant) arise here and may dūrvā creeper spreading its tendrils grow here! 14. O Śītikā (cool plant), O herb full of cooling effect, O Hlādikā (freshening herb) causing delight, may you be well associated with a she frog! May you gladden this fire!

464. X. 16. 8. This mantra is repeated as invocation when the *pranītā* water is carried forward in the cup. As stated below all sacrificial implements are placed on the body of the deceased āhitāgni and burnt. But the sage prays that the cup may not be completely destroyed, since it may have to be used in the other world by the departed spirit.

465. X. 16. 10. This verse is rather involved. If the words of this verse and the next are literally construed it would seem that the *kravyād* fire was employed for pitryajña. It is possible to hold that *kravyād* fire was considered as something evil and to be kept distinct from the ordinary or sacrificial fire.

466. X. 16. 11. Sāyaṇa explains on the assumption that the word is *kavyavāhana* in this, while the *Samhitā* and the *padapāṭha* have *kravyavāhana*. The Vāj. S. 19.65 and Tai. S. II. 6.12.5 read '*kavyavāhanā*'. Here apparently at least the flesh-eating fire is admitted not only in the rites for the pitrs but also in the rites for gods.

X. 17. The verses of this hymn, except 3-6, have hardly any bearing on funeral rites. Therefore only those four verses are translated here. The first two verses refer to the marriage of Vivasvat with the daughter of Tvastṛ and to the legend of the birth of Yama and Yamī from Vivasvat. Both are explained at length in Nir. XII. 10-11. Verses⁴⁶⁷ 7-9 which contain prayers to Sarasvatī are almost the same as A. V. 18. 1. 41-43 and are employed by the Kauśika-sūtra (81.39) in the cremation rite along with A. V. 7.68. 1-2 and 18.3.25.

3. May the all-knowing Pūṣan, who does not allow cattle to perish and who protects the world, discharge (despatch) you from this (world to the next) ! May he (Pūṣan) hand you over to these pitṛs and may Agni hand you over to the gods that know you well ! 4. May Pūṣan, who is the life of the Universe and who is himself life, protect you ! May he who is ahead of you guard you on the way (to heaven) ! May god Savitr place you in that place where the doers of good deeds went and dwell. 5. Pūṣan knows all these quarters in order ; may he take us by (a path) most free from danger ! He is the bestower of happiness, full of refulgence, he has all heroes with him ; may he (Pūṣan) the wise one go in front of us without committing a mistake ! 6. Pūṣan exists (stands) in the forefront of the paths (leading to the world of pitṛs), of the paths leading to heaven and of the paths on the earth. He stands facing both the worlds that are very dear (to all) and he, the knowing one, travels towards and away from both.

X. 18. 1. O Death ! Move aside along another path that is your own and different from the Devayāna path. I address you who have eyes and ears. Do not injure our children, do not harm our heroic sons. 2. (O relatives)⁴⁶⁸ that are sacrificers ! Since you have come obliterating the foot-prints of Death and firmly establishing long life for yourselves, prospering with progeny and wealth, may you be pure and holy ! 3. These living (relatives) have turned back separated from the dead ; this day our invocation (sacrifice to) of the gods became auspicious. We then went forward for dancing, for

467. Sarasvatī is a sacred river and also imagined as a deity. Rg. VI. 61 and VII. 95 are two hymns addressed to Sarasvatī. Probably waters of rivers were used at the time of cremation and they are all identified with and held as sacred as Sarasvatī.

468. X. 18.2. This verse is addressed to the relatives when they turn homeward after cremation.



laughter (with our children) firmly establishing our long life. 4. I place (here) this barrier (stone) for the (protection of) the living (relatives, son and the like) so that none of them may go this goal (that the departed went). May they live for a hundred prosperous autumns! May they keep off Death by means of the mountain⁴⁶⁹ (the stone). 5. O Dhātṛ! Arrange the lives of these (the survivors) in the same way as the days come one after another in proper order, as the seasons follow each other in a proper order, as a younger one does not abandon an elder (relative)⁴⁷⁰. 6. May you (the survivors) accepting old age attain (long) life, striving in order (of age) whatever your numbers may be; may Tvaṣṭṛ of noble birth and gracious give you here (in this world) a long life to live!⁴⁷¹ 7. Let these women whose husbands are worthy and are living enter the house with ghee (applied) as collyrium (to their eyes). Let these wives first step into house, tearless, without any affliction,⁴⁷² and well adorned. 8. O wife (of the dead)! Raise yourself up towards the world of the living (your sons and other relatives); you lie down near one (your husband)

469. X. 18.4. Paridhis are encircling sticks of sacrificial wood such as palāśa, khadira placed round the fire. This verse is employed by Āśv. gr. IV. 6.9 in the śāntikarma performed after the collection of bones. Here the fire is surrounded on three sides by the wooden sticks and a stone is placed on the north of the fire with the last quarter as stated by Āśv. gr. IV. 6. 10 अन्तर्मुत्सुं दधतां पर्वतेनेत्यश्मानमुत्तरतोऽग्नेः कृत्वा... यथाहान्यनुपूर्वं भवन्तीत्यमात्यानीक्षेत। अमात्य here means all members of the family, men and women, except the performer of the rite.

470. X. 18.5 यथा न पूर्वमपरो &c. Probably this refers to the funeral procession arranged according to ages, as Āśv. gr. IV. 2.9 states expressly 'अन्वञ्चोऽमात्या अधोनिवीताः प्रवृत्ताशिखा ज्येष्ठप्रथमाः कनिष्ठजघन्याः'. The बौ. पि. सू. I. 21.4 remarks 'अथैनाननुपूर्वं कल्पयति यथाहान्यनुपूर्वं भवन्तीति' or the idea may be that each generation should die in the order it was born and that a son should not die before his father.

471. X. 18.6. This may be symbolic of the fact that the members of the family of the deceased are made to stand on the hide of an ox spread to the west of the fire. Vide Āśv. gr. IV. 6.8 'अथाग्निमुपसमाधाय पश्चादस्यानहुवं चर्मास्तीर्य... तस्मिन्मात्यानारोहयेदारोहतायुर्जसं वृणाना इति.'

472. X. 18.7. This verse was employed in the procedure of widow burning (*satī* or *sahamarāṇa* or *anugamana*) by medieval and later writers. Some of them read 'agneḥ' or 'agne' for 'agre'. But even without this change Aparārka (p. 111) and others rely for the practice of *satī* on this verse. For a discussion on this verse and the next, the different readings in the old texts, the different theories built upon these and the practice of widow-burning, vide H. of Dh. vol. II pp. 617-619 and pp. 625-635.



who is now lifeless; come! You have kept true to this your wifehood of the husband who held your hand (formerly in marriage) and who loved you passionately⁴⁷³. 9. (I) Take the bow from the hand of the departed (kṣatriya) in order that there may be in us martial vigour, brilliance and strength⁴⁷⁴. May thou (the departed) there and may we here be endowed with heroic sons and conquer here all competing and aggressive enemies! 10. (O departed) approach this mother Earth which is spread wide and is pleasant. May this young one (the Earth) as soft as (wool) to you who have bestowed gifts save you from the lap of Death.⁴⁷⁵ 11. O Earth! heave yourself up, do not crush it, be of easy approach and of easy resort to him, and O Earth! cover him (the dead person represented by his bones) just as a mother would cover her son with the fringe (of her garment).⁴⁷⁶ 12. Let the Earth heave itself up and remain firm. Let the

473. X. 18.8. This verse is somewhat misplaced. It should occur earlier in X.14. The last quarter is rather difficult to construe. In the Tai. Ā. VI. 1 there is a similar verse 'इयं नारी पतिलोकं वृणाना निपद्यत उप त्वा मर्त्यं प्रेतम्। विश्वं पुराणमनुपालयन्ती तस्यै प्रजां द्रविणं चेह धेहि'॥. The Tai. Ā. VI 1 also has the verse उदीर्ष्व नार्याभिः and as printed reads 'सम्बभूव', but सायण explains आभिमुख्येन सम्यक् प्राप्नुहि (i. e. he explains सम्बभूव). The बौ. पि. सू. I.8.1-2 reads संबभूव and says about Rg. X. 18.8 and Tai. Ā verse अथास्य भार्यामुपसंवे शयति। इयं नारी...धेहीति। तां प्रतिहितः सव्ये पाणावभिपाद्योत्थापयति उदीर्ष्व...बभूवेति।

474. X. 18.9 अस्मे is used with all cases as shown by the Nir. VI.7. Here it may be equal to अस्मभ्यं or अस्मासु. This verse also should occur earlier along with verse 8 above. In Sāh. Sr. I6.13.13 both 8 and 9 are called utthāpinī (verses) 'उदीर्ष्व नार्युदीर्ष्वतोः पतिवत्युदीर्ष्वतो विश्वावसोऽश्मन्वतीत्युत्थापिन्यः'. The com. remarks 'आभिर्होत्रादयो महिषीमुत्थापयन्ति'. उदीर्ष्वतोः पतिवती is Rg. X. 85.21, उदीर्ष्वतो विश्वावसो is Rg. X.85.22 and अश्मन्वतीः is Rg. X. 53.8. These are recited in अश्वमेध at the time of making the crowned queen get up from near the dead horse. Compare H. of Dh. vol. II. p. 1235. The तै. आ. VI. 1 reads three verses respectively applicable to ब्राह्मण, क्षत्रिय or वैश्य departed person as 'सुवर्णं हस्ताददानां, धनुर्हस्तादां, मणिं हस्तादाददाना' and बौ. पि. सू. I. 8.3-5 cites them and remarks 'अथास्य सुवर्णेन हस्तौ निमृजते स्वर्णं हस्तां इति ब्राह्मणस्य, धनुर्हस्तां इति क्षत्रियस्य' &c.

475. X. 18. 10. Vide the passage from Āśv. Sr. S. where this and the following three verses are stated to be among the 24 verses to be recited on the death of a *dikṣita*. The Āśv. gr. 4.5.5 employs this as a *mantra* to be recited at the time of depositing in a pit the jar containing the burnt bones of the dead. The बृहदेवता (VII. 17-18) says that X. 18. 10-13 are employed in the rite of collecting the bones.

476. X. 18. 11. This verse is employed by the Āśv. gr. 4.5.6 for recital at the time of scattering dust over the jar containing the charred bones.



pillars in their thousands stand up supporting this house. May these homes (the clods of earth) drop him nourishment! May they become here for all days the shelter ⁴⁷⁷ for him (the departed represented by bones)! 13. I prop up the earth around you for your sake. May I placing this lump of clay receive no harm! May the pitrs support (make steady) this post! ⁴⁷⁸ May Yama provide here seats (or resting places) for you. 14. (The gods) have placed me in the day that will come back (tomorrow) like the feather of an arrow; (therefore) I restrain backwards (stop) my speech as a person restrains a horse with a bridle. ⁴⁷⁹

It should be noted that the word 'pitṛ-yajña' actually occurs in Rg. X. 16. 10. What does it mean? It has to be remembered that the hymns Rg. X. 15-18 refer to rites immediately on the death of a single person. They are not concerned with rites performed for deceased male ancestors long after their deaths. The anxiety (in X. 15-18) seems to be to make the ancient pitṛs (styled Barhiṣadaḥ and Agniṣvāttāḥ in Rg. X. 15. 3-4, 11) favourably disposed to the recently departed spirit. *Havis* (sacrificial food such as boiled rice) was offered to the ancient pitṛs (Rg. X. 15. 11) who were supposed to have partaken of the food offered (X. 15. 12). The purpose of these Rgvedic hymns is entirely different from the purpose of the mantras in Tai. S. I. 8. 5 (which refer to the pitryajña performed in Sākamedha). As a matter of fact three of the mantras in Tai. S. I. 8. 5 do occur in Rg. X. 57. 3-5 and are employed in the pinda-pitryajña. There is hardly any reason to suppose that the pitryajña in Rg. X. 15. 10 is more ancient than the pindapitryajña. It is quite possible that both referring as they do to different matters were coeval.

477. X. 18. 12. This is recited after the bones are covered with particles of dust. It is probable that the particles were poetically described as posts.

478. X. 18. 13. It looks very likely that a wooden post was employed as a support for the urn that was deposited under ground.

479. X. 18. 14. This verse is rather obscure and various interpretations have been proposed by German scholars (Roth, Grassmann, Ludwig, Geldner and Oldenberg) and others like Whitney and Hopkins. The translation is only tentative, but it probably brings out the sense in the context much better than many other interpretations. The idea probably is that the speaker wants to disconnect himself from the dead just as a feather may become loosened from an arrow that is shot and therefore he states that he wants to stop addressing the dead and close up all connection with the dead. The *Bṛhaddevatā* (VII. 18-19) remarks on this verse 'प्रतीचीने यथाहाति अपहृत्येतराणि नृ । अहःसु पितरो दधुरित्याशास्तेऽन्त्ययाशिषः' ॥

It would be interesting to see how the ceremonies on the death of an *āhitāgni* are described in the *śrauta* and *grhya* sūtras. The *Āśv. Śr. S. VI. 10* describes what is to be done in case one that has undergone a *dikṣā* (initiation) for a Soma sacrifice or a *sattra* dies before the sacrifice is finished. It states "When the *dikṣita* is dead, they take out the body by the *tirtha*,⁴⁸⁰ place it on the spot where it was intended that *avabhṛtha* (bath at the end of a soma or *sattra* sacrifice) was to be taken and deck the body with the decorations that ordinarily are placed on a dead body. They cut the hair (on the head) of the corpse, the hair on the lips, the hair on the body and also pare the nails. They apply paste of *Nalada* (Indian spikenard) to the corpse and throw on it a garland of *naladas*. Some (having cut open the entrails) take out the fecal matter from them and fill them with *prṣadājya* (when clarified butter is mixed with curds it is so called). They cut off a portion as wide as the foot of the corpse from a new (unworn) garment and cover the dead body with it in such a way that the fringe is towards the west (the head being placed towards the east) and the feet of the corpse are exposed to view. The portion cut off from the piece of cloth is taken by the sons and the like. The deceased man's *śrauta* fires are placed on the churning sticks (the two *aranis*), the dead body is taken outside the *vedi* (fire altar) towards its south, fire is produced by attrition and then the body is burnt therewith. After returning from the cremation, they should finish the work of the day. On the next morning, the recitation of the *śāstras*, the singing of the *stotras* and the *saṁstavas* (reciting hymns in chorus) should be without repetition and the uttering of the *him* sound. On the same day before taking up the *grahas* (cups), the priests come out by the *tirtha*, go round the place of cremation with the right hand turned away (from the place) and sit round it in the following manner viz. the *hotṛ* priest sits to the west (of the place of cremation), the *adhvaryu* to the north, and the *sāma* priests to the west of the *adhvaryu* (and the *brahmā* priest to the south). Then the *sāma* priests sing in a low voice the verse beginning with 'āyam gauḥ prṣnirakramīt.' When the singing is finished the *hotṛ* walks round the place of cremation thrice with his left

480. तीर्थ means the path to the sacrificial ground between the *śānta* and *utkr* (vide H. of Dh. vol. II p. 984). For *स्तोत्रिय* that occurs a little lower down, vide H. of Dh. vol. II p. 1186.



turned towards the place of cremation and without uttering the syllable 'om' recites immediately after the song of the sāma priests the stotriya in a low voice and also the following verses attributed to Yama and Yāmyāyanas (as seers or authors) viz. Rg. X. 14. 7-8, 10-11, X. 16. 1-6, X. 17. 3-6, X. 18. 10-13, X. 154. 1-5. They should finish with Rg. X. 14.12, then collect the charred bones in a jar, take the jar by the way of the tirtha and place it on the seat that was occupied by the deceased sacrificer.⁴⁸¹

The Śāṅkhāyana Śr. S. (IV. 14-15) deals at great length with the death of an *āhitāgni* and the rites that follow. Kāt. Śr.

481. संस्थिते तीर्थेन निहत्यावभृथे प्रेतालङ्कारान् कुर्वन्ति । केशश्मश्रुलोमनखानि वापयन्ति । नलदेनानुलिम्पन्ति । नलदमालां प्रतिमुञ्चन्ति । निष्पुरीषमेके कृत्वा पृषदाज्यं पूरयन्ति । अहतस्य वाससः पाशतः पादमात्रमवच्छिद्य प्रोर्णवन्ति प्रत्यग्दशेनाविःपादम् । अवच्छेदमस्य पुत्रा अमा कुर्वीरन् अग्नीनस्य समारोप्य दक्षिणतो बहिर्वेदि दहेयुः ।...प्रत्येत्याहः समापयेयुः । प्रातरनभ्यासमनभिहिङ्कृतानि शस्त्रानुवचनाभिष्टवनसंस्तवानि । पुरा ग्रहग्रहणात् तीर्थेन निष्क्रम्य त्रिः प्रसव्यमायतनं परित्य पर्युपविशन्ति । पश्चाद्भोता । उत्तरोध्वर्युः । तस्य पश्चाच्छ्रद्धाः । आयं गौः पृश्निरक्रमीदित्युपांशुस्तुवते । स्तुते होता प्रसव्यमायतनं पत्रिजन्स्तोत्रियमनुद्वेदप्रणुवन् । यामीश्च । प्रेहि प्रेहि पथिभिः पूर्येभिरिति पश्चानां तृतीयासुद्धरेत् । मैनमग्ने विदहो माभिः शोच इति षट् । पूषा त्वेति श्रुत्यावयतु प्र विद्वानिति चतस्र उपसर्प मातरं भूमिमेतामिति चतस्रः सोम एकेभ्यः । उरुणसा उदुम्बलाविति च समाप्य सञ्चित्य तीर्थेन प्रपाद्य यथासनमासादयेयुः । आश्व. श्रौ. 10.

The Śat. Br. (XII, 5. 2.5) refers to the practice of cleansing the deceased of all foul matter, but does not approve of it. It recommends 'having washed him out inside he anoints with ghee and thus makes the body sacrificially pure.' आयं गौः पृश्निरक्रमीत्—is the first verse of the hymn Rg. X. 189. 1-3 which are also S. V. No. 630-632 (Āraṇyakāṇḍa) and 1376-78 (Uttarārcika). The hymn also occurs in the other Vedas. The verses are called सार्वराज्य ऋचः. It may be noticed that the Āśv. gr. (IV. 4.6) prescribes the recitation of the 24 mantras prescribed in the Āśv. Śr. above and employs some more verses (from Rg. X. 14-18) in the ritual set out below from the Āśv. gr. In the Āśv. Śr. II, 19 there is a description of a rite called 'pitryā karma,' in which offerings are offered in fire taken from the Dakṣiṇāgni and in which the *devatās* are five viz. Pitarah-somavantaḥ, Soma pitrmān, Pitarah barhiṣadaḥ, Pitarah Agniṣvāttāḥ, Yama, for each of whom three verses are recited respectively in order viz. Rg. X. 15. 1, IX. 96.11, X. 15.5; Rg. I. 91.1, I. 91.12. VIII. 48.13; X. 15.4, X. 15.3. X. 15.2; X. 15.11, X. 15.13, X. 15.14; X. 14.4-5, X. 14.1. Rg. X. 16.12 (repeated thrice) becomes the sāmīdhenī in that rite; X. 14.5 is Yājñā and X. 14.1 are anuvākyaś; Rg. X. 15.9, IV. 11.3, I. 96.1 are recited when the rite is finished (instead of Agni Sviṣṭakṛt Agni Kavyavāhana is invoked); Rg. X. 16.11, X. 15.12 are two Samyājyāś in Vaṣaṭkāra. The editor of the Prayogaratna explains that Nalada means 'Uśira' (i. e. Wālā in Marāṭhī) and that some substitute japā flowers (china rose) for *naladaś*.

S. 25.7 does the same but more briefly. Kāt. (25. 7. 18) refers to the cutting of hair and nails and taking out fecal matter and Kauś. (80. 13-16), Śān. Śr. 4. 14. 4-5 also speak of the cutting of hair, of bathing the dead body, applying paste and putting garlands. The Baud. P. S. (1. 2) refers to these and adds that if they cut open his entrails from the right side they again sew it with darbha grass or they may simply wash the body (without taking out the fecal matter), cover the body with a piece of cloth, deck it, remove the body by the way between the *vedi* and *utkara*, place it on a couch (*āsandī*) over which a black antelope skin was spread with the head to the south, put Nalada garland on it and cover it with an unworn piece of cloth (as in Āśv. Śr. above). Sat. Śr. 28. 1. 22 and G. P. S. I. 10-14 contain similar provisions adding that the toes of the feet and thumbs of the corpse are tied with a white thread or the fringe of a garment (*baddhvā daśenāṅguṣṭhau-pādayoḥ pānyośca*, G. P. S. I. 12) and that the *āsandī* (a small couch or chair on which the corpse was carried) was to be of *udumbara* wood. The Kauśikasūtra (80. 3. 3-45) refers to numerous stanzas from A. V. that are to be recited in kindling the funeral fire and offering oblations, viz. 18. 2. 4 and 36; 18. 3. 4; 18. 1. 49-50, 58; 18. 1. 41-43; 7. 68. 1-2; 18. 3. 25; 18. 2. 4-18 (omitting 18. 2. 10); 18. 4. 1-15 &c. Compare SBE. vol. XI p. XLI for Buddhist practices.

The Āśv. gr.⁴⁸² (IV. 1 and 2) prescribes in general the ceremonies on the death of an *āhitāgni*, while the Āśv. Śr. S. quoted

482, It deserves to be noted that the numbering of the sūtras in Āśv. gr. IV. 1-2 differs in different editions considerably. The rules about the selection of the site for cremation are ancient. The Sat. Br. XIII. 8.1 and Kāt. Śr. XXI. 3, 15-26 also lay down elaborate rules. The latter may be set out here: 'the site for cremation should be one surrounded by a thicket of trees, but it should be so open that the sun shines directly on it at mid-day. It should be saltish land or land sloping to the north or it may be all level land. Some say that it should slope towards the south. The spot should be such that the houses in the village cannot be seen from it and should be at a distance from the road and from the *vaṭa*, *pippala*, *tilvaka*, *haridru*, *sphūrjaka*, *bibhīdaka* and other trees that have an evil name (such as *śleṣmātaka* and *kovidāra*). The Sat. Br. XIII. 8.1.16 names all these trees that are to be avoided. The spot should be such that a pile of wood (as directed in Kāt. Śr. 25. 7. 16-17) can be constructed thereon. It should be a pleasing one and should have a thicket of various trees to its west or in default, water, which may be to its west or north. The spot should have streams or holes and grass growing thereon. The Kāt. Śr. S.

(Continued on the next page)

above deals with what should be done in case the *āhitāgni* dies while engaged in a Soma or other sacrifice. The *Āśv. gr.* remarks 'when an *āhitāgni* dies, one (a son or other relative) should arrange to have a piece of land dug up to the south-east or south-west at a place sloping towards the south or south-east, or according to some towards the south-west. The piece of land dug up should be of the length of a man with upraised arms, of the breadth of one *vyāma*⁴⁸³ and one *vitasti* (twelve finger breadths) in depth. The cemetery (*śmaśāna*) should⁴⁸⁴ be free (open) on all sides. It should abound in herbs, but plants with thorns and with milky juice (should be dug out) as stated before (in *Āśv. gr.* II. 7.5 about *vāstu-parīkṣā*). From which the waters flow on all sides (that is the spot should be a little higher than the surrounding ground); this should be a characteristic required for that (kind of) cemetery where (the body) is to be burnt. They should cut off the hair on the head, the lips and the body and pare the nails (of the deceased); this has been declared already (in *Āśv. Śr.* VI. 10.2). They should make provision for plenty of sacrificial grass and clarified butter. In this (funeral rite) they pour clarified butter into curds. This is the *prṣadājya* used

(Continued from the last page)

21. 3. 27 adds that a bamboo staff with a bundle of grass at its top is carried to the cremation ground and held by a person to the north of the ground while the rites go on and that it is brought back to the house and kept raised at the house. The ground is measured and pegs of *palāśa*, *śamī*, *varaṇa* and a stone are driven into the ground from the east, north, west and south in order. The *Śat. Br.* XIII. 8. 4. 1 mentions pegs (*śanku*). *Sān. Śr.* (IV. 14, 6-9) states that the ground of cremation slopes to the south or south-east, that the ground is swept with a *palāśa* branch with the verse 'apeta' (*Rg.* X. 14. 9), then it is cleared with the *sphya* and sprinkled with water and the pile of wood is made to face south-east.

483. व्याम is defined as 'व्यामो बाह्वोः सकरयोस्ततयोस्तिर्यगन्तरम्' अमरकोश. It is as much as the out-stretched arms together with the hands (i. e. a fathom).

484. श्मशान has two meanings viz. the place where a corpse is cremated and also the place where the charred bones (after cremation) collected in a jar are deposited in the earth. नारायण remarks on आश्व. गृ. IV. 1.11 (अभित आकाशं श्मशानं) 'श्मशानग्रहणेनात्र श्मशानद्वयं गृह्यते ।...दहनदेशश्च श्मशानं सञ्चित्य यत्रास्थीनि निधीयन्ते तच्च श्मशानम् । तद्द्वयं सर्वत आकाशं भवेत् । The शतपथब्रा. XIII. 8.1.1 derives श्मशान in two ways as being a form of श्वाश or श्मशान in the words अथास्मै कल्याणं कुर्वन्ति । अथास्मै श्मशानं कुर्वन्ति । श्मशानं हि व नाम पितृणामन्तारस्ते हामुष्मिन्लोकेऽकृतश्मशानस्य साधुकृत्यामुपदर्शयन्ति तेभ्य एतद्वशं कराति तस्माच्छ्मशानं श्मशानं ह वै तच्छ्मशानमित्याचक्षते परोक्षम् । अथर्व० 18.4.44 shows that the dead body was carried in a cart drawn by oxen.

(in the rites) for *pitrs*. (The relatives of the deceased) carry his sacred fires and his sacrificial vessels in that direction (viz. where the ground is dug up for cremation). After these aged persons, in odd numbers, men and women not going together, carry the dead body. Some say that (the dead body) should be carried in a cart with a seat drawn⁴⁸⁵ by oxen. Some prescribe that a she-animal, either a cow⁴⁸⁶ or a she-goat, of one colour or of a dark colour (should be taken to the cemetery). The (relatives of the dead) tie (a rope) to the left fore-foot and lead it behind (the corpse). Then follow the relations (of the deceased) with their *yajñopavitas* brought low (round their body) and with the top knot untied (dishevelled), the older ones going first, the younger ones last. Having thus arrived at the spot (of cremation), the performer (of cremation rites) while walking three times round the spot (for cremation) with his left side turned towards it, sprinkles water on it with a *śamī* twig with the verse 'apeta vita vi ca sarpatātaḥ' (Rg. X. 14. 9). To the south-east on a slightly raised corner (of the spot for cremation), he (son or the like) places the *Āhavanīya* fire, to the north-west the *Gārhapatya* fire and to the south-west the *Dakṣiṇa* fire. Then a person that knows (how to prepare a funeral pile) collects a pile of fuel between the fires (on the dug-up spot). Then the performer of the rites spreads *barhis* (*kuśas*) and a black antelope skin with the hairy part outside on the pile, (the relatives) place the dead body thereon carrying it by way of the north side of the *Gārhapatya* fire and turning its head towards the *Āhavanīya* fire. They make the wife

485. The Baud. P. S. (I. 4, 5-6) says that servants or old men should carry the dead body on a couch or chair covering the body with a mat or according to some in a cart.

486. अनुस्तरणी is a cow or she-goat which is killed and then is made to cover the dead body with its limbs. The word is explained by नारायण as 'प्रेतमनुस्तर्यते या स्त्री पशुः सानुस्तरणी ।'. The कात्यायनश्रौत (25.7.34-37) 'अनुस्तरणी चैत्यश्चाकर्णमाहत्य हस्तयोर्वृकौ । अङ्गेष्वङ्गानीति जातुकर्ण्यः । न वास्ति सन्देहात् । वपया मुख-मवच्छाद्याग्निभिराग्निपयति । आहुतिं जुहोति पुत्रो भ्रातान्योवा ब्राह्मणोऽस्मात्त्वमाधिजातोऽसि स्वर्गं जायतां पुनः असौ स्वर्गाय लोकाय स्वाहेति ।'. The mantra अस्मात्त्व...लोकाय स्वाहा is वाज. सं. 35.22. Vide शतपथ ब्रा. XII. 5.2.15 for the same words and mantra as in Kāt. Sr. The com. of Yājñikadeva on Kāt. Sr. 25.7.34 explains वृकौ as कुक्षिगोलकौ. Vide also Baud. P. S. I.4.1 and I 9-10, Sat. Sr. 28.2.3-13, Kauś. 81.20-27. The latter prescribes that the cow is led round with the left side towards the corpse with the mantras A.V. 18.3.3 and 4, that the cow is struck on her buttocks and loins, that two *vrkkas* are taken from the cow's back and placed on the hands of the corpse with the mantra 'ati drava' (A. V. XVIII. 2.1f) which is Rg. X.14.10.



of the deceased (belonging to any one of the three higher varṇas) lie down (on the pile) to the north of the dead body, and also place his bow to the north if (the deceased was) kṣatriya. The wife's brother-in-law⁴⁸⁷ (husband's brother) or a representative of the husband or a pupil (of the deceased) or an old servant (slave) should make her rise (from the pile) with the mantra 'udīrṣva nāryabhi jīvalokam' (Rg. X. 18. 8); the performer (of the rites) should mutter this verse if a śūdra (servant) makes her rise and he takes away the bow with the verse 'dhanur-hastādādāno' (Rg. X. 18. 9). It has been stated (above what is to be done) in case a śūdra (should perform this act). Having strung the bow he should before the piling up of the things (mentioned below on the dead body) is done, break the bow to pieces and throw it on the pile.⁴⁸⁸ He then should put the following sacrificial implements (on the dead body) viz. into the right hand the spoon called Juhū, in the left hand the spoon Upabhṛt, on his right side the Sphya (wooden sword), on his left side the Agnihotrahavaṇī (the ladle with which the Agnihotra offerings were offered into fire), on his chest, head and teeth respectively the dhruvā (the big sacrificial ladle), the dishes (or the *kapālas*), the pressing stones (used for pressing out Soma juice in a soma sacrifice), on the two nostrils the two small ladles (*sruva*), on the ears the two Prāsitra-haraṇas,⁴⁸⁹ if there be only one then breaking

487. Many of the sūtras refer to this act of making the wife of the deceased lie down to the north of the dead body on the funeral pile and then making her rise up from it. Vide Kauśikasūtra 80. 44-45 'इयं नारीनि पत्नीमुपसंवेशयति। उदीर्ष्वेत्युत्थापयति।' These two verses are A. V. XVIII. 3. 1-2. Sat. Sr. (28. 2. 14-16) states that before the corpse is placed on the pyre the wife is made to lie down near it with the verse 'iyam nārī' and then her husband's brother or another brāhmaṇa makes her get up with the verse 'udīrṣva nārī'. The same sūtra (28. 2. 22) says that the wife may be made to lie down near the corpse after the latter is placed on the pyre or before (as it appears to prefer).

488. Here the Sat. Br. XII. 5. 2. 6 and some of the sūtras (such as Kāt. Sr. 25. 7. 19, Sān. Śr. IV. 14. 16-35, Sat. Śr. 28. 2. 23-50, Kauśika 81. 1-19, Baud. P. S. I. 8-9) and smṛtis like Gobhila (III. 24) add that in the seven seats of vital air viz. the mouth, the two nostrils, the two eyes and the two ears, they cast small pieces of gold. Others add that sesame wetted with ghee are also thrown on the corpse. The G. P. S. II. 7. 12 says that it is the adhvaryu who deposits the kapālas on the head (of the dead body).

489. On the Prāsitraharaṇa, vide H. of Dh. vol. II. p. 1064 (the vessel in which a portion of puroḍāśa is kept for the brahmā priest). For the Saṃyā (yoke-pin), vide H. of Dh. vol. II. p. 1112 n. 2487.

it into two; on the belly the *pātrī* (in which the oblations are collected before offering) and the *camasa* (cup) in which (the *idā* portion) cut off is placed; on his private parts the *śamyā*; on the thighs the two *araṇis* (wood sticks for kindling fire by attrition) and on the spanks the mortar and pestle, on the feet the winnowing baskets (*śūrpa*) or if there be one only, by tearing it in two pieces. Those of the sacrificial implements which have a hollow (into which a fluid can be poured) are filled with *Prṣadājya*. The son (of the deceased) should take the upper and the lower mill-stones for himself and the implements made of copper, iron and earthenware ⁴⁹⁰.

The Śat. Br. XII. 5. 2. 14 first states that sacrificial implements made of stone or earthenware should be donated to a brāhmaṇa but people regard the latter as a corpse-bearer (and so) they should be thrown into water.⁴⁹¹ Taking out the omentum (*vapā*) of the Anustaranī she-animal he should cover therewith the head and the mouth (of the deceased) with the verse 'Agner varma' (Rg. X. 16. 7). Taking out the two kidneys (*vrkkau*) of the animal he should deposit them into the

490. It should be noted that there are some variations in the statements about the sacrificial implements made here and in the Sat Br. XII. 5. 2, Sat. Sr. 28. 2. 23-50, Kāt. Sr. 25. 7. 21-33, Kauṣ. 81. 1-19, Baud. P. S. I. 8. 11-I. 9. 7, Sāh. Sr. IV. 14. 18-36. For example, the Sāh. Sr. (IV. 16. 21-31) prescribes that the Agnihotrahavanī is placed on the throat and the two araṇis on the private parts, while Āśv. gr. places the agnihotrahavanī on the left side and the śamyā on private parts. Sabara quotes several times a passage which says 'They burn the āhitāgni with his (vedic) fires and sacrificial implements' (āhitāgnim-agnibhir dahanti yajñapātraisca) on Jai. IV. 1. 9, VI. 6. 34, XI. 3. 34. Those words occur also in Baud. P. S. III. 1. 9. Jai. XI. 3. 34 states the proposition that the cremation of the sacrificer with the sacrificial implements is what is called *pratipattikarman* (the final disposal) of the yajñapātras.

491. अथास्य सप्तसु प्राणायतनेषु सप्त हिरण्यशकलान्प्रत्यस्यति ज्योतिर्गामृतं हिरण्य ज्योतिरेवास्मिन्मृतं दधाति। अथैनमन्तरेणाग्नींश्चित्वा कुण्ठाजिनमुत्तरलोम प्राचीनग्रीवं प्रस्तीर्य तस्मिन्नेनमुत्तानं निपाद्य जुह्वं घृतेन पूर्णं दक्षिणे पाणावादधाति सव्य उपशृतमुरसि ध्रुवं मुखेऽग्निहोत्रहवणीं नासिकयोः सुवौ कर्णयोः प्राशित्रहरणे शीर्षश्चमसं प्रणीताप्रणयनं पार्श्वयोः शूर्पे उदरे पात्रीं समवत्तधानीं पृषदाज्यवतीं शिश्रस्यान्ते शम्यामाण्डयो- रन्ते वृषारवावन्वयलूखलं च मुसलं चान्तरेणोरु अन्यानि यज्ञपात्राणि दक्षिणे पाणौ स्फ्यम्। स एष यज्ञायुधी यजमानः। यथा बिभ्यदामोषमतीयादेवमेव योऽस्य स्वर्गो लोको जितो भवति तमभ्यत्येति। शतपथब्रा. XII. 5. 2. 6-8. The गौ. पि. सू. I. 2. 31, Sat. Sr. 28. 2. 23-4 and others provide that either gold bits or drops of clarified butter were to be cast over the seven orifices (mouth and others). A comparatively later *smṛiti* like that of Parāśara mentions this depositing of sacrificial implements on the sacrificer's body (V. 19-22).

hands (of the deceased) the right kidney in the right hand and left kidney in the left with the mantra 'ati drava' (Rg. X. 14, 10, recited once only). He puts the heart (of the animal) on his heart and according to some also two lumps of flour (of rice or barley); according to others only if there are no kidneys.⁴⁹² Having deposited the whole animal limb by limb (on corresponding limbs of the dead body) and having covered it with its own hide he recites when the Prapitā water is being carried forward, by way of invocation the mantra 'imam agne' (Rg. X. 16. 8). Bending his left knee he should offer into the Dakṣiṇa fire oblations of clarified butter with the formula 'to Agni svāhā! To Soma svāhā! To the world svāhā! To Anumati svāhā!' A fifth oblation (is to be offered) on the chest of the deceased with the formula 'from this one, indeed thou hast been born! May he now be born out of thee, N. N.! To the heavenly world, svāhā' (Vāj. S. 35. 22). He gives the order 'Light the fire together.' Then the Āśv. gr. (IV. 4. 2-5) states what one has to understand if the Āhavanīya or Gārhapatya or Dakṣiṇa fire reaches the dead body first or if all the fires reach the body at the same moment; while the body is burning he recites over it the same texts (Rg. X. 14. 7 and others quoted above in n. 481 from Āśv. Sr. sūtra). Being cremated by a person who knows this he goes to the heavenly world together with the smoke (of the funeral pile)—thus it is known (in the Śruti). After he has recited the verse 'ime jivāḥ' (Rg. X. 18. 3) they (all relatives) turn round from right to left and go away without looking back. When they have come to a place where there is standing water, having once plunged into it and raised their heads out of it they pour one handful of water, pronounce the gotra name and the proper name (of the deceased),

492. According to Kāt. Sr. quoted above in n. 486 the Anustaraṇī animal was to be struck behind the ear and killed. According to Jātūkarnya the several limbs of the animal were to be placed on the corresponding limbs of the dead body. But Kāt. disapproves of this since when burnt there may be a doubt (in collecting bones) whether they are of the deceased or of the animal (and so only the flesh of the animal was to be placed on the limbs according to Kāt.). Compare Sat. Br. XII. 5. 9-12 for similar remarks. Āśv. gr. IV. 2. 4 (as interpreted by Nārāyaṇa) itself shows that there was an option viz. that the animal may be killed or let off and donated to a brāhmaṇa (vide also Baud. P. S. I. 10. 2). The Sāh. Sr. (IV. 14. 14-15) states that the kidneys were to be taken from the killed or living animal from behind and being slightly heated on the Dakṣiṇa fire were to be placed in the two hands of the deceased with the two mantras 'ati drava' (Rg. X. 14. 10-11)

come out (of the water), put on other garments, wring out (already worn garments) once, lay them away with their skirts to the north and sit down until the stars appear or they may enter their houses when a part of the Sun's disc is still visible, the younger ones entering first, the older ones last. When they have come to the houses they touch a stone, the fire, cow-dung, fried barley, sesame seeds and water. Compare Śat. Br. XIII. 8. 4. 5 for bath and offering of water by relatives and touching a bull on returning from cremation and reciting 'udvayam' (Vāj. S. 35. 14 = Rg. I. 50. 10) and applying collyrium and unguent to their bodies⁴⁹³.

It is not possible from considerations of space to set out all that is said in the other grhya sūtras. A few interesting points may be noted here. The Śat. Br. XIII. 8. 4. 11, Pār. gr. (III. 10. 10 ff) expressly provide that funeral rites for any one whose upanayana has been performed are the same from the choosing of the site for the burning of the body to the descent into water on the part of the relatives (for bathing themselves) as those prescribed for a person who has set up the śrauta (Vedic) fires, the only difference being that an *āhitāgni* is cremated with the three Vedic fires kept by him, that one who has kept only the *smārta*⁴⁹⁴ or *aupāsana* fire is burnt with that and that common persons who have neither kept the śrauta fires nor *smārta* fire are burnt with the ordinary⁴⁹⁵ fire. Devala provides that when using ordinary fire, one should avoid taking the fire from a *cāṇḍāla* or any unclean fire or the fire in the room of a freshly delivered woman or the fire of a *patita* or fire from a funeral pyre.⁴⁹⁶ The *Pitrdayitā* states that the mantra 'asmāt tvam &c.' was not to be recited when the deceased was a person

493. अपामार्गैरपमृजते ।...यत्रोदकं भवति तत्स्नानं सुमित्रिया आप ओषधयः सन्त्वित्यञ्जलिनाप उपाचति... । स्नात्वाहतानि वासांसि परिधायानहुहः पुच्छमन्वारभ्यायन्त्याग्नेयो वानहानग्निमुखा एवं तत्पितृलोकाज्जीवलोकमभ्यायन्ति ।... उद्वयं तमसस्परीति । एतामृचं जपन्तो यन्ति... । तेभ्य आगतेभ्य आज्ञनाभ्यञ्जने प्रयच्छन्त्येष हं मानुषोलङ्कारस्तेनैव तं मृत्युमन्तर्दधते । शत. ब्रा. XIII. 8.4.4-7. सुमित्रिया is वाज. सं. 35.12 and उद्वयं is वाज. सं. 35.14 (= ऋ. I.50.10)

494. अथानग्निचितः । एतदेव भूमिजोषणमेतत्समौनं कर्म यदन्यदग्निकर्मणः । शतपथब्रा. XIII. 8.4.11.

495. आहिताग्निर्यथान्यायं दग्धव्यञ्जिभिराग्निभिः । अनाहिताग्निरेकेन लौकिकेनेतरो ज्ञनः ॥ वृद्धया. q. by मिता. on या. III. 2, अपरार्क p. 873. This is कूर्मपुराण (सप्तमः) 23.67

496. लौकिकाग्निश्च चण्डालादिव्यतिरिक्ता ग्राह्यः । चण्डालाग्निरमेध्याग्निः सति काग्निर्यथा कर्हिचित् । पतिताग्निश्चिताग्निश्च न शिष्टग्रहणोचिताः ॥ इति देवलस्मरणात् । मिता. ७५ या. III, 2, अपरार्क p. 873, परा. मा. I. 2 p. 286,



who had not kept sacred fires.⁴⁹⁷ The Pār. gr. further provides that all relatives residing in the same village, if they can trace the relationship, do the same, that they wear only one garment, suspend their sacred thread over the right shoulder, that with the fourth finger of the left hand they spurt away the water with Vāj. S. 35. 6 and facing the south plunge into water and pour out one libation of water with joined hands. The Āp. Dh. S. (II. 6. 15. 2-7) lays down a bath when a person's relatives on the mother's side and father's relatives up to the 7th degree or as long as relationship can be traced die, except in the case of children less than a year old. In the case of a child's death before one year, the parents and those who carry the child's body have to bathe. All the above should have dishevelled hair, should throw dust in the hair, wear only one garment, turn their faces to the south, plunge into water, offer water to the dead thrice and then sit down on the bank (of the river or pond), then come to the village and do what the women tell them to do (such as touching fire and bull &c.). Yāj. III. 2 also provides the same rules as Pār. gr. and prescribes the recitation of the mantra 'apa naḥ śośucad agham' ('May evil be burnt away from us,' Rg. I. 97. 1, A.V. IV. 33.1, Tai. Ā. VI. 10.1). The G. P. S. (II. 23) provides that the funeral pyre is to be made with the wood of sacrificial trees, (II. 37 and 39) that the sapindas of the deceased headed by the women, the youngest being the first, fan the corpse placed on the pyre with the fringes of their garments, that the performer of the funeral rites takes a jar filled with water, places a *darbhendva* (?) on his head and goes round the corpse thrice and the priest gives a light stroke on the jar thrice separately with a stone (*aśman*) or an axe and recites a mantra 'imā āpo &c.' when a stream of water rushes out of the broken jar, (changing the words about 'asmin loke' to 'antarikṣe' and 'svarge' at the 2nd and 3rd perambulations). The performer while standing should drop behind him the jar of water. Then after repeating the mantra 'tasmāt tvam adhiḥjātosī...asau svargāya lokāya svāhā,' he should set fire to the pyre to burn the body.⁴⁹⁸ The Sat. Śr. 28. 1. 38 provides that the family members

497. अनग्नेर्ब्रह्मणस्य यज्ञपात्राभावात्पात्रन्यासव्यतिरिक्तसमस्तेतिकर्तव्यतया दग्धव्यः । अस्मास्व...मन्त्रस्त्वस्मिन्नपि न प्रयोक्तव्यः । पितृदयिता p. 78.

498. अथ कर्तोदकुम्भमादाय पत्नी वा । दर्भेण्डुं शिरसि निधाय मृतं पर्येति । तस्मिन्ना परशुना बाधस्तात्किञ्चित्प्रहरति । तां धारामनुमन्त्रयेत् इमा आपो मधुमत्योस्मिन्नि लोके उपदुह्यन्तामक्षीयमाणाः स्वधा नम इति ।...तिष्ठन्नेवोदकुम्भं पृष्ठतो विवृजेत् ।...तस्यास्वमचि जातोसि त्वदयं जायतां पुनरसौ स्वर्गाय लोकाय स्वाहेत्यसौ शब्देन प्रेतस्य नाम संबुद्धयन्तेन गृहीत्वा शरीरेणाग्निं संयोजयेत् । गौ. पि. सू. I. 3.1-13.

beat their right thighs, fan the corpse with the fringes of their garments and go thrice round the corpse with the left side towards the corpse and recite the *mantra* 'apa naḥ śośucad-
agham' (Rg. I. 97. 1. Tai. Ā. VI. 10. 1). It further provides (28. 1. 37-46) that the corpse is carried in a cart or by (four) men and while being carried four stops are made, at each of which clods of earth are dug up and boiled rice is offered thereon with mantras like 'pūṣā tvetaḥ' (Rg. X. 17. 3., Tai. Ā. VI. 10. 1), 'āyur viśvāyur' (Rg. X. 17. 4, Tai. Ā. VI. 10. 2). The Varāha-
purāṇa prescribes that a Paurāṇic mantra should be recited, that the performer should go round the pyre and apply the kindled fire towards the part of the pyre where the head is placed.⁴⁹⁹

In modern times the procedure of cremation is generally on the lines of that described in the Āśv. gr. cited above and the procedure described in the Garuḍapurāṇa II. 4. 41 ff. The following is a summary of the procedure set out in the Antyeṣṭi-
paddhati of Nārāyaṇabhaṭṭa which is generally followed by Rgvedins in Western India. The dead body is washed with water, is decked with a *tilaka* on the forehead, is clothed in a garment, is covered with a paste of Jaṭāmāmsī and a garland of *naladas* is placed round its neck. Then the performer washes his own feet, sips water, performs prāṇāyāma without Vedic mantra, then makes a *Saṅkalpa* (as in note 500),⁵⁰⁰ he wears his sacred thread under the left shoulder (and on the right shoulder) and prays to the earth with the mantra 'upasarpa' (Rg. X. 18.10); he then thrice goes round the place dug up (for cremation) and sprinkles water with a śamī branch at the end of the mantra 'apeta' (Rg. X. 14. 9). This mantra is repeated thrice. Then he draws three lines on the ground with an iron piece or kuśa roots saying 'I draw a line for Yama, the lord of cremation,' 'I draw a line for Kāla, lord of &c' 'I draw a line for Mrtyu, lord of &c.' Then he throws into the dug-up ground pieces of gold and sesame and water mixed with sesame in the middle of the dug up spot for Yama, to the north for Kāla and to the south for

499. कृत्वा सुदुष्करं कर्म जानता वाप्यजानता । मृत्युकालवशं प्राप्य नरं पञ्चत्वमागतम् ॥
धर्माधर्मसमायुक्तं लोभमोहसमावृतम् । दहेयं सर्वगात्राणि दिव्यान् लोकान्स गच्छतु ॥ एवमुक्त्वा
ततः शीघ्रं कृत्वा चैव प्रदक्षिणम् । ज्वलमानं तथा वह्निं शिरःस्थाने प्रदीपयेत् । चतुर्वर्णेषु संस्कार
एवं भवति पुत्रक ॥ बराहपुराण q. by छुद्धिप्रकाश p. 170 and by छुद्धिकौमुदी p. 115.
These verses occur with variations in बराहपुराण chap. 187.106-108.

500. अद्येत्यादि देशकालौ स्मृत्यामुकगोत्रस्यामुकशर्मणोस्मन्मित्रादेः प्रेतारो प्रेतारो
विमोक्षार्थमौर्ध्वदेहिकं करिष्ये इति सङ्कल्प्य प्राचीनावीती भूमिं प्रार्थयेत् । अन्त्येष्टिपद्धति
folio 165 a.

Mr̥tyu (each being associated with pitṛs, the formula being 'Yamāya dahanapataye pitṛbhyaḥ svadhā namaḥ'). He puts sesame in the mouth of the corpse and prepares a funeral pile sufficient for burning the body by means of sacrificial wood brought by the castemen of the deceased. On that pile he spreads kuśa grass and over the latter black antelope skin with the hair outside. Then the corpse is carried to the north of the fire and is placed on the funeral pile with the head to the south. To the north of the dead body, he makes the wife of the deceased sit down. Then the husband's brother, pupil or an old servant makes her get up with the mantra 'udīṣva' (Rg. X. 18. 8). Then the performer puts pieces of gold in the seven holes of the body (vide above note 491) or drops of clarified butter. He then throws on the body of the departed sesame anointed with ghee, he performs *parisamūhana* (wiping with the wet hand) of the fire, then *paristarana* (strewing darbha grass) round the fire together with the funeral pile) and *paryukṣaṇa* (sprinkling water) and brings to the south of the fire the vessels viz. prokṣaṇī, sruva, camasa and the vessel containing clarified butter. Then he puts water in the *camasa* (cup), covers it with darbha grass and carries it forward and invokes the *camasa* with Rg. X. 16. 8 (imam-agne &c.). He makes a *sankalpa* that he would wait upon (or worship) the dead, takes two fuel sticks and offers them into fire and performs the worship of Agni, Kāma, Loka and Anumati by offering clarified butter in fire with the appropriate formula (viz. agnaye svāhā, agnaya idam na mama). Then he offers on the chest of the deceased clarified butter (or *prṣadājya*) (according to some) with the mantra 'asmādvai &c. (vide above note 493). Then he prepares apūpas (balls) with barley flour and mixes them with *prṣadājya* and places portions of the balls on the five parts viz. forehead, mouth, the two arms and chest with the following mantras viz. Rg. X. 16. 7 (for the ball on forehead and mouth), Rg. X. 14. 10 (for the two arms) and Rg. X. 14. 11 (for the chest). Then he makes the fire flame up with the mantra Rg. X. 16. 9 (kravyādam-agnim) towards the head of a male (and the feet of a woman). Then he should repeat certain mantras while the body is being burnt viz. Rg. X. 14. 7-8, Rg. X. 14. 10-11, Rg. X. 16. 1-6, X. 17. 3-6. X. 18. 10-13, X. 154. 1-5, X. 14. 12. While muttering these mantras he should throw sesame on the body that is being burnt. Then the performer should take a jar (full of water) on his left shoulder, should make a hole in it on the back of the jar with a broken but smooth stone. He should go round thrice with the left towards the

burning body from the spot where the feet of the corpse lie and mutter certain mantras. The jar is struck thrice. All the *sagotra* relatives go round the burning corpse. Then the jar is completely broken near that part of the funeral pyre where the head rests. The relatives without looking back turn to the left and come out of the cemetery with the youngest members first. The performer recites Rg. X. 18. 3 (*ime jīvā &c.*). The relatives repair to a spot where water is flowing, wearing only one garment and with faces to the south and hair dishevelled, plunge into the water once, sip water, place on the bank that stone (*aśman*) with which holes were made in the jar, offer water mixed with sesame on that stone with folded hands with the words 'O departed, of such a gotra and of such a name! May this water mixed with sesame reach you'. The performer offers water with the *uttariya* for allaying the thirst (of the departed) due to the burning.

Many rules were prescribed as regards the carrying of the dead body. It has been seen above that the corpse was carried in a cart or on a couch by the relatives or by the servants (*dāśas*). Some *sūtras*, *smṛtis*, commentaries and other works lay down many other rules here. The *Rāmāyaṇa* (Ayodhyā 76. 13 ff) states that on the death of Daśaratha his Vedic fires were carried by his priests before the corpse, that the dead body was placed in a palanquin (*śibikā*), that his servants carried it and that coins of gold and clothes were thrown about on the road in front of the bier (for the poor). The general rule was that members of the three higher *varṇas* alone should carry to the cemetery a dead body belonging to any one of those *varṇas* and a *śūdra* should not carry the dead body of a man of a higher caste (when there were men of the caste of the dead available) nor should a man of one of the three higher *varṇas* carry the dead body of a *śūdra*, and that the impurity in the case of a *śūdra* carrying a dead *dvi-jāti* or a *dvi-jāti* carrying a *śūdra*'s body is determined by the caste of the dead man. Vide *Viṣṇu Dh. S.* 19. 1-4, *Gaut. Dh. S.* 14. 29, *Manu* 5. 104, *Yāj. III.* 26, *Parāśara III.* 43-45. A *brahmacārin* was not permitted to be a carrier of the dead body of a person or relative even of his own caste, except his parents, *guru*, *ācārya* and *upādhyāya* and he was not guilty of breaking his vows of student-hood if he carried the bodies of any one of the five mentioned above. Vide *Vas.* 23. 7, *Manu* 5. 91, *Yāj. III.* 15, *Laghu-Hārita* 92-93, *Brahmapurāṇa* (q. by *Par. M. I.* 2 p. 278). *Guru*, *ācārya* and *Upādhyāya* are denoted



by Yāj. I. 34-35. If a *brahmacārin* carried the corpse of any one except the above five he was held to have swerved from his *vrata* and he had to undergo the expiation for *vratalopa*. Manu 5.103 and Yāj. III. 13-14 state that those who merely carry a dead body of their own caste should bathe with the clothes on, then bite off *nimba* leaves, should perform *ācamana*, touch fire, water, cowdung, white mustard, place slowly a foot on a stone and then enter their house. It being the duty of *sapiṇḍas*⁵⁰¹ to carry the dead body of their relative they, after doing so, had simply to bathe, to touch fire and drink clarified butter for being pure (Gaut. 14. 29, Yāj. III. 26, Manu IV. 103, Parāśara III. 42, Devala q. by Par. M. 1. 2, p. 277, Hārīta q. by Aparārka p. 871). Carrying the dead body of a *brāhmaṇa* who has no relatives is highly extolled by Parāśara (III. 39-41) who says that a person, that thus carries the dead body of a *brāhmaṇa*, secures at each footstep the reward of the performance of a sacrifice and he becomes pure at once simply by plunging into water and performing *prāṇāyāma*, while Manu (5. 101-102) prescribes that if one carries the dead body of a person who is not a *sapiṇḍa* through affection he becomes pure after three days. The Hārīlatā p. 121 quotes the Ādipurāṇa that if a *kṣatriya* or *vaiśya* cremates the dead body of a poor *brāhmaṇa* or of a *kṣatriya* who has lost everything or of a poor *vaiśya*, he secures great merit and becomes pure at once after a bath. Even now generally (particularly in villages) men of the same caste carry or follow a dead body and are held to be purified by a bath with clothes on. The medieval commentaries like the *Mitākṣarā* stuck strictly to the extreme exclusiveness of caste by prescribing 'if a man⁵⁰² carries a dead body through affection, eats food in that family and dwells in their house he is under impurity for ten days; if he simply stays with the dead man's family but does not eat their food he is impure for three days; these rules apply when the carrier is of

501. विहितं तु सपिण्डानां प्रेतनिर्हरणादिकम् । तेषां करोति यः कश्चित्तस्याधिक्यं न विद्यते ॥ देवल q. by परा. मा. I. 2 p. 277 ; विहितं हि सपिण्डस्य प्रेतनिर्हरणादिकम् । दोषः स्यादसपिण्डस्य तत्रानाथक्रियां विना ॥ हारीत q. by अपरार्क p. 871.

502. अत्रेयं व्यवस्था । यः स्नेहादिना श्वानिर्हरणं कृत्वा तदीयमन्नमश्नाति तदूहे च वसति तस्य दशाहेनैव शुद्धिः । यस्तु केवलं तदूहे वसति न पुनस्तदन्नमश्नाति तस्य विज्ञानम् । यः पुनर्निर्हरणमात्रं करोति न तदूहे वसति न च तदन्नमश्नाति तस्यैकाह इति । एतस्मात्तदीय-विषयम् । विजातीयविषये पुनर्यजातीयं प्रेतं निर्हरति तज्जातिप्रयुक्तमाशौचं कारयति यथाह गौतमः (१४.२९) ... विप्रस्य शूद्रनिर्हरणे मासमाशौचं शूद्रस्य तु विप्रनिर्हरणे दशरात्र-मित्येवं शववदाशौचं कार्यमित्यर्थः । मिता. on या. III. 14,

the same caste as the dead person. But if a brāhmaṇa carries a śūdra's corpse, the brāhmaṇa is impure for a month, but if a śūdra carries a brāhmaṇa's body the śūdra is impure for ten days.' The Kūrmapurāṇa prescribes that if a brāhmaṇa carries the dead body of a brāhmaṇa for a fee or from other interested motive he becomes impure for ten days, a kṣatriya, vaiśya and śūdra doing the same becomes impure for 12, 15 or 30 days and the Viṣṇupurāṇa says that the person carrying a dead body for a fee has to become impure for the period of impurity prescribed for a man of that caste. It may be stated that these rules about impurity on the ground of carrying or following the carrying of a dead body of another caste are no longer enforced and it is extremely doubtful whether they were ever strictly enforced or followed. Hārīta⁵⁰³ prescribes that a dead body should not be carried through the midst of a village if while going to the cemetery a village comes in the way, but it should be carried away from it. Manu, 5.92 and Vṛddha-Hārīta IX. 100-101 prescribed that the dead body of a śūdra, vaiśya, kṣatriya and a brāhmaṇa was to be taken out respectively by the southern, western, northern and eastern gates of the town or village. It was provided by Yama and the Garudapurāṇa II. 4.56-57⁵⁰⁴ that the fuel for the funeral pyre should not be carried (for higher *varṇas*) to the cemetery by a śūdra and if a śūdra did so the deceased would always remain in the state of *preta*. The Hārīlatā (p. 121) says that if firewood is carried by śūdras still the pyre should be made by brāhmaṇas only (for a brāhmaṇa's body). The smṛtis and purāṇas provide that the corpse⁵⁰⁵ should be first bathed with water and then cremated, that the corpse should never be burned naked, but that it should be covered with cloth, decked with flowers and have fragrant unguents (sandalwood

503. तथा हारीतोऽपि न ग्रामाभिमुखं प्रेतं हरेयुरिति । मित्ता. on या. III. मद्. 2, पा. p. 395, हारलता p. 119 which explains 'निर्हस्तां यदि वर्त्मनि ग्रामः स्यात्तदा तन्मध्ये न गन्तव्यमित्यर्थः ।'.

504. यस्यानयति शूद्रोऽग्निं तृणं काष्ठं हवींषि च । प्रेतत्वं च सदा तस्य स चाधर्मेण लिप्यते ॥ यम. q. by मित्ता. on या. III. 2, अपरार्क p. 871, हारलता p. 120 (reads मन्यते ह्येष धर्मोऽस्ति) which last takes स...लिप्यते as referring to the brāhmaṇa who is cremated; तृणकाष्ठतिलाज्यादि स्वयं निन्युः सुतादयः ॥ शूद्रानीतैः कृतं कर्म सर्वं भवति निष्फलम् । गरुड०.

505. चन्दनोक्षितसर्वाङ्गं सुमनोभिर्विशुषितम् ।...निर्हरेयुः सुतादयः ॥ आमपात्रेऽन्वयादि य प्रेतमग्निपुरःसरम् । एकोऽनुगच्छन्नस्यार्धमर्धपशुत्सृजेद्भुवि ॥ गोभिलस्मृति III 23-25 q. by अपरार्क p. 873 ; प्रचेताः । स्नानं प्रेतस्य पुत्राद्यैर्वस्त्राद्यैः पूजनं ततः । नग्ने देहं दहेच्चैव निक्षिप्य देयं परित्यजेत् ॥ किञ्चिद्द्वयं यल्लोके देयत्वेन प्रसिद्धं तत्परित्यजेत् तत्स्थेभ्यश्चण्डालादिभ्यः । अपरार्क p. 871 ; मित्ता. on या. III, 2 also quotes प्रचेतस्.

paste &c.), that fire should be carried in front of the corpse and one man should carry cooked food in an unbaked earthen vessel and another should deposit part of the food on the way and one should give clothes and the like to cāṇḍālas and the like (that stay near the cemetery).

The Brahmapurāṇa (q. by Śuddhiprakāśa p. 159) states that when carrying a dead body to the cemetery, a great deal of noise should be created by means of the four kinds of instruments.⁵⁰⁶

There were differing rules laid down about *vapana* (shaving) for the performer as an auxiliary (aṅga) of the rite of cremation, after the cremation and bath thereafter. A smṛti text provides⁵⁰⁷ 'shaving of the head and moustaches is declared in seven cases, viz. on the Ganges, at the Bhāskarakṣetra, on the death of the mother or father or *guru*, on consecrating the śrauta fires and in a Soma sacrifice'. The A. K. D. (p. 19) prescribes that the son or other performer of the rites of cremation should first perform *vapana* and then bathe, then carry the dead body to a sacred spot, bathe it there, or if such a spot is not at hand should invoke the presence of the Ganges, Gayā and other *tīrthas* in the water to be used for washing the dead body, then anoint it with ghee or sesame oil, again bathe it and put on it a fresh garment, should deck it with *yaññopavīta*, *gopīcandana*, garland of basil leaves and then should apply to the whole body fragrant substances like sandalwood paste, camphor, saffron, musk &c. But if the cremation took place at night, there was to be no *vapana* at night, but on the next day.⁵⁰⁸ Other smṛtis allowed *vapana* on the 2nd, 3rd, 5th or 7th or any following day up to the offering of śrāddha on the 11th day.⁵⁰⁹ Āp. Dh. S. I. 3. 10. 6

506. The four kinds of वाद्य were enumerated by भरत as 'तत्तं चैवावनम्रं च घनं सुषिरमेव च' and the अमरकोश illustrates them as follows: 'तत्तं वीणादिकं वाद्यमानम्रं सुरजादिकम् । वंशादिकं तु सुषिरं कांस्यतालादिकं घनम् ॥.'

507. गङ्गायां भास्करक्षेत्रे मातापित्रोर्गुरुर्मृतौ । आधानकाले सोमे च वपनं सप्तसु स्मृतम् ॥ q. by मिता. on या. III. 17, परा. मा. I. 2. p. 296, शुद्धिप्रकाश p. 161¹ प्राय. तत्त्व p. 493 (from स्मृतिसमुच्चय). भास्करक्षेत्र is प्रयाग.

508. रात्रौ दग्ध्वा तु पिण्डान्तं कृत्वा वपनवर्जितम् । वपनं नेष्यते रात्रौ श्वस्तनी वपनक्रिया ॥ संग्रह q. in शुद्धिप्र. p. 161.

509. अलुप्तकेशो यः पूर्वं सोऽत्र केशान् प्रवापयेत् । द्वितीयेऽह्नि तृतीयेऽह्नि पञ्चमेऽह्नि षष्ठ्यपि वा । यावच्छ्राद्धं प्रदीयेत तावदित्यपरं मतम् । बौधायन q. by. परा मा. I. 2, p. 2; वापनं दशमेऽह्नि कार्यम् । तदाह देवलः । दशमेऽह्नि संप्राप्ते स्नानं ग्रामाद् बहिर्भवेत् । तत्र त्याज्यानि वासांसि केशश्मश्रुनखानि च ।; this verse is q. by the मिता. on या. III. 17; the मनु. या. p. 416 after quoting देवल and other authors remarks 'प्रथमादिदिनेषु केशाणि त्याज्यानि शुद्धचर्च्य दशमादिदिनेषु वपनं कर्तव्यम् ।.'

provides⁵¹⁰ *vapana* for all *sapinda*s that are younger than the deceased. The *Madanapārijāta* holds that the performer of cremation rites had to undergo *vapana* on the first day and also on the expiry of the period of impurity, while the *Śuddhiprakāśa* (p. 162) following the *Mit.* on *Yāj.* III 17 states that the day on which *vapana* is to be undergone is determined by the usage of each country. This difference in usages has been even judicially noticed. In *Chandra choora Deo v. Bibhuti Bhushan Deva A.I.R.* 1945 Patna p. 211 at p. 219 it has been stated that according to the Benares School the person who performs the cremation shaves his head at the time of cremation, whereas under the Mithilā school there is no such shaving at that time.

The *Garudapurāṇa* (II. 4. 67-69) provides that loud weeping may be indulged in when the body is burning but there should be no weeping after cremation and the offering of water to the departed.

There was some difference of opinion as to the offering of water (*udakakriyā* or *udakadāna*) to the deceased by his *sapinda*s and *samānodakas*. *Āśv. gr.* quoted above (p. 209) speaks of offering water once, but the *Sat. Śr.* 28. 2. 72 and others prescribe that water mixed with sesame is offered thrice with joined hands on the day of death to the deceased after reciting his gotra and name and every day thereafter up to the 11th.⁵¹¹ *Gaut. Dh. S.* 14. 38, *Vas.* 4. 12 prescribe that water should be offered by *sapinda*s to the deceased with their faces to the south on the first, third, seventh and ninth days of death and *Haradatta* says that in all 75 *añjalis* of water were to be offered (three on 1st day, 9 on 3rd, 30 on 7th and 33 on 9th), but that the usage in his country was that on the first day water was offered three times with joined hands and then one more *añjali* on each succeeding day from the 2nd. On the other hand, *Viṣṇu Dh. S.* 19. 7 and 13, *Pracetas*, *Paithinasi* (both quoted by *Aparārka* p. 874)

510. अनुभाविनां च परिवापनम्। आप. ध. सू. I. 3.10.6. For explanation of this sūtra, vide *मिता.* on *या.* III. 17.

511. केशान् प्रकीर्य पांसूनाप्यैकवाससो दक्षिणामुखाः सकृदुन्मज्ज्योत्तीर्य सव्यं जान्वाच्य वासः पीडयित्वापविशन्त्येवं त्रिस्तत्प्रत्ययं गोत्रनामधेयं तिलमिश्रमुदकं त्रिरुत्तिच्यन्तु हरिश्चालिनैकोत्तरवृद्धिरैकादशाहात्। सत्याषाढश्रौत 28.2.72. The *गौ. पि. सू. I. 4. 17* is almost in the same words. The water would be offered in the form 'काश्यपगोत्र देवदत्तशर्मन्, एतत्ते उदकम्' or 'काश्यपगोत्राय देवदत्तशर्मणे प्रेतस्तुप्यतु' (लोदकं ददामि) (हरदत्त) or 'देवदत्तनामा काश्यपगोत्रः प्रेतस्तुप्यतु' (*मिता.* on *या.* III. 5.) Vide *गोभिलस्मृति* III. 36-37 also, q. by *अपरार्क* p. 874 and *पर. मा.* I. 2 p. 287.

prescribe that water and pinḍa were to be offered to the deceased for ten days.⁵¹² The Śuddhiprakāśa (p. 202) quotes verses from Grhya-pariśiṣṭa, one of which says that some declare that only ten añjalis were to be offered, some say 100 were to be offered and others that 55 were to be offered and that one should follow the usage settled in one's vedic Śākhā. The Āśv. gr. pariśiṣṭa 3. 4 has a similar rule in prose. The Garuḍapurāṇa (Pretakhanda chap. 5 verses 22-23) also refers to the offering of 10, 55, or 100 añjalis. Some smṛtis prescribed that the number of añjalis of water were dependent on the caste of the deceased. Pracetas (q. by Mit. on Yāj. III. 4) provides that 10, 12, 15, 30 añjalis should be respectively offered to a deceased person of the brāhmaṇa, kṣatriya, vaiśya or śūdra varṇa. Yama (verses 92-94) states how water is to be offered to the deceased standing in navel-deep water and (98) prescribes that water is to be offered in water to gods and pitṛs but on the ground to those that died without upanayana being performed. In a smṛti quoted by Devayājñika⁵¹³ it is stated that six pinḍas were to be offered from the day of death as follows: at the place where the death occurred, at the door of the house, where four roads meet, where the funeral procession on the way to the cemetery rested, on the pile of wood arranged for burning (*citā*), and at the time of the collection of the burnt bones. It was further provided that for the benefit of the departed a lamp fed by sesame oil was to be kept burning continuously for ten days after death and an earthenware vessel was to be kept filled with water and a handful of cooked rice was to be offered on the ground at the time of the mid-day meal after uttering the name and gotra of the departed. This was called *pātheya śrāddha* because it helped the departed to go on his way from the earth to the world of the departed (vide Dharmasindhu p. 463). According to some of the digests

512. दिनेदिनेऽञ्जलीन् पूर्णान् प्रदद्यात्प्रेतकारणात् । तावद्विंशश्च कर्तव्या यावत्पिण्डः समाप्यते ॥ प्रचेतस् q. by मिता. on या. III. 3; 'यावदाशौचं तावत्प्रेतस्योदकं पिण्डं च दद्युः । विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 19.13. If water is offered only once a day for ten days there would be only ten añjalis in all, but if 10 were offered on each day there would be 100; if one was offered on first day and one more added on each succeeding day to the 10th there would be 55 añjalis

513. अत्र च श्राद्धोत्तरं पिण्डदानमुक्तं देवयाज्ञिकोदाहृतायां स्मृतौ । स्मृतस्थाने कान्तिर-मयात्पदं पिण्डान्न क्रमशो दिशेत् । स्मृतस्थाने तथा द्वारे चत्वरं ताक्ष्यं कारणात् । काण्डवयने तथा सञ्चयने च षट् । q. by छुद्दिप्रकाश p. 158. Vide गरुडपुराण II. 4. 48 for a similar provision.

a śrāddha called Nagna-pracchādana was to be performed on the day of the death of a person after his sapindas undergo shaving and bath, enter the village and the house. It consists in filling a jar with grains of rice wound round with a piece of cloth and putting clarified butter in a vessel of bell-metal and some gold (or coins) thereon according to one's ability. The whole was to be given to a poor brāhmaṇa of good family after remembering Viṣṇu for the benefit of the departed, Vide Smṛti-muktāphala (on śr.) pp. 595-596, Sm. C. (on Āsauca p. 176).

The smṛtis and purāṇas (like Kūrma, uttarārdha 23. 70) prescribe that after offering with joined hands water to the deceased a ball of rice or barley flour with sesame was to be presented on darbha grass. There are two views on this point. According to Yāj. III. 16 a *piṇḍa* was to be offered for three days after death according to the procedure prescribed for Pinda-pitr-yajña (such as wearing of the sacred thread on the right shoulder and under the left shoulder), while according to Viṣṇu 19. 13 one *piṇḍa* was to be offered every day as long as impurity on death lasted. The *piṇḍa* was to be offered on darbhas spread on the ground if the deceased had his upanayana performed, but without mantras or may be offered on a stone.⁵¹⁴ While water could be offered by any and every sapinda, *piṇḍa* was to be offered only by the son (and when there were many sons, by the eldest if free from defect); in default of a son the nearest sapinda like a brother or brother's son was to offer it and in default of such then the sapindas of the mother (maternal uncle, his son or the like) could⁵¹⁵ offer it. Even when *piṇḍas* were to be offered for three days or *āsauca* lasted only for 3 days the *piṇḍas* were prescribed to be ten by Śātātapa and Pāraskara distributed them as follows: three on the first day, four on the 2nd and 3 on the third and Dakṣa⁵¹⁶ distributed them as follows: one on the first day, four on the 2nd and five on the 3rd. Pāraskara prescribed that 10, 12, 15, 30 *piṇḍas* were to be offered according to the varṇa of the deceased. In the case cited above from A. I. R. 1945 Patna p. 211 at p. 219 it has been stated that according to the Benares school 4, 5 or 6

514. भूमौ मालयं पिण्डं पानीयमुपले वा दद्युः । शङ्खे च by मिता. on या. III. 16.

515. पुत्राभावे सपिण्डा मातृसपिण्डाः शिष्याश्च वा दद्युः । तदभावे ऋत्विजाश्च ।
मौ. ध. सू. 15.13-14.

516. प्रथमैः षड्द्वितीये चतुरस्तथा । तृतीये पञ्च वै दद्यादेष पिण्डविधिः ॥
दक्ष q. by अपरार्क p. 888.



piṇḍas are offered at the time of cremation, while according to the Mithilā school only one piṇḍa is offered. Everybody, whether a person of the same gotra as the deceased or of another gotra, had to carry out all the rites up to the tenth day when he once began them on the day of death, as stated by the Grhya-pariśiṣṭa⁵¹⁷ and Garuḍapurāṇa. It is further prescribed that when the funeral rites are begun by a person and then a nearer relative such as a son comes, even then the former is to carry on all the rites up to the 10th day, but the rites of the 11th and later days are to be performed by the son and in default of him by a near sapinḍa. The Matsyapurāṇa states⁵¹⁸ that piṇḍas should be offered to the deceased for twelve days; they become his food on his journey (to the other world) and they give him satisfaction; since the deceased is taken to the abode of departed spirits after twelve days, he (his spirit) sees his house, sons and wife for twelve days. R̥ṣyaśṛṅga quoted by Aparārka (p. 889) specifies the limbs of an ethereal body with which the deceased is endowed on each day of the ten days after death when a piṇḍa is offered. The Garuḍapurāṇa (pretakhaṇḍa chap. 5. 33-36) says the same.

Just as sapinḍas of the same gotra and *samānodakas* were bound to offer water to the deceased, a person was bound to offer water to his maternal grandfather and to the two further ancestors and to his ācārya on their death. Every man, if he so desired (i. e. he was under no religious duty), could offer water to his friend, to his married sister or daughter, to his sister's son, father-in-law and his sacrificial priest on their death (Pār. gr. III. 10, Śāṅkha-Likhita, Yāj. ⁵¹⁹ III. 4). Pāraskara (III. 10) refers to a peculiar practice. When the sapinḍas are about to enter water for bathing and thereafter offering water to the deceased they pray to their relatives or brother-in-law for water with the words 'we shall perform udakakriyā', where-upon

517. असगोत्रः सगोत्रो वा यदि स्त्री यदि वा पुमान्। प्रथमेऽहनि यो दद्यात्स दशाहं समापयेत् ॥ गृह्यपरिशिष्ट q. by मिता. on या. I. 255 and III. 16, अपरार्क p. 887, मद. पा. p. 400, हारलता p. 172. This is लघ्वाश्वलायन 20.6 and गरुडपुराण (प्रेतखण्ड) 5.19-20.

518. प्रेताय पिण्डदानं तु द्वादशाहं समाचरेत्। पाथेयं तस्य तत्प्राप्तं यतः प्रीतिकरं महत् ॥ यस्मात् प्रेतपुरं प्रेतो द्वादशाहेन नीयते। गृह्यपुत्रकलत्रं च द्वादशाहं प्रपश्यति। मत्स्यपुराण q. by अपरार्क p. 889. These two verses are the same as पञ्चपुराण द्वादशखण्ड 10.5-6.

519. 'उदकक्रिया कामं श्वशुरमातुल्योः शिष्ये सहाध्यायिनि राजनि च' q. by दीपकालिका on या. III. 4.



the other replies 'do so but don't come again (with a similar request),' if the deceased was less than one hundred years of age, but the reply would be simply 'do so' if the deceased was hundred years of age or more.⁵²⁰ The G. P. S. (I, 4.4-6) has a somewhat similar symbolic dialogue. A king's officer, a *sagotra* or a brother-in-law takes a branch having thorns and prevents them from entering water with the words 'don't enter'; then the sapindas should reply 'we shall not again enter water'. The probable significance of this was that they thereby would be able to escape from another death in the family soon after.

There were rules prohibiting certain persons from offering water to the deceased and also directing that water should not be offered to certain deceased persons. Impotent⁵²¹ persons and the like, thieves of gold, *vrātyas*, those who follow forbidden conduct and women that kill their own foetus or husband and that drink the kind of liquor (forbidden to them) should not offer water to a deceased person. Yāj. (III. 6) provides that water should not be offered to and no āśauca observed for heretics, for those who do not belong to one of the four āśramas, to thieves, to women who kill their husbands or who are guilty of prostitution or who drink *surā*, or who commit suicide. Manu (V. 89-90) is to the same effect. Gaut. Dh. S.⁵²² 14, 11 provides that in the case of those who start (through anger) on the Great

520. संयुक्तं मैथुनं वोदकं याचेरक्षुदकं करिष्यामह इति । कुरुध्व मा चैव पुनरित्यशत-
वर्षं प्रेते । कुरुध्वमित्येवेतरस्मिन् । पारस्करगृह्य III. 10, which are included in the
procedure of udakadāna even by such a late writer as Govindānanda
(S. K. p. 122) and explained by शुद्धिप्रकाश pp. 199-200 ; अपः प्रतिपद्यन्ते । अत्र
राजपुरुषः सगोत्रमिथुनो (सगोत्रो मैथुनी?) वा कण्टकिनीं शाखामादाय मावतरतेति वारयेत्
न पुनरवतरिष्याम इति प्रतिब्रूयुः । गौ. पि. सू. I. 4.3-6.

521. क्लीबाद्या नोदकं कुर्युः स्तेना व्रात्या विधर्मिणः । गर्भभर्तृवृहश्चैव सुराप्यश्चैव
योषितः ॥ वृद्धमनु q. by कल्पतरु (शुद्धि) p. 89, शुद्धिप्रकाश p. 203. The word क्लीबाद्याः
probably includes all those mentioned by Yāj. II. 140. For *vrātya* vide H.
of Dh. vol. II. pp. 96, 386.

522. प्रायानाशकशस्त्राग्निविषोदकोद्वन्धनप्रपतनैश्चेच्छताम् । गौ. 14.11; क्रोधात्प्राय
विषं वह्निः शस्त्रमुद्वन्धनं जलम् । गिरिवृक्षपातं च ये कुर्वन्ति नराधमाः । ब्रह्मदण्डहता ये च ये
चैव ब्राह्मणैर्हताः । महापातकिनो ये च पतितस्ते प्रकीर्तिताः । पतितानां न दाहः स्यान्न च
स्यादस्थिसञ्चयः । न चाक्षुपातः पिण्डो वा कार्या श्राद्धक्रिया न च ॥ ब्रह्मपुराण by
हरदत्त on गौ. 14. 11 and by अपराक pp. 902-903, quoting many more verses;
similar rules are laid down by Auśanasamṛti VII. 1. p. 539 (पु. 14. 11) संयत्
verses 178-179, Atri 216-217, कूर्मपुराण (उत्तरार्ध chap. 23, verses 60-63) q.
by हारलता p. 204, शुद्धिप्र. p. 59.

Journey, who commit suicide by fasting or by means of a weapon or by fire, by poison, in water, by hanging or falling from a precipice or tree, there is no cremation, no āśauca, no offering of water or pinda. Haradatta on Gaut, 14. 11 quotes three verses from Brahmapurāṇa that those who die of a brāhmaṇa's curse or black magic and those who are *patitas* are dealt with in the same way. But Āṅgiras (q. by Mit. on Yāj. III. 6) says that if one dies by water or fire or the like through inadvertence, there was āśauca for him and *udakakriyū* was performed. Vide Vaik. Sm.S. V. 11 for a long list of persons who must not be cremated. In the Mahābhārata the rites of cremation have been described frequently e. g. the cremation of Pāṇḍu in Ādiparva, chap. 127 (the body was carried in a *śibikā* covered on all sides, there were musical instruments, the royal parasol and chowries were carried in the procession, distribution of wealth to mendicants, carrying the dead body to the bank of the Ganges on a charming sylvan spot, bathing the body, applying sandalwood paste to it); of Droṇa in Strīparva, chap. 23.38-42 (three *Sāmans* were sung, his pupils with Droṇa's wife in front went round the funeral pyre, going to the Ganges); of Bhīṣma in Anuśāsana 169.10-19 (fragrant resins were used on the pyre, his body was covered with fine clothes and flowers, an umbrella and chowries were held over the body, Kaurava women fanned the body with fans, *sāmans* were sung); of Vasudeva in Mausalaparva 7. 19-25; of killed warriors in general in Strīparva, chap. 26. 28-43 and of Kuntī, Dhṛtarāṣṭra and Gāndhārī in Āśramavāsikaparva, chap. 39. In the Rāmāyaṇa (Ayodhyā, chap. 76 verses 16-20), it is said that the funeral pyre for Daśaratha was made with sandalwood, *aguru* and fragrant resins, with Sarala, Padmaka and Devadāru (pine) wood and various fragrant substances were heaped thereon, then Daśaratha's body was placed on the pyre and that Kausalyā and other women followed the corpse in *śibikās* and conveyances according to their status.

If an *āhitāgni* died away from home, the Śat. Br. (XII. 5.1.13-14) provides that, having brought his bones home they were to be spread on a black antelope skin and arranged in imitation of the human frame, were to be covered with wood and ghee and burnt with his śrauta fires and sacrificial implements. Similar rules are laid down in Kāt. Śr. 25.8-9 Baud. P. S. III.8, Gobhīlasmṛti III.47, Vas. Dh. S. IV, 37,

If even the bones could not be found, then the sūtras following the Ait. Br. (chap. 32.1) and similar ancient works⁵²³ provide that on a skin of black antelope one should make the effigy of a human frame with *palāśa* stalks (leaves) 360 in⁵²⁴ number, the effigy should be bound round with woollen thread, should be covered with *yava* flour mixed with water and anointed with clarified butter and cremated with his fires and sacrificial implements. The Brahmapurāṇa (q. by Śuddhiprakāśa p. 187) contains similar rules about burning an effigy and ordains three days' impurity thereafter. Acc. to a smṛti (q. by Aparārka p. 545), the *palāśa* leaves were to be 362. They were to be distributed according to Baud. P.S. and Gaut. P.S. as follows: 40 represent the head, 10 the neck, 20 the chest, 30 the abdomen (*udara*), 50 each of the arms, 10 the fingers of the two hands, 70 each of the two legs, 10 the toes of the feet, 8 the male organ, 12 the testicles. This is also the enumeration in Sat. Śr. 29.4.39. Vide also Śān. Śr. IV. 15.19-31,⁵²⁵ Kāt. Śr. XXV. 8.15, Baud. P. S. III. 8, G. P. S. II. 1.6-14 Gobhila-smṛti III.48, Hārīta q. by Śuddhiprakāśa p. 186, Garuḍapurāṇa II. 4. 134-154 and II.40 44 ff. It may be stated here that all the sūtras and smṛtis do not entirely agree as to the number of *palāśa* leaves taken as representing the several parts of the body, as may be seen from a comparison of the Śān. Śr. quoted in the note with Baud. P. S. set out here. A smṛti quoted by Aparārka (p. 545) gives the numbers as follows: 32 for the head, 60 for the neck, 80 for the chest, 20 for the hip and loins, 20 each for the two arms, 10 for fingers, 6 for testicles, 4 for the penis, 60 for the two thighs, 20 for the knees, 20 for the

523. The ऐ. ब्रा. reads: यदि शरीराणि न विद्येरन् पर्णशरः षष्टिस्त्रीणि च शतान्याहृत्य तेषां पुरुषरूपकमिव कृत्वा तस्मिंस्तामावृतं कुर्युरथैनाञ्छरीरैराहृतैः संस्पृश्योद्वासायैयुरध्यधेशतं काये सक्थिनी द्विपञ्चाशे च विंशे चोरु द्विपञ्चविंशे शेषं तु शिरस्युपदध्यात् सा तत्र प्रायश्चित्तिः ।

524. शरीरनाशे त्रीणि षष्टिशतानि पलाशवृन्तानां कृष्णाजिने पूर्ववत् । कात्या. श्रौ. 25. 8. 15, on which the com. remarks 'पुरुषविध्यादि पूर्ववत् दाहान्तम् । तेषामेव सञ्चयनं पितृमेधश्च तैरेवेति ।'

525. चत्वारिंशच्छिरसि । ग्रीवायां दश । अंसान्वंसयोर्बाह्वोः शतम् । उरसि त्रिंशत् । जठरे विंशतिः । षड्वृषणयोः । शिश्ने चत्वारि । ऊर्वोः शतम् । त्रिंशज्जातुजङ्घनश्रीवतोः । पादाङ्गुलीषु विंशतिः । एवं त्रीणि षष्टिशतानि भवन्ति । पुरुषाकृतिं कृत्वोर्णासूत्रैः परिवेष्ट्य यवचूर्णैः प्रलिप्य सर्पिषाम्यज्याग्निभिः संस्कुर्वन्ति । शां. श्रौ. सू. IV. 15. 20-31. Each stalk of *Palāśa* has three leaves; ऊर्णासूत्रs will represent the muscles and यवचूर्णलेप will represent flesh. It will be seen that as enumerated in Śān. S. the *palāśa* stalks are exactly 360. The कूर्मपुराण (उत्तर) 23.68 refers to it as 'देहाभावात्पलाशैस्तु कृत्वा प्रतिकृतिं पुनः ।'

lower parts of the legs, 10 for toes of the feet. *Jātūkarnya* (q. by *Aparārka* p. 545) and *Bhaviṣyapurāṇa* (q. by *Śuddhiprakāśa* p. 187) say that when a son does not hear for 15 years about his father who had gone to a distant land, he should perform the cremation of the effigy (called '*ākṛtidahana*'). *Brhaspati* advises waiting for 12 years before resorting to *ākṛtidahana* (*Śuddhipr.* p. 187). The *Vaikhānasa-smārta-sūtra* V. 12 regards the burning of the effigy as a meritorious act for every one and does not restrict it to the case where the body or bones are not found. The *Śuddhiprakāśa* p. 187 quotes several verses from the *Brahmapurāṇa* that the procedure of burning an effigy of *palāśa* stalks was to be followed even in the case of one who has not consecrated *Śrauta* fires and *āśauca* for three days has to be observed, while the *āśauca* for burning the effigy of an *āhitāgni* was ten days.

It is further provided in *Sat. Śr.* 29. 4. 41, *Baud. P. S.* (III. 7. 4) and *Garudapurāṇa* II. 4. 169-70 that, if after the effigy is cremated in the belief that a person died in a foreign land, he returns alive, then he is plunged in a pit containing clarified butter and then he comes out of it, takes a bath, then all the *samskāras* from *jātakarma* are performed on him, then he marries the same wife again or if she be dead, he may marry another girl, then consecrate again *śrauta* fires. Some *sūtras* provide that if the wife of an *āhitāgni* dies before him, he may, if he so desires, cremate her with his *śrauta* fires or he may cremate her with fire prepared from cowdung and some easily inflammable things (like straw) placed in three *sthālīs* (cooking pots 526). *Manu* (V. 167-168) provides that if the *savarṇa* and virtuous wife of a twice-born person who had consecrated sacred *śrauta* fires died before him she was to be cremated with his fires (*śrauta* and *smārta*) and with the sacrificial implements. Then he may marry again and consecrate *śrauta* or *smārta* fires again. To the same effect are *Yāj.* I. 89, *Baud. P. S.* II. 4, 6, *Gobhila-smṛti* III. 5, *Vaikhānasa-smārtasūtra* VII. 2, *Vṛddha-Hārīta* XI. 213, *Laghu-Āśv.* 20. 59. 527 *Viśvarūpa* on *Yāj.* 1. 87 quotes a *Kāthaka-śruti* to

526. इच्छन् पत्नीं पूर्वमारिणीमग्निभिः संस्कृत्य सान्तपनेन वाग्यामानीय ततः पुनरादधीत । शां. श्रौ. IV. 15.32. How the सान्तपन fires are produced is stated in *Sat. Br.* XII. 5. 2.3 'इत्थमेव कुर्यात् । तिस्र एव स्थालीरेष्टवै ब्रूयात्ताडु गोमयानि च शुम्भलानि वावधाय नाना त्रिष्वग्निषु प्रवृज्यान्ते ये ततः सन्तापादग्नयो जायेरंस्तैरेन दहेयुः ।' means some material which is easily inflamed such as straw.

527. तस्माद्यावत्यः पत्न्यः सर्वा एवाग्निहोत्राद्यर्थेनाग्निना दग्धव्या इति स्थितम् तथा च काठके श्रुतौ 'शवाग्नयो वा एते भवन्ति ये पत्न्यां प्रमीतायां धार्यन्ते' इत्युपक्रम्य 'परमीमग्निभिर्वहेत्' इति विस्पष्टो विशेषाविधिः । विश्वरूप on *Yāj.* I. 87.

the effect that if a person keeps the same śrauta fires after the death of his wife they are (impure like) the fires used for burning a corpse and adds that even if a brāhmaṇa āhitāgni had a wife of the kṣatriya class and she died before him, she was to be cremated with his śrauta fires. This view is opposed to that of many other commentators and he explains Manu V. 167 (where 'savarṇām' occurs) as merely illustrative and that if it were interpreted as restricted to a savarṇa wife alone, there would be the fault of *vākyabheda*. Some of the smṛtis provide that he may remain a widower and perform his Agnihotra by having a golden effigy of the wife or one made of kuśa grass, as Rāma did. Vide Gobhilasmṛti III. 528 9-10, Vṛddha-Hārīta XI. 214. If the householder did not marry again (when his wife died before him and was cremated with his śrauta fires) and did not consecrate fresh vedic fires he was to be cremated with ordinary fire. If the householder was unable to marry again, he may cremate his wife with fire kindled by means of the kindling sticks (*araṇis*) and keep his śrauta fires and carry on *agnihotra* with the image or effigy of the wife. If the āhitāgni died first and his wife then died as a widow she was to be cremated with fire (*nirmanthya*) kindled by attrition of the *araṇis*. Vide Baud. P. S. II. 4. 6-8, Kāt. Śr. 29.4. 34-35, and Trikāṇḍa-maṇḍana II. 121, 528^a. When the wife was cremated the mantra 'Asmāttvam-abhijātosī' quoted above was not to be recited (vide Gobhilasmṛti III. 52). It was only a virtuous wife and not an unchaste one that was cremated with śrauta or smārta fire (Gobhilasmṛti III. 53). Kratu (q. by

528. मृतायामपि भार्यायां वैदिकाग्निं न हि त्यजेत् । उपाधिनापि तत्कर्म यावज्जीवं समा-
पयेत् ॥ रामोऽपि कृत्वा सौवर्णीं सीतां पत्नीं यज्ञस्विनीम् । ईजे यज्ञैर्बहुविधैः सह भ्रातृभिरचितैः ॥
गोभिलस्मृति III. 9-10, the first being quoted by अपरार्क p. 114 as विष्णु's. It is also quoted by गृहस्थरत्नाकर p. 110. अपरार्क does not accept the interpretation that the verse मृतायां etc. allows the householder to have an image of his deceased wife beside him while performing a Vedic sacrifice. The words 'उपाधिनापि' according to Aparārka mean that he may marry a woman not of the same varṇa. Both verses are q. by शुद्धिप्रकाश (pp. 164-165) which summarises various views on this point.

528a. तयोर्यः पूर्वो श्रियेत तस्याग्नित्रेतया यज्ञपात्रैश्च पितृमेधः । यः पश्चात्तस्योपासनेन ।
... औपासनेऽविद्यमाने निर्मस्थेन पितृमेधः । बौ. पि. सू. II. 4. 6-8; compare सत्या. श्रौ. 29.4. 34; 'पत्नी चेद्विधवा भूत्वा प्रमीयेत कदाचन । तदा श्रौताग्निं शून्यत्वात् निर्मस्थेनैव वेदयेत् ॥'
त्रिकाण्डमण्डन II. 121.



Śuddhiprakāśa p. 166) ^{528b} and Baud. P. S. III. 1. 9-13 state that a widower and a widow were to be cremated with fire generated on a *kapāla* (made red hot and then cow-dung thrown thereon), a brahmācārī and yati were to be cremated with *uttapana* (or *kapāla*) fire, an unmarried girl and a boy whose Upanayana is not performed are to be cremated with fire produced from chaff. If an *āhitāgni* became *patita* or guilty of suicide in various ways or met death by challenging animals or snakes, his śrauta fires were to be cast into water and *smārta* fire was to be cast on the place where four roads meet (or in water), his sacrificial implements were to be burnt (a *smṛti* q. by Par. M. I. 2. p. 226, Parāśara V. 10-11, Vaik. Smārta V. 11) and he was to be cremated with ordinary fire.

Manu V. 68, Yāj. III. 1, Parāśara III. 14, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 22. 27-28, Brahmapurāṇa quoted by Par. M. I. 2 p. 238 provide that in the case of abortion, the foetus, and a still-born child, and a child that has not yet struck teeth should be decked with clothes and the like and should be buried. Children of tender years were not to be cremated, but there was some difference of opinion among ancient writers on the exact age at which one or the other method of disposal was to be resorted to. Pāraskara-gr. ^{528c} III. 10, Yāj. III. 1, Manu V. 68-69, Yama and some others provide that a child that had not completed two years at death was to be buried under ground in an unsullied spot outside the village (other than the usual cemetery), the dead body being anointed with ghee and decked with flowers and sandal paste and that no burning nor offering of water nor the collection of bones was to be performed in this case. The relatives may all follow the body or not

528b. विधुरं विधवां चैव कपालस्याग्निना दहेत् । ब्रह्मचारियती चैव दहेदुत्तपनाग्निना ॥
तुषाग्निना च दग्धव्यः कन्यका बाल एव च । अग्निवर्णं कपालं तु कृत्वा तत्र विनाक्षिपेत् ।
कारीषादि ततो यस्तु जातः स तु कपालजः ॥ क्रतु q. by शुद्धिप्रकाश p. 166. The उत्तप-
नाग्नि is explained as दग्धव्येऽग्निं तु प्रज्वालय पुनर्दग्धं संयुतः । पुनर्दग्धं तृतीयेऽग्निरेव
उत्तपनः स्मृतः ॥ स्मृत्यन्तर q. by शुद्धिप्रकाश 166 ; अथाहिताग्नि... यज्ञपात्रैश्च । गृहस्थ-
मौपासनेन । ब्रह्मचारिणं कपालसन्तपनाग्निना ॥ उत्तपनीयेनेतरान् । एवं स्त्रियम् । बौ. पि. सू.
III. 1. 9-13.

528c. अथोदककर्माद्विषये प्रेते मात्रापित्रोराशौचं शौचमेवेतरेषामेकरात्रं त्रिरात्रं वा
शरीरमदग्ध्वा निखनन्ति ।... नात्रोदककर्म । पारस्करगृह्य III. 10 ; ऊनद्विवार्षिकं प्रेतं धृताक्तं
निखनेद्भुवि । यमगाथा गायमानो यमसूक्तमनुस्मरन् । यम q. by मिता on या. III. 1. यमगाथाः
are verses addressed to यम such as 'nāke suparnam' (Rg. X. 123-3 acc. to
दीपकालिका), or तै. आ. VI. 5. 3 अहरहर्नयमानो गामश्वं पुरुषं जगत् । वैवस्वता ननु यति
पञ्चभिर्मानवैर्यमः ॥, or योर्य कौष्ठ्य जगतः and the two following verses from तै. आ.
VI. 5. 2 (acc. to अपरार्क p. 871) and स्मृतिच. (आशौचकाण्ड p. 201).

and Yama allows the recital of the Yamasūkta (Rg. X. 14) and the verses in honour of the god Yama. Manu V. 70, however, states other optional provisions viz. that the offering of water may be done (and therefore the cremation also of the dead body) in the case of infants that have struck teeth or after *nāmakaraṇa*. Therefore there is an option as to cremating an infant of less than two years, viz. it may be buried or cremated after *nāmakaraṇa* or after the appearance of teeth. In this case it is not necessary that all the sapinda relatives should follow the dead body. If a child is two years old or more at death and upanayana has not been performed it must be cremated with ordinary fire and water must be offered silently. The same rule applies to a child whose *cūḍā* (tonsure) had been performed before death as stated by Laugākṣi.^{528d} The Vaik. Sm. S. V.11 lays down that there is no burning with fire until the 5th year for a boy and the 7th year for a girl. After Upanayana the child was to be cremated according to the rites prescribed for an *āhitāgni* so far as they could be applied (i. e. there would be cremation without sacrificial implements and the mantra 'asmāt tvam-abhijātosi' was not to be recited). The Baud.⁵²⁹ P. S. (II. 3.10-11) provides that there is no cremation for children dying before the performance of *caula* (tonsure) and there is no *pitṛmedha* for those whose upanayana had not been performed at death or for unmarried girls. It also provides that infants that have struck no teeth are to be buried with syllable 'om' and those that have had teeth with the *Vyāhrtis*. The Mit. on Yāj. III.2 summarises the rules as follows: Before *Nāmakaraṇa* there was to be only burial and no offering of water and the like; after *Nāmakaraṇa* up to the third year cremation and offering of water are optional with burial; from the third year up to upanayana there is cremation and also offering of water but silently (without mantras); if *Cūḍā* ceremony was performed before the 3rd year and the child died then also the same rule applied. After Upanayana the deceased was to be cremated with ordinary fire but the procedure was to be the same as for an *āhitāgni*.

528d. दूष्णीमिवोदकं कुर्याच्छूणीं संस्कारमेव च । सर्वेषां कृतशूडानामयश्वापीकृत्या
द्वयम् ॥ लौगाक्षि पृ. by मिता. on या. III. 1.

529. न प्राक् चौलात्पमीतानां दहनं विद्यते । नाहुपनीतानां कन्यानां वा पित्रुमेधः ।
धौ. पि. सू. II. 3. 10-11. सायण on ते. आ. III. 21 explains 'आहिताग्नित्वे
यो ब्रह्मतत्त्वं जानाति तस्य दहनादिसंस्कारो ब्रह्ममेधः । आहिताग्नेर्यो दहनादिसंस्कारो
पित्रुमेधः ।'

A yati (sannyāsin) was and is even now buried. In a previous note (n. 528b) a verse of Kratu is quoted that a brahmacārin and yati are to be cremated with *uttapana* fire. The explanation of the Śuddhiprakāśa (p. 166) is that the word yati here means an ascetic of the Kuṭicaka kind and quotes a⁵³⁰ verse as to how the dead bodies of the yatis of four grades are to be disposed of. The⁵³¹ Baud. P. S. III.11 gives a brief description which is adopted with some variations by the Smṛtyarthasāra (p. 98) that contains a description of the death rites of a *parivrājaka*.⁵³² One should go to the east or north of the village, he should dig a pit (lit. a sacrificial place) as deep as the staff (carried by the yati) under a palāśa tree or on a river bank or on some other pure spot to the accompaniment of the *vyāhrtis*; then he should sprinkle water thereon thrice repeating the seven *vyāhrtis* each time, should spread darbha grass on the bottom of the pit, should deck the dead body (with garlands, sandal paste), deposit the body in the pit with the *mantra* (Tai. S.I.1.3.1) 'O Viṣṇu! guard this offering (the dead body).' He should place in the right hand the staff of the *parivrājaka* (breaking it into three parts) with the *mantra* 'Viṣṇu took strides over this' (Rg. I.22.17, Vāj. S. V. 15, Tai. S. I.2.13.1). He places the *śikya* (loop of strings) in the left

530. कुटीचकं तु प्रदहेत्पुरयेच्च बह्वदकम् । हंसो जले तु निक्षेप्यः परहंसं प्रपूरयेत् ॥
q. by स्मृत्यर्थसार p. 98, शुद्धिप्रकाश p. 166. For the four kinds of sannyāsins, vide of H. of Dh. vol. II, pp. 338-342.

531. अथ परिव्राजकस्य संस्कारविधिं व्याख्यास्यामः । पृथिव्यां 'अक्षिभ्यामोषधीभ्याम्' इति शरीरं निधाय 'भूमिर्भूमिमगान्माता मातरमप्यगात् । भूयास्म पुत्रैः पशुभिर्यो नो द्वेष्टि स भिद्यताम्' इत्युदरे पात्रं निधायथ होतारमधीत्य तस्य दक्षिणे हस्ते कमण्डलुं निदधाति व्याहृतिभिर्देवयजनं पूरयेत् 'अग्निनाग्निः समिधयते' इत्यशेषसंस्कारोऽश्वमेधफलम् । तत्रोदाहरन्ति । शृगालश्च वायसाः खादन्ति चेद्दोषमाहारयेत्कर्तुः तस्मादविशङ्कां वेदिं प्रच्छादयेदिति बोधायनः । बौ. पि. सू. III. 11. अग्निना अग्निः is Rg. I. 12.6 (= Tai. S. I. 4.46.3). The *mantra* भूमिर्भूमिः occurs in बौ. ऋ. सू. I. 4.9 also,

532. अथ परिव्राजकस्य संस्कारविधिः । ग्रामात्पाचीमुदीचीं वा गत्वा ब्रह्मवृक्षस्याधस्तात्तदीतीरे वा शुचौ देशे वा दण्डप्रमाणं देवयजनं व्याहृतिभिः खात्वा त्रिःसप्तव्याहृतिभिः प्रोक्ष्य दर्भासंस्तीर्यालंकृत्य शवं निदधाति श्वभ्रे विष्णो हव्यं रक्षस्वेति । इदं विष्णुर्विचक्रमे इति दक्षिणहस्ते दण्डं निदधाति । यदस्य पारे रजस इति सव्यहस्ते शिष्यम् । येन देवाः पवित्रेणेति मुखे जलपवित्रम् । सावित्र्या उदरे ब्रह्मवाजनम् । भूमिर्भूमेति गुह्ये कमण्डलुम् । चित्तिः सुगिति दशहोत्रिभिरनुमन्त्रयते । नात्र शेषसंस्काराः पूर्वमनुष्ठितत्वात् । सर्वसङ्गनिवृत्तस्य ध्यानयोगरतस्य च । न तस्य दहनं कार्यं नाशौचं नोदकक्रिया ॥ स्मृत्यर्थसार p. 98. The Baud. Gr. Śeṣasūtra IV. 17.9 reads 'गुह्ये कमण्डलुं चैव भूमिर्भूमिमगादिति । The verse सर्वसङ्गः occurs in Baud gr. Śeṣasūtra IV. 17. 17-18. According to the Baud. Dh. S. II. 10.11 the paraphernalia of a yati is: यष्टिः शिष्यं जलपवित्रं कमण्डलुं पात्रमिति.

hand with the mantra 'what is beyond this world' (Tai. S. IV.2.5.2), the piece of cloth used as a water-strainer on the mouth with the words 'by which strainer the gods' (Tai. Br. I.4.8.6), the pot on his belly with the Gāyatrī stanza (Rg. III.62.10, Vāj. S. III. 35, Tai. S. I.5.6.4), his water pot near his private parts with the mantra 'earth went to earth'. He then invokes with the mantras beginning with 'cittiḥ sruk' (ten sentences in Tai. Ā., Maitrāyaṇī S. I 9. 1 which are called 'caturhotārah').⁵³³ The other rites are not performed here as they were performed before. No cremation should be done, no *āśauca* should be observed nor should water be offered to (an ascetic who is dead) who was free from all attachments and who had given himself up to meditation. The Smṛtyarthasāra adds that no *ekoddiṣṭa śrāddha* nor *sapiṇḍikarapa* is performed for an ascetic, but only *pārvaṇa* on the 11th day, that a *kuṭicaka* should be cremated, the *bahūdaka* should be buried, *haṁsa* should be thrown into water and *paramahansa* should be thoroughly buried. The Nirṇayasindhu (pp. 634-635) quotes the Smṛtyarthasāra and then adds a few details from Brhat-Śaunaka, viz. that the dead body of a *yati* should be bathed with the Puruṣasūkta (Rg. X, 90), then the pit (dug for burial) should be sprinkled eight times with the syllable 'Om' on all sides; having deposited the body in the pit with the Yajus formula 'O Viṣṇu! guard this offering' (Tai. S. I. 1. 3.1) and with 'Om', he should place in the right hand the staff with the mantra 'Viṣṇu took strides over this' (Rg. I. 22. 17), then pierce the crown of the head with a conch by repeating the mantra 'bhūr-bhuvaḥ-svaḥ', he should fill up the pit with salt to the recitation of the Puruṣasūkta (Rg. X. 90). He should fill up the pit thoroughly (with sand) in order to guard against jackals and dogs and the like (exhuming the body with their paws). The Dharmasindhu (p. 497) adds some details particularly as to the number of hymns and mantras to be repeated. It states that the crown of the head should be pierced with a conch or an axe, that one who is unable to do this should smash a ball of jaggery placed on the head. It adds that no *yati* except *kuṭicaka* should be cremated. In modern times a *sannyāsin* is always buried and not cremated, since *kuṭicaka* and *bahūdaka* kinds of *yati* are no longer in vogue and it is only the *paramahansa* that is prevalent in the whole of India. The reason why ascetics were buried and not cremated

533. Vide H. of Dh. vol. II, p. 993 notes 2247 and 2248 for the *Daśahotārah* and their relation to *caturhotṛs*.

appears to me to be as follows; part of the procedure of becoming an ascetic consisted in giving up his *śrauta* fires and throwing in fire his sacrificial wooden implements (vide H. of Dh. vol. II. p. 954). One of the rules for ascetics is that he should not kindle *śrauta* or *smārta* fires nor kindle ordinary fire for cooking his food but was to subsist on cooked food obtained by begging (H. of Dh. vol. II. pp. 933-934). The householder was cremated with his *śrauta* or *smārta* fire but the ascetic, having abjured these, was without any fire and was therefore buried. The *Vaikhānasasmārtasūtra* X. 8 (ed. by Caland) contains a brief description of the burial of an ascetic who was not an *āhitāgni* and the cremation of an ascetic who was *āhitāgni*.

Special rules were laid down about the cremation of women dying in or immediately after child-birth and women dying while still in their monthly illness. A *smṛti* quoted by the *Mit.* and the *Smṛti-candrikā* (I. p. 121) provides that in the case of a *sūtikā*, one should take water and *pañcagavya* in a jar, should repeat holy texts (such as 'āpo hi śthā' Rg. X. 9. 1-9, verses addressed to Varuṇa) over them, should then bathe the *sūtikā* with water and *pañcagavya* and then cremate the body. A woman in her monthly illness was to be similarly bathed and she was to be covered with another garment and then cremated. Vide *Garudapurāṇa* II. 4. 171 ff and *Nirṇayasindhu* p. 621. Similarly, elaborate rules are prescribed about the rites of cremation in relation to the death of a pregnant woman (vide Baud. P. S. III. 9, *Nirṇayasindhu* p. 622) which are passed over here.

Dead bodies were disposed off in different ways at different times and in different countries. The various methods of disposal were cremation, burial underground, water burial, exposure of the body for being destroyed⁵³⁴ by vultures and other birds (as among Zoroastrians) or beasts, being preserved in

534. According to the Parsi scriptures burying a human corpse in the earth was a grave sin and if the body was not disinterred there was no atonement in the case of a professor of the law of Mazd or one who had studied it and if he did not disinter it within six months or within a year, he was liable to receive five hundred or a thousand stripes respectively. Vide Vendidad, Fargard III (S. B. E. Vol. 4 pp. 31-32). Corpses were to be laid down on the summits of mountains to be devoured by birds and dogs and the exposure of corpses was the most striking practice of the Mazdean profession (S. B. E. Vol. IV part I Intro. p. XLV).

caves,⁵³⁵ or being mummified (as in Egypt). The general rule in India from times of which we have literary evidence was cremation; though burial took place in certain exceptional cases such as in the case of infants, ascetics &c. How the ancient Indians hit upon this scientific though rather heart-rending method of the disposal of dead bodies it is difficult to say⁵³⁶. Burials were not unknown in India even in very early times, as Atharvaveda 5. 30. 14 (mā nu bhumigrho bhuvat) and 18. 2. 34 show. The last may be rendered as follows: O Agni! bring all those *pitrs* here in order that they may partake of the offering, those (*pitrs* whose bodies) were buried or cast aside (exposed) or burnt or deposited above (on trees or in caves?)^{536a}. In the word 'anagnidagdhāḥ' occurring in Rg. X. 15. 14, scholars see a reference to burial. But it is quite possible that no burial is referred to. If some ancestors were killed far from home in a fight or if they were kidnapped and killed by enemies, their bodies might have been left uncared for in a distant land and not cremated nor buried. A passage in the Chāndogya⁵³⁷ Up. (VIII. 8. 5) is construed by some scholars as referring to burials. It may be rendered as follows: Therefore they designate even now a man, an *asura* who does not make gifts, who has no faith and who offers no sacrifices; for this is the esoteric doctrine of Asuras. They deck out the body of the dead with *bhikṣā* (perfumes and flowers?), with a raiment by way of decoration, and think that they will thus conquer the next world. Though the passage is not quite clear, the reference to Asuras, their usage of decorating the dead body and thereby being able to gain the next world render it probable that the usage of the burial of the body among Asuras is referred to. In Rg. VII. 89. 1 the sage prays 'O Varuṇa!

535. In Rome the bones of over 4000 monks are preserved in the walls of the subterranean burial chapels in the Capuchin Church near the Piazza Barberini. For a description of the catacombs in Rome, vide Puckle's 'Funeral customs' p. 136 (quoting from Frothingham).

536. Vulliamy in 'Immortal man' (p. 34) throws out the suggestion that one of the purposes of cremation may have been the complete destruction of the human aspect of the ghost or its transference to a region from which contact with mankind in any material sense was impossible.

536 a. ये निखाता ये परोत्ता ये दग्धा ये चोद्धिताः। सर्वास्तान् आ वह पितृन् हविर्भुज्यते ॥ अथर्व १८.२.३४.

537. तस्मादप्यथेहाददानमश्रद्धधानमयजमानमाहुरासुरो चेत्यसुराणां ह्येषां पितॄन् हविर्भुज्यते ॥ अथर्व १८.२.३४. छान्. उप. VIII. ८. ५.



may I not go to the earthen house'. This is probably a reference to burial. Besides, after the charred bones were collected, they were placed in an urn or pot, which was buried in the ground and after a good deal of time a mound (śmaśāna) was built upon the bones as will be seen immediately from a passage in the Śat. Br. and other sources. In A. V. XVIII. 2. 25 it is said, 'may the tree not oppress them, nor the great goddess Earth'. This is probably a reference to a coffin and burial.

It is somewhat curious that the progressive nations of the West, believing in a literal interpretation of the Biblical words (such as Matthew 22. 23-33, Mark 12. 18-27 and Luke 20. 37-38, John 5. 19-31 and 6. 32-56) about physical resurrection of the dead, held fast by burial alone and up to the end of the 19th century people in Christendom would not allow the cremation of a dead body. The case of *Reg. v. Price* illustrates how deep the sentiment against cremation was and how popular fury prevented Price from disposing of the body of his dead child of five months by petroleum fire in a field, how he was prosecuted for two offences viz. misdemeanor at Common Law for burning a dead body instead of burying it and misdemeanor on the ground that he attempted to burn the body with intent to prevent an inquest being held on it by the coroner.⁵³⁸ It was only in 1902 that the Cremation Act (2 Edw. 7 Ch. 8) was passed empowering burial authorities to establish crematoria on plans approved by the Minister of Health. The Catholic Church does not even now allow cremation. The ancient Romans on the other hand held cremation as the honourable means of the disposal of the dead body but reserved burial for the suicide and the murderer.

Embalming the dead for some time at least was not quite unknown in India. The Śat. Śr. 29. 4. 29 and Vaik. Śr. 31.23⁵³⁹ prescribe that if an āhitāgni died away from his people his corpse should be laid down in a tub or trough filled with sesame oil and brought home in a cart. In the Rāmāyaṇa it is several times said that the body of Daśaratha was placed for several

538 (1884) 12 Q. B. D. p. 247. Ultimately Price was acquitted both charges.

539. आहिताग्निमज्जे प्रमीतं तैलद्रोण्यामवधाय शकटेनाहरन्ति निर्मन्थ्येन वा दध्वाः कुष्णाजिनेऽथवा निधायाहतेन वाससा संवेष्ट्य दीर्घवंशे प्रबभ्रानथो निदधानाः सुन्मयभाजना आहरन्ति । सत्या. श्रौ. 29.4. 29; almost the same words occur in वैखानसश्रौत 31.23 p. 312 (Caland's ed.).



days in a tub containing oil till the arrival of Bharata (vide Ayodhyā 66. 14-16, 76.4). In the Viṣṇupurāṇa ⁵⁴⁰ it is stated that the body of Nimi being covered with oil and fragrant substances did not become decomposed and looked as if the death was recent.

What the state of things was before the composition of the Rgveda cannot be said with certainty. There is no general agreement as to the age of the Rgveda and of the ruins found at Mohenjo-daro and Harappa. Sir John Marshall (in Mohenjo-daro vol. I. p. 86) refers to complete burials, partial burials and post cremation burials. The excavations at Lauriya ⁵⁴¹ Nandan-garh have brought to light supposed Vedic burial mounds in which has been found a small *repousse* golden plaque bearing the figure of a nude female, the Earth Goddess. These and the disposal of corpses in paleolithic ages are matters for archaeologists and are outside the proper scope of the present work.

The Hāralatā (p. 126) quotes a passage from the Ādipurāṇa to the effect that Magas (Magians) are buried underground and that Daradas and Luptrakas (?) go away after placing their dead relatives on trees. ^{541a}

It appears that among early Buddhists in India hardly any religious ceremony was performed, whether the person deceased was a layman or even a member of the Order. In the Mahāparinibbāna Suttanta the death and the funeral ceremonies of the great founder of Buddhism are described in chapter VI (Section 14 ff). All that is gathered from that chapter is that the favourite disciple of the Buddha, Ānanda, uttered a stanza, some of the disciples that were not free from passion wept and fell headlong on the ground, while others (who were Arahats) bore the grief with composure, that next morning Ānanda went to the Mallas of Kusinārā, that the Mallas took perfumes,

540. निमेषपि तच्छरीरमतिमनोहरं तैलगन्धादिभिरुपस्क्रियमाणं नैव क्रेदादिकं दोषमवाप सद्यो मृतमिव तस्थौ । विष्णुपुराण IV. 5. 7.

541. Vide T. Bloch in Z. D. M. G. vol. 60 pp. 227-232 for the excavations at Lauriya; also Bulletin of the Archaeological Survey of India for megalithic burial and urn fields in South India; Prof. V. G. Childe in 'Man.' for 1945 p. 13 ff. for the disposal of corpses in Paleolithic, Neolithic and Bronze ages and Prof. E. O. James in 'Christian Myth and Ritual' chap. VII on 'Last rites.'

541a. मया भूमौ निखन्यन्ते दूरदांश्च मृतान् सदा । आसद्य (जय?) दृष्टे मृतान्ति लुप्त्रकाश्च स्वबान्धवम् ॥ आदिपुराण q. by हारलता p. 126 which explains दूरदांश्च चर्मस्तु वनच्छायवृक्षे प्रच्छादितमदेक्षे वर्षमेकमवलम्ब्य स्थापयन् । ततो गङ्गाजलपूजितस्य दादः..



garlands, all musical instruments and five hundred suits of apparel, the Mallas passed seven days in paying homage to the body of the Buddha that lay in the sāla grove with dancing, hymns, music, garlands and perfumes, in making canopies of their garments, that on the 7th day they carried the body of the Blessed One to the south but owing to a miracle (described in sections 29-32) they carried it through the city by the north gate and laid the body to the east (the general rule was that a dead body was not to be carried through the middle of a village, and was to be carried to the south but as Buddha was so extraordinary and holy the above was allowed to be done). The body of the Buddha was then wrapped in a new cloth, then with cotton wool, then in a new cloth and so on till 500 layers of cloth and cotton wool covered the body. The body was then placed in an oil vessel of iron which was covered with another oil vessel of iron. Then a funeral pile of all kinds of perfumes was built upon which the body was placed. Then Mahākassapa and five hundred brethren accompanying him arranged their robes on one shoulder (representing the way in which the sacred thread is arranged among the brāhmaṇas), bowed down with clasped hands, went round the body reverently thrice. The body was then burnt and only bones remained. Then the narrative states that Ajātaśatru, king of Magadha, the Licchavis of Vesālī and several others claimed portions of the relics of the Buddha. Then the relics were divided into eight parts. Those who received them built mounds (*Thūpas*) over the relics and the Moriyas who got only embers also built a Thūpa over them and a brāhmaṇa Dona (Droṇa) built a mound over the jar (*kumbha*) in which the bones were collected. Mr. Rhys Davids remarks (S. B. E. vol. XI Introduction p. XLV) 'though funerals are naturally not infrequently mentioned in the historical books and in the Birth stories there is nowhere any reference to a recognised mode of performing any religious worship'. It will be noticed that the Buddhist ritual⁵⁴², though simple, agrees closely with some of the rules of Āśv. gr.

542. Vide Fleets' papers in J. R. A. S. for 1906 pp 655-671 and 381-913 on the disposal of the bones and ashes of Buddha based on the Mahāparinibbāna-sutta, the Divyāvadāna, Fa Hian's work, the Sumaṅgalavilāsinī and other writings. He therein states his view that the Piprahava relic vase, on which there is an inscription that is the oldest Indian Inscription found up to date (it is about 375 B. C.) and in which 700 articles were

(Continued on the next page)

After the relatives (sons and the like) of a deceased person have offered water, have taken a bath and after they emerge from the water (of a river or the like) and are sitting on a plot of soft green grass, elderly persons should talk to them (in order to lessen their grief) about ancient narratives (Yāj. III. 7 and G. P. S. I. 4.2⁵⁴³). Viṣṇu Dh. S. 20. 22-53 contain a long disquisition on the grip that *Kāla* (Time, Death) has on every body including even Indra, gods, *daityas*, great kings and sages, how everyone that is born is sure to die (i. e. Death is inevitable), and how no one (except the wife) can follow the departed on his journey to the other world, how the good actions and bad actions will accompany the spirit of the dead, how *śrāddha* confers great benefit on the departed; it winds up that therefore the surviving relatives should offer *śrāddha* and give up lamentations that help no one, that it is *dharma* that alone follows the soul through his wanderings⁵⁴⁴. Yāj. III. 8-11 (=Garudapurāṇa II. 4. 81-84) are verses in a similar strain and are intended to serve the same purpose. They are: 'He, who seeks everlastingness in this human life that is as devoid of strength as the stock of a plantain plant, and that is as inconstant as a bubble of water, is a deluded person. What is the use of lamentation if the body, created out of the five elements by reason of actions performed in a former life, returns to those five elements? The earth, the ocean and the gods

(Continued from the last page)

found, enshrines the relics, not of the Bhagavān Buddha, but of his kinsmen. Fleet further refers to the tradition that the great emperor Aśoka dug up seven out of the eight mounds of the relics of Buddha and transferred almost all their contents to 84000 boxes of gold and silver and distributed them throughout India and built monuments (*stūpas*) over them. Rhys Davids in 'Buddhist India' (pp. 78-80), after stating that deceased persons of distinction either by birth or wealth or official status or as public teachers were cremated and the ashes were buried under a *tope* (Pāli 'thūpa'), remarks 'The dead bodies of ordinary people were disposed of in a unique way. They were put away in a public place. There as a rule the bodies or the remains of the pyre were not buried but left to be destroyed by birds or beasts or dissipated by the process of natural decay'.

543. शोकमुत्सृज्य कल्याणीभिर्वाग्भिः सात्त्विकाभिः कथाभिः पुराणैः सुकृतिभिः श्रुत्वा धोमुखा ब्रजन्ति। गौतमपितृमेधसूत्र I. 4. 2.

544. It may be noted that Viṣṇu Dh. S. 20. 29, 48-49 and 51-53 are the same or almost the same as Bhagavadgītā II. 27, 28, 13, 23-24 respectively. Viṣṇu Dh. S. 20. 47 (yathā dhenusahasreṣu &c.) is the same as Śāntiparva 181. 16, 187. 27 and 323. 16 and Viṣṇudharmottara II. 78. 27 and Viṣṇu Dh. S. 20. 41 is the same as Śānti 175. 15 and 322. 73. The कल्पसूत्र (pp. 91-97) quotes यज्ञ. (III. 7.11), विष्णु 20.22-53 and गीता II. 13. 28.

are destined to go to destruction (at some future date when *pralaya* takes place). How is it possible that the world of mortals which is (evanescent) like foam will not meet with destruction? As the departed spirit, being helpless, has to swallow the tears and phlegm cast by kinsmen, they should not weep but should perform (obsequial) rites according to their ability.' Gobhilasmṛti III. 39 urges 'do not lament for what is perishable and what is the characteristic (destiny) of all beings. Exert yourselves in the performance of meritorious acts which will accompany you.' Gobhila then quotes Yāj. III. 8-10 and one verse from the Mahābhārata ^{544a} viz. 'All collections are to end in dissipation, all rise is to end in fall, all unions in separation and life in death'. Aparārka quotes the Rāmāyaṇa and Vāsudeva's words from the Śalyaparva to Dhṛtarāṣṭra on the death of Duryodhana. The Par. M. I. 2 pp. 292-93, the Śuddhiprakāśa pp. 205-206 and several other works quote the verses of Viṣṇu, Yāj. and Gobhila.

The Garuḍapurāṇa here (II. 4. 91-100) waxes eloquent over the immolation of a wife on her husband's funeral pyre, over the miraculous power of a *pativratā*, and states that a brāhmaṇa woman should not burn herself apart from her husband's body (or after he is cremated), but that kṣatriya and other women may do so, that the practice of *satī* is common to all women even including chāṇḍāla women, but pregnant women or those that have young children should not do so and that a woman does not become free from the liability to be born again and again as a woman until she becomes a *Satī*.

After listening to the philosophical discourse of elders the relatives return to their house, placing children in front and standing at the door of the house, they with minds under control bite the leaves of the *nimba* tree, perform *ācamana*, touch fire, water, cowdung, white mustard; then they should enter their house after slowly (firmly) planting their foot on a stone. According ⁵⁴⁵ to Śāṅkha the relatives should touch the tendrils of Dūrvā, fire and a bull, should offer a *pinḍa* to the departed at

544a. सर्वे क्षयान्ता निचयाः पतनान्ताः ससुच्छयाः । संयोगा विप्रयोगास्तामर्यान्तं च जीवितम् ॥ This is शान्तिपर्व 331.20 (in 330. 20 in Citrasālā edition)

545. दूर्वाप्रवालमग्निं वृषभं चालभ्य गृहद्वारे प्रेताय पिण्डं दत्त्वा पश्चात्पविशेत् । शङ्खं च, by मिता. on या. III. 13, परा. मा. I. 2 p. 293.

the door of the house and then enter it. Baijavāpa ⁵⁴⁶ q. by Śuddhitattva prescribes the mantras to be recited in touching *śamī*, the stone (*aśmā*), fire and provides further that a cow and a goat should be touched holding fire between themselves and these animals; food should be purchased or obtained from another's house, it should be of one kind only without salt, that they should for one day eat only by day and stop all actions for three days. Yāj. III. 14 prescribes that the actions prescribed by him in III. 12 for relatives (viz. biting *nimba* leaves up to entering the house) must be done by others who, though no relatives, carried the corpse or decked it &c.

The Śān. Śr. IV. 15.10, the Āśv. gr. IV. 4.17-27, Baud. P. S. I. 12.10, Kauśikasūtra 82.33-35 and 42-47, Pār. gr. III. 10, Āp. Dh. S. I. 3.10.4-10, Gaut. Dh. 14.35-36 Manu V. 73, Vas. 4.14-15, Yāj. III. 16-17, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 19.14-17, Saṁvarta 39-43, Śaṅkha 15.25, Garuḍapurāṇa (Pretakhaṇḍa chap. 5.1-5) and others lay down several rules for those (both men and women) who have lost a near *sapiṇḍa* by death to be observed immediately after they return from the cremation and for three more days. ⁵⁴⁷ The Śān. Śr. provides that they should sleep on the bare ground (not on a cot), they should subsist on sacrificial food, they should give up the performance of their usual religious duties (except in relation to the vedic fires) for one night, three nights or nine nights or till the day of the collection of the bones. The Āśv. gr. (IV. 4.17-24) provides these observations viz. 'Let them not cook food during that night, let them subsist on bought food or on food received from others,

546. शमीमालभन्ते शमी पापं शमयत्विति अश्मानमश्मेव स्थिरो भूयासमिति अग्नि-मस्तिर्नः शर्म यच्छत्विति ज्योतिष्य अन्तरा गाममजमुपस्पृशन्तः कृत्वा लब्ध्वा वा प्राप्य गृहमे-काक्षमलवणमेकरात्रं दिवा भोक्तव्यं त्रिरात्रं च कर्मोपरमणम् । वैजवाप quoted in कल्पतरु (शुद्धि p. 100), शुद्धितत्त्व p. 319, the शुद्धितत्त्व itself being q. by निर्णयसिन्धु III. p. 580 (which reads लब्ध्वा वा न्यगेहादेका०).

547. अधः शय्या हविष्यभक्ष्यता प्रत्यूहनं च कर्मणां वैतानवर्जमेकरात्रं त्रिरात्रं नवरात्रं वा, वासश्चयनाद्व्रतानि । शां. श्रौ. IV. 15.10; मातरि पितर्याचार्य इति त्रिरात्रमक्षारलवण-भोजनमधःशयनं ब्रह्मचर्यं ज्येष्ठं षडहं द्वादशाहं संवत्सरं यावत् ग्रहणं द्वादशाहावरार्थं परम-गुरुष्वेवमघोदकमितरेषु त्रिरात्रं यावज्जीवं प्रेतपत्नी । बो. पि. सू. I. 12.10.; न स्वाध्यायम-धीयीरन् । नित्यानि निवर्तेरन्वैतानवर्जम् । शालाग्नौ चैके । अन्य एतानि कुर्युः । पार. गृ. III. 10 (ascribed to पैडीनसि in मिता. on या. III. 17); उभयत्र दशाहानि कुलस्याक्षं न भुज्यते । दानं प्रतिग्रहो होमो स्वाध्यायश्च निवर्तते ॥ cited as मनु's in अपरार्क p. 892, परा. मा. I. 2. p. 211. Aparārka and others explain that the cessation of homa refers to smārta and not to śrauta homa. The last verse is ascribed to यम by मिता. on या. III. 17, where it adds the half verse सूतके तु कुलस्याजमदेवं मनु-जयीत् । The विष्णुपुराण III. 13.18 reads सूतबन्धोर्दशाहानि कुलस्याक्षं...निवर्तते ॥.



let them eat no mineral salt or ordinary ⁵⁴⁸ salt for three nights, let them optionally avoid for twelve nights the distribution of gifts and the study of vedic texts if one of the principal gurus (father, mother or the teacher who performed upanayana and taught the whole Veda) dies. Pār. gr. III. 10 adds that they should remain chaste, eat food only once in the day and that they should not repeat Veda study, and should give up the daily obligatory duties except those connected with Vedic fires. Manu (V. 73) adds that they should not eat flesh for three days. Vas. (4.14-15) lays down that the relatives who returned from the cemetery should sit down for three days on mats and fast, that if they are unable (to fast for three days) they should subsist on food bought in the market or obtained unasked. Yāj. III. 17 and Pār. III. 10 ⁵⁴⁹ provide that for the night they should put milk and water in an earthen vessel in the open space (on a *śikya*) with the words 'O departed one! bathe here (in the water) and drink this milk'. Yāj. III. 17, Paithinasi, Manu V. 84, Pār. gr. III. 10, and others state that the relatives of the departed should perform their own daily rites to be performed in the *śrauta* fires (such as Agnihotra and Darśapūrṇamāsa) and in the *smārta* fire (such as morning and evening *homa*) on account of the peremptory dictates of the Veda (such as 'one should perform Agnihotra as long as one lives'). The commentators have added several limitations and restrictions. The Mit. ⁵⁵⁰ on Yāj. III. 17 states that, as Manu V. 84 only prohibits the stopping of the rites in (Vedic and Smārta) fires, such religious duties as the five daily *Mahāyajñas* are excluded, that Vaiśvadeva, though performed in fire, is excluded because there is an express text of Samvarta a brāhmaṇa should be without Vaiśvadeva for ten days (after the death of a sapinda), that the Śrauta and Smārta rites should be got performed by another, as Pāraskara (III. 10 'anya etāni kuryuḥ') expressly lays down. Only *nitya* and *naimittika* acts to be performed in Vedic and Smārta fires are allowed and so *kāmya* rites cannot be performed. Even at present Agnihotritins

548. For the different explanations of 'kṣāra-lavana' vide H. of Dh. vol. II. p. 304 n. 723.

549. मेतात्र स्नाहीत्युदकं स्थाप्यं पिब चेदमिति क्षीरम् । पार. गृ. III. 10.

550. सूतके कर्मणां त्यागः सन्ध्यादीनां विधीयते—इति यद्यपि सन्ध्यायाः विनियुतिः श्रूयते तथा अलिप्रक्षेपादिकं कुर्यात् । सूतके सावित्र्या च अलिं प्रक्षिप्य प्रदक्षिणं कृत्वा सूर्यं ध्याय-
जमस्कुर्वदिति पैठीनीतिस्मरणात् । मिता on या. III. 17. सूतके कर्मणां त्यागः पार. गृ. III. 10. अभिल-
स्मृति III. 60. Vide विष्णुपुराण III. 13. 18 'ज्ञानं प्रतिग्रहो होमः स्वाध्यायश्च निवर्तते'.



perform their śrauta *nitya homa* during days of impurity themselves, though some get it performed by another. (Vide Yāj. III. 17, Manu V. 84). Although there is a text of Gobhilasmr̥ti (III. 60) prohibiting the performance of *sandhyā*, yet relying on a sūtra of Paithīnasi the Mit. says that a man can offer water to the Sun in worship; others like the Smṛtimuktāphala (p. 478) say that *sandhyā* mantras may be revolved in the mind, except the prāṇāyāma mantras. This is followed in modern times in many parts of India. Viṣṇu Dh. S. 22.6 prescribes that in impurity due to birth or death *homa* (Vaiśvadeva), giving and accepting gifts and the study of Veda cease. The Vaik. Sm. S. VI.4 states that the performance of *sandhyā* adoration, all rites for the gods and manes, gift and acceptance and Veda study should be given up during impurity on death. Gautama 14.44 appears to hold that a brāhmaṇa is not affected by impurity on birth and death for the purposes of Veda study. On the other hand Saṁvarta⁵⁵¹ (43) affirms that on the days of impurity on birth and death there is no performance of the five Mahāyajñas nor of Veda study. The Nityācāra-paddhati p. 544 states that even in āsauca the thousand names of Viṣṇu may be recited.

Asthisañcayana or *Sañcayana* means that rite in which the (charred) bones (of the cremated person) are collected. This rite is dealt with in many sūtra and smṛti works, such as Śān. Śr. IV. 15. 12-18, Sat. Śr. 28. 3, Āśv. gr. IV. 5. 1-18, Gaut. P. S. I. 5, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 19. 10-12, Baud. P. S. I. 14, Kauśika-sūtra 82. 29-32, Vaik. Smṛta Sūtra V. 7, Yama 87-88, Saṁvarta 38, Gobhila-smṛti III. 54-59 (q. by Hāralatā p. 183). There is great divergence of views about the day on which this was to be done. For example, Sat. Śr. 28. 3. 1 provides: ⁵⁵² 'bones are collected on the next day (after cremation) or on the 3rd, 5th or 7th.' Saṁvarta (verse 38) and Garuḍapurāṇa (Pretakhaṇḍa 5. 15) prescribe that collection of bones should be made on the 1st, 3rd, 7th or 9th and (particularly) on the 4th by twice-born persons. The Vāmanapurāṇa (14. 97-98) allows it on the 1st, 4th or 7th day. Yama (87) requires the relatives to collect bones from the 1st to the 4th day after cremation and also provides (verse 88)

551. पञ्चयज्ञविधानं तु न कुर्यान्मृत्युजन्मनोः । दशाहातु परं सम्यग्निमोऽधीयते धर्मवित् ॥ संवर्त 43.

552. अपरेद्यस्तृतीयस्यां पञ्चम्यां सप्तम्यां वास्थीनि सञ्चिनोति । सत्या. श्रौ. 28. 3.1. अथ सञ्चयनं व्युष्टे हिरात्रं त्रिरात्रं चतुरात्रं पञ्चरात्रं वा । गौ. पि. सू. I. 5. 1; प्रथमेऽह्नि चतुर्थे वा सप्तमे वास्थिसञ्चयम् । ऊर्ध्वं सञ्चयनात्तेषामङ्गस्पर्शो विधीयते ॥ वामनपुराण 114. 97-98.



that the four varṇas should respectively perform *sañcayana* on the 4th, 5th, 7th and 9th day. The Āśv. gr. S. IV. 5. 1 states that *sañcayana* should be performed after the 10th day from cremation in the dark half, but on uneven *tithis* (i. e. 1st, 3rd, 11th, 13th, 15th) and on a *nakṣatra* which bears a name not applicable to two or more *nakṣatras* (i. e. except on the two Āṣāḍhas, two Phalgunis and two Bhādrapadās). Viṣṇu Dh. S. 19. 10, Vaik. Smārta-sūtra V. 7, Kauś. 82. 29, Viṣṇupurāṇa III. 13. 14, Kūrmapurāṇa (uttara) 23 and a few other works lay down that *sañcayana* must be done on the 4th day after cremation. The various texts differ a good deal in details. The following is the procedure in the Āśv. gr. IV. 5:—The bones of a male should be collected into an urn that has no special marks (protuberances), those of a woman in an urn that has protuberances but no other special marks. Aged persons, odd in number ⁵⁵³ not being together with women, (i. e. not as a mixed assemblage) collect the bones. The performer walks thrice round the spot (where the body was burnt) with his left side turned towards the spot, sprinkles on it with a *samī* branch milk mixed with water with a verse 'sitike' (Rg. X. 16. 14). With the thumb and the 4th finger they (gatherers) should put each single bone into the urn without making a rattling noise (of the bones in the urn), the bones of the feet being taken first, those of the head last. Having well gathered the bones and having purified them with a winnowing basket (i. e. removing the dust attaching to them) they should put the urn in a pit at a place where the waters from different sides do not flow together except rain water with the verse 'upasarpa' (Rg. X. 18. 10) and he should throw earth (into the pit) with the following verse (Rg. X. 18. 11). After having thrown (earth) he should repeat the next verse (Rg. X. 18. 12). Then covering (the mouth of the urn) with a lid with the mantra 'ut te stabhnāmi' (Rg. X. 18. 13) (he fills up the pit). Then without looking back they return (towards the house), bathe in water and then offer śrāddha to him alone (the departed). Dr. B. N. Datta in his paper 'Vedic funeral customs and Indus Valley culture' in 'Man in India', vol. 16

553. The हारलता (p. 184) explains अयुजो मिथुनाः प्रवयसः (in आश्व. गृ. 5. 1) as 'मिथुनं पुरुषद्वयं बहुवचनात् त्रयो मिथुनाः षट् पुरुषा इत्यर्थः षट् वा मिथुना द्वावयुजसः प्रवयसः प्रकुलवयसः'. It is probable that women also accompanied the *corège* to the cemetery in ancient times, that gradually they ceased to do so and by the time of the Hāralatā only men comprised the funeral procession and so it explained the words of Āśv. as above.

pp. 223-307 regards (p. 285) Rg. X. 18 as a hymn dealing with burial of the whole body (and not of ashes), while he admits (p. 287) that Rg. X. 16 is a cremation hymn. I dissent from him for various reasons; the most important is that if his theory be correct a period of several centuries must be postulated between the two hymns. This is inadmissible.

The Kauśikasūtra (82. 29-32) prescribes certain details differently. It says that the bones are collected with A. V. 18. 2. 24, 26, then they are consigned to a jar over which all fragrant powders are scattered, then the jar is raised with the Utthāpanī verses and carried with the verses called Haripis (i. e. A. V. 18. 2. 11-18). He (the performer) deposits (in the earth the urn) at the root of a tree with the verse 'mā tvā' (A. V. 18. 2. 25 'May the tree not injure thee all round, may not the wide goddess Earth also injure thee').⁵⁵⁴

The other sūtras present several variations which are passed over here, excepting one or two matters. The Sat. Śr. provides that the twig should be of the Udumbara tree, that the bones are collected by women of the family of the deceased (his wife and others) odd in number (five or more), or other women (in the absence of women of the family). A woman who is not likely to have a child should tie in her left hand a Brhati fruit with two threads, blue and red in colour, should step on a stone with her left foot, collect the bones first from the teeth or head with the mantra 'uttisthata' (Tai. Ā. VI. 4. 2) and she should deposit those bones in a jar or garment, then a second woman of the same type collects bones from the shoulders or arms, a third woman from the sides or hips, a fourth from the thighs or legs, and a fifth from the feet. They or more women collect the bones completely. The urn is deposited at the root of a śamī or palāśa tree.

In modern times, particularly in towns and cities, the collection of bones has to be done immediately after cremation. The Antyeṣṭi-paddhati closely follows the procedure prescribed in the Āśv. gr. quoted above. It says: the performer goes to the place of cremation, sips water, mentions the time and place, makes a *saṅkalpa* (declaration) that he will perform the collec-

554. मा ते मनो यत्ते अङ्गमिति सञ्चिनोति पच्छः । प्रथमं शीर्षकपालानि । पश्चात्कलशे समोऽप्य सर्वसुरभिचूर्णैर्वकीर्योत्थापनीभिरुत्थाप्य हरिणीभिर्हरयुः । मा त्वा वृक्ष इति वृक्षमृते निदधाति । कौशिकसूत्र 82. 29-32. It appears that the sūtras are not properly arranged by Bloomfield. They should be read as पच्छः प्रथमम् । शीर्षकपालानि पश्चात् । कलशे etc. For the उत्थापनी verses see n. 474. The हरिणी verses from अथर्ववेद are 18.2. 11-18 and are the same as Rg. X. 14.10-12 and X. 1.14-15.

tion of the bones of the departed naming him and his gotra. He walks thrice round the place of cremation with his left towards it and sweeps it with a śamī branch and sprinkles it with milk mixed with water with the mantra 'śitike' (Rg. X. 16. 14). Then old men odd in number with the performer collect the bones (as stated by Āśv. gr. above) and place them in a new jar and if they are of a woman in a jar with protuberances. They also winnow the ashes with a *śūrpa* and place in the jar even small bones and throw the ashes into the Ganges. Then at some time other than the rainy season a pit should be dug in a pure spot whereon water would not flow and the performer deposits the jar in the pit with the mantra 'approach this mother, Earth' (Rg. X. 18. 10). With Rg. X. 18. 11, he throws earth in the pit all round the jar and murmurs with folded hands the mantra (Rg. X. 18. 12) and he closes the jar with a new earthen disk with the verse Rg. X. 18. 13. Then he should put earth on the jar in such a way that it may not be seen by anybody and without looking back should go elsewhere and bathe. The Nirṇayasindhu (p. 586) expressly states that the procedure for the collection of bones may be gathered from one's sūtra or from the work of Bhaṭṭa (i. e. Nārāyaṇa, Kamalākara's grandfather).

The Viṣṇudharmasūtra (19.11-12) and Anu. 26.32 state that the collected bones should be cast in Ganges water, since as many particles of the bones of a man remain in Ganges water for so many thousands of years he dwells in heaven. It was provided in the Purāṇas that a virtuous son, brother or daughter's son or a relative on the father's or mother's side should cast the bones in the Ganges, that one not so related should not do it and that if he does it he has to perform cāndrāyana prāyaścitta. Even in modern times many Hindus take the charred bones of their parents or other dear relatives to the Ganges at Prayāga (Allahabad) or some other holy river ^{554a} or cast them into the sea. The Nirṇayasindhu (p. 587) quotes an elaborate rite of casting the ashes in the Ganges from Śaunaka. It is briefly as follows: The performer should go out of the village, bathe with clothes on, sprinkle the earth where the ashes are deposited with the Gāyatrī and the other mantras usually repeated over

554 a. The स्मृतिच. (आशौच) p. 190 quotes several verses on this point
तत्र शाण्डिल्यः । द्वारवत्यां सेतुबन्धे गोदावर्यां च पुष्करे । अस्थीनि विमुञ्जेत्यस्य स स्मृती मानि
मानुयात् । शङ्खलिखितौ । गङ्गायां च प्रयागे च केदारे पुष्करोत्तमे । अस्थीनि विधिवत् स्पर्शत्वा
गयायां पिण्डदो भवेत् । पित्रोर्ऋणात्प्रमुच्येत तौ नित्यं मोक्षगामिनौ । इति । योगयज्ञवल्क्यः ।
गङ्गायां यमुनायां वा कावेर्यां वा शतद्रुतौ । सरस्वत्यां विशेषेण ह्यस्थीनि विमुञ्जेत्सुतः ॥



pañcagavya. With the four mantras 'upasarpa' (Rg. X. 18.10-13) he should respectively pray to the earth, then dig it, take out the earth, and then the bones. Then he should bathe and purify the bones by touching the bones again and again and repeating the mantras 'eto nvindram stavāma śuddham &c.' (Rg. VIII. 95. 7-9). Then he should bathe with pañcagavya and become pure. Then he should bathe ten times with cow's urine, cow's dung, cow's milk, curds, clarified butter, water in which kuśas have been dipped, ashes (of sacred fires), earth, honey and water. Then he should sprinkle (with kuśas) water on the bones with the mantras, viz. Rg. I.22.16. Rg. VIII. 95.7-9,⁵⁵⁵ Rg. VII. 56.12-14, Rg. X. 126.1-8, Rg. X. 119.1-13, Rg. IX. 1.1-10 (called Pāvamāni verses), Rg. X. 128.1-9, Rg. I. 43.1-9 (a hymn to Rudra); then he should offer a *hiranya śrāddha* for the deceased, offer *piṇḍa* to him and perform *tarpana* with sesame. Then he should cover the bones in seven ways viz. by deer-skin, woollen blanket, *darbhas*, cow's hair, hempen cloth, birch leaf and palm leaf. He should cast among the bones pieces of gold and silver, pearls, coral and sapphire for the purification of the bones, then he should offer into fire 108 oblations of clarified butter and sesame with the hymn beginning with 'udiratām' (Rg. X. 15). Then he should cast the bones in holy water; thereby he does not incur the fault of touching an unclean object. While answering the calls of nature or performing *ācamana* one should not hold the bones.

The Nirṇayasindhu adds (p. 588) that there is no *asthi-saṅcayana* for one whose upanayana had not been performed.

The Āśv. gr. IV.6, the Sat. Śr. 38.4, Śān. Śr. 4.6 (called *paridhikarma*) and some others prescribe a *Śānti* rite after collection of the charred bones of a deceased person. The Baud. P. S. (II. 3.3) and Viṣṇu Dh. S. 19.19 appear to prescribe the *Śānti* rite after the ten days of impurity have expired ('daśarātre śaucam kṛtvā śāntiḥ'). It is described by Āśv. gr. as follows: They who have lost a *guru* (father or mother) by death should perform on the new moon day an expiatory ceremony. Before sunrise they should carry fire together with its ashes and with its receptacle to the south with the half verse 'I send away the flesh-devouring Agni' (Rg. X. 16. 9). Having cast that fire down at a place where four roads meet or somewhere else, they

555. It should be noticed that in Rg. VIII. 95.7-9 the word 'śuddha' (pure) occurs thirteen times and hence it is appropriate that those verses are employed as purificatory ones. Similarly, in Rg. VII. 56.12 the word 'śuci' (pure) occurs six times.

walk round it thrice, with their left side turned to it and beating their left thighs with the left hand. They should then return home without looking back, bathe in water, have their hair, beards and hair on the body and nails cut, furnish themselves with new jars, pots, vessels for rinsing the mouth, with garlands of *śamī* flowers, with fuel of *śamī* wood, with two pieces of *śamī* wood for kindling fire⁵⁵⁶ and with branches for encircling the fire, with bull's dung and hide, fresh butter, a stone and as many bunches of *kuśa* grass as there are young women (in the house). At the time of the Agnihotra (in the afternoon) he should kindle fire (by means of the arāṇis) with the half verse 'Here may this other Jātavedas' (Rg. X. 16.9 latter half). Keeping the fire burning they sit till night silence falls, repeating tales of old men (of the family) and stories of auspicious contents, *Itihāsas* and *Purāṇas*. When all sounds have ceased or when the others (members of the deceased's family) have gone to their houses or resting place, (the performer) should pour out a continuous stream of water beginning at the south side of the door with the verse (Rg. X. 53.6) 'spreading the thread follow the light of the world' and go round the house ending at the north side of the door. Then having placed the fire and spread to the west of it a bull's hide with neck to the east, with the hair outside, he should cause the people of the house (including women) to step on that hide with the verse 'Arise to long life'⁵⁵⁷ (Rg. X. 18.6). He should place twigs round the fire with 'Here do I deposit an encircling thing' (Rg. X. 18.4). Having placed a stone to the north of the fire with the words 'May they place a mountain between themselves and death' (Rg. X. 18.4 last *pāda*) and having sacrificed with four verses 'Go hence, O Death' (Rg. X. 18.1-4), he should look at his people with the verse 'as days follow each other' (Rg. X. 18.5). The young women (belonging to the house) should with each hand separately with the thumb and 4th finger salve (at one and the same time) their eyes with fresh butter by means of young *darbha* blades and cast

556. Nārāyaṇa explains that the fire means ordinary kitchen fire and he seems to be right in spite of Oldenberg's note to the contrary on p. 246 (of S. B. E. vol. 29). The deceased sacrificer is cremated with his śrauta fires (vide Āśv. gr. IV. 4) and smārta fire (if any) and on his death the śāntikarma is performed by the son or other relative who may have no consecrated fires at all or, if he has, he cannot cast them away as long as he lives. The Com. on Sat. Sr. 28. 4, 1 states that it is the adhvaryu priest that kindles the fire and not he who performed the cremation.

557. Most of these mantras occur also in Tai. Ā. VI. 10.

away the blades turning their faces away. The performer should look at them while they are salving their eyes, with the verse 'these women, being no widows and having good husbands' (Rg. X. 18.7). The former should first touch the stone with 'the stream containing stones flows' (Rg. X. 53.8). After that, stationing himself to the north-east, while others go round with the fire, bull-dung and a continuous stream of water he should, after repeating the three verses (āpo hi s̥thā, Rg. X. 9.1-3), murmur the verse 'these have led round the cows' (Rg. X. 155.5). A tawny-coloured bull should be led round. They then sit down at a place where they like to stop, having put on fresh unwashed garments and they sit there till sunrise avoiding sleep. After sunrise, having murmured the hymns sacred to the sun and auspicious hymns, having prepared food and made oblations with the hymn beginning 'May he burn away evil from us' (Rg. I. 97.1-8), verse by verse, having given to the brāhmaṇas to eat, he should cause them to pronounce auspicious words. A cow, a cup of metal and a fresh unworn garment are the sacrificial fee for each of the brāhmaṇas.

A few details may be added from other sūtras. The Sat. Śr. (28.4.1) provides that the Śānti is performed on the 10th day after cremation by a priest, that in the folded hands of the wives (of the members of the family) he puts the remains of the material used for oblations with the verse 'these women, not being widows' (Rg. X. 18.7 = Tai. Ā. VI. 10.2), that the priest plants in the earth the stalk of a plant with the verse 'yathā tvam' (Tai. Ā. VI. 10.2)⁵⁵⁸, that after they return home, they cook goat flesh and boil *yava* grains and eat them and then may occupy couches and cots (i. e. give up the observances of mourning).

Interesting information is furnished by the Śat. Br. about graves (XIII. 8. 1-4) and Kāt. Śr.⁵⁵⁹ It is said in Śat. Br. that

558. The mantra is very significant, यथा त्वमुद्भिनास्ति ओषधे पृथिव्या अधि । एवमिम उद्भिन्दन्तु कीर्त्या यशसा ब्रह्मवर्चसेन ॥ तै. आ. VI. 10. 2.

559. अथैकेषां कुम्भान्तं निधानमनाहिताग्नेः स्त्रियाश्च निवपनान्तं हविर्याजिनः पुनर्दहनान्तं सोमयाजिनश्चयनान्तमग्निचित इति । सत्या. श्रौ. 28. 4, 28; almost the same words occur in बौ. पि. सू. II. 3. 2. This passage refers to four modes of the disposal of the charred bones viz. burial in the earth of the urn for women and men who had not consecrated śrauta fires, depositing the bones alone on the earth for him who performs havir-yajñas (in which only boiled rice and clarified butter are offered, vide Gaut. 8. 20.), re-cremation for one who had offered soma sacrifice and building a brick or clod structure for him who

(Continued on the next page)



where it would be visible from the village and there should be charming objects to its west (woods, gardens &c.). If there be no charming objects there should be waters to its west or north. He makes it on salt (barren) soil, on such ground as abounds in roots. Let him not make it near where grows the Bhūmipāśā plant or where reeds grow, or Āśvagandhā or Adhyandā, or Prśniparnī grows. He should not make it near an āśvattha tree or near a vibhītaka tree or a tilvaka, a sphūrjaka or a haridru or nyagrodha tree or other trees that have an evil name (like śleṣmātaka or kovidāra). For one who has performed Agnicayana, he makes a tomb after the manner of the fire altar. One must not make it too large lest he should make the sin (of the deceased) large. He should make it just a man's size, broader behind (to the west) and broader on the north side. He encloses it with cords twisted in the non-sunwise way. He then bids them to cut out the earth which would be just sufficient for making the mound of a man's size.

The Kāt. Śr. (21. 3. 1 and 6) closely follows the above directions contained in the Śat. ⁵⁶¹ Br. The Sat. Śr. 29. 1.2 provides that when the day of cremation is not known or remembered one may erect a mound over the bones (with clods of earth or bricks) on the New Moon day that comes immediately after the Full Moon day of Māgha, Phālguna, Caitra, Vaisākha or of the summer months (Jyestha and Āṣāḍha).

The Śat. Br. (XIII. 8. 2-4) pursues the subject of sepulchral monuments as follows: Godly people make their sepulchres so as not to be separate from the earth; while those who are of the Asura stamp, the Easterns and others, make the sepulchral mounds so as to be separate from the earth, either on a stone basin or a similar thing. He then encloses it with an undefined number of stones silently. He then sweeps the sepulchral site with a palāśa branch with (Vāj. S. 35.1 'May the niggardly god-haters go away') and prays that Yama may grant him (the deceased) an abode. He throws out the branch to the south side. He then yokes the team of six oxen to the plough on the south side or on the north side, as he chooses. Having given the order 'Yoke' he (the performer) utters the

561 The grave is to be constructed in such a way that the four corners would lie in the direction of the four quarters, as Kāt. Sr. (21. 3. 28-29) states 'dikṣrakti puruṣamātram mimīte uttarataḥ prthu paścācca'.

mantra (Vāj. S. 35. 2).⁵⁶² Having turned round the plough from right (south side) to the north, he ploughs the first furrow with Vāj. S. 35.3 ' May Vāyu purify ' along the north side towards the west; with ' May Savitr purify ' along the west side towards the south; with ' Agni's lustre ' along the south side towards the east; with ' Sūrya's brilliance ' along the front side towards the north. Four furrows he ploughs with a Yajus formula. He then ploughs across the body (of the sepulchral site) silently with an undefined number of furrows. He then unfastens the team of oxen. To the right side (south-west) he removes this (the plough and the team).

He then sows seeds of all kinds of herbs with a single verse (Vāj. S. 35.4); for long life he thereby prays for these (the performer's family) and accordingly each subsequent one of them dies of old age. He then pours out that (jar of bones). He does so before sunrise so that the sun should rise over him while he is doing it. He does so with Vāj. S. 35. 5-6. He then says to some one ' Proceed in that (southern) direction without drawing breath and having thrown down the jar, return hither without looking behind.' He then mutters Vāj. S. 35.7. He then arranges the dead man (the bones) limb by limb with Vāj. S. 35.8-9. Now thirteen unmarked ⁵⁶³ bricks each measuring a (human) foot (*pada*) have been made and are laid down

562. It is not possible, owing to considerations of space, to set out all the verses of the Vāj. S. chap. 35 mentioned as mantras by the Sat. Br. Only a few are set out here in order to show how appropriate they are as referring to the actions prescribed by the Sat. Br. Verse 1 first half is ' अपेतो यन्तु पणयोऽ-सुम्ना देवपीयवः । ' ; सविता ते शरीरेभ्यः पृथिव्याल्लोकमिच्छतु । तस्मै युज्यन्तामुज्जियाः ॥ वाज. सं. 35. 2 ; वायुः पुनातु सविता पुनात्वग्नेर्भ्राजसा सूर्यस्य वर्चसा । विमुच्यन्तामुज्जियाः ॥ वाज. सं. 35. 3.

563. The bricks of the fire altar are marked with lines (vide H. of Dh. Vol. II. p. 1248). The bricks in Agnicayana are as long as the foot of the sacrificer. Thereon gods have to be worshipped. Here it is the fathers to be honoured. Throughout Sat. Br. XIII. 8.2-3 a distinction is drawn between what is done for the gods and what is to be done for pītr̥s in order to keep the divine distinct from what belongs to the fathers. In Agnicayana a bird-like pattern is the most frequent (vide H. of Dh. vol. II. p. 1249) is hence that the Sat. Br. speaks of wings and tails. The heights prescribed for men of the several varṇas and for women are symbolic. Kṣatriyas, brāhmaṇas and vaiśyas represent the arms, the mouth and thighs of the Puruṣa (as stated in Rg. X. 90.12). The Kāt. Sr. (21.4 13-14) gives an option in the case of a kṣatriya viz. the mound may be as high as the *śira* or as high as a man with upstretched arms.

silently (and not with mantras as in the case of the Agnicayana). One of the thirteen he places in the middle, with the front towards the east (this represents the trunk); three are placed in front (representing the head); three on the right (that is the right wing); three on the left (that represents the left wing); three behind (representing the tail). He then directs them to bring some soil from a cleft in the ground. Some dig in the intermediate (south-eastern) quarter and fetch it from there; others dig in the south-west and fetch it northwards; he may do as he likes (there is an option). Let him not make the sepulchral mound too large. For a kṣatriya he may make it as high as a man with upstretched arms, for a brāhmaṇa reaching up to the mouth, for a woman up to the hips, for a vaiśya up to the thighs, for a śūdra up to the knee; or let him rather make it so high (for all) as to reach below the knee. While the mound is being made, they hold a bundle of reed grass to the north of it. Let him not throw it down after holding it up or after bringing it, but let him set it up in the house (as it represents offspring). Having prepared it he sows barley grain, thinking 'May they ward off (*yavaya*) sin from me!' He covers it over with Avakā plants in order that there may be moisture (*ka* or joy) for him and with *darbha* grass for softness.

They fix pegs round it, a palāśa one in front, a sāmi one on the north corner, a *varaṇa* one behind and a vṛtra⁵⁶⁴ peg on the right (south corner). On the south side they dig two somewhat curved furrows and fill them with milk and water and they dig seven on the left (north) side and fill them with water for sin not to pass beyond. They throw three stones each into the northern furrows and pass over them with Vāj. S. 35. 10 (= Rg. X. 53. 8). They cleanse themselves with Apāmārga⁵⁶⁵ plants with Vāj. S. 35.11; they thereby wipe away sin. They bathe at any place where there is water. With Vāj. S. . 35. 12 he takes water with his joined hands and he throws it in the direction in which he who is hateful may be and thereby overthrows him.⁵⁶⁶ Having bathed and put on garments that have never yet been washed they hold on to the tail of an ox and return to their

564. The meaning of Vṛtra-Saṅku cannot be stated. Kāt. Sr. 21.3.31 reads देहशङ्कु for वृत्रशङ्कु and the Com. explains वृत्रशङ्कु as पापाणशङ्कु.

565. अपामर्गमप किल्बिषमप कुर्यामपो रिपः । अपामर्गं त्वमस्मद्वप दुःप्राणस्य सुवर्णम् ॥ वाज. सं. 35. 11.

566. सुमित्रिया न आप ओषधयः सन्तु दुर्मित्रियास्तस्मै सन्तु योऽस्मान्द्वेष्टि न च ययं द्विष्टमः ॥ वाज. सं. 35 12.



home. They proceed towards the village muttering Vāj. S. 35.14 (ud vayam). When they have arrived, ointments for their eyes and feet are given to them; such indeed are human means of embellishment and therewith they keep off death from themselves. Then in the house having kindled (domestic) fire and laid enclosing sticks of *varana* wood round it he offers by means of a *sruva* (spoon) an oblation to Agni Āyusmat. Vāj. S. 35. 16 serves ⁵⁶⁷ as a *puronuvākya* (invitatory formula). He then offers with Vāj. S. 35.17. He says this so that Agni may guard and protect these men. The sacrificial fee is an old ox, old barley, old chair with a head cushion. He may give more if he desires. This is the procedure in the case of one who has performed *Agnicayana*.⁵⁶⁸ In the case of him who has not performed *Agnicayana*, there is the same procedure for selecting a site and the same performance save that of the fire-altar. Having fetched a clod from the boundary he deposits it midway between the sepulchral mound and the village with Vāj. S. 35. 15 (imam ⁵⁶⁹ jīvebhyah). He then makes this a boundary between the Fathers and the living, so as not to commingle the two.

The Sat. Śr. 29. 1 3 ff. and Baud. P. S. I. 17-20 provide a lengthy procedure for erecting a mound over the bones of one who has performed the special rite of *agnicayana* which is passed over here. In building a mound the urn deposited under a tree is taken out and after the bones are purified in various ways (such as the spilling on them of curds mixed with *vājina* from a jar, the digging up of the clods by means of a plough to which a certain number of oxen are yoked). The Sat. Śr. (29. 1. 3-12) deals with one kind of procedure in which there is no *dhavana*, while 29.1. 13-32 deal with the procedure where *dhavana* is employed and sūtras from 33 deal with procedure common to both *pakṣas* (viz. one without *dhavana* and the other with *dhavana*) The building of a mound with clods (*loṣṭaciti*) in which there is *dhavana* is rather an obscure matter in its nature and had some symbolic significance which is now lost. It may be briefly described as follows:—The members of the deceased's house

567. अग्न आयुषि पयस आ सुवोर्जमिषं च नः । अरे वाधस्व दुच्छुनाम् ॥ वाज. सं. 35. 16.

568. आयुष्मानग्ने हविषा वृधानो वृत्प्रतीको वृत्तयोनिरधि । वृत्तं पीत्वा मधु पितेव पुत्रमभिरक्षतादिमान् स्वाहा ॥ वाज. सं. 35. 17.

569. इमं जीवेभ्यः परिधिं दधामि मैत्रां नु गादपरो अर्थमेतम् । इतं जीवन्ति शतम् पुरुचिरन्तर्मुष्यं दधतां पर्वतेन ॥ वाज. सं. 35. 15.



build a shed or a seat for a bed. They drive in the eastern half or middle or western half of it a three-pronged palāśa peg. In front of it one born of a sūdra woman or a *brahmabandhu* (a brāhmaṇa only in name) sits down for a dialogue. He asks the principal wife (of the deceased) 'will you dwell with me.' That woman replies to him 'I shall not give (what you ask).' The same dialogue takes place on the 2nd day. Then on the third day she replies 'I shall give for one night.' Or if this peculiar practice (of talking about dhavana, which literally means 'sexual intercourse') was intended to last for more days than three she was to give a suitable reply (viz. for three nights or for five nights &c). When the words of the reply are uttered by the wife, the performer deposits the bones (of the deceased) at the root of the peg and places between the three prongs of the peg a jar having a hundred holes at the bottom. The mouth of the jar is covered with a hide and *kuśa* grass. On that jar he sprinkles curds mixed with *vūjina* with the mantra 'Vaiśvānare haviridam' (Tai. Ā. VI. 6.1). When the liquid oozes from the jar on the bones he invokes the two verses 'drapsaś-caskanda' and 'imam samudram' (Tai. Ā. VI. 6). Then the Sat Śr. (29.1. 26-29) provides that four *brahmacārins* or other brāhmaṇas, that are pure, tie up their locks on their heads that are to the right and keep dishevelled those on the left side of the head, they strike their right thighs and also the hide that is wound round the jar of bones, fan it with the fringes of their garments, go round the peg thrice with their left side towards the jar and the people living in the same house (with the deceased) and women also do the same,⁵⁷⁰ that lutes (*viṇā*) are played upon and also conches are blown and other instruments like *nālika*, *tūṇa*, *paṇava* are beaten and there is also dancing, singing and playing on musical instruments. This practice of *dhavana* (symbolic) may go on for five, seven, nine, eleven days, half a month, a month or a year during which time one has to donate food and money (gold &c.) according to one's ability or on the last day according to some.⁵⁷¹ If one may offer a conjecture, this rite was intended to assure the deceased man (represented by the charred bones) that his wife had remained faithful and

570. Compare कौशिकसूत्र 85.10-11 'कस्ये मृजाना इति त्रिः प्रसव्यं प्रकीर्णकेनैव परिचिन्ति दक्षिणानुरूपाधनानाः । एवं मध्यरात्रे अपररात्रे च ।' ; कस्ये मृजाना is ॥ १८. ३. १७.

571. On एकरात्राय ददामीति तृतीये (सत्या. श्रौ. 29. 1. 19.) the वैजयन्ती marks 'एतच्च वचनमात्रम् । न तु तेन सह वासः कार्य एवमेतेनाह'.

unattached to any one else even long after his death. The Baud. P. S. (I. 17.8) also states that female dancers dance in this rite. Various measurements are given in the sūtras for the mounds that are constructed over the bones. Sat. Śr. (29.1.5-6) says ⁵⁷² that the site of the mound (*śmaśānūyatana*) is five *prakramas* on all four sides (or six on the east and five in the other directions, acc. to some). The height of the mound is variously given even in the same sūtra. ⁵⁷³ Sat. Śr. states that the height may be two finger-breadths, or three or four or a *prādeśa* (the distance between the thumb and index finger when both are stretched away) or a *vitasti* (twelve finger-breadths), or it may be up to the knee or thighs or buttocks. The Baud. P. S. I. 18 gives different ⁵⁷⁴ measurements. It states 'if the mound to be raised is as high as the neck towards the west, then it is up to the navel on the east; if it is as high as the navel on the west, then it is as high as the knee on the east; if up to the knee on the west then on the east it is level with the ankle'. The Kauśikasūtra ⁵⁷⁵ (85.4-10) gives certain options viz. the *mandapa* on which the mound is to be erected is either 7, 7, 5, 3 *prakramas* on the south, north, east and west or 9, 9, 7, 5 on the same sides in order or 11, 11, 9, 7; that in the case of those who worshipped the gods, the length was eleven on all sides; that in the case of the Śaunakins the sides (of the mound) are to be measured in odd numbers (of *prakramas*) and the mounds are either round or four-cornered; that such mounds are seen (in those days) and that the grave built for one who had set up vedic fires was to be of the height of a man with arms upraised. These passages show that the graves were generally

572. अपराद्धे श्मशानायतनं विमिमीते पञ्च पञ्च प्रक्रमान् सर्वतः। षट् पुरस्तादित्येके। सत्या. श्रौ. 29. 1. 5-6; the Com. वैजयन्ती explains 'तथा च पञ्च प्रक्रमसंमितं सम-चतुरस्रं लोष्टचित्तेरायतनं भवति। प्रक्रमो द्विपदस्त्रिपदो वेत्युक्तं शुल्बेषु'.

573. श्मशानस्य मात्रा द्व्यङ्गुलं त्र्यङ्गुलं चतुरङ्गुलं प्रादेशो वितस्तिर्जानुदधनमूर्ध्वदधनं स्निग्धं वैषोत्तमा मात्रा श्मशानस्य। सत्या. श्रौ. 29. 1. 70. The com. says 'इदानी-मूर्ध्वप्रमाणमुच्यते। तत्र द्व्यङ्गुलादीनामष्टानामन्यतममूर्ध्वप्रमाणं स्थलस्य तस्योपरीष्टका-श्वेतव्याः ॥'.

574. तस्य मात्रा यदि ग्रीवदधनं पश्चात्पुरस्तात्त्राभिदधनं यदि नाभिदधनं पश्चात्पुरस्ताज्जा-नुदधनं यदि जानुदधनं पश्चात्पुरस्ताद्गुल्फदधनं &c.। श्रौ. पि. सू. I. 18.6; Dr. Griffiths's text reads the exact opposite (I. 15 p. 21) 'यदि ग्रीवदधनं पुरस्तात्त्राभिदधनं पश्चाद्यदि नाभिदधनं पुरस्ताज्जानुदधनं पश्चाद्यदि जानुदधनं पुरस्ताद्गुल्फदधनं पश्चात्'.

575. एकादशभिर्देवदर्शनाम्। अयुग्ममानानि परिमण्डलानि चतुरस्राणि वा शौनकि-नाम्। तथाहि दृश्यन्ते। यावान्पुरुष ऊर्ध्वबाहुस्तावानग्निचितः। कौशिकसूत्र 85.4-10. Research Institute

quadrangular but sometimes round also (acc. to certain schools). The mounds at Lauriya referred to above are round.

Another feature to be noted is that clods were employed (and so the mound was called *loṣṭaciti*) or baked bricks in building the mound or grave over the bones by piling up layers of clay or bricks. In laying down the bricks first on the east, then on the north, then on the west and then on the south, the sūtras such as Sat. Śr. (29.1.53),⁵⁷⁶ Baud. P. S. (I 19.4-7) four verses were respectively employed that are (in order) Rg. X. 18.13, 10, 11, 12 (which are also A. V. XVIII 3.52, 49 50, 51 and Tai. Ā. VI.7.1). One of these (Rg. X. 18.12) speaks of pillars and the other (Rg. X. 18.13) of a post (*sthūnā*). Vide above p. 189. The discovery of two wooden posts in two mounds (at Lauriya above) in which the bones were deposited indicates that the Lauriya mounds followed a vedic custom which is mentioned by the śrautasūtras. The main difference between the Vedic and sūtra ritual on the one hand and the Lauriya mounds on the other is the height of the latter, which betokens a later age than that of the sūtras.

The Sat. Śr. describes in the 28th *praśna* what is called *pitṛmedha* while in *praśna* 29 it describes the *brahmamedha*. The difference between the two is pointed out in Sat. Śr. 29.3.4-18 and it is stated⁵⁷⁷ (in Sat. Śr. 29.3. 20, 22) that the mantras called 'catur-hotārāḥ' are spoken of as *brahma* (in Tai. Br. III. 12.5) and that the procedure of *Brahmamedha* is to be employed only for an *ācārya* or a *śrotriya* and for no one else. The *Vaijayantī* by Mahādeva states (in the Introductory verses) that *praśnas* 28 and 29 of Sat. Śr. are taken from *Bharadvāja*. It may be stated here that the procedure of *dhavana* described above in Sat. Śr. is no longer followed in India in

576. विधुतिलोष्टान् प्रतिदिशमन्वीक्षमाण उपदधात्युत्ते स्तम्भोमीत्येतैः प्रतिमन्त्रं तिल-
मिश्राभिधानाभिस्त्रिः प्रदक्षिणं परिकिरत्येणीर्धाना इति। सत्या. श्रौ. 29. 1. 53, on which
the Com. says अत्रापि पूर्वस्यां दिश्यामः।; अथ क्षेत्रवितृष्णीं चतुरो लोष्टानुपदधात्युत्ते
स्तम्भोमि...मिनोस्त्विति पुरस्तादुपदधाति।...उच्छुश्रमाणा पृथिवी हि तिष्ठसि सदस्रं मित उप हि
अयन्ताम्।...सन्वत्रेति दक्षिणतः। बौ. पि. सू.

577. On 29.3.2. (यं ब्रह्ममेध इत्याचक्षते) of सत्या. श्रौ. the वैजयन्ती explains
'अत्र सहेतुकोऽधिकारः। यस्माद् ब्रह्मसंयुक्तो मेध इति विग्रहः। यज्ञवाचिना मेधशब्देन व्यप-
देशस्तुतिः। चतुर्होतृसंयुक्तो दहनकल्प इत्यर्थः।' On 'तान् परं ब्रह्मेत्याचक्षते' सत्या. श्रौ.
29. 3. 20, the वैजयन्ती says 'तांश्चतुर्होतृन्। परब्रह्मशब्दः सारभूतमन्त्रवाची। ब्रह्म वै चतु-
र्होतार इति।.'

modern times. In the Baud. ⁵⁷⁸ P. S. I. 17 there are passages that bear a close resemblance to some passages of the Sat. Śr. on *dhavana*. Similarly, Kāt. Śr. ⁵⁷⁹ 21. 3. 6 provides (immediately after the months in which mounds were to be constructed) that as many jars should be taken as there are persons performing *dhavana* (or *dhuvana*) and the commentator explains that word as meaning 'fanning'.

It will be seen that the disposal of the dead in ancient India was divided into four stages viz. cremation, collecting the charred bones and depositing them underground in an urn, expiatory rites (called Śāntikarma) and erection of a monument over the bones. The last was not necessarily done in every case. The Andhau Inscription of the time of Rudradāman in the year 52 (probably of the śaka era) refers to the erection of a staff (*laṣṭi* i. e. *yaṣṭi*) as a funeral monument to the memory of a sister, brother and wife by Madana son of Sihila (vide E. I. Vol. 16 pp. 23-25). In a long passage of the Brahma-purāṇa quoted by Aparārka (pp. 885-886) it is stated that the charred bones of a cremated person should be collected in an urn and deposited at the root of a tree or cast in the Ganges, that the place of cremation should be purified with cowdung and water, that a puṣkaraka tree should be planted there or an eḍuka (a structure) should be built over it. ⁵⁸⁰

The Sat Śr. 28. 4. 28 and Baud. P. S. II. 3. 2 state as shown above that the rites immediately after death were performed only up to the depositing of the urn (containing the bones) underground in the case of those householders who had not set up the vedic fires and in the case of married women and that in the case of him who had performed the solemn rite of Agni-cayana a mound with bricks or clods was built up on the bones.

578. एकाहं धुतुयुष्णीयहानि धुतुयुः पञ्चसप्तनवैकादशाहान्यर्धमासं धुतुयुरयुग्मा रात्रीरर्धमासान् मासाच्चतुर्न् संवत्सरं वा संपाद्य संधुतुयुरिति ।...अथान्तरेण ग्रामं च इमशानं चानारं वा विमितं वा कारितं भवति । बो. पि. सू. I. 17. 1 and 3; compare सत्या. श्रौ. noted above p. 252.

579. यावन्तो धुविष्यन्तः स्युस्तावतः कुम्भानादाय छत्राणि चापरिमितानि । कात्या. श्रौ. 21, 3. 6. On this the com. says: 'अग्रे अमात्यानां पुत्रपौत्रादीनामुपवाजनं वक्ष्यति । उपवाजनं धवनम्.'

580. गृहीत्वास्थानि तद्भस्म नीत्वा तोये विनिक्षिपेत् । ततः संमार्जनं भूमौ कर्तव्यं गोमया-
म्बुभिः ।...भूमेराच्छादनार्थं तु वृक्षः पुष्करकोऽथवा । एडुको वा प्रकृत्यस्तत्र शर्वः स्वयं धुभिः ॥
ब्रह्मपुराण q. by अपरार्क p. 886; the same passage is quoted in रघुनाथ's Com-
mentary on त्रिशङ्कोकी (verse 28. p. 253) which explains पुष्करकोः पुष्करिणी
and reads एडुकः for एडुकोः and explains it as चत्वरः.

It is remarkable that while slaves and even attendants were often buried with the master in Babylon and Celtic Britain, there is no similar reference to the burial or cremation of anybody with the deceased even in the ancient procedure found in the Śat. Br. It is only possible to say that in some cases in the pre-Vedic age the wife might have burnt herself along with the deceased husband on the funeral pyre. There is no doubt that later works like the Viṣṇudharmasūtra recommended to women the practice of *Satī* as an option to leading the life of perfect celibacy after the husband's death.

The persons entitled to perform the funeral rites after death (*antyakarmādhikārin*) are the same as those entitled to offer śrāddha. There is a good deal of difference as to the order of the persons so entitled. For example, Gautama (Dh.S. 15. 13-14) states 'On failure of sons the sapindas (e. g. brother, brother's son), the sapindas of the mother (e. g. maternal uncle or his son) and pupils may perform śrāddha for the deceased; in default of these the family priest and the ācārya (veda teacher).' Śaṅkha says⁵⁸¹ 'The offering of piṇḍa and water should be done by the son for the father; in default (i. e. absence or death) of the son, the wife (of the deceased) should offer, but in default of her the full brother.' The Viṣṇupurāṇa⁵⁸² provides: 'the son, grand-son, great grandson (of the deceased), the offspring of the brother (of the deceased), the offspring of a sapinda become entitled to offer (piṇḍa).' The Mārkaṇḍeya-purāṇa provides (30. 19-21, chap. 27. 19-23 of the Venk. ed.) 'On failure of the sons, sapindas, on failure of them the samānodakas, then the sapindas of the mother, and samānodakas of her, should perform these rites; a daughter's son should perform them (if the man dies sonless), the putrikāputra should perform them for his maternal grand-father; in default of all these, women should perform these rites for their husbands but without Vedic mantras; in default of wife the king should get the rites performed by some one belonging to the family (of the deceased)

581. पितुः पुत्रेण कर्तव्या पिण्डदानोदकक्रिया । पुत्राभावे तु पत्नी स्यात्पत्न्यभावे तु सोदरः ॥ शङ्ख q. by स्मृतिच. II. p. 335, निर्णयसिन्धु III. p. 380.

582. पुत्रः पौत्रः प्रपौत्रो वा तद्वद्वा भ्रातृसन्ततिः । सपिण्डसन्ततिर्वापि क्रियार्हा वृष जायते ॥ तेषामभावे सर्वेषां समानोदकसन्ततिः । मातृपक्षस्य पिण्डेन संचद्धा ये जलेन च कुलद्वयेपि चोत्सजे स्त्रीभिः कार्या क्रिया वृष । सङ्घातान्तर्गतैर्वापि कार्या प्रेतस्य च क्रिया । उत्सज्य बन्धुरिवथानां कारयेदवनीपतिः । विष्णुपुराण III. 13. 31-33 q. by अपरार्क p. 433, स्मृतिच. II. p. 336, परा. मा. I. 2. p. 461, शुद्धितत्त्व p. 383. The विष्णुपुराण mentions the king as the अधिकारी in v. 34.

or by persons of his caste, since the king is the relative of all varṇas.⁵⁸³ There was a close connection between taking the estate of a man and performing the rites after death up to the 10th day. For the doctrines represented by the Mitākṣarā and the Dāyabhāga, vide H. of Dh. vol. III pp. 734-743. Even those that regarded that inheritance was based on relationship by blood and not on the capacity to offer pinda held that it was obligatory on everyone who took the estate of another (including the king who took as the ultimate heir by escheat) to arrange for the rites after death and śrāddha. Viṣṇu⁵⁸⁴ Dh. S. XV. 40 declares 'whoever inherits the estate of a deceased person has to offer pinda to him.' Yāj. II. 127 says the same thing about the Kṣetrajña son (ubhayorapyasau rikthī pinda-dātā ca dharmataḥ).

The Smṛtyarthasāra (p. 94) states the order of *adhikārins* as follows; a competent son is the first *adhikārī* for offering pinda; in default of a son, husband, wife and co-wives; in default of these, the brother's son, the brother, daughter-in-law, daughter, daughter's son, any other *sagotra*, a *sapinda*, a fellow-student, a friend, a pupil, the teacher, any relative and anyone who takes the wealth of the deceased may offer *pinda*. The father is not competent to perform śrāddha rites for his (deceased) son, an elder brother for his younger brother; these may even do so through affection but they cannot perform the *sapindikarāṇa*. Parents may offer pinda to unmarried daughters, and even to married daughters in the absence of another (proper) giver. The daughter's son and the maternal grandfather may offer to each other; the daughter's son to maternal grandmother; the son-in-law and father-in-law to each other, the daughter-in-law to her mother-in-law, brothers among themselves, teacher and pupil to each other. For the order of śrāddhādhikārins, according to the Dāyabhāga, vide H. of Dh.

583. पुत्राभावे सपिण्डास्तु तदभावे सहोदकाः । मातुः सपिण्डा ये च स्युर्ये वा मातुः सहोदकाः ॥ कुर्युरेनं विधिं सम्यगपुत्रस्य सुतासुतः । कुर्युर्मातामहायैवं पुत्रिकातनयास्तथा । सर्वाभावे स्त्रियः कुर्युः स्वभर्तृणाममन्त्रकम् । तदभावे च दृपतिः कारयेत् स्वकुटुम्बिना । तज्जातीयैर्नरैः सम्यग्दाहाद्याः सकलाः क्रियाः । सर्वेषामेव वर्णानां बान्धवो दृपतिर्यतः । मार्कण्डेयपुराण 30. 19-24 (B. I. ed.) q. by स्मृतिच II. p. 336, परा. मा. I 2. p. 463 (reads कारयेत्तस्य रिक्थतः). These verses (पुत्राभावे... दृपतिर्यतः) occur with the addition of a few half verses and variants in the ब्रह्मपुराण 220. 76-80 and the reading of the ब्रह्म (दृपतिः कारयेत्स्वकुटुम्बिना by someone who does not belong to the family of the deceased) is better and makes good sense.

584. मृतस्य रिक्थग्राहिणा येन केनापि राजपर्यन्तेनौर्ध्वदेहिकं दशाहान्तं कुर्यात् । तथा च विष्णुः । यश्चार्थहरः स पिण्डदायी स्मृत इति । व्यवहारमयूख p. 145.

vol. III p. 739. The Nirṇayasindhu⁵⁸⁵ says that in the Kali age only two kinds of sons viz. *aurasa* and *dattaka* are allowed (out of the twelve mentioned by Yāj. II. 128-132) and the order of śrāddhādhikārins is given by it as follows: *aurasa* son, then grandson, then great grandson, then adopted son. If there are many sons then the eldest alone is the *adhikārin*; if the eldest be not present or is *patita*, then the son next to the eldest is the *adhikārin* (and not the youngest). If the sons are divided from each other, then all the rites up to *sapindīkarana* are to be performed by the eldest alone who may make the other sons contribute to the expenses, but the yearly śrāddha may be performed by each son separately. If the sons (of the deceased) are not divided, then all rites including the yearly śrāddha also are to be performed by the eldest alone. When the eldest son not being present, the younger one or the youngest performs the cremation, he should perform all rites up to and including the sixteen śrāddhas, but not *sapindīkarana* and he should wait for one year for the arrival of the eldest. If the eldest comes to know of the death within one year, he alone should perform the *sapindīkarana*. If the eldest son does not come even at the end of one year, then even the youngest may perform *sapindīkarana*. If before the expiry of one year the youngest son or some one other than a son performs the monthly, *anumāsika*, *sapindīkarana* śrāddhas, then the eldest son or a son should again perform these. If there is a grandson who has his *upanayana* performed and there be a son whose *upanayana* is not performed it is the latter who is a preferable *adhikārin*, provided he is either three years old or has the *cūḍā* ceremony performed as stated by Sumantu⁵⁸⁶. Manu II. 172 states that a boy should not repeat the Veda before the performance of *Upanayana* except the mantras that are required for the śrāddha of his deceased father or mother. Such a son may perform with Vedic *mantras* the funeral rites on the death of his father or mother and their yearly and other śrāddhas. If he is unable to repeat the Vedic mantras, he may simply perform the cremation with mantras and the rest may be got performed through another person. In the

585. औरसाभावे पौत्रः तदभावे प्रपौत्रस्तदभावे दत्तकादय इति ज्ञेयम्। निर्णयसिन्धु p. 381, which relies on Manu IX. 137 (= Vas. 17.5 and Viṣṇu 15.46) and Yāj. I. 78. This is opposed to the धर्मसिन्धु p. 368 'दत्तकाभावे पौत्रः पौत्राभावे प्रपौत्रः। अन्ये तु औरसाभावे पौत्रः तदभावे प्रपौत्रः प्रपौत्राभावे दत्तक इत्याहुः'.

586. अद्यपेतोऽपि कुर्वीत मन्त्रवत् पौत्रमेधिकम्। यद्यसौ कृतचूडः स्याद्यादि त्रिवत्सरः ॥ सुमन्तु q. by परा. मा. I. 2 p. 465, निर्णयसिन्धु p. 382, मद. पा. p. 402.



Indological Research Institute
FOUNDED 1917
darkar Oriental Research Institute

same way he should make only the declaration (*saṅkalpa*) of *darśaśrāddha* and *mahālaya* and the rest may be performed by some one else. An adopted son becomes an *adhikārin* for funeral rites and the like only if the *upanayana* has been performed. If there be no lineal descendant up to a great-grandson and also no adopted son, then the wife should perform with mantras the funeral rites and yearly and other *śrāddhas* but if she is unable to repeat the Vedic mantras, then the same rules apply as in the case of an *anupanīta* son. Even if the husband be not divided from his brother, or he be re-united with his brother, it is the wife and not the brother who is to be preferred as having *adhikāra* for *śrāddha*, though the brother gets all the property. Though some of the latest works on *dharmaśāstra* like the *Nirṇayasindhu* ⁵⁸⁷ and *Dharmasindhu* (*bhāryayāpi samantrakam-eva-aurdhvadehikādikam kāryam*) allowed the wife to perform rites after death with vedic mantras, several works such as the *Mārkaṇḍeya-purāṇa* and the *Brahmapurāṇa* did not allow the wife to repeat Vedic mantras (vide note 583 above). In default of the wife, the daughter has the right to perform rites after death if the deceased was separated and not re-united. But if the deceased was joint then his full brother would be the proper *adhikārin* after the wife. Among daughters the married one is preferred, though an unmarried daughter is a preferable heir. In default of daughters, the daughter's son is an *adhikārin*; then a brother, then a brother's son. Among brothers a full brother is preferred to a half brother and if there be both elder and younger brothers, then the younger is preferred for performing rites after death (in order to make as near an approach as possible to the relation of father and son). If there be no younger brother, then even an elder one could be *adhikārin*; in default of full brother, a half brother. Some held that even if the deceased was separate from his brother and had a daughter or daughter's son as heir the funeral rites were to be performed by the brother (and not by the daughter or her son), since a *sagotra* is to be preferred as an *adhikārin* to one of a different *gotra*. If there be no brother, then a full brother's son was to be preferred, then the half brother's son, then father, then mother, then daughter-in-law, then sister. In case of there being

587. असंस्कृतेन पत्न्या च ह्यग्निदानं समन्त्रकम् । कर्तव्यमितरत्सर्वं कार्यदण्डयमेव हि ॥
कात्यायन q. by मद. पा. pp. 402-403, which remarks 'यदा त्वदुपनीतं पुत्रं संपूर्तं पत्नी वा तदाग्निदानमेव समन्त्रकं कार्यम् ।'. This is opposed to the view of the *निर्णयसिन्धु*, *धर्मसिन्धु* and other works.

full sisters, half sisters, younger and older sisters the same rules apply as in the case of brothers; in default of any sister, sister's son. If there be many sister's sons, the rules as to brothers would apply. Then come paternal uncle, his son, other sapindas;⁵⁸⁸ then samānodakas, then other persons born in the same family. In default of these, the sapindas of the mother, such as the maternal grand-father, maternal uncle, maternal uncle's son in that order; in default of the sapindas of the mother, the sons of the deceased's paternal or maternal aunt; in default of these the *pitr-bandhus* such as the sons of the father's father's sister, of the father's mother's sister, of father's maternal uncle; then the *mātr-bandhus* such as mother's father's sisters's son; in default of these, a disciple (of the deceased); in default of disciple, son-in-law of the deceased (or the father-in-law of the deceased); in default of these, a friend; in default, any one who takes the wealth of a brāhmaṇa (deceased); if the deceased was other than a brāhmaṇa the king (who took the wealth of everyone dying heirless, except the wealth of a brāhmaṇa) who arranges for funeral rites through another.

In the case of women the following order of those entitled to perform rites of a deceased woman is given in the *Dharma-sindhu* (p. 370); If the female be unmarried then her father is the *adhikārin*, then her brother and the like; if the woman was married, her son, then her co-wife's son, then co-wife's grandson and then great-grandson; in default of these, the husband; in default of husband, daughter, then daughter's son; then husband's brother; then husband's brother's son; then daughter-in-law; then (the deceased) woman's father; then her brother; then her brother's son and the rest.

An adopted son should perform the śrāddha of his natural father if the latter left no son or other *adhikārī*. If a brahmacārin dies, his monthly, yearly and other śrāddhas should be performed by his father and mother. A brahmacārin may carry the dead body of his parents, or of his maternal grand-father, *upādhyāya* and *ācārya* and perform the cremation and other rites; but if another *adhikārin* is available, he should not do these even for the parents and the other three. A brahmacārin

588. The word *sapinda* here means a man of the same gotra as the deceased but within seven degrees of the common ancestor, tracing relation through males only; a *samānodaka* means one of the same gotra from 8th to the 14th degree descended from a common ancestor tracing descent through males only and *gotraja* means a relative of the same gotra as the deceased but beyond the 14th degree from the common ancestor.

should not at all carry the dead body of any one except of the above five or perform the cremation and other rites for any one else. If a brahmacārin performed all the rites for ten days he had to observe āśauca for ten days, but if he performed only the cremation he had to observe āśauca only for one day. Even while in mourning his obligatory acts do not stop; but he should not eat the food cooked for his relatives that are in mourning nor should he dwell among them; if he did (both these) he had to undergo prāyaścitta and perform upanayana again.

It is somewhat curious that Baudhāyana, the Lingapurāṇa (quoted in Śrāddhaprakāśa pp. 361-371), the Mārkaṇḍeya-purāṇa, the Pitrdayitā (p. 82) and several other works allow man himself while living to perform his own rites after death (antyeṣṭi).⁵⁸⁹ This will be dealt with briefly later on under śrāddha. Further, if a man became patita and refused to undergo prāyaścitta, he was driven out of the Hindu fold by the procedure of ghaṭasphoṭa (vide H. of Dh. vol. II pp. 387-388), and Gaut. Dh. S. 20.2 and Manu XI. 182-183 provide that such a man was to be held to be dead and his relatives were to perform all rites for him such as offering water and śrāddha and were also to observe āśauca for him.⁵⁹⁰

Many commentators and digests quote certain verses of the Viṣṇupurāṇa (III. 13. 34-39) wherein the rites (kriyāḥ) after death performed for a person are enumerated as falling into three classes, viz. pūrva, madhyama and uttara. The rites from cremation up to the end of the 12th day are called pūrva, the śrāddhas performed monthly and sapinḍikarāṇa and ekoddiṣṭa are called madhyama rites and those that are performed after sapinḍikarāṇa, when the deceased has reached the position of pitr after being a preta, are designated uttara.⁵⁹¹ The pūrva and

589. अन्त्येष्टिमात्मनः कृत्वा शास्त्रतश्चौर्ध्वदेहिकम् ॥ मार्कण्डेयपुराण 3.45 (B. I. ed.).

590. तस्य विद्यागुरुन्योनिसम्बन्धांश्च संनिपात्य सर्वाण्युदकादीनि प्रेतकार्याणि कुर्युः । गो. ध. सू. 20.2.

591. पूर्वाः क्रिया मध्यमाश्च तथा चैवोत्तराः क्रियाः । त्रिप्रकाराः क्रिया ह्येतास्तासां भेदं कृणुष्व मे ॥ आद्याहाद् द्वादशाहाच्च मध्ये याः स्युः क्रिया मताः । पूर्वास्ता मध्यमा मासि मास्येकोद्दिष्टसंज्ञिताः ॥ प्रेते पितृत्वमापजे सपिण्डीकरणादनु । क्रियन्ते याः क्रियाः पित्र्याः प्रोच्यन्ते ता चोत्तराः ॥ पितृमातृसपिण्डीश्च समानसलिलैस्तथा । तत्सङ्घातान्तर्गतैश्चैव राज्ञा वा धनहारिणा ॥ पूर्वाः क्रिया मध्यमाश्च पुत्राद्यैरेव चोत्तराः । दौहित्रैर्वा नरश्रेष्ठ कार्यास्तत्तन-यैस्तथा ॥ मृताहनि च कर्तव्याः स्त्रीणामप्युत्तराः क्रियाः । प्रतिसंवत्सरं राज्ञेकोद्दिष्टविधानतः ॥ विष्णुपुराण III. 13. 34-39, q. by अपरार्क pp. 433-434, स्मृतिच. II, p. 336; पारा. मा. I. 2 p. 464, मद. पा. pp. 478-79, निर्णयसिन्धु p. 387. The printed edition of the Viṣṇupurāṇa reads आद्याहव्यायुधादिस्पर्शाद्यन्तास्तु याः क्रियाः । It has been provided in the Viṣṇupurāṇa III. 13. 21 that after the brāhmanas are fed on the 11th day after death the relatives should touch water, weapons, whip or a staff respectively according as they belong to the four varnas and then they become pure.

madhyama rites of the deceased may be performed by the father, the mother, sapindas, samānodakas and those belonging to the deceased's group (gotra) or by the king if he takes the wealth of the deceased. But the rites called *uttara* are to be performed only by the son, grandson, great-grandson, daughter's son or the latter's sons. Even in the case of women, on the day of the anniversary of death every year an *ekoddiṣṭa śrāddha* may be performed for them. There is also another classification of *śrāddhas* viz. *Navaśrāddha* (those rites up to ten days after death), *Navamiśra* (those performed after ten days up to six seasons), *Purāṇa* (those performed after a year).^{591 a}

As stated above, for ten days after death a handful of water mixed with sesame was to be offered to the deceased on a stone (*aśman*) placed on *kuśa* grass and one large *piṇḍa* (called *pūraka-piṇḍa*) was to be offered on *kuśa* grass everyday with the face to the south and the sacred thread on the right shoulder (*prācīnāviti*) for the purpose of freeing the departed from the state of being a *preta*. On the *piṇḍa*, water mixed with sesame was to be offered and leaves of *Bhrīgarāja* (called *mākā* in Marathi) and *Tulasī* also. The verse 'anādi-nidhano' was to be repeated⁵⁹². The performer throws the *piṇḍa* in water and then bathes. Vide A. K. D. pp. 43-50 and *Antyeṣṭi-paddhati* of *Nārāyaṇa* for detailed treatment of the procedure of these ten days. Besides this, the *Āśvalāyana-grhyapariśiṣṭa*⁵⁹³ III. 6 speaks of five *śrāddhas* called 'nava-

591 a. नवश्राद्धं दशाहानि नवमिश्रं तु षड्भक्तत्वं । अतः परं पुराणं वै त्रिविधं श्राद्ध-मुच्यते ॥ आश्वलायनगृह्यपरिशिष्ट q. by अपरार्क p. 525, निर्णयसिन्धु III. p. 395. अपरार्क (p. 521) says: एकोद्दिष्टमुक्तं तच्च त्रिविधम् । नवं मिश्रं पुराणं च । तत्रैकादशाहान्तं नवम् ॥ तदूर्ध्वमा संवत्सरान्मिश्रम् । तत् उत्तरं पुराणम् । The printed आश्व. गृ. परि. III. 9 (B. I. edition) reads अथैकोद्दिष्टं तत् त्रेधा भवति नवं मिश्रं पुराणं चेत्यन्तर्दशाहे नवं मिश्राणि मासिकानि चतुर्दश्यादौ पुराणानि । The स्मृतिच. on आशौच p. 175 quotes प्रजापति 'नवश्राद्धं दशाहान्तं मिश्रं संवत्सरादधि । एकादशाहमारभ्य कुर्यात्प्रेतत्वमुक्तये ॥.'

592. अनादिनिधनो देवः शङ्खचक्रगदाधरः । अक्षय्यः पुण्डरीकाक्षः प्रेतमोक्षप्रदो भव ॥ quoted by अन्त्येष्टिपद्धति of नारायण.

593. अथ नवश्राद्धानि दशाहेषु विषमदिनेष्वामेन कुर्यात्प्रेतमभिसन्धाय ब्राह्मण-मुदङ्मुखमुपवेश्य तस्मिंस्तूष्णीं तिलानवकीर्णं काश्यपगोत्रं देवदत्तामुष्मिन्महानि एतदामं त्वामुप-तिष्ठतामिति तदहःसम्बन्धेनोत्सृज्य पिण्डं चामन्योक्तवत्प्रदाय स्नायादेष विधिरन्तर्दशाहकर्मणि । आश्वलायनगृह्यपरिशिष्ट III. 6. The नवश्राद्धs are एकोद्दिष्ट and several details which occur in other श्राद्धs are omitted here and the word पितृ is not to be employed, but only the word प्रेत. The गरुडपुराण (II. 29. 35-37) enumerates eighteen details that were to be omitted in प्रेतश्राद्धs. Vide शुद्धिप्रकाश pp. 215, 221; 'तथाचाङ्गिराः । प्रथमेद्दि तृतीयेद्दि पञ्चमे सप्तमे तथा । नवमेकादशे चैव तच्च श्राद्धमुच्यते ।' q. by मद. पा. p. 618, the मिता. on या. I. 252 (without name) and भट्टोजि on चतुर्विंश. p. 168.

śrāddhas' (or Viśamaśrāddhas) performed on the uneven days (i. e. 1st, 3rd, 5th, 7th and 9th) with uncooked food. According to the Garuḍapurāṇa (Pretakhaṇḍa 34. 36 which speaks of six śrāddhas on uneven days from 1st day to 11th) and Āpastamba they are six (Dharmasindhu p. 464, Nirṇayasindhu p. 588, Śuddhiprakāśa pp. 214-216, Śrāddhatattva p. 619) and according to others there is an option. Āngiras and Vasiṣṭha speak of six Navaśrāddhas on uneven days from the 1st to the 11th, while Baud. Pitrmedha S. II. 10. 6 speaks of five. Some prescribe the placing of some cooked food sprinkled with ghee on the hand of a brāhmaṇa. Others do not approve of this. They prescribe the placing of uncooked corn in front of a brāhmaṇa or in front of a figure of a brāhmaṇa made with kuśas (called *cata* in Marathi). The Garuḍapurāṇa (II. 5. 67 ff) holds that the navaśrāddhas are those performed at the place where a man died, where the funeral procession rested on the way, when the bones were collected and those performed on the 5th, 7th, 8th, 9th, 10th and 11th day. The Śuddhiprakāśa p. 214 quotes similar views from Kātyāyana and the view of Vṛddha-Vasiṣṭha that the deceased does not become free from the status of a *preta*, unless the *navaśrāddhas* are performed. The Garuḍapurāṇa, Pretakhaṇḍa (chap. 34. 27-28, 44, 48) states that by the piṇḍas offered for ten days the several limbs of a subtle body are provided for the departed spirit which at first wanders like thin air. There are several differing views on the navaśrāddhas which are passed over here. On the uneven days if navaśrāddha is performed two piṇḍas will be offered (one the daily one and the other, of the navaśrāddha). The Padma (Śrṣṭikhaṇḍa 10. 19) prescribes that one should not partake of the food at *navaśrāddha* and on doing so should undergo the cāndrāyana expiation.

In modern times, after the rites of the first day of cremation and of the collection of the bones, the rites for the dead generally begin on the 10th day. The performer goes to the place where the rites of the first day were performed, makes a *sankalpa* and offers a piṇḍa with the words 'May this piṇḍa wait upon the *preta* named N. N. and of the gotra (Kāśyapa &c.) in order that hunger and thirst affecting the *preta* may be removed'. Then he offers water mixed with sesame, places leaves of *bhṛṅgarāja* and *tulasi*, repeats the verse *anādinidhano*' (note 592), removes the piṇḍa to another place from the place where it was offered. Then he prepares a *vedi* with



loose earth with a triangular shape, purifies it by means of cowdung, decks it with turmeric powder and places thereon five jars full of water and on each of them a ball of rice. Then he offers a request to the middle jar with the words 'May this pinda together with the jar of water wait upon the *preta* by name N. N., of such and such a gotra in order that his hunger and thirst may be allayed'. There is a prayer before the jars to the east, south, west and north respectively to those whom the *preta* had befriended, to Yama, to crows, to Rudra respectively. There is a difference of view here, some prescribing four jars, some three, while others offer a pinda with the jar of water only on the place meant for the *preta* and mere pinda to others. Then water is offered over the pinda and to each of the above he offers sandals, umbrella, banner, bread. Then the performer waits till a crow seizes or eats the pinda placed to the west⁵⁹⁴. Then the *aśman* (stone) is anointed with oil and cast in water. Then the performer requests the relatives, who offer one handful or three handfuls of water to the *preta* on the bank of the reservoir of water. Then the sons and others according to usage cut their hair and nails. Then all persons of the same gotra, according to the custom of the country, bathe with sesame and myrobalan, wear pure and dried garments, go home and take their meals there.

594. In modern times great importance is attached by many people to a crow touching and pecking at the pinda food. There is a common belief that if a crow does not touch the pinda then the deceased had some intense wish at his death that was unfulfilled and it is certainly heart-rending and a source of poignant sorrow even for passers-by to see the relatives waiting for hours and tempting the crow or crows to come down from trees with dainty pieces of *copra* and other things and also loudly declaring that they would do this or that and fulfil the last desire of the deceased. Often it so happens that no crow touches the pinda food in honour of the deceased, a very old and venerable man, and relatives are very much distressed to find that their venerable ancestor who could have hardly any ambition or desire at the advanced age of 80 or 90 (except to die speedily), judging from the reluctance of the crow, had some unfulfilled desire. Often the crow immediately touches the pinda offered to one who died very young (say 25 or 30 years old) and who would naturally be presumed to have many unfulfilled desires. In such cases the relatives feel very much relieved at the thought that their young relative passed away without any unfulfilled desires. The *Suddhikaumudī* refers to this offering to crows as a usage.

तथाचारात् काकबलिदानम् । पिण्डशेषमक्षं पात्रे कृत्वा अमुकगोत्रस्य प्रेतस्यामुकशर्मणो विशेषतुल्ये यमद्वारावस्थितवायसाय एष बलिर्न म इत्युत्सृज्य कृताञ्जलिः—काकं त्वं यमद्वारासि गृहाण बलिमुत्तमम् । यमलोकगतं प्रेतं त्वमाप्सायितुमर्हसि ॥ काकाय काकपुरुषाय वायसाय महात्मने । त्वय्यं बलिं प्रयच्छामि प्रेतस्य तृप्तिहेतवे ॥ इति पठेत् । शुद्धिकौमुदी p. 135.



Some of the Purāṇas and medieval digests assert that after a man dies, the soul or spirit assumes what is called an *ātivāhika* ^{594 a} body consisting of three of the five elements (viz. fire, wind and *ākāśa*) that rise up from the dead body (while two viz. earth and water remain below), that such a body is obtained only by men and not by other beings, that with the aid of the *piṇḍas* that are offered to the departed at the time of cremation and during ten days thereafter, the soul secures another body called *bhogadeha* (a body for enjoying the *piṇḍas* offered) and that at the end of a year when *sapīṇḍīkaraṇa* is performed, the soul secures a third body wherewith the spirit reaches heaven or hell according to the nature of his actions. The word 'ātivāhika' is comparatively an ancient one. It occurs in Vedāntasūtra IV. 3.4 (*ātivāhikās-tal-līngāt*). But there the meaning is somewhat different. The Upaniṣads speak of the soul as going by the path of *arcis*, day &c. The sūtra says that these (viz. *arcis*, *ahāḥ* &c.) are superintending deities that take the soul gradually onward by the path that leads to *Brahma*. Govindānanda in his commentary on the Prāyaścittaviveka (pp. 13-14) holds that there are only two bodies (and not three as appears at first sight), viz. the *ātivāhika* or *pretadeha* and the *bhogadeha*. The belief was that the man on whose death no *piṇḍa* was offered or the sixteen *śrāddhas* (to be described below) were not performed remained for all time in the condi-

594 a. तत्क्षणादेव गृह्णाति शरीरमातिवाहिकम्। ऊर्ध्वं व्रजन्ति भूतानि त्रीण्यश्मात्तस्य विग्रहात्॥ आतिवाहिकसंज्ञोऽसौ देहो भवति भार्गव। केवलं तन्मनुष्याणां नान्येषां प्राणिनां क्वचित्॥ प्रेतपिण्डैस्ततो दत्तैर्देहमाप्नोति भार्गव। भोगदेहमिति प्रोक्तं क्रमादेव न संशयः। प्रेतपिण्डा न दीयन्ते यस्य तस्य विमोक्षणम्। इमं शान्तिकेभ्यो देवेभ्य आकल्पं नैव विद्यते॥ तत्रास्य यातना घोराः शीतवातातपोद्भवाः। ततः सपिण्डीकरणे बान्धवैः स कृते नरः। पूर्णं संवत्सरे देहमतोन्यं प्रतिपद्यते॥ ततः स नरके याति स्वर्गे वा स्वेन कर्मणा। विष्णुधर्मोत्तरपुराण quoted by माय. वि. pp. 13-14, and छुद्धितत्त्व p. 324. गोविन्दानन्द explains त्रीणि भूतानि as 'पृथिव्यप्तेजांसि' and thus differs from रघुनन्दन. The गरुडपुराण (प्रेतखण्ड chap. 10. 79. ff) says the same: 'उत्क्रामन्तं... ज्ञानचक्षुषः॥ आतिवाहिकमित्येवं वायवीयं वदन्ति हि। ...पुत्रादिभिः कृताश्चेत्स्युः पिण्डा दश दशाहिकाः। पिण्डजेन तु देहेन वायुजश्चैकतां व्रजेत्। पिण्डतो यदि नैव स्याद्वायुजोर्हति यातनाम्॥' The first verse (उत्क्रामन्तं) is गीता 15.10. The ब्रह्मपुराण states: विहाय सुमहत्कृत्स्नं शरीरं पाञ्चभौतिकम्॥ अन्यच्छरीरमादत्ते यातनीयं स्वकर्मजम्।...स्वशरीरं समुत्सृज्य वायुभूतस्तु गच्छति। chap. 214. 29-30 and 51; निमित्तं किञ्चिदासाद्य देही प्राणैर्विमुच्यते॥ अन्यच्छरीरमादत्ते यातनीयं स्वकर्मभिः। अग्निपुस्तक 230. 2-3; गृह्णाति तत्क्षणाद्योगे शरीरं चातिवाहिकम्। आकाशवायुतेजांसि विग्रहाद्देहमाप्नोति॥ जलं मही च पञ्चत्वमापन्नः पुरुषः स्मृतः। आतिवाहिकदेहं तु यमद्वृता नयन्ति तम्॥ 371. 9-10. The मार्कण्डेय (10. 63-64) says 'वाय्वग्निसारी तद्रूपं देहमन्यं प्राप्नोति'। तत्कर्मजं यातनार्थं न मातापितुसम्भवम्॥'.

tion of a *piśāca*, from which he would not be freed even if numerous other *śrāddhas* were later on offered for him.⁵⁹⁵ The *Brahmapurāṇa* calls the body 'yātāniya' (i. e. one that has to undergo trials and torments), while the *Agnipurāṇa* calls it 'yātāniya' or 'ātivāhika' and asserts that this body is made up of the elements of *ākāśa*, *vāyu* and *tejas*. The *Padmapurāṇa* (II. 67. 98) states that persons who commit certain sins secure after death a body similar in shape to the physical body for undergoing torments. The underlying conception was that when the gross body was destroyed after death by cremation, burial or other methods an intermediate subtile body had to be built up before the departed soul was compelled to assume another body in a fresh incarnation. The subtile body was gradually built up, as stated by the *Mārka.* 10.73, by the rites performed on death and on several days after death. Though this conception is very clearly set forth in the *Purāṇas* it should not be supposed that it was altogether a new one. It had its roots deep down in the earliest Vedic period and was implicit in some of the hymns as indicated by *Rg.* X. 15. 14, X. 16. 4-5 translated above. Though in the *Tai. S.* I. 8. 5. 1-2 and in passages of the *Tai. Br.* and *Śat. Br.* to be set out later on it is said that the offerings are made to the paternal ancestors, it does not follow that the *brāhmaṇas* were not fed at the same time on the food prepared for being offered to the ancestors, just as in the solemn Vedic sacrifices offerings were made to the gods, *Agni*, *Indra*, *Prajāpati*, *Viṣṇu* and others and at the same time priests engaged in the sacrifices were fed and given presents (*dakṣiṇā*). Therefore, it need not be necessarily supposed that feeding the *brāhmaṇas* at *śrāddha* was a later idea and offering food to the dead was the original idea.

595. यस्यैतानि न दीयन्ते प्रेतश्चाद्भ्यानि षोडश । पिशाचत्वं भुवं तस्य दत्तैः शतैरपि ॥ यम प. by आ. क्रि. कौ. p. 362 and तत्त्वार्थकौमुदी on प्रा. वि. p. 14. Almost the same verse is लिखितस्मृति V. 16 and गरुडपुराण, प्रेतखण्ड 34. 131.

CHAPTER VIII

SUDDHI

Śuddhi (purification) is a very comprehensive topic including within it purification after āśauca (impurity on birth and death), purification of a person after contact with an impure object or on account of certain occurrences, purification of pots, wells, food &c., after they are polluted. Āśauca, however, is the most important subject under śuddhi and therefore the Śuddhi-kaumudī defines 'śuddhi' as 'the state of being fit for or capable of performing the rites that are understood from the Veda.'⁵⁹⁶ The Smṛtis employ the word śuddhi in relation to purification after āśauca. For example, Manu V. 57 starts by saying that he will expound purification after a man is dead (pretasuddhi) and purification of things (dravyasuddhi). Manu V. 83 (= Dakṣa VI. 7) avers that a brāhmaṇa becomes pure after ten days (on the death or birth of a relative), a kṣatriya after twelve &c. The Parāśara-smṛti starts chapter three by declaring 'I shall expound śuddhi on birth and death.' Yaj. III. 14, 25 also employ the word śuddhi. Therefore āśauca on birth and death will be first dealt with.

The word āśauca is formed from śuci (pure) according to Pāṇ. V. 1. 131^{596 a} and Pāṇ. VII. 3. 30 (vide note below) with the negative particle *na* (a). In some smṛtis such as that of Devala the form 'āśucya' also is found (see Hāratalā pp. 2, 9, 36 in quotations from Devala^{596 b}). Another word which is often used as a synonym for āśauca is 'agha'. It has been seen above (p. 6) that the word *agha* means 'sin' in the Vedic Literature (as in Rg. I. 97. 1-8, X. 117.6). But in the Śān. Śr. IV. 15. 11,

596 वेदबोधितकर्माहिता शुद्धिः । शु. कौ. p. 1.

596 a. इगन्ताच्च लघुपूर्वात् । पा. V. 1. 131 (अण् अनुवर्तते)—शुचेर्भावः कर्म वा शौचम् । न शौचमशौचम् । This is one way of explaining the word. We may also explain न शुचि अशुचि, अशुचेर्भावः कर्म च आशौचं or अशौचं according to सनः शुची श्वरक्षेत्रजकुशलनिपुणानाम् । (पा. VII. 3. 30).

596 b. जनने मरणे नित्यमाशुच्यमनुधावति । देवल q. by हारलता p. 2. अशुच्यं दशरात्रं तु सर्वत्राप्यपरे विदुः । देवल q. by शुद्धिप्र. p. 41.

Manu V. 84 (na vardhayed-aghāhāni) the word 'agha' has come to mean the same thing as āśauca.⁵⁹⁷ The Padmapurāṇa II. 66. 73-74 states that since the outlets of the body always emit mucus, urine &c. it is always impure.

The Mit. on Yāj. III. 1 defines⁵⁹⁸ āśauca as an emergent attribute attaching to a person, which is got rid of by lapse of time or a bath and the like and which is the cause of the positive direction to offer (to a deceased person) pinda, water and the like and of the cessation of Vedic study and other actions. The Mit. adds that āśauca is not merely the absence of the privilege or power to do religious acts, since even those who have incurred impurity (on death &c.) are enjoined to do certain religious acts such as offering water (to the deceased). This definition of the Mit. appears to be an echo of the Garuḍa-purāṇa (pretakhanda) 5. 9 and is probably based on a verse of the work called Saṅgraha. Haradatta⁵⁹⁹ on Gautama 14. 1 states that āśauca may be defined as 'the absence of the privilege to perform religious acts, unfitness for being one whose food may be partaken of, untouchability and the loss of the privilege to make religious gifts.' A comparatively early writer Bhaṭṭācārya,⁶⁰⁰ appears to have defined 'śuddhi' as the 'removal of sin' or as 'being fit for performing religious acts.' This was accepted by the Smṛti-candrikā, but rejected by Nandapāṇḍita, commentator of Śaḍaśīti (pp. 2-3). Even the Mit. (on Yāj. III. 18) emphasizes that āśauca has two characteristics, viz. it takes away the privilege of performing

597. नाघाहानि वर्धयेयुरिति ह स्माह कौषीतकिः । शां. श्रौ. IV. 15. 11. The com. says 'अघशङ्केनात्र मरणमुच्यते । येष्वहःसु सपिण्डमरणं संवृत्तं तान्यघाहानि मरणादारभ्य-करात्रादीनि यानि व्रतैर्व्याप्तान्युक्तानि तानि न वर्धयेयुः नाभ्यधिकारानि कुरुः । कर्मानधिकार-व्रतैर्न व्यामयुः ॥'.

598. आशौचशङ्केन च कालस्नानापनोद्यः पिण्डोदकदानादिविधेः अध्ययनादि-पर्युदासस्य च निमित्तभूतः पुरुषगतः कश्चनातिशयः कथ्यते न पुनः कर्मानधिकारमात्रम् । मितः on या. III, 1; अपनोद्यं त्विदं कालादिभिराशु निषेधकम् । पिण्डाध्ययनदानादेः पुंगतोति-शयो हि तत् ॥ गरुड (प्रेतखण्ड 5.9); निमित्तं पिण्डदानादेः पुरुषस्थमशुद्धिद्विद्वत् । कालस्नानाप-नोद्यं यत्तदाशौचमितीर्यते ॥ संग्रह q. by स्मृतिषु. (आशौच) p. 477.

599. किं पुनरिदमाशौचलक्षणम् । कर्मण्यनधिकारोऽभोज्यान्नताऽस्पृश्यता दानादिष्वन-धिकारिता । हरदत्त on गौ. 14. 1.

600. शुद्धिशुद्धार्थस्तु पापक्षयः शुद्धिर्धर्मयोग्यत्वमेव वा इति भट्टाचार्योक्तो द्रष्टव्यः । पापक्षयः सपिण्डादौ जनने मरणे वा तत्सम्बन्ध्यादादुत्पन्नस्य पापविशेषस्य क्षयः । धर्मयोग्यत्व-दानादिधर्मानुष्ठानार्हत्वम् । एवं शुद्धिशुद्धार्थो मतभेदेन द्विधा विवृतो भट्टाचार्यैः । स्मृतिषु. (आशौचकाण्ड p. 2). स्मृतिषु. p. 477 mentions this view.



religious acts and it renders a person untouchable. The Smṛtimuktāphala follows this. Rudradhara in his Śuddhiviveka (D. C. ms. No. 309 of 1887-91 folio 1) says that śuddhi is a special attribute which brings about a capacity or privilege for the performance of all dharmas, while aśuddhi is an attribute opposed to śuddhi and arises on the occasion of the birth of a sapinda or the like.⁶⁰¹

Āśauca is of two kinds, viz. that arising on birth⁶⁰² (and so called *jananāśauca* or *sūtaka*) and that arising on death (and therefore called *śāvāśauca* or *mṛtakāśauca* or *maranāśauca*). *Śāva* is derived from *śava* (meaning a corpse). The word *sūtaka* occurs in the⁶⁰³ Ait. Br. (chap. 32. 8) and is there probably used in the sense of impurity on both birth and death. There it is said that if an āhitāgni partook of food from the house of him who was affected by *sūtaka*, then the *prāyaścitta* was to offer a *puroḍāśa* cooked on eight potsherd to Agni Tantumat. Tantu means also 'son or progeny' and so it may be argued that it is an indication that *sūtaka* is used in the Ait. Br. in the sense of impurity on birth. The word *sūtaka* is used in the smṛtis in three senses: (1) impurity on birth (vide Manu V. 58); (2) impurity both on birth and death, as in Gobhilasmṛti III. 60 and 63;⁶⁰⁴ (3) impurity on death alone (as in Dakṣa VI. 1 and Gobhilasmṛti III. 48)⁶⁰⁵. In some of the modern vernaculars (such as Marathi) the word 'sūtaka' is used in the 3rd sense alone. In each of these two divisions there are two varieties viz. where the duration is brief or comparatively long (Śaḍaśīti, verse 2).

A question arises why birth and death should cause impurity to the members of the family or to relatives. Only a

601. शुद्धिस्तावदखिलधर्माधिकारापादको धर्मविशेषः । अशुद्धिस्तु तद्विरोधी धर्मविशेष एव । स च सपिण्डजन्मादिनिमित्तकः । शुद्धिविवेक of रुद्रधर.

602. आशौचं द्विविधं कर्मानधिकारलक्षणं स्पृश्यत्वलक्षणं च । स्मृतिषु. (p. 477).

603. तदाहुर्न आहिताग्निर्यदि सूतकान् प्राश्नीयात्का तत्र प्रायश्चित्तिरिति । सोऽग्नये तन्तुमतेऽष्टकपालं पुरोडाशं निर्वपेत्तस्य याज्यानुवाक्ये तन्तुं तन्वन्नरजसो भानुमान्वह्य-क्षानहो नह्यतनोत सोम्या इति । आहुतिं वाहवनीये जुहुयादग्नये तन्तुमते स्वाहेति । ऐ. ब्रा. 32. 8. तन्तुं तन्वन्न is Rg. X. 53. 6 and अक्षानहा is Rg. X. 53. 7.

604. सूतके कर्मणां त्यागः सन्ध्यादीनां विधीयते । होमः श्रौतस्तु कर्तव्यः शुद्धिकालेनापि वा फलैः ॥ गोभिलस्मृति called छन्दोगपरिशिष्ट q. by हारलता p. 6, शु. कौ. and श्रौतम्. p. 83.

605. सूतकं तु प्रवक्ष्यामि जन्ममृत्युनिमित्तकम् । यावज्जीवं तृतीयं तु यथावदनुपूर्वशः ॥ दक्ष. VI. 1; अस्थनामलाभे पाणानि शकलान्युक्तयावृता । भर्जयेदस्थिसंख्यानि ततः प्रभृति सूतकम् ॥ गोभिल III. 48. The 4th pāda of the latter is q. by हारलता p. 2.



few have to say anything on this question. Hārīta says: 'the family incurs death impurity because by death the family feels overwhelmed (or frustrated), while when a new life appears the family increases (and there is gratification or joy)' ⁶⁰⁶.

The literature on Śuddhi (including āśauca) is very extensive. Apart from the sūtras, smṛtis and Purāṇas there are numerous digests dealing with the subject at great length. Some of them have been printed. The smṛtis contain a mass of contradictory dicta to such an extent and different from the usages of medieval times that the Mit. on Yāj. III. 22 after quoting the views of Parāśara, Śātātapa, Vasistha and Āngiras on the periods for which impurity had to be observed by persons belonging to the four varṇas refuses to evolve order out of them and remarks that the usages in its day were different from the dicta of those sages ⁶⁰⁷. The Mādana-pārijāta (p. 392) agrees with the Mit. and also suggests other modes of dealing with the conflict. Two examples may be cited of the way in which different smṛtis approach the same problem. Atri 83, Parāśara III. 5 and Dakṣa VI. 6 provide that a brāhmaṇa who has consecrated the three Vedic fires and has mastered the Veda becomes free from impurity (on birth and death) in one day, one who has merely mastered the Veda (but has not consecrated the śrauta fires) in three days and one who is devoid of both in ten days. Manu V. 59 gives various options viz. 10 days, 4 days, 3 days, 1 day but does not state explicitly to whom his remarks apply. Bṛhaspati ^{607 a} (q.

606. अस्य च कुलव्यापित्वे कारणमाह हारीतः । प्रेताभिभूतत्वाच्छावमाशौचं जीवे वृद्धियोगेन कुलस्य भवति । इति । जायमानस्त्रियमाणयोः सम्बन्धिनं सन्तोषदासन्तोषदाभ्यां वृद्धिक्षययोगाद्वा कुलव्याप्याशौचं भवतीत्यर्थः । शुद्धिचन्द्रिका on षडशीति p. 4. The स्मृतिच. (आशौच) p. 11 reads somewhat differently "नन्वधरूपाशौचं सपिण्डव्यतिरिक्तानां न भवति कारणाभावादित्याशङ्क्याह हारीतः 'प्रेताभिभूतत्वाच्छावमाशौचं जाते वृद्धियोगेन केनेति मीमांसन्ते नाभ्यच्छिन्नकालानामुच्छेदभूयस्त्वाच्च कुलस्याशौचं भवति' इति ।"

607. इत्येवमनेकोच्चावचाशौचकल्पा दर्शिताः । तेषां लोके समाचाराभावान्नातीव व्यवस्थाप्रदर्शनमुपयोगीति नात्र व्यवस्था प्रदर्श्यते । मिता on या. III. 22 ; लोकसमाचारादनादरणीयमिति केचन । अथवा देशाचारतो व्यवस्था । उत गुणवदगुणवद्विषये यथाक्रमं न्यूनाधिककल्पाश्रयेण निर्वाहः । किंवा आपदनापद्मेदेन व्यवस्था । मद. पा. p. 392.

607 a. त्रिरात्रेण विशुध्येत योऽग्निवेदसमन्वितः । पञ्चाहेनाग्निहीनस्तु दशाहं ब्राह्मणव्रतः ॥ बृहस्पति q. by कल्प. (शुद्धि) p. 4, हारलता p. 5 and शु. का. p. 7. आङ्गिरस defines ब्राह्मणव्रत as 'गर्भाधानादिसंस्कारैर्युक्तश्च नियमव्रतैः । नाध्यापयति नाधीते विज्ञेयो ब्राह्मणव्रतः ॥'.



by Hāralatā p. 5 and Haradatta on Gautama 14. 1) states that a brāhmaṇa who is endowed with Veda and śrauta fires becomes pure after three days, one who is devoid of śrauta fires (but is master of the Veda) in five days and one who is only a brāhmaṇa by caste (has not studied the Veda or does not teach it) in ten days. The Śān. Śr. and Manu ⁶⁰⁸ (both quoted above) urge a man not to increase through laziness the number of days for which impurity is to be observed. It is possible that persons claiming to be learned observed impurity for a few days only, while neighbours disputed their claim to this special dispensation in favour of Vedic learning and keeping śrauta fires. The result was that later on a flat number of ten days was prescribed for all brāhmaṇas whether learned or not and the provision for lesser number of days of impurity was relegated to *Kalivarjya* usages. Vide H. of Dh. vol. III, pp. 941-42.

Another example of the dependence of the days of impurity on the caste of the deceased and of varying dicta thereon may be cited. Manu V. 83, Dakṣa VI. 7, Yāj. III. 22, Atri (verse 85), Śaṅkha (15. 2-3), Matsyapurāṇa (18. 2-3), Brahmapurāṇa 220. 63, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 22. 1-4, all lay down periods of 10 days, 12 days, 15 days and a month for impurity among brāhmaṇas, kṣatriyas, vaiśyas and śūdras respectively. Yāj. III. 22 makes the virtuous śūdra observe impurity only for 15 days as a concession. Gaut. (15. 1-4) prescribes 10, 11, 12 days (or half month) and a month respectively for the four varṇas, while Vas. (4. 27-30) gives the periods of 10, 15, 20 and one month for the four varṇas. Prof. D. R. Bhandarkar, in his article on Nāgara brāhmaṇas and Kāyasthas of Bengal, protests that the Kāyasthas of Bengal (owing to social tyranny) still observe āśauca for one month as if they are ordinary śūdras (I. A. for 1932 at p. 71). On the other hand, Āngiras (quoted by the Mit. on Yāj. III. 22) states that Śātātapa declared that all varṇas become purified after ten days whether the impurity is due to birth or death.⁶⁰⁹ Parāśara (III. 9) quoted by the Mit. on Yāj. III. 18

608. On न.वर्धयेदधाहानि (मनु. V. 84) कुल्लुक comments: यस्य तु वृत्तस्तथा-
याद्यपेक्षया पूर्वमर्वाक्संचयनादस्थनाम्-इत्याद्याशौचसङ्कोच उक्तः स निष्कर्म-
इति बुद्ध्या नाशौचदिनानि दशाहादिरूपतया वर्धयेत्संकुचिताशौचदिनेष्वपि।

609. अङ्गिरास्त्वाह-सर्वेषामेव वर्णानां सूतके सूतके तथा। दशाहा-
शातातपोऽब्रवीत् ॥ मिता. on या. III. 22.

provides that a *sapinda* who is 4th in descent from the common ancestor of the deceased and himself becomes pure after ten days, one who is 5th after 6 days, one who is 6th in descent after four days and one who is 7th after one day. The Mit. says that this should be discarded as it is in conflict with many other *smṛtis* and is disapproved of by people.⁶¹⁰ Some of the rules mentioned by Vijñāneśvara (about 1100 A. D.) themselves underwent changes in 500 years as noted by the Nirṇayasindhu (composed in 1612 A. D. ⁶¹¹).

The Mit. on Yāj. III. 18 declares that when a child that has not completed two years dies, it is the parents that have to observe *āśauca* for ten days and not all *sapindas* and that their *āśauca* entails untouchability for them. The Nirṇayasindhu (p. 517) remarks that what Vijñāneśvara said is not now (in its time) the usage and that the *Smṛtyarthasāra* also did not accept Vijñāneśvara's view.

In view of the above-mentioned circumstances no useful purpose would be served by setting out in detail the varying dicta of the *smṛtis*, Purāṇas ⁶¹² and the digests upon the several matters that fall to be treated under *āśauca*. Digests on this subject are too numerous to mention. The following printed ones and a few mss. have been made use of in preparing the following account. In the first place, there are several works that deal with this subject in verse. The *Āśaucāṣṭaka* attributed to Vararuci (published in the Trivandrum series) with a

610. यत्पुनः स्मृत्यन्तरवचनम्-चतुर्थे दशरात्रं स्यात्पञ्चिनाः पुंसि पञ्चमे। षष्ठे चतुरहाच्छुद्धिः सप्तमे त्वहरेव तु॥ इति तद्विगीतत्वाद्भादरणीयम्। यद्यप्यविगीतं तथापि मधुपर्काङ्गपश्वाल्भनवल्लोकविद्विष्टत्वाद्भादरणीयम्। अस्वर्ग्यं लोकविद्विष्टं धर्म्यमप्याचरेन्न तु-इति मनुस्मरणात्। मिता. on या. III. 18. अस्वर्ग्यं is the latter half of या. I. 156.

611. यत्तु विज्ञानेश्वरेणोक्तं-ऊनद्विवर्ष उभयोः सूतकं मातुरेव हीति याज्ञवल्क्योक्तः गर्भस्थे प्रेते मातुर्दशाहं जात उभयोः कृते नाग्नि सोदराणां च इति पैङ्गवोक्तेश्च पित्रोः सोदराणां च दशाहमस्पृश्यत्वमिति तत्तेदानीं प्रचरति। अत एव स्मृत्यर्थसारे तच्चाहृतम्। निर्णयसिन्धु p. 517. The स्मृत्यर्थसार (p. 80) states 'अनुपनीतमरणे मातापित्रोर्दशाहाशौच-पक्षोऽनादृतः'।

612. Several among the Purāṇas devote considerable space to *āśauca*. For example, the Kūrma (Uttarārdha Chap. 23), Liṅgapurāṇa (Purvārdha Chapter 89. 77-92), Garuḍapurāṇa (Pretakhaṇḍa Chap. 5), Agnipurāṇa (Chapters 157-158), Vāmana (14. 96-102) do so. In the Garuḍapurāṇa (Pretakhaṇḍa 5) several verses are taken from Yājñavalkya, Manu and other *smṛtis*.

commentary by an anonymous writer that names the bhāṣya of Maskarin on Gautama-dharmasūtra (on p. 35) deals with the subject in eight *sragdharā* verses. The Āśaucadaśaka or Daśaśloki attributed to Vijñāneśvara seems to have been a very popular work. There are several commentaries on it. The one by Harihara is the earliest of them. In the Deccan College collection of Mss (now at the Bhandarkar Oriental Institute, Poona) there are several Mss of it, two of which were copied in *samvat* 1539 (D. C. No. 216 of 1879-80) and *samvat* 1579 (D. C. No. 196 of 1884-87) and which expressly state that the work was composed by Vijñāneśvara-yogīndra. The ten Śārdūla-vikrīḍita verses of the Āśaucadaśaka are set out in the appendix. The Kalpataru of Lakṣmīdhara has a section on śuddhi which has been recently published in the G. O. S. The Hāralatā of Aniruddha is very useful (B. I. Series). The Āśaucakāṇḍa of the Smṛticandrikā has been edited by the late Dr. Shamsastry and published as No. 56 of the Mysore University Sanskrit publications. The Trīmśacchloki with the commentary of Raghunātha composed in *śake* 1645 has been published at the Poona Ānandāśrama press and contains 30 Sragdharā verses on āśauca. The Ṣaḍaśīti (86 verses in the Anuṣṭubh metre) of Kauśikāditya with the commentary Śuddhicandrikā by Vināyaka *alias* Nandapaṇḍita (composed about 1600 A. D.) has been published in the Chowkhamba Sanskrit series. The Śuddhikaumudī of Govindānanda (B. I. Series); the Śuddhitattva of Raghunandana (ed. by Jivananda pp. 233-412), the Śuddhiprakāśa (part of the Viramitrodaya of Mitramiśra) published in the Chowkhamba Sanskrit series, the Śuddhimayūkha of Nīlakaṇṭha (edited by Mr. J. R. Gharpure) and the Smṛtimuktāphala of Vaidyanātha (edited by Mr. J. R. Gharpure) are compilations that are useful in their own way. These exhaustive treatises on āśauca show one thing unmistakably that brāhmaṇas of the medieval ages attached an extremely exaggerated importance to ceremonial purity of the body on birth and death.

The periods of impurity depended on many circumstances. There was a difference between impurity on birth and that on death; so also the duration depended upon whether the deceased was an infant or a male or a female or one whose *upanayana* had been performed or not performed; it depended on ~~caste~~ and also on the question whether the deceased died near the relative or far away; also upon the degree of relationship; and on the time that elapsed from the birth or death till it reached the ears

of the relative. The intensity of impurity was different in each of the following: a *sūtikā* (a freshly delivered woman), *rajasvalā* (woman in monthly illness), impurity on death, impurity on birth (the last being the least).

Dakṣa (VI. 2-3) states that there are ten varieties in impurity, viz. immediate purity (after taking a bath), one day, three days, four days, six days, ten days, twelve days, a fortnight, a month and till the end of one's life.⁶¹³ Dakṣa then explains in what cases these different periods apply. As to what is meant by impurity till life's end (lit. till he is reduced to ashes), Dakṣa (VI. 8-10) says: 'those who take their meals without bathing or offering to gods or without making gifts—all such persons are in impurity till life ends. One who is permanently afflicted with a disease, who is close-fisted (i. e. stints himself, wife and son and religious acts through greed), who is always in debt (i. e. who has not paid off his debts to gods, sages and manes), who is bereft of religious acts (*nitya* or *naimittika*), who is a fool and is under the thumb of his wife, whose mind is bent on vices (gambling, prostitution &c.), who is always dependent (a king's servant or the like), who is devoid of faith and benevolence (charitable gifts)—he incurs impurity which ends only with his ashes (i. e. only when he is cremated).⁶¹⁴ These words are not to be taken literally; what is meant is that such a man is to be shunned by others (i. e. it is an *arthavāda* conveying merely censure).

We shall now turn to the impurity on birth.

That the impurity on birth lasted for ten days even in Vedic times can be inferred from the story of *Śunaḥ-śepa* narrated in the Ait. Br. (chapter 33.2), where occurs the passage 'when the animal is more than ten days from birth he becomes pure (and fit to be offered in sacrifice).' The same

613. सद्यःशौचं तथैकाहस्यहश्चतुरहस्तथा । षड्दशद्वादशाहश्च पक्षो मासस्तथैव च ॥ मरणान्तं तथा चान्यद् दश पक्षास्तु सूतके । दक्ष VI. 2-3, referred to by विश्वरूप on या. III. 30 and q. by कल्प० (on शुद्धि) p. 5, अपरार्क p. 894, परा. मा. I, 2. p. 207.

614. अस्नात्वा चाप्यहुत्वा च ह्यदत्त्वा ये तु क्षुजते । एवंविधानां सर्वेषां यावज्जीवं तु सूतकम् ॥ व्याधितस्य कर्दरस्य ऋणग्रस्तस्य सर्वदा । क्रियाहीनस्य मूर्खस्य स्त्रीजितस्य विशेषतः । व्यसनासक्तचित्तस्य पराधीनस्य नित्यशः । श्रद्धात्यागविहीनस्य भस्मान्तं सूतकं भवेत् ॥ दक्ष VI. 8-10 q. by विश्वरूप on या. III. 30, कल्प० (on शुद्धि) p. 15, हारलता p. 14, अपरार्क p. 895. The last verse of षडशीति is to the same effect as the first verse quoted above. The कूर्म (उत्त.) 23. 9 provides 'क्रियाहीनस्य मूर्खस्य महारोगिण एव च यथेष्टाचरणस्येह मरणान्तमशौचकम् ॥' q. by हारलता p. 15.

inference can probably be drawn from Tai. Br. II. 1. 1.3, where it is said 'therefore people do not take the milk of a cow for ten nights when a calf is born.'⁶¹⁵

Abortion in the first four months⁶¹⁶ of pregnancy is called *srāva*, abortion in the 5th or 6th month is called *pāta* and from the 7th month of pregnancy onwards it is called *prasūti* or *prasava* (according to Parāśara III. 16, Śaḍaśīti verse 9). When there is *srāva* the mother incurs impurity for three days, in the case of *pāta* the mother has to observe impurity for as many days as correspond to the months of pregnancy (i. e. 5 days or 6 days). The impurity consists in the mother being untouchable. The father alone has to bathe when there is *srāva*, but when there is *pāta* the father and sapindas have to observe impurity for three days (according to Madana-pārijāta p. 380-381 and others) but they don't incur impurity as on death. These rules hold good for all castes. But when the foetus comes out dead in any month from the 7th or the child is still-born, then the impurity is for ten days for both parents and the sapindas for all varṇas or for 10, 12, 15 and 30 days respectively for the four varṇas as laid down in Yāj. (III. 22) and the samānodakas have to observe āśauca for three days and sagotras for one day (Dharmasindhu p. 427). The above rules are more or less laid down by Gautama 14. 15-16, Baud. Dh. S. I. 5. 136, Parāśara III. 24, Manu V. 66, Yāj. III. 20 (latter half) and the first verse of Āśaucadaśaka. The mother is untouchable for ten days on birth, still-birth or abortion in 7th, 8th or 9th month but the father and sapindas⁶¹⁷ when they take a bath after the *prasava* are not untouchable (Yāj. III. 19). In ancient times there were several differing views about *jananāśauca* for the father as vouched for by Baud.⁶¹⁸ Dh. S. I. 5. 125-128. Although a woman

615. अजनि वै ते पुत्रो यजस्व माऽनेनेति । स होवाच यदा वै पशुर्निर्दशो भवत्यथ स मेध्यो भवति । ऐ. ब्रा 33.2; तस्माद्वत्सं जातं दशरात्रीर्न दुहन्ति । तै. ब्रा. II. 1.1.3.

616. आचतुर्थान्द्रवेत्स्रावः पातः पञ्चमषष्ठयोः । अत ऊर्ध्वं प्रसूतिः स्याद् दशाहं सूतकं भवेत् ॥ स्नात्वे मातुश्चिरात्रं स्यात्सपिण्डाशौचवर्जनम् ॥ पाते मातुर्यथामासं पित्रादीनां दिन-त्रयम् ॥ मरीचि q. by मिता. on या. III. 20, हरदत्त on गौ. 14.15, स्मृतिच. (आशौच) p. 4. The first is पराशर III. 16 and is quoted as such in शुद्धिप्र. p. 16.

617. Vide H. of Dh. vol. II. pp. 452-455 for the meaning of sapinda and samānodaka (H. of Dh. vol. III. pp. 752-753). These words mean in this section generally (unless otherwise expressly stated) persons descended from a common male ancestor through unbroken male descent.

618. जनने तावन्मातापित्रोर्दशहमाशौचम् । मातुरित्येके । तत्परिहरणार्थं । पितुरित्य-परे शुक्रप्राधान्यात् । अयोनिजा ह्यपि पुत्राः श्रूयन्ते मातापित्रोरेव तु संसर्गसामान्यात् । या. ध. सू. I. 5. 125-128 q. by स्मृतिच. (आशौच) p. 9.



becomes touchable in ten days after delivery she is not fit to take part in religious rites for 20 days after she becomes touchable (i. e. 30 days from birth) if she gave birth to a son but for 30 days (i. e. 40 days from birth) if a daughter was born.⁶¹⁹ Women of all varṇas become pure (i. e. touchable) ten days after delivery—says Pracetas.⁶²⁰ Devala states that there is no āśauca on the ground of birth when the period of (ten or twelve) days has expired.⁶²¹ If a woman was delivered at her father's or brother's house, then her parents and her brothers staying with the father had to observe āśauca for one day (Dharmasindhu p. 427), but if a woman was delivered of a child at her husband's house then her father or brother had to observe no āśauca (on birth). Even when *sagotras* have to observe āśauca on birth they are not untouchable (Śaḍaśīti verse 6).

It would be better to state here certain general rules once for all. When any text employs the word day (*ahah*) or night (*rātri*) in prescribing the duration of āśauca what is meant is *ahorātra* (both day⁶²² and night). When counting the days of āśauca one has to begin from the day of the cremation, if the deceased was an *āhitāgni*, but from the day of death in the case of one not an *āhitāgni*⁶²³ (Āśauca-daśaka verse 4, Kūrma, Uttarārdha 23. 52). Birth and death are causes of āśauca only when they are known to the person who is to be affected by it and not by the mere fact of the birth or death. This follows from certain

619. यथाह संवर्तः। जाते पुत्रे पितुः स्नानं सचैलं तु विधीयते। माता शुध्येद्दशाहेन स्नानात्तु स्पर्शनं पितुः। माता शुध्येद्दशाहेनेत्येतच्च संव्यवहारयोग्यतामात्रम्। अदृष्टार्थेषु पुनः कर्मसु पैठीनसिना विशेष उक्तः। स्तिकां पुत्रवतीं विंशतिरात्रेण कर्माणि कारयेत्। मासेन स्त्रीजननीम्। इति। मिता. on या. III. 19.

620. स्तिका सर्ववर्णानां दशाहेन विबुध्यति। ऋतौ तु न पृथक् शौचं सर्ववर्णेष्वयं विधिः। प्रचेतस् q. by हारलता p. 20, शुद्धिचन्द्रिका on verse 6. स्मृतिच. (आशौच-काण्ड) p. 5 quotes it but explains it differently,

621. नाशौचं प्रसवस्यास्ति व्यतीतेषु दिनेष्वपि। देवल. q. by कुल्लुक on मनु V. 76; रघुनाथ in his com. on त्रिशच्छोकी verse 6 p. 27 reads 'नाशुद्धिः प्रसवाशौचे व्यतीतेषु दिनेष्वपि'.

622. अत्राशौचप्रकरणे अहर्ग्रहणं रात्रिग्रहणं चाहोरात्रोपलक्षणार्थम्। मिता. on या. III. 18.

623. इदं चाशौचमाहिताग्नेरुपरमे संस्कारदिवसप्रभृति कर्तव्यम्। अनाहिताग्नेः मरणदिवसप्रभृति। मिता. on या. III. 20; दाहादाहिताग्नौ मरणदिवसतोऽन्यत्र कुर्याद्दशाहम्। त्रिशच्छोकी verse 11 (second पाद); दाहाद्यशौचं कर्तव्यं द्विजानामग्निहोत्रिणाम्। सपिण्डान् च मरणे मरणादितरेषु च॥ कूर्म (उत्तरार्ध 23. 52).



passages of Pāraskara gr. III. 10 and Manu V. 75-76 and the Brahmapurāṇa. Pāraskara (III. 10) provides:⁶²⁴ 'if one who had gone abroad dies, (his relatives) should on hearing (of his death) sit down and offer him water and should remain untouchable for the days that remain out of the proper period (viz. 10, 12, 15, 30 days); if the prescribed period (of āśauca) has expired they should observe āśauca for one night or three nights.' Manu (V. 75-76) is to the same effect. The Brahmapurāṇa states: 'if a donor makes a gift and the acceptor accepts it when both are not aware of there being a birth or death in their family, no blame attaches.'

We should now turn to āśauca on death. Here again there is no unanimity and therefore the views perferably of the latest works (such as the Dharmasindhu) will be set out after referring to a few smṛti passages. Āśauca on death renders those who incur it untouchable and unable to perform religious rites. Pār. gr. III. 10. 29-30 (S. B. E. vol. 29 p. 357) stated generally that the impurity caused by death lasts through three nights and that according to some teachers through ten nights. If a child dies within ten days of birth, the father and mother have to observe *Jananāśauca* and become purified by the end of the āśauca on birth and the father remains untouchable for those days (Kūrma-purāṇa q. by S. K. p. 21). If a child died before it struck teeth the *sapiṇḍas* had only to undergo a bath, while the parents had to observe āśauca for three days if the child was a son and for one day if a daughter (vide Yāj. III. 23, Śaṅkha 15. 4, Atri 95, Āśaucadaśaka verse 2). If the child died after striking teeth but before Cūḍā (or the end of the third year) the *sapiṇḍas* had to observe āśauca for one day and night (Yāj. III. 23, Śaṅkha 15. 5), but the parents had āśauca (of death) for three days. If the child was a girl the *sapiṇḍas* became pure by a bath up to the girl's third year. If death occurs between Cūḍā (or three years) and *upanayana* or marriage (in the case of girls) the *sapiṇḍas* including the father have to observe āśauca for three days and *samānodakas* become purified by a bath alone. After *upanayana* all *sapiṇḍas* have to observe āśauca (on death) for ten days (Gaut. 14. 1, Manu V. 59, Āśaucadaśaka 2) and all *samānodakas* for three days. In the case of a *śūdra* dying

624. प्रोषितश्चेत्प्रेयात् श्रवणप्रभृति कुतोदकाः कालशेषमासीरजतीति श्रुदेकस्य त्रिरात्रं वा । पारस्करगृह्य III. 10.

after three and before marriage or 16 years the āsauca is three days for all sapindas. After sixteen years or marriage (in the case of a śūdra) it is the āsauca prescribed for his caste. In the case of a girl dying after three years and before vāgdāna (betrothal) the parents have āsauca for three days and the sapindas (up to three generations) one day. If a girl dies after vāgdāna and before marriage the sapindas of her father as well as of the proposed bridegroom had to observe āsauca for three days. In the case of women and śūdras if death takes place after marriage or after 16 years (if the Śūdra was unmarried) the period of āsauca for all sapindas is ten days. If a woman dies at her father's house after marriage, her parents, step-mother, full brothers and step-brothers have to observe āsauca for three days and her paternal uncle and the like that stay in the same house with her father for one day. Some say that if the married daughter dies in a village other than that of the father, the parents have to observe āsauca for a pakṣiṇī⁶²⁵ (i. e. two nights with a day between or two days with a night between). There are other views on this point which are passed over. For example, Viṣṇu-dharmasūtra (22. 32-34) says that in the case of a married woman there is no āsauca on the parents' side; but when she is delivered of a child or dies in the father's house then the impurity is for one day or three days respectively.⁶²⁶ A married woman has to observe āsauca for three days for the death of her parents or step-mother if ten days have not elapsed from the day of death or for the remaining days out of the period of ten (Yāj. III. 21 latter half). If the married daughter hears of the death of the parents or step-mother at a time more than ten days after the death or within one year she has to observe āsauca for a pakṣiṇī. If a brother whose upanayana has been performed dies at his married sister's house or vice versa, āsauca has to be observed for three days by them, but if they do not die at each other's house but in a different one

625. Gaut. Dh. S. 14.17 (श्रुत्वा चोर्ध्वं दशम्याः पक्षिणीम्), Manu. IV. 97 and V. 81 employ the word पक्षिणी. हरदत्त explains 'अहर्द्वयमध्यगता रात्रिः पक्षिणी रात्रिर्द्वयमध्यगतमहर्षा'. The अमरकोश gives only the first meaning 'आगामिवर्तमाना-हर्षुक्तायां निशि पक्षिणी'. The शुद्धिप्रकाश p. 36 remarks 'द्वावह्नवेकरात्रिश्च पक्षिणी-त्यभिधीयते—इति भट्टनारायणधृतवचनात् । पक्षतुल्यौ दिवसौ पार्श्वयोः स्त इति पक्षिणी-रात्रिरिति ।'.

626. स्त्रीणां विवाहः संस्कारः । संस्कृतासु स्त्रीषु नाशौचं भवति पितृपक्षे । तत्पसवमरणे चेत्पितृपक्षे स्यातां तदैकरात्रं त्रिरात्रं च । विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 22. 32-34.



upanayana had been performed; but if no upanayana was performed or if he died in another village a mere bath is enough.

On the death of one's mother's sisters (full or half) the person (whether man or woman) has to undergo āśauca for a pakṣiṇī; the same rule applies on the death of the father's sister. If it is a step-sister of the father then a mere bath is enough. The father's sister has to undergo a bath if the nephew dies. If one's father's sister or mother's sister dies in one's house then the āśauca is for three days.

In the case of *bandhus* (described by the Mit. on Yāj. II. 135 as *bhinnagotra sapinḍas*) of ⁶²⁷ the three kinds, the āśauca is for a pakṣiṇī, provided the bandhu is *upanīta* but if he died before upanayana then āśauca is for one day and if the bandhu died in one's house then for three days. If the daughter of the father's sister (and of the other bandhus enumerated in the three verses) dies married, the āśauca is one day, but if they die unmarried only a bath is necessary. Among the three kinds of bandhus, a man himself and his three *ātmabandhus* have to observe āśauca for each other's death; but the case is different as to *pitṛbandhus* and *mātrbandhus*. If any one of these latter dies, there is āśauca for the man whose bandhus they are, but if a man dies, his *pitṛbandhus* and *mātrbandhus* have to observe no āśauca.

If an adopted son dies, his natural father and adoptive father have to observe āśauca for three days (the Vyavahāramayūkha differs from this) and the sapinḍas for one day.

If the adoptive or natural father dies, the adopted son has to observe āśauca for three days and for one day for the sapinḍas of any one of them. On the death of the son and the grandson of an adopted son, the sapinḍas of the natural father and the adoptive father have to observe āśauca for one day and

627. The bandhus are of three kinds, आत्मबन्धु, पितृबन्धु and मातृबन्धु. In three verses variously attributed to Baudhāyana or Sātātapa three illustrations of each of the three kinds of bandhus are given. आत्मपितृवसुः पुत्रा आत्ममातृवसुः सुताः । आत्ममातुलपुत्राश्च विज्ञेया आत्मबान्धवाः ॥ पितुः पितृवसुः पुत्राः पितृमातृवसुः सुताः । पितृमातुलपुत्राश्च विज्ञेयाः पितृबान्धवाः । मातुः पितृवसुः पुत्रा मातृमातृवसुः सुताः । मातृमातुलपुत्राश्च विज्ञेया मातृबान्धवाः ॥ q. by the मित्ता. on Yāj. II. 135, व्यव. नि. p. 455, परा. मा. III. p. 528, मद. पा. p. 674. For further details, vide H. of Dh. vol. III. pp. 754-762.

vice versa. These rules apply if the son adopted is not a sapinda or samānodaka of the adopter, when he was in his family of birth. But if a sagotra sapinda or a samānodaka be adopted, then the āśauca is for ten or three days respectively.

If one's *ācārya*⁶²⁸ dies, the pupil has to observe āśauca for three days, but only one day if he dies in another village (Gautama 14. 26, 52, Manu V. 80). On the death of the *ācārya*'s wife or son the āśauca is for one day.⁶²⁹ On the death of a *guru* (who instructs in Vedic mantras) the āśauca is three days and *pakṣiṇī* if he dies in another village. On the death of a teacher who imparted instruction in grammar, astronomy and other *āṅgas* (subsidiary lores) of the Veda, the āśauca is one day. Similar rules are laid down about the death of a pupil, *ṛtvik* (sacrificial priest), a sacrificer, a dependent *śrotriya*, a fellow-student, a friend, which are all passed over as not now useful. Vide Gaut. 14. 19-20 (which prescribe one day's āśauca on the death of a fellow-student or a dependent *śrotriya*).

These provisions about āśauca on the death of the *ācārya* and *ṛtvik* who were not sapindas show how closely the bond between teacher and pupil was thought to be in ancient times, almost equalling the tie of blood. When a *yati* (ascetic) dies,⁶³⁰ all his sapindas have simply to undergo a bath (and nothing more). Conversely, a *yati* and *brahmacārin* have to observe no āśauca. Manu V. 82, Yāj. III. 25, Viṣṇu 22.45, Śaṅkha 15. 15 provide that on the death of the ruler of the country in which one resides one has to observe āśauca up till

628. An *ācārya* is defined by Manu II. 140 as one who performs the upanayana of his pupil and teaches him the Veda together with the Kalpasūtra and Upaniṣads. *Rtvik* is defined by Manu II. 143 as one who is chosen for the performance of Agnyādheya, the *pākayajñas* and the solemn sacrifices like Agniṣṭoma.

629. आचार्यपत्नीपुत्रोपाध्यायमातुलश्वशुरश्वशुर्यसहाध्यायिशिष्येष्वतीतेष्वेकरात्रेण । विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 22. 44. श्वशुर्य means wife's brother. Manu (V. 80-81) prescribes three days' āśauca on the death of the *ācārya*, his wife and son, and *śrotriya*. Gaut. 14.26 does the same.

630. वानप्रस्थे यतौ चोपरमति कुलजे षण्ढके चाहवः स्यात् । त्रिंशच्छरीरे 3th verse, 3rd पाद. Vide मनु V. 91 (= Viṣṇu 22.86) about a ब्रह्मचारिन् carrying the corpse of his parents.

the coming of the day or night next to that on which the king dies.⁶³¹

As long as a corpse is not removed from the village in which a man dies, the whole village is in *āśauca*. Āp. Dh. S. 1. 3. 9. 14 declares that there is no Veda study till a corpse lies in the village. The *Smṛti-muktāphala* (p. 541) quotes⁶³² several *smṛtis* to the effect that in a village in which a corpse lies unremoved, there is to be no eating, no Vedic study and no sacrifice, but that this does not apply where in a village there are more than four hundred *brāhmaṇas*. The *Dharma-sindhu* (p. 433) also says the same about a village, but adds that this rule does not apply to a town.

The ideas of ritualistic purity went so far as to provide (as stated in the *Suddhitattva* quoted by the *Nirṇayasindhu*) that if a dog died in a *brāhmaṇa*'s house the house became impure for ten days, that, if a *sūdra*,⁶³³ a *patita* or a *mleccha* died in a *brāhmaṇa*'s house, the house became impure for a month, two months or four months respectively and the house had to be abandoned if a *śvapāka* died therein.

Atikrāntāśauca (impurity on coming to know of birth or death after the several periods fixed). The general rule⁶³⁴ is

631. प्रेते राजनि सज्योतिर्यस्य स्याद्विषये स्थितः। मनु V. 82. सज्योतिः is explained by the *Mitā* as 'ज्योतिषा सह वर्तते इति सज्योतिराशौचम्। आह्नि चेद्यावत्सूर्यदर्शनं रात्रौ चेद्यावत्क्षत्रदर्शनमित्यर्थः।' या. III. 25 (निवासराजनि प्रेते तदहः शुद्धिकारणम्) is explained by the *Mit.* in the same sense as मनु V. 82, but the *शुद्धिप्र.* p. 36 holds that the *āśauca* for king's death is for a whole day and night provided he is a good king protecting his subjects.

632. स्मृत्यन्तरे। ग्रामस्थे शवचण्डाले शूद्राद्यशुचिसंनिधौ॥ नाध्येतव्यं न भोक्तव्यं न होतव्यं कदाचन॥ इति।...स्मृत्यन्तरे विशेषो दर्शितः। चतुःशताधिकैर्विपैः सम्पूर्णं ग्राममध्यके। विशेषं संप्रवक्ष्यामि जपहोमार्चनं प्रति। अन्तःशवस्य दोषस्तु नास्ति तत्र समाचरेत्। स्मृतिमु. (आशौच) p. 541.

633. शुद्धितत्त्वे बृहन्मनुः। श्वशूद्रपतिताश्चान्त्या मृताश्चैव द्विजमन्दिरे। शौचं तत्र प्रवक्ष्यामि मनुना भाषितं यथा। दशरात्राच्छुनि मृते मासाच्छूद्रे भवेच्छुचिः। द्वाभ्यां तु पतिते गेहमन्त्ये मासचतुष्टयात्। अत्यन्त्ये वर्जयेद्देहमित्येवं मनुब्रवीत्। अन्त्यो म्लेच्छः। अत्यन्त्यः श्वपाक इति वाचस्पतिः। निर्णयसिन्धु III p. 528; these verses are quoted by *शुद्धिप्र.* p. 100 also.

634. देशान्तरगतः श्रुत्वा कुल्यानां मरणोद्भवौ। यच्छेषं दशरात्रस्य तावदेवाशुचिर्भवेत्। शङ्ख 15.11. The *स्मृतिच.* (आशौच) p. 47 reads 'कल्याणं मरणं तथा' in the 2nd पाद. The same verse occurs in *अग्निपुराण* 157.12-13 which reads देशान्तरस्थं श्रुत्वा तु; प्रोषितश्चेत्प्रेयाच्छूयणप्रभृति कालशेषमासीरजततिश्चेदेकरात्रं त्रिरात्रं वा। पार. य. III, 10.



that, if a person stays in a different country and hears of a birth or death among his sapinda, he has to observe āśauca not for ten days after hearing but for that number of days that are short of the ten days (counting from birth or death) prescribed for sapinda. Vide *Manu* V. 75, *Yāj.* III. 21 (latter half), *Śaṅkha* 15.11, *Pār. gr.* III. 10. *Āśauca* interferes very much with one's activities and it is hence that often-times people send a closed letter to their relatives living in a different place stating thereon that it be opened on a particular day (which is the 10th day from the death of a sapinda). Everyone knows the meaning of such a direction and by such a subterfuge inconvenience is avoided and the dictates of the śāstra are deemed to be satisfied. If a son hears of the death of a parent he has to observe āśauca for ten days from the day of hearing, but if he hears of the death of a parent before the collection of bones then he has to observe āśauca only for the days that remain (*Smṛti-muktāphala* p. 534). There is great divergence about the period of āśauca if the death of a sapinda comes to one's ears more than ten days after the day of death. *Manu* V. 77 provides that on hearing of the death of a sapinda or the birth of a son after ten days (from the event) a man becomes pure after plunging into water with the clothes on and *Yāj.* III. 21 (last pāda, 'pūrṇe dattvodakam śuciḥ') states that he becomes pure after (a bath and) offering water when the period fixed has passed off. From the words of *Manu* that only the father, even if he hears of the birth of a son more than ten days after the event, has to take a bath the *Mit.* infers that there is no atikrāntāśauca for sapinda on birth⁶³⁵. The *Mit.* quotes *Devala* in support (vide note 621 above). The *Dharma-sindhu* follows the *Mit.* *Manu* V. 76, *Śaṅkha* 15.12, *Kūrmapurāṇa* (*Uttarārdha*) 23.21 state that when ten days have passed after the event of death, the man who hears of the death is impure for three days and if he hears of the death more than a year after death, he becomes pure after a bath. In order to remove the conflict among smṛtis *Vṛddha-Vasiṣṭha* lays down: 'āśauca is for three days if the news of death is heard within three months (but later than ten days after death), for a pakṣiṇī if it is heard within six months (but later than

635. जन्मन्यतिक्रान्ताशौचं सपिण्डानां नास्तीति गम्यते। पितुस्तु निर्देशं जन्मे स्नानमस्त्येव श्रुत्वा पुत्रस्य जन्म च इति वचनात्। एतच्च पुत्रग्रहणं जन्मनि सपिण्डानां मतिक्रान्ताशौचं नास्तीति ज्ञापकम्। अन्यथा 'निर्देशं ज्ञातिमरणं श्रुत्वा जन्म च निर्देशम्' इत्येवावश्यम्। न चोक्तम्। *मिता.* on *या.* III. 21 (latter half).

three months), for one day if heard before nine months (but later than 6 months) and thereafter (i. e. up to one year but later than nine months) one becomes pure by a bath. But the Mit. says ⁶³⁶ that this holds good as to all except one's parents and quotes Paithīnasi and another smṛti for the proposition that whenever a son staying in a distant country hears of the death of a parent whether within a year or after a year he has to observe āśauca for ten days from the day he becomes aware of it. Laghu-Āśvalāyana (20.88) lays down the same exception in the case of a son. The Mit. (on Yāj. III. 21 last half) further says that the rules about *atīkrāntāśauca* apply only to a deceased person whose upanayana had been performed. The Dharmasindhu (p. 433) remarks that there is no *atīkrāntāśauca* as regards the periods of one day and three days prescribed on the death of one whose upanayana had not been performed or as regards the periods of pakṣiṇī and three days on the death of the maternal uncle and others of a different gotra. Similarly, there is no *atīkrāntāśauca* with reference to the āśauca for three days prescribed in the case of samānodakas; but in these cases even after the lapse of the fixed time a bath is necessary. The rules about *atīkrāntāśauca* apply only to āśauca on death for ten days. As in the case of the son, so in the cases of husband and wife and of co-wives among themselves even after the lapse of more than a year and even if the death is in a different country the husband or wife or co-wife has to observe āśauca for ten days. The parents, even when they hear of the death of an *aurasa* son after a year, have to observe āśauca for three days. On the news of the death of a sapinda living in the same country coming to a sapinda's ears after ten days but up to three months, the period of āśauca is three days, pakṣiṇī up to 6 months, up to nine months one day and up to one year a bath. Here also there are various views such as those of Mādhava and others. Vide Śuddhiprakāśa pp. 49-51 for various views.

The Mit. on Yāj. III. 21 (latter half) makes a distinction between knowledge of the death of a sapinda staying in the

636. तथा च वृद्धवसिष्ठः । मासत्रये त्रिरात्रं स्यात्पण्मासे पक्षिणी तथा । अहस्तु नवमाद्वर्षादूर्ध्वं स्नानेन शुध्यति ॥ इति । एतच्च मातापितृव्यतिरिक्तविषयम् ।...संवत्सरादूर्ध्वमासि प्रेतकार्यमाशौचदानादिकं कार्यं न पुनः स्नानमात्राच्छुद्धिरित्यर्थः । मित्ता. on या. III. 21 (latter half). The परा. मा. I. 2. p. 232 quotes a similar verse of देवलः । त्रिपक्षात् त्रिरात्रं स्यात्पण्मासात् पक्षिणी ततः । परमेकाहमा वर्षादूर्ध्वं स्नातो विशुध्यति ॥ इति । The षडशीति (34) includes the verse of वृद्धवसिष्ठः. The verse मासत्रये० occurs in Laghu-Āśvalāyana-smṛti 20.86.

same country coming to a person's ears after ten days from death and of the death of a sapinda staying in another country separated by a big river &c. In the latter case the sapindas coming to hear of the death after ten days but even before three months are purified by a mere bath. It quotes ⁶³⁷ a smṛti verse 'on hearing that a person (sapinda) died in another country and in the case of the death of an impotent person or a forest hermit or an ascetic purification follows after a bath and the same applies to *sagotra* sapindas in the case of abortion.' The Śaḍaśīti (35) has a similar verse. ⁶³⁸ The Mit. quotes two verses of Bṛhaspati which define what *deśāntara* (a different country) means: ⁶³⁹ 'Where there is a large river or there is a mountain which separates (one territory from another) or where the languages differ then there is *deśāntara*. Some say that a different country means the distance of sixty *yojanas*, while others put it down at forty *yojanas* and still others at thirty *yojanas*.' There is a difference of opinion as to whether in order to constitute a different country all three must co-exist (viz. a large river, a mountain and difference of speech) or any one of the three will suffice or whether 60, 40 or 30 *yojanas* would constitute a different country or whether the requirement of ten days for news to be carried to a place would constitute *deśāntara*. The Sm. C. and Śaḍaśīti 37 hold the view that any one of the above three is sufficient while others hold other views. The Śuddhiviveka ⁶⁴⁰ holds that a distance of 60 *yojanas* constituted *deśāntara* by itself, but even within sixty

637. यस्तु नद्यादिव्यवहिते देशान्तरे मृतस्तत्सपिण्डानां दशाहादूर्ध्वं मासत्रयादूर्वागपि सद्यः शौचम् । देशान्तरमृतं श्रुत्वा क्लीबे वैखानसे यतौ । मृते स्नानेन शुध्यन्ति गर्भस्त्रावे च गो-
त्रिणः ॥ इति । मिता. on या. III. 21.

638. ज्ञातिमृत्यौ यदाशौचं दशाहात् बहिः श्रुतौ । एकदेश इदं प्रोक्तं स्नात्वा देशान्तरे
शुचिः ॥ षडशीति 35.

639. देशान्तरलक्षणं च बृहस्पतिनोक्तम् । महानद्यन्तरं यत्र गिरिर्वा व्यवधायकः ।
वाचो यत्र विभिद्यन्ते तद्देशान्तरमुच्यते ॥ देशान्तरं वदन्त्येके षष्टियोजनमायतम् । चत्वारिंशद्व-
दन्त्यन्ये त्रिंशदन्ये तथैव च ॥ इति । मिता. on या. III. 21. The first verse is ascribed
to बृहस्पति by अपरार्क p. 905, स्मृतिच. (आशौच) p. 52 and to बृहन्मनु by शुद्धिप्र.
p. 51. The स्मृतिच. p. 53 adds one more verse and शुद्धिप्र. p. 51 and the com.
on षडशीति 37 add the same and another half verse from बृहन्मनु viz. देशनाम-
नदीभेदो निकटे यत्र वै भवेत् । तेन देशान्तरं प्रोक्तं स्वयमेव स्वयम्भुवा ॥ दशहोत्रेण वा वार्ता
यत्र न श्रूयतेऽथवा ।; लघ्वाश्वलायन 20.87 is पर्वतश्च (स्य?) महानद्या व्यवधानं भवेद्यदि ।
त्रिंशद्योजनदूरं वा सद्यःस्नानेन शुध्यति ॥

640. एतेषां च पक्षाणां देशपरिग्रहेण व्यवस्था । शुद्धिविवेके तु षष्टियोजनान्तरत्वं तद-
भ्यन्तरेपि भाषाभेदगिरिमहानदीव्यवधानानि चेति लक्षणद्वयमेव निष्कर्षेणोक्तम् । शुद्धिप्र. on
त्रिंशच्छ्लोकी verse 6 p. 29.



yojanas if a large river, a mountain and difference of speech occurred together, that could give rise to *deśāntara*. The *Smṛtyarthasāra*⁶⁴¹ avers that *deśāntara* is differently described in the *Smṛtis*, *Purāṇas* and the works on *tīrthas*. For *yojana*, vide H. of Dh. vol. III n. 185 pp. 145-146.

The *Dharmasindhu* (p. 435) provides that if the bones of an *āhitāgni* were not found and only an effigy of *palāśa* leaves were burnt, still the *āśauca* is for ten days even if he died in a different country and a long time had elapsed. Similarly, in the case of the effigy of one who is not an *āhitāgni*, the *āśauca* is for ten days for his son and wife if they have not already observed any *āśauca* for him but if they had observed it (on hearing of his death) then for three days (on the burning of the effigy). For other *sapindas* (than the son and wife) in the same circumstances three days and bath are respectively prescribed.

It is provided in the *Gṛhya kārīkas*, the *Smṛtyarthasāra* (p. 94), *Dharmasindhu* (p. 435) and other works that if a man⁶⁴² went to a distant country and no news of his being alive was heard, then his son (or other relative), after the lapse of 20 years from the time when no news was heard if the man went away when he was young or 15 years if he left when he was of middle age or 12 years if he left later in life, should perform three *cāndrāyaṇas* or thirty *kṛcchras*, prepare an effigy of the man with *kuśas* (or with *palāśa* leaves), should burn it and then observe *āśauca* and perform *śrāddhas* &c.

To summarize the above discussion it is clear that as indicated by *Medhātithi* on *Manu* V. 58 there is a distinction as regards the periods of *āśauca* and the persons affected by it in several ways. (1) There is a distinction between *āśauca* on birth and *āśauca* on death; (2) As to *āśauca* on death numerous distinctions arise viz. (a) when there is abortion (*garbhasrāva* or *garbhapāta*, as in *Śaṅkha* 15. 4, *Bṛhat-Parāśara* VI. p. 186); (b) when the foetus comes out from the 7th to the 9th month of

641. देशान्तरमनेकधा स्मृतं स्मृतिपुराणतीर्थकल्पेषु। स्मृत्यर्थसार p. 90.

642. देशान्तरगतस्य तु जीवद्वार्तानाकर्णने विशेषो गृह्यकारिकायाम्। दूरदेशान्तरगते जीवद्वार्तो पुनः पुनः। इतस्ततः समन्विच्छेत्यर्थालोच्य गतागतैः॥ तस्यामश्नुयमाणायां वयःकालविशेषतः। तस्य पूर्ववयस्कस्य विशत्यब्दोर्ध्वतः क्रिया॥ ऊर्ध्वं पञ्चदशाब्दान्तु मध्यमे वयसि स्मृता॥ चान्द्रायणत्रयं कृत्वा त्रिंशत्कृच्छ्राणि वा सुतैः। कुशैः प्रतिवृत्तिं तस्य दग्धवाशौचादिकाः क्रियाः॥ कार्या इति शेषः। रघुनाथ's com. on त्रिंशच्छ्रुती verse 15 p. 97.



pregnancy or the child is still-born or dies after being born but before the appearance of teeth (Yāj. III. 23, Atri 95); (c) after the appearance of teeth but before cūdā or three years (Viṣṇu 22. 29, Yāj. III. 23); (d) after cūdā or three years up to upanayana (Manu V. 67); (e) after upanayana (Yāj. III. 23, Manu V. 59, Gaut. 14. 1); (f) as to āśauca on death after upanayana the duration at one time depended in the case of brāhmaṇas on Vedic study, the performance of śrauta rites and whether the brāhmaṇa subsisted on ears of corn left in the field after the crops were harvested⁶⁴³ (Parāśara III. 5, Śaṅkha 15. 1, Atri 83, Agnipurāṇa 158. 10-11); (g) the duration of āśauca depended on caste (Gaut. 14. 1-4, Yāj. III. 22 &c.); (h) the duration of āśauca depended on nearness of blood i. e. whether the person affected was a sapinḍa or a samānodaka (Gaut. 14. 1 and 18, Manu V. 59, 64); (i) the duration depended also on the nearness or distance from the place of death (Laghu-Āśvalāyana 20. 85, 89); (j) it also depended on whether the deceased died in a different country separated by a large river, a mountain or thirty yojanas (Laghu-Āśvalāyana 20.87); (k) duration depended on the time that elapsed before it came to the knowledge of the relative; (l) the duration depended upon whether another āśauca supervened when the period of the first was not over.

If a person is born or died at night or news thereof is received at night, a question arises as to from what day the periods of āśauca are to be calculated. For example, if a man died at 1 A. M. on Monday, was Monday to be included in counting ten days of āśauca or was it to be excluded? There are two views on this point.^{643a} One view is that any time before midnight is to be counted as belonging to the previous day, while any time after midnight is to be taken as belonging to the next day. On this view in the above illustration Monday would be excluded in the calculation of ten days. The other view is that the night is to be divided into three

643. शिलोच्छायाचितैर्जीवन् सद्यः शुभ्येद् द्विजोत्तमः। संग्रहकार q. by परा मा. I. 2. p. 216. For शिलोच्छवृत्ति vide मनु X. 112 and या. I. 128.

643. a. रात्रौ जननमरणे रात्रौ मरणज्ञाने वा रात्रिं त्रिभागां कृत्वा प्रथमभागे द्वये पूर्वदिनं तृतीयभागे उत्तरदिनमारभ्याशौचम्। यद्धार्यरात्रात् प्राक् पूर्वदिनं परम् परादिस्मृत्। अत्र देशाचारादिना व्यवस्था। धर्मसिन्धु p. 435. This view is based on verses of पारस्कर and काश्यप 'अर्धरात्रादस्तात्रेत्सूतके मृतके तथा। पूर्वमेव दिनं शास्त्रमुच्यते-दुत्तरेऽहनि॥ रात्रिं कुर्यात्त्रिभागां तु द्वौ भागौ पूर्ववासरः। उत्तरांशः परदिनं जातेषु च मृतेषु च॥ पारस्कर q. by स्मृतिच. (आशौच) pp. 118-119,



parts and if death occurs in the first two of the three parts then the day is to be included in the calculation; if the time of death falls in the 3rd part, the ten days are to be calculated from the next day. On this view Monday would be included in the ten days. The Dharmasindhu (p. 435) remarks that in this matter the usage of the country is to be followed. Vide Madanapārijāta pp. 394-395 also.

Several rules are mentioned in the smṛtis about the periods of āśauca for the relatives of higher castes when they marry women of lower varṇas (i. e. when there are anuloma marriages). For example, Dakṣa VI. 12 says that if a brāhmaṇa has married wives of the four varṇas, then the impurity on the delivery or death of these women respectively lasts for 10, 6, 3 or 1 day. Viṣṇu Dh. S. (22. 22-24) provides that when a kṣatriya has sapinḍas of the vaiśya or śūdra varṇa the āśauca on the birth and death of these lasts for six or three days, if a vaiśya has a śūdra as sapinḍa then impurity is removed after six days. But when people of lower varṇas have sapinḍas of higher varṇas then impurity on birth and death ceases when the impurity of the higher varṇa sapinḍas ceases. Laghu-Hārīta 84 (= Āpastambasmṛti IX verse 13) has similar provisions. Other smṛtis and purāṇas like the Kūrma (Uttar-ārdha 23. 30-36) mention differing views quoted in Hārīlatā pp. 54-60, Smṛ. M. pp. 495-496. The Madanapārijāta remarks (pp. 425-426) that some say that these varying provisions may be discarded or that they may be assigned their proper place according to the usages of the several countries or they should somehow be explained as based upon the person affected being possessed of virtues or not or they may be held to be applicable to seasons of distress or otherwise.

According to the Mit. on Yāj. ⁶⁴⁴ III. 22 persons belonging to the *pratiloma* castes have no periods of āśauca, but they have to observe rules of purification similar to those relating to answering the call of nature. Others like the Smṛti-muktāphala ⁶⁴⁵ p. 495 aver, relying on Manu (X. 41), that the *pratiloma* castes are like śūdras and have to observe the āśauca prescribed for śūdras. The Hārīlatā (p. 12) quotes Ādipurāṇa to the effect that varṇasankaras (i. e. *pratilomas*)

644. प्रतिलोमानां त्वाशौचाभाव एव प्रतिलोमा धर्महीनाः—इति मनुस्मरणात्। केवलं मृतौ प्रसवे च मलापकर्षणार्थं मूत्रपुरीषोत्सर्गवत् शौचं भवत्येव। मिता. on या. III 22. प्रतिलोमास्तु धर्महीनाः is गौ. 4. 20.

645. सङ्करजातीनां शूद्रेष्वन्तर्भावात्तेषां शूद्रवदाशौचम्। स्मृतिषु. (आशौच) p. 495



should follow the śūdras in the matter of āsauca and purification. The Smṛtyartha-sāra (p. 92) states that those born of pratiloma unions should observe āsauca if they perform prāyaścitta, but if they do not perform prāyaścitta then there is no āsauca for them.

It has already been stated (p. 215) how it was the duty of sapinḍas to take out the corpse and to cremate it and how carrying the dead body of a poor brāhmaṇa was highly eulogised (Parāśara III. 39-40). But, as Manu V. 101-102 provide, if a brāhmaṇa carried through affection the dead body of one ⁶⁴⁶ who was not his sapinḍa, as if he were a bandhu or carried (the dead body) of his mother's bandhus (such as mother's brother or sister) he became pure after three days; but if he partook of the food of those who were bereaved by death he became pure after ten days and if he does not stay in the house of those bereaved nor partakes of their food he becomes pure in a day (but if he stays in their house though not partaking of their food he has to observe āsauca for three days). Vide Kūrmapurāṇa (Uttarārḍha 23. 37) and Viṣṇu 22. 7-9 also. Gautama (14. 21-25) has rules on the same subject but they somewhat differ and Haradatta remarks that this āsauca is somewhat different from the āsauca observed by sapinḍas, viz. he becomes untouchable but he need not follow the other rules such as sleeping on the ground &c. If a person carried a dead body through greed (for money), a brāhmaṇa, kṣatriya, vaiśya or śūdra had to observe āsauca respectively for 10, 12, or 15 days or a month. This was called nirhārāśauca, the word 'nirhāra' ⁶⁴⁷ including the covering of the dead body with a garment, decking it with garlands, perfumes and ornaments, carrying it and cremating it. Sapinḍas who are observing āsauca for the death of the same person may dine in the same house and partake of the food cooked, but not others who are not undergoing the same āsauca. ⁶⁴⁸

646. असपिण्डं द्विजं प्रेतं विप्रो निर्हृत्य बन्धुवत् । अशित्वा च सहोषित्वा दशरात्रेण शुध्यति । कूर्मपुराण (उत्तरार्ध 23.37) ; नाशौचे कस्यचिदन्नमश्नीयात् । ब्राह्मणादीनामाशौचे यः सकृदेवाज्जमश्नाति तस्य तावदाशौचं यावत्तेषाम् । आशौचापगमे प्रायश्चित्तं कुर्यात् । विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 22.7-9.

647. निर्हारशब्दार्थः स्मृत्यन्तरे दर्शितः । प्रेतस्य वासःस्रगन्धभूषणाद्यैरलंक्रिया । वहनं दहनं चेति निर्हारार्थो निरुच्यते । इति । q. by. स्मृतिम्. (आशौच) p. 844.

648. तथा सूतकाज्जभोजनमपि न कार्यम् । उभयत्र दशाहानि कुलस्याज्जमभ्युपयते-इति यमस्मरणात् । उभयत्र जननमरणयोः...कुलस्य सूतकयुक्तस्य सम्बन्धस्य कुल्यैर्न भोक्तव्यम् । सकुल्यानां पुनर्न दोषः । सूतके तु कुलस्याज्जमदोषं मनुव्रवीत्-इति चर्चयित्वा । मिता. on या. III. 17. कल्पतरु (on आशौच) p. 23 and अपरार्क ascribe (p. 892) the verse उभयत्र to मनु. Vide Mit. on Yāj. III. 17.

Gaut. 14. 29, Manu V. 103, Yāj. III. 26, Parāśara III. 42 prescribe that a brāhmaṇa should not follow the funeral procession of a deceased brāhmaṇa, but if he does so, he has to bathe, touch fire, take in ghee and then he becomes pure. Parāśara III. 43-46 and Kūrmapurāṇa (Uttarārdha 23.45) provide a rising scale of the days of āśauca if a brāhmaṇa follows the corpse of a kṣatriya (āśauca for one day and pañcagavya), a vaiśya (āśauca for two days and six prāṇāyāmas), a śūdra (āśauca for three days, bath in a river going to the sea, 100 prāṇāyāmas⁶⁴⁹ and drinking of ghee). Vide Trimśac-chloki verse 13.

If a brāhmaṇa who is not a sapinda of the deceased went to the bereaved family and wept along with the relatives before the collection of bones he had to observe āśauca for a day and then a bath if the deceased was a kṣatriya or vaiśya, but āśauca for three days if the deceased was a śūdra; but he had to undergo only a bath if he went after the collection of the bones; when the deceased was a śūdra and the weeping took place after the collection of bones he had to observe āśauca for a whole day and night. Vide Kūrmapurāṇa (Uttarārdha 23.46-47), Agnipurāṇa 158.47-48, Par. M. 1.2. pp. 283-285, Smṛ. M. (āśauca) p. 543 and Āśaucadaśaka verse 9 (for *nirhāra*, following a funeral procession and weeping).

Persons⁶⁵⁰ undergoing an āśauca on birth or death for one person were forbidden to touch other persons undergoing āśauca for the birth or death of another person altogether. If they did so they had to perform prāyaścitta (Prājāpatya or Sāntapana).

Even if a person's wife left him and lived in illicit relationship with a person of the same or higher caste he had to observe on her death āśauca for one day. But if she lived with one lower in varṇa than her husband, the latter had not, on her death, to observe any āśauca at all (Yāj. III.6). Similarly, one had to observe one day's āśauca on the death of sons that were not *aurasa* (such as kṣetrajā). Vide Yāj. III.25 and Viṣṇu 22.42-43.

Certain exceptions were recognized to the above rules about partaking of food at the house of one who is afflicted with

649. एकाहत्क्षत्रिये शुद्धिर्वैश्ये च स्याद् द्व्यहनेन तु । शूद्रे दिनत्रयं प्रोक्तं प्राणायाम-
शतं पुनः ॥ कूर्मपुराण (उत्तरार्धे 23.45) q. in शुद्धितत्त्व p. 293, शुद्धिप्र. p. 63.

650. आशौचिनामन्योन्यसंस्पर्शं निषेधति भृगुः । शावाशौचे समुत्पन्ने सूतके च द्विजा-
तिभिः । अन्याशौचवतां स्पर्शो न कर्तव्यो द्विजन्मनाम् ॥ आशौचेऽप्यन्यदाशौचं स्पृशेद्यादि च
कामतः । चरेत् सान्तपनं कृच्छ्रं प्राजापत्यमकामतः ॥ स्मृतिमु. (आशौच) p. 502,



āsauca. While a marriage⁶⁵¹ rite (as also *caula* and *upanayana*), festival in honour of a deity and a sacrifice (like *Jyotiṣṭoma*) are in progress, if impurity due to birth or death overtakes the performer, the materials (money and other things) already set apart for them may be dedicated or donated to the deity or brāhmaṇas and no fault is incurred. As regards food, a *smṛti* text⁶⁵² quoted by the *Mit.* says 'if in marriage, in a festival in honour of a deity or in a sacrifice āsauca on birth or death intervenes, the cooked food should be served through others (not affected by the āsauca) and the donor and the partaker of the food incur no blame. Acc. to *Āṅgiras*,⁶⁵³ *Paithīnasi* (q. by *Sm. C.*) and *Viṣṇu Dh. S.*, when once a sacrifice (like a *Somayāga*), a marriage, a sacrifice or festival in honour of the mother Goddesses or a deity or the dedication or foundation of an idol or temple has been begun a supervening āsauca does not matter. Even in modern times this is followed as regards *upanayana* and marriage. When exactly a sacrifice or marriage ceremony may be said to have begun is laid down by *Laghu-Viṣṇu* as follows:⁶⁵⁴ in the case of a sacrifice it may be said to begin when the priests are chosen, in the case of *vratas* and *japa* when the *saṅkalpa* (declaration) is made, in the case of marriage when the *Nāndīśrāddha* is performed, and in the case of a *śrāddha* when the food meant for the brāhmaṇas has been cooked completely. Certain things could be taken from the house of one who was undergoing āsauca⁶⁵⁵ on birth or death and who was the owner thereof (though not actually

651. विवाहोत्सवयज्ञेषु त्वन्तरा मृतसूतके । पूर्वसङ्कल्पितं द्रव्यं दीयमानं न दुष्यति ॥ पराशर III. 27. The latter half is also ascribed to *क्रतु* by the *मिता*. on या. III. 29.

652. विवाहोत्सवयज्ञादिष्वन्तरा मृतसूतके । शेषमन्नं परैर्देयं दातृन्भोक्तृन्श्च न स्पृशेत् ॥ q. by *मिता*. on या. III. 29 and परा. मा. I. 2. p. 262. *हारलता* (pp. 105-106) quotes a very similar verse from *आदिपुराण* 'विवाहयज्ञयोर्मध्ये सूतकमाभि चान्तरा । शेष...स्पृशेत्'.

653. Vide *स्मृतिच.* (आशौच p. 70) for the verses of *अङ्गिरस्* and *पैठीनसि* ; न देवप्रतिष्ठाविवाहयोः पूर्वसम्भृतयोः न देशविभ्रमे आपद्यपि च कष्टायाम् । विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 22 53-55 q. by *मिता*. on या. III. 29 (with variants).

654. व्रतयज्ञविवाहेषु श्राद्धे होमार्चने जपे । प्रारब्धे सूतकं न स्यादनारब्धे तु सूतकम् ॥ प्रारम्भो वरणं यज्ञे संकल्पो व्रतजापयोः । नान्दीश्राद्धं विवाहादौ श्राद्धे पाकप्रारम्भः ॥ लघुविष्णु q. by छुद्धिप्रकाश. p. 94, मद पा. p. 423. The *स्मृत्यर्थसार* p. 17 begins प्रारम्भादूर्ध्वमाशौचे विवाहः कार्य एव च, then has the verses प्रारम्भो वरणं...पाकप्रारम्भः and adds 'निमन्त्रणं वा श्राद्धे तु प्रारम्भः स्यादिति स्मृतिः ।'

655. फलानि पुष्पं शाकं च लवणं काष्ठमेव च । तक्रं दधि घृतं तैलमौषधं मृत्तमिव च । आशौचिनां गृहाद्याह्नं गुष्काक्षं चैव नित्यशः । कूर्मपुराण, उत्तरार्ध 23.66 q. in *हारलता* p. 31.

from his hand, but with his permission). The Kūrmapurāṇa enumerates such articles. They are 'fruits, flowers, raw vegetables, salt, firewood, butter-milk, curds, ghee, oil, drugs, milk and dry food' (like *laddus*, *lājas*). Marīci (q. by Mit. on Yāj. III. 17) and Trīmśac-chloki verse 20 present even longer lists of such things.

Some smṛtis and commentators lay down rules about the āśauca to be observed by slaves when their masters are in āśauca. Vide Viṣṇu Dh. S. 22.19, Devalasmṛti verse 6, Brhaspati quoted by Haradatta on Gaut. 14.4. But as slavery has long been abolished this topic is passed over here.

Āśaucasannipāta or *āśaucasampāta* (the knowledge of another āśauca coming to a person already observing one āśauca).⁶⁵⁶ The rules about this matter were promulgated early enough and they are based on convenience and common sense. The rules try to give relief to persons who may be sorely tried if it were held that, when another āśauca supervenes while a person is already in the midst of one, he has to finish all the days of the first āśauca and then begin the period of the second āśauca. The Gaut. Dh. S. 14.5 starts by saying that if another āśauca supervenes on one already being undergone, purification results after the remaining days of the first āśauca are over. Then sūtras 6 and 7 provide that if the second āśauca supervenes in the last night of the first āśauca then purification results in two days after the first āśauca ends and if the second āśauca comes to be known in the last watch of the night of the last day of the first āśauca, the second ends in three days after the first ends. Baud. Dh. S. I. 5. 123 appears to be similar to Gaut. 14.5-6. Manu V. 79, Yāj. III. 20, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 22. 35-38, Śaṅkha 15. 10, Parāśara III. 28 lay down the general rule promulgated by Gautama 14.5.

Some general rules concerning this topic may first be stated. The first rule is that in a conflict between āśauca on death and āśauca on birth, that on death is stronger.⁶⁵⁷ The

656. सम्पातो नामाशौचिनामेकाशौचित्वज्ञाने पराशौचित्वज्ञानम्। धर्मसिन्धु p. 436.

657. अधानां यौगपद्ये तु शुद्धिर्ज्ञेया गरीयसा। मरणोत्पत्तियोगे तु गरीयो मरणं भवेत्॥ देवल q. by शुद्धिकल्प. p. 31, स्मृतिच. (आशौच) p. 57, शुद्धिप्र. p. 74, and as from कूर्मपुराण by परा. मा. I. 2. p. 265; सूतकाद् द्विगुणं शवं शवाद् द्विगुणमार्तवम्। आर्तवाद् द्विगुणा स्रुतिः स्रुतेश्च शवदाहकः॥ लघ्वत्रि (Jiv. vol. I. p. 10.) chap. V, अङ्गिरस् according to हरदत्त on गौ. 14.5, वृद्धात्रि according to निर्णयसिन्धु p. 539; शवाशौचे समुत्पत्ते

2nd rule is that if both āśaucas are of the same kind and the second is of the same duration or of lesser duration than the first then a man gets rid of both at the end of the first, but if the second, though of the same kind, has a longer duration than the first, then purification follows at the end of the one that is of longer duration. It has to be remembered that birth and death give rise to āśauca⁶⁵⁸ only when they are known by a person.

On this topic there is a good deal of divergence between the views of the followers of the Mitākṣarā, of the Gaudas and Maithilas (vide Śuddhiprakāśa pp. 74-82, Nirṇayasindhu 536-540). Following the Nirṇayasindhu it may be said that twelve alternatives are possible, when another āśauca supervenes on an already existing one. They are set out here. (1 & 2) If both āśaucas are due to birth and the second is of the same duration as the first or of lesser duration, then at the end of the first āśauca there is purification from both (Viṣṇu 22.35, Śaṅkha 15.70); (3) If both āśaucas are due to birth and the second one is of longer duration than the first then purification results at the end of the second (Śaṅkha 15.10, Śaḍaśīti 19); (4 and 5) If both āśaucas arise on death and the second is of the same duration as the first or of lesser duration, then at the end of the period of the first āśauca there is purification from both; (6) If both āśaucas arise on death and the second that intervenes is of longer duration than the first then purification results at the end of the second (Śaḍaśīti 21); (7, 8 and 9) When the first āśauca is one arising from birth and an āśauca due to deaths intervenes, the āśauca on death must run its full course (i. e. there is no purification by the lapse of the first āśauca due to birth), whether the āśauca for death is of lesser duration than the āśauca on birth, or whether it is of the same or of longer

(Continued from the last page)

सूतकं तु यदा भवेत्। शवेन शुध्यते सूतिर्न सूतिः शवशोधनी ॥ लघुहारीत verse 80, षड्-
त्रिंशन्मत according to हरदत्त on गौ. 14.5 and परा. मा. I. 2 p. 264; यदि स्यात्सूतके
सूतिर्मरणे वा सूतिर्भवेत्। शेषेणैव भवेच्छुद्धिरहःशेषे त्रिरात्रकम्। मरणोत्पत्तियोगे तु मरणेन
समाप्यते। कूर्मपुराण (उत्तरार्ध 23. 18-19) q. by शुद्धिप्र. p. 74 (reads द्विरात्रकम्);
सूतके सूतकं चेत्स्यान्मृतके त्वथ सूतकम्। तत्राधिकृत्य सूतकं शौचं कुर्यान्न सूतकम् ॥ अङ्गिरस
q. by परा. मा. I. 2 p. 264, मद. पा. p. 438. This occurs in अग्निपुराण 158.

658. समानं लघ्वशौचं तु प्रथमेन समापयेत्। असमानं द्वितीयेन धर्मराजस्य यथा ॥
अग्निपुराण 157. 11-12. This echoes शङ्ख (q. by हारलता p. 65) 'समानाशौचं प्रथमे
प्रथमेन...यथा', while परा. मा. I. 2 p. 265 reads शङ्ख as समानाशौचसम्पाते प्रथमेन
and explains असमानं as दीर्घकालाशौचम्. The reading समानं खलु शौचं तु printed
in शुद्धिकल्प. p. 31 makes no sense.



duration (Ṣaḍaśīti 18); (10, 11) If the ⁶⁵⁹ first āsauca arises on death and the supervening one is due to birth and is of lesser duration than the one on death or of the same duration then both end at the expiration of the first āsauca on death (Ṣaḍaśīti 21); (12) If the first āsauca arises on death and the supervening one arises on birth and is of longer duration, then both run their proper courses (Ṣaḍaśīti 21).

The Dharmasindhu (p. 436) generally follows the Nirṇaya-sindhu but remarks: 'Āsauca on death cannot be done away with by āsauca on birth which is of the same or greater duration; āsauca on death of the extent of pakṣiṇī cannot get rid of āsauca on birth which is three or ten days in duration and āsauca on birth extending to ten days cannot be got rid of by āsauca on death which is of three days' duration.' These are the views of many writers. A certain writer says that āsauca on birth though longer in duration can be got rid of by āsauca on death which is of lesser extent.

The Mit. on Yāj. III. 20 (first half) states an exception to the above rules about āsauca-sannipāta. When a person's mother dies and then, while the period of āsauca for the mother's death is not over, the father dies, it does not follow that the āsauca for the father comes to an end with the end of the āsauca for the mother, but the son has to observe the full period of ⁶⁶⁰ the āsauca for father's death. Similarly, if the father died first and then, while the period of āsauca for the father was not over, the mother died, it does not follow that the āsauca for the mother's death comes to an end with the end of the first period of āsauca for the father, but the son after observing the period of the father's āsauca has to observe āsauca for the mother for one pakṣiṇī in addition. It may be remarked that Aparārka construes this verse differently by stating that if the father dies during the period of āsauca for the death of the mother, then the general rule applies, viz. that purification follows at the end of the āsauca for the mother.

659. जातके नैव मृतकं क्षयं याति न संशयः । बृहद्यम IV. 20; जातके मृतकं वा स्यान्मृतके मृतकं तथा । मृतके मृतके शुद्धिमृते शुद्धिस्तु मृतके ॥ लघुहारीत 58.

660. तथा सजातीयान्तःपातित्वेपि शवस्य कश्चित्पूर्वशेषेण शुद्धेरभावः स्मृत्युक्तैर्दृष्टः । मातर्यग्रे प्रमीतायामशुद्धौ म्रियते पिता । पितुःशेषेण शुद्धिः स्यन्मातुः शुद्धिः पक्षिणीम् ॥ मित्ता. on या. III. 20. The verse is ascribed to शङ्ख by अपरार्क p. 900, परा. मा. I. 2. p. 267, शुद्धिप्रकाश p. 76. Verses 24-25 of the पदशीति contain the same idea; मद्. पा. p. 438 ascribes it to अङ्गिरस्.

If, while an āśauca on death is being undergone, an āśauca on birth arises, the father of the child born is able to perform the rites of Jātakarma and the like, because he is to be deemed to be purified for the nonce, according to Prajāpati.⁶⁶¹

The Śaḍaśīti (verse 22) provides⁶⁶² that the rule about purification on the expiry of the first āśauca in the case of succeeding āśaucas on birth or death has three exceptions, viz. a woman who is delivered of a child, the person who actually cremates the body (of the deceased) and the sons of the deceased; that is, a *sūtikā* has to observe the proper period of untouchability and one who cremates a dead body has to observe āśauca for ten days, though the delivery or cremation takes place in the midst of an āśauca on death.

SADYAH—ŚAUCA (purification on the same day). It has already been seen (p. 274) that Dakṣa (VI. 2) speaks of ten kinds of impurity on birth or death, the first two of which are *sadyah-śauca* and *ekāha*. *Ekāha* means day and night together (vide note 622 above). The ordinary meaning of 'sadyah' is 'at once, immediately.' But when Yāj. III. 29, Parāśara III. 10, Atri 97 and other smṛtis employ the word 'sadyah-śauca' what is meant is that there is no āśauca for a whole day or three days or ten days, but only up to the taking of a bath or up to the end of the day or the end of the night on which the event occurs. Pāṇini⁶⁶³ mentions 'sadyah' and thirteen other words in one sūtra as *nipātas* (irregularly formed). From Yāj. III. 23 (*ānantajanmanah sadya ācūdānnaiśikī smṛtā*) it impliedly follows that *sadyah* has the meaning of 'a part of a day or a part of the night' (as the case may be) and 'naiśikī' means a whole day and night (as note 622 shows). The Śuddhitattva

661. प्रेतक्रिया पुनः सूतकसंनिपातेऽपि न निवर्तत इति तेनैवोक्तम् (ज्ञातात्पेन) । तथा शावाशौचयोः सञ्निपातेऽपि प्रेतकृत्यं कार्यम् । तुल्यन्यायत्वात् । तथा जातकर्मादिकमपि पुत्रजन्मनिमित्तकमाशौचान्तरसञ्निपातेऽपि कार्यमेव । तथाह प्रजापतिः । आशौचे तु समुत्पन्ने पुत्रजन्म यदा भवेत् । कर्तुंस्तात्कालिकी शुद्धिः पूर्वाशौचेन शुध्यति । मिता. cn या. III. 20, मद. पा. p. 439.

662. पूर्वशेषेण या शुद्धिः सूतिनां मृतिनां तथा । सूतिकामग्निदं हित्वा प्रेतस्य च सूतानपि ॥ षडशीति 22; this is made clear by the verses of देवल and श्रुतिस्मृत्युपाध्याय quoted by शुद्धिचन्द्रिका on षडशीति 'सूतिकानां भवेच्छुद्धिः कालेनैव पुनः शौचं । नाशौचान्तरपातेन सूतके मृतकेऽपि च । सपिण्डानां तु यः कश्चिद्देहात् दहेत वा । दशहं तु नान्याशौचेन शुध्यति ॥'

663. सद्यःपरुत्परार्येषमः परेद्यव्यद्यपूर्वेद्युरन्येद्युरन्यतरेद्युरितरेद्युरपरेद्युरधरेद्युरभवेद्युरस्य । पा. V. 3, 22. 'समानस्य सभावो द्यस् चाहनि' is वार्तिक on the सूत्र. The महाभाष्य explains 'समानेऽहनि सद्यः'.

(pp. 340-341) explains ⁶⁶⁴ 'sadyah' as meaning 'a portion of the day or of the night' and cites several authorities in support. The Śuddhiprakāśa (p. 92) explains that 'sadyahśauca' in some contexts means 'absence of āśauca,' while in others it means 'bath' and with reference to those killed in battle and the like (to whom pinḍas have to be offered) it means 'a part of the day or of the night.' The Smṛtimuktāphala ⁶⁶⁵ (āśaucakāṇḍa) p.481 says that 'sadyahśauca' means 'impurity that comes to an end by a bath.' That pinḍas have to be offered to those about whom there is 'sadyahśauca' is stated by the Ādipurāṇa. ⁶⁶⁶ According to the Śuddhikaumudī (p. 73) 'sadyahśauca' has two meanings, viz. (1) the entire absence of āśauca as in the cases of sacrificial priests &c. (Yāj. III. 28), (2) āśauca that is removed by a mere bath (as in Manu V. 76).

The rules about āśauca for several days do not operate in five classes of cases, viz. certain persons are exempted altogether, certain activities of certain persons who would ordinarily be untouchable owing to āśauca are allowed without causing pollution, certain articles can be taken by anybody without fear of pollution from those who are affected by āśauca, no āśauca is to be observed for certain deceased persons owing to their faults, in the case of certain persons express texts say that no āśauca need be observed for them. These five classes will briefly be dealt with in order. In the principal texts these five classes of cases are rather mixed up. In the Viṣṇupurāṇa III. 13.7 it is provided that there is sadyahśauca on the death of a child, or of a person dying in another country, of a patita, or of an ascetic or on the death of a person committing suicide by water, fire or hanging. Vide also Gaut. 14.11 and 42 and Vāmanapurāṇa 14.99.

664. अत्र सद्यःपदमहोरात्रार्धपरम्... द्वे सन्ध्ये सद्य इत्याहुस्त्रिसन्ध्यैकाहिकः स्मृतः। द्वावह्नावेकरात्रिश्च पक्षिणीत्यभिधीयते ॥ इति भट्टनारायणवचनात्। द्वे सन्ध्ये सद्य इत्याहुस्त्रिसन्ध्यैकाह उच्यते। दिनद्वयैकरात्रिस्तु पक्षिणीत्यभिधीयते इति नव्यवर्धमानधृतवचनाच्च। सद्य एकाहेनाशौचमिति पारिजाते सद्य एकाहेनेति स्मृतिसारे। एकमहः सद्य इति शुद्धिपञ्ज्यां दर्शनाच्चेति। तच्चार्धं दिनमात्रं रात्रिमात्रं च। एतदेव काचित् सज्योतिःपदेन व्यपदिश्यते। शुद्धि-तत्त्व pp. 340-341. शुद्धिप्रकाश p. 93 states that the verse द्वे सन्ध्ये सद्य occurs in the गोभिलभाष्य of नारायणभट्ट.

665. सद्यःशौचं नाम स्नानान्तमघम्। सद्यःशौचे तु तावत्स्यादाशौचं संस्थितस्य तु। यावत्स्नानं न कुर्वन्ति सच्चैलं बान्धवा बहिः ॥ इत्याङ्गिरःस्मरणात्। स्मृतिमु. p. 481.

666. दिवसे दिवसे पिण्डो देय एवं क्रमेण तु। सद्यःशौचेपि दातव्याः सर्वेपि युगपत्तथा॥ आदिपुराण q. by हारलता p. 165. The latter half is cited as from ब्रह्मपुराण by रघुनाथ on त्रिंशच्छोकी verse 28 p. 249. It is not unlikely that the ब्रह्मपुराण which is mentioned in several works as the first of the 18 पुराणसु was therefore called आदिपुराण.



Yāj. (III. 28-29) prescribes that there is sadyaḥśauca (purification after a bath) in case of birth or death (of a sapinda) for priests chosen for a sacrifice (after they are offered Madhuparka), for those who have undergone *dīkṣā* for a vedic sacrifice (like *Somayāga*) and those who are engaged in performing the constituent parts of a Vedic sacrifice, those who continuously distribute food at a charity house, those who are engaged in *prāyaścittas* like *cāndrāyana* or the vows of *snātakas*, for brahmacārins (when performing the duties of their *āśrama*), for persons who everyday make gifts of a cow, gold etc. (at the time of making the gift), for those who have realized Brahman (ascetics); there is sadyaḥśauca at gifts (when once begun), at marriage, in a Vedic sacrifice, in battle (for those who are about to be engaged in it), when there is commotion in a country (through invasion), and in a severe calamity (like famine when one can accept food from any body). Gaut. (14. 43-44) says that there is sadyaḥśauca in the case of kings as otherwise there will be obstacles in their duties and also in the case of brāhmaṇas in order to prevent the cessation of their duties of teaching. Śaṅkhalikhita say the same 'Rajā dharmāyatanam sarveṣāṃ tasmādanavaruddhaḥ pretaprasa-vadoṣaiḥ' (Śuddhikalpataru p. 62). It is stated in Manu V. 93 that kings, ⁶⁶⁷ those engaged in *vratas* and *sattras* (like *Gavām-ayana*) are not liable to undergo the blemish of āśauca, because they (kings) occupy the position of Indra (ruler) and are like Brahma (which is free from all taint) and Manu V. 94 clinches the matter further by observing 'sadyaḥśauca is ordained for the position of a king which can be obtained only by great merit (in past lives) for the sake of the protection of the subjects and the reason of this (rule) is the position that he occupies.' Similarly, Gobhilasmṛti ⁶⁶⁸

667. न राज्ञामद्यदोषोस्ति व्रतिनां न च सत्रिणाम्। ऐन्द्रं स्थानमुपासीना ब्रह्मभूता हि ते सदा ॥ राज्ञो माहात्मिके स्थाने सद्यःशौचं विधीयते। प्रजानां परिरक्षार्थमासनं चात्र कारणम् ॥ मनु V. 93-94. The first verse is the same as Vasiṣṭha 19.48 (Furher's text is corrupt, which must be corrected into नाद्यदोषोस्ति) which cites it as Yama's.

It is the position that he holds that renders the king (whether a *ksatriya*, *brāhmaṇa* or *śūdra*) free from āśauca. The विष्णुधर्मसूत्र (22. 47-52) restricts the absence of āśauca by saying 'kings are free from āśauca when they are performing the duties of a king (such as administration of justice)': 'न राजा राजकर्मणि न व्रतिनां व्रते न सत्रिणां सत्रे न कारुणां स्वकर्मणि न राजाज्ञाकारिणां तद्विचारात्' ॥

668. न त्यजेत्सूतके कर्म ब्रह्मचारी स्वकं क्वचित्। न दीक्षणात्परं यज्ञे न कृच्छ्रादि तपश्चरन् ॥ पितर्यपि मृते नैषां दोषो भवति कर्हिचित्। गोभिलस्मृति III. 64-65 q. by हारलता p. 107, अपरार्क p. 919, शुद्धिकल्प. p. 64.

(III. 64-65, often quoted as Chandogapariśiṣṭa of Kātyāyana) states 'in a sūta, a brahmacārin should not give up his peculiar duties (Veda study and vratas), a sacrificer his various actions (required) in a sacrifice after he has undergone dikṣā, one who is practising penance should not give up kṛcchra and the like; these do not incur impurity even on the death of their father (or mother)'. The Kūrmapurāna⁶⁶⁹ provides 'no impurity is declared on death in the case of perpetual or temporary brahmacārins, forest hermits or ascetics'. Similar rules are given by Atri 97-98, Liṅga-purāna, pūrvabhāga, chap. 89.77. The Mit. on Yāj. III. 28 remarks that in the case of the three āśramas of brahmacārin, vānaprastha and yati there is freedom from impurity in all cases and at all times; ascetics and brahmacārins have to undergo a bath with clothes on the death of their father or mother (Dharmasindhu p. 442); in the case of several others such as those who are continually making gifts or are observing vratas there is freedom from impurity only when they are engaged in those particular actions and not when they are engaged in any action whatever or when they mix up among others for everyday work.⁶⁷⁰ Similar rules occur in Parāśara III.21-22. It has already been stated following Manu V. 91 (= Viṣṇu 22.86) that a brahmacārin was not to perform the last rites (of carrying the corpse, cremation) for anybody except for five persons (viz. his parents, upādhyāya, ācārya and guru). He did not incur āśauca by performing the funeral rites of his parents and offering water and piṇḍa to them. But if he did so for any one other than the five mentioned by Manu he had to observe āśauca for ten days, and to undergo prāyaścitta and had his upanayana performed again. A brahmacārin had to observe after samāvartana (returning from the Vedic teacher) āśauca for three days for all relatives that died during the period of his studenthood (Manu V. 88, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 22.87). Gautama (14. 42-44) says generally⁶⁷¹ that on the death of child-

669. नैष्ठिकानां व्रतस्थानां यतीनां ब्रह्मचारिणाम् । नाशौचं कीर्तितं सद्भिः पतिते च तथा मृते ॥ कूर्मपुराण (उत्तरार्ध) 23.61 q. by हारलता p. 114, परा. मा. I. 2. p. 254. देवल has almost the same verse, नैष्ठिकानां...शौचं मृतके प्रोक्तं शौचे वापि तथैव च ॥ q. by परा. मा. I. 2. p. 254, निर्णयसिन्धु p. 543. A similar verse occurs in लिङ्ग-पुराण (पूर्वार्ध) chap. 89.77.

670. सत्रिणां व्रतिनां सत्रे व्रते च ह्युद्धिर्न कर्ममात्रे संन्यवहारे वा । ... ब्रह्मचरिणोऽपि एतेषां च त्रयाणमाश्रमिणां सर्वत्र ह्युद्धिः । विशेषे प्रमाणाभावात् । मिता. on या. III. 28

671. बालवेशान्तरितप्रव्रजितासपिण्डानां सद्यःशौचम् । राज्ञां च कार्यविरहितम् । ब्राह्मणस्य च स्वाध्यायनिवृत्त्यर्थम् । गौ. 14.42-44. पराशर III. 10 and वासिष्ठ 14.99-100 contain verses almost in the same words as the first sūtra.



ren (before the appearance of teeth or before Cūḍā), of those who are separated by a country, of ascetics and of those who are not sapindas, the relatives are purified by only a bath; so also there is sadyaḥśauca for kings, for otherwise there would be conflict with their duty (of protecting the subjects) and for a brāhmaṇa also in order that there may be no cessation of Vedic study.⁶⁷² The Śuddhiprakāśa (p. 93) remarks that though there is no āsauca (as stated by Yāj. III. 28) yet a sacrificial priest and a dīkṣita had to bathe on the death of a sapinda, a brahmacārin also would have to take a bath if he followed the funeral procession of his father or mother &c., but an ascetic would not have even to bathe and that usage was the same in its day.

The second class of exceptions refers to cases where certain persons, though they have incurred āsauca, are allowed to do certain acts or carry on their activities without bringing pollution to those with whom they deal or come in contact. For example, Parāśara (III. 20-21) says; 'craftsmen (such as those who draw pictures or washermen), workers (cooks and the like), physicians, male and female slaves, barbers, kings and śrotriyaś are declared to be sadyaḥśauca, as also one observing a vrata (cāndrāyana &c.), one purified by being engaged in a sattra (such as Gavām-ayana), a brāhmaṇa who has established śrauta fires; the king has not to observe āsauca and also any one (such as his purohita) whom the king for his own purpose desires not to observe it.' The Ādipurāṇa⁶⁷³ gives the reason why craftsmen, physicians and others were allowed not to observe āsauca when engaged in their peculiar tasks, viz. what these people do cannot be done by any one else at all or at least so well or so easily.

672. शिल्पिनः कारुका वैद्या दासीदासाश्च नापिताः । राजानः श्रोत्रियाश्चैव सद्यःशीचाः प्रकीर्तिताः ॥ सत्रतः सत्रपूतश्च आहिताग्निश्च यो द्विजः । राज्ञश्च सूतकं नास्ति यस्य चेच्छति पार्थिवः ॥ पराशर III.20-21,

673. तथा चादिपुराणे । शिल्पिनश्चित्रकाराद्याः कर्म यत्साधयन्त्यलम् । तत्कर्म नान्यो जानाति तस्माच्छुद्धाः स्वकर्मणि । सूत्रकारेण यत्कर्म करणीयं नरोऽपि न । तदन्यो नैव जानाति तस्माच्छुद्धः स सूत्रकृत् ॥ चिकित्सको यत्कुरुते तदन्येन न शक्यते । तस्माच्चिकित्सकः स्पर्शो शुद्धो भवति नित्यशः ॥ दास्यो दासाश्च यत्किञ्चित् कुर्वन्त्यपि च लीलया । तदन्यो न क्षमः कर्तुं तस्मात्ते शुचयः सदा ॥ राजा करोति यत्कर्म स्वमेऽयन्यस्य तत्कथम् । एवं सति वृषः शुद्धः संस्पर्शो मृतसूतके ॥ यत्कर्म राजभृत्यानां हस्त्यश्वगमनादिकम् । तन्नास्ति यस्मादन्यस्य तस्मात्ते शुचयः स्मृताः ॥ q. by परा. मा. I. 2, pp. 255-256. Three of these from सूत्रकारेण are quoted as from ब्रह्मपुराण by हारलता p. 110, as from आदिपुराण by शुद्धितत्त्व pp. 289-90 and all from सूत्रकारेण onwards are quoted from आदिपुराण by शुद्धिप्र. p. 95; the verse चिकित्सको is q. by मिता. on या. III. 27.

It has ⁶⁷⁴ to be noted that the absence of āśauca in the case of craftsmen, physicians and the like has to be restricted to the peculiar activities of these and does not extend to all actions such as religious rites, śrāddhas and gifts. This is clear from the words of the Viṣṇudharmasūtra ⁶⁷⁵ 22. 48-52. The Trīmśacchloki (verse 18) ⁶⁷⁶ gives a long list of such peculiar activities. The Kūrmapurāṇa (Uttarārdha 23. 57-64) has nine verses on this topic which are quoted by the Hāralatā (p. 114).

It has already been seen (pp. 238-240) that Pār. gr. III. 10 (nityāni vinivartante vaitānavarjam), Manu. V. 84, Yāj. III. 17 (latter half) provide that even those who have to undergo āśauca on death should not stop rites to be performed with śrauta fires, but should perform them themselves or get them performed through others. Thus certain religious rites were allowed to be done even by those who were āśaucin.

The Dharmasindhu (p. 552) emphasizes that this exception to āśauca should be availed of only when there is no other alternative or in a season of distress.

It has already been stated how certain materials and things can be received without any pollution from those who are undergoing āśauca. That is the third class of cases which are exceptions to the rules of āśauca.

The fourth class of cases where rules of āśauca do not apply relate to persons deceased to whom some fault or taint attaches. Gaut. (14. 11) ⁶⁷⁷ and Śāṅkha-Likhita provide that there is sadyahśauca for those who kill themselves (i. e. commit suicide) by starting on the great journey (to the Himālaya), by fasting, by a weapon (like a dagger), by fire or poison or water or by hanging or by falling down from a precipice.

674. अयं चाशौचाभावस्तत्तदसाधारणकर्मण्यस्पृश्यत्वप्रतिषेधरूपो बोध्यः, न तु सर्वेषु दानश्राद्धादिधर्मकृत्येष्वशौचाभावः। शुद्धिप्र. p. 95.

675. (आशौचं) न राज्ञां राजकर्मणि। न व्रतिनां व्रते। न सत्रिणां सत्रे। न कारुणां कारुकर्मणि। न राजाज्ञाकारिणां तदिच्छया। विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 22. 48-52.

676. तत्तत्कार्येषु सत्रिव्रतितृपचपवद्दीक्षितत्विक्स्वदेशभ्रंशापत्त्वप्यनेकश्रुतिपठनभिष-
कारुशिल्प्यातुराणाम्। संप्रारब्धेषु दानोपनयनयजनश्राद्धयुद्धप्रतिष्ठाचूडातीर्थार्थयात्राजप-
रिणयनाद्युत्सवेष्वेतदर्थं॥ त्रिंशच्छ्लोकी 18. तृपवत् means तृपसेवक.

677. For गौ. 14.11 vide note 522 above; प्रायश्चित्तविषोदकोद्बन्धनप्रपतनै-
श्चेच्छताम्। अथः शस्त्रानाशकाग्निरेजु-भृगु-जल-विषप्रमाणेष्वेवमेव। शङ्खलिखितौ q. b.
हारलता p. 113; भृग्वग्निपाशकाम्भोभिर्भुतानामात्मघातिनाम्। पतितान च नाशौचं विद्युच्छ्र-
हताश्च ये॥ अग्निपुराण 157.32. Vide वामनपुराण 14. 99-100.



Yāj. III. 6 provides ⁶⁷⁸ that women that have gone over to heterodox views and practices, that do not belong to any particular āśrama, that are thieves (of gold and the like), that (attempt to) kill their husbands, that are unchaste and the like, that drink liquor and that attempt suicide, do not deserve to have water offered to them (on death) and no āśauca should be observed for them. This verse applies to men also as far as possible. Manu V. 89-90 are to the same effect. The Kūrmapurāṇa also prescribes ⁶⁷⁹ that for him who kills himself by means of fire, poison and the like, no āśauca, no cremation and no offering of water is prescribed, there is no cremation for *patitas*, nor *antyeṣṭi* nor collection of bones, no shedding of tears and no *pinda* and no *śrāddha* should be performed for them. It is provided by Āṅgiras quoted by Mit. on Yāj. III. 6 that 'death results to evil-minded men from *cāṇḍālas* (with whom a quarrel is purposely got up), from water, from a snake, from a *brāhmaṇa*, from lightning and from animals that have sharp fangs (like tigers). If water and *pinda* are offered to such people (who die wilfully in these cases) they (water and *pinda*) do not reach them and perish in mid air.' These verses refer to death in a wrathful fight with tigers, snakes and the like or suicide in water through wrath or sorrow. But, if one died in water or by fire through inadvertence or negligence, then Āṅgiras ⁶⁸⁰ himself provides that water should be offered and āśauca should be observed. Long passages are quoted from the Brahmapurāṇa by Haradatta on Gaut. 14. 11, Śuddhiprakāśa pp. 56-57, Nirṇayasindhu p. 550, which elaborate the same ideas as those of Yāj. III. 6, Āṅgiras and others and wind up by stating that if any one offers water or *śrāddha* to *patitas* through affection or cremates them, he has to undergo *prāyaścitta* (viz. two *Taptakrechas*).

678. For या. III. 6 read p. 222 above. अपरार्क reads 'पाषण्डानाश्रिताः' and explains 'पाषण्डान्बौद्धादीनाश्रिताः तदीक्षायां मविष्टाः', while the मिता reads पाषण्डानाश्रिताः and makes two different classes.

679. पतितानां न दाहः ; vide note 522 above ; the अग्निपुराण (159. 2-4) states 'आत्मनस्त्यागिनां नास्ति पतितानां तथा क्रिया । तेषामपि तथा गाङ्गे तोयेऽऽर्चनां पतनं हितम् । तेषां दत्तं जलं चाक्षं गगने तत्प्रलीयते । अनुग्रहेण महता प्रेतस्य पतितस्य च । नारायणबलिः कार्यस्तेनानुग्रहमश्नुते ॥ '

680. यदि कश्चित्प्रमादेन म्रियेताग्न्युदकादिभिः । तस्याशीचं विधातव्यं कर्तव्यं चोदक-क्रिया ॥ अङ्गिरसु q. by मिता. on या. III. 6. A similar verse is औशनसस्मृति (Jiv. vol. I p. 540), chap. VII.

If an *āhitāgni* were killed by *cāṇḍālas* in defiant fight with them or commits suicide, his corpse should be got cremated by *śūdras* without proper mantras and *Gobhilasmṛti* (III. 49-51) provides for the disposal of his *śrauta* fires and sacrificial implements. Though suicide was generally condemned, the *smṛtis* (such as *Atri* 218-219) and *Purāṇas* allowed certain exceptions, viz. very old men (above 70), very weak men who cannot observe the rules of bodily purification or those who have no desire left for the pleasures of the senses or who have carried out all tasks and duties, may start on *Mahāprasthāna* or die at *Prayāga*. Vide H. of Dh. vol. II. pp. 926-928 for detailed treatment of this topic. If a man killed himself in the way allowed by the *śāstra* then there was no blemish and *āsauca* had to be observed and water and *śrāddha* had to be offered. It may be noted that starting on *Mahāprasthāna* and suicide on the part of old men by falling down from a precipice or in fire are forbidden in the *Kali* age. Vide H. of Dh. vol. III p. 939 and pp. 958-959.

The Mit. on Yāj. III. 6 quotes *Vṛddha-Yājñavalkya* and *Chāgaleya* to the effect that in the case of those who commit suicide in any manner that is not sanctioned by the *śāstras*, *Nārāyaṇabali* should be performed one year after their death and then the rites of *śrāddha* may be performed thereafter. The Mit.⁶⁸¹ on Yāj. III. 6) relying on *Viṣṇupurāṇa* describes the *Nārāyaṇabali* as follows: On the 11th day of the bright half of a month, having worshipped *Viṣṇu* and *Yama*, one should with the face to the south offer near them on *darbhas* with ends turned towards the south ten *piṇḍas* laved with honey and ghee and mixed with sesame after bringing to mind the deceased⁶⁸² who should be looked upon as having the form of *Viṣṇu* and having uttered the name and gotra of the deceased; he should honour the *piṇḍas* with sandalwood paste and the rest and having performed all the rites up to the removal of *piṇḍas*, should cast them in a river and not give them to the

681. एवं नारायणबलिः प्रेतस्य शुद्ध्यापादनद्वारेण श्राद्धादिसंप्रदानत्वे योग्यतां जनयतीति और्ध्वदेहिकमपि सर्वं कार्यमेव । अत एव षट्त्रिंशन्मतेऽपि और्ध्वदेहिकस्याभ्यनुज्ञा दृश्यते । गोब्राह्मणहतानां च पतितानां तथैव च । ऊर्ध्वं संवत्सरात्कुर्यात्सर्वमेवौर्ध्वदेहिकम् ॥ इति । एवं संवत्सरादूर्ध्वमेव नारायणबलिं कृत्वौर्ध्वदेहिकं कार्यम् । मिता. on या. III. 6. The same provisions are recommended by परा. मा. I. 2 pp. 226-227, स्मृतिश्रु. p. 489. Vide गरुड, प्रेतखण्ड, 40. 15-65 for नारायणबलि.

682. The संकल्प will be अमुकगोत्रस्यामुकस्य दुर्मरणात्मघातजदोषनाशार्थमौर्ध्वदेहिकसंप्रदानत्वयोग्यतासिद्ध्यर्थं नारायणबलिं करिष्ये इति संकल्प्य । निर्णयसिन्धु p. 559.

wife or to others. Then on the night of the same day he should invite an uneven number of brāhmaṇas, should observe a fast, should worship Viṣṇu the next day, in the noon he should perform all the rites from washing the feet of brāhmaṇas up to the query about the gratification of the brāhmaṇas (by the food served to them) according to the procedure of *ekoddīṣṭa śrāddha*, then he should silently go through all the rites from *ullekhana* (drawing lines) up to *avanejana* (anointing) by the procedure of *Pinda-pitryajña*. He should offer four pindas to (images of) Viṣṇu, Brahmā, Śiva and Yama together with the attendants, should remember the deceased by name and gotra, should utter the name of Viṣṇu and then offer the 5th pinda. Then having gratified the brāhmaṇas (after they have sipped water) with fee, he should bring to his mind one (of the brāhmaṇas) that is the most qualified of all as representing the deceased and having gratified him to the utmost with the gifts of cows, land and money, should then make the brāhmaṇas that have *pavitrās* on their hands offer to the deceased water together with sesame and should then take his meal along with his relatives.

The passage quoted by the Mit. makes it clear that Nārāyaṇabali is meant only for those who commit suicide and is to be offered one year after the death of the person guilty of suicide. The *Hāralatā*⁶⁸³ (p. 212) also says the same and explains a verse of Viṣṇu extending the performance of Nārāyaṇabali to those killed by cows and brāhmaṇas and those who become *patita* as a usage restricted to a certain country only.⁶⁸⁴

The *Antyeṣṭipaddhati* of Nārāyaṇabhaṭṭa describes (on folio 187) Nārāyaṇabali rite at greater length than in the *Mitākṣarā*. One or two details may be pointed out. Five *kalāśas* (jars) are to be placed over a quantity of rice or *yavas*, then filled with water, then have the three mantras 'Āpo hi ṣṭhā'

683. आत्मघातिन इत्याभिधानात् आत्मघातकमात्रस्यैवेदं विधानं न तु महापातक्यादीनामिति दर्शयति। विष्णुः। गोब्राह्मणहतानां च पतितानां तथैव च। ऊर्ध्वं संवत्सरात्कुर्यात् सर्वमेवौर्ध्वदेहिकम् ॥ एतच्च देशविशेषव्यवस्थितमिति आदिपुराणवचन एवोक्तं। हारलता 212. A long passage is quoted from आदिपुराण in हारलता pp. 203-205, the last verses of which are: क्रियते पतितानां तु गते संवत्सरे कच्चित्। देशधर्मप्रमाणत्वात् प्रयाकूपेषु बन्धुभिः। मार्तण्डपादमूले वा श्राद्धं हरिहरं स्मरन्।

684. Nārāyaṇabali is described in the Appendix B to the Sholapur District Gazetteer in Bom. Gaz. vol. XX. pp. 522-523.

(Rg. X. 9. 1-3) repeated over them, then copper plates are to be placed over them on which five images of Brahmā, Viṣṇu, Śiva, Yama and the deceased are to be drawn and the worship of these five is to be performed respectively with the Puruṣa-sūkta (Rg. X. 90), Rg. X. 121. 1-10, Rg. I. 43. 1 (= Tai. Ā. X. 17), Rg. X. 14. 13 and the name and gotra of the deceased, sixteen oblations of cooked rice are to be offered to Nārāyaṇa with the sixteen verses of the Puruṣasūkta (Rg. X. 90). Ten pinḍas⁶⁸⁵ are to be offered on *darbhas* to the deceased after repeating his name and gotra (as stated in the note below). After the ten pinḍas are cast in a river, there is *tarpaṇa* of the deceased sixteen times with the sixteen stanzas of the Puruṣa-sūkta. Then *bali* is offered separately to Viṣṇu, Brahmā, Śiva and Yama with his servants.

In the Mitākṣarā, there is no homa nor bali, both of which are described in the Āntyeṣṭipaddhati and the Smṛtyarthasāra (pp. 85-86) copies verbatim the procedure given in the Mit. Brhatparāśara (V. pp. 175-176) contains the same procedure that is set out by the Mit. from the Viṣṇupurāṇa. The Nirṇaya-sindhu first describes Nārāyaṇabali as gathered from Hemādri and the Garuḍapurāṇa (III. 4. 113-119). It then describes Nārāyaṇabali to be performed for a deceased ascetic on the 12th day (along with Pārvaṇaśrāddha), following the procedure laid down by Baudhāyana. It then describes another form of Nārāyaṇabali based on Śaunaka which is meant for all those who commit suicide or who are killed by cāṇḍālas,⁶⁸⁶ snakes, lightning, animals with fangs or who die in a distant land or for ascetics and *yogins*. The Vṛddha-Hārītasṁṛti (IX. 123-143) describes another method of Nārāyaṇabali for devotees of Viṣṇu.

The Vaikhāṇasa-smārtasūtra (X. 9) sets out a rather brief procedure of Nārāyaṇabali which was intended for the benefit of men who committed suicide or were slain and for ascetics and provides that the same may be performed for those guilty of *mahāpātakas* after twelve years from their death. The

685. अर्चितदेवसमीपे अमुकगोत्रायामुक्तशर्मणे प्रेताय विष्णुरूपिणेऽयं विष्णुः- इति मधुघृताहुतास्तिलमिश्रान्दश पिण्डान् विष्णुरूपिणं प्रेतमनुस्मरन् प्रेतस्य नामगोत्रे उच्चार्य दक्षिणाग्रेषु दर्भेषु दक्षिणामुखोऽपसव्येन दत्त्वा । ततः पुरुषसूक्तेन प्रेतस्य नामगोत्रे उक्त्वा अमुकं नारायणरूपं तर्पयामीति षोडशवारं तर्पयेत्प्रवृत्तम् । अन्त्येष्टिपद्धति.

686. चाण्डालादुदकात्सर्पाद्बाह्याद्वैद्यतादपि । दंष्ट्रिभ्यश्च पशुभ्यश्च मरणं पापकर्मिणाम् ॥ बौ. य. शेषसूत्र III. 21. The same is q. by अपरार्क p. 877 as यम's, as स्मृत्यन्तर by ह्युद्दिप्र. p. 56 and without name by the मिता, on या. III. 6.



Baudhāyana-gr̥hya-śeṣasūtra III. 20 and 21 contain two different sets of the procedure of Nārāyaṇabali, the latter of which appears to be the later one. The latter contains the well-known verse about death at the hands of cāṇḍālas, from a snake &c.

The 5th class of exceptions to āśauca rules comprises those that are declared by express texts as not liable to observe an āśauca. Gautama (14. 8-10) provides⁶⁸⁷ that (the sapindas) of those that met death for the sake of cows and brāhmaṇas, of those that met death through the wrath of the king and those that were killed in battle have to observe no āśauca but only 'sadyaḥśauca'. Manu V. 95 and 98 state⁶⁸⁸ that (the sapindas) of those that are killed in a sudden affray or by lightning or by the king (for an offence) or of those that met death in protecting cows and brāhmaṇas and of one who was killed in the fashion of kṣatriyas in a battle by the sword have to observe no āśauca, as also he whom the king desires (for his purpose) to observe no āśauca. It is provided by Śātātapa⁶⁸⁹ that as regards a *yati* dying, his sons and other sapindas are not to offer water or piṇḍa to him or to observe āśauca for him. The Dharmasindhu (p. 449) says that this applies to all ascetics, whether they be *tridaṇḍin* or *ekadaṇḍin*, *hamsas* or *paramahamsas*. So also on the death of a *vānaprastha* there is no āśauca. In the case of one who has performed his own śrāddha while alive his sapindas have an option either to observe āśauca or not. On the death of a brahmācārīn āśauca is to be observed. The Dharmasindhu further notes that in all works it is stated that there is no āśauca⁶⁹⁰ for one killed in battle, but at least

687. गोब्राह्मणहतानामन्वक्षम् । राजक्रोधाच्च । युद्धे । गौ. 14 8-10. हरदत्त explains 'अन्वक्ष्यते प्रत्यक्ष्यते शवस्तावत्संस्कारान्ते स्नात्वा शुद्धेरन्निति', while the मिता. on Ya. III. 21 (first half) explains 'तत्सम्बन्धिनां चान्वक्षमनुगतमक्षमन्वक्षं सद्यःशौचमित्यर्थः.' The मिताक्षरा takes the corresponding passage of Yāj. III. 21 (first half) to mean 'of those that were killed by the king, by bulls or brāhmaṇas'. The मिता. reads राजक्रोधाच्चायुद्धे, while हरदत्त says that he does not like to read आयुद्धे but would read आयुद्धे.

688. डिम्बाहवे हतानां च विद्युता पार्थिवेन च । गोब्राह्मणस्य चैवार्थे यस्य चेच्छति पार्थिवः ॥ मनु V. 95. डिम्बाहव is explained by कुल्लुक and हारलता (p. 111) as 'चूषति-रहितं युद्धं,' while हरदत्त takes डिम्ब to mean जनसंमर्द and अपरार्क p. 916 explains डिम्बाहव as अशस्त्रकलह and शुद्धिकल्पतरु as अशस्त्रकलहः संमर्दो वा (p. 46).

689. एकोद्दिष्टं जलं पिण्डमाशौचं प्रेतसत्क्रियाम् । न कुर्यात्पार्वणादन्यद् धर्मसिन्धु ॥ शातातप. स्मृतिच. (आशौच) p. 171 ascribes this to वसिष्ठ.

690. युद्धमृतेऽप्याशौचं नेति सर्वग्रन्थेषूपलभ्यते न त्वेवं ब्राह्मणेषु शिष्टाचार-धर्मसिन्धु p. 449.

among brāhmaṇas (i. e. as to brāhmaṇas killed in battle) the usage of the *śiṣṭas* is different (i. e. āsauca is observed).

Parāśara (III. 12-13) provides that, if a man has gone for many years to a distant land and it is ascertained that he died there but the exact date of his death is not known, then either of three *tithis* viz. the 8th or 11th day of the dark half or the amāvāsyā should be accepted as the day of his death and water, piṇḍa and śrāddha should be offered on that date and the Par. M. I. 2 p. 237 adds that āsauca also must be calculated from that date. On the other hand Laghu-Hārīta says that if there is some obstacle at the time of a śrāddha or when the date of death is not known, then the funeral rites should be performed on the 11th tithi of the following dark half (Śuddhikaumudī p. 17).

The digests lay particular emphasis on the fact that in matters of āsauca the usages of a country must be observed. The Hārīlatā (pp. 55, 205) quotes passages from the Ādipurāṇa where special reference is made to the authority of the usages of a country (deśa-dharmapramāṇatvāt). The Śuddhitattva p. 275 quotes⁶⁹¹ a verse of Marīci 'one should not disregard the manner of observing *śauca* and religious usages that are current in particular localities; the dharma is of that sort alone in those localities'. On p. 276 it quotes a passage of the Vāmanapurāṇa to the same effect.

It deserves to be noted that Dakṣa⁶⁹² (VI. 15) states that all rules about āsauca apply when the times are easy and peaceful but when a man is overwhelmed by distress there is no (enforcement or application) of the (rules of) āsauca.

Viṣṇu (19. 18-19) provides⁶⁹³ that at the end of the period of āsauca one should go out of the village, get himself shaved and take a bath after applying a thick paste of sesame or white mustard to the body, change garments and then re-enter the house. Then he should perform a *śānti* (propitiatory rite)

691. तथा च मरीचिः । येषु स्थानेषु यच्छौचं धर्माचारश्च यादृशः । तत्र तज्जावमन्येत धर्मस्तत्रैव तादृशः ॥ रुद्रधर in शुद्धिविवेक (D. C. ms. No 309 of 1887-91, folio 77 b), शु. कौ. p. 360, शुद्धितत्त्व p. 275; "तथा च वामनपुराणं 'देशानुशिष्टं कुलधर्ममन्यं स्वगोत्रधर्मं न हि संत्यजेच्च'" शुद्धितत्त्व p. 276.

692. स्वस्थकाले तथा सर्वं सूतकं परिकीर्तितम् । आपद्ग्रस्तस्य सर्वस्य सूतकेपि सूतकम् ॥ दक्ष VI. 15.

693. ग्रामाजिष्कम्याशौचान्ते कुतश्मश्रुकर्मणस्तिलकलकेः सर्पपकलकैर्वा स्नानं परिवर्तितवाससो गृहं प्रविशेयुः । तत्र शान्तिं कृत्वा ब्राह्मणानां च पूजनं कुर्युः । विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 19.18-19.

and honour brāhmanas. Many medieval digests provide for a more elaborate procedure. For example, the Śuddhikaumudī (pp. 155-164) sets out the procedure of the 11th day separately for the followers of the three Vedas. A few salient points may be mentioned. After a bath for the whole body, the sapindas should touch a cow, gold, fire, *dūrvā*, clarified butter and repeat the name of Govinda, then engage brāhmanas to sprinkle śānti water over them and say 'svasti'. If a brāhmaṇa cannot be had one should himself perform śānti. The Hārālatā and others say that without śānti water āśauca is not completely removed. The followers of Sāmaveda should sing the Vāmadevagāna for śānti or should repeat the four Vāmadevya verses viz. 'kayā naścitra,' 'kastvā satyo,' 'abhi sū naḥ' (No. 682-684 of the Sāmaveda) together with the last verse of the Sāmaveda ('svasti na Indro') preceded and followed by the sacred Gāyatrī; these form the śānti mantras for Sāmavedins. For followers of Yajurveda seventeen mantras beginning with 'ṛcam vācam prapadye' and ending with 'dyauḥ śāntiḥ', preceded and followed by the Gāyatrī form the śānti mantras; the Rgvedins should employ for śānti Rg. X. 9. 4, VII, 35. 1, V. 47. 7 &c. preceded and followed by the Gāyatrī. Then some gold with silver as dakṣiṇā should be donated to a brāhmaṇa, then the Vaitaraṇī cow should be donated, if one was not given at the approach of death, then a gift of the bedstead &c. should be made.

We have seen (p. 270) that originally the sūtras (like Śāṅ. Śr.) and smṛtis (like Manu) emphasized that one should not increase the number of the days of āśauca and that men learned in the Veda and consecrating śrauta fires had to undergo only one day's āśauca (Parāśara III. 5, Dakṣa VI. 6). But ultimately a flat period of ten days of āśauca (Manu V. 59) for all sapindas came to be prescribed. In the old days the means of communication were very limited, and hence the news of a birth or death must have taken considerable time to reach relatives staying even at a short distance and hence the restrictions imposed by the rules of āśauca were not felt to be very irksome. It is on account of this reason and also the great *penchant* of dharma-śāstra writers for all sorts of divisions, sub-divisions and classifications that we find medieval writers bestowing an enormously exaggerated attention in very exuberant and enthusiastic style on such a subject as āśauca. Most nations have their own usages to indicate that a person (male or female) or a family is in mourning. But probably no country in the world



can equal (much less surpass) the Dharmaśāstra writers in the elaborate rules evolved in books about āśauca on birth and death. In these days when there is a State postal system and the means of communication abound owing to railways, air-mail, telegraph and wireless, the ancient and medieval rules of āśauca are felt by all people to be most galling and troublesome. Mischievous people sometimes create trouble in the celebration of marriages by sending information about a death or a birth to persons against whom they have a grudge. Devices have to be employed for dodging the inconvenience due to rules of āśauca. It is therefore necessary to introduce substantial changes in the rules about āśauca that will prevent trouble, loss of time and work and would at the same time be more or less in agreement with the spirit of the dicta of the smṛtis and the sentiments of most common people. At the end in the appendix note 693a is added which gives the text of the Āśauca-daśaka with Sanskrit explanation.

As regards āśauca on birth I would recommend that hereafter in the changed set-up of society in these days one simple rule should be observed, viz. it is only the mother that has to observe impurity for ten days and no one else has to observe impurity on birth. This is in general accordance with the ancient smṛtis set out above.

As regards impurity on death four rules should ordinarily suffice.^{693a}

(1) Āśauca for ten days on death should be observed by the father and the mother for the son and by the son for the parents, by the wife for the husband and *vice versa* and by one who performs the rites of cremation and the rites after death.

(2) For others (than the above) staying near the deceased as members of a joint family āśauca for only three days should suffice.

(3) For all other relatives of the deceased whenever the news of death may reach them within a year after death, only a bath should be enough.

(4) When the death occurred more than a year before the news reached the relatives not even a bath should be required in the case of any relative except those mentioned in the first rule, who should be held clean after a bath.

Practices observed among ancient and modern primitive tribes show that the most important *tabus* were those on the dead, on women in child-birth and women in their monthly illness. Among the ancient Israelites all that were unclean through the dead were put outside the camp and they were not allowed to offer an offering at the Passover (Numbers V. 1-4 and IX. 6). Among the Syrians those who belonged to the family of the dead man were *tabu* for 30 days and could then enter only with shaven heads. Child-birth made a woman unclean and the number of days that she was to be unclean depended on whether the child was a male or a female (Leviticus 12. 2-5). In India also the ancient Aryans probably inherited their ideas about uncleanness on death and child-birth from their remote ancestors. If one may surmise one can say this: it must have been found out by the remote ancestors of the Vedic Aryans that if a person touched a dead body or used the clothes worn by the dead man when living, he also suffered from the same disease (particularly in the case of contagious diseases like plague, cholera, typhoid &c.) and that segregating such a person for ten days from other members of the tribe or community made the latter immune from the attack of such diseases. Therefore, those who touched the dead or carried the corpse for cremation or burial and the members of the family were thought to be unclean and were segregated for ten days. Gradually the ideas about the uncleanness on death and the necessity of segregation were made applicable to death due to all diseases or causes whatever. The uncleanness on child-birth might have been a case of extension by analogy derived from the *tabu* on death. At all events *smṛti* writers put both on the same level (e. g. Manu V. 61 "Just as impurity on death is ordained for ten days in the case of sapinda the same holds good in the case of birth"). Rules about women in their monthly illness were prescribed as early as the *Tai. S.* and have been already dealt with in *H. of Dh.* vol. II. pp. 802-805.

We have now to turn to the subject of *śuddhi* apart from *āśauca*. *Śuddhi* of a *dravya* means the ⁶⁹⁴ removal of a taint attaching to a thing and it is of two kinds, purification of the body and the purification of an external object (Manu V. 110 and *Aparārka* p. 253). It has already been seen (note 555)

694. द्रव्यस्य दोषापगमः शुद्धिः । तत्र द्विविधा शुद्धिः शरीरशुद्धिर्बाह्यद्रव्यशुद्धिश्च । अपरार्क pp. 252-253 ; तत्राशुद्धिर्नाम द्रव्यादेः स्पर्शनाद्यनर्हतापादको दोषविशेषः । शाङ्गिस्त संस्कारविशेषोत्पादिता तज्जिज्ञप्तिः । हेमाद्रि (on *आज्ज* p. 787).

above) how even the Rg. lays great emphasis on *suddhi* and being pure (*śuci*). There are Vedic⁶⁹⁵ passages laying down that the cups (*grahas*) used in Jyotiṣṭoma and other sacrifices were to be cleansed with a strainer of wool, but not the *camasas*. In the Ait. Br. 32.4 it is provided that if the milk of an *agnihotrin* that was heated by him for the *homa* became impure (*amedhya*, by an ant or worm falling therein), the milk is to be taken up in an *agnihotrahavanī* and was to be poured upon the ashes near the *Āhavanīya* fire. This shows that great care was taken about the purity of vessels to be used in sacrifices and about the offerings to be made. *Śauca* is one of the eight qualities of the soul (*ātmagūṇas*) mentioned by Gaut. 8.24, Atri (verses 33, 35), Matsyapurāṇa 52. 8-10, Brhaspati (q. by Aparārka p. 164). Haradatta on Gautama quotes a verse that *śauca* is of four kinds viz. monetary purity, mental purity, bodily purity and purity in speech; while Atri and Brhaspati⁶⁹⁶ (q. by Aparārka p. 164), aver that *śauca* is constituted by avoiding what ought not to be eaten, by associating (only) with those who are not censured (i. e. are not reprehensible) and by firmly abiding by one's own prescribed duties. Many works divide *śauca* into two varieties viz. *bāhya* (external) and *āntara* or *ābhyantara* (internal). Vide H. of Dh. vol. II. pp. 651-52 for passages from Baudhāyana Dh. S. (I. 5. 3-4), Hārta, Dakṣa and others defining and subdividing these. Agni 372. (17-18) is the same as Dakṣa V. 3. The Vanaparva 200. 52 speaks of purity in speech, in actions and that brought about by water. The Padma (II. 66. 86-87) emphasizes that it is the mental attitude that is the highest thing and illustrates it by saying that a woman embraces her son and her husband with different mental states. There is an interesting passage in the Lingapurāṇa 8. 34-36 (not quoted there) which after stating that *ābhyantara* *śauca* is superior to *bāhya* *śauca* (verse 31) remarks⁶⁹⁷ that one void of inner purity is dirty even after a

695. अस्ति ज्योतिष्टोमः । तत्र श्रूयते दशापवित्रेण ग्रहं संमार्ष्टि इति । तत्रैषोर्थः समधिगतः सर्वे ग्रहाः संमार्जितव्या इति । इदमिदानीं सन्दिह्यते किं चमसा अपि संमार्ष्टि या उत नेति । शबर on जै. III. 1. 16.

696. अभक्ष्यपरिहारश्च संसर्गश्चाप्यनिन्दितैः । स्वधर्मे च व्यवस्थानं शौचमेतत्प्रकीर्तितम् ॥ बृहस्पति (q. by अपरार्क p 164). आत्रि verse 35 (reads आचारेषु व्यवस्थानं).

697. अवगाह्यापि मलिनो ह्यन्तःशौचविवर्जितः । शैवला झषका मत्स्याः सस्य मत्स्योपजीविनः ॥ सदावगाह्य सलिले विशुद्धाः किं द्विजोत्तमाः । तस्मादाभ्यन्तरं शौचं सकार्यं विधानतः ॥ आत्मज्ञानाभ्यासि स्नात्वा सकृदालिप्य भावतः । सुवैराग्यमुदा शुद्धाः शौचप्रकीर्तितम् ॥ लिङ्गपुराण 8. 34-36; भावशुद्धिः परं शौचं प्रमाणं सर्वकर्मसु । अन्यथालिङ्गकान्ता भावेन दुहिता न्यथा...अन्यथैव ततः पुत्रं भावयत्यन्यथा पतिम् ॥ पद्म (भूमिखण्ड 66. 86-87).

bath, that moss, fish and animals subsisting on fish are always immersed in water, that in spite of that no one would call them pure, that therefore one must always endeavour to secure inner purity and that one should bathe in the water of correct knowledge of the Self, apply once the sandal paste of faith and purify oneself by the clay in the form of desirelessness and that this is declared to be (the real) *śauca*. Manu V. 106 provides that of all kinds of purity mental purity is the highest. He who is pure as to wealth (i. e. who does not deprive another of wealth by unjust means) is the (only) pure man and not he who is purified by water and earth. Viṣṇu 22. 89 is the same except that for wealth (*artha*) it substitutes food (*anna*). The Trikāṇḍamaṇḍana (prakīrṇaka 21) has the same verse as Manu V. 106. Vide also Anuśāsana 108. 12 (for purity of conduct, of mind, of a holy place, purity due to correct philosophical knowledge); Brahmāṇḍa III. 14. 60 (*śucikāmā hi devā vai*), and Yogasūtra II. 32 (for *śauca* as one of the five *niyamas*).

External purity of the body by various means (rinsing the mouth, bath & c.) has already been described in detail in H. of Dh. vol. II pp. 648-668. The ancient and medieval Indians insisted on a daily bath for all, recommended two baths a day in certain cases and three baths to a hermit and did not subscribe to the view of some of the early Christians. St. Agnes was canonized primarily for her refusal to bathe and St. Francis of Assisi considered dirt as one of the proper insignia of holy poverty.⁶⁹⁸

In śrauta rites (such as Agniṣṭoma) the sacrificer had to undergo a severe discipline of consecration (or *dīkṣā*), one item of which was the purification of the intending sacrificer's body by the *adhvaryu* priest by rubbing the former's body twice with three bunches of seven darbhas each (vide H. of Dh. vol. II. p. 1136). Śātātapa q. by Sm. C. I. p. 120, Śuddhiprakāśa p. 147 provide bath for one who has sexual intercourse with his wife during the period from the 5th to the 16th day after monthly illness begins, but for intercourse after these days the purification is the same as for urination and voiding ordure; bath is also prescribed for vomiting after sunrise, after shaving, after a bad dream, on the touch of foul men (such as *cāṇḍālas*).

698. Vide Reginald Reynolds' work on 'Cleanliness and godliness' p. 36 (chapter IV).



The Ap. Śr. II. 12 provides⁶⁹⁹ that *Pavitreṣṭi* should be performed by him who is desirous of *śuddhi* and that if one performs in each season the three *iṣṭis*, viz. *Vaiśvānari* (to Agni *Vaiśvānara*), *Vrātapati* (to Agni *Vratapati*) and the *Pavitreṣṭi* one purifies ten generations (of his family).

The following pages will deal with the purification of things (*dravyaśuddhi*). But a few general observations must first be made. The Āp. Dh. S. (II. 6. 15. 17-20) states that infants do not become polluted or impure (by the touch of a woman in her monthly course) up to the time the *samskāra* of *annaprāśana* (taking cooked food for the first time), that, according to some, up to one year or as long as they cannot distinguish between the different directions or up to the time of *Upanayana* according to others. *Manu* V. 127-133, *Yāj.* I. 186, 191-193, *Viṣṇu* Dh. S. 23. 47-52, *Baud.* Dh. I. 5. 56-57, 64, 65, *Śaṅkha* 16. 12-16, *Mārkaṇḍeya-purāṇa* 35. 19-21 state that the following are always pure:—what is not seen to be polluted; what is cleansed with water; what is commended expressly (by a *brāhmaṇa* as pure, when there is a doubt), water collected on (pure) ground that is not visibly polluted by an impure thing and that in quantity is so much that a cow can slake its thirst therein and that has the smell, colour and taste (of pure water); the hand of a craftsman (such as a washerman or a cook while engaged in his peculiar work); articles exposed for sale in a market such as rice and barley (though touched by many intending buyers); alms (collected by a *brahmacārī* though walking from house to house on the road); the mouth of a woman (at the time of dalliance); meat of animals seized or killed even by dogs, *cāṇḍālas*, and carnivorous birds; rays (of the sun), fire, dust, the shadow (of a tree or the like), a cow, a horse, land, wind, dew drops, flies, a calf at the time of making the cow flow with milk from the udder—these latter are pure when they come in contact with a person. Then it was said that certain birds and animals were either always pure or as to certain parts of the body e. g. *Yāj.* I. 194 says that the mouths of goats and horses are pure but not of the cow. *Baudhāyana*⁷⁰⁰ quoted by *Aparārka* p. 276 provides that

699. शुद्धिकामो वा । तद्देशाभियज्ञगाथा गीयते । वैश्वानरीं व्रातपतिं पवित्रेष्टिं तथैव च ।
कृतावृतौ प्रयुञ्जानो पुनरिति दशपौरुषम् ॥ इति । आश्व. श्रौ. II. 12.

700. मुखवर्जं तु गौर्मेध्या मार्जारश्चङ्क्रमे (? श्वाक्रमे) शुचिः । बौधायन q. by अपरार्क
p. 276; almost the same words occur in *शङ्ख* 16.14 (latter half).



the cow is pure except as to its mouth, and a cat when it is leaping or moving about. Brhaspati⁷⁰¹ and Yama (q. by Aparārka p. 276) state: 'the feet of brāhmaṇas, and the mouth of goats and horses, the backs of cows and all limbs of women are pure; the cow as to its back, the elephant as to its shoulder, the horse as to all its limbs and the dung and urine of cows, all these are pure'. Atri (240, 241) contains several verses⁷⁰² on this point. 'Things taken out from a mine or from kitchens (or places where grain is pounded &c.) are never impure, since all such places (where anything is prepared in the mass) except a place for the manufacture of liquor are pure. All fried (or roasted) things, fried barley and grain, dates, camphor, whatever else is well fried is pure'. In Atri V. 13 we read⁷⁰³ 'flies, a continuous stream (of any liquid), the earth, water, fire, a cat, a wooden ladle and a mongoose are always pure'. Parāśara (X. 41) states:⁷⁰⁴ 'space (ākāśa), wind, fire, water fallen on the earth, darbhas are not to be deemed polluted just as *camasas* in sacrifices are held to be not polluted.' Par. M. quotes a verse of Caturviṃśatimata⁷⁰⁵ that raw meat, ghee, honey, oils extracted from fruits—these even when contained in vessels belonging to caṇḍālas become free from taint the moment they are taken out of these vessels. Brhaspati provides:⁷⁰⁶ 'machines for crushing grapes and sugarcane stalks, mines, the hands of craftsmen, the milk pail, fluids that come

701. बृहस्पतिः । पादौ शुची ब्राह्मणानामजाश्वस्य मुखं शुचि । गवां पृष्ठानि मेध्यानि सर्वमात्राणि योषिताम् ॥ यमः । पृष्ठतो गौर्गजः स्कन्धे सर्वतोऽश्वः शुचिस्तथा । गोः पुरीषं च मूत्रं च सर्वं मेध्यमिति स्थितिः ॥ पृष्ठशब्दोत्र मुखव्यतिरिक्तविषयः । अपरार्क p. 276.

702. आकराद्दृतवस्तूनि नाशुचीनि कदाचन । आकराः शुचयः सर्वे वर्जयित्वा सुराकरम् ॥ भृष्टा भृष्टयवाश्चैव तथैव चणकाः स्मृताः । खर्जूरं चैव कर्पूरमन्यद् भृष्टतरं शुचि ॥ अत्रि 240-241. आकराः...करम् occurs in बौ. ध. सू. I. 5.58. The शु. कौ. (p. 258) after quoting शङ्ख 16.13 (शुद्धं नदीगतं तोयं सर्व एव तथाकराः) explains: सर्व एवाकरा धान्यादिमर्दनस्थानानि तथा अञ्जलाजादिनिष्पत्तिस्थानानि चेत्यर्थः ।

703. मक्षिका सन्ततिर्धारा भूमिस्तोयं हुताशनः । मार्जारश्चैव दर्वी च नकुलश्च सदा शुचिः ॥ अत्रि V. 13. विश्वरूप on या. I. 195 quotes it without name as मक्षिका विप्रुषो नार्यो भूमि...दर्वी च मारुतश्च etc. मार्जारश्च...मारुतश्च—occurs in लघुहारीत 43. शुद्धिकौमुदी p. 357 explains: सन्ततिः शिशुः पञ्चवर्षाभ्यन्तरवयस्कः धारा तु पतन्ती ।

704. आकाशं वायुरग्निश्च मेध्यं भूमिगतं जलम् । न प्रदुष्यन्ति दर्भाश्च यज्ञेषु चमसा यथा ॥ पराशर X. 41.

705. आमं मांसं घृतं क्षौद्रं स्नेहाश्च फलसम्भवाः । अन्त्यभाण्डस्थिता ह्येते निष्क्रान्ताः शुचयः स्मृताः ॥ चतुर्विंशतिमत q. by परा. मा. II. 1. p. 115. प्राय. विवेक p. 328 quotes the verse as यम's reading म्लेच्छभाण्डः. शु. कौ. p. 318 also ascribes it to यमः.

706. द्राक्षेक्षु यन्त्राकरकारुहस्ता गोदोहनी यन्त्रविनिःसृतानि । बालैरथ स्निग्धैस्तानि प्रत्यक्षदृष्टानि शुचीनि तानि ॥ बृहस्पति q. by शुद्धिप्रकाश p. 106.

out from crushing machines, actions (such as cooking) done by women and children when they are impure (by walking barefooted on the road) and are seen to be so, are still free from taint. One's⁷⁰⁷ own bed, garment, wife, child, water pot—these are free from taint for oneself, but these are impure to others. Śāṅkha 16.15 is to the same effect.

Śāṅkha⁷⁰⁸ states that whatever removes the dirt (or pollution) that is natural to a substance or arises from contact with another polluting substance must be declared to be its purifier. Śāṅkha-Likhita⁷⁰⁹ declare that the substances that bring about purification of all (polluted things) are water, clay, the powder (or paste) of soap berries, bilva fruit, rice and mustard cake, salts (ashes), cow's urine and dung and that according to some when a substance is heaped up in a big mass, sprinkling with water. Manus V. 118, Yāj. I. 184, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 23.13 also provide that sprinkling with water is the mode of purification when large quantities of corn or clothes are polluted, but when the quantity is small they must be washed with water. The quantity is said to be large when it is more than what one man can carry as a load (according to Kullūka on Manus V. 118).

The general rule laid down by Gaut. I. 45-46, Manus V. 126 (= Viṣṇu 23. 39), Yāj. I. 191 about the purification of things or bodies that are smeared with foul matter is that water and earth are to be employed for purification till the foul odour and the contact of the foul thing is entirely removed⁷¹⁰. Devala (q. by Aparārka p. 270) defines *śauca* as the removal by means of clay, water, cowdung and the like of the besmearing, the oiliness and odour of a thing that cause impurity.

707. आत्मशय्या च वस्त्रं च जायापत्यं कमण्डलुः । आत्मनः शुचीन्येतानि परेषाम-
शुचीनि तु ॥ आपस्तम्बस्मृति II. 4, बौधायन I. 5. 61 (reads शय्यासनं वस्त्रं) ; अपरार्क
p. 257 quotes it as बौधायन's.

708. मलं संयोगजं तज्जं यस्य येनोपहन्यते । तस्य तच्छोधनं प्रोक्तं सामान्यं द्रव्यशुद्धि-
कृत् ॥ शङ्ख q. by अपरार्क p. 256, दीपकालिका on या. I. 191. मद. पा. p. 451 reads
मलसंयोगजम्.

709. सर्वेषामपो मृदरिष्टकेदुदबिल्वतण्डुलसर्षपकल्कक्षारगोमूत्रगोमयादीनि शौच-
द्रव्याणि संहतानां प्रोक्षणामित्येके । शङ्खलिखितौ q. by चतुर्वर्गः vol. III. part 1 p. 817.

710. लेपगन्धापकर्षणं शौचममेध्याक्तस्य । तदग्निः पूर्वं मृदा च । गौ. ध. सू. I. 45-46.
Almost the same words occur in वसिष्ठ III.48 ; यावज्जापैत्यमेध्याक्ताद्वन्धो लेपश्च
तत्कृतः । तावन्मृद्वारि चादेयं सर्वाहु द्रव्यशुद्धिषु ॥ मनु V. 126 = विष्णु 23.39.

Gaut. Dh. S. (I. 28-33) briefly deals ^{710a} with the purification of things as follows: Purification of metallic substances (like bell-metal), earthenware, substances manufactured from wood, cloth made of threads or yarn is brought about respectively by rubbing (or scouring) them, by baking in fire, by chiselling or planing, by washing in water; objects made of stones, jewels, shells and pearls are purified by the same means as metallic substances; bones (ivory and the like) and mud (floor of houses) are purified in the same way as wooden substances; and earth (when polluted) is also purified by adding to it earth (brought from another pure spot); ropes, chips of bamboos and reeds, leather are purified by the same means as cloth or they may be abandoned when they are extremely polluted (as by the spilling of wine or urine or ordure). Vas. (III. 49-53) has almost the same words, employing the word 'bhasmaparimārjana' (scouring with ashes and washing) for 'parimārjana'. The Āp. Dh. S. (I. 5. 17. 10-13) ⁷¹¹ provides: 'If one gets a used vessel only, he shall eat from it after having heated it thoroughly; a vessel made of metal is purified by being scoured with ashes and the like; a wooden vessel becomes pure by being scraped; at a sacrifice, vessels must be cleaned according to the precepts of the Veda.' Yāj. (III. 31-34) states; time (lapse of ten days or a year as to āsauca), fire, religious rites (like Āsvamedha or performing of *sandhyā*), clay, wind, mind, spiritual knowledge, austerities (such as *kṛcchra*), water, repentance (in the case of sins), fasting—all these are the causes of purification. Gifts are the (main) cause of purification for those who do what is forbidden, flow of water in the case of a river, clay and water are means of *śuddhi* in the case of substances that are not clean, *sannyāsa* (order of asceticism) in the case of the twice-born, austerities in the case of those that have studied the Veda when they commit a sin (through ignorance), forbearance in the case of those who know the Self, water in the case of dirty limbs, silent recital of Vedic mantras (*japa*) is the means of purifica-

710 a. द्रव्यशुद्धिः परिमार्जनप्रदाहत्क्षणनिर्णेजनानि तैजसमार्तिकदारवतान्तवानाम् । तैजसवदुपलमणिशङ्खमुक्तानाम् । दारुवदस्थिभूम्योः । आवपनं च भूमेः । चैलवद्रज्जुविदल-
धर्मणाम् । उत्सर्गो घात्यन्तोपहतानाम् । गौ. 1.28-33. अत्यन्तोपहत is explained by
विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 23.1 as 'शरीरैर्मलैः सुराभिर्मद्यैर्वा यदुपहतं तदत्यन्तोपहतम्' ।

711. अनाप्रीते मृण्मये भोक्तव्यम् । आप्रीतं चेदभिदग्धे । परिमृष्टं लौहं प्रयत्नम्
निर्लिखितं दारुमयम् । यथागमं यज्ञे । आप. ध. सू. I. 5. 17. 9-13. हरदत्त explains,
'आप्रीतं कचिच्कार्ये पाकादावुपयुक्तम् .. अग्निहोत्रहवणी दर्भैरन्दिः प्रक्षालिता सोमपात्राणि
मार्जालीये प्रक्षालितानि आज्यपात्राण्युष्णेन वारिणा ।'



tion for those guilty of secret sins, truth in the case of the mind (that is full of or is polluted by sinful thoughts), austerities and esoteric knowledge in the case of the man who identifies his soul with the body, correct knowledge in the case of intelligence, knowledge of God is the pre-eminent purifier of the soul. Manu V. 107-109 (= Viṣṇu 22.90-92) contain almost the same idea in almost the same words.

In prescribing the methods of cleaning polluted objects certain matters have to be considered according to a verse ascribed to Baudhāyana ⁷¹² by the Mit. (on Yāj. I. 190) which states: 'One should prescribe means of purification after considering the time, the place, the body (or himself), the thing (to be purified), the purpose for which the thing is to be used, origin (of defilement), the condition (of the thing or person defiled).'

There is some divergence of views about the means of purifying or cleansing certain objects. It is unnecessary to set out in detail these differences. It is proposed to take certain objects one after another and to specify how they were rendered pure according to several of the smṛtis and digests.

Certain foul things were said by the Smṛtyarthasāra p. 70 to be the causes of extreme pollution and certain others as causes of lesser or insignificant pollution. For example, excreta, urine, semen, blood, fat, marrow, liquor and intoxicants were the causes of great pollution; while dogs, village swine, cats, their urine, the wax from the ear, nails, phlegm, discharge from the eyes, perspiration are the causes of insignificant pollution.

Baud. Dh. S. I. 5.66 provides ⁷¹³ that the purification of the ground is brought about by means of sweeping with a (faultless) broom, by sprinkling (cow's milk, urine or water), by smearing with cowdung, by scattering (pure clay on it) and by scrubbing away (or scraping) some of the soil, when these are employed according to the situation of the ground and the particular impurity (of which it is to be purified). Baud. Dh.

712. देशं कालं तथात्मानं द्रव्यं द्रव्यप्रयोजनम्। उपपत्तिमवस्थां च ज्ञात्वा शौचं प्रकल्पयेत्॥ बौधायन q. also by विश्वरूप on या. I. 195 and मेधातिथि on मनु V. 118. बौधायनधर्मसूत्र I. 5.55 reads देशं...वस्थां च विज्ञाय शौचं शौचज्ञः कुशलो धर्मज्ञः समाचरेत्। The verse is लघुहारीत 55 which reads कालं देशं. The मिता. reads तथात्मानं which means 'the bulk' (or extent of the thing to be purified).

713. भूमेस्तु संमार्जनप्रोक्षणोपलेपनावस्तरणोल्लेखनैर्यथास्थानं दोषविशेषात्प्रायश्चित्तम्। बौ. ध. सू. I. 5 66. वसिष्ठ III. 56 is almost the same.



S. in another place states: ⁷¹⁴ when firm soil is polluted it is purified by smearing it with cowdung, hollow ground (one having holes) is purified by ploughing, ground wet (with impurity) by covering it (with pure clay brought from elsewhere) after removing the impure thing. Land is purified by means of four viz., being trodden under the foot of cows, by digging it up, by burning (firewood or grass thereon), by pouring over it (water, cow's urine or milk &c.) and fifthly, by smearing it (with cowdung) and sixthly, by the lapse of time. Vasiṣṭha III. 57 quotes a verse which mentions five means of purification almost in the same words as those of Baudhāyana (except the sixth viz. time). Manu V. 124 mentions five means of purification, viz. sweeping with a broom, smearing with cowdung, sprinkling, digging (and removing), the stay of cows thereon (for one day and night). Viṣṇu Dh. S. 23.57 adds *dāha* (burning) to the five of Manu. Yāj. I. 188 mentions seven means of the purification of the ground by adding *dāha* (burning) and *kāla* (lapse of time) to the five mentioned by Manu. According to ⁷¹⁵ the Vāmanapurāṇa the ground is purified by digging, burning, sweeping, treading by cows, smearing of cowdung, scrubbing and by sprinkling water. Devala quoted by the Mit. and Aparārka on Yāj. I. 188 gives a more elaborate treatment. According to him polluted ground (*bhūmi*) is of three kinds, viz. *amedhyā* (impure), *duṣṭā* (soiled), and *malinā* (dirty). Where a woman is delivered of a child or dies or is cremated or where a spot has been inhabited by cāṇḍālas or where there are heaps of ordure and the like, ground that is full of foul things in this way is declared to be *amedhyā*. ⁷¹⁶ That ground which is polluted by the contact of dogs, pigs, asses, camels and the like becomes *duṣṭā* (soiled) and it becomes *malinā* (dirty) by charcoal, husk, hair, bones or ashes. Then

714. घनाया भूमेरुपचात उपलेपनम् । सुषिरायाः कर्षणम् । क्लिन्नाया मेध्यमाहृत्य प्रच्छादनम् । चतुर्भिः शुध्यते भूमिर्गोभिराक्रमणात्खननाद् दहनादभिवर्षणात् । पञ्चमाच्चोपलेपनात्षष्ठात्कालात् । बौ. ध. सू. I. 6.17-21 quoted and explained by शु. कौ. p. 100.

715. भूमिर्विशुध्यते खातदाहमार्जनगोक्रमैः । लेपादुल्लेखनात्सेकाद्वेश्मसंमार्जनाच्चर्चनात् ॥ वामनपुराण 14.68.

716. यत्र प्रसूयते नारी म्रियते दह्यतेपि वा । चण्डालाध्युषितं यत्र यत्र विष्टादिसंहतिः ॥ एवं कश्मलभूयिष्ठा भूरमेधया प्रकीर्तिता । श्वसूकरखरोष्ट्रादिसंस्पृष्टा दुष्टतां व्रजेत् ॥ अङ्गार-तुषकेशास्थिभस्माद्यैर्मलिना भवेत् । मिता. on या. I. 188. अपरार्क reads यत्र विष्टादिसंहतिः in the first verse and धूम for तुष. शु. कौ. p. 101 reads प्रसूते गर्भिणी यत्र म्रियते यत्र मातुषः... यत्र वा दह्यते शवः ॥ विष्णुत्रोपहतं यत्र कुणपो यत्र दृश्यते । एवं कश्मलः ॥ The definitions of दुष्टा and मलिना as quoted from देवल by शु. कौ. p. 101 and शुद्धिप्र. p. 99 are different.

Devala⁷¹⁷ prescribes the purification of the three kinds of ground: 'Purity is of five kinds, viz. digging up; burning (with wood or grass); smearing (with cowdung), washing (with water) or the fall of rain. Even *amedhyā* ground may be purified by these five means employed together (where a corpse is cremated or *caṇḍālas* dwell) or by four (i. e. omitting rainfall or burning in other cases of *amedhyā*); ground that is *duṣṭā* is purified by three (digging up, burning and smearing with cowdung) or two (viz. digging up and burning) and *malinā* ground is purified by one (i. e. by digging up).

The *Smṛtyarthasāra* (pp. 73-74) provides that if an idol made of iron or other metal is slightly polluted (as defined above) then it can be purified by means of *pañcagavya* after rubbing it with ashes; similarly a stone idol, when slightly polluted, should be washed with water mixed with the clay from an ant-hill and becomes pure after being treated with *pañcagavya*. Any idol, if polluted with ordure, urine or village mud would become pure after first being flooded for five days with *pañcagavya*, after being well washed with cow's urine, cowdung and clay from an ant-hill and by being again installed (with all installation rites). Questions about the pollution of temples by the entry of the so-called untouchables or by the entrance of persons other than *brāhmaṇas* in the inmost shrine (*garbhagrha*) have come before the courts e. g. in *Gopala Muppanar v. Dharmakarta Subramania* 27 Madras Law Journal p. 253 at p. 258, where reference is made to the ceremonies for the removal of pollution according to the *Āgamas* and *Tantras*. In *S. K. Wodeyar v. Ganapati* (37 Bom. L. R. 584) the point arose whether, when a custom was alleged that in a temple at Banavasi in the Canara district none could enter the inner sanctum except persons belonging to the ten sub-divisions of *brāhmaṇas* and a Lingayat entered it in spite of the protests of the worshippers in charge of the temple, his entry polluted the temple and whether he was liable to pay for the sum spent over the purification of the temple, the High Court of Bombay held that the custom alleged viz. of excluding from the inner sanctum all that were not *brāhmaṇas* was proved and that the Lingayat gentleman who entered it in spite of protests was liable to pay damages for the wrongful entry. In the *Nirṇayasindhu* (III

717. दहनं खननं भूमेरवलपनवापने । पर्जन्यवर्षणं चेति शौचं पञ्चविधं स्मृतम् ॥ पञ्चधा वा चतुर्धा वा भूमेध्या विशुध्यति । द्विधा त्रिधा वा दुष्टा तु शुध्यते मलिनैकधा ॥ देवल q. by शु. कौ. p. 101 which explains वापनं as मृदन्तरेण पूरणम्.

pūrvārdha pp. 351-52), the Dharmasindhu (III p. 324) and other medieval digests provision is made for the re-consecration (punaḥ-pratiṣṭhā) of an idol in a temple when the idol is polluted by the touch of cāṇḍālas or wine or is burnt by fire or is defiled by the touch of sinners or the blood of a brāhmaṇa.⁷¹⁸ If the idol be broken in two or more pieces or if it becomes broken (irregularly), if it be burnt or falls from its pedestal or be insulted, is without worship or is touched by an ass or the like animal, or falls on foul ground or is worshipped with the mantras of other gods,—in these ten circumstances Godhood ceases to indwell in the idol. If an idol be touched by robbers, cāṇḍālas, *patita* people, by a dog or a woman in her courses or if it be polluted by the touch of a corpse re-consecration is necessary.

The Viṣṇu-dharmasūtra (23. 34) provides that idols when polluted should be purified in the same way in which the substance of which they are made (such as stone or copper &c.) is purified and then they should be re-consecrated. If the worship of an idol already consecrated is stopped for a day, two days, a month, or two months or it is touched by śūdras or a woman in her monthly course, then at a proper time *punyaḥavācana* should be performed, an even number of brāhmaṇas should be fed, the idol should be submerged in water for a night and next day bathed with *pañca-gavya* from a jar full of it to the accompaniment of the respective *mantras*, then another jar should be filled with pure water and therein the nine kinds of precious stones should be cast, the jar should then have the

718. अथ पुनःप्रतिष्ठा । तामधिकृत्य हयशीर्षपञ्चरात्रे । चाण्डालमद्यसंस्पर्शदूषिता वह्निनाथवा । अपुण्यजनसंस्पृष्टा विप्रक्षतजदूषिता ॥ संस्कार्येति शेषः । पदार्थादर्शं बाह्ये । खण्डिते स्फुटिते दग्धे भ्रष्टे मानविवर्जिते । यागहीने पशुस्पृष्टे पतिते दुष्टभूमिषु । अन्यमन्त्रार्चिते चैव पतितस्पर्शदूषिते । दशस्वेतेषु नो चक्रुः संनिधानं दिवौकसः ॥ यागः पूजा पशुः गर्दभादिः ।... सिद्धान्तशेखरे । चौरचण्डालपतितश्वोदकयास्पर्शने सति । श्वाद्युपहतौ चैव प्रतिष्ठां पुनराचरेत् ॥ ... शुद्धिविवेके विष्णुः । द्रव्यवत्कृतशौचानां देवतार्चानां भूयः प्रतिष्ठापनेन शुद्धिरिति । अर्चाः प्रतिमाः । तद्द्रव्यस्य ताम्रादेरुक्तशौचं कृत्वा पुनः प्रतिष्ठां कुर्यादित्यर्थः । तद्विधिर्बोधायनसूत्रे । पूर्वप्रतिष्ठितस्याशुद्धिपूर्वकमेकरात्रं द्विरात्रमेकमासं द्विमासं वा अर्चनादिविच्छेदे शूद्ररजस्वलाद्युपस्पर्शने पूर्वोक्ते काले पुण्याहं वाचयित्वा युग्मान् ब्राह्मणान् भोजयित्वा निशायां जलाधिवासं कृत्वा श्वोभूते कलशपूर्णेन पञ्चगव्येन तत्तन्मन्त्रैः स्नापयित्वा अन्यं कलशं शुद्धोदकेनापूर्य तस्मिन्नावरत्नानि प्रक्षिप्य तं कलशं तत्तद्वायव्याष्टसहस्रमष्टशतमष्टाविंशतिवारं वा भूमिमन्य तेनोदकेन देवं स्नापयेत्ततः शुद्धोदकेन स्नापयेदष्टसहस्रमष्टशतमष्टाविंशतिवारं वा पुरुषसूक्तेन मूलमन्त्रेण च । ततः पुष्पाणि दत्त्वा यथासम्भवमर्चयित्वा शुद्धोदनं निवेदयेत्ततः शुद्धिपूर्वं तु विच्छेदे पूर्वोक्तां प्रतिष्ठां पुनः कुर्यात् । निर्णयसिन्धु III पूर्वार्ध pp. 351-52 The passage from पूर्वप्रतिष्ठितस्याशुद्धि to the end is a quotation (with some omissions and additions) from बोधायनगृह्यशेषसूत्र II.19 (Mysore Un. ed.)

Gāyatrī mantra appropriate to the idol repeated over it 1008 or 108 or 28 times and the idol should then be bathed with that water, it should be bathed with pure water to the accompaniment of the *Puruṣasūkta* (Rg. X. 90) and the *mūlamantra* 1008, or 108 or 28 times. Then flowers should be offered and worship of the idol should be performed and a *naivedya* of boiled rice and jaggery should be offered.

Recently after the attainment of Independence some of the Provincial Legislatures in India have passed laws (e. g. Bombay Act 35 of 1947, C. P. and Berar Act 41 of 1947) throwing open all Hindu public temples to people who were once called untouchable. This is not the place to discuss in detail the arguments for and against these measures. Many orthodox Hindus hold that their inmost feelings are hurt by this tyranny of the majority in the Legislatures. They feel that these measures are contrary to the four freedoms that are promised in many constitutions viz. freedom of speech, freedom of worship, freedom from want and freedom from fear. These measures are likely to be followed by serious consequences. It is felt that the younger generation now being educated has hardly any faith in religion or in anything being sacred, that the so-called untouchables themselves when once they have asserted their right of entering Hindu temples scarcely ever care to frequent them and the orthodox Hindus also often cease to worship therein. There is the further fear that, if religious feelings even when unreasonable according to progressive views could be trampled upon by the views of the majority, there is no knowing where the process would stop. There would be temptation for the majority in a country to say that the sacred places of other religions should either not exist at all or be opened for any one not belonging to the faith of the minorities. It would have been far better that, while removing all the disabilities of the so-called untouchables as to employment, public places, courts and education, temples had been left alone for some years to come. The entrance of one set of people into the temples often entails the departure of another set, as said by P. C. in *Saklat v. Bella* 28 Bom. L. R. 161, which is not a very desirable thing. The equality of the former untouchables in all secular matters is sure to spread in a generation or so to other non-secular matters and so to entry into temples. Adjustments on an unprecedented scale are taking place in modern India with regard to usages cherished for ages and the entry into temples of the so-called untouchables would have been effected in a few years without recourse to the threat of

punishments and without bitterness and rancour in the hearts of many people.

From very ancient times water has been regarded as a great purifier. Rg. VII. 47 and 49 are hymns addressed to waters as divinities and they are there described as themselves pure and as purifying others (as in Rg. VII. 49. 2 and 3 'śucayaḥ pāvakaḥ'). Similarly Rg. X. 9 and 30 are hymns addressed to waters, in the former of which the waters are invoked to remove whatever sin or wrong one may have committed (Rg. X. 9. 8 'idam-āpaḥ pra vahata yat kiñca duritam mayi'). Atharva-veda I. 33 is a hymn addressed to waters, wherein also they are described as 'śucayaḥ pāvakaḥ' (in A. V. I. 33. 1 and 4). The Vāj. S. VI. 17 (closely following Rg. X. 9. 8) invokes waters to remove whatever is censurable and dirty.⁷¹⁹ In Vāj. S. IV. 2 the sage prays 'May the Waters, our mothers, purify us!' ⁷²⁰ The Śat. Br. I. 7. 4. 17 (S. B. E. vol. 12 p. 213) states 'water is a means of purification.' Viśvarūpa on Yāj. I. 191 quotes a long Vedic passage⁷²¹ wherein it is said "whatever creates doubt (whether it is pure or impure) should be touched with waters; then it becomes pure." It is therefore that water (hot or cold) is said to be the purifier of various kinds of vessels and of the ground in Yāj. I. 182-183, 188, Manu V. 109, 112, 126. Gobhila (I. 31-32)⁷²² lays down that when a man engaged in any religious rite hears a mantra addressed to the *pitrs*, scratches his body, looks at a man of the lowest caste, or allows the wind to escape from his intestines, laughs loudly or speaks an untruth, touches a cat or a mouse, or uses harsh language, has a fit of anger, he should perform *ācamana* (or touch water).

According to Yāj. I. 187 and Viṣṇu Dh. S. 23.56 a polluted house is purified by being swept and cowdunged. But more stringent rules were laid down if a dog, a śūdra, a *patita*, a *mleccha* or a *caṇḍāla* died in a brāhmaṇa's house (vide note 633 above). After keeping the house vacant for the periods

719. इदमापः प्रवहतावद्यं च मलं च यत् । यच्चाभिदुद्रोहाद्वृतं यच्च शोषे अभीरुणम् । आपो मा तस्माद्विनसः पवमानश्च मुञ्चतु । वाज. सं VI. 17.

720. आपो अस्मान्मातरः शुन्ध्यन्तु घृतेन नो घृतप्वः पुनन्तु । वाज. सं. IV. 2.

721. तथा चाग्नायः । वाग्वै देवेभ्योऽपाक्रामत्...तस्माद्यद्यन्मीमांस्यं स्यात्तत्तदग्निं यच्छेत् शुच्येव भवति । विश्वरूप on या. I. 191.

722. पित्र्यामन्त्राञ्जुद्वयं आत्मात्मभेदमेक्षणे । अधोवायुसमुत्सर्गे प्रहासेऽनुतभायाम् ॥ मार्जारमृषकस्पर्शे आक्रुष्टे क्रोधसम्भवे । निमित्तेष्वेव सर्वत्र कर्म कुर्वन्नपः स्पृशेत् ॥ गोभिलसूत्रे I. 31-32, quoted by कृत्यरत्नाकर p. 50.

stated in note 633, it is provided by Samvarta⁷²³ that a house that is polluted by the existence of a corpse inside it should be dealt with as follows: earthen pots and cooked food should be cast away and thrown out of the house which should then be smeared with cowdung and then a goat should be made to go about in it smelling it and then the whole house should be sprinkled over with water in which gold and *kuśas* are put in by brāhmaṇas rendered holy by the repetition of the Gāyatrī mantra; then the house becomes pure. Marīci prescribes⁷²⁴ that if a caṇḍāla (merely) entered a house, it can be purified by plastering it with cowdung, but if he were to stay in it long, purification can be had only by heating it and making flames of fire lick its walls.

The ground in a brāhmaṇa's house, in a temple, in a cow-pen should, says Yama, always be regarded as pure (unless it has been polluted).

A great deal is said in the smṛtis and digests about the purification of water. Ap. Dh. S. I. 5. 15. 2 says⁷²⁵ in a general way that a person after sipping water from what is collected on the ground becomes pure. But the Baud. Dh. S. I. 5. 65, Manu V. 128, Yaj. I. 192, Śaṅkha 16. 12-13, Mārkaṇḍeya-purāṇa 35.19 and others add that water collected on the ground that is of such volume that a cow can slake its thirst therein, that is in its natural state and is not polluted by any thing impure and that has natural colour (is transparent) and taste and odour (either no odour or a fragrant odour) is pure. Śaṅkha says⁷²⁶ the same about water collected on a stony surface and adds that the water of a flowing river is always pure. Devala states⁷²⁷ that water brought in clean vessels is

723. संवर्तः । गृहशुद्धिं प्रवक्ष्यामि अन्तःस्थशवदूषणे । प्रोत्सृज्य मृन्मयं भाण्डं सिद्धमन्नं तथैव च ॥ गृहादपास्य तत्सर्वं गोमयेनोपलेपयेत् । गोमयेनोपलिप्याथ छागेनाप्रापयेद् बुधः । ब्राह्मणैर्मन्त्रपूतैश्च हिरण्यकुशवारिणा । सर्वमभ्युक्षयेद्देशं ततः शुध्यत्यसंशयम् ॥ अपरार्क p. 265, शुद्धिप्र. pp. 100-101, शुद्धिकौ. pp. 303-304.

724. गृहेष्वजातिसंवेशे शुद्धिः स्यादुपलेपनात् । संवासो यदि जायेत दाहतापैर्विनिर्दिशेत् ॥ मरीचि q. by अपरार्क p. 266, शुद्धिप्र. p. 101, शु. कौ. p. 303 (reads दाहलेपैः).

725. भूमिगतास्वप्स्वाचम्य प्रयतो भवति । आप. ध. सू. I. 5. 15. 2.

726. भूमिष्ठमुदकं शुद्धं शुचिं तोयं शिलागतम् । वर्णगन्धरसैर्दुष्टैर्वर्जितं यदि तद्भवेत् ॥ शङ्ख 16. 12-13 q. by शु. कौ. p. 297, शु. प्र. p. 102.

727. उद्धृताश्चापि शुध्यन्ति शुद्धैः पात्रैः समुद्धृताः । एकरात्रोषिता आपस्त्याज्याः अपि स्वयम् ॥ देवल q. by मिता and अपरार्क on या. I. 192.



pure but when it is (stale owing to its being stored) for one night (or more) it should be thrown though it was pure (when originally brought). There ⁷²⁸ is no taint in water that cannot be agitated by any beings and in the water of springs (that flow from hills). Tanks (that are so deep) that they cannot be agitated, rivers, wells and lakes (that are similar) should not be used by the usual way of descent (the *ghat*) if they come in contact with *caṇḍālas* and other impure persons or things. In *Narhari v. Bhimrao*, the Bombay High Court had to deal with the question whether a certain tank at Mahad in the Kolaba District could not be resorted to by untouchables for taking water and held that the untouchables were not prevented from using it (vide 39 Bombay L. R. p. 1295).

Brhaspati provides that if in a well the dead body of an animal with five nails (man or beast) is found or if the well is otherwise extremely polluted all the water of the well should be taken out and the rest should be dried up by means of clothes, then if the well be built with burnt bricks flames of fire should be made (to lick the surface of the walls), and then *pañcagavya* should be poured over when fresh water begins to flow in (from the springs) ⁷²⁹. Āpastamba (q. by Śuddhikaumudī p. 299) states the circumstances when a well may be said to be extremely polluted: 'hair, excrements and urine, menstrual discharge, a dead body—when a well is defiled by these one should take a hundred jars of water from it' (and further purification by putting *pañcagavya* in it should be resorted to if there is more water). Parāśara VII. 3 says the same about wells (with steps), wells without steps and tanks.

Yāj. I. 197 (= Viṣṇu Dh. S. 23. 41) provides that mud and water on roads which come in contact with lowest castes (like *caṇḍālas*), dogs and crows and buildings (like *mathas*) constructed with burnt bricks are purified by the wind alone

728. अक्षोभ्यानि तडागानि नदीवापीसरासि च । चण्डालाद्यष्टुचिरपशे तीर्थतः
परिवर्जयेत् । अक्षोभ्याणामपां नास्ति प्रसृतानां च दूषणम् । देवल q. by अपरार्क p. 272.
शु. प्र. p. 102 (reads कश्मलाद्यष्टुचियुक्तानि) and explains कश्मलं as शवादे and
अष्टुचि as विष्णुत्रयम्.

729. मृतपञ्चनखात्कृपादत्यन्तोपहतासथा । अपः समुद्ररेत्सर्वाः शेषं वस्त्रेण शोधयेत् ॥
वह्निप्रज्वालनं कृत्वा कूपे पक्वेष्टकाचिते । पञ्चगव्यं न्यसेत् पश्चात्ततोयसमुद्भवे
q. by अपरार्क p. 272. The first is quoted as a text of Uśanas by शु. प्र. p. 298
and reads शास्त्रेण (शास्त्रविधिना) for वस्त्रेण. The two verses are
23.44-45.

(blowing on them). Parāśara VII. 34 states⁷³⁰ that mud and water on roads, boats, paths, grass and whatever is constructed with burnt bricks are rendered pure by the wind and the sun.

Rain water after it fell on the ground was supposed to be impure⁷³¹ for ten days. Similarly Yogiyājñavalkya (q. by S. K. p. 291) remarks that water of a river (dried up in summer) coming down in a flood for the first time (after rains) should not be taken (as pure) and also water that is agitated by some one (with the feet &c.) and waters that start in a separate stream by themselves from a holy river (like the Ganges). Even when a well (without steps) or a well (with a flight of steps) or a reservoir with a dam is constructed by men of the lowest castes, no *prāyaścitta* is prescribed for bathing therein or for drinking water therefrom.⁷³²

Viṣṇu Dh. S. 23. 46 provides⁷³³ that the purification of small reservoirs of water that are static (i. e. from which no streams flow down) is made in the same way as that of wells (without steps), while in the case of large reservoirs no pollution is recognised. It is declared that waters are purified by the rays of the sun and the moon and the contact of the wind and by cowdung and the urine of cows; some of these ideas are supported by modern scientific discoveries.

A verse q. by Aparārka p. 273 provides⁷³⁴ that even the water at a *prapā* (a shed where water is distributed gratis to

730. रथ्याकर्मतोयानि नावः पन्थास्तृणानि च । मरुतार्केण शुध्यन्ति पक्केष्टकाचितानि च ॥ पराशर VII. 34. दीपकलिका on या. I. 197 and शु. कौ. p. 304 quote it but read स्पर्शनाक्ष प्रदुष्यन्ति पक्के and the latter explains 'स्पर्शनादस्त्यजातीनामित्यर्थः.' विश्वरूप does not comment on या. I. 197 saying that it is superfluous; for the verse रथ्याकर्मतोयानि गावः पथि तृणानि च मरुतेनैव शुध्यन्ति vide वामनपुराण 14. 73.

731. अजा गावो महिष्यश्च ब्राह्मणी च प्रसूतिका । दशरात्रेण शुध्यन्ति भूमिष्ठं च भवोदकम् ॥ यम q. by शु. कौ. p. 297, while अपरार्क p. 293 ascribes it to मनु.

732. अन्त्यैरपि कृते कूपे सेतौ वाप्यादिके तथा । तत्र स्नात्वा च पीत्वा च प्रायश्चित्तं न विद्यते ॥ शातातप q. by मिता. and अपरार्क on या. I. 192. शुद्धिप्रकाश p. 106 remarks 'इति स्वत्यस्तापद्विषयमिति शूलपाणिः.'

733. जलाशयेष्वथालेषु स्थावरेषु महीतले । कूपवत्कथिता शुद्धिर्महत्सु च न दूषणम् । सोमसूर्याशुपातेन मरुतस्पर्शनेन च । गवां मूत्रपुरीषेण शुध्यस्त्याप इति स्मृतम् ॥ विष्णु q. by अपरार्क p. 273. The first is विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 23.46 and the 2nd is almost like आपस्तम्ब (in verse) II. 7.

734. प्रपास्वरण्ये घटगं च कूपे द्रोण्यां जलं कोशगतास्तस्थापः । ऋतेपि शूद्राक्षदपेय-माहुरापद्रुतः कांक्षितवत् पिबेत् ॥ यम q. by अपरार्क p. 273 and शु. प्र. p. 104 (which reads 'भूमिगताः पिबेत्'). This reading would mean that he should pour such water on the ground and when it is as much in volume as would slake a cow's thirst he may drink it. The first half occurs in अत्रि 233, आपस्तम्बस्मृति II. 2. शु. प्र. p. 103 quotes शङ्खलिलिखित to the same effect.



thirsty travellers) in a forest or from a jar placed near a well (for drawing water by any body) or the water in (a stone or wooden) trough (meant for all and sundry) and water from a leather bag even though these may not belong to a śūdra are unfit for drinking, but one may drink even such water as much as he desires when in distress. This shows that even in ancient times water was carried in leather bags or drums where there was scarcity of water and was allowed to be used even by twice-born people.

We may now turn to the purification of metals and vessels. Baud. Dh. S. I. 5. 34-35 and I. 6. 37-41, Vasiṣṭha III. 58 and 61-63, Manu V. 111-114, Yāj. I. 182 and 190, Viṣṇu 23. 2, 7, 23-24, Śaṅkha 16. 3-4, Smṛtyarthasāra p. 70 and others lay down rules about the purification of metals which do not agree in details. Therefore it is proposed to set out only what is said by Manu and one or two others. Manu (V. 113 ff.) says 'The wise declare that the purification of metals (like gold), of precious stones (like emerald), of all articles of stone is brought about by ashes, water and clay. Articles of gold that are not smeared (with dirty things like leavings of food &c.) become pure by means of water alone; the same holds good of articles that are found in water (coral and shells), that are made of stone and are made of silver on which no craftsmanship (such as drawing lines or figures) has been expended. Gold and silver sprang forth through the union of water and fire; therefore their purification is brought about best by their causes, viz. water (in case of slight pollution) and fire (in case of extreme pollution). The purification of copper, iron, bell-metal, brass, tin and lead should be brought about by salts (ashes), acids and water according to circumstances (i. e. pollution caused). Vasiṣṭha (III. 58, 61-63) says: 'bell-metal is purified with ashes, gold and silver with water alone and copper with acids.' Yāj. I. 190 says 'the purification of tin, lead and copper is brought about by salt water, acids and ordinary water, of bell-metal and iron by ashes and water.' The Līṅgapurāṇa (pūrvārdha, 189. 58) says: bell-metal is purified by ashes, iron articles by salt; copper, tin and lead by acids; golden and silver vessels are purified by water and jewels, stones, conches and pearls are purified in the same way as metallic vessels. Vide Vāmanapurāṇa (14. 70) which states that copper pots are purified by acids, tin and lead ones by salts, bell-metal by ashes and water. Medhātithi on Manu V. 114

quotes a verse ⁷³⁵ which says 'vessels of bell-metal (or brass) when licked (or breathed over) by cows, in which śūdras have taken their food and which have been defiled by dogs and crows are purified by being scoured ten times with ashes (salts).' Śātātapa has a similar verse (vide Par. M. vol. II part 1 p. 172).

Elaborate rules are laid down about the purification of polluted pots and vessels used in ordinary life, in Baud. Dh. S. I. 5. 34-50, I. 6. 33-42, Yāj. I. 182-183, Viṣṇu 23. 2-5, Śaṅkha 16. 1-5 and others. There is some variation in all these, but, as the Mit. on Yāj. I. 190 remarks, it is not an absolute rule that copper must be purified by acids alone but if purification is possible by other means, they may be resorted to. It is not necessary to set out the different modes of purifying vessels. A passage from the Śuddhi-prakāśa pp. 117-118 would be sufficient to indicate how this matter of *pātraśuddhi* (cleansing of polluted vessels) was dealt with in medieval India: "vessels made of gold, silver, conches, shells, stones, precious stones, bell metal, brass, tin, lead are purified by mere water, provided they have no dirt or pollution sticking to them; if these vessels are polluted by the contact of leavings of food &c. they are purified by ashes and water or acids and water according as anyone of these is appropriate; the vessels made of the above substances that are polluted for a long time owing to being used by śūdras or owing to contact with leavings of food should first be scoured with salts (ashes) and water three times and should be then cast into fire so long as it can be borne (without the vessels being broken, melted or burnt up) and then they become pure. Vessels of bell metal when polluted by only dogs, crows, śūdras and leavings of food only once or licked by cows become pure by being scoured ten times with salts and water; but if they are polluted by the above several times then they have to be scoured 21 times for becoming pure. If in a vessel belonging to the three higher *varṇas* a śūdra takes his meal, it becomes pure after being washed four times with salts and being cast in fire and then taken up with hands that are washed clean with water. A vessel of bell-metal that is polluted once by the leavings of a

735. गवाघ्रातानि कांस्यानि सूक्ष्मोच्छिष्टानि यानि च। शुध्यन्ति दशभिः क्षारेः श्वका-
कोपहतानि च ॥ q. by मेधा. on मनु V. 113 and मिता. on या. I. 190. This is
लघुशातातप 141. This verse is ascribed to अङ्गिरस् by शु. कौ. p. 307 and to
शातातप by शु. प्र. 116. This occurs in पराशर VII. 23, where the words सूक्ष्मो-
च्छिष्टानि and श्वकाकोपहतानि are transposed.

woman freshly delivered or by intoxicants or liquors becomes pure after being heated in fire; but if it is polluted several times then it becomes pure by being again manufactured. A vessel of bell-metal that is polluted by being frequently used for holding the water expelled from the mouth after rinsing it or the water in which the feet are washed should be buried in the ground for six months, then heated in fire and then it becomes pure (compare Parāśara VII. 24-25); but if it is polluted thus only once it becomes pure after (being buried in the ground) for ten days. All metal vessels polluted for a short time by the bodily dirt such as urine, excrement, semen become pure after being placed for seven nights in cow's urine or in a great river; but if they are polluted as above many times or are polluted by the contact of a corpse, a freshly delivered woman or a woman in her monthly course they become pure after being thrice washed with salts, acids and water and after being heated in fire till they can bear it, but if these are polluted by urine and for a long time and frequently they become pure by being beaten into shape (manufactured) again.

Viṣṇu (23. 2 and 5) provides that all metal vessels when extremely polluted (as stated in note 710) are purified by being cast into fire and that vessels of wood or clay when extremely polluted should be given up, but Devala⁷³⁶ and others provide that wooden vessels when slightly polluted become pure by being planed or chiselled or by means of clay, cowdung or water and that earthen vessels if not extremely polluted become pure by being baked in fire⁷³⁷ (also Yāj. I. 187). But Vas. III. 59 provides that an earthen vessel if polluted by the contact of wines, urine, excrement, phlegm, tears, pus and blood is not purified even by being burnt in fire.⁷³⁸

Special rules are provided for the purification of vessels and implements used in Vedic sacrifices. Baud. Dh. S. (I. 5. 51-52)⁷³⁹ remarks that the *camasa* vessels used in sacrifices

736. काष्ठानां तक्षणाच्छुद्धिर्मुद्गोमयजलैरपि । मृण्मयानां तु पात्राणां दहनाच्छुद्धिरित्यते ॥ देवल q. by शुद्धिप्र. p. 118. Vide मनु. V. 115 for the same rule about wooden vessels.

737. Vide Leviticus 11. 32-33 about unclean vessels of wood and earthenware and their purification.

738. मयैर्मुत्रैः पुरीषैर्वा श्लेष्मपूयाश्रुशोणितैः । संस्पृष्टं नैव शुद्ध्येत पुनः पाकेन मृण्मयम् ॥ वसिष्ठ III. 59 = मनु V. 123. It may be noted that मेधातिथि does not comment on this verse and quotes it on मनु V. 122 without naming the source.

739. वचनाद्यज्ञे चमसपात्राणाम् । न सोमेनाच्छिष्टा भवन्तीति श्रुतिः ॥ ध. सू. I. 5. 51-52. Vide H. of Dh. vol. II. p. 1177 n. 2598, for the drinking of soma from *camasas* by the priests one after another.

are purified according to the special Vedic texts, since the Veda says that *camasa* vessels do not incur the fault of being *ucchiṣṭa* when it is soma liquid that is drunk from them. Manus V. 116-117, Yāj. I. 183-185, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 23. 8-11, Śaṅkha 16. 6, Parāśara VII. 2-3 and others lay down rules about the purification of sacrificial implements. For example, Manus (V. 116-117) provides 'sacrificial vessels should be first rubbed with the right hand (or with darbhas or strainer) and then *camasas* and cups are to be washed with water before using them in the sacrifice; the *carusthālī* (the vessel in which the oblation of boiled rice is prepared), *sruc* (a wooden vessel used for pouring clarified butter on sacrificial fire), and *sruva* (wooden ladle of a semicircular shape) are purified by being washed with hot water; the *sphya* (wooden sword), the winnowing basket, the cart (for bringing the soma plant), wooden mortar and pestle, are purified with water (or sprinkling water according to Yāj. I. 184).

Several rules were laid down about the purification of polluted corn and polluted cooked food. A reference has already been made to the purification of heaps of corn. Common sense, convenience and the loss that may be caused by very stringent provisions are the considerations which prompt the rules on this subject. Viṣṇu 23.25 provides ⁷⁴⁰ that where a heap of rice (or other grain) is polluted, one should throw away only that portion of it which is actually defiled and should submit the rest to pounding and washing with water; cooked food that exceeds in volume one *drona* and that has been defiled does not all become tainted, but that throwing away the defiled portion alone, one should sprinkle over the rest water mixed with gold on which the sacred Gāyatrī verse has been repeated and should hold it before a goat to see it and should also bring fire near it. Vide Baud. Dh. S. I. 6. 44-48. 'If grains of rice are polluted they should be washed and dried. But if it is a large quantity then sprinkling with water is enough; husked rice (if polluted) should be cast away. The same rule applies to cooked offerings. But in the case of large heaps of cooked food that portion which is polluted by dogs or crows should be cast away and the rest should be sprinkled with the *Anuvāka*

740. असिद्धस्यान्नस्य यावन्मात्रमुपहतं तन्मात्रं परित्यज्य शेषस्य कण्डनप्रक्षालनं कुर्यात् । द्रोणाधिकं सिद्धमन्नमुपहतं न दुष्यति । तस्योपहतमात्रमपारस्य गायत्र्याभिमन्त्रितं सुवर्णाम्भः प्रक्षिपेद् वस्तस्य च प्रदर्शयेद्गन्धे । विष्णु० 23.11. The शुद्धिकौ. p. 317 reads 'सूर्यस्य दर्शयेद्गन्धे.'

pavamānaḥ suvarjanaḥ' (Tai. Br. I. 4.8). Gaut. 17. 9-10 provide⁷⁴¹ that one should not partake of food that was cooked along with hair and insects (like ants), nor food that is polluted by the contact of a woman in her monthly illness, by a crow or by being struck with the foot (of some one). But where food is already cooked and then it is smelt by a cow or it is polluted by the falling into it of hair, insects, flies, then Yāj. I. 189 and Parāśara VI.64-65 provide that in order to purify it water, ashes (with water) or loose earth (with water) should be cast over it. Āp. Dh. S. I. 5.16. 24-29 provide that one should not partake of food in which hair exists (i. e. it was there from the beginning) or anything else (like nails) that is impure or of food that is touched with an unclean substance or in which an insect that subsists on impure things exists or food which is struck by the feet of any person or in which the excrement or the tail (or limb) of a rat is found.

The general rule is stated by Manu V. 118 which applies not only to corn and clothes but to many other articles viz. if there is a heap or a large quantity then sprinkling with water (*prokṣaṇa*) suffices for purification but if the quantity is small then washing with water is necessary. Manu V. 125 (= Viṣṇu Dh. S. 23.38) provides that (a small quantity of) cooked food part of which is pecked by birds (whose flesh is eaten by men), which is smelt by a cow, which is struck with the foot (by a man) and over which some one has sneezed or which is polluted by the falling in of hair and insects becomes pure by casting into it loose earth (and water). Parāśara (VI. 71-74) puts the matter⁷⁴² thus: "food licked by dogs and crows or smelt by a cow or ass, if little in quantity, should be thrown away by a brāhmaṇa, but purification should be resorted to if it is a *droṇa* or *ādhaka* in quantity. That portion which is defiled by the saliva of a dog or crow should be thrown away and water in which gold is put should be sprinkled over the remaining portion, then flames of fire should lick the remaining

741. नित्यमभोज्यम् । केशकीटावपन्नम् । रजस्वलाकृष्णशकुनिपदोपहतम् । गौ. 17. 8-10.

742. काकश्वानावलीढं तु गवाघ्रातं खरेण वा । स्वल्पमन्नं त्यजेद्विप्रः शुद्धिर्नोपायः के भवेत् ॥ अन्नस्योदृत्य तन्मात्रं यच्च लालाहतं भवेत् । सुवर्णोदकमभ्युक्ष्य हुताशनेन तापयेत् । हुताशनेन संस्पृष्टं सुवर्णसलिलेन च । विप्राणां ब्रह्मघोषेण भोज्यं भवति तत्क्षणात् ॥ यशस्वर VI. 71-74, q. by शुद्धिप्रकाश pp. 128-129 (which reads यच्च लालाकृतिर्भवेत् in the 2nd verse).

food and brāhmaṇas should loudly recite Vedic hymns (like the Pavamānasūkta) over it and then the food becomes fit for eating". The Śuddhiprakāśa explains that the wealthy should not throw away food if it is more than a *drona* in quantity and a poor man if it is more than an *ādhaka* ⁷⁴³.

Manu V. 115 ⁷⁴⁴ says that in the case of all liquids (such as oils, ghee &c.) purification (when they are little in quantity) is brought about by means of two kuśas dipped into them (or by straining them through a piece of cloth into another pot) and if the quantity is large then by sprinkling (water). Śaṅkha provides ⁷⁴⁵ that purification is brought about by mere prokṣaṇa in the case of all exudations (Asafoetida &c.), jaggery, salts, safflower, saffron and in the case of wool and cotton. Vide note 705 above about certain articles being pure the moment they are transferred from the pots of even mleccas &c.

A few words may be said about the purification of different kinds of cloth and garments and the materials of which they are made. Laghu-Āśvalāyana (I. 28-30) provides that a white garment is always commended for wearing (as a *dhoti*), but they are commended for wearing as upper garments and both are not defiled by the touch of anybody. Men may take their food or answer calls of nature while covered with both; *trasara* is purified by being washed while a silken garment is always pure. Manu V. 120-121, Yaj. I. 186-187 and Viṣṇu (23. 19-22) provide almost in the same words that silken and woollen cloth is cleansed by saline earth (and with water and cow's urine), Nepalese blankets by the powder of soap berry, clothes made of tree bark with Bilva fruit and linen cloth by (paste of) white mustard. Viṣṇu 23. 6 says ⁷⁴⁶ that when a garment is extremely polluted that portion thereof which when washed with water loses its colour should be cut off. Śaṅkha ⁷⁴⁷ quoted by Viśva-

743. Vide H. of Dh. vol. III. p. 124 for the measures of capacity called *drona* and *ādhaka*. According to most writers four *ādhakas* are equal to a *drona*.

744. द्रवाणां चैव सर्वेषां शुद्धिरुत्पन्नं स्मृतम्। प्रोक्षणं संहतानां च दारवाणां च तक्षणम् ॥ मनु V. 115. कुल्लूक explains 'प्रादेशप्रमाणकुशपत्रद्वयाभ्यामुत्पन्नेन शुद्धिः।', while the शुद्धिप्र. p. 133 remarks उत्पन्नं वस्त्रान्तरितपात्रप्रक्षेपेण कीटाद्यपनयनमित्युक्तम्.'

745. निर्यासानां गुडानां च लवणानां तथैव च। कुसुम्भकुङ्कुमानां च ऊर्णाकार्पस्योस्तथा। प्रोक्षणात्कथिता शुद्धिरित्याह भगवान्यमः ॥ शङ्ख 16. 11-12.

746. अत्यन्तोपहतस्य वस्त्रस्य यत्प्रक्षालितं विरज्येत तच्छिद्येत्। विष्णुधर्मसूत्र. 23. 6.

747. चेलानामुत्स्वेदनं प्रक्षालनं तस्मात्प्रच्छेदो वा। शङ्ख. q. by विश्वरूप on याज्ञ. I. 182.



rūpa on Yāj. I. 182 prescribes that garments are purified by being submitted to hot steam, by washing with water or by cutting off only that portion that is defiled. Parāśara VII. 28 provides that garments made from bamboos and barks of trees, linen and cotton garments, garments of wool and birch bark are purified by mere *prokṣaṇa*.

The smṛtis speak of purification of many other things, which is of little importance and is passed over here. Only a few illustrations are given here. Manu. V. 119 provides that skins and things made of split bamboos (or canes) are cleaned in the same way as clothes, while vegetables, roots and fruits are purified on the analogy of grain. Manu V. 120-121 state that the purification of conches, horns (of buffaloes and rams) and bones and tusks (of the elephant or boar) is to be caused in the same way as that of linen or with cow's urine or water and that grass, wood and straw become pure by being sprinkled with water. Viṣṇu Dh. S. 23. 15, 16, 23 and Yāj. I. 185 are very similar.

From the above it will be clear that purification of substances depends on many circumstances, viz. whether they are metallic or are earthen, whether they are solid or liquid, whether a polluted substance is small in quantity or is a big heap, whether the pollution is extreme or insignificant and so on.

In Manu the purification of substances follows (V. 110) the means of purifying one's own body. Purification of the body by means of *ācamana* and *snāna* (bath) has already been described in H. of Dh. vol. II. pp. 315-316 and 652-653 (about *ācamana*), 656-668 (about *snāna*). Purification by bath on *āśauca* has already been dealt with before. Special rules were prescribed for women guilty of adultery (vide H. of Dh. vol. II. p. 594, vol. III. pp. 647-649), as also for women raped (vide vol. II p. 575). *Snāna* (bath) with the clothes on was prescribed for purification of the body when a person touches one who is *patita* (murderer of a brāhmaṇa &c.), a *candāla*, a woman freshly delivered, a woman in her monthly illness, a corpse or one who has touched a corpse; also when a man follows a funeral procession or touches a dog (vide Gaut. 14. 28-30, Manu V. 85 and 103, Āngiras verse 152, Āp. Dh. S. I. 5. 15. 15-16, Yāj. III. 30). Baud. Dh. S. I. 5. 140 provides that on touching one who sells the Veda (teaches it for money), a *yūpa*, a funeral pyre, a *patita*, a dog and a *candāla* one should

undergo a bath.⁷⁴⁸ Parāśara also has a similar verse.⁷⁴⁹ It has already been stated elsewhere (in H. of Dh. vol. II. pp. 175-176) how the rules about touching untouchables were relaxed when people congregated in a temple or in a religious procession, at marriages and festivals and at holy places. It is said by some that this refers not to the so-called untouchables, but to men who are untouchable owing to āśauca. But this is not correct. The explanation of the Śuddhi-kaumudī and Śuddhiprakāśa given below makes it clear that the untouchables are meant. In the first place, the words are quite general and not restricted. In the second place, there is no untouchability (except for the mother) on the ground of *Jananāśauca* and it is most unlikely that a person who has incurred mourning on death should visit a temple or go to a marriage or enter a religious procession, or festival. In the third place, looking to the several occasions mentioned together (particularly pilgrimages, battles, fire in a town or village and commotion or invasion of a country) it appears most unlikely that the verse refers only to āśauca on birth and death.⁷⁵⁰

The ancient and medieval Indians put very great emphasis on purity of mind, of body, of the place where they resided or performed religious rites, of the vessels used by them and of the ingredients of their food and worship. Many of the rules about purification of substances may appear to modern minds as very stringent; but it should not be forgotten that the ancient Indians were imbued with the thought that purity of the mind followed from purity of food

748. वेदविक्रयिणं यूषं पतितं चित्तिमेव च । स्पृष्ट्वा समाचरेत्स्नानं श्वानं खण्डालमेव च ॥
बौ. ध. सू. I. 5.140.

749. चैत्यवृक्षश्चित्तिर्यूषश्चाण्डालः सोमविक्रयी । एतांस्तु ब्राह्मणः स्पृष्ट्वा सचेलो जल-
माविशेत् ॥ पराशर q. by शु. कौ. p. 327, which explains 'चैत्यवृक्षो ग्राममध्ये देवपूजा-
वृक्षः, यूषोऽन्त्योष्टिकर्मयूषश्चित्तिसंनिधानात्.'

750. तीर्थे विवाहे यात्रायां संग्रामे देशविप्लवे । नगरग्रामदाहे च स्पृष्टास्पृष्टिर्न दुष्यति ।
बृहस्पति q. by शु. कौ. p. 323, शु. प्र. p. 130. शु. कौ. explains 'स्पृष्टः अस्पृष्टिः
अस्पृष्ट्यो येन स तथा' and शु. प्र. remarks 'अस्पृष्टिरस्पृष्ट्यं स्पृष्टमस्पृष्टिर्येनेति च बहुव्रीहिः ।
तेन तीर्थादौ अस्पृष्ट्यस्पर्शने नाचमनस्नानादि ॥'. The स्मृतिच. I. pp. 121-122 quotes
this verse and two others 'ग्रामे तु यत्र संस्पृष्टिर्यात्रायां कलहादिषु । ग्रामसंदूषणे चै-
स्पृष्टिदोषो न विद्यते ॥' and 'देवयात्राविवाहेषु यज्ञेषु प्रकृतेषु च । उत्सवेषु च सर्वेषु स्पृष्टा-
स्पृष्टिर्न विद्यते ॥' from शातातप and षट्त्रिंशन्मत respectively and explains 'ग्रामे पात्र-
मार्गादौ !.....एतच्च वाक्यत्रयं यत्राहमनेन स्पृष्ट इति ज्ञानं नास्ति तद्विषयमिति केचित्
अवच्छिष्टाश्चास्पर्शविषयमित्यन्ये ।

(as stated in the Chāndogyopanīṣad VII. 26.2 'āhāraśuddhau sattvaśuddhiḥ' and by Hārīta). It would be conceded that some of their rules about purification (such as about large quantities of corn or heaps of cooked food) are based on common sense and convenience. We are probably going to the other extreme in taking our food anywhere and in any surroundings.

SECTION III

CHAPTER IX

ŚRĀDDHA

This subject is of great practical importance from several points of view.

The Brahmapurāṇa defines śrāddha as follows: 'whatever is given with faith to brāhmaṇas intending it to be for the (benefit of) *pitṛs* at a proper time, in a proper place, to deserving persons and in accordance with the prescribed procedure is called śrāddha'⁷⁵¹. The Mit. on Yāj. I. 217 defines śrāddha as 'abandonment with faith of an article of food or some substitute thereof, intending it for (the benefit of) the departed'. The Kalpataru on śrāddha defined it as 'the giving up of sacrificial material intending it for *pitṛs* and its acceptance by brāhmaṇas'. The Śrāddhaviveka of Rudradhara and the Śrāddhaprakāśa define śrāddha in the same way as the Mit. but in a more involved manner. Yāj. I. 268 (= Agnipurāṇa 163. 40-41) states that the *pitṛs* viz. Vasus, Rudras and Ādityas that are the deities of śrāddha, being gratified by śrāddha, give gratification to the ancestors of human beings. This verse and Manu III. 284 make it clear that the three ancestors of a man,

751. देशे काले च पात्रे च श्रद्धया विधिना च यत्। पितृनुद्दिश्य विप्रेभ्यो वत्तं श्राद्ध-
मुदाहृतम्॥ ब्रह्मपुराण q. by आ. प्र. p. 3 and 6, आ. क. ल. p. 3, परा. मा. I. 2.
p. 299; श्राद्धं नामादनीयस्य तत्स्थानीयस्य वा द्रव्यस्य प्रेतोद्देशेन श्रद्धया त्यागः। मिताक्षरा
on या. I. 217; एतेन पितृनुद्दिश्य द्रव्यत्यागो ब्राह्मणस्वीकरणपर्यन्तं श्राद्धस्वरूपं प्रधानम्।
कल्पतरु (श्राद्ध) p. 4; कल्पतरुलक्षणमप्यनुपादेयं संन्यासिनामात्मश्राद्धे देवश्राद्धे सनका-
दिश्राद्धे चाव्याप्तेः। आ. क्रि. कौ. pp. 3-4; अत्र कल्पतरुकारः पितृनुद्दिश्य द्रव्यपातो ब्राह्मण-
स्वीकरणपर्यन्तो हि श्राद्धमित्याह तदयुक्तम्। पितृभक्ति of श्रीदत्त (folio 21a). The
दीपकालिका on या. I. 218 accepts कल्पतरु; श्राद्धं नाम वेदबोधितपात्रालम्भनपूर्वक-
प्रमीतपित्रादिदेवतोद्देशको द्रव्यत्यागविशेषः। श्राद्धविवेक p. 1; अत्रापस्तम्बादिसकलवचन-
पर्यालोचनया प्रमीतमात्रोद्देश्यकास्त्यागविशेषस्य ब्राह्मणाध्याधिकरणप्रतिपत्त्यङ्गकस्य श्राद्ध-
पदार्थत्वं प्रतीयते। आ. प्र. p. 4. The श्राद्धविवेक states that द्रव्यत्याग is enjoined by
the words of the Veda (वेदबोधित) and the thing abandoned is handed over
to a deserving brāhmaṇa (पात्रालम्भनपूर्वक). प्रतिपत्ति in आ. प्र. means the
final disposal of a thing used in a sacrifice e. g. in Darśa-pūrnāmāsa we have
the sentence सह शाखाया प्रस्तरं प्रहरति. Here शाखाप्रहरण is प्रतिपत्तिकर्म (Jai. IV. 2.
10-13) and not अर्धकर्म; similarly, the cremation of an āhitāgni with his
sacrificial vessels is a प्रतिपत्तिकर्म so far as the यज्ञपात्रs are concerned.



viz. the father, paternal grand-father and the paternal great-grand-father are respectively to be identified with the three orders of superintending *pitr* deities, viz. Vasus, Rudras and Ādityas, when performing śrāddha. According to some,⁷⁵² śrāddha denotes three things, viz. *homa*, the offering of *piṇḍa* (ball of cooked food) and gratification of brāhmaṇas invited to a dinner; the application of this word to any one of these three can only be in a secondary sense.

A firm believer in the doctrine of *karma*, *punarjanma* (reincarnation) and *karma-vipāka* (explained above) may find it difficult to reconcile that doctrine with the belief that by offering balls of rice to his three deceased paternal ancestors a man brings gratification to the souls of the latter. According to the doctrine of *punarjanma* (as very clearly and succinctly put in Br. Up. IV. 4.4 and Bhagavad-gītā 2.22)⁷⁵³ the spirit leaving one body enters into another and a new one. But the doctrine of offering balls of rice to three ancestors requires that the spirits of the three ancestors even after the lapse of 50 or 100 years are still capable of enjoying in an ethereal body the flavour or essence of the rice balls wafted by the wind. Further, Yāj. I. 269 (which is the same as Mārķ. 29. 38, Matsya-purāṇa 19. 11-12, Agnipurāṇa 163. 41-42) provides that the grand-fathers (i. e. *pitrs*) being themselves gratified (by the offerings of food in śrāddha) bestow on men (their descendants) long life, progeny, wealth, learning, heaven, *mokṣa* (final beatitude), all happiness and kingdom. In the Matsya-purāṇa (chap. 19, verse 2) a question is asked by the sages how food which a brāhmaṇa (invited at a śrāddha) eats or which is offered into fire is enjoyed by departed spirits that might have assumed (after death) good or evil forms of bodies. The answer given (verses 3-9) is that fathers, grand-fathers and great-grand-fathers are identified with Vasus, Rudras and Ādityas respectively according to Vedic passages, that the name and *gotra* (mentioned at the time of śrāddha), the *mantras* uttered and faith carry to the *pitrs* the offerings made, that if one's

752. होमश्च पिण्डदानं च तथा ब्राह्मणतर्पणम्। आहुतशब्दाभिधेयं स्यादेकस्मिन्नौपचारिकः॥ q. by आहुतसार p. 30. हरदत्त on आप. ध. सू. II. 7. 16. 2 says the same thing. श्रीदत्त in पितृभक्ति (folio 23a) says 'पिण्डदानं तु न आहुतं किं तु आहुतं पिण्डविरहेऽपि नित्यं आहुतदर्शनात्'.

753. अयमात्मेदं शरीरं निहत्याविद्यां गमयित्वान्यज्जवतरं कल्याणतरं वा गान्धर्वं वा देवं वा प्राजापत्यं वा ब्राह्मं वा न्येषां वा भूतानां। बृह. उ. IV. 4. 4; तथा शरीराणि विहाय जीर्णान्यन्यानि संयाति नवानि देही॥ गीता 2.22.

father has become a god (by his good deeds) the food offered in śrāddha becomes nectar and follows him in his state of godhood, if he has become a *daitya* (an *asura*) then (the food) reaches him in the form of various enjoyments, if he has become a beast then it becomes grass for him and if he has become a snake the śrāddha food waits on him as wind (serpents are supposed to subsist on wind) and so on. Verses 5-9 of the Matsya, chap. 19 are quoted as from Mārkaṇḍeyapurāṇa by the Śrāddhakalpalatā p. 5. Viśvarūpa⁷⁵⁴ on Yāj. I. 265 (p. 171 of Tri. ed.) also raises the same objection and gives several replies. One is that this is a matter entirely based on śāstra and so when śāstra says that *pitṛs* are gratified and the performer gets desired objects no objection should be raised. Another reply is that the gods Vasus and others that have access everywhere have the power to gratify *pitṛs* wherever they may be situated. He does not call the questioners (*nāstika*) as some other and later writers do.

The Śrāddhakalpalatā of Nandapāṇḍita⁷⁵⁵ (about 1600 A. D.) enters upon an elaborate reply to these persons (whom he dubs atheists) that aver that the performance of śrāddhas for departed fathers and the rest, who according to the particular actions of each go to heaven or hell or to other forms of existence serves no purpose. He asks: why is śrāddha useless? Is it because there is no prescriptive text laying down an obligation

754. 'कथं हि स्वकर्मानुसारादनेकविधयोनिगतपितृतृष्ट्युपपत्तिः । शास्त्रप्रमाणकत्वा-
दस्यार्थस्याद्योद्यमेतत् ।... एते देवा वस्वादयः प्रीताः प्रीणयन्ति यत्रतत्रस्थान् मनुष्याणां पितॄन्
आद्वात्तरसानुप्रदानेनेत्यर्थः । सर्वप्राणिगतत्वाच्चैषां सर्वावस्थितपितृतर्पणसामर्थ्यमविरुद्धम् ।'
विश्वरूप on या. I. 265 p. 171.

755. अथ ये नास्तिका मृतानां पित्रादीनां प्रातिस्विकशुभाशुभकर्मवशेन स्वर्गनरकादिषु
तत्तद्योनिषु वा गतानां आद्भ्यकरणमनर्थकमाहुस्तन्निराकरणं तावत् क्रियते । किं विध्यभावाद्वा
आद्भ्यकरणमनर्थकमुत फलाभावादुत पित्रादीनां तृप्त्यसिद्धेः । न तावदाद्यः तस्मात्सर्वप्रयत्नेन
आद्भ्यं कुर्याद्विचक्षणः—इत्यादिविधिदर्शनात् । न द्वितीयः । आयुः प्रजां धनं विद्यां स्वर्गं मोक्षं
सुखानि च—इत्यादिफलश्रवणात् । न तृतीयः । न ह्यत्र देवदत्तादय एव आद्भ्यकर्मणि संप्रदानभूताः
पित्रादिशब्दैरुच्यन्ते किं त्वधिष्ठातृवत्त्वादिदेवतासहिता एव । यथा देवदत्तादिशब्देन शरीर-
मात्रं नाप्यात्ममात्रं किन्तु शरीरविशिष्टाः प्राणिन एवोच्यन्ते । एवमधिष्ठातृदेवतासहिता एव
देवदत्तादयः पित्रादिशब्दैरुच्यन्ते । अतश्चाधिष्ठातृदेवता वस्वादयः पुत्रादिभिर्वर्त्तेनाक्षपानादिना
तृप्ताः सन्तस्तानपि देवदत्तादींस्तर्पयन्ति कर्तुंश्च पुत्रादिफलेन योजयन्ति । यथा माता
गर्भपोषणायान्यदत्तेन दोहदाक्षपानादिना स्वयमुपभुक्तेन तृप्ता सती स्वजठरगतमपर्यं तर्पयति
दोहदाक्षप्रदायिनाश्च प्रत्युपकारफलेन संयोजयति तद्वद्वसुरुद्रादित्याः पितरः पितृपितामहप्र-
पितामहशब्दवाच्या न केवलं देवदत्तादय एव । तदेते आद्भ्यदेवताः आद्भ्यकर्मणि संप्रदानभूताः
आद्भ्येन तर्पिताः सन्तो मनुष्याणां पितॄंस्तर्पयन्तीति । आद्भ्यकल्पलता pp. 3-4. The
passage from न ह्यत्र देवदत्तादयः up to the end is taken almost verbatim from
the Mit. on Yāj. I. 268. The आद्भ्यतत्त्व p. 191 remarks 'वसुरुद्रादितिसुताः—
इति एतद्वचनं तु तदाकारत्वेन भावनापरमिति आद्भ्यविवेकादयः ।'



to perform it or is it because śrāddha produces no consequences or is it that it is not proved that *pitrs* and the rest are gratified by śrāddha? To the first he replies that there are such passages as 'therefore a wise man must perform śrāddha with all his efforts' that lay down the obligation; nor is the 2nd objection proper, since Yāj. I. 269 does declare the rewards (of śrāddha) viz. long life &c. Nor is the third alternative acceptable. In the śrāddha rites it is not that the mere ancestors named Devadatta and the like are the recipients and that they are denoted by the words *pitṛ*, *pitāmaha* and *prapitāmaha*, but that those words denote them as accompanied by the superintending deities viz. Vasus, Rudras and Ādityas. Just as by the words Devadatta and the like what is denoted is not merely the bodies (so named) nor merely the souls, but what is denoted by the words is individual souls as particularised by the bodies; in the same way the words *pitṛ* and the like denote Devadatta and others together with the superintending deities (viz. Vasus, Rudras and Ādityas). Therefore, the superintending deities viz. the Vasus and the rest, being gratified by the food and drink offered by the sons and the rest, gratify those also viz. Devadatta and the rest and endow the performers (of śrāddha) with such rewards as male progeny and the rest. Just as a woman expecting to be a mother becomes gratified by partaking of the food and drink for which she has a longing in pregnancy and which is given to her by another person for the sustenance of the child in the womb, she satiates also the child in her womb and endows those that offer her the food and drink for which she has longings by bestowing on them some reward in return. Thus the *pitrs* denoted by the words father, grandfather and great-grandfather are the deities Vasus, Rudras and Ādityas, and not merely (human beings called) Devadatta and the rest. Hence these deities of śrāddha become the recipients (of gifts) in the śrāddha rite, are gratified by the śrāddha and gratify in their turn the ancestors of human beings. The Śrāddha-kalpalatā then quotes 18 verses ⁷⁵⁶ from the

756. अन्नप्रकिरणं यन्तु मनुष्यैः क्रियते भुवि । तेन तृप्तिमुपायान्ति ये पिशाचत्वमागताः ॥
यदम्बु स्नानवस्त्रोत्थं भूमौ पतति पुत्रक । तेन ये तरुतां प्राप्तास्तेषां तृप्तिः प्रजायते ॥ यास्तु गन्धा-
म्बुकणिकाः पतन्ति धरणीतले । ताभिराप्यायनं तेषां ये देवत्वं कुले गताः ॥ उद्धृतेष्वथ पिण्डेषु
याश्चास्रकणिका भुवि । ताभिराप्यायनं तेषां ये तिर्यक्त्वं कुले गताः ॥ ये वादग्धाः (वादग्धाः ?)
कुले बालाः क्रियायोग्या ह्यसंस्कृताः । विपक्षास्तेजविकिरसंमार्जनजलाशिनः ॥ भुम्भ्या
चाचामतां जलं यच्च जलं यच्चाङ्गिशोधने । ब्राह्मणानां तथैवान्ये तेन तृप्तिं प्रयान्ति ॥ साकं प्रदेय
28. 8-13, स्कन्द VII. I. 205.23-28 (with slight variations), ब्रह्मपुराण 220.89-95,

(Continued on the next page)

Mārkaṇḍeyapurāṇa many of which are found in chap. 28 (verses 3 ff) of the printed text. It is said ⁷⁵⁷ that just as a calf finds its own mother from among many cows that are scattered about, so the mantras repeated in śrāddha carry the food to the pitrs.

The explanation offered by the Śrāddha-kalpalatā relying on passages of the Mārkaṇḍeyapurāṇa is not satisfactory and is rather far-fetched. The Mārkaṇḍeya and the Matsya appear to agree with the doctrine of Vedānta that immediately on leaving one body the soul has recourse to another body, either as a god or a man or a beast or a snake &c. The hypothesis propounded is that the food and drink offered in śrāddhas becomes transformed into various substances for the use of the ancestors (Matsya 141. 74-75). But the great difficulty in accepting this explanation is that the ancestors might die at different places, while śrāddha may very often be performed at one place far away from those places. It is difficult to believe that the grass growing in one place where the ancestor has been transformed into a beast as a result of his evil actions is the same that might have been produced from the substances offered in śrāddha at a place hundreds of miles away. Further, if one or all the three ancestors have been transformed into beasts or the like how can they recognize their offspring and bestow on them long life, wealth &c? If the Vasus, Rudras and Ādityas bestow these, it is better to say so directly and affirm that *pitrs* cannot bestow

(Continued from the last page)

quoted by स्मृतिच. (आ. p. 333.), आह्वसार p. 7 (the first three from मार्कण्डेय and the rest from ब्रह्मपुराण), आ. क. ल. p. 5; नामगोत्रं पितृणां तु प्रापकं हव्यकव्ययोः। नामगोत्रकालदेशा (नाममन्त्रास्तथा देशा) भवान्तरगतानपि॥ प्राणिनः प्रणियन्त्येते तदाहारत्वमागतान्। देवो यदि पिता जातः शुभकर्मानुयोगतः। तस्यान्नममृतं भूत्वा दिव्यत्वेऽप्युपतिष्ठति। दैत्यत्वे भोगरूपेण पशुत्वे च तृणं भवेत्। आह्वानं वायुरूपेण सर्पत्वेऽप्युपतिष्ठति। पानं भवति यक्षत्वे राक्षसत्वे तथा मिषम्। दनुजत्वे तथा माया (मांसं?) प्रेतत्वे रुधिरौदकम्। मनुष्यत्वेऽन्नपानानि नानाभोगरसं भवेत्॥ मत्स्य 19.4-9 (with changes in the order of verses) q. as from मार्कण्डेय by स्मृतिच. (आ. p. 448), आ. क. ल. pp. 5-6, निर्णयसिन्धु III. p. 394 (from मत्स्य). Vide पद्म (सृष्टि 10. 38-43) for same verses with variations. The गरुड (प्रेतखण्ड) 10. 4-7 are almost the same as those from देवो etc. to the end and गरुड (प्रेत. 10.12 and 15 are the same as the verses नामगोत्रं...तदाहारत्वमागतान्. The स्मृतिच. (आ. 448) explains: नामानि देवदत्तयज्ञदत्तादीनि मन्त्राः पृथिवी ते पात्रमित्यादयः आदेशा इदमन्नादिकमनुष्मै भवत्विति एवमादिनिर्देशाः. मार्कण्डेय 29, 27-28 are similar.

757. यथा गोषु प्रनष्टासु वत्सो विन्दति मातरम्। तथा आह्वेषु दृष्टान्तो (दत्ताक्षं?) मन्त्रः प्रापयते तु तम्॥ मत्स्य 141. 76, वायु. 56. 85 and 83. 119-120, ब्रह्माण्ड, अनुषङ्गप्रश्न 218. 90-91, उपोद्घातपाद 20. 12-13, q. by स्मृतिच. (आ. p. 448) which reads गोष्टप्रणष्टो and आह्वेषमुद्दिष्टं, आ. क. ल. p. 5.



any thing on their progeny. It appears very probable that the worship of ancestors by means of śrāddhas was a very ancient institution and that the doctrines of *punarjanma* and *karmavipāka* were comparatively later ones and that Hinduism being all-embracing retained the institution of śrāddhas while adopting also the doctrine of metempsychosis. The institution of śrāddha is from one point of view an excellent one. It provides an occasion for remembrance of one's ancestors and relatives that were dear and near when living. The Āryasamāja objects to the institution of śrāddha and interprets pitṛs in the Rgveda as meaning living men in the Vānaprastha stage. It may be noted that the texts support both views. The Śat. Br. expressly says that food is offered to the father of the sacrificer in the words 'this is for thee.' Viṣṇu Dh. S. 75. 4 'He whose father is dead may put down a piṇḍa for his father &c.' On the other hand Manu III. 284 states that fathers are spoken of as Vasus, grandfathers as Rudras &c. and Yāj. I. 269 provides that Vasus, Rudras and Ādityas are the pitṛs and the devatās of śrāddha. These latter are to be explained as containing an injunction to contemplate upon the pitṛs as Vasus, Rudras &c.

As stated below (p. 347) with regard to the Rgvedic passages, it was on account of the supposed power of pitṛs to benefit or harm the living that the cult of the dead became a prominent feature in primitive societies. Offerings and ceremonies which may have in most ancient times been prompted in part at least by the desire to placate the ancestors are continued as tokens of pure affection and remembrance. Various beliefs about pitṛs are mentioned ⁷⁵⁸ in post-Vedic Literature. The Baud. Dh. S. II. 8. 14 summarizes a brāhmaṇa text stating that pitṛs move about in the form of birds. The Auśanasa-smṛti and Devala quoted by the Kalpataru say the same thing. In the Vāyupurāṇa ⁷⁵⁹ it is stated that at the time of śrāddha the ancestors

758. वयसां पिण्डं दद्यात्। वयसां हि पितरः प्रतिमया चरन्तीति विज्ञायते। चौ. ध. सू. II. 8. 14; न च पश्येत काकादीन् पक्षिणस्तु न वारयेत्। तद्रूपाः पितरस्तत्र समायान्ति बुभुत्सवः॥ औशनस (Jiv. I. p. 531); न चात्र श्येनकाकादीन् पक्षिणः प्रतिषेधयेत्। तद्रूपाः पितरस्तत्र समायान्तीति वैदिकम्॥ देवल q. by कल्पतरु on श्राद्ध p. 17.

759. श्राद्धकाले तु सततं वायुभूताः पितामहाः। आविशन्ति द्विजान् दृष्ट्वा तस्मादेतद् ब्रवीमि ते॥ वक्षैरक्षैः प्रदानैस्तैर्भक्ष्यपेयेस्तथैव च। गोभिरश्वैस्तथा ग्रामैः पूजयित्वा द्विजसमां। भवन्ति पितरः प्रीताः पूजितेषु द्विजातिषु॥ तस्मादन्नेन विधिवत् पूजयेद् द्विजसत्तमान्। वायुपुराण 75.13-15 (= वायु, उत्तरार्ध 13.13-15, Venk. ed.); ब्राह्मणान्ते समायान्ति पितरो ह्यन्तरिक्षगाः। वायुभूताश्च तिष्ठन्ति भुक्त्वा यान्ति परां गतिम्॥ औशनसस्मृति (Jiv. I. p. 526).

enter the brāhmanas (invited) after assuming an aerial form and that when the best of brāhmanas are honoured with clothes, foods, gifts, eatables, liquids, cows, horses and villages, pitrs become pleased. Manu III. 189 and the Ausanasa-smṛti also support this notion that pitrs enter the invited brāhmanas. The Matsyapurāṇa (18. 5-7) enjoins: piṇḍas should be offered to the departed for twelve days after death, since they serve him as food on his journey and give him great satisfaction. Therefore, the soul leaving the dead body is not taken to the abode of the departed for twelve days (after death); the departed spirit hovers near his house, his sons, his wife for twelve days. Therefore for ten days after death milk (and water) should be placed (hung up) in space for ten nights for reducing all torments (or troubles of the departed) and for the removal of the fatigue of the journey (that the departed spirit has to make). The Viṣṇudharmasūtra⁷⁶⁰ (20. 34-36) provides "the departed spirit enjoys in the world of *pitrs* the food offered in śrāddha with the utterance of the word 'svadhā'; whether the departed is in the state of a god or in the place of torments (Hell) or in the form of a lower animal or a human being, the śrāddha food offered by his relatives reaches him; when śrāddha is performed, the performer and the departed soul both certainly secure vigour (or prosperity)."

The Brahmapurāṇa⁷⁶¹ states that śrāddha is to be treated of under five heads, viz. how, where, when, by whom and with what materials. But before proceeding to deal with these five heads, it is necessary to dilate upon the underlying ideas and significance of the word '*pitaraḥ*' from the most ancient times of which we have literary records.

The word '*pitṛ*' means 'father', but the word '*pitaraḥ*' is used in two senses, viz. (1) a man's three immediate deceased ancestors, (2) the early or ancient ancestors of the human race that were supposed to inhabit a separate world (*loka*) by them-

760. पितृलोकगतश्चान्नं श्राद्धे भुंक्ते स्वधासमम्। पितृलोकगतस्यास्य तस्माच्छ्राद्धं प्रयच्छन्त॥ देवत्वे यातनास्थाने तिर्यग्योनौ तथैव च। मानुष्ये च तथाप्नोति श्राद्धं दत्तं स्वबान्धवैः। प्रेतस्य श्राद्धकर्तुश्च पुष्टिः श्राद्धे कृते ध्रुवम्। तस्माच्छ्राद्धं सदा कार्यं शोकं त्यक्त्वा निरर्थकम्॥ विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 20. 34-36. Compare मार्कण्डेय 23.49-51 (Venk. ed.) for similar verses.

761. शृणुध्वं मुनिशार्दूलाः श्राद्धकल्पं सुविस्तरात्। यथा यत्र यदा येषु (v. 1. येन यैर्देवैस्तद्वदाम्यहम्॥ ब्रह्मपुराण 220. 2.

selves.⁷⁶² For this second meaning, vide Rg. X. 14. 2 and 7, X.15.2 (translated above pp. 191-92, 194) and Rg. IX.97.39.^{762a} 'That Soma which becomes stronger and stronger and makes others strong, that is strained through a strainer, that flows in a stream, protected us by means of the luminary (the Sun)—that Soma with whose help our ancestors knowing the place (where the cows were kept concealed) and the higher regions, harassed the mountain for (the sake of recovering) the cows.' In Rg. X. 15.1 the *pitrs* are said to be of three grades, lower, middling or higher. They are also said to be earlier and later ones (Rg. X. 15.2). They are all known to Agni, though all *pitrs* are not known to their descendants (Rg. X. 15. 13). The *pitrs* are divided into several groups such as *Angirasas*, *Vairūpas*, *Atharvans*, *Bhrgus*, *Navagvas* and *Daśagvas* (Rg. X. 14. 5-6), the *Angirasas* being particularly associated with Yama who is invoked to come to the sacrifice along with the *Angirasas* (Rg. X. 14. 3-5). In Rg. I.⁷⁶³ 62. 2 it is said: 'through whose (Indra's) help our ancient ancestors (*pitarah*), the *Angirasas*, who sang his praises and who knew the place, found out the cows.' The *pitrs* called *Angiras* were, it appears, again subdivided into two classes viz. *Navagva* and *Daśagva*⁷⁶⁴ both of which words occur in Rg. I. 62. 4, V. 39. 12 and X. 62. 6. In several passages the ancient fathers are identified with the seven sages⁷⁶⁵ as in Rg. IV. 42.8 and VI. 22. 2 and sometimes the *Navagvas* and *Daśagvas* also are said to be the seven sages (Rg. I. 62. 4). *Angirasas* are said to be the sons of Agni (Rg. X. 62. 5) and also of Heaven (Rg. IV. 2. 15). The *pitrs* are often said to regale themselves in the company of gods,

762. This idea is at least Indo-Iranian, if not Indo-European. The ancient Parsi scriptures speak of *Fravashis* that were originally the same as *pitrs* of ancient Hindu works or the Manes among the ancient Romans. They were the everlasting and deified souls of the dead. Gradually the meaning of *Fravashi* was extended and even Gods and objects like the Earth and the sky were supposed to have each a *Fravashi*. Vide S. B. E. vol. 4 p. 262 for the *Fravashis* of the holy Yama and for the different classes of *Fravashis*; also S. B. E. vol. 23 pp. 180, 184, 230.

762 a. येना नः पूर्वे पितरः पदज्ञाः स्वविदो अभि गा अद्रिमुष्णन् ॥ ऋ. X. 97.39.

763. येना नः पूर्वे पितरः पदज्ञा अर्चन्तो अङ्गिरसो गा अविन्दन् ॥ ऋ. I. 62.2

764. नवग्वासः सुतसोमास इन्द्रं दशग्वासो अभ्यर्चन्त्यर्केः ॥ ऋ. V. 39.12; ये अग्नेः परि जज्ञिरे विरूपासो दिवस्पतिः । नवग्वो नु दशग्वो अङ्गिरस्तमः सचा देवेषु महेते ॥ ऋ. X. 62.6.

765. अस्माकमत्र पितरस्त आसन् सप्त ऋषयो दीर्गहे बध्यमाने । ऋ. IV. 42.8; तस्य नः पूर्वे पितरो नवग्वाः सप्त विपासो अभि वाजयन्तः । ऋ. VI. 22.2.



particularly of Yama (Rg. VII. 76. 4, X. 14. 10, X. 15. 8-10).⁷⁶⁶ The *pitrs* are said to be fond of Soma drink (Rg. X. 15. 1 and 5, IX. 97. 39), they lie down on kuśa grass (Rg. X. 15.5), they come with Agni and Indra to partake of the offerings (Rg. X. 15. 10 and X. 16. 12) and Agni is also said to carry the offerings to the *pitrs* (Rg. X. 15. 12). Fire is supposed to take the spirit of a cremated person to the *pitrs* (Rg. X. 16. 1-2, 5=A. V. 18. 2. 10; Rg. X. 17. 3). In later works also (e. g. in Mārka. chap. 45), Brahmā is supposed to have created in the beginning four classes viz. gods, asuras, *pitrs* and human beings. Vide also Brahmāṇḍapurāṇa, Prakriyā, chap. 8, and upodghāta chap. 9. 35 (ityete pitaro devā devāśca pitarah punaḥ anyonyapitaro hyete).

It was supposed that the departed spirit, after the cremation of the body, was endowed with an ethereal body and became associated with Yama, the gatherer of departed men (Rg. X. 14. 1 and 8, X. 15. 14, X. 16. 5), and with *pitrs*. The departed spirit went to the world of the *pitrs* and Agni was implored to take the spirit to the world of the departed whose deeds were good and to the stride of Viṣṇu (Rg. X. 14. 9, X. 15. 3, X. 16. 4).

Although Yama is said to dwell in heaven (*divi*) in Rg. X. 64. 3, he is really a god of the middle region, as the Nirukta states.⁷⁶⁷ The Atharvaveda states:⁷⁶⁸ 'let us worship with obeisance the fathers and grandfathers of our father, that enter the wide middle regions, that dwell on the earth and in heaven.' In Rg. I. 35. 6⁷⁶⁹ it is said: there are three worlds; two of them (Heaven and earth) are in the lap of Savitr; one (i. e. the middle region) is in the domain of Yama where departed spirits congregate. 'The great Luminary (the Sun) has risen, a gift of the *pitrs*' (Rg. X. 107. 1). In the Tai. Br. I. 3. 10. 5⁷⁷⁰

766. त इद्देवानां सधमाद आसन्नृतावानः कवयः पूर्यासः। गूळहं ज्योतिः पितरो अन्वविन्दन् सत्यमन्त्रा अजनयन्नुषासम्॥ ऋ. VII. 76. 4; अथा पितृन् सुविदत्रा उपोहि यमेन ये सधमादं मदन्ति॥ ऋ. X. 14.10=अथर्व 18.2.11.

767. माध्यमिको यम इत्याहुः। तस्मान् माध्यमिकान् पितृन् मन्यन्ते। निरुक्त XI.18. The Egyptian legend of Osiris presents many of the details connected with Yama. Vide Vulliamy's 'Immortal man,' chap. V. pp 140-143.

768. ये नः पितुः पितरो ये पितामहा य आविविष्टुर्वन्तरिक्षम्। य आक्षियन्ति पृथिवीमुत द्यां तेभ्यः पितृभ्यो नमसा विधेम॥ अथर्ववेद 18. 2. 49.

769. तिस्रो द्यावः सवितुर्द्वा उपस्थाँ एका यमस्य भुवने विराणाद । ऋ. I. 35. 6.

770. तृतीये वा इतो लोके पितरः। तै. ब्रा. I. 3.10.5; अथ त्रयो वाव लोका मनुष्यलोकः पितृलोको देवलोक इति सोऽयं मनुष्यलोकः पुत्रेणैव जय्यो नान्येन कर्मणा कर्मणा पितृलोको विद्यया देवलोको देवलोको वै लोकानां श्रेष्ठस्तस्माद्विद्यां प्रशंसन्ति। बृह. उ. I. 5.16



it is said that the pitrs dwell in the third world from this. This means that after *bhūloka* and *antarikṣa* comes the *pitṛloka*. In the Br. Up. I. 5.16 three worlds of men, pitrs and gods are separately mentioned. In Rg. X. 135. 1-7, Yama is spoken of in somewhat different language. He is in this hymn mentioned as a god by himself and not as the first mortal who made a path (Rg. X. 14. 2) or as the gatherer of men (X. 14. 1) or as being in company of the pitrs. In a few other places Yama is no doubt called *rājan* and praised in the same breath with *Varuṇa* (Rg. X. 14. 7). But such a position is very rarely mentioned. For the further development of Yama and his assistants as the punishers of men for evil deeds, vide pp. 159-160 above and notes 381-386.

There is another division of pitrs viz. *pitarah somavantah*,⁷⁷¹ *pitarah barhiṣadah*, *pitarah agniṣvāttāh*. The latter two are named in Rg. X. 15. 4 and 11 (which occur also in Tai. S. II. 6.12. 2). The Śat. Br. defines these as follows:—"those that performed a soma sacrifice are *pitarah somavantah*; those that offered cooked oblations (like *caru* and *puroḍāśa*) and secured a world are *pitarah barhiṣadah*; those that did none of these (two actions) and whom fire consumes when burning them are '*pitarah agniṣvāttāh*;' these are the only ones that are *pitarah*." The Tai.⁷⁷² Br. has a somewhat similar passage and the Kāthaka Samhitā IX. 6.17 also refers to these three kinds of *pitrs*. Later writers introduced certain changes in the meanings of the words for the different classes of *pitrs* and also increased the number of the classes of *pitrs*. For example, the Nandipurāṇa q. by Hemādri states: the *pitrs* of brāhmaṇas are called '*agniṣvāttā*', those of kṣatriyas '*barhiṣadah*', those of vaiśyas '*kāvyas*', those of śūdras '*sukālin*' and those of mleccas and untouchables are called '*vyāma*'.⁷⁷³ Even Manu

771. तद्ये सोमेनेजानाः । ते पितरः सोमवन्तोऽथ ये दत्तेन पक्वेन लोकं जयन्ति ते पितरो बर्हिषदोऽथ ये ततो नान्यतरञ्चन यानग्निरेव दहन्स्वदयति ते पितरोऽग्निष्वात्ताः । एत उ ते ये पितरः । शतपथब्रा. II. 6.1.7.

772. पितृन् बर्हिषदो यजति ये वै यज्वानः ।...पितृन्ग्निष्वात्तान् यजति ये वा अयज्वानो गृहमेधिनः । ते पितरो अग्निष्वात्ताः । अग्निं कव्यवाहनं यजति य एव पितृणामग्निः । तस्मादा वृतीयात्पुरुषाज्जामानि गृह्णन्ति । एतावन्तो हीज्यन्ते । ते. ब्रा. I 6.9.5. वायुपुराण (30.6-7) echoes this 'अग्निष्वात्ताः स्मृतास्ते वै पितरोऽनाहिताग्नयः । यज्वानस्तेषु वै व्यासन् पितरः सोमपीथिनः । स्मृता बर्हिषदस्ते वै पितरोऽनाहिताग्नयः'.

773. अग्निष्वात्ता ब्राह्मणानां पितरः परिकीर्तिताः । राज्ञां बर्हिषदो नाम प्रकीर्तिताः ॥ सुकालिनस्तु शूद्राणां व्यामा म्लेच्छान्त्यजातिषु । q. by आ. प्र. p. 44 from हेमाद्रि; compare मनु III. 197.

(III. 193-198) mentions several classes of *pitṛs*, connects *pitṛs* called Somapās, Havirbhujah Ājyapās and Sukalins with the four varṇas and in III. 199 states that the *pitṛs* of brāhmaṇas are designated as Anagnidagdha, Agnidagdha, Kāvya, Barhiṣad, Agniṣvāta and Saumya. Those verses of Manu appear to summarize different traditions about the several classes of *pitṛs*. Vide Matsyapurāṇa 141. 4 for the same last four names and 141. 15-18 for their definitions. In Śātātapa-smṛti (VI. 5-6) twelve groups or divisions of *pitṛs* are mentioned viz. piṇḍabhājah (three), lepabhājah (three), Nāṇḍimukhas (three) and Aśrumukhas (three). This is a classification of *pitṛs* from two different standpoints. In Vāyu 72.1 and 73.60, Brahmāṇḍa (Upodghāta 9.53), Padma V. 9. 2-3, Viṣṇudharmottara I. 138. 2-3 and other Purāṇas the classes of *pitṛs* are said to be seven, three of which are formless (*amūrtimat*) and four have forms (*mūrtimat*) and they and their offspring are described in detail. All this is passed over here. The Skandapurāṇa (VI. 216. 9-10) speaks of nine groups of *pitṛs*, being Agniṣvāttāḥ, Barhiṣadaḥ, Ājyapāḥ, Somapāḥ, Raṣmipāḥ, Upahūtāḥ, those called 'āyantunāḥ', Śrāddhabhujah, Nāṇḍimukhāḥ. In this list old and new elements are mixed up. The Indian mind often revels in divisions, sub-divisions and classifications without much basis therefor and this is probably an illustration of that tendency. Manu (III. 201) states that from the sages the *pitṛs* sprang, from the *pitṛs* sprang gods and human beings and from the gods arose the whole world whether moving or immovable. It is remarkable that here the gods are spoken of as springing from the *pitṛs*. This is really a mere eulogy of *pitṛs* (i. e. it is an arthavāda).

The *pitṛs* were in a class apart from the gods. On the meaning of the word 'pañcajanāḥ' occurring in Rg. X. 774 53. 4

774. पञ्च जना मम होत्रं जुषध्वम् । गन्धर्वाः पितरो देवा असुरा रक्षांसित्येके । चत्वारो वर्णा निषादः पञ्चम इत्यौपमन्यवः । निरुक्त III. 8. The ऐ. ब्रा. 13.7 has 'एतत्पञ्च जनानां सुकथं देवमनुष्याणां गन्धर्वाप्सरसां सर्पाणां च पितृणां च'. The real meaning of पञ्चजनाः is the same as that of पञ्चकुण्डयः (in Rg. X. 60.4), पञ्च क्षितीर्मानुषीः (Rg. VII. 79.1), पञ्च चर्षणीः (Rg. V. 86.2) and we have यत् पाञ्चजन्यया विशा in Rg. VIII. 63.7. पञ्चजनाः means विशाः, the whole Aryan people divided probably into five clans. By the time of the Ait. Br. the original meaning of पञ्चजनाः was probably forgotten. The वेदान्तसूत्र (I. 4. 11-13) explains that the expression पञ्चजनानां occurring in Br. Up. IV. 4.17 refers to Prāṇa, Caksuḥ (eye), ear, food and mind occurring in the next verse (Br. Up. IV. 4.18). Śaṅkarācārya in his *bhāṣya* on Vedāntasūtra I. 4.12 states that the word पञ्चजन in Rg. VIII. 63.7 means *prajā* (people).

(pañcajanā mama hotram juṣadhvam) and other passages, the Ait. Br. (13.7 or 3.31) explains that they are the five classes, viz. Gandharvas with Apsarases, pitṛs, devas, sarpas and rākṣasas. The Nirukta III. 8 partly follows this explanation and also gives another. In the Atharvaveda X. 6. 32 the gods, *pitṛs* and men are mentioned in that order. The ancient Vedic texts and practice make a sharp distinction between the Gods and the Pitṛs. The Tai. S. VI. 1. 1. 1 states: 'the gods and men divided the quarters, the gods took the east, *pitṛs* the south, men the west and Rudras the north.' The general rule is that sacrifices for gods are begun in the forenoon, while the *pitṛ-yajña* is performed in the afternoon (Śān. Br.).⁷⁷⁵ The Śat. Br. II. 4. 2. 2 narrates that the *pitṛs* wearing the sacred thread over the right shoulder (and under the left arm) and bending their left knee approached Prajāpati, when Prajāpati said to them 'you will have food at (the end of) each month (on the Amāvāsyā), your *svadhā* (cordial) will be swiftness of thought and the moon will be your light,' while to the gods he had said that sacrifice will be their food and the sun their light. The Tai. Br. ⁷⁷⁶ I. 3. 10. 4 appears to make a distinction between *pitṛs* who are of the nature and position of gods and *pitṛs* that are more or less like human beings.

The Kauśika-sūtra (1. 9-23) neatly collects in one place the difference in the procedure of the rites meant for gods and for pitṛs. The performer of rites for gods wears the sacred thread on the left shoulder and under the right armpit, while in the case of the rites for pitṛs it is worn on the right shoulder and under the left arm; the rite for gods is either begun facing the east or north, while that for the pitṛs is begun facing the south; the rite for gods is finished in the north-east (or north or east), while that for the *pitṛs* is completed in the south-west; an action is done only once for *pitṛs*, while for gods at least thrice or as many times as the texts direct; in going round (perambulating) the right side is turned towards gods and the left one in the case of *pitṛs*; offerings are made to gods with the words 'svāhā' and 'vaśat', while they are made to pitṛs with 'svadhā' and

775. अथ यदपराद्धे पितृयज्ञेन चरन्ति अपक्षयभाजो वै पितरः। शा. ब्रा. V. 6.

776. देवान् वै पितॄन् प्रीतान् मनुष्याः पितरोऽनुप्रपिपते । तिस्र आहुतीर्जुहोवि विनिदधाति । षट् सम्पद्यन्ते । षड् वा ऋतवः । ऋतवः खलु वै देवाः पितरः । ऋतून्वै देवान् पितॄन् प्रीणाति । तान् प्रीतान्मनुष्याः पितरोऽनुप्रपिपते । तै. ब्रा. I. 3, 10.4 (com explains अनुप्रपिपते अन्वप्रीतिर्वा भवन्ति). This is alluded to in the वायुपुराण 30, 4 'मध्वादयः षड् ऋतवस्तान् पितॄन् न्परिचक्षते । ऋतवः पितरो देवा इत्येषा वैदिकी श्रुतिः ॥.'

'namaskāra'; the darbhas employed in rites for Fathers are those that are taken out from the earth with their roots, while for gods darbhas used are cut a little above the roots. The Baud. Śr. II. 2. also mentions some of these in one place.⁷⁷⁷ The R̥gveda itself (in X. 14. 3 'svāhānye svadhayānye madanti') marks this distinction in the words employed at the offerings to Gods and *Pitrs*. The Śat. Br. (II. 1, 3, 4 and II. 1. 4. 9) speaks of the gods as immortal and of the Fathers as mortal.

Though the gods and *pitrs* are placed in separate classes, still the *pitrs* partake of some characteristics of the divine. As R̥g. X. 15. 8 shows, the *pitrs* drank Soma. In R̥g. X. 68. 11 it is said that the *pitrs* adorned the sky with nakṣatras (nakṣatrebhiḥ pitaro dyām-apimśan) and placed darkness in the night and light in the day. The *pitrs* are said to have found out the light that was secreted and to have produced the Dawn (R̥g. VII. 76. 4). Here the *pitrs* are credited with powers possessed by the highest gods. The *pitrs* are invoked with affection and regard for conferring various boons and their favour is sought in various ways. In R̥g. X. 14. 6 the good will (*sumati*) and favour (*saumanasa*) of the *pitrs* are sought. In R̥g. X. 15. 1. and 5 the protection of *pitrs* is sought. They are requested to grant happiness unmixed with trouble (R̥g. X. 15. 4.), to bestow wealth on the sacrificer (R̥g. X. 15. 7 and 11) and on his son. R̥g. X. 15. 11 and A. V. 18. 3. 14⁷⁷⁸ seek the bestowal of wealth and heroic sons, A. V. 14. 2. 73 says 'May the *pitrs* who throng round the bride to see her grant her happiness endowed with progeny.'⁷⁷⁹ In the Vāj. S. II. 33 occurs⁷⁸⁰ the well-known mantra 'Oh *pitrs*! deposit (in this wife) an

777. प्रागपवर्गाण्युदगपवर्गाणि वा प्राङ्मुखः प्रदक्षिणं यज्ञोपवीती दैवानि कर्माणि करोति । दक्षिणामुखः प्रसव्यं प्राचीनावीती पित्र्याणि । बौ. श्रौ. II. 2.

778. परा यात पितर आ च यातायं वो यज्ञो मधुना समक्तः । दत्तो अस्मभ्यं द्रविणेह भद्रं रयिं च नः सर्ववीरं दधात । अथर्ववेद 18. 3. 14.

779. ये पितरो बधूदर्शा इमं बहुमागमन् । ते अस्यै बध्वै संपत्त्यै प्रजावच्छर्मं यच्छन्तु ॥ अथर्व 14. 2. 73.

780. आधत्त पितरो गर्भं कुमारं पुष्करस्रजम् । यथेह पुरुषोऽसत् ॥ वाज. सं. II. 33. The स्वादिरगृह्य III. 5. 30 provides 'मध्यमं पिण्डं पुत्रकामा प्राशयेदाधत्तेति'; vide गोभिलगृह्य IV. 3. 27 and also कौशिकसूत्र 89.6. The आश्व. श्रौ. II. 7. 13 reads पत्नीं प्राशयेदाधत्त पितरो...स्रजम् । यथायमरपा असत्'. The *Asvins* are called पुष्करस्रजौ and so in पुष्करस्रजं the idea is that the son may be long-lived and handsome. यथेह...असत् may be explained as 'येन प्रकारेण इहैव क्षितौ पुरुषो देवपितृमनुष्याणाम-भष्टिपूरयिता भूयात् तथा गर्भमाधत्त ।' बाह्यणसर्वस्व of हलायुध. कात्या. श्रौ. IV. 1. 22 also says आधत्तेति मध्यमपिण्डं पत्नीं प्राश्राति पुत्रकामा.

embryo, a child that (will wear later) a garland of lotuses so that he may become a grown-up male' repeated when the wife of the performer of the śrāddha eats the middle one out of the three pindas. It should not be, however, supposed that the element of fear of the pitrs is altogether wanting.^{780a} For example, Rg. X. 15. 6 prays 'whatever fault we may commit in reference to you through our being (erring) men do not injure us for that.' In Rg. III. 55. 2 we read 'May the gods and the ancient pitrs who know the place (of the cows or the path) not harm us here.' In Rg. X. 66. 14 it is said 'the Vasiṣṭhas praising the gods fashioned speech (hymns) like pitrs and like sages.' Here pitrs and ṛsis are separate groups and Vasiṣṭhas are compared to both.^{780b}

In many passages of the Vedic Literature the word *pitarah* is applied to the three immediate deceased male ancestors of a man. 'Therefore up to three generations they specify (the ancestors) by name; for so many are the ones to whom sacrifice is offered' (vide n. 772 above). The Śat. Br. II. 4. 2. 19⁷⁸¹ mentions the presentation formulas of the cakes to the father, grand-father and great-grand-father and

780 a. Compare Vulliamy's 'Immortal man' (pp. 24-25) for fear and affection as the elements of the attitude towards the dead among primitive as well as civilized men.

780 b. देवाः सौम्याश्च काव्याश्च अयज्वानो ह्ययोनिजाः । देवास्ते पितरः सर्वे देवास्तान्वादयन्त्युत ॥ मनुष्यपितरश्चैव तेभ्योऽन्ये लौकिकाः स्मृताः । पिता पितामहश्चैव तथा यः प्रपितामहः ॥ ब्रह्माण्डपुराण II. 28.70-71; अङ्गिराश्च क्रतुश्चैव कश्यपश्च महानृषिः । एते कुरुकुलश्रेष्ठ महायोगेश्वराः स्मृताः । एते च पितरो राजन्नेष आर्द्धाविधिः परः । प्रेतास्तु पिण्ड-सम्बन्धान्मुच्यन्ते तेन कर्मणा ॥ अनु. 92.21-22. This last shows that ancient sages like अङ्गिरस्, क्रतु and कश्यप are pitrs to whom water is offered (and no पिण्डs), while pindas are offered to one's immediate deceased ancestors.

781. स ददाति । असावेतत् इत्येव यजमानस्य पित्रे ये च त्वामन्वित्यु हैके आहुस्तदु तथा न ब्रूयात् स्वयं वै तेषां सह येषां सह तस्माद् ब्रूयादसावेतत् इत्येव यजमानस्य पित्रे असावेतत् इति पितामहायासावेतत् इति प्रपितामहाय । तद्यदितः परागददाति सकृद्ब्रूव्यं पराञ्चः पितरः । शतपथ II. 8.4 2. The तै. सं. I.8.5.1 is : सोमाय पितृमते पुरोडाशं षट्कपालं निर्वपति पितृभ्यो बर्हिषद्भ्यो धानाः पितृभ्योऽग्निष्वात्तेभ्योऽभिवान्याये दुग्धे मन्थम् । एतत् ते तत ये च त्वामनु एतत् ते पितामह प्रपितामह ये च त्वामनु अत्र पितरो यथाभागं मन्दध्वम् । Again in तै. सं. III. 2.5.5 occurs the passage 'एतत्ते तत...मन्दध्वम्'. This is carried on to later times as in अनु. 92. 15 'सोमायेति च वक्तव्यं तथा पितृमतेति च'. Vide also अथर्व. 18. 4. 71-77 'अग्नये कव्यवाहनाय स्वधा नमः । सोमाय पितृमते स्वधा नमः । पितृभ्यः सोमवद्भ्यः स्वधा नमः । यमाय पितृमते स्वधा नमः । एतत्ते प्रतपामहे स्वधा ये च त्वामनु । एतत्ते ततामह स्वधा ये च त्वामनु । एतत्ते तत स्वधा ।' In Rg. IX. 11.2.3 कारुरहं ततो भिषक्, तत means 'father'. नपात् (=पौत्र) and प्रणपात् (=प्रापितृ) occur in Rg. VIII. 17.13.

then states that the performer mutters the words "here, O fathers! regale yourselves, like bulls come here each to his own share" (Vāj. S. II. 31 first half). Some (such as Tai. S. I. 8. 5. 1) repeated the formula "this here (ball of rice) is for thee and (for those) that come after thee." But the Śat. Br. emphatically says that he should not offer with this formula, but rather with the formula 'this here is for thee.' In Śat. Br. XII. 8. 1. 7 the three immediate paternal ancestors are said to be svadhā-loving. Relying on these Vedic passages and on the fact that Manu (III. 221) and Viṣṇudharma-sūtra (21. 3, 75. 4) prescribe the invocation of pitṛs after mentioning their gotra and names that the Śrāddhaprakāśa (p. 13) concludes that it is really the father and the other ancestors that are the deities of śrāddha and not Vasu, Rudra and Āditya, since these latter have no gotra and that the description of the father and others as Vasu, Rudra and Āditya is meant only for contemplation (on them as identical with Vasus &c.). On a passage of the Brahmapurāṇa⁷⁸² prescribing that the performer should say to the invited brāhmaṇas that he would call the pitṛs to the rites and that when the brāhmaṇas give permission to call them he should do so, the Śr. P. (p. 204) remarks that the pitṛs here meant are the divine ones viz. Vasus, Rudras and Ādityas and also the human ones viz. the performer's father and the rest. The Vāyupurāṇa (56. 65-66) Brahmanḍa and Anu. distinguish between pitṛs who are above and pitṛs who are *laukika*, viz. father, grand-father and great-grand-father. Vide also Vāyu 70. 34 for pitṛs that are like gods.

In the post-Vedic Literature, particularly in the Purāṇas, a great deal is said about the origin and classes of pitṛs. For example, the Vāyupurāṇa 56. 18 speaks of three classes of pitṛs viz. 'kāvyāḥ, barhiṣadaḥ and agniṣvāttāḥ', while the same Purāṇa, chap. 73, Varāha 13. 16 ff, Padma (Śrṣṭi 9. 2-4) and Brahmanḍa III. 10.1 speak of the origin of pitṛs of seven classes that dwell in heaven, four of which have a form (*mūrtimat*) and three of which are without form (*amūrta*). The Śātātapa-smṛti (6. 5-6) speaks of 12 pitṛs viz. piṇḍabhājah, lepabhājah, nāṇḍīmukhāḥ and āsrumukhāḥ. All such descriptions have to be passed over from considerations of space.

782. ब्रह्मपुराणे । पितृनावाहयामीति स्वयमुक्त्वा समाहितः । आवाहयस्वेति परैरुक्तस्त्वावाहयेच्छुचिः ॥ पितरो दिव्याः वसुरुद्रादित्याः मानुषाः यजमानस्य पित्रादयः । आ. प्र. p. 204

From the sūtra period (about 600 B. C.) to the most modern among medieval Dharmaśāstra works the authors wax eloquent over the praises or the importance or benefits of the institution of śrāddhas. One of the earliest works among these, viz. the Āp. Dh. S. gives the following interesting information:⁷⁸³ "Formerly men and gods lived together in this world. The gods went to heaven owing to sacrifices (i. e. as a reward of sacrifices that they performed), but men remained behind. Those among men who perform sacrifices in the same way as the gods did, dwell in the other world (i. e. heaven) with the gods and Brahman. Then (seeing that men lagged behind) Manu promulgated the rite which is designated by the word 'śrāddha' and which tends to the salvation (or happiness) of mankind. In this rite the Manes (*pitarah*) are the deities but the brāhmaṇas (that are fed) are in the place of the *āhavanīya* fire (in which in sacrifices to gods oblations are offered)". On account of this last sūtra Haradatta (com. of Āp. Dh. S.) and others hold that feeding the brāhmaṇas is the principal act at a śrāddha. The Brahmandapurāṇa (Upodghātapāda 9, 15. and 10. 99) speaks of Manu as the promulgator of śrāddha rites and Viṣṇupurāṇa III. 1. 30, Vāyu 44. 38 and Bhāgavata III. 1. 22 designate Manu as Śrāddha-deva. Similarly, in the Śāntiparva 345.⁷⁸⁴ 14-21 and the Viṣṇu-dharmottara I. 139. 14-16 it is stated that the institution of śrāddha was established in the Boar incarnation by Viṣṇu and that Viṣṇu should be regarded as dwelling in the three pīṇḍas offered to the father, grand-father and great-grandfather. From this and from the passage of the Āp. Dh. S. cited above we may infer that it was believed even several centuries before Christ that the institution of śrāddhas had a hoary antiquity behind it and that it was as old as Manu, the father of mankind according to the Rgveda (VIII. 63. 1, VIII. 30. 3.). It is, however, very remarkable that the word 'śrāddha' itself does not occur in any undoubtedly authentic and ancient Vedic passage, though the rite called Pīṇḍapitr-yajña⁷⁸⁵ (performed on the *amāvāsyā* of each month by an

783. सह देवमनुष्या अस्मिँल्लोके पुरा बभूवुः। अथ देवाः कर्मभिर्दिवं जग्मुर्हीयन्त मनुष्याः। तेषां ये तथा कर्माण्यारभन्ते सह देवैर्ब्रह्मणा चास्मिँल्लोके भवन्ति। अथैतन्मनुः श्राद्धशब्दं कर्म प्रोवाच। प्रजानिःश्रेयसाय च। तत्र पितरो देवता ब्राह्मणस्त्वाहवनीयार्थे। आप. ध. सू. II. 7.16. 1-3.

784. पिता पितामहश्चैव तथैव प्रपितामहः। अहमेवात्र विज्ञेयस्त्रिषु पिण्डेषु संस्थितः। शान्ति 345. 21, q by आ. प्र. p. 11.

785. That पिण्डपितृयज्ञ is a श्राद्ध is stated by गोभिलगृह्य IV. 4. 1-2 'अन्वष्टक्यस्थालीपाकेन पिण्डपितृयज्ञो व्याख्यातः। अमावास्यां तच्छ्राद्धमितरदन्वष्टक्यम्।' Vide आ. प्र. p. 4 for the same. For a description of पिण्डपितृयज्ञ, vide II. of Dh. vol. II. pp. 1085-1090, for महापितृयज्ञ *ibid.* pp. 1101-1103.



Ahitāgni), the Mahāpitryajña (performed in the Cāturmāsya called Sākamedha) and the rites called Aṣṭakās were known to the early Vedic literature. The word śrāddha occurs in the Kathopanīṣad (1. 3. 17) 'whoever proclaims this highly esoteric doctrine in an assembly of brāhmaṇas or at the time of śrāddha tends to secure immortality.'⁷⁸⁶ The other early occurrences of the word śrāddha known to me are confined to the sūtra literature. The most reasonable and probable inference to be drawn from these facts is this that only a few rites (mentioned just above) were known as related to the *pitṛs* and that therefore no need arose for a generic term in very ancient times to comprehend several rites for the *pitṛs*. But when the number of rites in honour of *pitṛs* increased, the generic term 'śrāddha' was hit upon.

A few samples of the panegyrics on śrāddha may be set out here. The Baud.⁷⁸⁷ Dh. S. states that rites for the Fathers confer long life, heaven, fame and prosperity. The Harivamśa⁷⁸⁸ says 'the world derives support from śrāddha and Yoga (i. e. Mokṣa) springs from it.' Sumantu⁷⁸⁹ quoted in the Smṛticandrikā (śrāddha p. 333) states 'nothing else is declared to be more beneficial than śrāddha.' The Viṣṇupurāṇa (III. 14. 1-4) avers that if a man performs śrāddha with faith he thereby propitiates Brahmā, Indra, Rudra and the other gods, sages, birds, men, beasts, creeping animals, hosts of *pitṛs* and whatever else is styled a being and the whole world. Yāj. I. 270⁷⁹⁰ promising long life and several other benefits arising from gratifying *pitṛs* has already been quoted above (p. 337). Yama has a similar verse. It is said in a passage of the Viṣṇudharmottara⁷⁹¹ quoted by the Śrāddhasāra (p. 6) and Śrāddhaprakāśa (pp. 11-12) that the *pinḍa* offered to the

786. य इमं परमं गुह्यं आवयेद् ब्रह्मसंसादि। प्रयतः श्राद्धकाले वा तदानन्त्याय कल्पते॥ कठ० I. 3. 17.

787. पित्र्यमायुष्यं स्वर्ग्यं यशस्यं पुष्टिकर्म च। बौ. ध. सू. II. 8 1.

788. श्राद्धे प्रतिष्ठितो लोकः श्राद्धे योगः प्रवर्तते॥ हरिवंश I. 21. 1.

789. श्राद्धात्परतरं नान्यच्छ्रेयस्करमुदाहृतम्। तस्मात्सर्वप्रयत्नेन श्राद्धं कुर्याद्विचक्षणः॥ सुमन्तु q. by स्मृतिच. (श्रा.). p. 333.

790. आयुः पुत्रान् यशः स्वर्गं कीर्तिं पुष्टिं बलं श्रियः। पशून् सौख्यं धनं धान्यं प्रामुष्यात्पितृपूजनात्॥ यम q. by स्मृतिच. (श्रा. p. 333), श्राद्धसार p. 5. Similar verses are ya. I. 270 (= Mārkaṇḍeyapurāṇa 32.38) and शङ्ख 14.33.

791. पूजितैस्तैर्भविष्यामि चतुरात्मा तथाप्यहम्। पितृपैतामहः पिण्डो वासुदेवः प्रकीर्तितः। पैतामहश्च निर्दिष्टस्तथा सङ्कर्षणः प्रभुः। पितृपिण्डश्च विज्ञेयः प्रद्युम्नश्चापराजितः। आत्मा निरुद्धो विज्ञेयः पिण्डनिर्वपणे बुधैः॥ विष्णुधर्मोत्तर I. 139.20-22, q. by श्राद्धसार p. 6 and श्राद्धप्र. pp. 11-12.



great-grandfather is declared to be god Vāsudeva himself, the one to the grandfather is designated Sankarṣaṇa, that to the father is known as Pradyumna and the offerer of the piṇḍas is himself in the position of Aniruddha. In Śāntiparva 345. 21 it is stated that Viṣṇu should be looked upon as staying in the three piṇḍas. In the Kūrmapurāṇa it is stated 'on the day of *Amāvāsyā* the pitṛs assuming an aerial form come to the door of their former haunt and mark whether śrāddha is being performed by men of their family. This they do till sunset. When the sun sets, being oppressed by hunger and thirst, they become full of despair and feel sorrow, breathe heavily for a long time and go away condemning their descendants. The pitṛs of him who does not offer śrāddha on *amāvāsyā*, even with water or vegetables, go away after cursing him'.

It is necessary to say a few words about the derivation of the word 'śrāddha'. That the word is derived from 'śraddhā' is quite clear. In the definition quoted above from the *Brahmapurāṇa* and the definition ⁷⁹² given by Marici and Bṛhaspati the connection of śrāddha with śraddhā is emphasized. In śrāddha one entertains the firm faith or conviction that what is given up to the brāhmaṇas for the benefit of the departed man or the Fathers will reach him or them in some way. The *Skandapurāṇa* VI. 218.3 says that śrāddha is so called because śraddhā is the root (or main spring) of that rite. This means that there is not only the conviction stated above but that there is a firm belief that a person is under an obligation to offer it. Śraddhā is deified and addressed as a deity in Rg. ⁷⁹³ X. 151. 1-5, the first verse of which is explained in the *Nirukta* (IX. 31). The word also occurs in Rg. II. 26. 3, VII. 32. 14, VIII. 1. 31, IX. 113. 4. In some verses the two components of the word 'śraddhā' (viz. 'śrat' and 'dhā') are separated without any change in the meaning. For example, in Rg. II. 12. 5 (= A. V. 20. 34. 5) it is said 'Have faith in him; O people! he is Indra'. In Rg. X. 147. 1, addressed to Indra, we have 'I have faith in that high wrath of yours &c.' (śratte dadhāmi

792. प्रेतं पितृंश्च निर्दिश्य भोज्यं यत्प्रियमात्मनः। अद्धया दीयते यत्र तच्छ्राद्धं परि-
कीर्तितम्॥ मरीचि quoted from the पृथ्वीचन्द्रोदय by निर्णयसिन्धु III. p. 372, आ.
प्र. p. 7; संस्कृतं व्यञ्जनाढ्यं च पयोमधुघृतान्वितम्। अद्धया दीयते यस्माच्छ्राद्धं तेषां विप्रयते॥
बृहस्पति q. by हेमाद्रि p. 152, अपरार्क p. 501, कल्पतरु (आ. p. 176), आ. प्र. p. 3,
आद्धतस्व p. 189 quotes it as पुलस्त्य's.

793. अद्धयाग्निः समिध्यते अद्धया ह्वयते हविः। अद्धां भगस्य मूर्धनि ववसा विदया-
मसि॥ ऋ. X. 151. 1.

prathamāya manyave). In the Tai. S. VII. 4. 1. 1. it is ⁷⁹⁴ said "Br̥haspati desired 'may the gods put faith in me, may I reach the position of being their priest'". Vide also Rg. I. 103. 5. *Śrat* and *śraddhā* are both mentioned in the Nighaṇṭu (III. 10) as meaning '*satya*'. In the Vāj. S. 19.77 we are told that Prajāpati put *Śraddhā* in truth and *aśraddhā* in falsehood, while in Vāj. S. 19.30, it is said that truth is obtained by *śraddhā*.

In the post-vedic Literature, Pāṇini explains the forms '*śrāddhin*' and '*śrāddhika*' in V. 2. 85, in the sense of 'one who has eaten a *śraddha* dinner.' The word '*śraddha*' may be derived from *śraddhā* according to Pāṇ. V. 1. 109 ⁷⁹⁵. *Śraddhā* is variously defined. In the *bhāṣya* on Yogasūtra I. 20, '*śraddhā*' is defined as the composure of the mind ⁷⁹⁶ (or mental approval). Devala defines *śraddhā*: 'confidence (in the efficacy) of religious acts is called *śraddhā*; one who has no faith has no reason (or motive) for engaging in religious acts' ⁷⁹⁷. The *Śrāddhasūtra* ⁷⁹⁸ of Kātyāyana prescribes 'one endowed with *śraddhā* should offer *śraddha* even with vegetables (if nothing else is available)'. Vide Manu III. 275 which emphasizes *śraddhā* for the gratification of pitṛs. The Mārkaṇḍeyapurāṇa (29. 27) emphasizes ⁷⁹⁹ the relation of *śraddha* to *śraddhā* and states that what is offered at *śraddhas* becomes transformed into that kind of food for the use of the *pitṛs* who require food in the new bodies they might have assumed according to the doctrine of *karma* and *punarjanma* and it also remarks that *śraddha* offered with wealth acquired in an improper or unjust way is a means of gratification to the *pitṛs* that are born as *cāṇḍālas*, *pukkasas* and similar very low grades of people.

794. बृहस्पतिरकामयत अन्मे देवा दधीरन् गच्छेय पुरोधामिति । तै. सं. VII. 4. 1. 1.

795. प्रयोजनम् । पा. V. 1. 109; तदस्येत्येव । सि. कौ.; अद्वा प्रयोजनं (कारणं) अस्य इति आद्भम्.

796. अद्वा चेतसः संप्रसादः । सा हि जननीव कल्याणी योगिनं पाति । योगसूत्रभाष्य I. 20.

797. प्रत्ययो धर्मकार्येषु तथा अद्भेत्युदाहृता । नास्ति ह्यअद्धानस्य धर्मकृत्ये प्रयोजनम् ॥ देवल q. by कृत्यरत्नाकर p. 16 and आद्भतत्त्व p. 189.

798. अद्भान्वितः आद्भं कुर्वीत शाकेनापि । आद्भसूत्र of कात्यायन q. by हेमाद्रि p. 152.

799. अद्भया परया दत्तं पितृणां नामगोत्रतः । यदाहारास्तु ते जातास्तदाहारत्वमेति तत् ॥ मार्कण्डेय 29. 27; अन्यायोपार्जितैरर्थैश्च आद्भं क्रियते नरैः । तृप्यन्ते तेन चाण्डालः पुक्कसाद्यास्तु योनिषु ॥ मार्कण्डेय 28. 16, स्कन्द VII. 1. 205. 22.



It has already been stated above (pp. 349-350) that in very ancient times there were only three rites for departed ancestors, viz. Piṇḍa-pitr-yajña (offered by those who had consecrated the śrauta fires) or monthly śrāddha in the case of those who had not done so (vide e. g. Āśv. Gr. II. 5. 10, Hir. Gr. II. 10. 1, Āp. Gr. VIII. 21. 1, Viṣṇupurāṇa III. 14. 3 &c.), the Mahāpitṛ-yajña and the Aṣṭakā śrāddhas. The first two have been already described in vol. II. (as said above), but the Aṣṭakā śrāddhas have not been described at all so far. Therefore some remarks will be offered here about them. They are of special importance, but the authorities present great variations on almost all points such as the number of days and the months in which they were to be performed, the deities to be worshipped, the offerings to be made and the procedure to be followed.

Gaut. (VIII. 19) mentions 'Aṣṭakā' rite as the first among the seven kinds of *pākayajñas* and as one of the forty *samskāras*. Aṣṭakā appears to have meant the 8th *tithi* in any month after the Full Moon day (vide Śat. Br. VI. 4. 2. 10). The Śat. Br. states ⁸⁰⁰ 'On the 8th day (after full moon) he (the performer of *agnicayana*) collects the materials for the fire pan, for sacred to Prajāpati is the 8th day (after full moon) and sacred to Prajāpati is this rite viz. the firepan.' Śabara in his *Bhāṣya* on Jai. ⁸⁰¹ I. 3. 2 cites a verse occurring in the A. V. III. 10. 2 and in the Āp. M. P. II. 20. 27 as a *mantra* indicative of Aṣṭakā. The mantra is "May that (Aṣṭakā) night be very auspicious for us, whom people welcome like a cow coming towards a person and which is the wife of the Year.' In the A. V. III. 10. 8 the *Ekāṣṭakā* is said to have the year (*Saṁvatsara*) as husband. The Tai. S. VII. 4. 8. 1. provides ⁸⁰² 'Men about to take *dikṣā* (consecration) for a *Saṁvatsarasattra* should undergo *dikṣā* on the *Ekāṣṭakā*; what is called *Ekāṣṭakā* is the wife of the year.' Jai. (VI. 5. 32-37) explains that *Ekāṣṭakā* is the 8th *tithi* after the Full Moon of Māgha. The Āp. Gr. (quoted by Haradatta

800. अष्टकायामुखां सम्भरति । प्राजापत्यमेतदहर्हृदष्टका प्राजापत्यमेतत्कर्म यदुखा प्राजापत्य एव तदहन् प्राजापत्यं कर्म करोति । शतपथ० VI. 2. 2. 23.

801. अष्टकालिङ्गाश्च मन्त्रा वेदे दृश्यन्ते यां जनाः प्रतिनन्दन्तीत्येवमादयः । शबर on जै. I. 3. 2. The verse as read by शबर on जै. VI. 5. 35 is: यां जनाः प्रतिनन्दन्ति रात्रिं धेनुमिवायतीम् । संवत्सरस्य या पत्नी सा नो अस्तु सुमङ्गली ॥ and he adds 'अष्टकायै सुराधसे स्वाहा'. In the A. V. III. 10. 2 the readings are *वेवा* for *जनाः* and *धेनुमुपायतीम्*.

802. संवत्सराय दीक्षिष्यमाणा एकाष्टकायां दीक्षेरन्नेषा वै संवत्सरस्य पत्नी । अष्टकाष्टका । ते सं. VII. 4. 8. 1.

on Gaut. 8. 19) says ⁸⁰³ the same, but adds that on it (the 8th *tithi*) the moon is in Jyesthā constellation. This means that if the 8th *tithi* is spread over two days, then that day on which the moon is in Jyesthā would be called Ekāṣṭakā.⁸⁰⁴ The Hir. Gr. (II. 15. 9) also says that Ekāṣṭakā is called the wife of the year.⁸⁰⁵

According to the Āśv. Gr. II. 4. 1 the Aṣṭakā days (and rites) were four, viz. the 8th *tithis* of the dark halves of the four months of the two seasons of *hemanta* and *śiśira* (i. e. of Mārgaśīrṣa, Pauṣa, Māgha and Phālguna). Most of the Grhya-sūtras viz. Mānava Gr. II. 8, Śān. Gr. III. 12. 1, Khādīra Gr. III. 3. 27, Kāthaka Gr. 61. 1, Kauṣītaki Gr. III. 15. 1 and Pār. Gr. III. 3 say that there are only three Aṣṭakā rites viz. on the 8th after the Full Moon day of Mārgaśīrṣa (called āgrahāyaṇī) i. e. in the dark halves of Mārgaśīrṣa, Pauṣa (or Taiṣa) and Māgha. The Gobhila Gr. III. 10. 48 mentions that the Aṣṭakās are four according to Kautsa and in all flesh is to be offered, but that Gautama, Audgāhamāni and Vārkakhaṇḍi prescribe only three and Gobhila follows these latter. The Baud. Gr. II. 11. 1 provides that the three Aṣṭakā homas are performed in the months of Taiṣa, Māgha and Phālguna. Āśv. Gr. II. 4. 2 refers to an option that Aṣṭakā rites were performed only on one Aṣṭamī (and not on three or four). The Baud. Gr. provides that ⁸⁰⁶ the rite may be compressed into the three days (7th, 8th and 9th) of the dark half of Māgha or even in one day (i. e. 8th of the dark half of Māgha). The Hir. Gr. (II. 14. 2)

803. या माध्याः पौर्णमास्या उपरिष्टाद् व्यष्टका तस्यामष्टमी ज्येष्ठया सम्पद्यते तामेकाष्टकेत्याचक्षते। आप. गृ. VIII. 21.10; अष्टकां व्याख्यास्यामः। माध्याः पौर्णमास्या योऽपरपक्षस्तस्याष्टमीमेकाष्टकेत्याचक्षते। हिर. गृ. II. 14.1-2. Both अनाकुला and तात्पर्यदर्शन explain व्यष्टका as कुण्ठपक्षः.

804 According to a Vārtika on Pāṇ. VII. 3. 45 the word Aṣṭakā is formed from 'aṣṭan.' वार्तिक 9 on पाणिनि VII. 3.45 teaches that from अष्टन् we get Aṣṭakā as meaning a rite in which the pitṛs are the deities and Aṣṭikā in any other sense (such as अष्टिका खारी).

805 The Full Moon night of Māgha is said to be the month of the year i. e. the year began on that day in ancient times. The Aṣṭakā day after the Full Moon day was the first and most important festival after the Full Moon and it was younger than the beginning of the year. It is probable that because of this it was spoken of as the wife of the year.

806. अथाष्टकाहोमः। तेषां मास्यपरपक्षस्याष्टम्यां क्रियेत। एवं माघे एवं फाल्गुने यावि विद्वतः। यद्यु वै समस्त उपरिष्टान्माध्याः पौर्णमास्या अपरपक्षस्य सप्तम्यामष्टम्यां नवम्यामिष्टम्यां क्रियेतापि वाष्टम्यामेव। बौ. गृ. II. 11.1-4.



describes only one Aṣṭakā rite viz. the Ekāṣṭakā in the dark half of Māgha. The Bhāradvāja Grhya II. 15 also speaks of only Ekāṣṭakā but adds that the 8th of the dark half of Māgha on which the moon is in Jyesthā is called Ekāṣṭakā. According to Hir. Gr. II. 14 and 15 the one Aṣṭakā extended over three days viz. 8th, 9th (on which a cow was sacrificed for the *pitr̥s*) and 10th (which was the Anvaṣṭakā). The Vaikhānasa-smārta-sūtra (ed. by Caland) IV. 8 says that Aṣṭakā is to be performed on the 8th of the dark half of Māgha and Bhādrapada or on the 7th, 9th or 10th tithi.

There is divergence in the offerings also. The Kāthaka Gr. (61. 3), Jaimini Gr. 2. 3 and Śān. Gr. (III. 12. 2) provide that on the three different Aṣṭakās the offerings are of cooked vegetables, flesh and *apūpas* (cakes), while the Pār. Gr. III, 3 and Khādīra Gr. III. 3. 29-30 put *apūpas* for the first Aṣṭakā (and hence Gobhila Gr. III. 10. 9 designates it *apūpāṣṭakā*) and boiled vegetables on the last. According to Khādīra Gr. III. 4. 1 a cow is sacrificed. According to Āśv. Gr. II. 4. 7-10, Gobhila Gr. IV. 1. 18-22, Kauśika 138. 2, Baud. Gr. II. 11, 51-61, on the 8th day very many options are given, viz. either to sacrifice a cow or a ram or a goat; or to offer some jungle flesh that may be available or flesh mixed with sesame and honey, or flesh of the rhinoceros, deer, buffalo, ram, boar, spotted deer, hare, Rohita deer, pigeons, śārṅga and other birds, or an old red goat; fishes or rice cooked in milk so as to form thin gruel, or gifts only of uncooked corn or fruits and roots, or gold may be offered or only grass for cows or oxen or one may burn some thickets in a forest or present jars for holding water to those deeply learned in the Veda or should recite the mantras relating to śrāddhas, saying 'this is the Aṣṭakā I offer,' but one should not remain without observing the Aṣṭakā day in some such manner as the above.⁸⁹⁷

It is remarkable that although the Vārtika quoted above, and the Kāthakagr̥hya 61.1 state that the word 'Astakā' is

807. अथ यदि गां न लभते मेषमजं वा लभते । आरण्येन वा मांसेन यथोपपन्नेन । खड्गमुगमहिषमेषवराहपृषतशशरोहितशार्ङ्गतिस्त्रिरिकपोतकपिञ्जलवाध्रीणसानामक्षयं तिलमधु-संसृष्टम् । तथा मत्स्यस्य शतवलैः (?) क्षीरोदनेन वा मृषोदनेन वा । यद्वा भवत्यामेषा यथोपपन्नैः प्रदानमात्रम् । हिरण्येन वा प्रदानमात्रम् । अपि वा गोशसमाहरेत् । अपि वा निम्बान्ध्र्यं वृक्षकुम्भानाहरेत् । अपि वा आद्रमन्त्रानधीयीत । अपि वारण्येयिना कक्षमुपोषेदेत् । मेषकृति । न त्वेवानष्टकः स्यात् । बौ. गृ. II. 11. 51-61 ; अष्टकायामष्टकाहोमाहुत्वात् । तस्य हवींषि धानाः करम्भः शण्कुल्यः पुरोडाश उदौदनः क्षीरोदनस्तिलौदनो यथोपपन्नदिपदः । कौशिकसूत्र 168.1-2. For वार्धीणस, vide note (951) below.

applied to a rite in which the *pitrs* are the deities worshipped, the greatest divergence prevails as to the *devatā* of the *Aṣṭakās*. The *Āśv. Gr.* (II. 4. 3 and II. 5. 3-5) provides that on the 7th of the dark half the offerings are made to the *pitrs* and on the 9th also, but *Āśv. II. 4. 12* refers to the eight options as regards the deity of the 8th day, viz. *Viśve-devāḥ* (all the gods), Agni, *Sūrya*, *Prajāpati*, *Rātri* (night), *Nakṣatras* (constellations), the seasons, the *Pitrs*, *Paśus* (cattle). The *Gobhila Gr. III. 10. 1* starts⁸⁰⁸ by saying that Night is the *devatā* of *Aṣṭakā*, but adds that there are other views about the *devatā* being Agni, the *Pitrs*, *Prajāpati*, *Rtus* (seasons) or all Gods.

The procedure of *Aṣṭakā* comprises three parts, viz. *homa*, inviting *brāhmaṇas* for dinner (up to seeing them go away after dinner) and the rite called *Anvaṣṭakya* or *Anvaṣṭakā*. When the *Aṣṭakās* were deemed to be three or four performed in the several months noted above, all these were gone through at each *Aṣṭakā*. When the *Aṣṭakā* rite was performed only in one month i. e. after the Full moon in *Māgha*, the above parts were performed on three days, 7th, 8th and 9th of the dark half. When compressed in one day only, they must have been performed one after another on the same day.

Many of the *Gr̥hyasūtras*, such as those of *Āśvalāyana*, *Kauśika*, *Gobhila*, *Hiranyakeśin* and *Baudhāyana* describe a very elaborate procedure in the case of *Aṣṭakās*. One of the shortest being that contained in *Āp. Gr. (VIII. 21 and 22)* is given here by way of sample^{808a}. After defining *Ekāṣṭakā* (in *VIII. 21. 10*) *Āp.* proceeds: 'He (the performer of the *Aṣṭakā* rite) should perform subsidiary (or preparatory) rites in the evening of the previous day (i. e. on the 7th of the dark half). He cooks (or bakes) a cake from rice taken up (from a heap) in four cups; according to some teachers the cake is prepared on eight potsherds (like a *puroḍāśa*). After the actions up to the

808. अष्टका रात्रिदेवता । पुष्टिकर्मा । आग्नेयी पित्र्या वा प्राजापत्यतुदेवता वैश्वदेवीति देवताविचारः । गोभिलगृह्य III. 10.1-3.

808 a. या माध्याः...त्याचक्षते । तस्याः सायमौपकार्यम् । अपूपं चतुःशरावं श्रपयति । अष्टाकषाल इत्येके । पार्वणवदाज्यभागान्तेऽलिनोत्तरयापूपाञ्जहोति । सिद्धः शेषस्तमष्टा कृत्वा ब्राह्मणेभ्य उपहरति । श्वोभूते दर्भेण गामुपाकरोति पितृभ्यस्त्वा जुष्टामुपाकरोमीति । तूष्णीं पञ्चाज्याहुतीर्हुत्वा तस्यै वपां श्रपयित्वोपस्तीर्णाभिधारितां मध्यमेनान्तमेन वा पलाशपर्णेनोत्तरया जुहोति । मांसोदनमुत्तराभिः । पिष्टाक्षमुत्तरया । आज्याहुतीरुत्तराः । स्विष्टकृत्प्रभृति समासया पिण्डनिधानात् । अन्वष्टकायामेवैके पिण्डनिधानमुपदिशन्ति । अथैतदपरं दध्न एवाञ्जलिना जुहोति यथापूपम् । अत एव यथार्थं मांसं शिष्टा श्वोभूतेन्वष्टका । तस्या मांसिश्नाद्धेन कल्पे प्रख्यातः । आप. गृ. VIII. 21.10-VIII. 22.12.



'Ājyabhāgas'⁸⁰⁹ have been performed in the same way as at the Amāvāsyā and Full Moon sacrifices he makes with his joined hands oblations of the cakes with the next verse⁸¹⁰. The rest of the cake that is already baked is divided by him into eight parts and offered to the brāhmaṇas⁸¹¹. On the following day he prepares the cow for immolation by touching her with a *darbha* with the words 'I make thee that are agreeable to the Fathers ready (for sacrifice)'. Having silently (i. e. without uttering the word *svāhā*) offered five⁸¹² oblations of clarified butter, having cooked the omentum of that (cow) and having spread under (the cooked omentum) and sprinkled over it clarified butter he offers it with a *palāśa* leaf from the middle or the end of the stalk with the next verse (i. e. Āp. M. P. II. 20. 28).⁸¹³ He offers boiled rice together with the flesh (of the cow) with the next verses (seven from Āp. M. P. II. 20. 29-35). He offers the food of flour cooked (in milk) with the next verse (Āp. M. P. II. 21. 1 'Ukthyaścātirātraśca').⁸¹⁴ Then (he offers) the oblations of clarified butter with the following (eight) verses (Āp. M. P. II. 21. 2-9). The rites from Svīṣṭakṛt⁸¹⁵ down to the placing of the *piṇḍas* are the same as at the monthly śrāddha (described in Āp. Gr. VIII. 21. 1-9). Some teachers prescribe that the *piṇḍas* are to be offered the day after the Aṣṭakā (i. e. on the 9th of the dark half). Here follows another method (of celebrating the Aṣṭakā rite). He sacrifices curds with his joined hands in the same way as he offers the cake. Having left over from the meat (of the cow) as much as may be required, he performs on the day following

809. For Ājyabhāgas, vide H. of Dh. vol. II. pp. 1059, 1060.

810. The Āp. Gr. S. here and elsewhere refers to the collection of Mantras called Āpastamba-mantra-pāṭha (edited by Dr. Winternitz). The verse meant here is Āp. M. P. (II. 20. 27), quoted above in n 801 (Yām janāḥ &c.).

811. The words 'siddhaḥ śeṣaḥ' are explained by the Anākulā (of Haradatta) as meaning 'the rest of the rites are the usual ones without alterations'.

812. As no *devatā* is expressly named, the offerings must be taken to be made to Prajāpati.

813. Āp. M. P. II. 20. 28 is the *mantra* 'vaha vapām' (carry the omentum to the Fathers, O Jātavedas), which is Vāj. S. 35. 20 and is prescribed for this rite in Āśv. Gr. II. 4. 13, Śān. Gr. III. 13. 3 and elsewhere.

814. The Mantra 'Ukthyaścātirātraśca' occurs also in Śān. Gr. III. 14. 2.

815. For 'Svīṣṭakṛt' vide H. of Dh. vol. II pp. 208 and 125.



(the Aṣṭakā day) the Anvaṣṭakā rite. Its procedure is explained by the description of the monthly śrāddha.

Though Āp. Gr. (II. 5. 3) and Śān. Gr. III. 13. 7 state that the Anvaṣṭakya rite follows the procedure of Piṇḍapitryajña, some Gr̥hyasūtras (such as Khādīra III. 5, Gobhila IV. 2-3) give very elaborate descriptions of that rite. The Āśv. Gr. and Viṣṇudharmasūtra 74 follow a middle course. The description in Āśv. Gr. is comparatively brief and it is set out below. It may be noted that some Gr̥hya-sūtras state that the Anvaṣṭakya rite is performed on the 9th or 10th of the dark half (e. g. Khādīra Gr. III. 5. 1 'navamīm daśamīm vānvaṣṭakyam'). Further, it may be stated that though most Gr̥hyasūtras call the rite Anvaṣṭakya still it is also called Anvaṣṭakā by Pār. Gr. III. 3. 10, Manu IV. 150, Viṣṇudharmasūtra 74. 1 and 76. 1. The most notable peculiarity of this rite is that therein female ancestors are invoked and offerings are made to them of which liquor (*surā*), scum of boiled rice, collyrium, salves and garlands form part. Though some sūtras (like Āśv. Gr. II. 5) declare that the Aṣṭakā and Anvaṣṭakya are modelled on the monthly śrāddha or Piṇḍapitryajña, others (like the Baud. Gr. III. 12. 1, Gobhila Gr. IV. 4., Khādīra III. 5. 35) say that the Aṣṭakā or Anvaṣṭakya is the norm which is followed in the Piṇḍapitryajña and all the śrāddhas. The Kāthaka Gr. (66. 1, 67. 1, 68. 1, 69. 1) avers⁸¹⁶ that the first śrāddha, the other śrāddhas (such as sapīṇḍikarāṇa), Paśuśrāddha (in which the flesh of an animal is offered) and the śrāddha performed every month follow the procedure of Aṣṭakā. The Piṇḍa-pitryajña could be offered on amāvāsyā only by one who was *āhitāgni* (i. e. had kept the sacred vedic fires). It is impossible to believe that everyone became *āhitāgni*. The case was probably the reverse i. e. only a few became *āhitāgnis* and the rest had only the gr̥hya fire or many of the rest were without even the gr̥hya fire. It appears possible that all were required to offer śrāddha on amāvāsyā on the analogy of piṇḍapitryajña. As the latter became rare, the requirement of offering śrāddha on amāvāsyā remained and in the sūtras and smṛtis all the details were mentioned under māsiśrāddha and in the case of the other śrāddhas the sūtras and smṛtis pointed out only what was to be omitted. It is owing to this that the māsiśrāddha came to be called the *prakṛti* and the other śrāddhas were called *vikṛtis*.

816. देवपाल on काठकग्रह्य 66.1. says अष्टकाविकाराणि हि सर्वश्राद्धानि. The चौ. गृ. III. 12. 1 states 'अष्टकानुकृतिर्मासिकं तत्पुरस्ताद् व्याख्यातम्.'



or variations of the māsiśrāddha. Most of the details of the pīṇapitryajña were required in māsiśrāddha and a few (such as giving arghya, *gandha*, *dīpa*) were added and more elaborate rules evolved.

The Anvaṣṭakya⁸¹⁷ is described in the Āśv. Gr. (II. 5. 2-15) as follows :—Having prepared a portion of the same meat,⁸¹⁸ having established the fire on a surface sloping towards the south, having fenced it in and made a door on the north side of the enclosed shed, having strewn round the fire three times sacrificial grass with its roots without touching it, turning the left side (of one's body) towards the fire, he should place down the things to be offered, boiled rice, boiled rice mixed with sesamum, rice cooked in milk, meal pap with curds and meal pap with honey. The ceremony should follow the ritual of the Pīṇapitryajña (vide Āśv. Śr. II. 6). Having sacrificed (part of the foods specified except meal-pap) with honey let him offer portions of those substances to the *pitrs* and to their wives with the addition of liquor and the scum of boiled rice. Some place the portion to be offered into pits, which may be two or six. In those situated to the east he should present the offerings to the *pitrs*; in those to the west, to the wives. Thereby the ceremony celebrated in the rainy season on the Maghā day in the dark fortnight after the full moon of Prauṣṭhapada (i. e. Bhādrapada) has been declared. And thus he should offer (a festival like the Anvaṣṭakā) to the *pitrs* every month, observing uneven⁸¹⁹ numbers. He should give food at least to nine (brāhmaṇas) or to any un-even number of brāhmaṇas. (Food should be given) to an even number on auspicious occasions⁸²⁰

817. अन्वष्टक्य is explained by रुद्रस्कन्द on खादिरगृह्य III. 5. as 'अष्टकामनु क्रियते इत्यन्वष्टक्यं कर्म एतच्च प्रत्यष्टकमनन्तरं कर्तव्यम्' and by देवपाल on काठकगृह्य 65.1 as 'अष्टकाया अनु पश्चाद्भवमन्वष्टक्यमित्यन्वष्टक्यं संज्ञान्वष्टक्यमिति । एतच्च केचिदष्टकाया अङ्गं वदन्ति केचित्तत्सदृशं विकारभूतं कर्मान्तरम् ।'

818. The meat is that of the animal killed on the Aṣṭakā day (Āśv. Gr. II. 4. 13).

819. That is, selecting an uneven number of brāhmaṇas or on uneven *tithis*.

820. 'Vṛddhi' or 'Ābhyudayika' (referring to prosperity or good luck) Śrāddha is performed on such occasions as the birth of a son, the marriage of a son or daughter, the *pitrs* in the Vṛddhi-śrāddha being designated Nāṇḍimukha. Pūrta means charitable works such as construction of wells and tanks, building of temples, dedication of parks. Vide Pūrta Dh. vol. II. p. 844 n. 1992 and Yāj. I. 250, Sāh. Gr. IV. 4. 1 ff.

or on the performance of meritorious deeds; to an uneven number (on other occasions). The rite is performed from left to right. Barley grains are to be used instead of sesamum.

The Anvaṣṭakya rite was performed after each of the three or four Aṣṭakās and if only one Aṣṭakā in Māgha were performed, then after the 8th of the dark half.

There are two views about the rite called Māghyāvarṣa⁸²¹ in Āśv. Gr. II. 5. 9. Acc. to Nārāyaṇa, the rite is performed in the dark half of Bhādrapada for three days on 7th, 8th and 9th.⁸²² The other view is that it is a rite like the Aṣṭakās but performed on the 13th of the dark half of Bhādrapada, when generally the moon is in the Maghā nakṣatra. There is doubt about the very name of the rite, as the mss. present various forms (vide Oldenberg's note in S. B. E. vol. 29. p. 103 on Śān. Gr. III. 13. 1). The real name appears to be Māghyāvarṣa or Maghāvarṣa (meaning 'a śrāddha in the rainy season when the moon is in the Maghā nakṣatra'). The Viṣṇu Dh. S. 76. 1⁸²³ mentions the following times for offering śrāddha viz. (twelve) Amāvāsyās (in a year), the three Aṣṭakās, the three Anvaṣṭakās, the 13th of the dark half of Bhādrapada when the moon is in the Maghā asterism, the seasons of śarad and vasanta. In Viṣṇu Dh. S. (78. 52-53) also a śrāddha on the 13th of the dark half of Bhādrapada is highly eulogised. Manu III. 273 also states that whatever food mixed with honey is offered on the 13th day in the rainy season when the moon is in Maghā procures endless satisfaction. To the same effect are Vas. XI. 40 (in the rainy season and on Maghā), Yāj. I. 26 and Varāhapurāṇa.⁸²⁴ In the

821. The word माघ्यावर्ष (as an attribute of Karma or Śrāddha) may be derived from मघावर्ष (मघायुक्तः वर्षः वर्षर्तुः) or वर्षमघा (or वर्षामघा meaning वर्षे मघा or वर्षासु मघा). In the latter case the words are transposed on the analogy of राजदन्त (पा. II. 2.31). हरदत्त on आश्व. गृ. explains 'मघासु वर्षासंयोगाद् माघ्या-वर्षमिति भवति तच्च त्रयोदश्याम्' and then quotes या. I. 261.

822. In the गृह्यशिसागर of नारायणभट्ट आर्षे it is stated 'अथाष्टकाविकृतिभूतं माघ्यावर्षश्राद्धं तत्र भाद्रपदापरपक्षे सप्तम्यादिषु त्रिष्वहःसु अष्टकाकर्मवत् सर्वं कुर्यादिति कारिका । हरदत्तस्तु भाद्रपदकृष्णपक्षे मघायुक्तत्रयोदश्यां माघ्यावर्षाख्यं श्राद्धम्।' folio 155 b (of the ms in the BBRAS). Vide Cat. No 680 p. 215.

823. अमावास्यास्तिषोष्टकास्तिषोन्वष्टका माघी प्रौष्ठपदूर्ध्वे कृष्णत्रयोदशी व्रीहियवपाकी च । विष्णुध. सू. 76. 1. माघी is to be connected with कृष्णत्रयोदशी.

824. यद्वाति गयास्थश्च सर्वमानन्त्यमश्रुते । तथा वर्षात्रयोदश्यां मघासु च विशेषः
या. I. 261 ; गायन्ति चैतत्पितरः कदा तु त्रयोदशीयुक्तमघासु भूयः । वर्षासितान्ते
तोयैर्यास्याम तृप्तिं तनयादिदत्तैः ॥ वराहपुराण 13. 47; correct grammar requires
स्तुतिम्.

Hir. Gr. II. 13. 3-4 (edited by Kirste) the name appears to be Mādhyāvarṣa⁸²⁵ and it is provided that meat is obligatory in it, but that if meat cannot be had then vegetables may be offered. In Pār.⁸²⁶ Gr. (III. 3) the name (as printed) is madhyāvarṣa which is said to be a 4th Aṣṭakā in which only vegetables are offered. Aparārka (p. 422) also appears to call the rite 'madhyāvarṣa.' In the Bhaviṣyapurāṇa⁸²⁷ (Brahma-parva), chap. 183. 4 also this rite is referred to but it is said that therein meat is to be offered. It appears probable that this ancient rite on the 13th of the dark half of Bhādrapada is a precursor of the Mahālayaśrāddha of later times.

If Āśvalāyana's view, viz. that there are four Aṣṭakās in Hemanta and Śiśira, were followed and if the Māghyāvarṣa-śrāddha were to be performed on the 8th of the dark half of Bhādrapada as Nārāyaṇa holds, then there would be five Aṣṭakās in all. Bhaṭṭoji in his Caturvimsatimatasaṅgraha says so.⁸²⁸

Considerations of space forbid the comparison of the above procedure from Āp. Gr. and Āśv. Gr. with the procedure described in the other Grhyasūtras. It should be noted that several of the sūtras often employ the same mantras in the various stages of the rite (as pointed out above in notes 813-814).

It must be said that the Aṣṭakā śrāddhas gradually fell into oblivion and are not performed now.

The foregoing discussion establishes that the monthly śrāddha on Amāvāsyā was the model śrāddha (*prakṛti*) of

825. मातृदत्त on हिरण्य. गृ. explains 'माध्यावर्षः प्रौष्ठपदो मासस्तत्र भवम्' i. e. he derives the name from मध्य and वर्ष (year), the 13th of the dark half of Bhādrapada being almost the middle of the year (when the year begins with चैत्र).

826. मध्यावर्षे च तुरीया शाकाष्टका । पार. गृ. III. 3 (last sūtra) in the Gujarathi Press edition.

827. तिस्रोष्टकास्तु कर्तव्या मध्यावर्ता (मध्यावर्षा?) चतुर्थिका । शाकपायसपूर्पैस्तु मासेन तु चतुर्थिका ॥ भविष्यपु. (I. 183.4).

828. एवं भाद्रपदबहुलाष्टम्यष्टका बोध्या । तथा च पञ्चपुराणे—अग्निष्वात्तपितृ-कन्याया वसुनाम्ना पित्रा शप्तायाः पुनरनुगृहीतायाः भाद्रपदापरपक्षाष्टकाकालेनोत्पत्तिर्दिशिता । प्रौष्ठपदाष्टका भूयः पितृलोके भविष्यति । आयुरारोग्यदा नित्यं सर्वकामफलप्रदा ॥ इति । तत्रैवं पञ्चाष्टका हेमाद्र्यादिग्रन्थे स्थिताः । तत्रापि आहुं नित्यम् । भट्टोजि on चतु. सं. p. 122. पञ्चपुराण (सुष्टिखण्ड) chap. 9. 28-29 are: प्रौष्ठपद्यष्टका भूयः...स्वर्गकामफलप्रदा । हेमाद्रि on आहु p. 185 says 'अथ पूर्वोक्ताष्टकचतुष्टयव्यतिरिक्तापि भाद्रपदापरपक्षेऽष्टका । तस्यातिहासपूर्वकमुत्पात्तिः प्रशंसा चोच्यते पञ्चपुराणे' and then he quotes eight verses from the पञ्च of which प्रौष्ठपद्यष्टका is the last.

which the Aṣṭakās and other śrāddhas were copies (*vikṛtis*) with suitable modifications, though a few dissident texts reverse the position.

In the Gobhilagrhya (IV. 4. 3 ff) another śrāddha called 'Anvāhārya' is prescribed after the Piṇḍapitṛyajña on the same day. The Śān. Gr. IV. 1. 13 appears also to describe the monthly śrāddha as distinct from the Piṇḍapitṛyajña. Manu (III.122-23) states: 'After performing the *Pitṛyajña* (i. e. piṇḍapitṛyajña) a brāhmaṇa who keeps sacred fires shall offer every month on the amāvāsyā day the funeral sacrifice Piṇḍānvāhāryaka.⁸²⁹ The wise call the monthly offering to the Manes Anvāhārya and that must be carefully performed with the approved kinds of flesh mentioned below.' From this it appears that one who has consecrated the *śrauta* fires (i. e. an āhitāgni) was to perform the *piṇḍapitṛyajña* in the *śrauta* fires and also perform the same day another śrāddha after the piṇḍapitṛyajña, while those who had not consecrated *śrauta* fires were to perform on amāvāsyā a śrāddha in the grhya fire, which was called piṇḍānvāhāryaka or simply anvāhārya and also were to offer piṇḍapitṛyajña in smārta fire (vide Sat. Śrauta II. 7. 64 'grhyāgnau anāhitāgneḥ'). From inquiries made I learn that nowadays most Agnihotṛins (at least in the Deccan) do not perform Piṇḍapitṛyajña at all or perform it only once a year and that no one performs the Piṇḍānvāhāryaka śrāddha. It is further to be noted that in smārta yajñas no one now sacrifices an animal but employs instead māṣa grain and there are āhitāgnis who do not offer meat in śrauta sacrifices also, but only *piṣṭa-paśu* (an effigy of an animal made of flour).

The literature on śrāddha is enormous in extent. From the Vedic Samhitās several thousand years ago up to medieval and modern commentaries and digests the various matters connected with śrāddha have been dealt with in more or less detail. The Purāṇas contain thousands of verses on śrāddha. An

829. मेधातिथि on मनु III. 122 explains: 'पिण्डानामनु पश्चादाह्नियतेऽनुष्ठियते तत् पिण्डान्वाहार्यकं भवति', while सर्वज्ञनारायण explains 'पिण्डेभ्योऽल्पिकां मात्रामन्वाहृत्य ब्राह्मणा अत्र आद्धे भोज्यन्ते इति पिण्डान्वाहार्यकम्'. These derivations are supported respectively by the पद्मपुराण, सुष्टि 9.88-89 'पितृयज्ञं तु निर्वर्त्य तर्पणार्थं तु योजिमान् । पिण्डान्वाहार्यकं कृत्वा आद्धकाले क्षये तदा ॥ (कुर्याच्छ्राद्धमिन्दुक्षये तथा?)' and by the मत्स्यपुराण 16. 43 यस्मादन्नोद्धृता मात्रा भक्षयन्ति द्विजातयः । अन्वाहार्यकमित्युक्तं तस्मात् चन्द्रसंक्षये ॥. The पद्मपुराण (सुष्टि 9. 119) further says 'एतदग्निमतां प्रोक्तमन्वाहार्यं च पार्वणम्'. The कल्पतरु (on आद्ध p. 10) explains मनु III. 122 : पितृयज्ञोऽत्र पिण्ड पितृयज्ञः । पिण्डान्वाहार्यकं पिण्डानामनु पश्चादाह्नियते क्रियते यद्दर्शश्राद्धं तत्तथा ॥.

adequate and thorough treatment of all this vast mass would fill a separate volume, but considerations of space forbid such an attempt here. All that can be attempted here at the most (and that too not in all cases) is to present matters chronologically i. e. describe how śrāddha was dealt with in the Samhitās and Brāhmaṇa texts, then in the comparatively older Gṛhya and Dharma sūtras, then in such early smṛtis as those of Manu and Yāj., then in some representative Purāṇas, then in the early commentaries of Medhātithi, Vijñāneśvara and Aparārka, and then in the medieval digests. Even in this way only a skeleton of the ceremonies described in some representative work of each class can be exhibited. Many differences of detail which arose owing to lapse of time, the locality, the śākhā and usages of each writer, his individual inclination and his ability, will have to be passed over altogether. In the days of the Purāṇas the differences in detail in the several śākhās have been adverted to.^{829a} Apart from the smṛtis and passages of the Mahābhārata (such as Anuśāsana chap. 87-92) and commentaries on the Sūtras, on Manu, Yāj. and other smṛtis, the digests on śrāddha are legion. Only the following digests (arranged in chronological order) have been laid under contribution in this volume: Kalpataru on śrāddha; the Hāralatā and Pitṛdayitā of Aniruddha; the Smṛtyarthasāra; the Smṛticandrikā; the Caturvargacintāmaṇi (section on śrāddha) of Hemādri (which in the B. I. edition covers 1716 pages); the Śrāddhaviveka of Rudradhara; the Madanapārijāta; the Śrāddhasāra (a part of Nṛsiṃhaprasāda); Śrāddhakriyā-kaumudī of Govindānanda; the Śrāddhatattva of Raghunandana; the Śrāddhasaukhyā (part of Ṭoḍarānanda); the Śrāddhakalpalatā of Vināyaka *alias* Nandapaṇḍita; the Nirṇayasindhu; the Śrāddhamayūkha of Nīlakaṇṭha; the Śrāddhaprakāśa (part of Viramitrodaya); the Śrāddhacandrikā of Divākarabhaṭṭa; the Smṛtimuktāphala (on śrāddha); the Dharmasindhu; the Bālabhaṭṭī, a commentary on the Mitākṣarā. While presenting this exhaustive and heterogeneous material, some generalisations, when called for, will be made here and there. It will be seen later on how several minor matters such as whether food should be offered to gods before śrāddha, definitions of words like parivitti, vṛṣalipati increased the extent of treatises on śrāddha.

829 a. The स्कन्दपुराण (नागरखण्ड chap. 215. 24-25) says: भेदाः द्विजानां श्राद्धकर्माणि। श्राद्धस्य बहवो भेदाः शाखाभेदैर्व्यवस्थिताः ॥

We should now turn to the several matters relating to śrāddhas.

First comes the question as to who are entitled to offer śrāddha (*śrāddhādhikārin*). This matter has been already dealt with in the H. of Dh. vol. III. p. 739 ff., and on page 763 and on pp. 256-261 (notes 581-588) above. It would be noticed that some (like the Viṣṇudharmasūtra) prescribe that whoever takes the wealth of the deceased should offer *piṇḍas* (i. e. perform śrāddha for him), while others said that whoever was preferable as entitled to offer *piṇḍas* to the deceased propositus was to take the wealth. A few matters not mentioned there may be added here. In the Śāntiparva 65. 13-21 it is narrated⁸³⁰ that emperor Māndhātṛ was told by Indra how Yavanas, Kirātas and similar non-Aryan peoples (that are styled Dasyus in the Epic) are to be made to conduct themselves and it is stated that all *dasyus* may perform Pitṛyajñas (in which they should feed men of their own kind and make monetary gifts to them) and offer money to brāhmaṇas also. The Vāyupurāṇa (83. 112) also speaks of the Mlecchas as persons that offer oblations to *Pitṛs*. The general rule is stated by the Gobhila-smṛti⁸³¹ that the husband should not offer *piṇḍa* to his wife even if she dies sonless, nor a father to his son nor an elder brother to a younger brother. The moral of the story of Nimi who performed śrāddha for his predeceased son and repented for having done so as it was *dharmasaṅkara* is the same. Vide Anuśāsanaparva 91. Aparārka (p. 538) quotes a verse from Ṣaṭtrimśan-mata that a father should not perform the śrāddha of his son nor an elder brother of a younger one. But Bṛhat-parāśara (p. 153) appears to state that even this general rule may have to be set aside sometimes. Baudhāyana and Vṛddhaśātātapa (q. by Sm. C. on śrāddha p. 337) allow a śrāddha (except sapindīkarana) to be performed by any one for any

830. यवनाः किराता गान्धाराश्चीनाः शबरवर्चराः । शकास्तुषाराः कङ्काश्च पल्लवाश्चान्ध्र-
मद्रकाः ॥...कथं धर्माश्चरिष्यन्ति सर्वे विषयवासिनः । मद्भिर्धैश्च कथं स्थाप्याः सर्वे वै दस्यु-
जीविनः ॥...मात्रापित्रोर्हि शुश्रूषा कर्तव्या सर्वदस्युभिः ।...पितृयज्ञास्तथा कृपाः प्रपाश्च शयनानि
च । दानानि च यथाकालं द्विजेभ्यो विमुजेत्सदा ॥...पाकयज्ञा महार्हाश्च दातव्याः सर्वदस्युभिः ।
शान्तिपर्व 65. 13-21; on this the शुद्धकमलाकर (p. 55) remarks 'इति म्लेच्छादीनां
श्राद्धविधानं तदपि सजातीयभोजनद्रव्यदानादिपरम्'.

831. न योषायाः पतिर्दद्यादपुत्राया अपि क्वचित् । न पुत्रस्य पिता चैव नानुजस्य
तथाग्रजः ॥ गोभिलस्मृति III. 70 and also II. 104; but see बृहत्पराशर V (p. 153)
'आहुं पत्यापि कार्यं स्यादपुत्रायास्तु योषितः । तस्यापि हि तथा कार्यमेकत्वं हि तयोर्यतः ॥
ज्येष्ठस्य कुर्वीत कार्यं ज्येष्ठोऽनुजस्य च । देवहीनं तु तत् कुर्यादिति धर्मविदो विदुः ॥
p. 538 quotes पित्रा आहुं न कर्तव्यं पुत्राणां च कथंचन from षट्त्रिंशन्मत,



relative through affection, particularly at Gayā. It is emphasized⁸³² that he alone deserves to be called *putra*, who, while the father is alive, obeys his words, and gives plenty of food (to *brāhmaṇas*) every year (after his father's death) and who offers *piṇḍas* (to his ancestors) at Gayā. The general rule laid down was that a child, whose *upanayana* has not been performed, is like a *sūdra* and lacks authority to utter Vedic passages (vide *Āp. Dh. S. II. 6. 15. 19*, *Gaut. II. 4-5*, *Vas. II. 6*, *Viṣṇu Dh. S. 28. 40*, *Manu II. 172*).⁸³³ But an exception was recognized by almost all these authorities that a son, though his *upanayana* may not have been performed, can repeat the Vedic *mantras* required in funeral rites. *Medhātithi* on *Manu II. 172* explains that a minor son, even though not initiated into Vedic study by *upanayana*, can offer water to his father, perform the *navaśrāddhas* (mentioned above in n. 593) and repeat such *mantras* as 'śundhantām pitarah' required in these rites, but since he has no *śrauta* or *grhya* fire of his own he can not perform such *śrāddhas* as the *pārvana*. The *Smṛtyarthasāra* (p. 56) provides that boys whose *upanayana* has not been performed, women and *sūdras* should get *śrāddhas* performed through a priest or they may themselves perform them without *mantras* but only mention the name and gotra of the deceased or with the two *mantras* 'devebhyo namaḥ' and 'pitṛbhyah svadhā namaḥ'. The above discussion shows that men and women, adults as well as children, those who are *upanīta* as well as those that are *anupanīta* are under an obligation to perform *śrāddha*.

Tai. S. I. 8. 5. 1, *Tai. Br. I. 6. 9* (which will be quoted later on) show that *śrāddha* was offered to three immediate ancestors, father, grand-father, great-grand-father. The *Baud. Dh. S. (I. 5. 113-115)* states that there is a group of seven persons closely knit together that is called *avibhaktadāya sapinḍas* viz. great-grand-father, grand-father, father, the man himself (who

832. जीवतो वाक्यकरणात् प्रत्यब्दं भूरिभोजनात् । गयायां पिण्डदानाच्च त्रिभिः पुत्रस्य पुत्रता ॥ quoted by त्रिस्थलीसेतु p. 319.

833. नाभिव्याहारयेद् ब्रह्म स्वधानिनयनादृते । शूद्रेण हि समस्तावद्यावद्दे न जायते ॥ मनु II. 172 ; on this मेधातिथि says: स्वधाशब्देन पितृभ्यः कल्पितमन्नमिहोच्यते । अथवा पित्र्यं कर्म स्वधाशब्देनोच्यते । तन्निनीयते त्यज्यते प्राप्यते येन मन्त्रेण स स्वधानिनः स्वधन्तां पितरः इत्यादिस्तं वर्जयित्वाऽन्यमन्त्रो नोच्चारयितव्यः । अनुपनीतेनोदकदाननवाश्राद्धादेः पितुः कर्तव्यमित्यस्मादेव प्रतीयते । पार्वणश्राद्धादौ त्वग्निमत्त्वाभावादधिकारः । पिण्डान्वाहिकं तद्वक्ष्यते । In the वैखानसश्रौत 9.10 we read 'उदकुम्भमादाय यजमानः शुन्धन्तां पितरः इति त्रिः प्रसज्य वेदिमपः परिषिञ्चन् पर्येति ।'.

offers pindas to the preceding three), his full brothers, his son from a wife of the same caste, the grandson and great grandson; that sakulyas are those that are called 'vibhaktadāyādas', that the wealth of the deceased descends to those who are born of the body of the deceased ⁸³⁴. Manu IX. 137 (= Vas. 17.5 = Viṣṇu Dh. S. 15. 46) solemnly ⁸³⁵ affirms: 'by (the birth of) a son a man wins the worlds (heaven &c.), he secures immortality by a grandson and by the grandson of a son he reaches the abode of the Sun'. This verse shows that all the three descendants of a person confer equally great spiritual benefit on him. Yāj. also (in I. 78) lumps the three together (without making any distinction between them) when he says 'since a man secures perpetuation of lineage and heaven by means of son, grand-son and great-grand-son'. Therefore when Manu (IX. 106) says that by the birth of a son a man discharges his debt to his progenitors the Dāyabhāga (XI. 34) explains that the word *putra* stands for the three descendants up to the great-grandson, since all the three are entitled to perform the pārvana-śrāddha and equally benefit the ancestors by the pindas they offer, and that the word *putra* is not to be taken literally but only as illustrative in order to include the great-grandson, since one may with difficulty find a text expressly mentioning the *adhikāra* of the grandson (as a performer of śrāddha and taker of wealth) but there is no text expressly mentioning the great-grandson separately (as the taker of wealth and giver of pinda) ⁸³⁶. On Yāj. II. 50 which lays down that when the father dies or has gone to a distant country or is overwhelmed by calamities (incurable diseases or the like) his debts should be paid by the sons or grandsons, the Mit. adds that even when a son or grandson receives no ancestral property the father's debts must be paid, the only difference being that the son has to pay the principal as well as the interest, while the grandson

834. अपि च प्रपितामहः पितामहः पिता स्वयं सोदर्या भ्रातरः सवर्णायाः पुत्रः पौत्रः प्रपौत्र एतानविभक्तदायादान् सपिण्डानाचक्षते । विभक्तदायादान् सकुल्यानाचक्षते । सत्स्वङ्गेषु तद्गामी ह्यर्थो भवति । बौ. ध. सू. I. 5. 113-115, quoted by दायभाग XI. 37 and explained in 38 and by दायतत्त्व p. 189. The text printed in the आनन्दाश्रम collection of स्मृतिस is slightly different.

835. पुत्रेण लोकाञ्जयति पौत्रेणानन्त्यमश्नुते । अथ पुत्रस्य पौत्रेण बध्नस्याप्नोति विष्टम् ॥ मनु IX. 137. बौ. ध. सू. II. 9. 7 reads the last pāda as नाकमेवाधिरोहति.

836. अत एव पुत्रपदं प्रपौत्रपर्यन्तपरं तत्पर्यन्तानामेव पार्वणाविधिना पिण्डदानोपकारकत्वाविशेषात् । अन्यथा पुत्रपदस्य स्वार्थत्यागानुपपत्तेः पौत्राधिकारज्ञापकं वचनं कथञ्चिदपि लभ्येतापि प्रपौत्रस्य तु न पृथग्वचनमस्ति । तस्मादुपकारकत्वादेव प्रपौत्रस्याप्यधिकार इति पुत्रपदमुपलक्षणम् । दायभाग XI. 34-36.

has to return only the principal and has to pay no interest and the Mit. quotes a verse of Brhaspati ⁸³⁷ where all the three descendants are mentioned in one breath and the Mit. adds that the great-grandson has not to pay even the principal if he has received no ancestral property. This last remark implies that the Mit. regarded that the great-grandson was also included in the extended sense of 'putra'. Yāj. II. 51 begins by saying that whoever takes the wealth of a deceased person has to pay the latter's debts, so the great-grandson would have to pay the great-grand-father's debts if he received the assets of the grand-father. Therefore the Mit. on II. 50 expressly mentions that a great-grandson need not pay his great-grand-father's debts if he received no assets, because, otherwise being included in the extended meaning of putra, he would have had to pay. There was no necessity to bring in or mention the *prapautra* under II. 50 if the Mit. did not include the *prapautra* in the word putra. Again on Yāj. II. 51 ('putrahīnasya rikthinah') the Mit. included even *prapautra* under the word *putra*. This shows that the Mit. is quite conscious that the three descendants of a man form one group and succeed to his estate and liabilities and putra includes three descendants wherever the context so requires. If the word 'putra' is not to be taken as only illustrative and as including both grandson and great-grandson, serious difficulties will arise even in the interpretation of Yāj. on which the Mit. comments. For example, in Yāj. II. 135-136 it is said that when a sonless man dies his wife, daughters and other heirs (named there) succeed one after another. If 'putra' is taken to mean only 'son' and no one else, then on the death of a man without a son his wife or daughter (whoever is alive) will take the wealth even if a son's son exists. But that would be absurd and is not stated by any one. Therefore the word putra has to be interpreted in a wider sense in a proper context. Many works such as the Vyavahāramayūkha, the Viramītrodaya, the Dattakamīmāṃsā interpret the word 'putra' as including three generations. Therefore, though the Mit. in its remarks on inheritance and succession expressly names the son and grand-

837. ऋणमात्मीयवत्पित्र्यं देयं पुत्रैर्विभावितम् । पैतामहं समं देयमवेदं तत्सुतस्य तु ॥ इति बृहस्पतिस्मरणात् । ; समं यावद् गृहीतं तावदेव देयं न वृद्धिः तत्सुतस्य प्रपौत्रस्य देयम- गृहीतधनस्य । मिता. on या. II. 50 ; पुत्रहीनस्य रिक्थिन इत्येतदपि पुत्रपौत्रहीनस्य प्रपौत्रा- दयो यदि रिक्थं गृह्णन्ति तदा ऋणं दाप्या नान्यथेत्येवमर्थम् । पुत्रपौत्रौ च रिक्थमहणाभावेपि दाप्यावित्युक्तम् । मिता. on या. II. 51.

son only (lit. it should have mentioned only the son) it must be taken as including the great-grandson also, particularly in view of the fact that it refers to the great-grandson in its comment on Yāj. I. 50 and 51 as taking the riktha which the Mit. (on Yāj. II. 114) interprets as *apratibandha dāya*. Baud., Manu, Yājñavalkya speak of the three descendants and Śaṅkha-likhita, Vas. XI. 39 and Yama employ⁸³⁸ only the word *putra* or *suta* in relation to the three ancestors. Therefore, the remark of Dr. Kapadia in 'Hindu Kinship' on p. 162 'Vijñāneśvara understands by the word *putra* sons and grandsons only' is unjustified. It is impossible to hold with Dr. Kapadia that the Mit. ran counter to the express dicta of renowned Smṛtis such as those of Manu, Śaṅkha-Likhita and Purāṇas like the Viṣṇu-purāṇa III. 13.30 (quoted above in note 582) and that in its remarks on succession it forgot its own interpretation of *putra* on Yāj. II. 51. He has also not correctly understood the words of the Mit. introducing Yāj. II. 137: 'sons and grandsons take the wealth; in their absence, the wife and others; thus it is said (by me)'. This is wrong for several reasons. 'Wife and others take the wealth' is said by Yāj. (in II. 135-36). The following words are 'now (the author) declares an exception to both.' This clearly refers to Yāj. (II. 137) and not to Vijñāneśvara and so 'uktam' also must refer to Yāj. and not to Vijñāneśvara. Therefore, according to the Mit. the great-grandson is included in the extended meaning of the word 'putra', is entitled just like a son or a grandson to offer śrāddha (in default of a son or grandson) and to take the wealth and pay the debts of the ancestor. In the matter of payment of debts there is, on account of the difference in the period that elapses, a difference between all the three descendants if no ancestral wealth is left by the ancestor, viz. the son pays the debt with interest, the grandson only the principal lent but without interest and the great-grandson nothing at all. This shows that even between the son and the grandson that are expressly mentioned by Yāj. II. 50 as to the payment of debts there is a difference and that as the great-grandson had to pay nothing when no ancestral property existed he was not mentioned at all in Yāj. II. 50.

838. तथा शङ्खलिखितयमाः । पिता पितामहश्चैव तथैव प्रपितामहः । जातं पुत्रं प्रशंसन्ति पिप्पलं शुकना इव ॥ प्रपितामहग्रहणात् पुत्रपदं प्रपौत्रपर्यन्तपरम् । तदनेन प्रपौत्रपर्यन्तपरम् श्राद्धदानेन प्रपितामहपर्यन्तोपकारकत्वात् तुल्यो दाय्याधिकारः । दायभाग III. 18 and कल्पसूत्र p. 20; पिता पितो...उपासते सुतं जातं शकुन्ता इव पिप्पलम् ॥ वसिष्ठ XI. 39. वसिष्ठ XI. 40 is quoted by कल्पतरु p. 20.

Just as the king is an ultimate heir and also the guardian of all minors, so he is like the son of a person (who has no relatives left) for performing śrāddhas.

The next question is about the times when śrāddha is to be performed. It has been seen above (vide H. of Dh. vol. II. p. 696 ff) that long before the time of the Śat. Br. five daily observances (called Mahāyajñas) were prescribed for each house-holder, viz. the sacrifice to beings, that to men, that to the Fathers, that to the gods and that to Veda. The Śat. Br. and the Tai. Ā. (II. 10) say further that this daily rite in which one offers *svadhā* (food) to the Fathers even up to water was called *pitryajña*. Manu III. 70 defines *pitryajña* as *tarpaṇa* (satiating ancestors with the offerings of water). Manu III. 82 provides that an householder should daily perform a śrāddha with food or with water or with milk, roots and fruits and thus please the Fathers. Śrāddha originally meant a sacrifice performed for the Fathers on Amāvāsyā (vide Gaut. 15. 1-2).^{838a} By applying that word to the daily offering of water to the Manes what is intended to be conveyed is that the special characteristics of śrāddha in the strict sense are to be extended to this daily rite so far as possible. Amāvāsyā is of two kinds, Sinivālī and Kuhū. Those who keep śrauta fires should perform śrāddha on the former, while those who have not kept śrauta fires and sūdras should offer śrāddha on the latter.

Śrāddhas are divided into three classes, *nitya*, *naimittika* and *kāmya*. An observance is called *nitya* when it is laid down that it must be performed on a certain or fixed occasion (such as every day, on an amāvāsyā, or on Aṣṭakā day). What is laid down for being done on an occasion which is uncertain is called *naimittika* (such as the birth of a son). What is ordained to be done in case one desires a certain reward or fruit is called *kāmya* (e. g. the performance of a śrāddha on Kṛttikā or Rohiṇī by one who desires heaven or progeny). The five daily *yajñas* including *pitṛ-yajña* are *nitya* i. e. they must be performed without any eye to any reward therefrom and the

838 a. अथ श्राद्धम्। अमावास्यायां पितृभ्यो दद्यात्। गौ. 15. 1-2. दृष्टव्यं। सिनीवाली नष्टचन्द्रा कुहस्तथा। तत्र साधिकैः सिनीवाल्यां श्राद्धं कार्यमितरैः कुहस्तं तथा च व्यासः। दृष्टव्यं। सिनीवाली कार्या विप्रैस्तु साधिकैः। नष्टचन्द्रा कुहः कार्या शूद्रैः। अपरार्क p. 417, स्मृतिच. (श्रा. p. 344). The स्कन्दपुराण (VI. 216.83) gives the following etymology of अमावास्या 'अमा नाम रवे रश्मिसहस्रप्रमुखः स्थितः। तस्मिन् सति येनेन्दुरमावास्या ततः स्मृता।' The वायुपुराण (56. 42) states 'अमा वसेत्तस्मिन् तदा चन्द्रदिव्यकरौ। एका पञ्चदशी रात्रिममावास्या ततः स्मृता॥' अमा means सह or एकत्र.

non-performance thereof will lead to sinfulness. Passages mentioning the rewards that follow from the performance of obligatory (*nitya*) rites are only laudatory, they only convey that such performances make a man pure, but it is not meant that they are not obligatory and may be performed only if a person desires the rewards or results promised (i. e. such performances are not *kāmya*). Āp. Dh. S. (II. 7. 16. 4-7) provides certain times for the performance of śrāddha viz. that it must be performed in the latter half of every month, that the afternoon is preferable for it, that the last days of the latter half of each month are preferable to the first days of the latter half. Gaut. 15. 3 and Vas. XI. 16 say that śrāddha may be performed on any day of the dark half of a month after the 4th day and Gaut. 15. 5 adds that if particularly appropriate materials or particularly holy brāhmaṇas are available or the performer is near a very sacred place (such as Gayā) a śrāddha may be performed on any day. Kūrma (II. 20. 23) says the same thing. The Agnipurāṇa 115. 8 says that at Gayā a śrāddha may be performed on any day (na kālādi Gayātirthe dadyāt pindāṁśca nityaśaḥ). Manu (III. 276-278) provides that the days of the dark half of the month beginning with the 10th but excepting the 14th^{838b} are recommended for śrāddha, that one performing a śrāddha on even lunar days (i. e. on the 10th, 12th) and on the even nakṣatras (i. e. on Bharanī, Rohiṇī &c.) gains the fulfilment of all his desires, that one who worships the Manes on uneven days (11th, 13th &c.) and on uneven constellations (Kṛttikā, Mṛgaśīras &c.) obtains prosperous offspring and that just as the latter half of a month is

838 b. About the 14th of the dark half या. I. 264 says 'प्रतिपत्प्रभृतिष्वेका वर्जयित्वा चतुर्दशीम्। शस्त्रेण तु हता ये वै तेभ्यस्तत्र प्रदीयते॥'; compare मनु III. 276; and मरीचि states विषशस्त्रश्वापदादितिर्यग्ब्राह्मणघातिनाम्। चतुर्दश्यां क्रिया कार्या अन्येषां तु विगर्हिता ॥ q. by स्मृतिच. (आ.) p. 367, आद्धतत्त्व p. 191. ब्राह्मणघातिनां here means ब्राह्मण-कुतघातोऽस्यास्तीति. This only means that śrāddha should not be performed for anyone on the 14th of the dark half except for those who were killed by poison or by beasts, snakes, lower animals or brāhmaṇas or in battle. But a śrāddha may be performed on any tithi of the dark half for those killed in battle or by poison &c. It should be noted that Manu prescribes (III. 282) that an āhitāgni should not perform a śrāddha except on *darśa*, from which it follows that only others (who had no śrauta fires) could offer śrāddha on any day of the dark half. Vide स्कन्दपुराण VI. 204, 24-27 and VI. 219. 19-21 for the proposition that śrāddha should be performed on the 14th tithi of the dark half of Bhādrapada for those who met a violent death by poisoning or fire or were killed by animals having fangs or horns or who committed suicide.



preferable to the first half so the afternoon is preferable to the forenoon for the performance of a śrāddha. Anuśāsanaparva 87. 18 is the same as Manu III. 276. Yāj. (I. 217-218), the Kūrma (II 20. 2-8), Mārkaṇḍeya (28. 20 ff) and Varāhapurāṇa 13. 33-35 sum up in one place the times for performing śrāddhas as follows: Amāvāsyā, the Aṣṭakā days, lucky days (such as the birth of a son), dark half of a month, the two *ayanas* (the two days on which the sun appears to start towards the south or north i. e. solstices), possession of sufficient materials (such as rice and pulse or meat), the arrival of a worthy brāhmaṇa, the equinoctial points (viṣuvat, i. e. the sun's apparent entrance into Aries and Balance), the days on which the sun passes into one *rāśi* from another, the astrological conjunctions called Vyatipāta^{838c}, Gajacchāyā, eclipses of the sun and the moon, when the performer has an intense desire to perform śrāddha—these are times for performing śrāddha. The Mārkaṇ-

838c. अपरार्क p. 426 quotes बृद्धमनु for defining व्यतीपात 'श्रवणाश्विनिष्ठाद्वा-
नागदैवतमस्तके । यद्यमा रविवारेण व्यतीपातः स उच्यते ॥'. Vide अग्निपु. 209. 13 for
the same verse with slight variations (due probably to not reading the mss.
correctly). When Amāvāsyā occurs on a Sunday and the moon is on that day
either in Sravana nakṣatra or in Aśvinī, Dhanīṣṭhā, Ārdrā or the first quarter
of Āśleṣā, that is a conjunction called व्यतीपात; some explain मस्तक as meaning
मृगशिरोनक्षत्र. Bāṇa mentions Vyatipāta in his हर्षचरित. व्यतीपात is also
defined in another way with reference to Rāśis. पञ्चाननस्थौ गुरुभूमिपुत्रौ मेघे
रविः स्याद्यदि शुक्लपक्षे । पाशाभिधाना करभेन युक्ता तिथिर्व्यतीपात इतीह योगः ॥ q, by आ.
क. ल. pp. 18-19. When on the 12th of the bright half the moon is in
Hasta nakṣatra, the sun in Meṣa (Aries) and Jupiter and Mars in Lion,
then the conjunction is called व्यतीपात. गजच्छाया is a conjunction that occurs
when the moon is in Maghā nakṣatra and the sun is in Hasta and the tithi
is 13th in the rainy season. विश्वरूप on या. II 218 quotes: यदि स्याच्चन्द्रमाः
पिड्ये करे चैव दिवाकरः । वर्षासु च त्रयोदश्यां सा च्छाया कुञ्जरस्य तु ॥. अपरार्क quotes a
काठकश्रुति 'एतद्धि देवपितृणां चायनं यद्गतिच्छाया)'. Both the मित्ता. and अपरार्क
p. 427 have a similar verse. The कल्पतरु (आ.) p. 9 and कृत्यरत्नाकर p. 319 quote
ब्रह्मपुराण 'योगो मघात्रयोदश्यां कुञ्जरछायसंश्रितः । भवेन्मघायां संस्थे च शशिन्यर्के करे
स्थिते ॥'. The सौरपुराण (51.31-32) puts it as 'आर्द्रपक्षे त्रयोदश्यां मघास्विन्दुः करे रविः'.
The स्कन्दपुराण (VI. 220.42-44) explains हस्तिच्छाया in several ways. The
अग्निपु. (165.3-4) explains हस्तिच्छाया in two ways. Some take गजच्छाया literally
and say that śrāddha should be performed in the shadow of an elephant. The
Vanaparva 200.121 avers that such a śrāddha in which the ears of the
elephant serve as a fan gives gratification for thousands of कल्प. अपरार्क
p. 427 quotes a verse from the महाभारत about आर्द्र performed in the rainy
season under the shadow of an elephant and fanned by the flapping of its
ears and the meat being that of a goat all red in colour.

deya^{838d} (chap. 28. 22-23), adds that śrāddha should be performed when a man dreams an evil dream and when evil planets affect the nakṣatra of his birth. In an eclipse the appropriate time for śrāddha is what is called *Sparśa Kāla*⁸³⁹ (i. e. when the eclipse begins), as stated in a verse of Vṛddha-Vasiṣṭha. The Brahmapurāṇa (220. 51-54) contains all the times specified by Yāj. and a few more. Vide also Skandapurāṇa VII. 1. 30-32, Viṣṇupurāṇa III. 14. 4-6, Padma (sṛṣṭi 9. 128-129). Acc. to Viṣṇu Dh. S. 76. 1-2, Amāvāsyā, the three Aṣṭakās and the three Anvaṣṭakās, the 13th day of the dark half of Bhādrapada on which the moon is in *Maghā*, *Śarad* and *Vasanta* are obligatory (*nitya*) times for śrāddha and that if a person does not perform śrāddha on these days he goes to Hell. Viṣṇu Dh. S. (77.1-7) states that the day of the sun's passage from one sign of the zodiac to another, the two equinoctial days, particularly the solstitial days, Vyatīpāta, the constellation on which the performer is born, a time of rejoicing (son's birth or the like)—these are *kāmya* times and a śrāddha performed on these occasions gives infinite pleasure (to the Manes). The Kūrmapurāṇa (Uttarārdha 16. 6-8) says that śrāddhas called *kāmya* are commended on eclipses, solstice days, equinoctial days and on Vyatīpāta and they give infinite pleasure (to the Manes) and śrāddha performed on Saṅkrānti (sun's passage from one sign of the zodiac to another) is inexhaustible and so also on days of birth and on the several nakṣatras śrāddhas should be performed. Āp. Dh. S. II. 7. 16. 8-22, Anuśāsana 87, Vāyu 89. 10-19, Yāj. I. 262-263, Brahmapurāṇa 220. 15-21, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 78. 36-50, Kūrmapurāṇa (II. 20. 17-22), Brahmāṇḍa III. 17. 10-22 state what rewards a man gets if he performs śrāddhas on each of the days from the first to the 15th of the dark half. These lists do not completely agree with each other. That of Āp. being probably the most ancient, is set out here:—Śrāddha performed on each of the 15 days of the dark half respectively yields the following results in order, viz. progeny chiefly consisting of females (on 1st tithi

838 d. आर्द्धार्द्रव्यसंप्राप्तौ तथा दुःस्वप्नदर्शने । जन्मर्क्षग्रहपीडासु आर्द्धं कुर्वीत चेच्छया ॥ मार्कण्डेय 28,22. A man can perform a śrāddha on any tithi of the dark half of a month, but he should not perform it on a tithi when the moon is in the nakṣatra on which he was born or in Pūrvā-bhādrapadā or in Uttarābhādrapadā or Kṛttikā, Ārdra, Āśleṣā or Mūla or in a nakṣatra, which is 5th, 14th or 23rd from the nakṣatra of his birth.

839. ग्रहणमुपरागः । तत्रापि स्पर्शकालो ग्राह्यः । त्रिदशाः स्पर्शसमये नृप्यन्ति पितरस्तथा । मनुष्या मध्यकाले तु मोक्षकाले तु राक्षसाः ॥ इति वृद्धवसिष्ठस्मरणात् । भट्टोजि ०४ चतु. सं. p. 124; स्मृतिच. (आ) p. 342 quotes the verse,



of dark half), sons that will be thieves, sons that will be possessed of Vedic learning and the performance of Veda-vratas, son that will own small domestic animals, many sons that will be distinguished (by their learning) and the performer will not die childless, a great traveller and gambler (on the 6th), success in agriculture (on 7th), prosperity (on 8th), one-hoofed animals (on 9th), success in trade (10th day), black iron and tin and lead (on 11th), son possessed of cattle (on 12th), many sons and many friends and handsome children which will die young (13th tithi), success in arms (14th), prosperity (on 15th i. e. Amāvāsyā). Gārgya (q. by Par. M. I. 2 p. 324) provides that one should not perform śrāddha on Nandā, on Friday, on 13th of the dark half and on the nakṣatra of birth and the preceding and the following nakṣatras for fear of losing one's sons and wealth. The Nandā tithis are 1st, 6th and 11th. The Anuśāsana-parva (87. 16) provides that he who performs śrāddha on the 13th tithi attains pre-eminence among his agnates, but then the young men in his house die as a consequence.

The śrāddhas performed on the days mentioned in Viṣṇu Dh. S. 77. 1-6 are *naimittika* and those performed on certain tithis and days of the week for securing certain rewards would be *kāmya* śrāddhas. According to Par. M. I. 1 p. 63 the performance of obligatory (*nitya*) actions is *samśkāra* (i. e. effects a purifying change in the mind making it fit for higher things), while in some cases it may also produce the desire to know the Reality behind the appearances (i. e. it is 'vividiśa-janaka' as indicated by the Gītā 9. 27). Jaimini (VI. 3. 1-7) establishes the proposition that the *nitya* acts (such as Agni-hotra, Darśa-pūrṇamāsa-yāga) must be performed even though the performer is unable to perform a subsidiary part of the rite; while Jai. VI. 3. 8-10 provide that every part of *kāmya* actions must be performed and if the performer thinks that he would be unable to perform all he should not undertake to perform a *kāmya* rite at all.^{839a}

The Viṣṇudharmasūtra (78. 1-7) states that one performing śrāddha on Sunday secures everlasting freedom from disease and those who perform śrāddha on Monday, Tuesday, Wednesday, Thursday (Jaiva), Friday and Saturday respec-

839 a. This position is stated by the परा. मा. I part 1 p. 170. यदा कृत्स्नाङ्गानुष्ठानशक्तिस्तदैव काम्यमनुष्ठेयम्. The विष्णुपुराण (III. 14.4-8) sets out the times for काम्यश्राद्धs. The two propositions of जैमिनि are often spoken of as यथाशक्तिन्याय and सर्वाङ्गोपसंहारन्याय.

tively secure happiness (or admiration by people), victory in battle, all desires, such learning as he desires, wealth and long life. The Kūrma (II. 20, 16-17) also expatiates on the rewards for śrāddhas on the several days of the week.

The Viṣṇu-Dharmasūtra (78. 8-15) mentions what rewards follow from performance of śrāddhas on the 28 nakṣatras from Kṛttikā to Bharanī (including Abhijit which is placed after Uttarāśādhā and before Śravaṇa). Yāj. I. 265-268, Vāyu chap. 82, Mārkaṇḍeya-purāṇa 30. 8-16, Kūrma (II. 20. 9-15), Brahmapurāṇa 220. 33-42, Brahmāṇḍa (Upodghātapāda 18.1 ff) also deal with the same topic, but all these works do not present complete agreement. For example, Viṣṇu Dh. S. and Yāj. agree that śrāddha performed on Kṛttikā, Rohinī, Āśvinī and Bharanī yield as rewards heaven, offspring, horses and longevity, but they disagree in several others e. g. while Viṣṇu says that prosperity, beauty (or happiness) and all desires are obtained by performing śrāddha on the Puṣya, Āśleṣā and Maghā nakṣatras respectively, Yāj. provides that a śrāddha on these three yields strength, son and eminence. The Anuśāsanaparva 89 and Vāyupurāṇa 82 set out the rewards of śrāddhas on the several nakṣatras from Kṛttikā as declared by Yama to Śaśabindu.

It is stated in the Agnipurāṇa ⁸⁴⁰ that śrāddhas performed at a holy place and on days that are called Yugādi and Manvādi yield inexhaustible gratification (to the *pitṛs*). The Viṣṇupurāṇa ⁸⁴¹, Matsyapurāṇa (17. 4-5), Padma V. 9. 130-131, Varāhapurāṇa and Prajāpati-smṛti verse 22 and Skanda VII. 1. 205. 33-34 state that the third tithi of Vaiśākha (bright half), the 9th of the bright half of Kārtika, the 13th of the dark half of Bhādrapada and 15th tithi of the dark half of Māgha are called *Yugādi tithis* (i. e. the first days of the four *Yugas* from *Kṛta*).

840. तीर्थे युगादौ मन्वादौ श्राद्धं दत्तमथाक्षयम्। अग्निपुराण 117.61, युगादिषु च कर्तव्यं मन्वन्तरादिकेऽपि च॥ बृहत्पराशर 5.3 (p. 149).

841. वैशाखमासस्य तु या तृतीया नवम्यसौ कार्तिके शुद्धपक्षे । नभस्यमासस्य तमिस्र-पक्षे त्रयोदशी पञ्चदशी च माघे॥ एता युगाद्याः कथिताः पुराणैरनन्तपुण्यास्तिथयश्चतस्रः। विष्णुपुराण III. 14. 12-13 q. by स्मृतिच. I. pp. 58-59, कृत्यरत्नाकर p. 542, मद. पा. p. 538. अपरार्क (p. 425) quotes the विष्णुपुराण differently. The मत्स्यपुराण (17.4) and पद्म place 15th of माघ before the 13th of भाद्रपद. Vide अग्निपु. 209. 14-15 for some different dates for युगादि. The स्मृत्यर्थसार (p. 9) gives a different order: शुक्लतृतीया वैशाखे प्रेतपक्षे त्रयोदशी कार्तिके नवमी शुक्ला माघे दर्शश्च पूर्णिमा। एता युगादयः प्रोक्ता दत्तस्याक्षयकारकाः॥ The वराहपुराण (13. 40-41) contains the verse वैशाखमासस्य ०. प्रजापतिस्मृति (22) has a similar verse for युगादि days.

Matsya 17. 6-8, Agnipurāṇa 117. 61-64 and 209. 16-18, Saurapurāṇa 51. 33-36, Padmapurāṇa (Śrī 9. 132-135) mention the first tithis of the 14 Manus (or Manvantaras) as follows: 9th of the bright half of Āśvina, 12th of the bright half of Kārtika, the third of the bright half of Caitra and of Bhādrapada, the amāvāsyā of Fālguna, the 11th of the bright half of Pauṣa, 10th of bright half of Āṣāḍha and the 7th of the bright half of Māgha, the 8th of the dark half of Śrāvaṇa, the Full Moon of Āṣāḍha, Kārtika, Fālguna, Caitra and Jyestha. The Matsya-purāṇa list is quoted in the Sm. C. I. p. 58, Kṛtyaratnākara p. 543, Par. M. I. 1. p. 156 and I. 2 p. 311, and the Madanapārijāta p. 540. The orders in the Skandapurāṇa VII. 1. 205. 36-39 and the Smṛtyarthasāra (p. 9) are slightly different. In the Skandapurāṇa (Nāgarakhaṇḍa) the first tithis of thirty kalpas from Śveta onwards are specified as fit for śrāddha, but are passed over here.

Āp. Dh. S. II. 842 7. 17. 23-25, Manu III. 280, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 77. 8-9, Kūrma (II. 16. 3-4), Brahmāṇḍa III. 14. 3, Bhaviṣya I. 185. 1 forbid the performance of śrāddha at night or at twilight or when the sun has just risen except in the case of an eclipse of the moon. Āp. adds that when once a śrāddha is begun in the afternoon and owing to some cause there is delay and the sun sets then the performer should perform the remaining rites the next day and he should observe a fast till the placing of the *piṇḍas* on the *darbhas*. Viṣṇu Dh. S. declares that śrāddha performed during an eclipse satisfies the Manes as long as the moon and stars exist and brings to the performer all advantages and the satisfaction of all his desires, while the Kūrmapurāṇa threatens that he who would not perform a śrāddha in an eclipse sinks (incurs sins or becomes ruined) as a cow in mud. The Mit. on Yāj. I. 217 is careful to point out that though there is a prohibition against eating during the progress of an eclipse of the sun or moon, that prohibition would only affect the eater (the brāhmaṇa who eats śrāddha repast in an eclipse) but not the giver who will secure happiness (or good results) thereby.⁸⁴³

842. न च नक्तं श्राद्धं कुर्वति । आरब्धे चाभोजनमा समापनात् । अन्यत्र राहुदर्शनात् । आप. ध. सू. II. 7. 17. 23-25 ; नक्तं तु वर्जयेच्छ्राद्धं राहोरन्यत्र दर्शनात् । सर्वस्वेनापि कर्तव्यं क्षिप्रं वै राहुदर्शने ॥ उपरागे न कुर्याद्यः पङ्के गौरिव सीदति ॥ कूर्मपुराणे II. 16. 3-4.

843. यद्यपि 'चन्द्रसूर्यग्रहे नाद्यात्' इति ग्रहणे भोजननिषेधस्तथापि भोक्तृणां वातुर-
म्युदयः । मित. on या. I. 217-218.



Very learned disquisitions are held in Aparārka p. 465 ff, Hemādri p. 313 ff and other writers and digests as to the meaning of *aparāhṇa* which is the time for śrāddha prescribed by Manu (III. 278). There are several views. Some hold that the part of the day after noon is 'after-noon.' The word 'pūrvāhṇa' occurs in Rg. X. 34. 11. Others relying on a śruti⁸⁴⁴ text 'The forenoon is for gods, mid-day for men and afternoon for pitṛs' hold that the third part of the day divided into three parts is 'aparāhṇa.' A third view is that *aparāhṇa* is the 4th part of the day divided into five parts and they rely⁸⁴⁵ on Śat. Br. II. 2. 3. 9. The five parts are called *prātaḥ*, *sāṅgava*, *madhyandina* (or *madhyāhṇa*), *aparāhṇa* and *sāyāhṇa* (or *sāyam* or *astagamana*). The first three are expressly mentioned even in the Rgveda V. 76. 3. Prajāpati-smṛti (verses 156-157) says that each of these five parts extends over three *muhūrtas* (the day being divided into fifteen *muhūrtas*). It further states that *kutapa* is the 8th *muhūrta* from sunrise and that śrāddha should be begun in *kutapa* and should not last beyond *Rauhipa* *muhūrta* and that five *muhūrtas* (from 8th to 12th) are the maximum time for śrāddha.⁸⁴⁶ The word *kutapa* has eight meanings as noted by the Sm. C. (śrāddha) p. 433 and Hemādri on śrāddha p. 320. The word is derived from 'ku' meaning 'condemned' (i. e. sin) and 'tapa' means 'what burns.' The eight⁸⁴⁷ meanings of 'kutapa' are 'midday, a vessel of rhinoceros horn, woollen seat or blanket

844. पूर्वार्द्धो वै देवानां मध्यन्दिनो मनुष्याणामपराह्णः पितॄणाम् । तस्मादपराह्णे ददाति । शतपथब्रा. II. 4.2.8.

845. आदित्यस्त्वेव सर्व ऋतवः । यदेवोदेत्यथ वसन्तो यदा संगवोऽथ ग्रीष्मो यदा मध्यन्दिनोऽथ वर्षा यदापराह्णोऽथ शरद् यदेवास्तमेत्यथ हेमन्तस्तस्माद् मध्यन्दिन एवादधीत तर्हि क्षीणोऽस्य लोकस्य नेदिष्टं भवति । शतपथ II. 2.3.9, quoted by स्मृतिच. (आ. p.363).

846. आरम्भं कुतपे कुर्याद्दौहिणिं तु न लङ्घयेत् । एतत्पञ्चमुहूर्तान्तः श्राद्धकाल उदाहृतः ॥ मुहूर्तास्तत्र विज्ञेया दश पञ्च च सर्वदा । तत्राष्टमो मुहूर्तो यः स कालः कुतपः स्मृतः ॥ प्रजापति verses 158-159. Compare पञ्च (सृष्टिखण्ड 11.91-92) and स्कन्द VII.1 205.6 for similar verses. The names of the 15 मुहूर्तः are quoted in टोडरानन्द (on आ. folio 25a) and in बृहद्योगयात्रा of बराहमिहिर (VI. 2-4) m. in my paper on 'Varāhamihira and Utpala,' JBBRAS vol., 24-25 p. 21.

847. मध्याह्नः खड्गपात्रं च तथा नेपालकम्बलः । रूप्यं दर्भास्तिला गावो दौहित्रश्चाष्टमः स्मृतः ॥ पापं कुत्सितमित्याहुस्तस्य सन्तापकारिणः । अष्टावते यतस्तस्य कुतपा इति विश्रुताः ॥ स्कन्दपुराण VII. 1. 205. 8-9, पञ्च VI. 131.76-78, q. by स्मृतिच. (आ. p. 433 as स्मृत्यन्तर) and by हेमाद्रि p. 320 and p. 1176 (where these are quoted as पैठीनसि's). लघुशातातप (verse 108) speaks of खड्गपात्र as दौहित्र and is quoted by अपरार्क (p. 474). लघुशातातप (109) defines कुतप as the 8th part of the day (out of 15) and is quoted by आ. क्रि. कौ. p. 317. अपरार्क p. 474 quotes a smṛti giving three senses of दौहित्र 'अपत्यं दुहितुश्चैव खड्गपात्रं तथैव च । पुत्रं च कौ. पिलाया गोदौहित्रमिति कीर्तितम्'.



from Nepal, silver, darbhas, sesame, cows and daughter's son.' The general rule is that śrāddhas are performed in the afternoon (but this applies to śrāddha on New moon, Mahālaya, Aṣṭakā and Anvaṣṭakā śrāddhas), while Vṛddhiśrāddha and śrāddha in which only corn is offered (āmaśrāddha) are performed in the morning. Medhātithi on Manu III. 245 quotes a smṛti text on this.⁸⁴⁸ The Trikāṇḍamaṇḍana (II. 150, 162) provides that when it is not possible to perform a religious rite at the time prescribed for it as appropriate, it should be performed at some other time thereafter and that, between the proper time of a rite and the means, the former is to be preferred and one should not wait for a time later than the proper one with the desire of being able to collect all the principal materials.^{848a}

A few words must be said about the proper places for the performance of a śrāddha. Manu (III. 206-207) lays down that the performer should make efforts to secure a spot sloping to the south and smear it with cowdung, a spot that is pure and unfrequented (by many persons) and that the Fathers are pleased by śrāddha at naturally clean spots or the banks of rivers and spots that are unfrequented. Yaj. I. 227 very briefly puts the requirements by saying that the place of śrāddha should be covered on all sides, should be pure and sloping to the south. Śaṅkha says:⁸⁴⁹ 'one should not perform śrāddha on the backs of bulls, elephants and horses, nor on raised earth platforms nor on land owned by others.' The Kūrmapurāṇa states⁸⁵⁰ 'Forests, sacred mountains, holy places, temples—these have no (definite) owner and they cannot be private property (of any one)'. Yama provides⁸⁵¹ 'if one offers śrāddha to his *pitrs* in spots

848. पूर्वाह्ने दैविकं कार्यमपराह्णे तु पैतृकम् । एकोद्दिष्टं तु मध्याह्ने प्रातर्द्विदिनिमित्तकम् ॥ मेधातिथि on मनु III. 245. The दीपकालिका on या. I. 226 quotes this verse as from वायुपुराण and reads पूर्वाह्णे मातृकं etc.

848 a. मुख्यकाले यदावश्यं कर्म कर्तुं न शक्यते । गौणकालेऽपि कर्तव्यं गौणोप्यत्रेदृशो भवेत् ॥ स्वकालादुत्तरो गौणः कालः पूर्वस्य कर्मणः ॥ मुख्यकालमुपाश्रित्य गौणमप्यस्तु साधनम् । न मुख्यद्रव्यलोभेन गौणकालप्रतीक्षणम् ॥ त्रिकाण्डमण्डन II. 150, 157, 162.

849. गोगजाश्वादिपृष्ठेषु कृत्रिमायां तथा भुवि । न कुर्याच्छ्राद्धमेतेषु पारक्यासु च भूमिषु ॥ शङ्ख q. by परा मा. I. 2 p. 303, आ. प्र. p. 140, स्मृतिच. (आ. p. 385).

850. अटव्यः पर्वताः पुण्यास्तीर्थान्यायतनानि च । सर्वाण्यस्वामिकान्याहुर्न द्योतेषु परिग्रहः ॥ कूर्म II. 22. 17. अपरार्क p. 471, कल्पतरु (आ. p. 116), and आ. प. 148 quote a very similar verse as यम's.

851. यमः । परकीयप्रदेशेषु पितृणां निर्वपेत्तु यः । तन्ममिस्वामिपितृभिर्विद्वन्त्यते ॥...तस्माच्छ्राद्धानि देयानि पुण्येष्वायतनेषु च । नदीतीरेषु तीर्थेषु प्रयत्नतः । उपहरानिकुञ्जेषु तथा पर्वतसानुषु ॥ q. by अपरार्क p. 471, कल्पतरु (आ. p. 116); compare कूर्म II. 22. 16.

belonging to others, that śrāddha rite is destroyed by the pitrs of the owner of those spots. Therefore, a man should perform śrāddha on holy spots, on river banks, in sacred places and particularly in land belonging to himself, in bowers near hills and on mountain tops.' The Viṣṇudharma-sūtra chap. 85 mentions numerous holy places and then adds 'in these and other *tīrthas*, big rivers, on all natural sandy banks, near streams, on mountains, in bowers, forests, groves and spots that look charming because of being smeared with cowdung (śrāddha may be performed).' Śāṅkha (14. 27-29) states 'whatever is given in holy Gayā, in Prabhāsa, Puṣkara, Prayāga, in the Naimiṣa forest (on the Sarasvatī), on the banks of the Ganges, Yamunā, Payoṣṇī, on Amarakaṇṭaka, on Narmadā, in Benares, in Kurukṣetra, Bhṛgutunga, on the Himālaya, on Sapta-Veṇī, on Rṣikūpa—all that becomes inexhaustible.' The Brahmapurāṇa (220. 5-7) also specifies river banks, lakes, mountain tops, sacred spots like Puṣkara as the proper places for śrāddha. The Vāyupurāṇa, chap. 77 and Matsya 22 contain long lists of sacred places, countries, mountains in relation to śrāddhas. The Kalpataru (śrāddha p. 40) and Śr. P. p. 147 state that special characteristics of the *tīrthas* in the several countries that are declared to be fit places for śrāddha should be understood from the inhabitants of those various countries.

Sacred places will be dealt with in a separate section (on *tīrthas*).

The Viṣṇudharmasūtra ⁸⁵² (chap. 84) prescribes that śrāddha should not be performed in Mleccha country, nor should one go to a Mleccha country and then defines a Mleccha country as one in which the system of the four *varṇas* is not established and states that Āryāvarta is beyond that. The Vāyupurāṇa provides ⁸⁵³ that the country of Triśaṅku which is

852. न म्लेच्छविषये श्राद्धं कुर्यात् । न गच्छेन्म्लेच्छविषयम् । परनिपातेष्वपि पीत्वा तत्साम्यमुपगच्छतीति । चातुर्वर्ण्यव्यवस्थानं यस्मिन्देशे न विद्यते । स म्लेच्छदेशो विज्ञेय आर्यावर्तस्ततः परः । विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 84. 1-4.

853. त्रिशङ्कोर्वजयेदेशं सर्वं द्वादशयोजनम् । उत्तरेण महानद्या दक्षिणेन तु कीकटम् । देशश्चैशङ्को नाम श्राद्धकर्मणि वर्जितः । कारस्कराः कलिङ्गाश्च सिन्धोरुत्तरमेव च । प्रणष्टा अमवर्णाश्च देशा वज्याः प्रयत्नतः । वायुपुराण 78. 21-23, ब्रह्माण्ड, उपोद्घातपाद 14. 31-33, quoted by हेमाद्रि (आ. p. 162), and श्राद्धप्र. p. 147 and अपराकं p. 472 (as from ब्रह्माण्ड). Vide also विष्णुधर्मोत्तर I. 141. 2-4.



twelve *yojanas* in extent and which is to the north of the river Mahānadī and to the south of Kikāṭa (i. e. Magadha) is not fit for śrāddha; similarly the countries called Kāraskara, Kalinga, the country to the north of the river Sindhu and all countries where the system of *varṇas* and *āśramas* is not in existence should be sedulously avoided for śrāddhas. The Brahmapurāṇa (220. 8-10) makes the somewhat startling remark that the following countries should be avoided for śrāddhas viz. the Kirāta country, Kalinga, Koṅkaṇa, Krimi (Krivi?), Daśārṇa, Kumārya (Cape Comorin), Tāṅgaṇa, Kratha, the northern banks of the Sindhu river and the south bank of Narmadā and the east of the Karatoyā.

The Mārkaṇḍeyapurāṇa ⁸⁵⁴ prescribes that for a śrāddha a place (ground) that is full of insects, that is arid, or is burnt by fire, from which proceed sounds that are painful to the ear, that is terrific in its aspect, that emits fetid smell should be avoided.

It was also provided from very early times that certain persons and animals are to be ejected from the place where śrāddha is to be performed and are not to be allowed to pollute the śrāddha rite by looking at it or by disturbing it in various other ways. Gaut. (15. 25-28) provides that food seen by dogs, cāṇḍālas and those guilty of mahāpātakas becomes unclean (and so unfit); therefore one should offer śrāddha in a covered (or screened) place; or he should strew round about the place sesame or a worthy brāhmaṇa who purifies a row of diners by his presence should perform a śānti for removing the taint caused (by a dog or cāṇḍāla seeing the food &c). Āp. Dh. S. prescribes that the learned condemn the seeing of a śrāddha by dogs and those who (being *patita*) are excommunicated and that a leper, a bald man, one having sexual intercourse with another's wife, the son of a brāhmaṇa who follows the profession of arms, the son of a brāhmaṇa woman from a śūdra man—if these eat śrāddha food they pollute the diners sitting to eat in a row. Manu (III. 239-242) states: 'a cāṇḍāla, a village pig or cock, a dog, a woman in her monthly illness, an impotent person—these should not be allowed to see brāhmaṇas engaged in taking dinner. Whatever is seen by these at a *homa*

854. वज्र्या जन्तुमती रुक्षा क्षितिः पुष्टा तथाग्निना । अनिष्टदुष्टशब्दोऽथ दुर्गन्धा आदौ-
कर्मणि ॥ मार्कण्डेयपुराण 29. 19 q. by श्राद्धप्र. p. 139.

(agnihotra), at a gift (of cows and gold), when brāhmaṇas are being fed, or at a religious rite (like the Darśa-Pūrṇamāsa sacrifice) or at a śrāddha becomes fruitless. A pig taints food (offered to gods or Manes) by merely smelling it, a cock by setting in motion the air with its wings, a dog by casting a glance and a man of low caste by touch. If a servant of even the person who offers śrāddha is lame or squint-eyed or has a limb less or more (i. e. having eleven or nine fingers &c.), he should be ejected from the place where śrāddha is to be performed.' It is provided by the Anuśāsanaparva (127.13) that śrāddha food should not be seen by a woman in her monthly illness or by a sonless woman or by one suffering from white leprosy. Viṣṇu-dharmasūtra (82.3 ff) contains a long list of about 30 persons who are not to be allowed near a śrāddha. The Kūrmapurāṇa (II. 22. 34-35) states that one devoid of a limb, a *patita*, a leper, one suffering from an open ulcer, an atheist, a cock, a pig, a dog, should be kept far away from a śrāddha; one should also avoid one that has a disgusting appearance, an impure person, one who is naked, a mad man, a gambler, a woman in her monthly course, those that wear indigo-coloured or yellow-red garments and those who follow heretical views. The Mārkaṇḍeya 32. 20-24, Vāyu 78. 26-40, Viṣṇupurāṇa III. 16. 12-14 and Anuśāsanaparva 91. 43-44 also contain long lists which are passed over here. The Skandapurāṇa VI. 217. 43 also speaks about a dog, a woman in her monthly illness, a *patita* and a hog not being allowed to see the śrāddha rite.

The classification of Śrāddhas.

Śrāddhas have been variously classified. One classification, viz. into *nitya*, *naimittika* and *kāmya* has already been described above (p. 369). Another classification is that into Ekoddiṣṭa and Pārvaṇa⁸⁵⁵. The first is offered to one deceased person alone, while the latter is performed on the amāvāsyā of a month or in the dark half of Bhādrapada or on saṅkrānti and in it the three paternal ancestors are principally invoked. Brhas-

855. Vide H. of Dh. vol. III. p. 737, note 1425 for explanation of these two. अमावास्यां यत् क्रियते तत्पार्वणमुदाहृतम्। क्रियते वा पर्वणि यत्तत्पार्वणमिति स्थितिः॥ भविष्यपुराण I. 183.15 q. by कल्पतरु p. 7, आहृतत्त्व p. 192, आ. वि. of रुद्रधर, आ. क्रि. कौ. p. 6 (which explains 'पर्वणि अन्वष्टका माघीपौर्णमास्यादि'). The परा. मा. I. 2. p. 199 says पुरुषत्रयमुद्दिश्य यत्क्रियते तत्पार्वणम्। एकपुरुषोद्देशेन यत्क्रियते तदेकोद्दिष्टम्. Venk. ed. of भविष्य reads दर्शे वा क्रियते यत्तु।.



pati quoted in the Śrāddhaviveka of Rudradhara mentions five classes of śrāddhas as declared by Manu viz. nitya, naimittika, kāmya, Vṛddhi and Pārvaṇa⁸⁵⁶. The Śrāddhaviveka remarks that the sixteen *pretasrāddhas* (to be described later on) are included under naimittika and that such śrāddhas as Goṣṭhī-śrāddha enumerated in other smṛtis are included in Pārvaṇa. The Kūrmapurāṇa (II. 20. 26) similarly speaks of the five śrāddhas as enumerated by Manu⁸⁵⁷. The Mit. on Yāj. I. 217 states that there are five śrāddhas, viz. 'ahar-ahar-śrāddha, pārvaṇa, vṛddhīśrāddha, ekoddiṣṭa and sapindīkaraṇa. The daily śrāddha is described by Manu III. 82 (= Śaṅkha 13.16 and Matsya 16.4) as one that is performed every day with food (cooked rice, yavas &c.) or with water or with milk, fruits and roots. Two verses of Viśvāmitra⁸⁵⁸ quoted by several works speak of twelve kinds of śrāddhas, viz. nitya, naimittika, kāmya, vṛddhī-śrāddha (performed on the birth of a son, marriage or similar incident of good luck), sapindāna (sapindīkaraṇa), pārvaṇa, goṣṭhīśrāddha, śuddhīśrāddha, karmāṅga, daivika, yātrāśrāddha, puṣṭīśrāddha. Explanations of all these are quoted from the Bhaviṣyapurāṇa by the same works. Sapindāna and Pārvaṇa will be described below. Some of the rest not already defined may be briefly explained as follows: The Goṣṭhī-śrāddha⁸⁵⁹ is one which is performed when a man be-

856. नित्यं नैमित्तिकं काम्यं वृद्धिश्चाद्धं तथैव च । पार्वणं चेति मनुना आद्धं पञ्चविधं स्मृतम् ॥ बृहस्पति q. by. आ. वि. of रुद्रधर p. 1.

857. कर्मरम्भेषु सर्वेषु कुर्यादभ्युदये पुनः । पुत्रजन्मादिषु आद्धं पार्वणं पर्वसु स्मृतम् ॥ अहन्यहनि नित्यं स्यात् काम्यं नैमित्तिकं पुनः । एकोद्दिष्टादि विज्ञेयं द्विधा आद्धं तु पार्वणम् । एतत् पञ्चविधं आद्धं मनुना परिकीर्तितम् । कूर्म. II. 20.24-26. आश्वलायन q. by आद्धक-लिका enumerates them as काम्यं नैमित्तिकं वृद्धिरेकोद्दिष्टं च पार्वणम् । (folio 1.).

858. नित्यं नैमित्तिकं काम्यं वृद्धिश्चाद्धं सपिण्डनम् । पार्वणं चेति विज्ञेयं गोष्ठ्यां शुद्ध्यर्थमष्टमम् ॥ कर्माद्धं नवमं प्रोक्तं दैविकं दशमं स्मृतम् । यात्रास्वेकादशं प्रोक्तं पुष्ट्यर्थं द्वादशं स्मृतम् ॥ विश्वामित्र q. by कल्पतरु p. 6, स्मृतिच. (आ. p. 334), मद. पा. p. 475, आ. क. ल. p. 6, निर्णयसिन्धु III. p. 374. The कूर्मपुराण also (II. 20.26-27) mentions यात्राआद्ध, शुद्धिआद्ध and दैविकआद्ध. This enumeration occurs in भविष्यपुराण I. 183.6-7 and स्कन्दपुराण VII. 1.205. 41-42. The कल्पतरु refers to two verses of the ब्रह्मपुराण for explaining यात्राआद्ध which are quoted at length in आ. क्रि. कौ. p. 267 and आ. प्र. p. 333.

859. गोष्ठ्यां यत्क्रियते आद्धं गोष्ठीआद्धं तदुच्यते । बहूनां विदुषां संपत्सुखार्थं पितृवृत्तये । भविष्यपु. q. by कल्पतरु p. 7, मद. पा. p. 476, आ. क. ल. p. 7. The कल्पतरु explains: गोष्ठी चात्र आद्धकर्तुसमुदायः । संपत्सुखार्थं आद्धसामग्रीसंपादो यत्सुखं तदर्थं बहूनां विदुषां केनचिन्निमित्तेन युगपच्छ्राद्धे कर्तव्य उपस्थिते पृथक्पाकाद्यसम्पत्तौ संभूय आद्धसामग्रीसंपादनेन यच्छ्राद्धं क्रियते तद्गोष्ठीआद्धमिति शङ्खधरः ।' (p. 7). The पञ्चमहासति-आद्धप्रयोग of रघुनाथ gives another explanation 'आद्धस्य गोष्ठ्यां वातायः क्रियमाणायं तज्जनितोत्साहेन यत् क्रियते आद्धम् ।'.

comes enthusiastic owing to a talk about śrāddha or when many learned men gather together at a sacred place and, finding it impossible to have separate cooking arrangements for each, pool their resources for collecting śrāddha materials and perform simultaneously śrāddha for the pleasure it affords to themselves and for the gratification of pitṛs. The Śuddhi-śrāddha is one where brāhmanas are fed when a person undergoes śuddhi (purification) after being guilty of some sin or transgression (it is a subsidiary act in a prāyaścitta). That śrāddha is called 'karmāṅga' which is performed at the time of the Garbhādhāna rite or at the performance of a soma sacrifice, or at śimantonayana, pumsavana (it is like Vṛddhiśrāddha). That is called daivika śrāddha which is intended to propitiate gods (it is like nityaśrāddha and is performed on the 7th or 12th tithi or the like with sacrificial food). When a man going to a distant country on a pilgrimage or the like performs a śrāddha in which clarified butter is served (to brāhmanas) in abundance or when he comes back to his house, that is yātrā-śrāddha. That is called puṣṭiśrāddha which is performed for the health (or fattening) of the body (when taking some medicine for the purpose) or for the increase of one's wealth. Out of these ⁸⁶⁰ twelve the principal ones are pārvana, ekoddiṣṭa, vṛddhi and sapinḍana. There are works called Śaṇ-ṇavati-śrāddha such as those of Śivabhaṭṭa, son of Govinda, and of Raghunātha. The 96 śrāddhas to be performed in a year are briefly enumerated in a verse ⁸⁶¹ quoted in the note. They are: 12 śrāddhas on

860. गोष्ठ्यां यत्क्रियते श्राद्धं गोष्ठीश्राद्धं तदुच्यते । बहूनां विदुषां सम्पत्सुखार्थं पितृतृप्तये ॥ क्रियते शुद्धये यत्तु ब्राह्मणानां तु भोजनम् । शुद्धयर्थमिति तत्प्रोक्तं वैनतेय मनीषिभिः ॥ निषेककाले सोमे च सीमन्तोन्नयने तथा । ज्ञेयं पुंसवने चैव श्राद्धं कर्माङ्गमेव च ॥ देवाहुर्दिश्य यच्छ्राद्धं तत्तु दैविकमुच्यते । हविष्येण विशिष्टेन सप्तम्यादिषु यत्नतः ॥ गच्छन्देशान्तरं यच्च श्राद्धं कुर्यात्तु सर्पिषा । यात्रार्थमिति तत्प्रोक्तं प्रवेशे च न संशयः ॥ शरीरोपचये श्राद्धमर्थोपचय एव वा । पुष्ट्यर्थमेतद्विज्ञेयमौपचायिकमुच्यते ॥ भविष्यपु. I. 183. 15-19, q. by स्मृतिच. (आ.) p. 334, आ. क. ल. p. 7, निर्णयसिन्धु p. 374. There are some various readings here that are not noted. The printed text (Venk. ed.) presents different readings, such as गोम्यश्च क्रियते श्राद्धं and क्रियते देवमुद्दिश्य सप्तम्यादिषु यत्नतः. These 12 श्राद्धs are defined in स्कन्दपुराण VII. 1. 205. 43-50 also. On दैविकश्राद्ध the टोडरानन्द (श्राद्धसौख्य folio 4 b) remarks 'अत्र यद्यपि प्रकृतं श्राद्धमसम्भवि देवोद्दिश्यकत्वेन विधानात् तथापि श्राद्धया कार्यं श्राद्धमिति योगसामान्यात् श्राद्धपदाभिधेयतावचनं बोद्धव्यम् ।'

861. अमा युगमनुक्रान्तिधृतिपातमहालयाः । आन्वष्टक्यं च पूर्वैः षण्णवत्यः प्रकीर्तिताः । verse 5 of षण्णवतिश्राद्ध of शिवभट्ट (Ms. in Bhadkamkar collection)

(Continued on the next page)



the 12 amāvāsyās in the year, the four śrāddhas on the Yugādi days (note 841 above), the fourteen śrāddhas on the Manvantarādi days (p. 375 above), the śrāddhas on 12 *saṅkrāntis* (i. e. the sun's apparent motion from one sign of the Zodiac to another), the 13 śrāddhas on the Yoga called Dhṛti (i. e. Vaidhṛti) and the 13 śrāddhas on the Vyatīpāta yoga, the 16 Mahālaya śrāddhas, the four Anvaṣṭakā days (according to Āśv. as noted on pp. 359-360), the four Aṣṭakā days and the four days (i. e. 7th of dark half of the months of Hemanta and Śiśira) of the day previous (to the Aṣṭakā). These classifications and enumerations of śrāddhas will afford an idea how the doctrine of śrāddhas was carried to an exaggerated extent in the course of centuries. It goes without saying that only a few people could have indulged in the luxury of so many śrāddhas a year and most people were content with the performance of only one Mahālayaśrāddha and one or two more. It may be noted that Manu (III. 122) first prescribed that on the amāvāsyā of each month an elaborate śrāddha should be performed, but knowing that this was almost impossible Manu recommends to all (III. 281) that an elaborate śrāddha should be performed on three amāvāsyās in one year⁸⁶² (viz. in Hemanta, Grīṣma and Varsā) and one should perform every day the śrāddha which is one of the five daily sacrifices (III. 82-83). Devala went further and recommended that an elaborate śrāddha may be performed only once a year.

The next important question is about the qualifications of the brāhmaṇas that were invited to dinner on a śrāddha day. Only brāhmaṇas were and are entitled to be invited for śrāddha

(Continued from the last page)

The महालयs are 16 as stated by शाट्यायनि and देवल q. by परा. मा. I. 2 p. 319 and by स्मृ. सु. (श्राद्ध) p. 745; नभस्यस्यापरे पक्षे तिथिषोडशकं तु यत् । कन्यास्थार्कान्वितं चेत् स्यात्स कालः श्राद्धकर्मणि ॥ (शा.) ; अहःषोडशकं यत् शुक्रप्रतिपदा सह । चन्द्रक्षयविशेषेण सापि दर्शात्मिका स्मृता ॥ (देवल). Generally there are 13 वैधृतियोगs and 13 vyatīpāta yogas in a year, though sometimes there may be 14 of each. There are in a month 27 yogas beginning from विष्कम्भ. The शतपथशास्त्रे XI. 4. 2. 10) speaks of 12 अष्टकाs 'द्वादश पौर्णमास्यो द्वादशाष्टका द्वादशमावास्या'.

862. एतेन विधिना श्राद्धं कुर्यात्संवत्सरं सकृत् । त्रिंशत्तुर्वा यथाश्राद्धं मासं त्रिंशदिने । देवल q. by स्मृतिच. (श्रा.) p. 497 which explains; एतेन विधिना मासं त्रिंशदिना प्रतिवत्सरमेकवारं विशिष्टेऽह्नि प्रतिसंवत्सरं त्रिवारं वा. कल्पतरु p. 22 (श्राद्ध) quotes the verse.



dinner whoever may be the performer of the śrāddha. In this connection many works contain high eulogies of brāhmaṇas, but they are passed over here, as the eulogy of brāhmaṇas has been already dealt with at some length in H. of Dh. vol. II. pp. 37-38, 135-138. It may be noted that the gr̥hyasūtras contain a few requirements, but as we proceed the smṛtis and purāṇas go on adding qualifications and enlarging the lists of those that should not be invited. For example, the Āśv. Gr. ^{862a} IV. 7. 2, Śān. Gr. IV. 1. 2. Āp. Gr. VIII. 21. 2, Āp. Dh. S. II. 7. 17. 4, Hir. Gr. II. 10. 2, Baud. Gr. II. 10. 5-6 and II. 8. 2-3, Gaut. 15. 9 provide that the brāhmaṇas to be invited should be possessed of Vedic learning, should be of excellent character (free from anger and passion and possessed of control of mind and senses) and of meritorious conduct, pure, not deficient in a limb or not having an excessive limb (e. g. having six fingers). The Āp. Dh. S. states that he who has studied the three Vedic verses in which the word 'madhu' occurs (Rg. I. 90. 6-8, Vāj. S. 13. 27-29, Tai. S. IV. 2. 9. 3), he who has studied the Trisuparna, one who is a Tripāciketa, one who has studied the mantras required for the four sacrifices (Āśvamedha, Puruṣamedha, Sarvamedha and Pitṛmedha) or who has performed these four sacrifices, one who keeps the five fires, he who knows the Sāman called Jyeṣṭha, he who carries out the duty of daily Vedic study, the son of one

862 a. ब्राह्मणान् श्रुतशीलवृत्तसंपन्नानेकेन वा । आश्व. गृ. IV. 7. 2; ब्राह्मणान् शुचीन् मन्त्रवतः समङ्गानयुज आमन्त्रयते । योनिगोत्रासम्बन्धान् । नार्थापेक्षो भोजयेत् । हिर. गृ. II. 10. 2; त्रिमधुस्त्रिसुपर्णास्त्रिणाचिकेतश्चतुर्मेधः पञ्चाग्निर्ज्येष्ठसामिको वेदाध्याय्य-नूचानपुत्रः श्रोत्रिय इत्येते आद्रे भुञ्जानाः पङ्क्तिपावना भवन्ति । आप. ध. II. 7. 17-22.

त्रिसुपर्ण is the name applied, according to Haradatta, to the three anuvākas beginning with ब्रह्ममेतु माम् (तै. आ. X. 48-50) or to the verse चतुः—शिखण्डा युवतिः सुपेशाः in तै. ब्रा. I. 2. 1. 27 or Rg. X. 114. 3-5. त्रिणाचिकेतः is explained in different ways viz. (1) one who knows the Nāciketa fire, (2) a person who has thrice kindled the Nāciketa fire, (3) a person who has studied the Anuvāka called Virajas. For the Nāciketa fire, vide Kāthopaniṣad I. 1. 16-18. The word 'Trināciketaḥ' occurs in Kātha Up. I. 1. 17 and is explained by शङ्कर as 'त्रिःकृत्वा नाचिकेतोऽग्निश्चितो येन सः त्रिणाचिकेतास्तद्विज्ञानस्तदध्ययनस्तदनुष्ठानवान् वा । Tai. Br. (III. 11. 7-8) describes the नाचिकेत fire and the story of Naciketas. The five fires are Gārhapatya, Āhavanīya, Dakṣiṇāgni, Āvasathya (or aupāsana) and Sabhya. Vide H. of Dh. vol. II. p. 679. Vide *ibid.* II. p. 767 note 1838^a for explanations of पङ्क्तिपावन, ज्येष्ठसामिक

and the other words explained above. देवल defines श्रोत्रिय as 'एकां शाखां सकल्पां वा षड्भिरङ्गैरधीत्य वा । षट्कर्मनिरतो विप्रः श्रोत्रियो नाम धर्मवित् ॥' q. by आ. प्र. p. 59. Pāṇini (V. 2. 84) derives श्रोत्रिय as श्रोत्रियश्छन्दोधीते. षट्कर्म—refers to यजनयाजनाध्ययनाध्यापनप्रतिग्रहदानानि.



who has studied the Veda and is able to teach the whole Veda with its *aṅgas*, a *Śrotriya*—these persons sanctify the company if they eat at a funeral repast. Gaut. 15. 28, Baud. Dh. S. II. 8.2, Manu III. 185–186, Yāj. I. 219, Varāhapurāṇa 14.2 contain almost the same words about those who sanctify the company of diners (i. e. who are *pañktipāvana*). The Anuśāsanaparva (90. 25–31), Kūrmapurāṇa II. 21. 1–14, Matsya 16. 7–13, Brahmapurāṇa 220. 101–104, Vāyu 79. 56–59 and 83. 52–55, Skanda VI. 217. 21–25 give long lists of *pañktipāvana* brāhmaṇas. The Hir. Gr. II. 10.2, Baud. Dh. S. II. 2. 7, Kūrma (II. 21. 14) and others say that a performer of śrāddha should invite one who is not a relative connected by marriage (such as a maternal uncle) nor one who is of the same gotra, nor one who is connected with the performer by Veda study (i. e. is his teacher or pupil), nor a friend nor one who expects monetary help from the performer. Manu (III. 138–139) provides that one should not invite at a śrāddha dinner a personal friend, that one may gain a friend by making valuable gifts to him (on other occasions), that one should feed at a śrāddha a brāhmaṇa whom he does not deem either his friend or foe and that he who performs śrāddhas and offerings to gods chiefly to gain friends reaps no reward after death by those śrāddhas or offerings. But Manu III. 144 (= Kūrma II. 21–22) provides that one may invite even a friend but not a foe though the latter may be learned. Manu (III. 135–137 and 145–147) lays down that the main or best rule to be followed is to present śrāddha food to those who are devoted to spiritual knowledge, that between a man who has studied one whole recension of the Veda but whose father was not a śrotriya and one who is himself not a śrotriya but whose father had studied a whole recension of the Veda (i. e. whose father was a śrotriya) the latter is the more worthy of the two, that one should strive to feed at a śrāddha an adherent of the R̥gveda who has studied one entire recension of that Veda or a follower of the Yajurveda who has studied one Śākhā thereof or a singer of sāmans who has finished one recension of the Sāmaveda and that if one of these preceding three is honoured and dines at a śrāddha, the ancestors of the performer will be gratified up to the seventh generation for a very long time. Hārīta (q. by Hemādri on śrāddha. p. 392 and Kalpataru on śr. pp. 66–67) describes the qualifications of those who are *pañkteya* brāhmaṇas viz. they must be born in a high family (possessing four characteristics), must be endowed with learning (of six kinds) and śīla

(character of 13 kinds) and good conduct (of 16 kinds). Sāṅkha-Likhita⁸⁶³ give a long list of *pāṅkteya* (fit to be associated with in a *pāṅkti* i. e. row of diners) *brāhmaṇas*, viz. he who knows the Veda and the Vedāṅgas (viz. phonetics, kalpa or śrauta ritual, grammar, Nirukta, metrics and astronomy); one who keeps the five fires; one who has studied the Veda with its *aṅgas*; one who knows Sāṅkhya, Yoga, Upaniṣads and Dharmaśāstra; a śrotriya, a *trīṇācīketa*, *trimadhu*, *trisuparnaka* and one that has studied Jyesthasāman; one who has studied Sāṅkhya, Yoga, Upaniṣads and Dharmaśāstra; who is devoted to Veda; who always keeps sacred fires; who is obedient to his parents and devoted to Dharmaśāstra. Similar rules are laid down by Viṣṇu Dh. S. 83, Br̥hat-Parāśara p. 150, Vṛddha-Gautama p. 581, Prajāpati verses 70-72, Laghu-Śātātapa verses 99-100, Auśanasasmṛti (Jiv. vol. I. pp. 523-524). As Medhātithi⁸⁶⁴ on Manu III. 147 says the gist of all these passages is that a learned *brāhmaṇa* who has studied the Veda, whose conduct is good, whose family is famous, who is the son of a śrotriya father and who is not related to the performer must be invited and all the rest is mere *arthavāda* (by way of eulogy). Manu (III. 128) laid down two propositions viz. all food offered as sacrifice to the gods and manes must be given only to a *brāhmaṇa* who studies the Veda and that whatever is presented to the most worthy *brāhmaṇa* (among *brāhmaṇas* studying the Veda) brings in the greatest rewards. Then Manu (III. 183) declares that *pāṅktipāvana* *brāhmaṇas* are those that sanctify a row of diners among whom sit some who are tainted by (latent) blemishes that make them unfit to be among the diners. Then Manu (III. 184-186) gives examples of *pāṅktipāvana* *brāhmaṇas* viz. those who are the foremost among students of all the Vedas or their expository works and who are born in a family of unbroken descent of Vedic students, who are *Trīṇācīketa* &c. Hemādri (on śr. pp. 391-395) and Kalpataru (śr. pp. 64-65) quote numerous verses from Yama on *pāṅktipāvana*.

Manu III. 147 asserts that the best course is to invite a *brāhmaṇa* who fulfils the conditions laid down in Manu III.

863. शङ्खलिखितावपि । अथ पाङ्केयाः । वेदवेदाङ्गवित् पञ्चाग्निरनुचानः साङ्ख्ययोगोप-
निषद्दर्मशास्त्रविच्छ्रोत्रियः त्रिणाचिकेतः त्रिमधुः त्रिसुपर्णको ज्येष्ठसामगः । साङ्ख्ययोगोपनिष-
द्दर्मशास्त्राध्यायी वेदपरः सदाग्निको मातापितृशुश्रूषुर्धर्मशास्त्ररतिः । इति । q by कल्प० (p. 68),
आ. प्र. p. 67.

864. श्रोत्रियो विद्वान् साधुचरणः प्रख्याताभिजनः श्रोत्रियापत्यमसम्बन्धो भोजनीयः ।
परिशिष्टं सर्वमर्थवादार्थम् ॥ मेधा. on मनु III. 147.



132-146, but adds that if it is not possible to secure such a brāhmaṇa then the next best course⁸⁶⁵ ('anukalpa') may be followed, viz. the performer may invite his own maternal grandfather, his maternal uncle, sister's son, father-in-law, his teacher of the Veda, daughter's son, son-in-law, a *bandhu* (such as mother's sister's son), wife's brother or a *sagotra*, or his family priest, or his pupil. Similar provisions occur in Yāj. I. 220, Kūrma (Uttarārdha 21. 20), Varāhapurāṇa 14. 3, Matsya 16. 10-11, Viṣṇupurāṇa III. 15. 2-4 (anukalpeṣvanantarān). But Manu is careful⁸⁶⁶ to point out in a later chapter that one who is able to observe the best course, but observes the second best does not reap other-worldly rewards by his actions. Even Āp. Dh. S.⁸⁶⁷ expressly says that if strangers do not possess the requisite qualifications, then even one's full brother possessed of all the qualifications (as to Vedic learning, good conduct &c.) and pupils may be fed at a śrāddha. Baud. Dh. S. also allows even a sapinda to be fed.⁸⁶⁸ Gaut. 15. 20 appears to be of the view that even pupils and *sagotras* may be invited when they are possessed of excellent qualities and strangers with good qualifications are not available. Even in these times very learned brāhmaṇas are unwilling to be fed at a śrāddha, particularly within a few years (three or five) from the death of the person for whose benefit the śrāddha is to be performed. Smṛtis attach a certain stigma to the fact of being the recipient of a śrāddha dinner and prāyaścittas are prescribed. For example, the Mit. on Yāj. III. 289 quotes several verses of Bhāradvāja, one of which says 'If a brāhmaṇa dines at a pārvana śrāddha he has to perform six prāṇāyāmas (as expiation), if he dines at a śrāddha from the third month after a person's death to one year, he has to undergo a fast; if he dines at a vṛddhiśrāddha, he has to perform three prāṇāyāmas, and a fast for a day and night if he dines at a sapindana śrāddha.' The Mit. further quotes a

865. मुख्याभावे योजनीयते प्रतिनिधिन्यायेन सोऽनुकल्प उच्यते। मेधा. on मनु III. 147. The अमरकोश says 'मुख्यः स्यात्प्रथमः कल्पोऽनुकल्पस्तु ततोऽधमः'.

866. प्रभुः प्रथमकल्पस्य योजकल्पेन वर्तते। न साम्प्रतिकं तस्य दुर्मेतेर्विद्यते फलम् ॥ मनु XI. 30 (= शान्तिपर्व 165.17) q in तन्त्रवार्तिक p. 191, where the 2nd half is स नामोति फलं तस्य परत्रेति विचारितम् ॥

867. गुणहान्यां तु परेषां समुदेतः सोदर्योपि भोजयितव्यः। एतेनान्तेवर्तिनाऽपि भोजयिताः। आप. ध. सू. II. 7. 17. 5-6.

868. तस्मादेवंविधं सपिण्डमप्याशयेत्। बौ. ध. II. 8. 5. The श्रौ. सू. p. 40 explains एवंविधं as गुणवन्तम्.



verse from Dhaumya which prescribes Cāndrāyana for dining at a śrāddha on the birth of a son or at simantonnayana, in a navaśrāddha etc. Vide also Nirṇayasindhu III. pp. 467-468 for prāyaścittas on eating śrāddha dinners. The Varāhapurāṇa (189. 12-13) provides that if a brāhmaṇa dies while the food offered to a *preta* is still in his stomach he dwells for a *kalpa* in a horrible hell, becomes a *rākṣasa* and then becomes free from the sin.

According to Gaut. 15. 10 young persons with the requisite qualifications are to be preferred to older ones, while, according to some, young men were to be invited at a śrāddha for one's deceased father and old men for a śrāddha for one's grandfather. On the other hand, Āp. Dh. S. says among brāhmaṇas possessing the same qualifications, the older ones are to be preferred and among those that are old are to be preferred the poor that are anxious to earn money.^{868a}

Some of the works lay special emphasis on inviting ascetics or *yogins* at a śrāddha dinner. The Viṣṇu Dh. S. states that yogins⁸⁶⁹ are particularly *pañktipāvana* and quotes a stanza as recited by the *pitṛs* 'May (a descendant) be born in our family who feeds a brāhmaṇa yogin at a śrāddha by which we are ourselves satisfied.' The Varāhapurāṇa 14. 50 says that a yogin is superior to 100 brāhmaṇas. The Mārkaṇḍeya-purāṇa provides 'a wise man should always feed yogins at a śrāddha since the *pitṛs* rely for support on Yoga; if a yogin is fed by being seated as the first among thousands of brāhmaṇas he saves the performer and the other diners as a boat saves men in water.' Then it quotes stanzas sung by the *pitṛs* (29. 32-34) to king Aila. The Saurapurāṇa, after mentioning the qualifications (in 19. 2-3),⁸⁷⁰ winds up by stating that even one may suffice provided he be a single-minded devotee of Śivā (verse 6).

868 a. तुल्यगुणेषु वयोवृद्धः श्रेयान् द्रव्यकृशश्चेत्सन् । आप. ध. II 7.17.10.

869. विशेषेण च योगिनः । अत्र पितृगीता गाथा भवति । अपि स स्यात्कुलेऽस्माकं भोजयेद्यस्तु योगिनम् । विप्रं श्राद्धे प्रयत्नेन येन तृप्यामहे वयम् ॥ विष्णुध. सू. 83.19-20.

870. The ब्रह्माण्डपुराण III. 9.70 is गृहस्थानां सहस्रेण वानप्रस्थशतेन च । ब्रह्मचारिसहस्रेण योग एव विशिष्यते ॥ ; योगिनश्च सदा श्राद्धे भोजनीया विपश्चिता । योगाधारा हि पितरस्तस्मात्तान् पूजयेत्सदा ॥ मार्कण्डेय 29. 29; ब्राह्मणानां सहस्रेभ्यो योगी त्वयासने यदि । यजमानं च भोक्तुंश्च नौरिवाम्भसि तारयेत् ॥ वायुपुराण 76. 28, मार्कण्डेय 29. 30; These and other verses occur in ब्रह्मपुराण 220. 112-115. मार्कण्डेय 29.29-30 are ब्रह्मपुराण 220. 110-112 q. by हेमाद्रि p. 411 and आ. प्र. p. 72-73. The important पितृगाथास are 'कदा नः सन्ततावगम्यः कस्यचिद्भविता सुतः ॥ यो योगिभुक्तशेषाज्जो भुवि पिण्डं प्रवासयति । गयायामथवा पिण्डं खड्गमांसं तथा हविः । कालशाकं तिलाज्यं च तृप्तये कृसरं च नः ॥' ब्रह्मपुराण 220. 113-115 and मार्कण्डेय 29. 33-34,

The Matsyapurāṇa (16. 11-12) recommends 'He who expounds (the meaning of) texts; he who enters upon the discussion of śrauta sacrifices and he who knows the rules about the accents of sāmans is a purifier of *pañktipāvanas*; one proficient in the Sāmaveda, a Vedic student, one endowed with knowledge of the Veda or of *Brahma*—where these are fed in a śrāddha it yields the highest benefit.'⁸⁷¹ Though in the above passages the greatest emphasis was laid on the possession of Vedic learning by the brāhmaṇas to be fed, one had also to see whether they were men of good character and observers of the rules of proper conduct, as provided by Āśv. Gr. IV. 7. 2 (note 862), Gaut. 15.9 and Manu II. 118 who says 'a brāhmaṇa'⁸⁷² knowing only the sacred Gāyatrī but living a well-regulated life is to be preferred and not one who knows the three Vedas but who is not well-regulated in conduct and who eats anything (even forbidden food) and who is a vendor of everything.' The Skandapurāṇa VI. 217. 27 recommends that one should make every effort to know the family of the brāhmaṇas, then their character (śīla), then their age and then the facts about whom they marry or to whom they give their daughters in marriage. The Brahmāṇḍa (Upodghāta, chap. 15) says that there should be no scrutiny of a brāhmaṇa about whom nothing is known because *siddhas* (yogins) roam about on the earth in the form of brāhmaṇas. But if faults in a brāhmaṇa are easily seen or if one knows his disqualifications on account of one's dwelling near him, he should not be invited (verses 5-6). The same Purāṇa (Upodghāta 15. 24-26) arranges the orders of preference as follows: first yati (ascetic), then a brāhmaṇa who knows the four Vedas and itihāsa, then one who knows three Vedas, then one who knows two, then one who knows one Veda, then one who is an *upādhyāya*. Hemādri (on śrāddha p. 443) quotes the Agni-purāṇa⁸⁷³ as follows: 'what is the use of (birth in a) famous

871. यश्च व्याकुरुते वाक्यं यश्च मीमांसतेऽध्वरम्॥ सामस्वरविधिज्ञश्च पङ्क्तिपावनपावनः॥ सामगो ब्रह्मचारी च वेदयुक्तोऽथ ब्रह्मविद्॥ यत्रैते भुञ्जते श्राद्धे तदेव परमार्थवत् । मत्स्य-पुराण 16. 11-13.

872. सावित्रीमात्रसारोऽपि वरं विप्रः सुयन्त्रितः । नायन्त्रितस्त्रिवेदोऽपि सर्वज्ञी सर्ववि-
क्रयी ॥ मनु II. 118 = बृहद्गौतम p. 517, which reads चतुर्वेदी. हेमाद्रि p. 443 quotes
मनु as reading नायन्त्रितश्चतुर्वेदी.

873. तदुक्तमग्निपुराणे । किं कुलेन विशालेन वृत्तहीनस्य देहिनः । क्रमयः किं न जायन्ते
कुसुमेषु सुगन्धिषु ॥ जातूकर्णयोपि । अपि विद्याकुलैर्युक्तान् वृत्तहीनान् द्विजाधमान् । अनर्हान्
हृदयकश्येण वाङ्मात्रेणापि नार्चयेत् ॥ हेमाद्रि pp. 443-444, आ. प्र. p. 74.

family if the man is himself devoid of good conduct? Are not insects found in fragrant flowers?' Jātūkarnya says 'one should not honour even with a word (much less with food &c.) in rites for gods and Manes bad brāhmaṇas void of good conduct, even though they be endowed with learning and be born in a good family.' This insistence on worth was due to the conception that pitrs assuming an aerial form enter brāhmaṇas at the time of śrāddha. Vide Brahmāṇḍapurāṇa (Upodghātapāda 11. 49).

These requirements of learning, character and good conduct would naturally make it incumbent on the performer of a śrāddha to inquire into the antecedents, qualities and defects of the brāhmaṇas to be invited. Manu and others lay down several rules about the testing of the brāhmaṇas to be invited. Manu III. 149, Viṣṇu Dh.⁸⁷⁴ S. 82.1-2. provide 'at an offering to the gods let a man not enquire into (the qualities of) a brāhmaṇa (when he wants to invite), but at a śrāddha offering to the Manes close inquiry (into qualities) is declared to be proper and just.' Manu III. 130 says that even if a brāhmaṇa be master of the Veda, one should enquire far (into his ancestry). The Vāyupurāṇa⁸⁷⁵ appears to provide that inquiry into (the qualifications of) brāhmaṇas should not be always undertaken when gifts are to be made, but enquiry is declared (necessary) in the case of rites for gods and Manes. The Anuśāsanaparva provides⁸⁷⁶ that in rites meant for gods a kṣatriya knowing the rules about gifts should not (closely) inquire into the qualifications of brāhmaṇas, but in rites for the gods and Manes such inquiry is quite proper. Vṛddha-Manu and the Matsya-purāṇa⁸⁷⁷ lay down that a brāhmaṇa's character is to be inquired into at the place where he resides for a long time, his purity by his acts and transactions with other people, his intelligence by discussion with him: with these three one should inquire whether the brāhmaṇa (to be invited) is a worthy person.

874. दैवे कर्मणि ब्राह्मणं न परीक्षेत । प्रयत्नात्पिड्ये परीक्षेत । विष्णुध. सू. 82. 1-2.

875. न ब्राह्मणान्परीक्षेत सदा देये तु मानवः । दैवे कर्मणि पिड्ये च श्रूयते वै परीक्षणम् । वायु 83. 51 q. by हेमाद्रि p. 511 (reads दैवे तु).

876. ब्राह्मणाञ्च परीक्षेत क्षत्रियो दानधर्मवित् । दैवे कर्मणि पिड्ये तु न्याय्यमाहुः परीक्षणम् ॥ अनुशासन 90. 2 q. by हेमाद्रि p. 511.

877. परीक्षाप्रकारस्तु वृद्धमनुमत्स्यपुराणयोर्दीर्घतः । शीलं संवसनाज्ज्ञेयं शौचं सद्गुणैश्च परीक्षितम् । पञ्चा संकथनाज्ज्ञेया त्रिभिः पात्रं परीक्षयते । हेमाद्रि p. 513, आ. प्र. p. 102.



The Nṛsimhapurāṇa ⁸⁷⁸ forbids close inquiry into the character and learning of one who comes by chance as a guest at the time of śrāddha. That inquiry was allowed as to brāhmaṇas who were invited and not as to those who came by chance uninvited as *atithis*. There are no doubt certain passages particularly in the Purāṇas where scrutiny into a brāhmaṇa's qualifications is condemned. For example, the Skandapurāṇa quoted by Aparārka (p. 455) and Kalpataru (on śr. p. 102) states 'The Vedic revelation is that śrāddha is to be offered (to a brāhmaṇa) after inquiry (into his learning and character), but straightforward action is better than scrutiny. When one offers śrāddha straightforwardly without inquiry his pitṛs are gratified and also gods'. The Bhaviṣyapurāṇa (q. by Bālabhaṭṭi) states 'it is my view also that one should not test (the qualifications of) brāhmaṇas; one should only consider their caste and not their virtues'. Such passages are explained away as referring to a śrāddha at sacred places or as applicable to gifts or to *atithis* (vide Hemādri on śrāddha p. 513, and Bālabhaṭṭi on ācāra p. 494) ^{878a}.

Brāhmaṇas were declared to be *apāṅkteya* ⁸⁷⁹ (not fit to sit in the row of brāhmaṇa diners or as defiling a row of diners at śrāddha) on various grounds, such as bodily and mental defects and diseases, pursuit of certain avocations, moral lapses, being guilty of crimes, being followers of unorthodox systems, being inhabitants of certain countries. A distinction has to be made between brāhmaṇas who should not be invited and brāhmaṇas that are *apāṅkteya* or *pañktidūṣaka*. For example, one should not ordinarily invite a friend or a sagotra brāhmaṇa even

878. न परीक्षेत चारित्र्यं न विद्यां न कुलं तथा । न शीलं न च देशादीनतिथेरागतस्य हि ॥ मन्येत विष्णुमेवैनं साक्षाज्जारायणं हरिम् । अतिथिं समनुप्राप्तं विचिकित्सेन्न कर्हिचित् ॥ वृत्तिहपुराण q by आ. प्र p 102; अविज्ञातं द्विजं श्राद्धे न परीक्षेत पण्डितः । सिद्धा हि विप्ररूपेण चरन्ति पृथिवीमिमाम् । तस्मादतिथिमायान्तमभिगच्छेत्कृताञ्जलिः ॥ ब्रह्माण्ड, उपोद्घातपाद, 15. 7.

878 a. इत्यादीनि विप्रपरीक्षानिषेधकानि तानि श्राद्धेतरदानपराणि नित्यश्राद्धपराणि वा तीर्थश्राद्धपराणि अतिथिपूजापराणि वा । बालम्भट्टी on आचार, p. 494.

879. मेधातिथि on मनु III. 167 explains अपाङ्केय (derived from पङ्क्ति) as follows: अपाङ्केयाः पङ्क्तिः नार्हन्ति । भवार्थे ढक् कर्तव्यः । अनर्हत्वमेव पङ्क्त्यवभवनमप्यतिथेः । अन्यैर्जाह्नैः सह भोजनं नार्हन्ति । अत एव पङ्क्तिदूषका उच्यन्ते । तैः सहोपविष्टा अपि दूषिता भवन्ति । पा. IV.1.20 is स्त्रीभ्यो ढक्.



though learned, but these are not apāṅkteya. The Ap.⁸⁸⁰ Dh. S. states that one suffering from white leprosy, a bald man, the violator of another man's bed, the son of a brāhmaṇa who was a soldier by profession, the son of (brāhmaṇa who had become like) a śūdra from a brāhmaṇa woman—these defile the company if they are invited at a śrāddha repast. Vas. Dh. S. XI. 19 also gives a brief list viz. 'one should avoid naked (ascetics), those suffering from white leprosy, impotent men, blind men, those who have black teeth, those afflicted with black leprosy and those who have deformed nails.' Very long lists of persons unfit to be invited at a śrāddha are given by Gaut. XV. 16-19, Manu III. 150-166, Yāj. I. 222-224, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 82. 3-29, Atri (verses 345-359 and 385-388), Bṛhad-Yama III. 34-38, Bṛhat-Parāśara pp. 149-150, Vṛddha-Gautama pp. 580-581, the Vāyu-purāṇa 83.61-70, Anuśāsana-parva 90.6-11, Matsyapurāṇa 16.14-17, Kūrma (II. 21. 23-47), Skanda VII. 1.205.58-72, VI. 217.11-20, Varāhapurāṇa 14.4-6, Brahma-purāṇa 220. 127-135, Brahmāṇḍapurāṇa (Upodghāta 15.39-44 and 19.30-41), Mārkaṇḍeya 28.26-30, Viṣṇupurāṇa (III. 15.5-8), Nārada-purāṇa (pūrvārdha 28.11-18), Saurapurāṇa (19.7-9) and several other works. The list in the Manusmṛti is one of the longest and that is set out here. One should not invite a brāhmaṇa that is (1) a thief, (2) an outcaste, (3) an impotent man, (4) an atheist, (5) one who wears his hair in braids (a student yet learning Veda); (6) one who does not study the Veda, (7) one who is afflicted with a skin disease, (8) a gambler, (9) one officiating as a priest for a multitude of men, (10) a physician, (11) temple priest (who worships images for money), (12) vendor of meat, (13) one who makes his livelihood as shopkeeper, (14 and 15) a paid servant of a village or of a

880. श्वित्रि शिपिविष्टः परतल्पगम्यायुधीयपुत्रः शूद्रोत्पन्नो ब्राह्मण्यामित्येते श्राद्धे शुद्धानाः पङ्क्तिदूषका भवन्ति। आप. ध. सू. II. 7.17.21. As the son of a śūdra male

from a brāhmaṇa woman was treated as a cāṇḍāla in many smṛtis and therefore could not possibly have been intended to be invited at a śrāddha. Kapardin explained the words शूद्रो...ह्मण्याम् as meaning 'born of a brāhmaṇa male that had become practically a śūdra by first marrying a śūdra woman, then a brāhmaṇa woman and procreating a son on that śūdra wife and then on the brāhmaṇa wife.' This latter (as the son of a शूद्रसम ब्राह्मण) is 'अपाङ्केय'; शूद्रोत्पन्नो ब्राह्मण्यां असमवर्णदारपरिग्रहे ब्राह्मण्यां पुत्र-

समुत्पाद्य शूद्रायामुत्पादितपुत्र इति कपर्दी, कल्पतरु (श्रा. p. 90.), हरदत्त follows कपर्दी. हेमाद्रि (श्रा. p. 496) omits all reference to marrying a śūdra wife first and explains 'यो विशुद्धजातीयायामपि ब्राह्मण्यां शूद्रात् शूद्रसमानाद् ब्राह्मणादुत्पन्नः'.



king, (16) one with deformed nails, (17) one whose teeth are black (naturally), (18) one who opposes his *guru*, (19) one who has forsaken his sacred fire (*śrauta* or *smārta*) without a proper cause, (20) a usurer, (21) one suffering from consumption, (22) one who subsists by tending cattle (though not in distress), (23 and 24) a younger brother who marries or kindles sacred fires before his elder brother, (25) one who neglects the five (daily) sacrifices, (26) an enemy of *brāhmaṇas* or of *Veda*, (27 and 28) an elder brother who marries or kindles sacred fires after his young brother, (29) one who is a member of a guild or corporation, (30) an actor or singer, (31) one who has broken the vow of student-hood by unchastity, (32) one whose (only or first wife) is a *śūdra* female, (33) the son of a remarried woman, (34) a squint-eyed or one-eyed man, (35) one in whose house a paramour of his wife resides, (36) one who teaches for hire, (37) one who is taught by a hired teacher, (38) one whose teacher is a *śūdra*, (39) one who instructs *śūdra* pupils, (40) one whose speech is harsh and untrue, (41) the son of an adulteress, (42) the son of a widow, (43) one who forsakes his mother, father or teacher without (adequate) cause, (44) one who has contracted an alliance with *patitas* either through the *Veda* (i. e. as teacher or pupil) or through marriage, (45) an incendiary, (46) one who undertakes sea-voyages, (47) a bard, (48) an oil-man, (49) a false witness (or forger of documents or counterfeiter of coins), (50) one who has a dispute with his father in a law court, (51) one who induces others to gamble, (52) one who drinks wine, (53) one afflicted with a disease (in punishment for crimes in former lives), (54) one accused of a grave sin, (55) a hypocrite, (56) a vendor of substances used for flavouring food (such as sugar-cane juice or molasses), (57) a manufacturer of bows and arrows, (58) one who is the husband of a woman married before her elder sister, (59) the betrayer of a friend, (60) the keeper of a gambling house, (61) one who learns (the *Veda*) from his own son, (62) an epileptic man, (63) one who has scrofulous swellings of the glands, (64) one afflicted with white leprosy, (65) an informer, (66) a lunatic, (67) a blind man, (68) a caviller of the *Veda*, (69) a trainer of elephants, horses, oxen or camels, (70) one subsisting by the practice of astrology, (71) a bird-fancier, (72) one who gives instructions in the use of weapons, (73) one who diverts watercourses, (74) one engaged in obstructing watercourses, (75) one subsisting by teaching or practising architecture, (76) a messenger, (77) one who plants trees

for money, (78) a breeder of sporting dogs, (79) a falconer, (80) a defiler of a maiden (or who ascribes falsely fault to a maiden), (81) one given to injuring living beings, (82) one who gains his livelihood from śūdras, (83) one who officiates at a sacrifice on behalf of guilds, (84) one who does not follow the ordinary rules of conduct (as welcoming a guest &c.), (85) one who has no energy for religious acts, (86) one who constantly begs for gifts, (87) one who subsists by agriculture (carried on personally), (88) one who suffers from elephantiasis, (89) one who is condemned by good men, (90) a shepherd, (91) a keeper of buffaloes, (92) the husband of a remarried woman, (93) a carrier of dead bodies (for money)⁸⁸¹. Manu III. 167 says that a brāhmaṇa who knows the sacred laws should avoid or shun at both (sacrifices to Gods and to Manes) the worst of brāhmaṇas enumerated above whose conduct is reprehensible and who are unworthy of sitting in a row of brāh-

881. There is some divergence of views among the commentators about the meanings of certain words occurring in Manu III, 150-166. For reasons of space that matter is not discussed here in detail. A few points alone are noted here. निराकृतिः is explained in two ways viz. (i) one who does not perform the daily five Mahāyajñas, (2) one who after learning the Veda forgets it. The evil diseases are said by Devala to be eight 'उन्माद-स्त्वद्वेषो राजयक्ष्मा श्वासो मधुमेहो भगन्दरो महोदरमश्मरीत्यष्टौ पापरोगाः', q. by अपरार्क p. 451, स्मृतिच. (आ.) p. 401. वृषली is explained in various ways by Skandapurāṇa VII. 1. 205. 77-80 as meaning a śūdra woman, as one who abandoning her husband cohabits with another, as a girl who is not married though she has reached the age of puberty, as a prostitute, as one who is sterile, or one all whose children are dead. अग्रेदिधिपतिः :—When a younger sister gets married before her elder sister the former is called अग्रेदिधिपु while the latter is called दिधिपु. देवल says 'जेष्टायां यद्यनूढायां कन्यायामुद्यतेऽनुजा । सा चाग्रेदिधिपु-र्ज्ञेया पूर्वा च दिधिपुर्मता ॥' q. by अपरार्क p. 451, मिता. on या. III. 265. अग्रेदिधिपु-पति is taken by मेधातिथि as equal to two words viz. अग्रेदिधिपु and दिधिपुपति. The latter means, according to the Amarakośa, the husband of a remarried woman, while the former means 'one who is the first husband of a remarried woman' पुनर्भूदिधिपुर्नूढा द्विस्तस्या दिधिपुः पतिः । स तु द्विजोऽग्रेदिधिपुः सैव यस्य कुटुम्बिनी ॥ अमरकोश q. by हरदत्त on गौ. 15. 15. मनु. III 173 explains दिधिपुपति as one who lasciviously dallies with the widow of his deceased brother, though she be appointed (to bear a son by him) according to the sacred law. The स्मृति is said that the brother appointed should cohabit as an act of duty and not through passion for the widow. Hemādri p. 485 gives another meaning of अग्रेदिधिपु 'जीवतस्तावद् भ्रातुर्भार्यायामनुरक्तोऽग्रेदिधिपुः'. वासिष्ठ I. 18 includes both अग्रेदिधिपु and दिधिपुपति among those who are called एनास्तिः. Even the तै. ब्रा. III. 2.8. 12 mentions अग्रेदिधिपु as a sinner and आप. धा. (II. 5. 12. 22) mentions both,



manas at a śrāddha repast. Manu III. 170-182 indulge in pointing out how feeding such unworthy brāhmaṇas results in the loss of the gratification of pitrs and state that the food eaten by such unworthy persons becomes or is to be deemed as equal to foul things. The Kūrmapurāṇa⁸⁸² forbids inviting at śrāddhas Bauddha ascetics, Nirgranthas (devotees who have withdrawn from the world and wander about naked or as beggars), those that follow the Pañcarātra and Pāsupata doctrines, those that are kāpālikas (devotees of Śiva of the left hand order) and other similar heretical people. The Viṣṇupurāṇa (III. 18. 70 ff) narrates how a king after a bath in a holy place talked with a heretic and had to pass in consequence through the bodies of a dog, a jackal, wolf, vulture, a crow, a crane and peacock and ultimately became freed from the taint by a bath at the avabhṛtha in an Aśvamedha sacrifice. The same Purāṇa provides (III. 18. 97) that one should avoid talking with or touching heretics, particularly at the time of a religious rite or when one has consecrated for a solemn sacrifice. The Vāyupurāṇa⁸⁸³ provides that people who are 'nagna' should not be allowed to see a śrāddha and then defines 'nagna' people as follows: 'the three Vedas are declared to be a protective covering for all beings and therefore those who foolishly abandon the Vedas are called 'nagna'; those who vainly keep matted hair, those who shave their heads for no purpose, those who are *nagna* (naked) without any cause, those who engage in certain observances and mutter certain words aimlessly are called *nagn-nādi*'. Just as certain countries were declared unfit for the performance of śrāddhas (vide note 853 above), so certain brāhmaṇas hailing from certain countries were declared in some

882. बुद्धश्रावकनिर्ग्रन्थाः पञ्चरात्रविदो जनाः । कापालिकाः पाशुपताः पाषण्डा ये च बद्धिधाः ॥ कूर्म (उत्तरार्ध) 21. 32 q. by हेमाद्रि p. 476 and 365; बुद्धश्रावकनिर्ग्रन्थ-शाक्ताजीवककापिलान् । ये धर्माननुवर्तन्ते ते वै नग्नादयो जनाः ॥ ब्रह्माण्डपुराण III. 14.38-39 q. by हेमाद्रि p. 520. The same verse occurs in a corrupt form in वायु 78.30-31.

883. सर्वेषामेव भूतानां त्रयी संवरणं स्मृतम् । परित्यजति यो मोहान्ते वै नग्नादयो जनाः ॥...वृथा जटी वृथा मुण्डी वृथा नग्नश्च यो द्विजः । वृथा व्रती वृथा जापी ते वै नग्नादयो जनाः ॥ वायुपुराण 78.26 and 31. q. by हेमाद्रि (श्रा.) p. 520 (the first verse from ब्रह्माण्डपुराण). The स्मृतिच. (श्रा.) p. 411 reads वर्णानां for भूतानां and ascribes that verse to the ब्रह्माण्डपुराण. ब्रह्माण्ड (उपोद्घातपाद 14.35-41) has these verses. अपराक. 473 ascribes verse सर्वेषामेव भूतानां to ब्रह्माण्डपुराण, which is found in उपोद्घातपाद 14.35.

works as not fit to be invited at a śrāddha.⁸⁸⁴ For example, the Matsyapurāṇa states that brāhmaṇas that are ungrateful, that are atheists, that stay in *Mleccha* countries or the countries of Trisāṅku, Karavīra, Āndhra, Cina, Dravida and Koṅkaṇa should be carefully avoided at the time of śrāddha. Hemādri (on śrāddha p. 505) quotes from the Saurapurāṇa the following: 'Brāhmaṇas hailing from the countries of Aṅga, Vāṅga, Kalinga, Saurāstra, (Kāthiawar), Gurjara, Ābhira, Koṅkaṇa, Dravida, Dakṣiṇāpatha, Avanti and Magadha should be avoided at śrāddhas. It will be noticed that putting the above two passages together, brāhmaṇas from half of modern India would have been ineligible for being invited at śrāddhas if these passages were literally followed. This was probably a counsel of perfection prompted by the false pride and prejudices of the authors of those works. The Śrāddhāviveka of Rudradhara (pp. 39-41) contains one of the longest lists of persons unfit to be invited at a śrāddha.

The following reason is advanced by the Varāhapurāṇa⁸⁸⁵ and others for honouring a guest who comes by chance at the time when a śrāddha rite is in progress: "Yogins wander over the earth assuming different forms that prevent recognition, but doing good to people; therefore a wise man should honour a guest who arrives at the time of the performance of a śrāddha". The Bhaviṣya-purāṇa⁸⁸⁶ similarly says that an *atithi* (guest) at a śrāddha is one who comes when least thought of and not one who had arrived before the śrāddha rite started. The Mārkaṇḍeya (26. 30) provides that one should not ask such an *atithi* about his *gotra* or *carāṇa* or his Vedic study nor should one consider whether he has a fine appearance. Hemādri (on śrāddha pp. 430-433) quotes verses from the Śivadharmottara,

884. कृतघ्नान्नास्तिकास्तद्वन्मलेच्छदेशनिवासिनः । त्रिशङ्कुर्वरवद्राववीतद्रविडकोङ्कणान्
(त्रिशङ्कुकरवीरान्धचीनद्रविड०?) । वर्जयेद्विद्विनः सर्वान् आद्रुकाले विशेषतः । मत्स्य 16.
16-17 q. by हेमाद्रि (आ.) p. 505, कल्पतरु (आ.) p. 94).

885. योगिनो विविधै रूपैर्नराणामुपकारिणः । भ्रमन्ति पृथिवीमेतामविज्ञातस्वरूपिणः ॥
तस्मादभ्यर्चयेत् प्राप्तं आद्रुकालेऽतिथिं बुधः । आद्रुक्रियाफलं हन्ति द्विजेन्द्रापूजितो हरिः ॥
वराह 14. 18-19, विष्णुपुराण 15. 23-4; compare वायुपुराण 79. 7-8 (सिद्धा हि विप्र-
रूपेण चरन्ति पृथिवीमिमाम् । तस्मादतिथिमायान्तमभिगच्छेत् कृताञ्जलिः).

886. अचिन्त्योऽभ्यागतो यस्मात्तस्मादतिथिरुच्यते ॥ अतिथिं तं विजानीयान्न पुनर्भयं
मागतः ॥ भविष्य. I. 184. 9-10 q. by हेमाद्रि p. 427; न पृच्छेद्गोत्रचरणं स्वाध्यायं नपि
पण्डितः । शोभनाशोभनाकारं तं मन्येत प्रजापतिम् ॥ अनित्यं हि स्थितो यस्मात्तस्मादतिथि-
रुच्यते । मार्कण्डेय 26. 30-31.

Viṣṇudharmottara and Vāyu (71.74-75) Purāṇas that gods, *siddhas* and yogins wander over the earth in the form of brāhmaṇa *atithis* in order to favour people and to see how śrāddhas are being performed. About the definition of an *atithi* and the necessity and mode of honouring a guest in general, vide H. of Dh. vol. II. pp. 749-756.

Hemādri (Śrāddhakāṇḍa, pp. 380-385) holds an interesting discussion as to whether a performer of śrāddha belonging to one recension of a Veda must restrict himself to inviting brāhmaṇas that are students of the same recension of the Veda or whether he can invite any brāhmaṇa that may have studied any of the three Vedas. Some people relying on a maxim ('as in the case of a bride so in the case of an offering') invite only brāhmaṇas of their own śākhā possessed of the qualifications above set forth. Hemādri replies that this is a wrong notion, relies on Āp. Dh. S. II. 6. 15. 9 'one should feed⁸⁸⁷ in all (religious) acts brāhmaṇas that are pure (in their conduct) and that have studied the Veda' and asserts that no smṛti, Itihāsa, Purāṇa, Gṛhyasūtra nor Kalpasūtra contains the restriction of inviting only brāhmaṇas of the performer's own śākhā. He further says that in such texts as 'tripācīketas-trimadhuḥ' (quoted in note 862a above) the rule laid down is to invite brāhmaṇas that have studied different śākhās and Vedas. He rejects the idea about any restriction as to selecting a bridegroom of the same śākhā as the bride's father and remarks that if some people are not prepared to give their daughters in marriage to young men belonging to other śākhās, that is due to ignorance about the families and is also due to pride and vanity. He winds up by saying that in Āryāvarta countries it is found on all sides that marriage connections are entered into with persons studying different śākhās but living in the same district, (such connections) not being condemned, while persons who study the same śākhā of the Veda but do not know each other do not enter into marital connections.⁸⁸⁸ As a contrast to this commonsense view it should be

887. शुचीन् मन्त्रवतः सर्वकृत्येषु भोजयेत् । आप. ध. सू. II. 6. 15. 9, on which हरदत्त explains 'मन्त्रवतः अधीतवेदान् । सर्वकृत्येषु भौतेषु गार्होषु स्मार्तेषु च कर्मेषु वैवेष्टिषु पित्र्येषु मानुषेषु च भोजयेत् ।'.

888. अत्र केचिद्यथा कन्या तथा हविरिति कन्यासाधर्म्येण हविषां स्वशाखीयमतिपाद्यत्वं मन्यमानाः स्वशाखीयमेव श्रोत्रियत्वादिगुणविशिष्टं श्राद्धे नियोजयन्ति । तदसत् ।

noted that the author of the Bālabhāṭṭi recommends that 'Mahārāṣṭra brāhmaṇas should not invite brāhmaṇas of other castes (of brāhmaṇas) and particularly the Kōṅkanastha brāhmaṇas should be avoided and it goes so far as to say that a person belonging to one's own caste not possessed of good qualities and of a blemished character (provided he is not guilty of mahāpātakas or the like) should be preferred to one belonging to another sub-caste even if endowed with good qualities.

The Vas. Dh. S. provides ⁸⁸⁹ that the performer should invite ascetics, house-holders, well conducted men, who are not very old &c. The Kūrmapurāṇa states ⁸⁹⁰ 'that man whose offer-

(Continued from the last page)

पुराणगृह्यकल्पसूत्रेषु कचिदपि स्वशास्त्रीयनियमाश्रवणात् । प्रत्युत स्मृत्यादिषु त्रिणाचिकेत-
स्त्रिमधुस्त्रिसुपर्णो ज्येष्ठसामग इत्यादिभिर्नानाशास्त्रीयानां नानावेदाध्यायिनामेव विधिदर्शनाच्च
...किं च कन्यायामेव तावदेकशाखाध्यायिनियमः कुतोऽवगतो यद्बलेन हविष्यपि साध्यते । ...
आर्यावर्तेषु च समानदेशवासिनां नानाशाखाध्यायिनामप्युपलभ्यन्ते एव परस्परमनवगीयमानाः
सर्वतो विवाहसम्बन्धाः । अविज्ञातपरस्पराणामेकशाखाध्यायिनामपि नोपलभ्यन्ते । ...अतो न
कन्यादाने नापि हविर्दाने स्वशास्त्रीयद्विजनियम इति सिद्धम् । हेमाद्रि (श्राद्ध) pp. 380-381,
The words यथा कन्या तथा हविः occur in a verse of गर्ग 'नैकगोत्रे हविर्दद्याद्यथा
कन्या तथा हविः । अभावे ह्यन्यगोत्राणामेकगोत्रास्तु भोजयेत् ।' q. by आ. प्र. p. 75. हेमाद्रि
p. 450 reads it as नैक...दद्यात्समानप्रवरे तथा । न चाज्ञातकुले दद्याद्यथा कन्या तथा
हविः । ॥ ; आ. क. ल. p. 39 quotes this verse and the half verse अभावे...न भोजयेत्
also. The निर्णयसिन्धु III, p. 397 follows हेमाद्रि and relies on मनु III. 145-146.
एवमपि महाराष्ट्रैर्विजातीया न ग्राह्यास्तत्रापि कोङ्कणस्थादयः सर्वथा न ग्राह्या इति श्राद्धदीप-
कालिकादिषु ग्रामाणिकनिबन्धेष्विति सर्वशिष्टसंमतम् । ...वर्ज्याश्च द्विविधाः दोषवन्तः सजा-
तीयाः गुणवन्तोऽपि विजातीयाः सुतरां दोषवन्तः । तत्र सजातीयेषु अनिषिद्धलाभेऽभिज्ञस्तत्वा-
दिबलवद्दोषरहितो दुष्टोऽपि ग्राह्यः । विजातीयेस्तु गुणवानपि तत्त्वादेव त्याज्यः किमुत दोषवान् । ...
केवलां चिन्तयेज्जातिं... । कन्यादानादिसम्बन्धयोग्यां जातिं यथा कन्या तथा हविरित्युक्तेस्तेन
तेपि सर्वथा हेया एवेति दिक् । बालम्भटी on आचार p. 497.

889. पूर्वेषु ब्राह्मणान् संनिपात्य यतीन् गृहस्थान्साधून्वा परिणतवयसोऽविकर्मस्थाञ्
श्रोत्रियान् शिष्यान्नन्तेवासिनः । वसिष्ठ XI.17, q. by हेमाद्रि p. 379 who explains
'यतयः प्रव्रजिताः तदसम्भवे गृहस्थान्'. The टोडरानन्द (श्राद्धसौख्य folio 37b)
arranges the persons to be invited at a श्राद्ध in the following order: तदयं
संक्षेपः । आदौ त्रिदण्डयतिस्तदलाभे वानप्रस्थस्तदलाभे ब्रह्मचारी तदलाभे गृहस्थस्तत्रापि
पङ्क्तिपावनादय उत्कृष्टास्तदलाभे यो ह्यसम्बद्धः सत्कर्मा च तदलाभे तत्सम्बद्धा अपि तदलाभे
सदाचारः शिष्योऽपि ।

890. प्रकृतेर्गुणतत्त्वज्ञो यस्याश्नाति यतिर्हविः । फलं वेदान्तवित्तस्य (वेदविदां तस्य)
सहस्रादतिरिच्यते ॥ तस्माद्यत्नेन योगीन्द्रमीश्वरज्ञानतत्परम् । भोजयेद्भक्ष्यकव्येषु अलाभ-
तरान्निजान् । कूर्म (उत्तरार्ध 21. 17-18) q. by आ. प्र. p. 73, हेमाद्रि p. 413 (2nd
verse) and p. 417 (first verse).



ing (of food) is eaten by a *yati* that knows the truth about *prakṛti* (primordial matter) and the *guṇas* (*sattva*, *rajas* and *tamas*) reaps the reward (merit) of feeding a thousand (other *brāhmaṇas*). Therefore one should feed in offerings to gods and manes an excellent *yogin* who is intent on true knowledge of God and others only if such a one is not available.' Similar verses about ascetics and yogins occur in *Varāhapurāṇa* 14. 50, *Skanda* (VI. 217. 7 ff) and *Vāyupurāṇa*⁸⁹¹ chap. 71. 65-73, chap. 76. 28 &c. *Brhaspati* provides⁸⁹² a special rule that, if a person cannot afford to feed at a *śrāddha* more than one *brāhmaṇa*, then he should feed one who has studied the *Sāmaveda*, since in him all the three viz. *Rks*, the *Yajus* and *Sāmans* co-exist, that the father is pleased by *Rks* (i. e. by the feeding of a *brāhmaṇa* who has studied the *Rgveda*), the grand-father by *Yajus*, the great-grand-father by a *Sāman* and a *chandoga* (a chanter of the whole of *Sāmaveda*) is superior. A verse of *Śātātapa* is⁸⁹³ quoted to the effect that if a student of the *Atharvaveda* is fed in a rite for the gods or manes, that yields endless and inexhaustible rewards.

Some of the *smṛtis* were very strict in laying down the qualifications of *brāhmaṇas* to be invited at a *śrāddha*. *Auśānasa* (chap. 4) asserts: 'that *brāhmaṇa*⁸⁹⁴ is called *duṣbrāhmaṇa* and should never be invited at a *śrāddha* in whose family *Veda* study and *Vedī* (i. e. the performance of *Śrauta* sacrifices) have been stopped for three generations'. The same

891. गृहस्थानां सहस्रेण वानप्रस्थशतेन च । ब्रह्मचारिसहस्रेण योगी त्वेको विशिष्यते ॥ वायुपुराण 71.69 q. by हेमाद्रि p. 413, आ. प्र. p. 73; it occurs also in ब्रह्माण्ड (उपोद्घातपाद) 9.70. यतिस्तु सर्वविप्राणां सर्वेषामग्रभुग्भवेत् । इतिहासपञ्चमान् वेदान् यः पठेत् द्विजोत्तमः ॥ अनन्तरं यतेः सोऽयं नियोक्तव्यो विजानता । त्रिवेदोऽनन्तरस्तस्माद् द्विवेदस्तदनन्तरः । एकवेदस्ततः पश्चाद्व्यायाध्यायी ततः परम् । वायुपुराण 79. 53-55 q. by हेमाद्रि (p. 419). The printed वायु reads सर्वेषामग्न्य उत्सवे; almost the same verses occur in ब्रह्माण्ड (उपोद्घातपाद 15.24-26).

892. यद्येकं भोजयेच्छ्राद्धे छन्दोगं तत्र भोजयेत् । ऋचो यजूंषि सामानि त्रयं तत्र तु विद्यते ॥ ऋचा तु तृप्यति पिता यजुषा तु पितामहः । पितुः पितामहः साम्ना छन्दोगो ह्यधिकस्ततः ॥ बृहस्पति q. by हेमाद्रि p. 385, स्मृतिश्रु. p. 765, कल्पतरु on आश्व. p. 58.

893. भोजयेद्यद्यथर्वणं दैवे पैत्र्ये च कर्मणि । अनन्तमक्षयं चैव फलं तस्येति वै श्रुतिः ॥ शातातप q. by हेमाद्रि p. 385, स्मृतिश्रु. p. 765, कल्पतरु (आ.) p. 59.

894. यस्य वेदश्च वेदी च विच्छिद्येते त्रिपुरुषम् । स वै दुर्बाह्मणो ज्ञेयः आश्विनो न कदाचन ॥ औशनसस्मृति (Jiv. I. p. 524), बौ. गृ. परिभाषासूत्र I. 10. 6 (which reads नाम यश्चैव वृषलीपतिः); q. by अपरार्क p. 286 and p. 449 and हेमाद्रि p. 385, as यम's. Vide त्रिकाण्डमण्डन I. 134-135 for similar definitions.

author⁸⁹⁵ further says that six persons are merely *brahma-bandhus* (i. e. *brāhmaṇas* by birth or caste alone) viz. one who is hired by a *śūdra* or a king as a servant, who has a *śūdra* woman as his wife, who is a village priest and he who subsists by killing (animals) or by catching them. So early as the *Mahābhāṣya*⁸⁹⁶ it was stated that austerities (leading a life of restraint and strict observances), Vedic learning and birth (from *brāhmaṇa* parents) are the causes of (a man being called) a *brāhmaṇa* and that he who is devoid of the first two is a mere *brāhmaṇa* by caste (but not a real *brāhmaṇa*). It is curious to note that Yama stated that, if *brāhmaṇas* that do not declare (or point out) the auspicious *nakṣatra* or *tithi* or day or *muhūrta* and other auspicious matters, eat (*śrāddha*) food it becomes inexhaustible.

But the requisite qualifications were so exacting that it must have been found almost impossible to secure for a *śrāddha* *brāhmaṇas* altogether free from any of the blemishes set out above from Manu. Gautama (15. 15-18) contains long lists⁸⁹⁷ of over 50 kinds of *brāhmaṇas* that were not to be invited at a *śrāddha* dinner or at a sacrifice for gods, but Gaut. adds that according to some only those beginning with '*durvāla*' (Gaut. in 15. 18) were to be shunned at a *śrāddha* (but could be invited at a sacrifice for the gods). The persons so to be shunned, according to some who flourished before Gautama (i. e. at least before 600 B. C.) are: a bald man, a man who has deformed nails or has black teeth (naturally), one suffering from white

895. शूद्रप्रेष्यो भृतो राज्ञा वृषली ग्रामयाजकः । वधवन्धोपजीवी च षडेते ब्रह्मबन्धवः ॥ औशनस (Jiv. I.) p. 525, q. by अपरार्क p. 449. ब्रह्मबन्धु is a contemptuous term for one who is a ब्राह्मण in name only (and has not studied the Veda).

896. तपः श्रुतं च योनिश्चेत्येतद् ब्राह्मणकारकम् । तपःश्रुताभ्यां यो हीनो जातिब्राह्मण एव सः ॥ महाभाष्य on पाणिनि II. 2.6 (ed. by Kielhorn, vol. I. p. 411). This appears to be a quotation. अनुशासनपर्व 121. 7 is तपः...ब्राह्मण्यकारणम् । त्रिभिर्गुणैः समुदितो ततो भवति वै द्विजः ॥ In the महाभाष्य on पा. IV. 1. 44, vol. II. p. 220 ब्राह्मणाग्र्य is defined as त्रीणि यस्यावदातानि विद्या योनिश्च कर्म च । एतच्छिवं विजानीहि ब्राह्मणाग्र्यस्य लक्षणम् ॥ ; 'नक्षत्रतिथिपुण्याहान् मुहूर्तान्मङ्गलानि च । न निर्दिशन्ति ये विप्रस्तैर्भुक्तं ह्यक्षयं भवेत् ॥' यम q. by हेमाद्रि (आ. p. 390), कल्पतरु (आ. p. 62). नियमेषु तपःशब्दः । आप. ध. सू. I. 2. 5. 1. हेमाद्रि p. 347 quotes a similar verse from बौधायन.

897. कुण्डाशि-सोमविक्रयगारदाहि-गरदावकीर्णि-गणप्रेष्यागम्यागामि-हिंस-परिवित्ति-परिवेष्टु पर्याहित-पर्याधातृ-त्यक्तात्म-दुर्बाल-कुनखि-श्यावदन्त-श्वित्रि-पौनर्भव-कितवाजप-प्रेष्य-प्रातिरूपिक-शूद्रापति-निराकृति-किलासि-कुसीदि-वाणिक-शिल्पोपजीवि-ज्यावादि-चूत्य-गीतशीलान् ।... दुर्बालादीन् श्राद्ध एवैकै । अकृताज्ञश्राद्धे चैवम् । गौ. 15. 18, 31-32. Words joined by *sandhi* rules have not been separated by a hyphen.

leprosy, the son of a re-married woman, a gambler, one who neglects *japa* (the recitation of Vedic mantras), a servant of the king, one who uses false weights and measures, one whose (only) wife is a śūdra female, one who does not perform the daily five sacrifices, one who suffers from a virulent skin disease, a usurer, one who lives by trade or by handicrafts, one who makes his living by (manufacturing) bows (and arrows) or by playing on musical instruments or by keeping time (when another is singing), or by dancing or singing. Vas. quotes a verse ⁸⁹⁸ as follows: If a brāhmaṇa knowing the Vedas is afflicted with physical defects which (ordinarily) exclude a person from a row of diners, Yama declares that he is irreproachable and that he does sanctify the row of diners. But it must be said that even in modern times emphasis is laid on inviting learned and well-conducted brāhmaṇas for śrāddha. The idea (expressed by Manu III. 189 and the Padmapurāṇa) persists that the *pitṛs* enter into and hover round the invited brāhmaṇas and that the latter are to be looked upon as representing the *pitṛs*.⁸⁹⁹ The Garuḍapurāṇa states that Yama allows the departed souls and the *pitṛs* to visit the world of men at the time of śrāddha from the nether regions.

The Viṣṇu Dh. S. (79. 19-21) prescribes that the performer should avoid wrath, should not shed tears and should not do things in a hurry. The Varāhapurāṇa ⁹⁰⁰ provides that the performer should not employ twigs for brushing the teeth (but should rinse his mouth twelve times with water), should remain chaste and pure. Āp. Dh. S. prescribes ⁹⁰¹ that the performer should not eat food from the commencement (from the time he goes out to invite) up to the end of the śrāddha rite. The

898. अथाप्युदाहरन्ति। अथ चेन्मन्त्रविद्युक्तः शरीरैः पाङ्क्तिदूषणैः। अदुष्यं तं यमः
ब्राह्म पाङ्क्तिपावन एव सः ॥ वसिष्ठधर्मसूत्र XI. 20, q. by मेधातिथि on मनु III. 168. The
verse is also अत्रि 350-51 and लघुशङ्ख 22.

899. निमन्त्रितांश्च पितर उपतिष्ठन्ति तान् द्विजान्। वायुभूता निगच्छन्ति तथासीनानु-
पासते ॥ पद्मपुराण (सृष्टिखण्ड 9. 85-86). Vide note 759 above. श्राद्धकाले यमः
प्रेतान् पितृंश्चापि यमालयात्। विसर्जयति मानुष्ये निरयस्थांश्च काश्यप ॥ गरुडपुराण, प्रलेखण्ड
chap. X. 28-29.

900. वराहपुराणे। दन्तकाष्ठं च विसृजेद् ब्रह्मचारी शुचिर्भवेत्। q. by
(श्रा. p. 104), श्रा. प्र. p. 112.

901. आरब्धे चाभोजनमा समापनात्। आप. ध. सू. II. 7.17.24.

Kūrma (uttarārdha 22. 8) states that if a person first invites a brāhmaṇa and then foolishly invites another (passing over the first) then he becomes a greater sinner (than the brāhmaṇa who after accepting one invitation promises to dine at another śrāddha) and is born as a worm in human faeces. The Bhaviṣyapurāṇa ⁹⁰² provides that honouring gods, pitṛs and men and feeding (brāhmaṇas) should not be done without wearing an upper garment; otherwise the rite will bear no fruit.

About the number of brāhmaṇas to be invited at a śrāddha there were several options and several views. The Āsv. Gr. S. states ⁹⁰³ that at the Pārvaṇa—śrāddha (performed on a parvan day i. e. on Amāvāsyā), the Ābhyudayika śrāddha, the Ekod-diṣṭa or Kāmya, the larger the number of brāhmaṇas the greater is the reward, that in no case should a person invite only one brāhmaṇa at a śrāddha meant for all pitṛs or he may optionally invite only one brāhmaṇa except at the first śrāddha, that he may invite one, two or three brāhmaṇas for each of the three paternal ancestors. The Śān. Gr. (IV. 1.2) and Kauṣītaki Gr. III. 14. 1-2 prescribe that one should ⁹⁰⁴ invite an uneven number of brāhmaṇas, at least three, to sit down as (representing the) fathers. Gaut. requires ⁹⁰⁵ 'He shall feed an uneven number

902. पितृदेवमनुष्याणां पूजनं भोजनं तथा । नोत्तरीयं विना कार्यं कृतं स्यात्किंफलं यतः ॥ भविष्य I.185.23.

903. ब्राह्मणान् श्रुतशीलवृत्तसम्पन्नानेकेन वा काले ज्ञापितान् स्नातान् कृतपच्छौचाना-
चान्तानुदङ्खान् पितृवदुपवेश्यैकैकमेकस्य द्वौ द्वौ त्रींस्त्रीन्वा वृद्धौ फलभूयस्त्वं न त्वेवैकं सर्वेषाम् ।
काममनाद्ये । आश्व. गृ. सू. IV. 7. 2-3. पितृवत् is explained in two ways by नारायण
'पितृवदिति वचनं ममैते पितर इति मनसा ध्यायन्नपवेशयेदित्येवमर्थमित्येके ।' अन्ये तु पितृवृद्धं
पितामहाय वृद्धतरं प्रपितामहाय वृद्धतममित्येवं यथावय उपवेशनार्थमिति । The words
नत्वेवैकं सर्वेषाम् in आश्व. are opposed to मनु III. 125. नारायण gives several
meanings of अनाद्ये, viz. आद्य refers to सपिण्डीकरण which is the first of the
śrāddhas for a deceased person in which three ancestors are invoked; आद्य
may refer to पार्वण which is mentioned first by आश्व. गृ. सू.; or अनाद्य means
अभोजन and so refers to आमश्राद्ध or हिरण्यश्राद्ध; or अनाद्ये means दुर्भिक्षे. The
words एकैकमेकस्य... त्रींस्त्रीन्वा contradict आश्व. गृ. II. 5.11-12 'नवावरान् भोजयेत् ।
अयुजो वा.'

904. अथ मासि मासि पितृभ्यो दद्यात् । ब्राह्मणान्वेदविदुषोऽयुग्मान् त्र्यवराध्यान्
पितृवदुपवेश्यायुग्मानि तिलपात्राणि तिलैरवकीर्य ब्राह्मणानां पाणिषु निनयेत् । कौषीतकिगृ.
III. 14.1-2.

905. अमावास्यां पितृभ्यो दद्यात् ।...नवावरान् भोजयेदयुजः । यथोत्साहं
श्रोत्रियान्वाग्रूपवयःशीलसम्पन्नान् ।...एके पितृवत् । गौ. ध. सू. 15.2, 7-9, 11
explains 'एके मन्यन्ते पित्रायनुरूपं दानमिति । यथा पित्रे तरुणाः पितामहाय
प्रपितामहाय वृद्धतरा इति'. गौतम and others simply echo what is said in
ब्रा. II. 4.2.7-8 about offering food to pitṛs on amāvāsyā.



of brāhmaṇas, at least nine or as many as he is able (to feed) and that they should be learned in the Veda and endowed with polished speech, good appearance, mature age and good character'. If five were invited two would be for gods and three for pitrs; if seven, then four for gods and three for pitrs and so on. Vas. XI. 27 (= Manu III. 125 = Baud. Dh. S. II. 8. 29), Yāj. I. 228, Matsya 17. 13-14, Viṣṇupurāṇa III. 15.14 provide that one must feed two brāhmaṇas at the rite for the gods and three for the manes or one only for each of the two purposes and even a rich man should not go in for a large company. The Padma-purāṇa (Sr̥ṣṭi 9.98 and 141) says the same thing. So the number of brāhmaṇas to be invited did not depend so much upon the means of the inviter, but upon the point whether the inviter would be able to honour them all properly and with ease. The idea was that at the same time when śrāddha was to be performed two brāhmaṇas should be fed for gods and three for the pitrs. When only one brāhmaṇa could be invited or was available, Vas. (XI. 30-31) provides that portions of the several foods cooked should be put in a vessel and should be placed at the place where Vaiśvadevika brāhmaṇa would have been seated, then served in a plate and the *viśve devāḥ* be invoked and should be contemplated as present and then the food should be thrown into the fire or offered to a Vedic student (as alms) and then śrāddha rite should be continued. Śāṅkha⁹⁰⁶ 14.10 provides a similar rule. The result is that if a man can afford to invite only one brāhmaṇa or can secure one only, then that brāhmaṇa is meant for the rite in honour of pitrs and the offering for the gods is to be cast into fire. Baud. Dh. S. II. 8.30, Manu III. 126, Vas. XI. 28, Kūrma (uttarārdha 22.28) contain the same verse which emphatically states 'A large company destroys these five *desiderata*, viz. the respectful treatment (of those invited), the securing of a proper place (such as one sloping to the south) and time, purity and (the

906. भोजयेदथवाप्येकं ब्राह्मणं पङ्क्तिपावनम्। दैवे कृत्वा तु नैवेद्यं पश्चाद्ब्रह्मै तु तत्क्षिपेत् ॥ शङ्ख 14.10. The आ. क. ल. p. 40 remarks 'एकब्राह्मणपक्षे विश्वेदेवस्थाने पात्रं प्रकल्प्य दैवे निवेद्य तमेकं विप्रं पित्रादिषु मातामहादिषु च नियुज्यते।' हेमाद्रि (आ. p. 1523) explains Vas. XI.31 as 'अन्नस्य प्रत्येकमेकदेशं सशुद्धं देवतायतने वैश्वदेविकद्विजोपवेशनोचिते स्थाने पात्रमासाद्य तत्र परिवेश्य तत्रत्यासने च विधानं देवानावाह्यं तान् पुरोवर्तिन इवानुध्याय...विश्वेभ्यो देवेभ्य इदमन्नं स्वाहा ओं तन्नादितं पुराणा' &c. The translation in S. B. E. vol. 14 of 'देवतायतने in Vas. XI.31 (at p. 54) is wrong.

choice of) meritorious brāhmaṇas; therefore one should not desire a large company' ⁹⁰⁷. The Kūrmapurāṇa (uttarārḍha 22.32) insists that an *atithi* must be fed at a śrāddha or otherwise the śrāddha is not praiseworthy. Though these ancient works insisted upon the avoidance of large preparations and expenses for śrāddhas in honour of a deceased person, there were other smṛtis that favoured lavish distribution of wealth in śrāddhas. For example, Bṛhaspati lays down: '(An heir) should lay aside half of the wealth that comes to him (by inheritance) for the benefit of the deceased owner and should expend it in the monthly, six-monthly and yearly śrāddhas'. The Dāyabhāga XI. 12 approves ⁹⁰⁸ of this and also quotes Āp. Dh. S. II. 6. 13.3 'On the failure of a sapinda the teacher of the Veda takes the wealth of the deceased, on failure of the teacher, the pupil takes it and having inherited it he should employ it in the performance of works of charity for the benefit of the deceased' (or he himself may enjoy it). These passages show to what lengths the cult of benefit to the soul of the deceased was carried in India by certain writers. More practical authors such as Haradatta did not relish these extreme views. In several purāṇas such as the Vāyu ^{908a} and Viṣṇu there are express directions that when a śrāddha is performed at Gayā, it should be on a profuse scale and no stinginess ⁹⁰⁹ (lit. cheating in money matters) in spending wealth should be shown there; otherwise the performer would not reap the benefit of the performance of śrāddha at that holy place. The Padmapurāṇa appears to inculcate profuse

907. सक्तियां देशकालौ च शौचं ब्राह्मणसम्पदः। पञ्चैतान् विस्तरो हन्ति तस्मान्नेहेत विस्तरम्॥ मनु. III. 126.

908. धनार्जनस्य हि प्रयोजनद्वयं भोगार्थत्वं दानाद्यदृष्टार्थत्वं च, तत्रार्जकस्य तु मृतत्वाद्धने भोग्यत्वाभावेनादृष्टार्थत्वमेव शिष्टम्। अत एव बृहस्पतिः। समुत्पन्नाद्धनाद्धं तदर्थं स्थापयेत्पृथक्। मासषण्मासिके आद्धे वार्षिके च प्रयन्ततः।' दायभाग XI.13. आपस्तम्ब-धर्मसूत्र II. 6.13.3 is: तदभावे आचार्य आचार्याभावे अन्तेवासी हुत्वा तदर्थेषु धर्मकृत्येषु वोपयोजयेत्।'; हरदत्त explains 'वाशब्दात् स्वयं वोपयुञ्जीत'.

908 a. वित्तशाक्यं न कुर्वीत गयाश्राद्धे सदा नरः। वित्तशाक्यं तु कुर्वाणो न तीर्थफल-भागभवेत्॥ वायु 82.19. This is quoted from another Purāṇa by the स्मृतिच. (श्राद्ध) p. 388, which adds 'अतो वित्तानुसारेण शारीरबलानुसारेण च गयायां श्राद्धं कार्यम्'.

909. सतिलं नामगोत्रेण दद्याच्छक्त्या च दक्षिणाम्॥ गोभूहिरण्यवासांसि शयनानि च। दद्याद्यदिष्टं विप्रानामात्मनः पितुरेव च॥ वित्तशाक्येन रहितः पितृभ्यः माहरन्। पद्मपुराण, सृष्टिखण्ड 9. 179-181.



expenditure of wealth in all śrāddhas. The Vāyupurāṇa ⁹¹⁰ (82. 26-28) further says that the brāhmaṇas of Gayā are supermen, that when they are gratified (at a śrāddha) the gods together with pitṛs become gratified, that no question should be raised about the family, the character, the learning and the austerities (of the Gayā brāhmaṇas), that by honouring them a man attains liberation, that a man after honouring the brāhmaṇas should proceed according to his resources and strength to the performance of śrāddha; thereby he secures all heavenly desires and obtains the means of *Mokṣa*. The Skandapurāṇa goes so far as to say that Gayā brāhmaṇas even if they are depraved in their conduct and are backward deserve to be invited at śrāddha and are superior to brāhmaṇas who have mastered the Veda and Vedāṅgas. The Nirṇayasindhu (III. p. 401) notes that, according to the Tristhalīsetu of his grandfather, this provision holds good only in the case of the śrāddha at the Akṣayya Vata in Gayā and nowhere else. In modern times the brāhmaṇas at Gayā used to require the performer of śrāddha while he was in the sacred Phalgu river to make a declaration about his wealth and demanded fees accordingly, thereby carrying to the letter the words of the Vāyupurāṇa. Many people returned from Gayā thoroughly disillusioned and disgusted with the conduct of the brāhmaṇas at Gayā. In the Varāhapurāṇa ⁹¹¹ it is said that two verses were sung by the pitṛs viz. 'Would such a blessed and intelligent man be born in our family who will offer piṇḍas (i. e. śrāddha) to us without being stingy about wealth and who would bestow on brāhmaṇas with reference to us (i. e. for our benefit) jewels, clothes, land, costly vehicles and all other kinds of wealth including water, when he has riches enough?' Here lavish expenditure on all śrāddhas (not only at Gayā-śrāddha) appears to be strongly recommended. Devala pro-

910. अमालुषतया विप्रा (अमालुषा गयाविप्रा?) ब्राह्मणा (ब्रह्मणा?) ये प्रकल्पिताः । तेषु तुष्टेषु सन्तुष्टाः पितृभिः सह देवताः ॥ न विचार्य कुलं शीलं विद्यां च तप एव च । पूजितैस्तेस्तु राजेन्द्र मुक्तिं प्राप्नोति मानवः ॥ ततः प्रवर्तयेच्छ्राद्धं यथाशक्तिबलाबलम् । कामान्स लभते दिव्यान्मोक्षोपायं च विन्दति ॥ वायु 82. 26-28. The first two verses are quoted from another (unnamed) पुराण by स्मृतिच. (आ.) pp. 388-389; 'अथाचारपरिभ्रष्टाः श्राद्धार्हा एव नागराः । बलीवर्दसमानोऽपि ज्ञातीयो यदि लभ्यते । किमन्यैर्बहुभिर्विप्रेर्वेदेदाङ्गपारगैः ।' स्कन्दपुराण VI. 222. 23.

911. अपि धन्यः कुले जायादस्माकं मतिमान् नरः । अकुर्वन् वित्तशाठ्यं पितृभ्यो निर्वपिष्यति ॥ रत्नवस्त्रमहीयानं सर्वं तोयादिकं वसु । विभवे सति विप्रेभ्यः अस्मालुद्दिश्य दास्यति ॥ बराहपुराण 13. 50-51, विष्णुपुराण III. 14. 22-23 (reads यानमहाभोगादिकं वसु) ॥

vides that on the days of *śrauta* sacrifices, of the celebration of charitable acts, of *śrāddhas* on the anniversary of death or on *amāvāsyā*, on lucky occasions (*vrddhi*), on *Aṣṭakā* days, one should never give a frugal or poor dinner to ^{911a} the worthy *brāhmaṇas* invited for dinner.

If no *brāhmaṇa* is available, then the *Śrāddhaviveka*, *Śrāddhatattva* and other digests say that effigies of *brāhmaṇas* made with seven or nine *darbhas* (except in the case of a performer following the *Sāmaveda* who is not restricted as to the number of *darbhas*) should be got ready and *śrāddha* should be performed and afterwards the fee and other materials may be given later on to other *brāhmaṇas* ⁹¹².

Rules were laid from very ancient times about the method of inviting *brāhmaṇas*. The *Āp. Dh. S.* states ^{912a} that the performer should make a request to the *brāhmaṇas* on the previous day, that on the day of the *śrāddha* he should request a second time (saying 'today is the *śrāddha* day') and then he should address them a third time (with the words 'food is ready, come'). *Haradatta* on the first of the three *sūtras* explains that the request should be 'tomorrow there is a *śrāddha*, you should do me the favour of being in the place of the *Āhavanīya* fire' i. e. you should partake of the food that will be prepared. *Manu* III. 187 also says that the invitation should be on the previous day or on the day of the *śrāddha*

911 a. इष्टापूर्तमृताहेषु दर्शवृद्धचष्टकासु च । पात्रेभ्यस्तेषु कालेषु देयं नैव कुभोजनम् ॥
देवल q. by स्मृतिच. (आ.) p. 410.

912. ब्राह्मणासम्पत्तौ कुशमयब्राह्मणे आर्द्धमुक्तं आर्द्धविवेके । ... ब्राह्मणानामसम्पत्तौ कृत्वा दर्भमयान् द्विजान् । आर्द्धं कृत्वा विधानेन पश्चाद्विषेषु दापयेत् । इति आर्द्धसूत्रभाष्यकारसमुद्रकरधृतवचनाच्च । आर्द्धतत्त्व p. 194 and again at p. 199 'एवं ब्राह्मणानामसम्पत्तौ पक्षत्रयासनेषु दर्भचतुत्रयोपवेशनम्'. The three पक्षs are देव, पितृ and मातामह.

912 a. पूर्वैद्युर्निवेदनम् । अपरेद्युर्द्वितीयम् । तृतीयमामन्त्रणम् । आप. ध. सू. II. 7. 17. 11-13; हरदत्त explains 'श्वः आर्द्धं भविता तत्र भवाताहवनीयार्थं प्रसादः कर्तव्य इति ।'. The exact procedure would be पूर्वैद्युर्निशि ब्राह्मणगृहं गत्वा दर्भपाणिरुदङ्मुखः पातित-दक्षिणजालुरुपवीती प्राङ्मुखोपविष्टद्विजदक्षिणजालुं दक्षिणकरेण स्पृशन् श्वो नः पितृकार्यं भविता तत्र विश्वेदेवस्थाने आहवनीयार्थं भवद्भिः क्षणः स्वीकर्तव्यः प्रसीदत ।' पृष्ठोचमप्रादय (on आर्द्ध) folio 55a. For पितृकब्राह्मणनिवेदन the difference will be पातितजालु-दक्षिणमुखः प्राचीनावीती उदङ्मुखं ब्राह्मणं &c.

itself. The Matsyapurāṇa⁹¹³ and Padma (Śrī-khaṇḍa 9.85-88) provide that the person intending to perform a śrāddha should in an humble manner invite the brāhmaṇas on the previous day or (in the morning of) the day of śrāddha, that he should touch the right knee (of the brāhmaṇa to be invited) with the words 'you are given this invitation by me' and repeat in their hearing the following observance 'you should be free from anger, should be intent on purity (of body and mind) and should abstain from sexual intercourse and I, the performer of śrāddha, shall also act in the same way and that the pitṛs in an aerial form wait upon the invited brāhmaṇas.' The Brhan-nāradiya-purāṇa states that the invitation should be in the words 'O best men! You should do me a favour and accept the invitation for śrāddha.' It is noteworthy that the Prajāpati-smṛti (63) prescribes that one should invite brāhmaṇas for a śrāddha or sacrifice for gods in the evening of the previous day after uttering the verse 'akrodhanaiḥ &c.'⁹¹⁴ The Skandapurāṇa VI. 217. 37 says that the performer should address the brāhmaṇa as follows: 'my father (is or will enter) into this your body and so will my grand-father; let him (the grand-father) come with his father and you should strictly observe the *vrata*' (the rules). The invitation to the brāhmaṇas representing pitṛs is to be given with the sacred thread in the *prācīnāvīta* form and to those for Vaiśvadevika in the *yajñopavīta* form. On the question whether the Vaiśvadevika brāhmaṇas were to be invited first or the brāhmaṇas for pitṛs were to be invited first

913. पूर्वेषुरपरेद्युर्वा विनीतात्मा निमन्त्रयेत् । निमन्त्रितान्हि पितर उपतिष्ठन्ति तान् द्विजान् । वायुभूता तु गच्छन्ति तथासीनानुपासते ॥ दक्षिणं जानुमालभ्य त्वं मया तु निमन्त्रितः । एवं निमन्त्र्य नियमं श्रावयेत्पितृबान्धवान् ॥ अक्रोधनैः शौचपरैः सततं ब्रह्मचारिभिः । भवितव्यं भवद्भिश्च मया च श्राद्धकारिणा ॥ मत्स्य 16. 17-20, q. by आ. क्रि. कौ. p. 81, श्राद्धतत्त्व p. 194. The verse निमन्त्रितान् occurs in मनु III. 189 (which reads वायुवच्चानु-गच्छन्ति). हेमाद्रि (आ. p. 763) quotes the verse दक्षिणं जानुं (but reads श्रावयेत् पितृकान् बुधः) and स्मृतिच. (आ.) p. 406 quotes both. पद्मपुराण (सृष्टिखण्ड 9. 85-88) has the same verses with some slight variations, Vide हेमाद्रि (on आ.) p. 1258.

914. अक्रोधनैः शौचपरैरिति गाथासुदरियन् । सायमामन्त्रयेद्विप्रान् श्राद्धे देवे च कर्मणि ॥ प्रजापति 63. It is therefore likely that the Prajāpati-smṛti is much later than the Matsyapurāṇa or it is possible that the verse अक्रोधनैः शौचपरैः सततं ब्रह्मचारिभिः is an ancient one and only repeated by the मत्स्य. Compare मनु III. 192 where we have the words 'अक्रोधनाः शौचपराः सततं ब्रह्मचारिणः'. नारदपुराण (पूर्वाध्याय 28. 20) puts the request as 'श्राद्धे क्षणस्तु कर्तव्यः प्रसादश्चेति सत्तम'. This supports the Mit. on Yāj. I. 225.

there is a conflict among *smṛtis* and the medieval digests propose an option (vide Hemādri on *śrāddha* pp. 1154–1157). Manu III. 205 appears to lay down that the *daiva brāhmaṇa* should be invited first (*daivādyantam tad-iheta*). Yama quoted by several digests ⁹¹⁵ says that the performer should request in the evening of the previous day *brāhmaṇas* with the words 'You should all be free from exertions and should avoid passion and anger for the *śrāddha* in my house which is to be performed tomorrow,' that the *brāhmaṇas* should reply 'let it be so if the night passes happily and without any mishap to us.' The digests (e. g. *Śrāddhakriyākaumudī* p. 81, *Śrāddhatattva* p. 194 and *Nirṇayasindhu* III. p. 804) say that the verse '*sarvāyāsa &c.*' may be repeated when the invitation is given on the day previous to the day of *śrāddha* and the verse '*akrodhanaiḥ*' when the invitation is given on the morning of the *śrāddha* day. The words of invitation differ according to different authorities. For example, according to the *Mit.* on Yāj. I. 225 the words are '*śrāddhe kṣaṇaḥ kriyatām.*' Vide Śr. Pr. p. 106 also. Manu III. 187 and 191 show that the words '*nimantraṇa*' and '*āmantraṇa*' are used as synonyms. In the *Śrāddhasūtra* ⁹¹⁶ of Kātyāyana the word '*āmantraṇa*' is used. But Pāṇini ⁹¹⁷ (III. 3. 161) apparently makes a difference between the meanings of the two words and the *Mahābhāṣya* explains that invitation is called '*nimantraṇa*' which if rejected (without proper cause) involves a fault or sin, while that invitation which one is free to reject (without incurring blame) is called '*āmantraṇa*.' Therefore, it must be held that the few writers such as Kātyāyana who employ *āmantraṇa* use it in a secondary sense. The invitation should be given by a performer himself or by his son,

915. प्रार्थयेत् प्रदोषान्ते सुक्त्वाच्च शयितान् द्विजान् ॥ सर्वायासविनिर्मुक्तैः कामक्रोध-
विवर्जितैः । भवद्भिर्भवितव्यं नः श्वोभूते श्राद्धकर्मणि ॥ ते तं तथेत्यविष्नेन याति चेद्भजनी
सुखम् । यथाश्रुतं प्रतीक्षेरन् श्राद्धकालमतन्द्रिताः ॥ यम q. by आ. क्रि. कौ. p. 80, श्राद्ध-
तत्त्व p. 194, मद. पा. 564 (from अत्रि).

916. अपरपक्षे श्राद्धं कुर्वीतोर्ध्वं वा चतुर्थ्या यदहः सम्पद्यते तदहर्ब्राह्मणानामन्य
पूर्वेद्युर्वा । श्राद्धसूत्र I (of कात्यायन).

917. विधिनिमन्त्रणामन्त्रणाधीष्टसंप्रश्नप्रार्थनेषु लिङ् । पाणिनि III. 3. 161 The
महाभाष्य explains (Kielhorn, vol. II. p. 165) : यन्नियोगतः कर्तव्यं तस्मिन्मन्त्रेण
किं पुनस्तत् । इदं कव्यं वा । ब्राह्मणेन सिद्धं भुज्यतामित्युक्तेऽधर्मः प्रत्याख्यातः
कामचारः ॥ The आ. क्रि. कौ. p. 82, टोडरानन्द (श्राद्धसौख्य folio 51) and
p. 192 refer to this distinction between the two words.



brother or a pupil or a brāhmaṇa, but it should not be given through a person of another *varṇa* ⁹¹⁸ or a woman or a child or person belonging to another *gotra* nor from a distance (Prajāpati 64). Pracetas provides that a brāhmaṇa performer of śrāddha when giving an invitation should touch the right knee, a kṣatriya inviter the left knee of the invitee, a Vaiśya inviter should hold both feet of the invitee and a śūdra should prostrate himself at the feet of the invitee (vide Śr. Pr. p. 106 and S. K. L. p. 47). The Mārkaṇḍeya (28. 35) states an exception that if, when a śrāddha rite is going on, brāhmaṇas or Vedic students or ascetics come by chance begging for food, the performer should make them pleased by falling at their feet and feed them (i. e. no formal invitation is necessary in these cases). Vide Viṣṇupurāṇa III. 15. 12 for feeding uninvited ascetics. It is provided by Bhṛgu quoted by Hemādri that the brāhmaṇas on accepting the invitation should pronounce the finely-worded and comprehensive Vedic benediction quoted below.⁹¹⁹

Uśanas ^{919a} provides that the performer should wash the floor of his house with water, cowdung it and cleanse the vessels on the day previous to the śrāddha and then give an invitation to the brāhmaṇas with the words 'tomorrow I am going to perform śrāddha'. The Varāhapurāṇa and the Kūrma also provide for this and for the washing of the clothes. Manu III. 206 also requires that the spot where śrāddha is to be performed should be clean, secluded, cowdunged and should slope to the south.

The Śrāddhasūtra of Kātyāyana ⁹²⁰ prescribes that a brāh-

918. अभोज्यं ब्राह्मणस्यान्नं क्षत्रियाद्यैर्निमन्त्रितैः। स्कन्द VII. 1. 206. 4.

919. आ ब्रह्मन् ब्राह्मणो ब्रह्मवर्चसी जायतामास्मिन् राष्ट्रे राजन्य इषव्यः क्षूरो महारथो जायतां दोग्ध्री धेनुर्वोढाऽनङ्गानाङ्गुः सतिः पुरान्धर्योषा जिष्णू रथेष्टाः सभेयो युवाऽस्य यजमानस्य वीरो जायतां निकामे निकामे नः पर्जन्यो वर्षतु फलिन्यो न ओषधयः पच्यन्तां योगक्षेमो नः कल्पताम्। तै. सं. VII. 5. 18, तै. ब्रा. III. 8. 13 (where this is explained), वाज. सं. 22. 22. Vide हेमाद्रि (on आ. p. 1159).

919 a. तत्रोशनाः। गोमयेनोदकैश्च भूमिमार्जनं भाण्डशौचं कृत्वा श्वः कर्तास्मीति ब्राह्मणान् निमन्त्रयेत्। स्मृतिच. (आद्र) p. 409, आ. प्र p. 108, हेमाद्रि on आ. p. 51; वस्त्रशौचादि कर्तव्यं श्वः कर्तास्मीति जानता। स्थानोपलेपनं चैव कृत्वा विप्रान् निमन्त्रयेत्। वराहपुराण q. by स्मृतिच. (आ.) p. 403, आ. क्रि. कौ. p. 76, हेमाद्रि (on आ.) p. 1150, आद्रतत्त्व p. 192. हेमाद्रि explains 'आदिशब्दश्च प्रकारवचनः। तेन आद्रो पयोगिसम्भारसंपादनभाण्डमेलनशोधनादि गृह्यते'.

920. अनिन्द्येनामन्त्रितो नापक्रामेदामन्त्रितो वान्यदन्नं न प्रतिगृह्णीयात्। भाण्डसूत्र of कात्यायन (I) q. by आद्रतत्त्व p. 189 (as गोभिल).

maṇa who has been invited (to a śrāddha dinner) by a faultless performer should not refuse the invitation nor should he, after being invited (and having accepted the invitation), accept a gift of even (uncooked) food from another person. Manu III. 190 and Kūrmapurāṇa provide that if a brāhmaṇa after receiving an invitation for a sacrifice to gods or manes according to śāstra directions and after having accepted it violates the appointment, he incurs sin and becomes a hog⁹²¹ (in his next birth). This does not apply where he is unable to go on account of illness or other valid reason.

The smṛtis laid down some strict and elaborate rules which were to be observed by the brāhmaṇas invited for śrāddha and by the performer himself. Many of the rules are applicable to both. Gaut. prescribes⁹²² that the brāhmaṇa who has partaken of śrāddha dinner should remain chaste (i. e. shun sexual intercourse) that whole day, and if he has intercourse with a wife of the śūdra caste he thereby makes his own *pitṛs* stay in the ordure of that wife. Vas. XI. 37 makes this rule applicable both to the performer and the invited brāhmaṇa and as regards wives of all *varṇas*. Manu III. 188 provides that the brāhmaṇa invited to dine at a sacrifice in honour of *pitṛs* and the performer of the śrāddha should remain controlled (i. e. chaste and free from anger and passion) and should not study the Veda (except *japa*). Yāj. I. 225 (latter half) briefly puts the matter by saying 'they should be controlled as to their bodies, speech and thoughts'. The Matsyapurāṇa⁹²³ prescribes that both the performer of śrāddha and the brāhmaṇa invited to dine at it should avoid dining again (after the śrāddha dinner), journey, going in a conveyance, exertions, sexual intercourse, study of the Veda, quarrel and sleeping by day. Similar rules to observe continence are laid down for both on the day of śrāddha if invitation be given on the morning of the day of

921. आमन्त्रितो ब्राह्मणो वै योन्यास्मिन् कुरुते क्षणम्। स याति नरकं घोरं सूकरत्वं प्रयाति च॥ कूर्म, उत्तरार्ध 22. 7 q. by आ. प्र. प. 110.

922. सद्यः श्राद्धी शूद्रातल्पगस्तत्पुत्रीषे मासं नयति पितृन्। तस्मात्तदहर्ब्रह्मचारी स्यात्। गौ. 15. 23-24; on श्राद्धी हरदत्त explains "श्राद्धमनेन भुक्तमिति, अत इनिठनौ"। This is पा. V. 2. 85 'श्राद्धमनेन भुक्तमितिठनौ'. This explains the two forms श्राद्धिन् and श्राद्धिक.

923. पुनर्भोजनमध्वानं यानमायासमैथुनम्। श्राद्धकृच्छ्राद्धभुक्चैव सर्वमेव हि व्रजयेत्॥ स्वाध्यायं कलहं चैव दिवास्वप्नं च सर्वदा। मत्स्य 16. 27-28 q. by आ. क्रि. पा. 98 (which reads द्यूतमायासः). These verses are also पञ्च (सुष्टिखण्ड) 9. 123-124.

śrāddha and also on the previous day if invitation be given on the day previous to the śrāddha day. Vide Viṣṇu Dh. S. 69. 2-4. The Mit. on Yāj. I. 79 appears to strike a dissenting note about sexual intercourse with one's wife during the days from the 5th to the 16th; while most other medieval writers such as Hemādri (śr. pp. 1006-7) and Śr. P. p. 111 are opposed to this view. The Śrāddhasūtra⁹²⁴ of Kātyāyana provides that the performer should, from the time of giving invitation to the time when the brāhmaṇas sip water (i. e. perform ācamana after śrāddha dinner), remain pure, free from anger, hurry, negligence, should speak the truth and should shun a journey, sexual intercourse, hard work and study of the Veda and control speech (should remain mostly silent) and the brāhmaṇas invited should observe the same rules. Auśanasa (Jiv. vol. I. pp. 526-527) contains verses very similar in import to Kātyāyana. The Brahmapurāṇa (220. 106-108), Mārkaṇḍeya (28. 31-33) and Anuśāsana 125.24 have identical verses⁹²⁵ and Vāyu 79. 60-61 are very similar in import. Laghu-Śaṅkha 29, Laghu-Hārīta 75 and Likhita 60 have the same verse requiring the invited brāhmaṇas to avoid eight matters, viz. dining again, journey, carrying loads, Vedic study, sexual intercourse, making gifts, accepting gifts, performing homa, while Prajāpati 92 substitutes the brushing of the teeth (with a twig), tāmbūla, bath after applying oil to the body, and fast for the first four of the above eight. The Anuśāsanaparva (90. 12-13) and Padma (Pātālakhanda 101. 94-95) also contain a list of actions that should be avoided. Briefly put, the following were the observances for both inviter and invitee, viz. avoidance of sexual intercourse, dining again, falsehood, hurry, vedic study, heavy work, gambling, carrying burdens, giving gifts and acceptance of gifts, theft, journey, sleep by day, quarrels; the performer alone was to abstain from eating tāmbūla, shaving, applying oil to the body, brushing the teeth with a twig; while the brāh-

924. तदहः शुचिरक्रोधनोऽत्वरितोऽप्रमत्तः सत्यवादी स्यादध्वमैथुनश्रमस्वाध्यायान्वर्जयेदावाहनादि वाग्यत ओपस्पर्शनादामन्त्रिताश्चैवम्। आह्नसूत्र I of कात्यायन. पुनर्भोजनमध्वानं भाराध्ययनमैथुनम्। दानं प्रतिग्रहं होमं आह्नभुक्त्वष्ट वर्जयेत् ॥ लघुशङ्ख 29, q. by मिता. on या. I. 249 (without name); compare. कूर्मपुराण (II. 22. 6) and नारदीय (पूर्वार्ध 28. 4) for very similar verses.

925. आह्नं दत्त्वा च भुक्त्वा च पुरुषो यः स्त्रियं व्रजेत्। पितरस्तस्य तं मांसं तस्मिन्नेतस्मिन् शेरते। अनुशासनपर्व 125. 24. Almost the same words occur in मार्कण्डेय 28. 32-33 and in अनुशासन 90. 12-13, वसिष्ठ 11. 37. The मिता. on या I. 79 says एष ब्रह्मचर्येव भवति। अतो यत्र ब्रह्मचर्यं आह्नादौ चोदितं तत्र गच्छतोऽपि न ब्रह्मचर्यं त्यजेत्। दोषोऽस्ति।

maṇa invited was (alone) to observe the following, viz. not absenting oneself after accepting an invitation, making no delay when called for dinner (vide Śrāddhakalikā folio 4b and 5a and Pitr-bhakti on śrāddha ⁹²⁶).

Elaborate provisions are made from ancient times about the substances and utensils proper for being used at śrāddha and about those that should not be used therein. Ap. Dh. ⁹²⁷ S. remarks: 'the materials in śrāddha are sesamum, māśas, rice, yavas (barley), water, roots and fruits; but the pitrs are extremely gratified by food that is mixed with clarified butter and for a very long time; so also they are gratified by wealth that is obtained lawfully and is bestowed on worthy persons'. Manu III. 267 (= Vāyu 83. 3) is to the same effect as Ap. Dh. S. Yāj. I. 258 is content to say that food which is fit to be offered in sacrifices (*haviṣya*) should be served. Manu III. 257 explains that food eaten by hermits in the forest, (cow's) milk, soma juice, meat that is not prepared with spices (or that is free from a bad smell), rock salt are by their very nature *havis* (sacrificial food). According to Gaut. 27. 11 the sacrificial food (*havis*) comprises boiled rice, food obtained by begging, ground barley (after being baked or fried), grain separated from husk, barley gruel, vegetables, milk, curds, clarified butter, roots, fruits and water. ⁹²⁸ Other smṛtis and digests very much elaborated these brief indications in the early works. The three kinds of wealth (viz. *śukla*, *śabala* and *kṛṣṇa*) and the several lawful or uncondemned means of acquiring wealth have been described already in H. of Dh. vol. II. pp. 130 ff. The Mārkaṇḍeya (29. 14-15) condemns the use in śrāddhas of wealth that is obtained by taking bribes or from a *patita* (one guilty of a grave sin), that springs from bride-price or that is declared to be unlawful or is obtained by saying to another 'give me for the sake of a śrāddha to be offered to my father' (q. by Sm. C. on

926. निमन्त्रितः श्राद्धकर्ता च पुनर्भोजनं श्रमं हिंसां त्वरां प्रमादं भारोद्धहनं दूरगमनं कलहं शस्त्रग्रहणं च वर्जयेत् । शुचिः सत्यवादी क्षमी ब्रह्मचारी च स्यात् । पितृभक्तिः of श्रीदत्त.

927. तत्र द्रव्याणि तिलमाषा व्रीहियवा आपो मूलफलानि । स्नेहवति त्वेवाग्ने पितॄणां प्रीतिर्द्राघीयांसं च कालम् । तथा धर्मादृतेन द्रव्येण तीर्थप्रतिपन्नेन । आप. ध. सू. II. 7. 16. 22-24.

928. चरुभैक्षसक्तुकणयावकशाकपयोदधिघृतमूलफलोदकानि हवींष्युत्तरोत्तरं यज्ञस्तानि । गौ. 27. 11. On आश्व. गृ. I. 9. 6 नारायण quotes a verse of similar import 'पयो दधि यवागूश्च सर्पिरोदनतण्डुलाः । सोमो मांसं तथा तैलमापस्तानि दशैव तु

śrāddha p. 412). The Skandapurāṇa emphasizes that at a śrāddha purity (*śuddhi*) must be specially secured in seven matters viz. the body (of the performer), the materials, the wife, the place (where śrāddha is to be performed), the mind, the mantras and brāhmaṇas.⁹²⁹ Manu III. 235 (= Vas. 11.35) states: three are the sanctifying things in a śrāddha, viz. a daughter's son, a Nepal blanket and sesamum grains and three are commended in śrāddha viz. cleanliness, freedom from anger and absence of hurry.^{929a} Pracetas mentions several kinds of corn that are commended as food in śrāddha. Manu III. 255 summarises that in śrāddha the riches (i. e. the most important matters) are afternoon, *darbhas*, proper cleansing of the place (or house) for śrāddha, sesame, generous expense (on food &c.), seasoning food, eminent brāhmaṇas.

The Mārkaṇḍeya-purāṇa says that several kinds of corn-yielding plants (some due to tillage in villages and some growing wild) were produced by Brahmā when he milked the earth for famished people, while Brahmavaivarta (q. by Hemādri on śrāddha p. 537) affirms that when a few particles fell down on the earth while Indra drank Soma, from them arose such corn as *śyāmāka*, wheat, *yava*, *mudga* and red paddy and as they were produced from soma they were like nectar to the pitṛs and food prepared from these should be offered to pitṛs. The Mārkaṇḍeya speaks of seven kinds of *grāmya* corn and seven kinds of wild (*āraṇya*) corn. Prajāpati 119 recommends the use of eight kinds of corn, viz. *nīvāra*, *māṣa*, *mudga*, wheat, paddy, *yava*, grain and sesamum. The Matsya (q. by Hemādri on śrāddha p. 538) narrates that when the Sun drank nectar some drops fell down from which arose the several kinds of

929. शरीरद्रव्यदाराभूमनोमन्त्रद्विजन्मनाम्। शुद्धिः सप्तसु विज्ञेया श्राद्धकाले विशेषतः॥ स्कन्द VII. 1. 205. 17.

929 a. त्रीणि श्राद्धे पवित्राणि दौहित्रः कुतपस्तिलाः। त्रीणि चात्र प्रशंसन्ति शौचमक्रोधमत्वराम्॥ मनु. III. 235, वसिष्ठधर्मसूत्र XI. 35. This very verse (the first half) is quoted in several Purāṇas as in विष्णुपुराण III. 15. 52, भाविन्य I. 185. 20, मार्कण्डेय 28. 64, स्कन्दपुराण (प्रभासखण्ड 205. 13). The पद्मपुराण (सुहृत्खण्ड 47. 278-279) has the whole verse but reads श्राद्धे त्रीणि...दौहित्रं and सत्यमक्रोधमत्वराम्. It appears clear from the preceding verse that in Manu at least दौहित्र means daughter's son. But in the स्कन्द (प्रभासखण्ड 205. 14 ff) several meanings of दौहित्र are given such as 'a vessel made of the horn on the nose of the rhinoceros' or 'clarified butter made from the milk of a cow of variegated colour.' The word कुतप also has nine meanings acc. to a Smṛti text quoted by Aparārka p. 474 'ब्राह्मणः कम्बलो गावः सूर्योऽग्निस्तिथिरेव च। तिला दध्नाश्च कालश्च नवैते कुतपाः स्मृताः॥'; vide note 847 for कुतप.

paddy, *mudga*, sugarcane and that therefore sugar is sacred and may be employed in sacrifices to gods and manes. The *Mārkaṇḍeya* ⁹³⁰ mentions several kinds of corn that may be employed for *śrāddha* food. The *Brahma-purāṇa* 220. 154-155, *Vāyu* 82. 3, *Viṣṇupurāṇa* III. 16. 5-6, *Viṣṇu*, Dh. S., ⁹³¹ *Brahmaṇḍa* II. 7. 143-152 and III. 14. contain similar lists of different kinds of corn that may be used in *śrāddhas*. The *Vāyupurāṇa* (80. 42-48) mentions various desirable eatables prepared from corn of various kinds, sugar and clarified butter and milk. ⁹³²

Certain kinds of corn and cereals were forbidden. For example, the *Matsya-purāṇa* and *Padma* (*Sṛṣṭikhaṇḍa*, chap. 9. 62-66) ⁹³³ declare that *masūra*, linseed, *niṣpāva*, *rājamāṣa*, *kusumbhika*, *kodrava*, *udāra*, gram, *kapittha*, *madhūka* and linseed are forbidden. *Viṣṇu* Dh. S. 79. 18 provides that the performer should avoid the bean called *rājamāṣa*, *masūra*, stale food and salt manufactured from seawater. The *Ṣaṭ-trimśa-nmata* ⁹³⁴ forbids the use in *śrāddha* of all kinds of cereals covered with dark husk except *sesamum*, *mudga* and *māṣa*.

930. राजश्यामाकश्यामाकौ तद्वच्चैव प्रशान्तिका। नीवाराः पौष्कराश्चैव वन्यानि पितृतृप्तये॥ यवव्रीहिसगोधूमतिलमुद्गाः सप्तर्षपाः। प्रियङ्गवः कोद्रवाश्च निष्पावाश्चातिशोभनाः। वज्र्या मर्कटकाः आद्धे राजमाषास्तथाणवः। विप्रूषिका मसूराश्च आद्धकर्मणि गर्हिताः॥ मार्कण्डेय 29,9-11 q. by हेमाद्रि (आ. pp. 542-43) and explained as प्रशान्तिकाः मध्यदेशे प्रसिद्धो धान्यविशेषः पौष्कराः पद्मबीजानि निष्पावाः वल्गाः. The last are called वाल in modern Marathi.

931. तिलैर्व्रीहियवैर्मषैरन्निर्मूलफलैः शकैः श्यामाकैः प्रियङ्गुभिर्नीवारैर्मुद्गैर्गोधूमैश्च मासं प्रीयन्ते। विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 80.1.

932. द्वेष्याणि संप्रवक्ष्यामि आद्धे वज्र्यानि यानि तु॥ मसूरशणनिष्पावराजमाषकुसुम्भिकाः।...कोद्रवोदारचणकाः कपित्थं मधुकातसी॥ मत्स्य 15.36-38 q. by हेमाद्रि (आ.) pp. 548-549 and आ. प्र. p. 40; पद्मपुराण (V. 9.64-67) q. by हेमाद्रि p. 548 has almost the same list. हेमाद्रि explains मधुक as ज्येष्ठीमधु and reads कोद्रवोदालवरक-कपित्थं in मत्स्य. वरक is वरी in Marathi.

933. राजमाषमसूरपर्युषितकृतलवणानि च। विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 79.18; राजमाषान्मसूरांश्च कोद्रवान् कोरदूषकान्। लोहितान् वृक्षानिर्यासान् आद्धकर्मणि वर्जयेत्॥ शङ्ख 14.21 q. by हेमाद्रि on आद्ध p. 548, who explains कोरदूषकः वनकोद्रवः.

934. षट्त्रिंशन्मते। कृष्णधान्यानि सर्वाणि वर्जयेच्छ्राद्धकर्मणि। न वर्जयेत्तिलांश्चैव मुद्गान्माषांस्तथैव च। q. by हेमाद्रि (आद्ध) p. 544, आ. प्र. p. 38. 'हविष्यं आद्ध-हविर्योगं व्रीहिशालियवगोधूममुद्गमाषमुन्यन्नकालशाकमहाशकैलाशुण्ठीमरीचहिङ्गुडशर्करा-कर्पूरसैन्धवसाम्भरणसनालिकेरकदलीबदरगव्यपयोदधिघृतपायसमधुमांसप्रभृति स्मृत्यन्तर-प्रसिद्धं वेदितव्यम्। हविष्यमित्यनेनैवायोग्यस्य स्मृत्यन्तरप्रतिषिद्धस्य कोद्रवमसूरानिष्पाव-लित्थपुलाकनिष्पावराजमाषकृष्णमाण्डवार्ताकवृहतीद्वयोपोदकीवंशाङ्कुरपिप्पलीवचाशतपुष्पा-विडलवणमाहिषचामरक्षीरदधिघृतपायसादीनां निवृत्तिः। मिता. ०५ या. I. 240

From considerations of space this matter cannot be pursued further. The Mit. on Yāj. I. 240 puts together a long list of allowed and of condemned kinds of grains and other articles.

What milk should be ordinarily partaken of and what should be avoided has been dealt with in H. of Dh. vol. II. pp. 782-783. A few words are added here. Manu III. 271 and Yāj. I. 258 provide that if cow's milk or rice cooked therein (called *pāyasa*) is offered in śrāddha the pitrs are satisfied for one year. Vāyu 78. 17, Brahma⁹³⁵ 220.169, Mārkaṇḍeya 32.17-19, Viṣṇupurāṇa III.16.11 forbid the use in a śrāddha of the milk of a she-buffalo, of a camarl or female deer, of sheep or ewes, of she camels, of human females and of all animals with one hoof and the use of the curds and clarified butter prepared from such milk. But ghee prepared from buffalo milk was allowed by Sumantu and Devala (q. by Hemādri on śrāddha p. 572).

The Mārkaṇḍeyapurāṇa⁹³⁶ (29.15-17), Vāyu (78.16) and Viṣṇupurāṇa (III.16.10) lay down that the water to be employed in śrāddha must not have a bad smell, must not be foamy, or taken from a puddle or a small reservoir which cannot slake the thirst of a cow, must not have been brought overnight, must not be taken from a reservoir not dedicated to all or from a trough or the like meant for beasts.

Several rules are laid down about the fruits, roots and vegetables recommended or condemned for use in śrāddha. For example, the Brahma-purāṇa (220.156-158) enumerates several kinds of fruits such as mangoes, *bilva*, pomegranate, cocoanut, dates, grapes, as fit to be given in śrāddha. Vide Śaṅkha 14.22-23 also. Vāyu (78.11-15) states^{936a} that garlic, leeks and onions, other things that are of bad odour or taste

935. माहिणं चामरं मार्गमाविकैकशफोद्धवम्। स्त्रेणमौद्धमाविकं च (०द्धमजावीकं?)
दधि क्षीरं घृतं त्यजेत् ॥ ब्रह्मपुराण 220.169 q. by हेमाद्रि (आ.) p. 573.

936. दुर्गन्धि फेनिलं चाम्बु तथैवालपतरोदकम् ॥ न लभेद्यत्र गौस्तृप्तिं नक्तं यच्चाप्युपा-
हृतम्। यच्च सर्वार्थमुत्सृष्टं यच्चाभोज्यनिपानजम् ॥ तद्वर्ज्यं सलिलं तात सदैव पितृकर्मणि ॥
मार्कण्डेय 29. 15-17. Vide also ब्रह्माण्ड (उपोद्धातपाद 14. 26).

936 a. लशुनं गुञ्जनं चैव पलाण्डुं पिण्डमूलकम्। करम्भाद्यानि चान्यानिहीनानि
रसगन्धतः ॥...अवेदोक्ताश्च निर्यासा लवणान्यौषराणि च। आहुकर्मणि वर्ज्यानि याश्च नोया-
रजस्वलाः ॥ वायु 78.12 and 15 q. in हेमाद्रि (आ. p. 555) and स्मृतिच. (आ.) p. 416.
The स्मृतिच. (आ. p. 415) quotes a verse and a half from *Sūtrā* for ten
varieties of पलाण्डु.

and all exudation from trees not permitted by the Veda and salt gathered from saltish earth, should be avoided in śrāddha. The Viṣṇudharmasūtra⁹³⁷ (79.17) contains a long list of fruits, bulbs and vegetables that were not to be employed in śrāddha. The Rāmāyaṇa states⁹³⁸ that Rāma when an exile in the Daṇḍakā forest gratified his pitṛs by offering the fruits of *inguda*, *badara*, and *bilva* trees and generalises that deities are offered that food which is partaken of by a person (who is a devotee of that deity). From considerations of space detailed references to the smṛtis and purāṇas are passed over. The Smṛtyarthasāra pp. 52-53, Śrāddhaviveka (pp. 43-47) of Rudradhara and other digests collect in one place the foods, vegetables, fruits and roots that are allowed to be offered in śrāddha and that are condemned in śrāddha. Manufactured salt was forbidden, but natural salt from a lake (called saindhava) was allowed. Salt was not to be served directly (as Viṣṇudharmasūtra 79. 12 says) but when put in while cooking vegetables it was not prohibited. There was a difference of opinion about the employment of asafoetida (vide Hemādri on Śrāddha p. 565). The Viṣṇudharmasūtra (79. 5-6) provides that flowers having a strong (or nasty) odour or no odour at all, the blossoms of thorny plants and red flowers should not be given, but one may give white and sweet-smelling flowers even though they are taken from thorny plants and flowers though red in colour may be taken from aquatic plants. Śaṅkha (14. 15-16) is to the same effect (q. by Hemādri p. 684). Vāyu (75. 33-35) is to the same effect and adds that the flowers called Japā, Bhaṇḍi, Rūpikā (of arka plant), Kuraṇṭaka should be avoided in śrāddha. The Brahmapurāṇa (220. 162-165) specifies the several kinds of flowers that may be offered in śrāddha such as jāti, campaka, mallikā, mango blossom, tulasī, tagara, ketakī and various kinds of lotuses (white, blue and red &c.). The Smṛtyarthasāra includes *tulasī* among things to be avoided in śrāddha. The Sm. C. notes this and remarks

937. पिप्पली-सुकुन्दक-भुस्तृण-शिग्रु-सर्षप-मुरसा-सर्जक-सुवर्चल-कूष्माण्ड-अलाबु-वार्ताकु-पालङ्क्या-उपोदकी-तण्डुलीयक-कुसुम्भ-पिण्डालुक-महिषीक्षीराणि वर्जयेत् । विष्णु-धर्मसूत्र. 79. 17.

938. इन्द्रदेवदरैर्विल्वै रामस्तर्पयते पितॄन् । यदन्नं पुरुषो भुङ्क्ते तदन्नास्तस्य देवताः ॥
रामायण, अयोध्या 103.30, 104.15 q. by हेमाद्रि on आश्व p. 561, मेधातिथि on मनु V
7, स्मृतिच. (आ.) p. 416. स्कन्द (नागरखण्ड) 220. 49 is 'यदन्नं पुरुषोऽश्नाति तदन्ना-
स्तस्य देवताः'.

that it is not clear on what this dictum prohibiting tulasī is based ^{938a}.

Kuśas are required in śrāddha. Vide H. of Dh. vol. II. p. 657 for general remarks on kuśas. A few words may be added here. The Śat. Br. VII. 2. 3. 2 states that the waters that loathed Vṛtra went out to waterless deserts and became bushes of darbhas ⁹³⁹. Similarly, Āśv. Gr. III. 2.2 summarizes a Brāhmaṇa text stating that darbhas are the essence of waters and herbs (apām vā eṣa oṣadhīnām raso yad-darbhāḥ). Prajāpati (verse 98) ^{939a} provides that darbhas should be gathered from a pure spot in the morning by a brāhmaṇa, should have mantras repeated over them, should be greenish in colour, should be as long as a cow's ear and then they are holy. The Gobhila gr. (I. 5. 16-17) states 'the *barhis* consists of kuśa grass cut off at the points at which the blades diverge from the main stalk and that the blades should be cut off near the roots at the rites meant for the Fathers'. Dakṣa (II. 33 and 35) provides that the second part of the day (divided into eight parts) is the proper time for collecting fuelsticks, flowers and kuśas. The Gobhilasmṛti (I. 20-21) says ⁹⁴⁰ that the darbhas used in sacrifices are greenish, those to be used in Pākayajñas should be yellowish, those in rites for the pitṛs must be taken out from the roots and those that are to be used in Vaiśvadeva should be dark-pale, and that

938 a. उपोदकी—तुलसी—कृष्णातसी—शिग्रुर्महासर्षप—पत्रशाक—कृष्णसर्षप—पूतिगन्ध-
शकानि कृष्णमण्डपोलकाद्याश्च (वज्र्यानि)। स्मृत्यर्थसार p. 53; स्मृत्यर्थसारे तु तुलस्यपि
वज्र्येत्युक्तं तत्र मूलं चिन्त्यं प्रसिद्धस्मृतिसमुच्चयेषु तुलसीनिषेधस्यादर्शनात्। स्मृतिच. (आ.)
p. 435. The टोडरानन्द (आद्भुतसौख्य) remarks: ग्रन्थान्तरे तुलसीनिषेधस्तु शाकविषयः
प्रेतश्राद्धविषयश्च। तत्र तुलसीवर्ज्यं भृङ्गराजादि प्रशस्तम्। (folio 47 b.).

939. The शतपथब्राह्मण has the following legend about *darbha* and derives the word from दृभ् 'आपश्च ह्येता ओषधयश्च या वै वृत्राद् बीभत्समाना आपो धन्व दृभन्त्य उदायंस्ते दर्भा अभवन् यद्दृभन्त्य उदायंस्तस्माद्दर्भाः। ता हैताः ह्युद्धा मेधया आपो वृत्राभिप्रक्षरिता यद्दर्भास्तेनौषधय उभयेनैवैनमेतदन्नेन प्रीणाति। VII. 2.3.2.

939 a. मन्त्रपूता हरिद्वर्णाः प्रातर्विप्रसमुद्धृताः। गोकर्णमात्रा दर्भाः स्युः पवित्राः
पुण्यभूमिजाः॥ प्रजापति 98. The उत्पादनमन्त्र is 'विरिञ्चिना सहोत्पन्न परमेष्ठिन् निसर्गज॥
उद पापानि सर्वाणि भव स्वस्तिकरो मम॥ q. by. स्मृतिच. I. p. 107, अपरार्क p. 458.

940. हरिता यज्ञिया दर्भाः पीतकाः पाकयज्ञिकाः। समूलाः पितृदेवत्याः कल्मषा
वैश्वदेविकाः॥ गोभिलस्मृति I. 21 q. by स्मृतिच. I. p. 109, अपरार्क p. 458, आ. क्रि. कौ.
p. 46 (which last explains: समूला मूलसमीपे लूना इत्यर्थः); हरिता वै सपिञ्जलाः सुखाः
स्निग्धाः समाहिताः। रत्निमात्राः प्रमाणेन पितृतीर्थेन संस्कृताः॥ गोभिलस्मृति I. 21 and
ब्रह्माण्ड, उपोद्घातपाद 11. 74-75, quoted as from ब्रह्मपुराण by अपरार्क p. 458,
which explains 'वद्धमुष्टिः करो रत्निः, संस्कृताः परामुष्टाः.' Vide वायुपुराण 75. 387-39
for a similar verse.

greenish *darbhas* together with ends uncut, that are smooth and well nourished, one *aratni* in length and touched with that part of the hand called *pitr̥tīrtha* are pure. The Padmapurāṇa (Śr̥ṣṭikhaṇḍa 11.92) and Skanda VII.1. 205.16 state that kuśas and black sesamum spring from the body of Viṣṇu and the Viṣṇudharmottara I. 139.12 says that *tilas* and *darbhas* sprang from the perspiration and hair of Viṣṇu in the Boar incarnation. The Matsya (22.89) says the same.

The Garuḍa ⁹⁴¹ (Pretakhaṇḍa 2.21-22) states that all the three gods dwell in kuśa grass viz. Brahmā at its root, Viṣṇu in the middle and Śaṅkara at the end and that brāhmaṇas, mantras, kuśas, fire, tulasī leaf—these do not become *nirmālya* (stale and so unfit to be used again) even when the same are employed again and again. But an exception is made by Gobhila ⁹⁴² that those *darbhas* which are spread on the ground for placing pīṇḍas on them or that are used in *tarpaṇa* and those that are held in the hand while a man is answering the calls of nature should be given up (and not used again). The Viṣṇu Dh. S. 79.2 and Vāyu 75.41 provide that if kuśas are not available, kāśa grass or Dūrvā may be substituted. The Skandapurāṇa VII (Prabhāsakhaṇḍa) part 1.206.17 says that straight *darbhas* are used in giving gifts, at baths, in *japa*, *homa*, dinner and worship of gods, but they are double-folded when used in rites for pitrs. The Skanda VII. 1. 205.16 provides that the top of *darbhas* is for divine rites, while *darbha* with the root and tip is meant for *paitṛka* rites. This is based on the Śat. Br. II. 4. 2.17 which states that the top of the *darbha* belongs to gods, the middle to men and the root part to the fathers.

Great importance was attached to the use of *tila* (sesamum) in śrāddha. The Jaiminigr̥hya II.1 states that the whole house should have sesamum grains scattered about in it. Baud. Dh. S. II. 8.8 provides that when the invited brāhmaṇas come they should be given water mixed with sesame. The Baud. gr. II. 11.64 provides that sesamum grains are holy in śrāddha for making gifts of them or as part of food or for being mixed in

941. विष्णु मन्त्रा कुशा वह्निस्तुलसी च खगेश्वर । नैते निर्माल्यतां यान्ति क्रियमाणाः पुनः पुनः ॥ गरुड (प्रेतखण्ड 2. 22).

942. पिण्डार्थं ये स्तुता दर्भाः स्तरणार्थं (दर्भास्तर्पणार्थं?) तथैव च धूतं कुशं च विष्णुत्रे त्यागस्तेषां विधीयते ॥ गोभिलस्मृति I. 22, q. by अपरार्क p. 458, हेमाद्रि p. 640, आ. क्रि. कौ. p. 49.

water. The Prajāpatismṛti speaks⁹⁴³ of four kinds of *tilas* viz. white, black, very black and *jartilas* and states that each succeeding one gives greater gratification to the pīṭṛs than each preceding one. The Tai. S. V. 4.3.2 refers to *jartilas* and Jai. X. 8.7 holds a discussion thereon. The Nārada-purāṇa (pūrvārdha 28.36)⁹⁴⁴ provides that the performer of śrāddha should scatter *tilas* in the midst of the brāhmaṇas invited and at the doors with the mantra 'apahatā' (may the asuras and evil spirits that sit on the altar be struck and run away). Yaj. I. 234 also recommends this mantra (which is Vāj. S. II. 29). The Kūṛma-purāṇa (II. 22. 18) states that sesame should be scattered all round and a goat should be tied near the spot, since śrāddha polluted by *asuras* becomes purified by sesame and a goat. The Viṣṇu-purāṇa (III. 16.14) prescribes that by *tilas* scattered on the ground one should ward off evil spirits (Yātudhāna). The Garuḍa-purāṇa⁹⁴⁵ (Pretakhaṇḍa 2. 16) makes Śrīkṛṣṇa say 'tilas have sprung from the perspiration on my body and are holy; *asuras*, *dānavas* and *daityas* run away on account of *tilas*.' The Anuśāsana-parva (90.22) says that *yātudhānas* and goblins snatch away the *havis* when the śrāddha is offered without *tilas*. The Kṛtyaratnākara (p. 540) quotes a verse as follows: 'he who applies as unguent *tilas*, who bathes with water in which *tilas* are mixed, offers *tilas* into fire, makes gifts of *tilas*, eats *tilas* and who grows *tilas*—these six never sink (i. e. are not unlucky nor in trouble).

A great deal is said about the vessels to be used in offering *arghya* (water for honouring the invited brāhmaṇas and pīṇḍas), for cooking śrāddha food, for dining and for serving. The Śrāddhasūtra of Kātyāyana⁹⁴⁶ provides that the *arghya* water

943. शुक्लः कृष्णः कृष्णतरश्चतुर्थो जर्तिलास्तिलः । उत्तरोत्तरतः श्राद्धे पितृणां तृप्ति-
कारकाः ॥ प्रजापति 99. जर्तिलस्य are wild tilas. The तै. सं. V. 4.3.2 has this passage
'जर्तिलयवाग्वा वा जुह्याद्गवीधुकयवाग्वा न ग्राम्यान् पशून् हिनस्ति नारण्यानथो खल्वाहुर-
नाहुतिर्वै जर्तिलाश्च गवीधुकाश्चेत्यजक्षीरेण जुहोति'. शबर appears to quote काठकसंहिता
6. 3 also. The conclusion arrived at by Jai. X. 8.7 is that the passage about
जर्तिलस्य is an अर्थवाद for praising पयोहोम. The स्मृतिच. (श्राद्ध) p. 433 says
जर्तिलास्तु तिलाः प्रोक्ताः कृष्णवर्णा वने भवा इति सत्यव्रतेनाभिधानात्.

944. The मन्त्र is अपहता असुरा रक्षांसि वेदिषदः । वाज. सं. II 29.

945. श्रीकृष्ण उवाच । मम स्वेदसमुद्भूतास्तिलास्ताक्ष्यं पवित्रकाः । असुरा दानवा दैत्या
विद्वान्ति तिलैस्तथा ॥ गरुड (प्रेतखण्ड) 2. 16; तिलोद्धर्ता तिलस्नायी तिलहोता तिलसदः ।
तिलभक्षी तिलावापी षट्तिली नावसीदति ॥ q. by कृत्यरत्नाकर p. 540.

946. याज्ञियवृक्षचर्मसेषु पवित्रान्तर्हितेषु एकैकस्मिन्मण्य आसिञ्चति शन्नो
सौवर्णराजतौदुम्बरखड्गमणिमयानां पात्राणामन्यतमेषु यानि वा विद्यन्ते पत्रपुटेषु वेदिकेभ्यः
ददाति सपवित्रेषु हस्तेषु । श्राद्धसूत्र (of कात्यायन) II.

should be taken in camasas (cups) made of sacrificial trees (such as *palāśa*, *aśvattha*, *udumbara*) or in vessels of gold, silver, copper, rhinoceros horn, precious stones whichever may be available, or in a vessel made of leaves. The Viṣṇu Dh. S. (79. 14-15) provides that the performer should employ metallic vessels, particularly vessels made of silver. The Mārkaṇḍeya (31.65) and Vāyu (74.3) state that in a vessel of silver the (ancient) pitṛs milked *svadhā* and hence a silver vessel is highly desired by pitṛs and brings delight to them. Yāj. I. 237 also specially recommends silver vessels. The Vāyu (74. 1-2), Matsya (17. 19-22), Brahmāṇḍa (Upodghāta 11. 1-2) and Padma (Śṛṣṭikhaṇḍa 9. 147-150) state that vessels of gold, silver or copper are the (proper) ones for pitṛs; that even the talk about silver or the sight or gift of silver gives inexhaustible results to pitṛs in heaven, that vessels to be used for *arghya*, for *pinḍa* and for the food to be offered should be preferably of silver and that in rites for gods a silver vessel is not auspicious. Atri (q. by Sm. C. II, p. 464) says that in rites for the gods and pitṛs, vessels of gold and silver should be respectively employed and in default of these vessels of other metals (such as copper, bell-metal) should be used (as stated by Viṣṇu Dh. S. 79.22 and 24). The Padma provides⁹⁴⁷ that the vessels may be of sacrificial wood or of *palāśa* or of silver or made from a sea product (such as conch shell) and that since silver was produced from the eye of Śiva, it is a great favourite with pitṛs. Prajāpati (111) provides that the three *pinḍas* should be cast in a vessel of gold or silver or copper or bell-metal or of rhinoceros horn but not in earthenware or a wooden vessel, that (verse 112) the cooking vessels should be of copper or of any metal, but an earthen vessel baked in fire and immersed in water is the best (for cooking), that food cooked in an iron vessel is like crow's flesh, that (115) the vessels to be used for taking food by the brāhmaṇas should be made of gold, silver or of an alloy of five metals or they may take their food in *patrāvali* (i. e. leaves stitched together); vide also Matsya

947. पात्रं वनस्पतिमयं तथा पर्णमयं पुनः॥ राजतं वा प्रकुर्वीत तथा सागरसम्भवम् । सौवर्णं राजतं पात्रं पितॄणां पात्रमिष्यते । ...वार्यपि श्रद्धया दत्तमक्षयायोपकल्पयेत् । अथार्थं पितृपिण्डेषु पितॄणां राजतं स्मृतम् । ...शिवनेत्रोद्भवं यस्मादतस्तत्पितृवल्लभम् । पद्म (मुद्रिकखण्ड) 9. 147-151); तथाद्वयपिण्डभोज्यादौ पितॄणां राजतं मतम् । शिवनेत्रो...वल्लभम् । अमरकाल तद्वर्णनं देवकार्येषु वर्जयेत् ॥ मत्स्य 17. 22-23.

17. 19-20. The use of plantain leaves for bhojana is forbidden^{947a} by some. Brāhmaṇas should not take ācamana from a vessel made of bell-metal, kharpara, śukra, stone, clay, wood, fruit or iron. Ācamana should be performed with water from a copper vessel. Atri (153) prescribes that no food should be served from an iron vessel; if so served the food is like ordure to the diner and the server goes to hell. The vessels for cooking śrāddha food are to be made of gold, silver, copper or bell-metal or even of clay provided the last are new ones and strong (well baked) but never of iron. Vide Śr. Pr. p. 155 for details. The Viṣṇu Dh. S. (79. 24) quotes a verse which says that food offered in vessels of gold, silver, copper, rhinoceros horn or of *phalgu* wood becomes inexhaustible.

Viṣṇu Dh. S. 79. 11 provides that for unguents (*anulepana*) to be applied to the bodies of the invited brāhmaṇas, sandal-wood, saffron, camphor, *aguru*, *padmaka* may be used. The Brahmapurāṇa (220. 165-166) mentions kuṣṭha, jaṭā-māṃsī, nutmeg, uśira, mustā and some others as proper perfumed articles to be used at śrāddhas.

It has already been seen at pp. 413-14 what kinds of food were recommended or condemned for śrāddha. The Matsyapurāṇa⁹⁴⁸ states that food containing milk and curds and clarified butter from cow's milk mixed with sugar gives satisfaction to all pitṛs for one month and that whatever food, whether cow's milk or ghee or rice cooked in milk, is mixed with honey, yields inexhaustible results. The Brahmapurāṇa also (220. 182-184) provides that such eatables as are sweet and oily and are slightly sour and pungent should be served in śrāddha and one should shun eatables that are very sour or very saltish or very pungent, since they are āsura (fit for asuras). Great emphasis was laid on serving preparations of food made from māṣa

947 a. यत्त्वाङ्गिरसोक्तम् 'न जातिकुसुमानि न कदलीपत्रम्' इति कदलीपत्रमत्र भोजनमिति पात्रतया प्राप्तं निषिध्यते। स्मृतिच. (आ.) p. 434. Others said that there is an option as to कदलीपत्र, as certain smṛtis (e. g. लघ्वाश्वलायन 23. 42) allowed plantain leaves. ब्रह्माण्ड (उपोद्धातपाद् 21. 35-40) mentions that the leaves of पलाश, अश्वत्थ, उदुम्बर, विकङ्कत, काश्मर्य, खदिर, लक्ष, न्यग्रोध, बिल्व may be used for taking food in and that vessels made of Phalgu wood, of Bilva wood and bamboo are allowed and yield certain good rewards.

948. अन्नं सदधिकीरं गोघृतं शर्करान्वितम्। मांसं प्रीणाति वै सर्वान् पितृन्मृत्याह वेदेन॥ ...यत्किञ्चिन्मधुसंमिश्रं गोक्षीरं घृतपायसम्। दत्तमक्षयमित्याहुः पितरः पूर्वदेवताः॥ मत्स्य 17. 30-36, the first being q. by स्मृतिच. (आ.) p. 431.

beans. The Auśanasa⁹⁴⁹—smṛti pronounces the threat that the brāhmaṇa, who, when dining at śrāddha, does not eat māṣa food, becomes a beast for twenty-one births after death. The Sm. C. quotes a smṛti text saying that a śrāddha in which no māṣa preparation is offered is as good as not performed.

The greatest divergence has prevailed about the employment of flesh at śrāddhas among writers from the earliest times. The subject of flesh-eating in general has been discussed at great length in the History of Dharmaśāstra, vol. II, pp. 772-782. A few remarks about flesh in relation to śrāddha will not be out of place here. The Āp. Dh. S. prescribes⁹⁵⁰ that the obligatory śrāddha (to be performed every month) must contain food mixed with fat, the best course (for supplying fat) is to employ clarified butter and flesh; on failure of these two, sesamum oil and vegetables may be employed. The same sūtra also provides⁹⁵¹ that the pitṛs are gratified for a year by the offering of cow's flesh in a śrāddha, that by the flesh of a buffalo the gratification of pitṛs extends to more than a year, that this rule extends to the flesh of wild animals (like hares) and village (or domesticated) animals (like goats) that are declared to be fit for being sacrificed, that the gratification of pitṛs extends to endless time if the flesh of a rhinoceros is offered to brāhmaṇas seated on rhinoceros skin, so also by the flesh of the

949. यो नाश्नाति द्विजो माषं नियुक्तः पितृकर्मणि । स प्रेत्य पशुतां याति सन्ततामेक-
विंशतिम् ॥ औशनसस्मृति (V.) p. 531 (Jiv. I.).

950. नैयमिकं तु श्राद्धं स्नेहवदेव दद्यात् । सर्पिर्मांसमिति प्रथमः कल्पः । अभावे तैलं
शाकमिति । आप. ध. सू. II. 8. 19. 13-15.

951. संवत्सरं गव्येन प्रीतिः । भूयांसमतो माहिषेण । एतेन ग्राम्यारण्यानां पशूनां मांसं
मेध्यं व्याख्यातम् । खड्गोपस्तरणे खड्गमांसेनानन्त्यं कालम् । तथा शतबलेर्मत्स्यस्य मांसेन वार्ध्रा-
णसस्य च । आप. ध. सू. II. 7. 16. 25—II. 7. 17. 3. वार्ध्राणिस or वार्ध्राणिस is explained as
a red-coloured goat that is *tripiba* (whose ears are so long that they touch the
water it drinks), that is old and the foremost of the herd. त्रिपिबमिन्द्रियक्षीणं
यूथस्याग्रचरं तथा । रक्तवर्णं तु राजेन्द्र छागं वार्ध्राणिसं विदुः ॥ विष्णुधर्मोत्तर I. 141. 48 q. by
स्मृतिच. (आ. p. 431). The Mit. On या. I. 260 and मेधातिथि on मनु. III. 271 quote
a slightly different verse: त्रिपिबमिन्द्रियक्षीणं श्वेतं वृद्धमजापतिम् । वार्ध्राणिसं तु तं प्राहुर्या-
ज्ञिकाः श्राद्धकर्मणि ॥ and Mit. explains त्रिपिब as 'पिबतः कर्णौ जिह्वा च यस्य जलं स्पृशन्ति
स त्रिभिः पिबतीति त्रिपिबः'. अपरार्क p. 552 cites this verse as a निगम. हेमाद्रि (आ.
p. 590) states that the 2nd verse is a various reading of the first. अपरार्क p. 553
quotes another verse according to which वार्ध्राणिस is a white-feathered bird
with red head and dark throat 'कृष्णशीवो रक्तशिराः श्वेतपक्षो विहङ्गमः । स वै
वार्ध्राणिसः प्रोक्त इत्येषा नैगमी श्रुतिः ॥'. Several forms are met with in printed
works viz. वार्ध्राणिस or वार्ध्राणिस or वार्ध्राणिस. The दीपकालिका gives the two
explanations of वार्ध्राणिस (this is the reading of the printed work) as a white
goat and as a bird.

fish called 'śatabali' and the flesh of a *Vārddhrīṇasa*. Vas. XI. 34 contains the following remarkable verse: 'an ascetic, when invited in a rite for the gods or pitṛs, who avoids (does not partake of) flesh, dwells in Hell for as many years as the number of hair (on the body of the animal whose flesh he avoids).' Even the *Viṣṇudharmottarapurāṇa* (I. 140. 49-50) emphatically asserts that he who does not partake of flesh-food in a row of diners at a śrāddha which has been properly employed goes to hell. *Manu* V. 35 and *Kūrma* II. 17.40 contain a similar verse applicable to all those who are invited as brāhmaṇas at a śrāddha. The *Kūrmapurāṇa* II. 22.75 provides that the brāhmaṇa who is employed for the performance of a śrāddha and does not eat flesh offered therein becomes a beast for 21 births. *Manu* III. 257 states that the following are said to be proper offerings in a śrāddha by their very nature viz. food (prepared from *nivāra* grain and the like) fit for a forest hermit, milk, soma juice, flesh that does not emit foul smell and unmanufactured salt. An ascetic was ordinarily required not to partake of flesh; but *Vasiṣṭha* insisted on his partaking of it when invited at a śrāddha.

Manu III. 267-272, *Yāj.* I. 258-260, *Viṣṇu Dh. S.* 80. 1 ff, *Anuśāsanaparva* chap. 88, the *Śrāddhasūtra* of *Kātyāyana* (*kaṇḍikās.* 7-8), *Kūrmapurāṇa* II. 20. 40-42, 29. 2-8, *Vāyu* 83. 3-9, *Matsya* 17. 31-35, *Viṣṇupurāṇa* III. 16.1-3, *Padmapurāṇa* (*Sṛṣṭi* 9. 158-164), *Brahmapurāṇa* 220.23-29, *Viṣṇudharmottara* I. 141.42-47 state at length the periods of time for which pitṛs are gratified by the flesh of certain animals being served at a śrāddha. The verses of *Yāj.* being the shortest in all these works are given below. *Yāj.*⁹⁵² states; Pitṛs are gratified by the serving of sacrificial food (such as rice, fruits, roots & c.) for a month, for a year by (cows's milk or) rice cooked in cow's milk, for 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11 months respectively by the flesh of fishes (*pāṭhīna*), of (red coloured) deer, of a ram, of a bird (such as a *tittiri*), of a goat, of a spotted deer, of a dark-coloured deer, of a *ruru* deer, of a wild boar, of a hare; the offering of rhinoceros flesh, of a fish called *Mahāśalka*, of

952. हविष्यान्नेन वै मांसं पायसेन तु वत्सरम् । मात्स्यहारिणकौरभ्रशकुनच्छागपार्षते ॥
 एणरैरेववारहशशैर्मांसैर्यथाक्रमम् । मांसवृद्ध्याभितृप्यन्ति दत्तैरिह पितामहाः । खड्गामिषं महा-
 शकं मधु मुन्यन्तेव वा । लौहामिषं महाशकं मांसं वार्ध्निषसस्य च ॥ यद्ददाति भयास्थश्च
 सर्वमानन्त्यमश्नुते । या. I. 258-261. महाशकं is explained as कालशकं by the मिता-
 क्षरा, while the स्मृतिच. (आ p. 431) frankly admits that it does not know
 what कालशक is: 'कालशकं कीदृशमिति न विद्मः'.

honey, of food fit for hermits (wild corn such as *nivāra*), the flesh of a red goat, of Mahāśāka (i. e. Kālaśāka), and the flesh of Vārdhrīpaśa—these secure inexhaustible fruit. There is some divergence of views among the several works. For example, Manu III. 267 and 271, Kātyāyana (in śrāddhasūtra 7) appear to hold that by offering food prepared from village corn (such as rice, māṣa & c.) or wild eatables (such as *nivāra* or fruits and roots) the gratification is only for one month and the flesh of Vārdhrīpaśa produces gratification for twelve years only (and not for all time). Viṣṇu Dh. S. 80.10 and Manu III. 270 bring in buffalo flesh and tortoise flesh as giving gratification for ten and eleven month respectively. Hemādri (on śrāddha p. 590)⁹⁵³ is careful to point out that these words about the duration of time are not to be taken literally but what is really intended is to convey greater and greater gratification of the pitṛs according to the kind of flesh offered. Pulastya quoted by the Mit. and Aparārka p. 555 provides that a brāhmaṇa should generally or mainly offer at a śrāddha hermit's food, a kṣatriya or a vaiśya should offer flesh, a śūdra should offer honey and all varṇas may offer anything else (except these three) which is not forbidden.⁹⁵⁴ Whoever may be the offerer, the eater at a śrāddha dinner was to be a brāhmaṇa alone and so it follows that brāhmaṇas invited to a śrāddha by a kṣatriya or vaiśya had to eat flesh. Yet it is remarkable that even the Mitākṣarā and the Kalpataru written about 1100-1120 A. D. do not expressly say that in the Kali age flesh-eating at śrāddha is totally prohibited at least for brāhmaṇas. It has been shown already (H. of Dh. vol. III, pp. 775-776) that even when animal sacrifices were the order of the day in the Rgveda and the Brāhmaṇas there was an undercurrent of thought that the offerings of fuel-sticks or of boiled rice when made with heartfelt devotion to the gods were as good as flesh offerings for

953. इह सर्वत्र प्रीत्यतिशयो विवक्षितः। न तु यथाश्रुत एव कालः। तथा सति द्वादश-
वर्षपर्यन्तं पितॄणां तृप्तत्वात् श्राद्धाकरणे प्राप्ते सति न 'प्रतिवर्षं यत्नात्कार्यम्' इत्येतद्वचनं
विरुध्यत इति हरिहरादयः। हेमाद्रि (श्रा. p. 590).

954. अत्र यद्यापि मुन्यक्षमांसमध्वादीनि सर्ववर्णानां सामान्येन श्राद्धे योग्यानि दर्शि-
तानि तथापि पुलस्त्योक्ता व्यवस्थादर्शनीया। मुन्यक्षं ब्राह्मणस्योक्तं मांसं क्षत्रियवैश्ययोः। मधु-
प्रदानं शूद्रस्य सर्वेषां चाविरोधि यत्। मिता. on या. I. 260; तथा च श्राद्धप्रकरणे बृहन्नारदीये
यथाचारं प्रदेयं तु मधुमांसादिकं तथा—इति। तथा मांसादनं तथा श्राद्धे इति कलिवचनमपि यथा-
नभिधाय देशाचाराः परिग्राह्यास्तद्देशीयजेनैः। अन्यथा पतितो ज्ञेयः सर्वधर्मचरिण्युतः॥
इति तत्रैवान्यत्राभिहितत्वात्। पृथ्वीचन्द्रोदय on श्राद्ध (folio 416) quoting चारदीय-
पुराण.

securing their favour. In course of time that conception grew stronger and stronger, so much so that Manu (V. 27-44 and V. 46-47) and Vasistha appear to be in two minds (vide H. of Dh. vol. II pp. 778-780). Gradually the offering of flesh in Madhuparka and in śrāddhas came to be totally condemned in works of the 12th and 13th centuries and onwards as a matter prohibited in the Kali age (Varātithipitr̥bhyaśca paśūpākaraṇakriyā). (Vide H. of Dh. vol. III pp. 945-946 and p. 964). Now except among the brāhmaṇas (in Northern India) who have no objection to include fish in diet as permissible to them no brāhmaṇa offers flesh in śrāddha. The usage of Northern India would be in accordance with the view set out in Brhannāradiya-purāṇa that one should offer honey, flesh and other things according to the usage of the country, as explained by the Pṛthvicandrodaya.

Manu (V.11-18) contains long lists of animals, birds and fishes whose flesh was not to be eaten even by those who were flesh-eaters.

If a person is destitute, some of the Purāṇas such as the Viṣṇu (III. 4.24-30) and the Varāha (13.53-58) mercifully provide in identical⁹⁵⁵ verses that instead of entertaining brāhmaṇas with a sumptuous dinner or flesh the poor man may offer only uncooked corn, or some vegetables growing wild or some slight *dakṣiṇā* if he cannot offer even uncooked food or vegetables, or he may offer a few grains of sesamum (7 or 8) to a brāhmaṇa with water in his folded hands, or grass to a cow enough for one day and if he cannot afford even any one of these, then he may repair to a thicket of trees, raise his arms so that his armpits are exposed and loudly address the guardians of the worlds such as the Sun in the following words: 'I have neither wealth nor money nor anything else fit to be offered by way of śrāddha; I bow to my pitṛs; may the pitṛs be satisfied by my devotion; I have stretched these arms in space!' (lit. the path of the wind).

955. असमर्थोन्नदानस्य धान्यं मांसं स्वशक्तिः ।...सर्वाभावे वनं गत्वा कक्षमूलप्रदर्शकः । सूर्यादिलोकपालानामिदमुच्चैः पाठिष्यति ॥ न मेऽस्ति वित्तं न धनं न चान्यच्छ्राद्धस्य योग्यं स्वपितृभ्योऽस्मि । तृप्यन्तु भक्त्या पितरो मयैतौ भुजौ ततौ वर्त्मनि मारुतस्य ॥ वराहपुराण. 13. 57-58 = विष्णुपुराण III. 14. 29-30, q. by मद. पा. pp. 515-16 from विष्णु and by निर्णयसिन्धु III. p. 467 from both. This passage explains the origin and the present meaning of the Marathi phrase खाका वर करणें. बृहत्पराशर (chap. 153) has similar provisions. The पृथ्वी (folio 56 b) notes 'धान्यं मांसमिष्टं वन्यं शाकमिति वराहपुराणीयः पाठः'; in the printed विष्णुपुराण the reading is not 'धान्यं मांसं', but the निर्णयसिन्धु had these words and it appears that the text was tampered with in modern times.

It is now time to describe the procedure of the Pārvaṇa-śrāddha^{955a} which is the pattern or norm (prakṛti) of the other śrāddhas⁹⁵⁶ (even including the *Aṣṭakās*). Here one meets with great divergences of views even from the times of the sūtras up to modern times. Though the main items and stages in the rite of śrāddha are generally the same, there is variation in the mantras, the details and sometimes in the order of the several items. Kātyāyana lays down that every man has to follow his own sūtra as to the use of the word 'svāhā' or the words 'svadhā namaḥ', as to wearing the sacred thread in the yajñopavīta or prācināvīta way and as to the number of āhūtis⁹⁵⁷.

It would be very interesting first to find out the vestiges of the sacrifice to the fathers in the most ancient Vedic texts. The Tai. S. (I. 8. 5. 1-2) deals⁹⁵⁸ with the Mahāpitṛyajña per-

955 a. Terms already explained such as 'Pārvaṇa' and 'Ekoddiṣṭa' are not explained again. Vide n. 855 above for those two words. Śrāddha on amāvāsyā is obligatory (nityā) as laid down by Gaut. 15.1 q. in note 935 above, while the śrāddhas performed on the other tithis of the dark half of a month are kāmya.

956. The अनाकुला of हरदत्त on आप. गृ. 21.1 states 'पुनरपि पाकयज्ञानन्तरं पुरुषत्रयसंप्रदानकं तादृशानामष्टकादीनां प्रकृतिभूतं मासिकसंज्ञकं पित्र्यं कर्मोपदिश्यते.'

957. तथा च कात्यायनः । स्वाहा स्वधा नमः सव्यमपसव्यं तथैव च । आहुतीनां तु या संख्या सावगम्या स्वसूत्रतः ॥ q. by मद. पा. p. 592, स्मृतिच. (श्रा. p. 458). हेमाद्रि (श्रा. p. 356) says 'एते देवादिविधयो यदीयेषु कल्पसूत्रगृह्येषु क्तास्ते तदीया एवेति व्यवस्थया बोद्धव्याः ।'.

958. सोमाय पितृमते पुरोडाशं षट्कपालं निर्वपति पितृभ्यो बर्हिषद्भ्यो धानाः पितृभ्योऽग्निष्वात्तेभ्योऽभिवान्यायै दुग्धे मन्थमेतत्ते तत ये च त्वामन्वेतत्ते पितामह प्रपितामह ये च त्वामन्वत्र पितरो यथाभागं मन्दध्वं सुसंहशं त्वा वयं मघवन्मन्दिषामिहि । प्र नूनं पूर्णबन्धुरः स्तुतो यासि वशोऽनु । योजा न्विन्द्र ते हरी । अक्षन्नमीमदन्त ह्यव प्रिया अधूषत । अस्तोषत स्वभानवो विप्रा नविष्टया मती । योजा न्विन्द्र ते हरी । अक्षन् पितरोऽमीमदन्त पितरोऽतीतृपन्त पितरोऽमीमृजन्त पितरः । परेत पितरः सोम्या गम्भीरैः पथिभिः पूर्यैः । अथा पितृन् सुविदत्रा अपीत यमेन ये सधमादं मदन्ति ॥ तै. सं I. 8. 5. 1-2. सायण explains: अभिवान्या मृतवत्सा धेनुः । क्षीरे यमपिष्टं प्रक्षिप्य मिश्रीकृतं द्रव्यं मन्थः । सायण quotes तै. ब्रा. I. 6. 8 'अभिवान्यायै दुग्धे भवति सा हि पितृदेवत्यं दुग्धे' and explains 'मृताः पुरुषाः पितरो भवन्ति । अभिवान्या च मृतवत्सेति सजातीयत्वात्तत्र तेषां प्रीतिः'. The milk of an अभिवान्या cow is kept in a vessel in which are put half-ground barley grains, then the milk is stirred once or thrice with a piece of sugarcane to which a string is tied. This preparation is called मन्थ. Vide मैत्रायणीसंहिता 1. 10. 17 (यदेष मन्थस्तेन पितृयज्ञोऽभिवान्याया गोर्दुग्धे स्यात्...इक्षुशलाकयोपमन्थति) and आप. श्रौ. 8.14.14. The Tai. Br. (I. 6. 8-9) expounds the above Tai. S. passage in its own way. The two verses सुसंहशं and अक्षन्नमीमदन्त are वाज. सं. III. 52 and 51 and are the same as मै. सं. I. 10.3. तै. ब्रा. II. 6.16 brings together the mantras employed in पिण्डपितृयज्ञ as याज्या, पुरोनुवाक्या or सामिधेनी verses.

formed in Sākamedha, the third of the four Cāturmāsyaśas: "He offers to Soma accompanied by the pitṛs a cake baked on six potsherds, to the pitṛs Barhiṣadaḥ (sitting on darbha grass or in a yajña) fried grains, for the pitṛs called Agniśvāta he milks a drink from a cow which has to be won over (to another calf). This for thee, O father and for those who come after thee (i. e. for thy descendants); this for thee, O grandfather, great-grandfather and for those who come after thee; do, ye Pitṛs rejoice in your portions. May we gladden thee, O Indra, that castest thy glance at us, come forth now with full chariot seat; being praised (by us) thou goest to places desired by you. Yoke, O Indra, thy two bay steeds. They (*pitaraḥ*) have eaten, they have rejoiced, the dear ones have dispelled (evil); the radiant sages have been praised with newest hymn, Yoke, O Indra, thy two bay steeds. The pitṛs have eaten, the pitṛs have rejoiced, the pitṛs have been glad, the pitṛs have purified themselves. Go away, O Pitṛs, that art soma-loving by your majestic ancient paths. Then reach ye the *pitṛs* that well know you (or everything) and that revel in the company of Yama."

In the Tai.⁹⁵⁹ Br. I. 2.10 the Pinda-pitṛyajña is dealt with at some length. In the note below the important passages are set forth leaving out the legends, repetitions and matters not relevant to our purpose: "Therefore the rite (called pinda-pitṛyajña) is performed the day previous (to the Darśeṣṭi).

959. तस्मात्पितृभ्यः पूर्वैर्द्युः क्रियते।...सोमाय पितृपीताय स्वधा नम इत्याह।...अग्नये कव्यवाहनाय स्वधा नम इत्याह। य एव पितृणामग्निस्तं प्रीणाति। तिस्र आहुतीर्जुहोति त्रिर्निदधाति षट्सम्पद्यन्ते। षड् वा ऋतवः। ऋतून्वै प्रीणाति।...ऋतवः खलु वै देवाः पितरः।...सकृदाच्छिन्नं वहिर्भवति। सकृदिव हि पितरः। त्रिर्निदधाति। तृतीये वा इतो लोके पितरः। तानेव प्रीणाति। पराङ्मवर्तते। ह्रीका हि पितरः। ओष्मणो व्यावृत उपास्ते। उष्मभागा हि पितरः।...अवध्रेयमेव तच्चेव प्राशितं नेवाप्राशितम्। वीरं वै पितरः प्रयन्तो हरन्ति। वीरं वा ददति। दशं छिनत्ति। हरणभागा हि पितरः। पितृन्वै निरवदयते। उत्तर आयुषि लोम छिन्दीत। पितृणामेताहि नेदीयः। नमस्करोति। नमस्कारो हि पितृणाम्। नमो वः पितरो रसाय नमो वः पितरः शुष्माय। नमो वः पितरो जीवाय। नमो वः पितरः स्वधायै। नमो वः पितरो मन्यवे। नमो वः पितरो घोराय। पितरो नमो वः।...एष वै मनुष्याणां यज्ञः। देवानां वा इतरे यज्ञाः। तै. ब्रा. I. 3. 10. 1-10. The words नमो वः पितरो रसाय to पितरो घोराय occur in वाज. सं. II. 32 and मै. सं. I, 10. 3 but in a slightly different order and वाज. सं. reads शोषाय for शुष्माय. It may be noted that though the तै. ब्रा. speaks of three āhutis it mentions only two deities; the third is supplied by the सूत्रकार in the words यमायाङ्गिरस्पते पितृमते स्वधा नमः। Vide note 781 above. On 'देवाः पितरः' सायण says 'द्विविधा हि पितरः देवात्मका मनुष्यात्मकाश्च। पितृलोकस्वामिनो देवात्मकाः। पुताः सन्तो भोगात्तल्लोकं प्राप्ता मनुष्यात्मकाः।' On वीरं...ददति, सायण explains 'वैकल्ये पुत्रं मारयन्ति साकल्ये पुत्रं प्रयच्छन्ति। अत्र वैकल्यस्य दुष्परिहरत्वेन पुत्रप्रत्याम्नायत्वेन वस्त्राग्राहणं सूत्रं छित्वा पिण्डेषु निदध्यात्।'.

He says 'to Soma drunk by the pitrs, *svadhā*! Adoration!' He says 'to Agni, the carrier of *kavya*, *svadhā*! Adoration! (Thereby) he pleases the fire that pertains to the pitrs. He offers (into fire) three oblations; he puts down (on the darbhas spread on the ground) three pinḍas. (These) thus come to six in number. Six indeed are the seasons. He (thereby) pleases the seasons. The seasons are indeed the shining (or divine) pitrs.....The darbha grass is cut with one stroke; the pitrs have as it were (passed away) once for ever. He puts down thrice (the pinḍas). The pitrs are indeed in the third world from here. He (thereby) pleases them. He (the performer) turns his face away (to the north from the south), for the Fathers are shy. He remains with his face turned away till the steam (of the boiled rice of the pinḍas) ceases to rise, for the Fathers have the steam of rice as their share; he should simply smell (the pinḍas). That as if does not amount to eating or non-eating. The pitrs when departing (from the śrāddha rite) take away or grant a valiant son. He cuts off the fringe (of a garment to place it on the pinḍas), for the share of Fathers is taking away (what is offered). He (thereby) allots their proper share to the pitrs (and dismisses them). When (the performer) is in the latter part of life (i. e. over 50 years of age) he cuts off hair (from his chest instead of presenting a *daśā*). At that time he is nearer to the pitrs (when above 50 years of age). He offers adoration, because adoration (*namaskāra*) is dear to the pitrs. Adoration to you, O Fathers, for vigour; adoration to you, O fathers, for life; adoration to you, O fathers, for *svadhā*; adoration to you, O fathers, for ardour; adoration, O fathers, for the terrible! O fathers! here is adoration to you. This (pinḍapitryajña) is indeed a sacrifice of men (i. e. sacrifice to departed men) and other sacrifices belong to the gods." In the Tai. Br. I. 4. 10 the Pitryajña performed in *sākamedha* is praised (in 2) and further on it is said that *Rtus* (seasons) are pitrs and they offered pitryajña to Prajāpati, their father. This passage supports the provision made in Manu and some of the digests that the *Rtus* are to be identified with pitrs and obeisance is to be made to them.⁹⁶⁰

960. तस्मात्साकमेधैर्यजमानः इदावत्सरीणां स्वस्तिमाशास्त इत्याशासीत । यत्पितृयज्ञेन यजते देवानेव तदन्ववस्यति । 2...अथर्तवः पितरः प्रजापतिं पितरं पितृयज्ञेनायजन् । त एतं लोकमजयन् यस्मिन्नुतवः । यत्पितृयज्ञेन यजते एतमेव लोकं जयति यस्मिन्नुतवः । अतस्मादेव साधुयमुपैति । तै. ब्रा. I. 4.10.8. The word पितृयज्ञ here and in तै. सं. III. 2.2.3, मै. सं. I.10.17 (यदेष पितृयज्ञस्तेनैवास्य पितरोऽभीष्टाः प्रीता भवन्ति) means a sacrifice

(Continued on the next page)

The Sat. Br. (II. 4. 2) contains the following somewhat fuller account of the Piṇḍa-pitṛyajña, omitting legendary or other irrelevant matters:—When the moon is not seen either in the east or in the west, then he (the performer of the Darśa sacrifice) presents food to the Fathers in each month He presents it in the afternoon. The forenoon indeed belongs to the gods; the midday to men; and the afternoon to the Fathers; therefore he presents (food to the Fathers) in the afternoon. While seated behind the Gārhapatya fire with his face turned towards the south and the sacred thread on his right shoulder he takes that material (for the offering from the cart). Thereupon he rises from thence and threshes the rice while standing north of the Dakṣiṇa fire and facing the south. Only once does he clean the rice, for it is once for all that the fathers have passed away. He then boils it. While it stands on (the Dakṣiṇa fire) he pours some clarified butter on it. After removing it (from the fire) he offers to the gods two oblations in the fire Here he is engaged in a sacrifice to the Fathers; hence he thereby propitiates the gods and being permitted by the gods, he presents that food to the Fathers. He offers to both Agni and Soma ... He offers with the formula 'To Agni, the carrier of *kavya* (what is offered to the Manes), svāhā!', 'To Soma accompanied by the Fathers, svāhā!' (Vāj. S. II. 29). He then puts the pot-ladle (*mekṣaṇa*) on the fire, that being in lieu of the *Sviṣṭakṛt*. Thereafter he draws (with the *sphya*, the wooden sword) one line south of the Dakṣiṇa fire, that being in lieu of the altar. He then lays down a firebrand at the further (south) end of the line. For, were he to present that food to the Fathers without having laid down a firebrand, the Asuras and Rākṣasas would certainly tamper with it. ... He lays it down with the text 'whatsoever Asuras roam about being attracted by the *svadhā* (offering to Fathers), assuming various shapes, be they large-bodied or small-bodied, may Agni expel them from this world (Vāj. S. II. 30) ... He then takes the water jar and makes the Fathers wash (their hands) merely saying 'N. N., wash thyself' (naming) the sacrificer's father; 'N. N. wash thyself (naming the sacrificer's) grandfather; 'N. N., wash thyself

(Continued from the last page)

offered to the manes, while it is doubtful whether in Rg X. 16. 10 the word पितृयज्ञ means the same thing. But as the verse that immediately follows (Rg. X. 16.11) mentions pitṛs in the plural, it looks as if the meaning of पितृयज्ञ being well known was used in a secondary sense in Rg. X. 16.10.

(naming) the sacrificer's great-grandfather. As one would pour out water (for a guest) when he is about to take food, so in this case. Now those (stalks of sacrificial grass) are severed with one stroke and cut off near the root; the top belongs to the gods, the middle part to men and the root part (of darbhas) to the fathers. Therefore they are cut off near the roots He spreads them along with the line with their tops towards the south. Thereon he presents (to the fathers the three round cakes of rice). He presents thus:—for the gods they offer thus: for men they ladle out; and in the case of the fathers they do in this very way; therefore he presents (the cakes to the fathers) thus. With 'N. N., this for thee!' he presents one cake to the sacrificer's father. Some add 'for those that come after thee', but let him not say this, since he himself is one of those to whom it would be offered in common. Let him therefore merely say 'N. N., this for thee!' as to the sacrificer's father; 'N. N., this for thee' as to his grandfather; 'N. N., this for thee' as to his great-grandfather...He then mutters 'Here, O fathers, regale yourselves; like bulls come hither each to his own share!' (Vāj. S. II. 31). Whereby he says 'Eat each his own share'. He then turns round to the left so as to face the opposite (north) side; for the fathers are far away from men; and thereby he also is far away (from the fathers). 'Let him remain (standing with bated breath) until his breath fail' say some; 'for thus far extends the vital energy'. However, having remained so far a moment—he again turns round (to the right) and mutters 'the Fathers have regaled themselves; like bulls they have come each to his own share' (Vāj. S. II. 31); whereby what he says is 'they have eaten each his own share'. Thereupon he takes the water jar and makes them wash themselves (by pouring water on the piṇḍas), merely saying 'N. N., wash thyself' (naming) the sacrificer's father; 'N. N. wash thyself' (naming) his grandfather; 'N. N., wash thyself' (naming) his paternal great-grandfather. Even as one would pour out (water for a guest). When he has taken his meal, so it is here. He then pulls down the tuck (of the sacrificer's garment) and performs obeisance. The tuck is sacred to the Fathers; therefore he performs obeisance to them after pulling down the tuck. ... Six times he performs obeisance, for there are six seasons and the fathers are the seasons. He mutters 'Give us houses, O fathers', for the fathers are the rulers of houses; and this is the prayer for blessing at this sacrificial performance. After the

pindas have been put back (in a dish) the sacrificer smells at (the rice); this (smelling) being the sacrificer's share. The stalks of darbha cut with one stroke he puts on the fire; and he also throws away the firebrand on to the fire.^{960a}

It will be noticed that many of the fundamental conceptions of a pārvaṇa-śrāddha are very clearly brought out in the Śat. Br. Wearing the sacred thread on the right shoulder, afternoon as the proper time, cleansing the paddy only once, boiling the rice on the Dakṣiṇa fire, offering into the same fire two oblations to the gods first, the two formulas of presentation to Agni Kavyavāhana and to Soma Pitṛmat, drawing a line or

960 a. अथैनं (प्रजापतिं) पितरः प्राचीनावीतिनः सव्यं जान्वाच्योपासीदंस्तानब्रवी-
न्मासि मासि वोशनं स्वधा वो मनो जवो वश्चन्द्रमा वो ज्योतिरिति । शतपथ II. 4. 2. 2...
मासि मास्येव पितृभ्यो ददतो यदैवैष न पुरस्ताच्च पश्चाद्दृशेऽथैभ्यो ददाति...(7) ।...स वा
अपराह्णे ददाति पूर्वाह्णे वै देवानां मध्यन्दिनो मनुष्याणामपराह्णः पितृणां तस्मादपराह्णे ददाति ।
स जघनेन गार्हपत्यं प्राचीनावीती भूत्वा दक्षिणासीन एतं गृह्णाति । स तत एवोपोत्थायोत्तरेणा-
न्वाहार्यपचनं दक्षिणा तिष्ठन्नवहन्ति सकृत् फलीकरोति सकृदु ह्येव पराश्रः पितरस्तस्मात्सकृत्
फलीकरोति । (9) तं श्रपयति तस्मिन्नाधिश्रित आज्यं प्रत्यानयति... । (10) स उद्वास्याग्नौ द्वे
आहुती जुहोति देवेभ्यः । ...अथैतत्पितृयज्ञेनेवाचारीत्...स देवैः प्रसृतोऽथैतत्पितृभ्यो ददाति । ...
(11) स वाग्रये सोमाय च जुहोति... । (12) स जुहोति । अग्रये कव्यवाहनाय स्वाहा सोमाय
पितृभ्यो स्वाहेत्यग्नौ मेक्षणमभ्यादधाति तत्स्विष्टकृद्भाजनमथ दक्षिणेनान्वाहार्यपचनं सकृदु-
ल्लिखति तद्वेदिभाजनम्... । (13) अथ परस्तादुल्लुक्कं निदधाति । स यदनिधायोल्लुक्कमथै-
तत्पितृभ्यो दद्यादसुररक्षसानि हैषामेतद्विमथनीरन्... । (14) स निदधाति । ये रूपाणि प्रति-
मुञ्चमाना असुराः सन्तः स्वधया चरन्ति । परापुरो निपुरो ये भरन्त्याग्निष्ठाँल्लोकात्प्रणुदात्यस्मा-
दिति ।... । (15) अथोदपात्रमादायावनेजयति । असाववनेनिक्ष्वेत्येव यजमानस्य पितरमसाव-
वनेनिक्ष्वेति पितामहमसाववनेनिक्ष्वेति प्रपितामहं तद्यथाशिष्यतेऽभिषिञ्चेदेवं तत् । (16) अथ
सकृदाच्छिन्नान्युपभूलं दिनानि भवन्ति अग्रमिव वै देवानां मध्यमिव मनुष्याणां मूलमिव पितृणां
तस्मादुपभूलं दिनानि भवन्ति... । (17) तानि दक्षिणोपस्तृणाति । तत्र ददाति स वा इति
ददातीतीव वै देवेभ्यो जुह्वत्युद्धरन्ति मनुष्येभ्योऽथैवं पितृणां तस्मादिति ददाति । (18) स
ददाति । असावेतत्त इत्येव यजमानस्य पित्रे ये च त्वामन्वित्यु हैक आहुस्तदु तथा न ब्रूयात्स्वयं
वै तेषां सह येषां सह । तस्मादु ब्रूयादसावेतत्त इत्येव यजमानस्य पित्रेऽसावेतत्त इति पितामहा-
यासावेतत्त इति प्रपितामहाय... । (19) तत्र जपति । अत्र पितरो मादयध्वं यथाभागमावृषा-
यध्वामिति यथाभागमश्रीतेत्येवैतदाह । (20) अथ पराङ् पर्यावर्तते । तिर इव वै पितरो मनुष्येभ्य-
स्तिर इवैतद्भवति स वा आतामितोरासीतेत्याहुरेतावान्हासुरिति स वै सुहृत्तमेवासित्वा । (21)
अथोपपल्लय जपति । अमीमदन्त पितरो यथाभागमावृषायिषतेति यथाभागमाशिषुरित्येवै-
तदाह । (22) अथोदपात्रमादायावनेजयति । असाववनेनिक्ष्वेत्येव यजमानस्य पितरमसाववने-
निक्ष्वेति पितामहमसाववनेनिक्ष्वेति प्रपितामहं तद्यथा जक्षुषेऽभिषिञ्चेदेवं तत् । (23) अथ नीवि-
सुहृद्भ्य नमस्करोति । पितृदेवत्या वै नीविस्तस्माच्चीविमुहृद्भ्य नमस्करोति...षट्कृत्वा नमस्करोति
षड्वा ऋतव ऋतवः पितरः...गृहाजः पितरो दत्तेति गृहाणां ह पितर ईशते । एता एतस्याग्नीः
कर्मणोऽथावजिघ्रति प्रत्यवधाय पिण्डान् स यजमानभागोऽग्नौ सकृदाच्छिन्नान्यभ्यादधाति
पुनरुल्लुक्कमपि सृजति । (24).

furrow to the south of the Dakṣiṇa fire, laying down a firebrand, making the three paternal ancestors wash (*avanejana*),⁹⁶¹ darbha grass severed from near the root, spreading the darbhas on the line or furrow and offering three pinḍas to the three ancestors to regale themselves, turning away from the pinḍas for a moment and then resuming his position and saying that the ancestors have regaled themselves, offering water for washing (*pratayavanejana*), pulling down the tuck and performing obeisance six times (and identifying the Fathers with seasons) and praying to the Fathers to bestow houses, smelling the boiled rice, throwing the darbhas and firebrand into the fire—these are the principal matters even now in the Pārvaṇa-śrāddha performed by students of the Śukla Yajurveda, although several other details (such as the introduction of the mother's paternal ancestors) and some mantras are added. The Kātyāyana Sr. IV. 1. closely follows the Sat. Br., but adds certain details viz. he folds his hands and repeats the six mantras (Vāj. S. II. 32 'namo vah pitaro rasāya' &c.) throwing three threads on each pinḍa with the mantra 'etadvah' (Vāj. S. II. 32) or the woollen fringe of a garment or hair from the chest of the sacrificer when he is beyond fifty years of age, sprinkling water on the pinḍas or on the ground near them with (Vāj. S. II. 34)⁹⁶².

The other *samhitās* also contain identical mantras. For example, the Vāj. S. II. 29-34⁹⁶³ are mantras most of which are

961. On 'wash thyself' the com. on कात्या. श्रौ. सू. IV. 1. 10 says 'अपसव्यं यथा स्यात् हस्तस्य सव्यप्रदेशाद्वक्षिणप्रदेशेनोदकनिनयनं यथा स्यात्तथाङ्गुष्ठप्रदेशिन्योरन्तरालेनावनेजयति अवानिक्ताङ्गुलीं करोति पिण्डदानाय । असाविति सम्बुद्धयन्त-गोत्रनामादेशपूर्वकं, असुकसगोत्र यजमानस्य पितरसुकसर्मन्त्रवनेनिक्ष्व' . Some other sūtra-kāras provide असुकगोत्र for असुकसगोत्र.

962. About the use of the words 'those that come after thee' vide n. 781 for the Tai. S. passage where those words are employed and also notes 1040, 1052, 1053. 'He presents them thus'—When the pinḍa is to be offered to the Fathers it is done with the *pitṛtīrtha* (the part of the hand between the thumb and forefinger). This is indicated by the teacher by means of a gesture. 'He then pulls down the tuck—' The sacrificer (or adhvaryu) puts on an upper garment when the rite commences, the *daśā* or unwoven edge of which he tucks under the waistband. This he loosens or pulls out at this stage. It will have been noticed that the Sat. Br. in dealing with Pinḍapitṛyajña employs Vāj. S. II. 29 (except 'apahatā asurā rakṣāmsi vediśadaḥ'), 30, 31.

963. अग्नये कव्यवाहनाय स्वाहा सोमाय पितृमते स्वाहा । अपहता असुकसगोत्राणि वेदिषदः ॥ ये रूपाणि ॥...प्रणुदात्यस्मात् ॥ अत्र पितरो मादयध्वं...वृषायिषत ॥ नमो वः पितरो रसाय...नमो वः पितरो मन्यवे नमो वः पितरः पितरो नमो वो गृहाज्ञः पितरो नमो वः ।
(Continued on the next page)

employed in the Piṇḍapitṛyajña in Sākamedha⁹⁶⁴. Similarly, in the Maitrāyaṇī Samhitā⁹⁶⁵ I. 10.3. 10-21 these are mantras for the pitṛyajña employed in Sākamedha many of which are the same as in Vāj. S. or Tai. Br. M. S. I. 10. 3.11 is the same as Vāj. S. III 52 and M. S. I. 10. 3. 17-20 are the same as Vāj. S. III. 51, 53-55. M. S. I. 10. 3. 13-14 greatly resemble Vāj. S. II. 32 and Tai. Br. I. 3. 10. 8.

Coming to the sūtra literature, it is best to begin with the procedure of *pārvaṇaśrāddha* as described in the Āśv. gr. IV. 7-8⁹⁶⁶. It is stated by the Anākulā on Āp. gr. 21.1 that the

(Continued from the last page)

वः पितरो देष्मैतद्वः पितरो वास आधत्त ॥ आधत्त...सत् ॥ ऊर्जं वहन्तीरमृतं घृतं पयः कीलालं परिस्नुतम् । स्वधा स्थ तर्पयत मे पितृन् ॥ वाज. सं. II. 29-34. The verse ये रूपाणि and the mantras अन्न...वृषायिषत are quoted above in n. 960a from the शतपथब्रा. For नमो वः पितरो, vide n. 959 and for आधत्त...सत् n. 780. Both the commentators, Uvaṭa and Mahīdhara, of Vāj. S., hold that rasa, śoṣa and the other four are to be identified with the six seasons from spring (madhu etc.) and some of the digests provide for the worship of ऋतु in śrāddha in this way. The कात्या. श्रौ. सू. (V. 9.24-25) states that with this mantra (Vāj. S. II. 32) the performer folds his hands or makes six obeisances. Vide Hemādri (Śr. pp. 1459-60) who quotes the Vāj. S. (II. 32) and Tai. Br. and explains them.

964. अक्षक्षमीमदन्त...ते हरी ॥ सुसन्दृशं...ते हरी ॥ मनो न्वाह्वामहे नाराशंसेन स्तोमेन । पितृणां च मन्मभिः ॥ आ न एतु मनः पुनः कृत्वे दक्षाय जीवसे । ज्योक् च सूर्यं दृशे ॥ पुनर्नः पितरो मनो ददातु दैव्यो जनः । जीवं व्रातं सचेमहि ॥ वाज. सं. III. 51-55. वाज. सं. III. 51-52 are the same as Rg. I. 82.2-3.

965. मै. सं. I. 10.3.13-14 are as follows: अमीमदन्त पितरो नमो वः पितर इषे, नमो वः पितर ऊर्जं, नमो वः पितरः शुष्माय, नमो वः पितरो रसाय, नमो वः पितरो यज्जीवं तस्मै, नमो वः पितरो यज्जोरं तस्मै, स्वधा वः पितरो नमो नमो वः पितरः । एषा शुष्माकं पितर इमा अस्माकं जीवा वो जीवन्त इह सन्तः स्याम । Compare also अथर्ववेद 18.4. 81-85.

966. अथातः पार्वणे श्राद्धे काम्य आभ्युदयिक एकोद्विष्टे वा । ब्राह्मणान् श्रुतशील... सर्वेषाम् । काममनाद्ये । पिण्डैर्व्याख्यातम् । अपः प्रदाय । दर्भान् द्विगुणभुशानासनं प्रदाय । अपः प्रदाय । तैजसाश्ममयमृण्मयेषु त्रिषु पात्रेष्वेकद्रव्येषु वा दर्भान्तर्हितेष्वप आसिच्य शन्नो देवीरभिष्टय इत्यनुमन्त्रितासु तिलानावपति तिलोऽसि सोमदेवत्यो गोसवे देवानिर्मितः । प्रत्नवद्भिः प्रत्तः स्वधया पितृनिर्माळोकान् प्रीणयाहि नः स्वधा नम इति प्रसव्येन । इतर पाण्यङ्गुष्ठान्तरेणोपवीतित्वाद् दक्षिणेन वा सव्योपगृहीतेन पितरिदं ते अर्घ्यं पितामहेदं ते अर्घ्यं प्रपितामहेदं ते अर्घ्यमिति । अपूर्वम् । ताः प्रतिग्राहयिष्यन्सकृत्सकृत् स्वधा अर्घ्या इति । प्रसृष्टा अनुमन्त्रयेत या दिव्या आपः पृथिवी सम्बभूवुर्या अन्तरिक्षा उत पार्थिवीर्याः । हिरण्यवर्णा यज्ञियास्ता न आपः शंस्योना भवन्त्वाति । संस्रवान्समवनीय ताभिरद्भिः पुत्रकामो मुखमनक्ति । नोद्धरेत्प्रथमं पात्रं पितृणामर्घ्यपातितम् । आवृतास्तत्र तिष्ठन्ति पितरः शौनकोऽब्रवीत् ॥ एतस्मिन्काले गन्धमाल्यधूपदीपाच्छादनानां प्रदानम् । उद्धृत्य घृताक्तमक्षमनुज्ञापयत्यग्नौ करिष्ये करवै करवाणीति प्रत्यभ्यनुज्ञा क्रियतां कुरुष्व कुर्विति । अथाग्नौ जुहोति यथोक्तं पुरस्तात् । अभ्यनुज्ञायां पाणिष्वेव वा । अग्निमुखा वै देवाः पाणिमुखाः पितर इति हि ब्राह्मणम् । यदि पाणिष्वान्तेऽप्यनुज्ञा-मनुदिशन्ति अन्नमन्ने । सृष्टं दत्तमृधुकामिति । तृप्ताञ्ज्वात्वा मधुमतीः श्रावयेदक्षक्षमीमदन्तेति च । सम्पन्नमिति पृष्ट्वा यद्यदन्नमुपभुक्तं तत्तत्स्थालीपाकेन सह पिण्डार्थमुद्धृत्य शेषं निवेदयेत् ।

(Continued on the next page)

monthly śrāddha (māsi-śrāddha) is the prakṛti of Aṣṭakā and other śrāddhas in which three ancestors are to be invoked. It is as follows: Now then at a Pārvaṇa-śrāddha, or at a śrāddha celebrated for securing some desired object, or at an Ābhyudayika-śrāddha or at an Ekoddiṣṭaśrāddha, the performer causes to sit down brāhmaṇas who are endowed with learning, moral character and proper conduct or who are endowed with (at least) one (of these three characteristics), who have been invited already in proper time, who have taken a bath, whose feet are washed (by the performer) and who have sipped water (taken ācamana), as representatives of (or equal to) the Fathers, with their faces turned to the north, one for each of the Fathers, or two for each or three for each. The larger the number of brāhmaṇas invited the greater is the fruit or reward. But in no case (should he invite) only one for all (the Fathers); or he may invite only one brāhmaṇa except at the first śrāddha ⁹⁶⁷. By the exposition of the Piṇḍapitṛyajña the rules for the pārvaṇa-śrāddha have been declared. Having given water (into the hands of the invited brāhmaṇa or brāhmaṇas after they sit down) and double-folded darbha blades as a seat (on which the darbhas are to be kept), having again given water to them and having poured water into three vessels of metal (silver &c.), of stone and of earthenware or into three vessels made of the same substance (out of these three) which are covered over with darbha blades and having recited (over the water in the vessels) the verse 'śanno &c.' (Rg. X. 9.4) ⁹⁶⁸ the performer puts sesamum grains into the water with the mantra "Sesamum art thou, Soma is thy deity, at the Gosava ⁹⁶⁹

(Continued from the last page)

अभिमतेऽनुमते वा भुक्तवत्स्वनाचान्तेषु पिण्डाज्जिदध्यात् । आचान्तेष्वेके । प्रकीर्यान्नमुपवीर्यो स्वधोच्यतामिति विसृजेत् । अस्तु स्वधेति वा । आश्व. गृ. सू. IV. 7-8. For the second and third sūtras vide n. 903. कृतपच्छौचान्-मनु IV. 76 states आर्द्रपादस्तु भुञ्जीत, which is almost the same as अनुशासनपर्व 104.61-62. The first half of the verse या दिव्या आपः occurs in तै. ब्रा. II. 7. 15. 4. The ब्राह्मणसर्वस्व reads प्रत्नमद्भिः पृक्तः and प्रीणाहि (folio 78), and explains अद्भिः पृक्तः जलेन मिश्रितः पितृन् लोकान् पितृपितामहादीन् प्रत्नं चिरकालं स्वधया स्वधोच्चारणेन प्रीणाहि प्रीतान् कुरु. This yields a good sense. Different editions of the आश्व. सू. number the sūtras differently. Here the Nirn. edition of 1894 is relied upon.

967. Vide n. 903 above for the several meanings of 'anādye'.

968. The verse is शं नो देवीरभिष्टय आपो भवन्तु पीतये । शंयोरभिष्टयः । अ. श्र. X. 9. 4. This मन्त्र is recited only once.

969. For the गोसव sacrifice, vide H. of Dh. vol. II. p. 1213 n. 2644. The mantra about sesamum is repeated over each of the three vessels.



sacrifice thou hast been created by the gods, thou hast been offered by persons who are like ancient ones; through the *svadhā* mayst thou make the Fathers and these worlds pleased with us! *svadhā*! Adoration!" The different items of the rite are performed from the right to the left⁹⁷⁰. With the part of the other hand (i. e. left) between the thumb⁹⁷¹ (and forefinger) since he wears the sacred thread over the left shoulder, or with the right which he seizes with the left, (he offers the *Arghya* water) to Fathers with the words 'Father, this is the *arghya* for thee; Grand-father, this is the *arghya* for thee; Great-grand-father, this is the *arghya* for thee; after first offering (ordinary) water to the Fathers. When about to induce the brāh-

970. The rules about Pindapitryañja have been set forth in Āśv. Sr. S. II. 6. Nārāyaṇa notes (on Āśv. gr. IV. 7.2) that Āśvalāyana treats of only the procedure relating to the rite for pitṛs and that he does not at all refer to the dinner given to *daiva* or Vaiśvadeva brāhmaṇas at the time of śrāddha. It is therefore possible that feeding *daiva* brāhmaṇas was added to the ancient ritual, though it must be said that Manu III. 125, Yāj. I. 224-28 and Vas. XI. 27 prescribe such feeding. Dr. Caland (in 'Ahnencult' p. 161) asserts that he can prove that the detail of feeding *daiva* brāhmaṇas spread from the Śrāddhasūtra of Kātyāyana to the other sūtras and he relies on the fact that Kātyāyana (in Kaṇḍikā 2) prescribes that the *viśve devāḥ* should be invoked with the verse 'Viśve devāsa āgata' and the performer should mutter the verse 'viśve devāḥ śṛnutemam' which are respectively Vāj. S. VII. 34 and XXXIII. 53. But Dr. Caland tries to prove too much. The first verse occurs twice in the Rg. (II. 41. 13 and VI 52.7) and the second occurs in Rg. VI. 52. 13, Tai. S. II. 4. 14. 5. They are not found only in the Vāj. S. as Dr. Caland seems to have thought. It is possible that other works took over those mantras from the Rgveda or the Tai. S. It may also be noted that Yāj. I. 229 mentions only 'Viśve devāsa' and specifies that it is a ṛk (and not a mantra or yajus). So Yāj. at least does not appear to have borrowed the prescriptions of Kātyāyana. It is not necessary to examine the other arguments.

971. The part of the hand between the thumb and forefinger is called पितृतीर्थ and water is offered by that part of the hand for the pitṛs; vide H. of Dh. vol. II. pp. 316 note 652. नारायण explains इतरपाण्यङ्गुष्ठा in two ways as follows: 'येन पाणिना कर्म करोति दक्षिणेन वा सव्येन वा तस्मिन्मन्त्रे यज्ञोपवीते स्थिते प्राचीनावीती भवति ततोऽस्यस्मिन्मन्त्रे स्थिते उपवीती भवति। अत्र तुपवीतित्वाप्राचीनावीतित्वसिद्धयर्थं सव्यपाणिपितृतीर्थेन दातव्यमित्यर्थः। अथवा सव्यपाणेः शिष्टगर्हितत्वाद्दक्षिणं पाणिं सव्येन पाणिना गृहीत्वा दक्षिणेनैव पाणिनोपवीत्येवाह्यं प्रयच्छेत् ॥'. The कल्पतरु. (on आ. p. 148) explains: प्रसव्येन वामेन हस्तेन। तत्रापि न केवलं वामेनैव अपि तु इतर पाण्यङ्गुष्ठान्तरेण इतरस्य दक्षिणस्य पाणेः अङ्गुष्ठान्तरेण पितृतीर्थेन। तेनैतदुक्तं भवति। वामहस्तेन अर्घ्यपात्रं धृत्वा दक्षिणहस्तेन पितृतीर्थं संस्पृश्य यथा ब्राह्मणहस्तेषु जलं पतति तथा देयमिति। अर्घ्यं is respectful offering of water or water with husked rice grains, flowers etc. to gods or venerable persons.

manas to accept the arghya water he should once only (for each brāhmaṇa or group of brāhmaṇas for each of the Fathers) say to them 'svadhā! these are arghya waters' and then over the waters that are poured out he recites the verse (separately for each brāhmaṇa) 'The heavenly waters which have been produced on the earth, in the aerial regions and the waters that are terrestrial, that are golden-hued, and fit for sacrifice—may these waters bring us welfare and be favourable to us'. Pouring together (in the first vessel) what has been left in the vessels (for holding arghya water) he anoints his face with that water if he (the performer) desires that a son be born to him. 'He should not remove the first vessel into which the arghya water for the Fathers has been poured (till the end of the rite). The Fathers dwell therein concealed; thus did Śaunaka say' 972. Just at that time the gifts of sandalwood paste, flowers, incense, lamp, and clothes are to be offered (to the brāhmaṇas). 973 Having taken some food (from the Sthālīpāka prepared for Pindapitryajña) and smeared it with ghee he asks the brāhmaṇas' permission in the words 'I shall offer it in the fire' or in the words 'let me offer in the fire'. The permission is given (by the brāhmaṇas) in the words 'Let it be done' or in the words 'do it'. He then sacrifices in the fire as stated before 974 or (if the brāhmaṇas give permission) in the hands of the brāhmaṇas; since the Brāhmaṇa text says 'fire is verily the mouth of the Fathers'. If he offers in the hands of the brāh-

972. 'He should not remove etc.' नारायण gives two explanations of this verse of Saunaka 'तृतीयेन पात्रेण प्रथमपात्रस्यापिधानमिच्छन्ति। अन्ये तु तत्रोत तृतीयार्थे सप्तमी। अर्घ्यपतितं प्रथमं पात्रं न्यग्बिलं कुर्यात् तच्च नोद्धरेदा समाप्तेरिति व्याचक्षुः।' आश्व. गृ. IV. 8. 14.

973. Gifts of गन्ध etc.—नारायण notes on आश्व. गृ. IV, 7. 10 that from अर्घ्यदान up to (excluding) the gift of the five articles गन्ध etc. the performer is यज्ञोपवीती (i. e. wears the sacred thread on the left shoulder and under the right arm). When giving these he becomes प्राचीनावीती (i. e. wears the sacred thread on the right shoulder and under the left arm).

974. यथोक्तं पुरस्तात्. The reference is to आश्व. श्रौ. सू. II. 6. 12 which reads: प्राचीनावीतीध्ममुपसमाधाय मेक्षणेनादायावदानसम्पदा जुहोति। सोमाय पितृमते स्वधा नमः अग्नये कव्यवाहनाय स्वधा नम इति.' The word अथ in आश्व. गृ. IV. 8. 4 indicates that all the items of the पिण्डपितृयज्ञ upto होम (i. e. excluding it) are performed before this stage is reached. If the performer has no sacred fire and offers into the hands of the brāhmaṇas the same mantras are employed. The आश्व. श्रौ. सू. II. 6. 13 allows an option viz. the word स्वाहा may be used but then the order of मन्त्रs will be अग्नये कव्यवाहनाय स्वाहा, सोमाय पितृमते स्वाहा and he will be यज्ञोपवीती.

maṇas⁹⁷⁵, then he assigns other food to them after they have sipped water and the food (that remains) is mixed with the food that is served to the brāhmaṇas, since it is said 'what is abandoned and given to (brāhmaṇas)⁹⁷⁶ brings prosperity'. When he sees that the brāhmaṇas are satiated (with the food served at the dinner) he (the performer) should recite to the brāhmaṇas the verses containing the word 'madhu' (Rg. I. 90.⁹⁷⁷ 6-8) and also the verse 'they have eaten, they have enjoyed themselves' (Rg. I. 82.2). Having asked the brāhmaṇas 'was the dinner perfect?' (they should reply that it was) and then having taken (portions of) the different foods that were enjoyed by the brāhmaṇas together with the sthālīpāka food in order⁹⁷⁸ to make lumps (piṇḍas) thereof he should present all (the rest of the food) to the brāhmaṇas. After the brāhmaṇas have either accepted (the rest of the food) or given him permission (to use it for his family and friends), and after they have finished eating he should, before they have sipped water (performed ācamana after finishing their dinner), put down the lumps⁹⁷⁹ (piṇḍas) for the Fathers. According to some teachers (piṇḍas are put down) after the brāhmaṇas have sipped water (on getting up from the dinner). Having strewn the food on the ground (near the remnants of food) and wearing the sacred thread on his left shoulder⁹⁸⁰ he should (after turning the first vessel with top upside and after giving *dakṣiṇā* to the brāhmaṇas) bid adieu to the brāhmaṇas saying 'utter Om!

975. 'If in the hands.' मनु III. 212 provides that if a man has no Smārta fire, he should offer in the hand of the brāhmaṇa only. सूष्टं is explained by हरदत्त and नारायण as प्रभूतम्.

976. On IV. 8. 7. नारायण remarks: अर्थद्वयमत्र विधातुमिष्टमिति गम्यते। तत्राग्नौ कृत्वा भोजनेषु भोजनार्थमन्यदन्नमनुदिशति ददात्येकोऽर्थः। यदि पाणिहोमः कृतस्तदाचान्तेषु अन्यदन्नं ददातीत्यपरः।

977. Rgveda I. 90. 6-8 (मधुवाता कृतायते etc.) are called मधुमती verses because each contains the word मधु several times.

978. On 'स्थालीपाकेन सह' नारायण observes 'स्थालीपाकेन सहेति नात्रापूर्वः स्थालीपाकश्चोद्यते।...तेन यत्र स्थालीपाको विहितस्तत्र तेन भुक्तशेषेण च पिण्डनिपरणं भवति। यत्र तु स्थालीपाकविधिर्नास्ति तत्र भुक्तशेषेणैव केवलेन निपरणं भवति।' In some श्राद्धs such as काम्यश्राद्ध, आभ्युदयिक, अष्टमीश्राद्ध and एकोद्दिष्ट there is no स्थालीपाक.

979. 'He should put down the lumps'. Here आश्वलायन appears to differ from मनु III. 253, 260.

980. The word 'उपवीय' shows that till then the performer was प्राचीनावीती.



Svadhā' or he should say 'Om! Svadhā!' (and they should reply 'Om! Svadhā!').^{980a}

From considerations of space it is impossible to set out all the differences among the several gr̥hyasūtras of the R̥gveda, of the Taittirīya śākhā (viz. Baudhāyana, Āp., Hir., Bharadvāja and Vaikhānasa), of the Vājasaneyā śākhā (such as Śrāddhasūtra of Kātyāyana), of the Sāmaveda (such as Gobhila and Khādīra) and of the Atharvaveda (being Kauśika sūtra). A few matters may be set out by way of illustration. The Āp. gr. (21. 3-4)⁹⁸¹ states that (after the brāhmaṇas are invited for śrāddha dinner) from the food prepared for the dinner a portion is taken out in a vessel and therefrom seven āhutis are cast into the fire with the seven mantras beginning with 'yan me mātā' (in Āp. M. P. II. 19. 1-7), the first two for the father, the next two for the grand-father, next two for the great-grand-father and the 7th to pitṛs in general with svāhā (but without naming any one) and then six oblations of clarified butter are offered with the six formulas beginning with 'svāhā pitre' (Āp. M. P. II. 19. 8-13). Thus the agnaukarāṇa in Āp. consists of two parts viz. āhutis of food and of clarified butter, while in Āśv. it is made only with food. Then the performer should touch all food (cooked food and the remainder of what is employed for offering into fire) with the three mantras 'eṣa te tata madhumān' (Āp. M. P. II. 19. 14-16), he should make the brāhmaṇas touch the food served to each with the Yajus formula 'the earth is thy vessel' (Āp. M. P. 2. 20. 1) quoted in n. 992 below.

Āp. gr. prescribes the mantra, 'putrān pautrān' (Āp. M. P. II. 20. 24) for moistening the piṇḍas, while Baud. gr. and Vaikhānasa gr. (IV. 6) employ the mantra 'ūrjam vahantīr' (Vāj. S. II. 34) for the same purpose. It may be noted that

980 a. It will be noticed that Āśv. omits several details viz. (1) he does not say that the brāhmaṇas for all the gods are to be seated, facing the east; (2) he mentions no mantra such as 'ye agnidadghā &c.:' (3) nothing is said about *dakṣiṇā* or about the performer following the brāhmaṇas a few paces and then returning with their permission.

981. The आप. गृ. 20. 9 sets down the whole procedure very succinctly after the brāhmaṇas have taken the dinner as follows: भुक्तवतोऽनुव्रज्य प्रदक्षिणीकृत्य द्वैधं दक्षिणाग्रान् दधान् संस्तीर्य तेषूत्तरैरपो दत्त्वोत्तरैर्दक्षिणापवर्गान् पिण्डान् दत्त्वा पूर्ववदुत्तरैरपो दत्त्वोत्तरैरुपस्थायोत्तरयोदपात्रेण त्रिः प्रसव्यं परिषिच्य न्युव्रज्य पात्राण्युत्तरं यजुरनवाह्यं यजुषा शिष्यं प्रासादार्थं प्राश्नीयात् । The mantras referred to here occur in आप. म. प. II. 19. 1 to II. 20. 26.

these sūtras which belong to the Taittirīya śākhā employ a verse from another recension viz. the Śukla Yajurveda.

The Hir. Gr. (II. 10-13) is more elaborate than the Āp. Gr. and not only sets out at length many of the mantras in Āp. M. P. II. 19-20, but adds some more. The Śrāddhasūtra of Kātyāyana (1-3) sets out the procedure of the monthly śrāddha almost in the same way as the Yājñavalkyasmṛti (which is set out below). It states that in the monthly śrāddha first come the daiva rites and then the various items occur as in the Pinda-pitryajña 'pindapitryajña-vad-upacāraḥ' (first sūtra of the 2nd kaṇḍikā). Some details which it contains (and Yāj. does not expressly mention) may be set out here. It gives in full the mantras 'tilosi', 'yā divyā' (both of which occur in Aśv. gr.), 'pṛthivī to pātram' (which is Āp. M. P. II. 20.1). It prescribes that in addition to the Gāyatrī and the Madhumatī verses the word 'madhu' should be repeated thrice. The holy texts to be repeated while the brāhmaṇas are engaged in eating according to Kātyāyana are the Gāyatrī (once or thrice), the five Rakṣoghñī verses (Rg. IV. 4. 1-5, Vāj. S. XIII. 9-13, Tai. S. I. 2. 14. 1-2), Puruṣasūkta, the Apratiratha hymn (Rg. X. 103. 1-13 = Vāj. S. 17. 33-34, 46 = Tai. S. IV. 6. 4. 1-4) and others. It expressly states that the *svadhāvācana* (Yāj. I. 244) relates to both paternal and maternal ancestors. Besides the blessing contained in Yāj. I. 246, Kātyāyana provides that the performer is to pray for and the brāhmaṇas are to pronounce two more viz. 'May the pitṛs be kind (lit. not dreadful) to us' and 'May our family prosper'. Dr. Caland in his learned work 'Altindischer Ahnencult' (pp. 150-152) appears inclined to hold that when a sūtrakāra has not actually said anything on certain items in the śrāddha ritual, one has no right to anticipate, on the authority of later authors, that those items existed in the times of that sūtrakāra. I demur to this conclusion. Dr. Caland has attached no weight to the fact that Jaimini (as stated in H. of Dh. vol. III p. 870) laid down the principle that one may include certain items from another śākhā. Jaimini's sūtras cannot be supposed to have laid down those propositions for the first time. Jaimini's sūtras are at least as old as some of the extant śrauta sūtras such as that of Kātyāyana. Therefore hardly any chronological conclusions can be drawn with certainty from the silence of a sūtrakāra as to a certain item in the śrāddha ritual.

We shall now turn to the metrical smṛtis. Manu treats of the procedure of śrāddha at some length in III. 208-265. But



as the procedure prescribed by the Yājñavalkyasmṛti (I. 226-249) is more compact and at the same time more lucid it is set out here. "When the invited brāhmaṇas come in the afternoon the performer having a *pavitra*⁹⁸² in his hand should seat them on seats and make them sip water. The brāhmaṇas invited should be even in number (2, 4 &c.) according to the performer's resources at the *daiva* rite (i. e. the Vaiśvadevika brāhmaṇas should be two, four &c.) and uneven (three or five &c.) at a (pārvaṇa) śrāddha for the *pitṛs*; the brāhmaṇas should be seated in a pure (coudunged) plot screened on all sides and sloping towards the south. At the *daiva* (part of pārvaṇa-śrāddha when Viśve-devāḥ are to be invoked) two brāhmaṇas facing the east should sit down and three brāhmaṇas facing the north should be seated in the rite for the *pitṛs* or only one may be seated for each (i. e. in *daiva* and in *pitṛya*). The same rule applies to a śrāddha for maternal ancestors. In both (pitṛśrāddha and mātāmahaśrāddha) the worship of Viśve-devas may be performed separately or simultaneously⁹⁸³. Then having poured water on the hands of the brāhmaṇas (meant for the rite in honour of viśve-devāḥ) and having given kuśa blades for a seat⁹⁸⁴ (towards their right side on the seat already

982. For the meaning of *pavitra* see H. of Dh. vol. II. p. 657 notes 1553-54. It is a ring-like loop of *darbhas* to be worn in the right hand or in both hands on the finger next to the little finger. The Mit. supplies that the invited brāhmaṇas also should have a *pavitra*. The गोभिलस्मृति I, 28 defines it and is quoted by अपराक pp. 43 and 480.

983. On Yāj. I. 228 'तन्त्रं वा', the मिता. remarks यदा तु द्वावेव ब्राह्मणौ लब्धौ तदा तु वैश्वदेवे पात्रं प्रकल्प्य उभयत्र एकैकं ब्राह्मणं नियुज्यात् । यथाह वसिष्ठः'. Vide p. 403 above for Vas. 11. 30-31 which the मिता. quotes. The विष्णुपुराण III. 15. 16 says: तथा मातामहश्चाद्धं वैश्वदेवसमन्वितम् । कुर्वीत भक्तिसम्पन्नं तन्त्रं वा वैश्वदेविकम् ॥. तन्त्र means उभयोद्देशेन सकृदनुष्ठानम् or as शबर on जै. XI. 1.1 explains 'यत् सकृत् कृतं बहूनामुपकरोति तत् तन्त्रं यथा बहूनां ब्राह्मणानां मध्ये कृतः प्रदीपः'. Yāj. I. 228 contains several options about the number of brāhmaṇas. तन्त्रं वा-If the three paternal ancestors and the three maternal ancestors are to be invoked in one śrāddha one may separately invite two वैश्वदेवब्राह्मणस for पितृत्रय and two वैश्वदेवब्राह्मणस for मातामहत्रय ; or only two ब्राह्मणस may do as वैश्वदेविकब्राह्मणस for both पितृत्रय and मातामहत्रय. Or even one may do as वैश्वदेवब्राह्मण for both.

984. For विष्टर (in या. I. 229), a seat made with 25 darbhas, vide H. of of Dh. vol. II. p. 543 n. 1259. The मिता. says that in addition to the vedic verse, a smārta verse should be recited for invoking the विश्वेदेवाः viz. 'आगच्छन्तु महाभागा विश्वेदेवा महाबलाः । ये यत्र विहिताः श्राद्धे सावधाना भवन्तु ॥'. This verse is स्कन्दपुराण VII. 1. 217. 32-33 and गरुडपुराण I. 218.7. On p. 478 अपराक attributes this स्मार्तमन्त्र to बृहस्पति and to the ब्रह्मपुराण on p. 181. The

(Continued on next page)

occupied), he should, with the permission of the invited brāhmaṇas, invoke the *Viśvedevāḥ* with the verse 'O! all the gods come!' (Rg. II. 41. 13 or VI. 52. 7; Vāj. S. VII. 34). Having scattered on the ground (near the brāhmaṇas representing *Viśve-devāḥ*) barley grains and then having cast into a vessel (of metal &c.) covered with a *pavitra* water with the verse 'śan no devīr' (Rg. X. 9. 4, Vāj. S. 36.12, Tai. Ār. IV. 42.4) and barley grains with the mantra 'Yavosi' (Vāj. S. V. 26, Tai. S. I. 3. 1. 1) and (also sandalwood paste and flowers) he should place in the hands (of the brāhmaṇas) the *arghya*⁹⁸⁵ water with the verse 'yā divyā' (those heavenly waters &c., Tai. Br. II. 7. 15. 4). Then he should pour water into the hand (of the *Vaiśva-deva* brāhmaṇa or brāhmaṇas) for washing the hand and give to them perfumes, flowers, incense, lamp⁹⁸⁶ and garment. Then wearing the sacred thread on the right shoulder⁹⁸⁷ and

(Continued from last page)

कल्पतरु (on आ. pp. 142, 151) also attributes it to both. हेमाद्रि (on आ. p. 1226) quotes it from the ब्रह्मपुराण, while the मद्. पा. p. 574 quotes it as बृहस्पति's. The मिता. notes that this and the following items up to (including) the gift of perfumes and four other things should be done by the performer being यज्ञोपवीती and having his right side towards the brāhmaṇas "एतच्च यज्ञोपवीतिना प्रदक्षिणं च कार्यं 'अपसव्यं ततः कृत्वा पितृणामप्रदक्षिणम्' इति पित्र्ये विशेषस्मरणात् ।" अपसव्यं ततः कृत्वा—is या. I. 232 latter half. हेमाद्रि (on आ. pp. 1257-58) explains 'प्रदक्षिणादन्यदप्रदक्षिणम् । प्रदक्षिणं नामाभिमुखपुरुषवामाङ्गोपलक्षितं प्रदेशं प्रति कर्मणो निर्वहणं यथा पूर्वाभिमुखोपविष्टदैविकपाङ्क्तिर्मूर्धन्यद्विजादारभ्य तत् पाङ्क्तिचरमाद्विजा-पवर्गता.'

985. 'Arghya water'—The मिता. states 'विश्वेदेवा इदं वो अर्घ्यमित्यर्घ्योदकं विनिक्षिपेत्.' The arghya is to be offered to each ब्राह्मण separately as required by गोभिलस्मृति III. 74 'अर्घ्योऽक्षय्योदके चैव पिण्डदानेऽवनेजने । तन्त्रस्य तु निवृत्तिः स्यात्स्वधावाचन एव च ॥'. The printed मिता. reads the मन्त्र as यवोसि धान्यराजो वा, which is not found in the Vāj. S. or other *samhitās*. Similarly, the मिता. reads the मन्त्र 'या दिव्या आपः पयसा' for अर्घ्य, which is probably Rg. VII. 49.2 with the order of words changed. अपरार्क (p. 479) states that if there are two विश्वदेवब्राह्मणस then water and yavas should be put in two vessels and the मन्त्र is to be repeated each time when putting water, putting यवस and at each अर्घ्य. हेमाद्रि (on आ. p. 1229) defines: 'अर्घ्यो नामार्हणीयान. पुरतः संमाननार्थः प्रशस्तद्रव्यप्रक्षेपः'.

986. 'दीपे च विशेषः शङ्खेनोक्तः । घृतेन दीपो दातव्यस्तिलतैलेन वा पुनः । वसामेदोऽर्घ्वं दीपं प्रयत्नेन विवर्जयेत् ॥' मिता. on या. I. 231. The विष्णुधर्मोत्तर has the verse घृतेन (I. 141.12),

987. या. I. 232—अपसव्यं ततः. The Mit. quotes बृहज्जातातप that from hence the performer should face the south 'उदङ्मुखस्तु देवानां पितॄणां दक्षिणामुखं प्रदद्यात् पार्वणे सर्वं देवपूर्वं विधानतः ॥'. 'Double-folded kuśas'—compare

(Continued on next page)

under the left arm (i. e. being *prācināvitī*) the performer should offer to the pitṛs (i. e. to the three brāhmaṇas representing them) double-folded kuśas (with water) for a seat on the left (i. e. on the seats already occupied kuśas should be placed on the left side for a *viṣṭara*), he should then invoke⁹⁸⁸ the pitṛs after taking the permission of the brāhmaṇas with the ṛk 'uśantas-tvā' (Rg. X. 16. 12, Vāj. S. 19. 70, Tai. S. II. 6. 12. 1), and should then recite in a low voice the mantra (*āyantu naḥ pitarah*) 'may the pitṛs come to us' (Vāj. S. 19. 58). The performer, having scattered sesamum seeds all round (the brāhmaṇas) with the mantra 'Apahatā' (Vāj. S. II. 29), should employ sesamum for all purposes where *yavas* were employed (in the daiva part of the ceremony) and should perform all the items such as giving arghya (water for worship) for the pitṛs as before (for the daiva rite). After offering arghya water, he should collect the drops of the arghya water fallen from the hands (or fingers) of the brāhmaṇas in one vessel (the pitṛ vessel), then turn it upside

(Continued from last page)

above (p. 434). The स्कन्दपुराण (VII. 1. 206. 17) provides 'दाने स्नाने जपे होमे भोजने देवतार्चने। देवानामृजवो दर्भाः पितॄणां द्विगुणास्तथा॥' In offering each of the things in daiva or *pitṛya* rite in *śrāddha* water must be given before and after. The मिता. says that here the method called काण्डानुसमय (and not पदार्थानुसमय) has to be followed. These two are dealt with in Jai. V. 2.1-15. Vide H. of Dh. vol. II. pp. 739-740. In this case if there are three brāhmaṇas, water, kuśas and water are all to be given to one, then the same three to the second and the same three to the third. This is काण्डानुसमय. If water is given one after another to the three, then kuśas one after another to them, then water one after another to three, that would be पदार्थानुसमय. काण्ड means पदार्थवर्ग. हेमाद्रि (on आ. pp. 759-766) has an exhaustive and lucid discussion on these two. He states that पदार्थानुसमय is the rule but काण्डानुसमय also has to be followed in certain cases. For example, on p. 764 he says 'चरणप्रक्षालना-चमनप्रदानासनोपवेशनानि पदार्थानुसमयेन । आसनक्षणावाहनार्घगन्धपुष्पधूपदीपाच्छादनानां पदार्थानां कृत्स्नं काण्डं वैश्वदेविकेषु द्विजेष्वपवर्ज्यं पैतृकेष्वारम्भणीयम्' and relies on या. I. 229-234 to show that all items relating to वैश्वदेविकब्राह्मणस are first finished and those relating to पैतृकब्राह्मणस are then taken up i. e. there is काण्डानुसमय as to वैश्वदेविक and पैतृकब्राह्मणस. Vide हेमाद्रि (आ.) p. 1215 also.

988. आवाह्य (या. I. 233). The मिता. remarks "अथ पितॄन् पितामहान् प्रपितामहा-नाग्रहयिष्य इति ब्राह्मणान् पृष्ट्वा आवाहयेति तैरनुज्ञातः उशन्तस्त्वा निधीमहि इत्यन्यर्चा पित्रादीनावाह्य 'आयन्तु नः पितरः' इत्यादिना मन्त्रेणोपतिष्ठेत". It may be noted that in all cases where a question is to be put or permission is to be asked the performer addresses the chief among them or all of them as the आद्वयवर्ग. का. says—'सर्वेषु प्रश्नेषु पंक्तिमूर्धन्यं पृच्छति सर्वान्वा (2nd काण्डिका of आद्वयवर्ग).

down⁹⁸⁹ on the ground (over a bunch of kuśas with ends turned towards the south) with the mantra 'thou art a place for the pitrs.'⁹⁹⁰ Then, being about to perform 'agnaukarana' (offering in sacrifice), he takes the food mixed with clarified butter and asks the brāhmanas (in the words 'I shall offer into the sacred fire') and when permitted by them with the words 'do so', he offers into the fire (two portions cut off from the food mixed with ghee) with a mekṣana⁹⁹¹ according to the

989. The मिता. remarks that on the vessel turned upside down the pavitras covering the three vessels should be placed and unguents, flowers, incense, lamp and garment should be offered to the brāhmanas with the words 'पितर्यं ते गन्धः' etc.

990. पूर्ववत्—The मिता. very briefly sets forth how the items are to be repeated for पैत्र्यब्राह्मणः: 'राजतादिषु पात्रेषु त्रिष्वयुग्मकुशनिर्मितकूर्चान्तर्हितेषु 'शं नो देवीः' इति मन्त्रेणापः क्षिप्त्वा 'तिलोसि सोमदेवत्यः' इत्यादिमन्त्रेण तिलान् गन्धपुष्पाणि च क्षिप्त्वा स्वधाद्यर्थाः—इति ब्राह्मणानां पुरतोऽर्घ्यपात्राणि स्थापयित्वा या दिव्या इति मन्त्रान्ते पितरिदं ते अर्घ्यं पितामहेदं ते अर्घ्यं प्रपितामहेदं ते अर्घ्यमिति ब्राह्मणानां हस्तेष्वर्घ्यं दद्यात्। Vide आश्व. गृ. in note 966 above for शं नो देवीः, तिलोसि, या दिव्याः. The मन्त्र is 'अपहता असुरा रक्षांसि वेदिषदः' (वाज. सं. II. 29). The बहुचगृह्यपरिशिष्ट, अपरार्क (p. 484) and others say that the name and gotra of the ancestors should be mentioned in offering पाद्य, अर्घ्य, गन्ध etc. Therefore the अर्घ्य will be offered in the form 'अमुकगोत्र पितरमुकशर्मन्नेतत्तेऽर्घ्यम्'. हलायुध (folio 18a on आश्वसूत्र) notes that in the case of वाजसनेयस the last words are एष तेऽर्घ्यः.

991. मेक्षण is a rod of Aśvattha wood one aratni long having at one end a square board four angulas in length (to be used like a mixing spoon). Two offerings are made with the words अग्नये कव्यवाहनाय स्वधा नमः, सोमाय पितृमते स्वधा नमः (वाज. सं. II. 29 where the same formula occurs with स्वाहा for स्वधा नमः). Acc. to Baud. Dh. S II. 8. 8-11 the offerings are three viz. to सोमाय पितृपीताय, यमायाङ्गिरस्वते पितृमते, अग्नये कव्यवाहनाय स्विष्टकृते. Acc. to मद्. पा. p. 590 this is peculiar to Baudhāyānīyas. The ब्रह्मपुराण q. by मद्. पा. (p. 591) speaks of आहुतित्रय and so does Brahmanāṇḍa (upodghāta, 11.93-94). If the performer is आहिताग्नि and has observed सर्वाधान method he offers into दक्षिणाग्नि; if he is not आहिताग्नि or has followed अर्धाधान method he offers into grhya or āvasathya fire and if he has neither the śrauta or gryha fire he offers into the hand of the brāhmana. For the procedure of पिण्डपितृयज्ञ (which varies from one śākhā and sūtra to another) vide H. of Dh. vol. II. pp. 1085-1090 and मनु III. 212 for पाणिहोम. The food offered on the hand has to be mixed with the food served in the plate and then eaten. When there are several pitrya brāhmanas invited the पाणिहोम is to be made on the hand of the best of the brāhmanas acc. to the मद्. पा. 585 and स्मृतिच. (आ. p. 462), both of which quote गोभिल II. 120 'पित्र्ये यः पाङ्क्तिमूर्धन्यस्तस्य पाणावनग्निमान्। हुत्वा मन्त्रवदन्येषां तृष्णीं पात्रेषु निक्षिपेत्॥'. हलायुध holds that, since या. 237 हुतशेषं प्रदद्यात्तु भाजनेषु समाहितः) employs the word भाजनेषु without any qualification, the remnants of the food for होम should be put in all plates including those for दैवब्राह्मणस. The सौरपुराण (19.22) says: अग्नेरभावाद्द्विप्रस्य पाणौ होमो विधीयते। महादेवस्य पुरतो गोष्ठे वा श्रद्धयान्वितः॥

procedure laid down for Pīṇapitṛyajña. He, being intent (only on performing śrāddha correctly), should serve the food that remains after (making the two offerings mentioned above) in plates (except earthen one) that he may be able to secure, and particularly silver oness (plates are meant for feeding pitṛya brāhmaṇas). After serving the food in the plates, he should invoke over the plates the mantra 'the earth is thy⁹⁹² support', he should take hold of the thumb of the brāhmaṇas and put it on the food (served in the plates) with the mantra⁹⁹³ 'idam Viṣṇur' ('Viṣṇu strode over this' Rg. I. 22. 17, Vāj. S. V. 15, Tai S. I. 2. 13. 1). The performer should then mutter the Gāyatrī verse (Rg. III. 62. 10, Vāj. S. III. 35, Tai. S. I. 5. 6. 4) together with 'Om' and the 'Vyāhrtis' and the three verses beginning with 'Madhu vātā' (Rg. I. 90. 6-8, Vāj. S. 13. 27-29, Tai. S. IV. 2. 9. 3), he should say 'partake (of the food) as you please' and the brāhmaṇas also should eat the food silently. He should serve without anger or bustle food fit for being offered as *havis* (in a śrāddha) and liked by the brāhmaṇas till they are satiated (so that some food is left in their plates) and should repeat (while the brāhmaṇas are engaged in eating) sacred texts and the texts for *Japa* (Gāyatrī &c. already referred to in Yāj. I. 239 above). The sacred texts to be repeated according to the Mit. on Yāj. I. 240 are the Puruṣasūkta (Rg. X. 90. 1-16), the Pāvamānī verses (i. e. verses like 'svādiṣṭhayā madiṣṭhayā' from the 9th maṇḍala of the Rgveda as stated by Medhātithi on Manu III. 86 and Haradatta on Gautama (19. 12). Manu III. 232 mentions other works for recitation such as the dharmaśāstras, ākhyānas, itihāsa (Mahābhārata), purāṇas and khilas (like Śrīsūkta and Vidyāsūkta). There is great divergence of views about the sacred texts to be recited by the performer in a low voice, while the brāhmaṇas are engaged in partaking the food

992. या I. 238. The मन्त्र meant is: पृथिवी ते पात्रं द्यौरपिधानं ब्रह्मणस्त्वा सुखे जुहोमि ब्राह्मणानां त्वा प्राणापानयोर्जुहोम्यक्षितमसि मेषां क्षेष्टा असुत्रासुष्मिलोके। आप. म. पा. II. 20. 1. The मन्त्र is addressed to the remainder of the food used for अग्नौकरण. पात्र means support. As stated in n. 783, in श्राद्ध the आहवनीय is the ब्राह्मण invited for dinner. About अङ्गुष्ठ, यम q. by कल्पतरु (श्रा. p. 183) says: अङ्गुष्ठमात्रो भगवान् विष्णुः पर्यटते महीम् । राक्षसानां वधार्थाय को मेऽद्य प्रहरिष्यति ॥ तस्माच्छ्राद्धेषु सर्वेषु त्वङ्गुष्ठग्रहणं स्मृतम् । These are quoted also by अपरार्क p. 494, स्मृतिच. (श्रा.) p. 462 and by हेमाद्रि (श्रा.) p. 1378.

993. यम q. by अपरार्क p. 494 says 'विष्णो हव्यं च कव्यं च ब्रूयादक्षेति च कर्मात्.' The मित्ता. quotes it as मन्त्र's and says that in the पित्र्य rite the performer being प्राचीनावीतिन् should say 'विष्णो कव्यं रक्ष.'



cooked for śrāddha. Vide note 1005 below. It may be that the *japa* of sacred texts is to be done by the performer wearing the sacred thread in the *upavīta* way as stated by Hemādri p. 1070 and the Madana-pārijāta p. 599, but the Śrāddhatattva (p. 231) is opposed to this and relies on Manu III. 279. Certain verses from the Purāṇas also are to be recited such as the verses from the Varāhapurāṇa (14. 26-31) and Viṣṇupurāṇa (III. 15. 31-36, which are identical with the preceding) quoted by the Kalpataru on śrāddha (p. 197), Aparārka (p. 502) and Hemādri (on śrāddha p. 109), the first and last of which are quoted in the note below⁹⁹⁴. The Garuḍapurāṇa (Ācārakhaṇḍa 218.20 ff.) prescribes that while the brāhmaṇas are eating one may recite a eulogy of *pitṛs* such as the 'saptavyādha' verses^{994a}. Then, after holding the food in his hands, the performer should ask the brāhmaṇas 'are you satisfied' (and after they reply that they are satisfied) he should tell them that there is food still left (and ask them what to do with it) and after taking their per-

994. The first and last verses are: पिता पितामहश्चैव तथैव प्रपितामहः । मम तृप्तिं प्रयान्त्वद्य विप्रदेहेषु संस्थिताः ॥...यज्ञेश्वरो हव्यसमस्तकव्यभोक्ताव्ययात्मा हरिरीश्वरोऽत्र । तत्संनिधानादपयान्तु सद्यो रक्षांस्यशेषाण्यसुराश्च सर्वे ॥

994 a. The सप्तव्याध verses from the हरिवंश (I. 24. 20-21) and गरुडपुराण are: सप्तव्याधा दशार्णेषु मृगाः कालञ्जरे गिरौ । चक्रवाकाः शरद्वीपे हंसाः सरसि मानसे ॥ तेभिजाताः कुरुक्षेत्रे ब्राह्मणा वेदपारगाः । प्रस्थिता दूरमध्वानं यूयं किमवसीदथ ॥. On these the श्राद्धतत्त्व (p. 231) says 'अपहृतगुरुगर्वामांसकृतश्राद्धमहत्त्वप्रकाशकपितृगाथात्वेन सप्तव्याधा इति च पठ्यते ॥'. These very verses occur in the अग्निपुराण chap. 117. 56-57. The story is very clearly set out in हरिवंश 1, chapters 21-24 and the Matsyapurāṇa chap. 20-21. Seven pupils of Garga guarding their guru's cow thought of eating that cow as they were famished. But the youngest said 'let us make use of the cow's flesh in śrāddha, so that we may be saved from sin'. Two of the brothers became daiva brāhmaṇas, three became pitṛ-brāhmaṇas, one became the giver and the 7th became a guest. They told the guru that the cow was eaten by a tiger. They passed through several births first as seven hunters, then deer in Kālāñjara hill and so on. Śrāddha ultimately saved them. The same story is narrated in Padma V. 10.49-125, and V. 47.282-304 (in which last the disciples are said to have been those of वसिष्ठ). After becoming hamsas three of them became kings (a king and two ministers, acc. to मत्स्य) and cared not for the other world. The four others knew the path to mokṣa, sent word to the three with these verses saying that they four had started on the long road to the other world (प्रस्थिता...ध्वानं) and asking the other three not to be immersed in the mire of wordliness (यूय...दथ). The story also occurs in the शिवपुराण (उमासंहिता chap. 41.24 ff). It is interesting to note that in the Jaina Uttarādhyayana-sūtra (S. B. E. vol. 45 p. 56) the echoes of this story of the brothers are heard for illustrating the influence of *karman*.

mission⁹⁹⁵ (in the words 'partake of it along with your friends and relations'), he should spread (in front of the brāhmaṇas for pitṛs) the remaining food on (*darbhas* with their ends to the south placed over) the ground (with the mantra 'ye agni-dagdhāḥ', those that were cremated and those that were not cremated &c.) and he should pour water once for each into his hand (for rinsing the mouth). Collecting all the cooked food (i. e. portions from each food) with sesamum mixed with it, the performer facing the south should offer the piṇḍas near the remains of the food (eaten by the brāhmaṇas) according to the procedure of the piṇḍapitṛyajña. For maternal ancestors also the same procedure is to be followed (from invoking the Viśve-devāḥ to offering piṇḍas). Then he should give water to the brāhmaṇas for sipping. Then (he should say to the brāhmaṇas 'pronounce benediction'); after making the brāhmaṇas say 'svasti', he should offer water into their hands for saying 'let it be inexhaustible (after he requests them 'let it be inexhaustible'). Then after giving to the brāhmaṇas dakṣiṇā (fee or presents)⁹⁹⁶ according to the ability of the performer, he should say to the brāhmaṇas "may I request you to repeat the word 'svadhā'" and when they permit him in the words 'do request us', he should say 'let svadhā be pronounced for the persons concerned' (i. e. the pitṛs and maternal ancestors). Then the brāhmaṇas should say 'let there be svadhā'. On the brāhmaṇas saying so, he should sprinkle water on the ground and say 'let the Viśve-devāḥ be pleased' and when the brāhmaṇas have responded with 'let the Viśve-devāḥ be pleased' he should mutter the follow-

995. तदन्नं विकिरेद्भूमौ दद्याच्चापः सकृत् सकृत् । या. I. 241. The मिता. comments ; तदन्नं पितृस्थानब्राह्मणस्य पुरस्तादुच्छिष्टसन्निधौ दक्षिणाग्रदर्भान्तरितायां भूमौ तिलोदकप्रक्षेपपूर्वकं 'ये अग्निदग्धा' इत्यनया ऋचा निक्षिप्य पुनस्तिलोदकं प्रक्षिपेत् । तदनन्तरं ब्राह्मणहस्तेषु गण्डूषार्थं सकृत्सकृदपो दद्यात् । ये अग्निदग्धाः—this is Rg. X. 15. 14 translated above (p. 196). Sesamum grains and water were to be cast before as well as after placing the food on the ground. The Mit. speaks of the verse ये अग्निदग्धा as a *rk*, so it should be taken to be Rg. X. 15. 14 ; but later works like the श्राद्धतत्त्व (pp. 231-32) prescribe that the two verses quoted in the beginning of note 1007 below should be recited here. Vide तै. ब्रा. III. 1. 1. 7 for pitṛs that were अग्निदग्ध and that were not so in another connection.

996. या. I. 244 दत्त्वा तु दक्षिणां शक्त्या—देवल prescribes that दक्षिणा was to be given to the पित्र्यब्राह्मणस्य first and then to the वैश्वदेविकब्राह्मणस्य 'दक्षिणां पितृविभ्रेभ्यो दद्यात्पूर्वं ततो द्वयोः' q. by स्मृतिच. (श्रा. p. 483). मत्स्य 17. 50-52, वायु 75. 14-15 specify the various gifts. Vide n. 1008.

ing: ⁹⁹⁷ 'May donors increase in our family, may the (study or teaching of) Vedas prosper and progeny increase (in our family); may our faith (in rites for pitṛs) not vanish and may there be plenty of things for us to make gifts' ⁹⁹⁸. Having muttered this, having spoken pleasing words to the brāhmaṇas, ⁹⁹⁹ having fallen at their feet (after going round them) he being pleased in his heart should dismiss the brāhmaṇas with the mantra 'Vāje vāje' (Rg. VII. 38.8, Yāj. S. 21.11, Tai. S. I. 7.8.2), the sending them away being so arranged that the brāhmaṇas representing the pitṛs start first, ¹⁰⁰⁰ (i. e. first goes the representative of the great-grandfather, then the one for the grandfather, then the one for the father and then the one representing the Viśvedevāḥ). The vessel in which the drops of *arghya* water from the hands of the brāhmaṇas had been collected before should be turned face upwards ¹⁰⁰¹ and then the brāhmaṇas should be dismissed. After following the departing brāhmaṇas (up to the boundary) and going round them, he (should return) and should eat the food that (remains in the

997. दातारो नो—या. I. 246. This very verse occurs in मनु III. 252, विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 73.28, पञ्चपुराण (सुष्टिखण्ड 9.117), मत्स्य 16. 49-50, विष्णुधर्मोत्तर I. 140.42.

998 The विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 73.30, मत्स्य 16.50-51, पञ्च (सुष्टि 9.118) add another verse to या. I. 246 viz. अन्नं च नो बहु भवेदतिथीश्च लभेमाहि। याचितारश्च नः सन्तु मा च याचिष्म कंचन॥.

999. इत्युक्त्वोक्त्वा प्रिया वाचः—या. I. 247. अपरार्क p. 512 quotes from बृहस्पति two verses stating what should be said 'अद्य मे सफलं जन्म भवत्पादाभिर्वन्दनात्। अद्य मे वंशजाः सर्वे गतास्तेषु गृहाद् दिवम्॥ अत्र शाकादिपानेन क्लेशिता ये मयेदृशाः। तत्क्लेशजातं चित्तेन विस्मृत्य क्षन्तुमर्हथ॥'.

1000. For पितृपूर्वं विसर्जनम् (या. I. 247), compare विष्णुपुराण III. 15.48 and विष्णुधर्मोत्तर I. 140.15 which say 'वैश्वदेवनिविष्टानां चरमं हस्तधावनम्। विसर्जनं च निर्दिष्टं तेषु रक्षा यतः स्थिता॥'. The मित्ता. adds, following the मत्स्यपुराण 17.59, that before dismissal he should touch the brāhmaṇas with the tip of a darbha 'वाजे वाजे इति जपन् कुशाग्रेण विसर्जयेत्'.

1001. The Mit. notices that the upturning of the vessel should be done (as the termination त्वा in कृत्वा indicates) first before the mantra 'vāje vāje' (Yāj. I. 247) is recited and after the brāhmaṇas recite the benedictory mantras, and then the brāhmaṇas start. Compare Jai. IV. 3.37 for कृत्वा denoting पूर्वकालता. संस्रव has two meanings, viz. (1) the drops of water fallen from the hands of the brāhmaṇas when *arghya* water was offered to them (Mit.), (2) the drops of water that remain in the *arghya* vessels. ¹⁰⁰² in his पितृभक्ति (D. C. Ms. 152 of 1892-95) says 'संस्रवपदं ब्राह्मणहस्तसु जलपात्रमिति निबन्धारः। कर्कभाण्ये तु अर्धपात्रस्थशेषाभूतजलं संस्रवपदमित्युक्तम्। युक्तं चैतत्। संस्रवपत्तेरपेक्षितत्वात्।' folio 25b.



house after) the brāhmaṇas representing the pitṛs have partaken of it. He and the brāhmaṇas that partook of the śrāddha dinner should abstain from sexual intercourse on the night of the śrāddha day ¹⁰⁰².

Many of the Purāṇas contain detailed descriptions of the śrāddha to be performed on every *amāvāsyā*; for example, Matsya 17. 12-60 (closely resembling Yāj. 225-259), Viṣṇu-purāṇa III. 15. 13-49, Mārkaṇḍeya 28. 37-60, Kūrma (II. 22. 20-62), Padma (sr̥ṣṭikhaṇḍa) 9. 140-186, Brahmāṇḍa (Upod-ghātapāda, chap. 12), Skanda VI. 224. 3-51, Viṣṇudharmottara I. 140. 6-44. The Agnipurāṇa chap. 163 verses 2-42 are the same (with very slight variations and the omission of 2½ verses) as Yāj. I. 227-270; while Agni chap. 117 contains many verses that closely follow the Āśv. Gr. and Yāj. Similarly the Garuḍa-purāṇa contains numerous verses that are identical with Yājñavalkya's. For example, compare Yāj. I. 229-239 with Garuḍa I. 99. 11-19. The Purāṇas closely follow the Grhya-sūtras, Manu and Yājñavalkya and often employ the same mantras and formulas, though here and there they introduce some details. As remarked by the Varāhapurāṇa 14.51, the procedure for śrāddha is the same in all Purāṇas (*iyam sarva-purāṇeṣu sāmānyā paitrikī kriyā*). For sample, a summary of the procedure in the Padma (sr̥ṣṭi 9. 140-186) is set out here. The performer having honoured the Viśve-devāḥ (i. e. the brāhmaṇa or brāhmaṇas invited to represent them) with a seat and with yava grains and flowers should fill two vessels with water and should place them on a *pavitra* of *darbhās*. The water should be offered with the verse 'śam no devīr' (Rg. X. 9.4) and the yava grains with 'Yavosi'. They should be invoked with the verse 'Viśve devāsaḥ' (Rg. II. 41.13) and yavas should be scattered about with the two verses 'Viśve devāsaḥ' (Rg. II. 41. 13-14) and he should scatter about *yava* grains with the verse 'thou art yava, the king of grains &c.' (quoted ¹⁰⁰³ below). After decking the brāhmaṇas with sandalwood paste and flowers

1002. या I. 249. मिता. adds that by reason of the word 'tu' in Yā. I. 249 the performer and the brāhmaṇas have to shun eight actions enumerated in n. 924 above.

1003. यवोसि धान्यराजस्तु वारुणो मधुमिश्रितः। निर्णोदः सर्वपापानां पवित्राणि संस्तुतम्॥ पञ्च (सृष्टि) 9.144. बौ. ध. सू. III. 6.5 is almost identical. The मिता. on या. I. 231 refers to the मन्त्र 'यवोसि धान्यराजो वा' which appears to be the same. अपरार्क p. 479 speaks of 'यवोसि' as a *yajus*.

he should honour them with water with the verse ¹⁰⁰⁴ 'yā divyā' (vide n. 985). After taking leave of the Vaiśvadeva brāhmaṇas that have been honoured with *arghya* he should begin the pitṛ yajña. He should prepare seats with darbhas on them, worship three vessels, place *pavitrās* on them and pour water in them with 'śam no devīr' (Rg. X. 9.4), should cast sesamum grains in them with 'tilosi' and then put in them sandalwood and flowers. (Then verses 147-152 speak about the vessels to be employed). He then should announce the names and gotra of his ancestors and give darbhas in the hands of the brāhmaṇas. He should then request brāhmaṇas with the words 'I shall invite the pitṛs' and when they reply 'let it be so' he should invoke the pitṛs with the two verses 'uśantas tvā' (Rg. X. 16.12) and 'ā yantu' (Vaj. S. 19.58). Then, having offered *arghya* to the brāhmaṇas (representing the pitṛs) with 'yā divyā' (vide n. 985), having given them sandalwood paste and the other things including garment as the last, he should collect the remainder of the water (in the *arghya* vessels) into the vessel meant for the father and should keep aside the latter to the north with its top turned downwards with the words 'thou art a seat of the pitṛs'. Then he should begin to serve various kinds of food after bringing the utensils in which the food was cooked and holding them with both hands. (Verses 157-165 speak of the various foods to be offered and the periods of gratification caused thereby to the pitṛs). While the brāhmaṇas are engaged in eating he should recite the Vedic hymns ¹⁰⁰⁵ referring to

1004. मिता. on या. I. 231 refers to the मन्त्र 'या दिव्या आपः पयसा'. The mantra in आश्व. गृ. IV. 7.13 'या दिव्या आपः पृथिवी' has been translated above, as also the mantra 'tilosi' from Āśv. gr. IV. 7.8. How the offering of *tila* water in the midst of mango trees serves two purposes is finely stated in the following verse: एको मुनिस्ताम्रकराग्रहस्तो ह्याग्नेषु मध्ये सलिलं ददाति। आम्राश्च सिक्ताः पितरश्च तृप्ता एका क्रिया द्वयर्थकरी प्रसिद्धा॥ पद्म (सृष्टिखण्ड 11.77). वायु 111. 37, अग्नि 115. 40; compare महाभाष्य 'आम्राश्च सिक्ताः पितरश्च प्रीणिताः।' vol. I. p. 14.

1005. The verses of the पद्म (सृष्टि 9.165-169) about what is to be recited are quoted by अपराक p. 502, the first verse स्वाध्यायं etc. being मनु III. 232. Compare नारदपुराण (पूर्वार्ध 28.65-68) which among others mentions राक्षोघ्न, वैष्णव and पैतृक (Rg X. 15.1-13) मन्त्रस, पुरुषसूक्त, त्रिमधु, त्रिसुपर्ण. The Śāntika chapter, acc. to हेमाद्रि (श्रा.) p. 1075, is वाज. सं. 36.10 ff. which begins शं नो वातः पवताम्, The मधुब्राह्मण is what is called मधुविद्या contained in the बृह. उ. II. 5 (beginning with इयं पृथिवी सर्वेषां भूतानां मधु) and छान्दोग्य III. 1 (beginning with असौ वा आदित्यो देवमधु). The मण्डलब्राह्मण is an उपनिषद् (vide Indische Studien III. p. 325). हेमाद्रि (on श्रा.) p. 1075 says 'यदेतन्मण्डलं तपतीत्यादि मण्डलब्राह्मणम्'.

(Continued on the next page)

the Fathers, all the Purāṇas, various eulogies of Brahmā, Viṣṇu, the Sun, Rudra and the Vedic hymns addressed to Indra, Rudra and Soma and the Pāvamānī verses, the Sāmans called Brhat, Rathantara and Jyestha Sāman, the chapter on Śānti rites (propitiatory rites for removing evil events or prognostications), the Madhubrāhmaṇa, the Maṇḍala Brāhmaṇa and whatever else gives pleasure to the brāhmaṇas and the performer; and the Mahābhārata also should be recited, as it is very dear to the pitṛs. After the brāhmaṇas have finished their dinner the performer should collect together in a lump portions from all kinds of food, put water over them and spread ¹⁰⁰⁶ it (on the ground over darbhas) in front of the plates of the dining brāhmaṇas and should say ¹⁰⁰⁷ 'May those persons in our

(Continued from the last page)

These verses of the पञ्चपुराण about what it is to be repeated occur in मत्स्य-पुराण also (17.37-39). The राक्षोघ्नमन्त्रs are five verses (Rg. IV. 4.1-5 = Vāj. S. XIII. 9-13 = Tai S. V. I. 2.14). हेमाद्रि (श्री. pp. 1069-1073) first sets out the texts mentioned by मनु, विष्णुधर्मसूत्र and the पुराणs, then gives the vedic texts to be repeated by the respective followers of the four Vedas (pp. 1073-1074), then deals with the Saptārcis mantra (vide note 1020). Ultimately Hemādri and Śr. P. say that if a man does not know much he should engage in गायत्रीजप.

1006. The verse सार्ववर्णिकमन्त्राय...विकिरन्भुवि in पञ्च (सृष्टि 9. 170) is the same as Manu III. 244, मत्स्य 17.41 and विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 81.21.

1007. अग्निदग्धाश्च ये जीवा येऽप्यदग्धाः कुले मम। भूमौ दत्तेन वृष्यन्तु तृप्ता यान्तु परां गतिम्॥ येषां न माता न पिता न बन्धुर्न चान्यामित्रं न तथाज्ञमस्ति। तत्तृप्तयेऽन्नं भुवि दत्तमेतत्प्रयान्तु योगाय यतो यतस्तत्॥ असंस्कृतप्रमीतानां त्यागिनां कुलयोषिताम्। उच्छिष्टभागधेयानां दर्भेषु विकिरासनम् ॥ पञ्च. (सृष्टि 9. 171-173). These verses occur in मत्स्य 17. 42-44 which presents some various and better readings (viz. प्रयान्तु लोकेषु सुखाय तद्दत्तं and त्यक्तानां कुलयोषिताम्); बौ. गृ. सू. II. 10.42 (येऽग्निदग्धा जाता जीवा ये ये त्वदग्धाः...गतिम्॥) is almost the same as the first verse. The verse असंस्कृतः is मनु III. 245, विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 81.22, and Skandapurāṇa VI. 218. 10-11. कात्यायन as quoted by अपरार्क p. 505 reads 'ये अग्निदग्धा ये अनग्निदग्धा जीवा जाता कुले मम। भूमौ...गतिम्॥.' Halāyudha in his com. on Kātyāyana's Srāddhasūtra holds that अदग्धाः is the proper reading and अनग्निदग्धाः is a bad reading and relies on a verse of the Brahmapurāṇa (folio 26b). त्यागिनां कुलयोषितां in मनु III. 245 and elsewhere is explained in different ways. The words may mean 'of persons who abandoned wives descended from good families' or 'of women who forsook their families' or 'of those who committed suicide and of childless women.' One can appreciate the kindly and noble sentiments underlying the above verses. In honouring the pīṇḍas, Manu III. 217 (which speaks of salutation to the six seasons) is deemed to provide for salutation of the six seasons as identified with six ancestors mentioned in the words रस-शोषजीवस्वधाधोरमन्यु named in वाज. सं. II. 32 'नमो वः पितरो रसाय...पितरो मन्यवे.' Vide आर्द्रतत्त्व pp. 241-242.

family that were cremated or not cremated be gratified by the food offered on the ground and being gratified may they attain the highest world (or bliss)! May this food offered on the ground for the gratification of those that have neither father nor mother nor relative nor any other friend and have no food (offered by any one else in śrāddha) proceed for union with them wherever it may have to go! The remainder of the food cooked for śrāddha and food spread on the ground are the lot (or share) of those that died without the saṁskāras (*caula*, *upanayana* and the like) being performed on them, that abandoned their *gurus* and of (unmarried) women of the family. Finding that the brāhmaṇas are satisfied (by the dinner) he should give water once in the hand of each brāhmaṇa, should place on the ground smeared with cow's dung and urine darbhas with their ends turned to the south and place on them piṇḍas made from all kinds of foods (cooked for the śrāddha dinner) following the method employed in *Piṇḍapitṛyajña* after washing them with water. He should then utter the names and gotra (of the ancestors to whom the piṇḍas are to be offered) and should offer flowers and the rest and should again wash them (piṇḍas). He should perambulate the piṇḍas thrice holding darbhas in his hand and he should light lamps and offer flowers for the piṇḍas. When the brāhmaṇas sip water after eating the dinner, he should himself sip water and give water once to each of the brāhmaṇas and flowers and *akṣatas* and then *akṣayyodaka* with sesamum grains. He should then make according to his means presents (to the brāhmaṇas) of cows,¹⁰⁰⁸ land, gold, clothes, splendid beds and whatever else was liked by the brāhmaṇas or by the performer himself or his father. He should not be stingy in his presents. Then he should request the brāhmaṇas to say

1008. पद्म (सृष्टि 9. 180) is: गोभूहिरण्यवासांसि भव्यानि शयनानि च। दद्याद्यदिष्टं विप्राणामात्मनः पितुरेव च॥. There is epigraphic and other recorded evidence for gifts of land in śrāddhas. An inscription of Karnaḍadeva, son of Gāṅgeyadeva of the Cedi year 793 (1042 A. D.) records the grant of a village (called Susi) to a brāhmaṇa on the occasion of the Sāmvatsarika śrāddha of Gāṅgeyadeva at Prayāga. Vide I. A. vol. 16 pp. 204–207 for the grant of a village by the Chandella king Devavarmadeva in *saṁvat* 1107 (1050–51 A. D.) on the anniversary of his mother's death and a grant in 1790 A. D. by Fattesing Bhosle, prince of Akkalkot, to a learned brāhmaṇa of thirty *bighas* of land on the 10th day of his father's death (*Bhārata-itibāsa-saṁsodhana-maṇḍala*, vol. 29, parts 1 and 2, 1948 p. 41). In the *Āśramavāsikaparva* 14. 3-4 यथाह is said to have made gifts of gold and jewels, slaves, blankets, villages and fields, elephants and horses with their trappings and of girls to ब्राह्मणसु in आज्ञा for भोजन, द्रौण, दुर्योधन and others.

'svadhā' and they should do so. Then he should request the brāhmaṇas to pronounce the following benedictions and should receive them from them while he faces the east. They are 'May the pitrs be kind (not dreadful) to us'; the brāhmaṇas should say 'let it be so'; 'May our family increase!'; they should say 'so be it'; 'May donors in my family prosper and also (the study of) the Vedas and progeny and may these benedictions come out true!'; they should respond 'let it be so'. He should then remove the piṇḍas and request the brāhmaṇas to utter the word 'svasti' and they should do so. The remains of the food eaten by the brāhmaṇas remain (unremoved or unwiped) till the brāhmaṇas are dismissed; then he should perform the (usual) daily rites *Vaiśvadeva*, *balihoma*¹⁰⁰⁹ &c. The remnants of food that lie on the ground are the share of the group of slaves that were straight-forward and not roguish (dishonest or shirkers). The performer holding a vessel full of water and muttering the verse 'vāje vāje' (Rg. VII. 38. 8, Vāj. S. IX. 18, Tai. S. I. 7. 8. 2) should touch the brāhmaṇas with the tip of kuśas and dismiss them. He should follow them out of his house for eight paces, should circumambulate them, should then return with his relatives, sons and wife, should then perform the daily *Vaiśvadeva* and *balihoma*. Then after *Vaiśvadeva* he should together with his relatives, sons, guests and servants partake of the food that remains in the cooking pots after what was eaten by the brāhmaṇas.

It should be noticed how closely the Padmapurāṇa follows the procedure (including the mantras) contained in Yājñavalkya. What procedure the author of a Purāṇa follows depends upon his learning and the sūtra that he studied. For example, the Viṣṇudharmottara I.140 appears to rely on the Āp. gr. and the Āp. M. P. (II. 19-20), since I. 140. 12 refers to Āp. M. P. II. 19.1., I. 140. 29-30 to Āp. M. P. II. 19. 14-16, I. 140. 35 to Āp. M. P. II. 20.1. Similarly, Skanda (VI. 224. 3-51) closely follows Āśv. gr. and Yāj.

Owing to the difference in details of śrāddha in the several grhyasūtras, the smṛtis and the purāṇas, an important question arises whether a person should perform a śrāddha rite only in accordance with the grhyasūtra of his own Veda or Śākhā or whether he may perform it after the inclusion (*upasaṁhāra*) of

1009. पद्म, सुविखण्ड 9. 185-186 are the same as मनु III. 265, 246 and Matsya 17. 56-57.

the several items found in other sūtras and smṛtis though not included in the kalpa or grhya sūtra of his own Śākhā. This topic is discussed at great length by Hemādri (on śrāddha) pp. 748-759 and briefly by Medhātithi on Manu II. 29 and XI. 216, by the Mit. on Yāj. III. 325, Aparārka p. 1053 and others. Those who are for strictly following the details in one's own sūtra alone argue as follows: If one were at liberty to include details other than those contained in one's own sūtra, the order of the details (*krama*) given in one's sūtra and the time specified for each detail would be interfered with. Besides, if the addition of details were permissible, one would be liable to the charge of giving up the usages of one's own family handed down for generations. These objectors rely upon such passages as that of the Viṣṇudharmottara which states 'He who violating (the dictates of) his own sūtra acts according to a sūtra meant for others, treats thereby his own sage (the author of his sūtra) as unauthoritative and incurs (the blame of) doing what is improper.'¹⁰¹⁰ The smṛtis that contain additional details may be meant for those men who have no kalpa or grhya sūtra of their own or they may be useful for śūdras.

Those who espouse the view that as far as possible all details found in several grhyasūtras and smṛtis on one rite should be included by every one rely mainly on Jaimini II. 4. 8-33 which is called 'śākhāntarādhikaraṇanyāya' or 'sarvaśākhāpratyayanāya'. The principal sūtra is Jai. II. 4. 9.¹⁰¹¹ It is established in this sūtra that the *prayojana* (purpose) or *phala* (reward to be secured) of the rite is the same in different sūtras and smṛtis. For example, the rewards of śrāddha are stated to be the same in all sūtras and smṛtis (vide notes 787-790 above); then the *dravya* (materials) and the deity are the same (in *Pārvaṇa* śrāddha the deities are the paternal ancestors and the materials,

1010. यः स्वसूत्रमतिक्रम्य परसूत्रेण वर्तते । अप्रमाणमुषिं कृत्वा सोऽप्यधर्मेण युज्यते ॥ विष्णुधर्मोत्तर II. 127. 148-149.

1011. एकं वा संयोग-रूप-चोदनाख्याविशेषात् । जै. II. 4. 9 (separate as चोदना + आख्या + अविशेषात्); on this शबर explains 'तदेव प्रयोजनमुद्दिश्य तदेव विधीयमानं प्रत्यभिजानीमः । रूपमप्यस्य तदेव द्रव्यदेवतम् । पुरुषप्रयत्नेस्तादृश एव चोद्यते । नामधेयं चाविशिष्टम् । तेन तदेव कर्म सर्वशाखास्त्विति प्रत्ययः ।' The तन्त्रवार्तिक explains 'संयोग इति प्राधान्यात् फलसंयोगग्रहणम् । ... चोदनेति सर्वधात्वर्थभावनाविषयो विधिः ।' Vide H. of Dh. vol. III, p. 870 for a brief explanation of this सर्वशाखाप्रत्ययन्यायः. मेधा. on मनु XI. 216 puts the maxim very briefly as 'आप्यायस्व संते पर्याप्ते' इति स्मृत्यन्तरोक्तो विधिरपेक्षितव्यः । एकशास्त्रत्वात्सर्वस्मृतीनामसति विरोधे समग्रं योज्यं विरोधे तु विकल्पः ।'.

viz. *kuśas*, tilas, water, vessels, foods &c. are the same in all works). The effort that is enjoined (the *vidhi*) is the same and the name (*Pārvaṇaśrāddha*, *Ekoddiṣṭa śrāddha* &c.) is the same. Therefore, on account of these various signs one easily recognizes that the same rite is being dealt with by all sūtras, even if many of them differ in details. It cannot be said that *smṛtis* will be useful for those who have no sūtras of their own. Each man of the first three varṇas is attached to some sūtra or other by the tradition of his family or caste. Similarly, the *smṛtis* cannot be held to be meant for śūdras alone, since the *smṛtis* mainly deal with *upanayana*, the study of the Vedas, *agnihotra* and other matters with which a śūdra has no concern. Similarly, the objection that if details were allowed to be inserted from other sūtras and *smṛtis* the *krama* and *kāla* prescribed in one's sūtra might have to be set aside, the reply is contained in *Jai. I. 3. 5-7* (explained at great length in *H. of Dh. vol. III. pp. 841-848*).¹⁰¹² The *śruti* says 'after getting ready a bundle of kuśa grass he prepares the *vedi* (altar)'. Here a certain order of acts is laid down. If after a bundle of kuśas is got ready, the man has a sneeze, he has to sip water (perform *ācamana*) immediately as laid down by *Manu V. 145* and *Vas. III. 38* before he prepares the *vedi*. So the objector says the *krama* will be interfered with. The reply is that the sequence (*krama*) is only a characteristic of the items in the *śruti* passage, that all that is meant is that the making of the altar follows the getting ready of a kuśa bundle, but that it is not meant that the making of the *vedi* should follow immediately after the bundle is got ready. Therefore, the conclusion is that whatever detail is not in conflict with one's own śākhā or sūtra may be included in the rite one is about to perform, but if there is a direct conflict, then one should stick to one's own sūtra. As observed by *Kātyāyana* 'whatever is declared, whether in great detail or in brief, in one's own *grhyasūtra* about a rite, if he performs that much, it may be taken that he has done all that is required of him; but what is not handed down in one's śākhā (or sūtra) but is contained in another śākhā and is not in conflict with one's own śākhā, should be performed by the learned, as in the case of

1012. अपि वा कारणग्रहणे प्रयुक्तानि प्रतीयेरन् । जै. I. 3. 7. On this शबर observes: आचान्तेन कर्तव्यं यज्ञोपवीतिना कर्तव्यं ... इत्येवंलक्षणान्युदाहरणानि । किमेतानि श्रुतिविरुद्धानि न कर्तव्यानि उताविरुद्धानि कार्याणि चेत्पश्यसि तैरप्यनुष्ठीयमानैर्वेदिकं किञ्चित् कुप्यति तस्मादविरुद्धानीति । नेतदेवम् । शास्त्रपरिच्छिन्नं हि क्रमं बाधेरन् । कथम् । कृत्वा वेदिं कुर्वीतेतीमां श्रुतिमुपरुन्ध्यादन्तरा वेदं वेदिं चानुष्ठीयमानमाचमनादि । This *pūrvapakṣa* is refuted later on.

āgnihotra and the like'.¹⁰¹³ The first verse of Kātyāyana may be explained as applying where one's śākhā or sūtra deals with a matter without requiring any addition or as the next best course where one is not able to supplement one's sūtra owing to some unseen cause or owing to human difficulties. The Saṅgraha says that where different items of the śrāddha rite are declared to be performed at different times and there is no agreement among the sages, one should follow one's grhya-sūtra, but where one's grhyasūtra is silent as to a certain item or as to the stage when it is to be performed, there is an option and one may follow the opinion of some sage as to that item.¹⁰¹⁴ It appears that even the ancient grhya sūtras exhibit tendencies that led to the sarvaśākhā-pratyaya-nyāya e. g. Āśv. gr. (q. in n. 966) employs several passages (such as 'Tilosi', 'Yā divyā,' which do not occur in the Rgveda.)

It is owing to this maxim of 'sarvaśākhā-pratyayanyāya' that medieval digests go on heaping up details from all smṛtis and purāṇas in their descriptions of the several śrāddhas, the procedures of which were not originally very extensive.

The Kūrmapurāṇa¹⁰¹⁵ provides that the performer should before noon time bring to his house the invited brāhmanas

1013. अविरोद्धानि तु परशाखास्नातानि सर्वाण्यप्यङ्गान्युपसंहृत्य कर्मानुष्ठेयम् । तदुक्तं भविष्यपुराणे । यज्ञास्नातं स्वशाखायां पारक्यमविरोधि यत् । विद्वद्भिस्तदनुष्ठेयमग्निहोत्रादिकं यथा ॥ इति । हेमाद्रि (on आ.) p. 759. This verse is गोभिलस्मृति I. 35 (reads परोक्तमविरोधि and ° होत्रादिकर्मवत्). अपरार्क p. 8 and स्मृतिच. I. p. 5 quote this verse as कात्यायन's and also another of his 'बह्वलपं वा स्वगृह्योक्तं यस्य कर्म प्रकीर्तितम् । तस्य तावति शास्त्रार्थे कृते सर्वः कृतो भवेत् ॥'. हेमाद्रि (on आ.) p. 756 quotes this last verse as वैजपायन's. Both verses (बह्वलपं° and यज्ञास्नातं°) are quoted as from the परिशिष्ट by हलायुध in his com. on the श्राद्धसूत्र of कात्यायन (folio 30 a). The स्मृतिच. (I p. 5) adds another half verse of कात्यायन viz. आत्मतन्त्रे तु यज्ञोक्तं तत्कुर्यात्पारतन्त्रिकम्'. In आत्मतन्त्र, तन्त्र means सिद्धान्त (i. e. one's सूत्र). अग्निहोत्रादिकं यथा—This is explained by श्राद्धसौख्य (टोडरानन्द folio 64a) as follows : 'यथा छन्दोगानामनुक्तोपि यजुर्वेदविहितोऽग्निहोत्रविधिः क्रियते'.

1014. यान्यत्र कालभेदेन कर्माणि मुनयो जशुः । स्वगृह्योक्तानुसारेण विकल्पस्तेषु युज्यते ॥ न गृह्यादिस्मृतिर्येषां श्राद्धादावुपलभ्यते । कर्तुमर्हन्ति ते कृत्स्नं यस्य कस्य मुनेर्मतम् ॥ संग्रह q. by हेमाद्रि (आ. p. 1484). The आ. क्रि. कौ. p. 125 briefly puts the position as follows 'आकांक्षितं परशाखोक्तमपि कर्तव्यमनाकांक्षितं तु न कर्तव्यमेव । पुराणोक्तं तु आकांक्षितमनाकांक्षितं वा सामान्यधर्मत्वात्सर्वैरेवानुष्ठेयम् । तत्रापि स्वशाखोक्ताविरोधिना कार्यमिति ॥'. The following verse quoted from Gobhila by the com. on Sāh. Sr. S. IV. 4. 10-15 takes a very strict view 'ऊनो वाप्यधिको वापि यः स्वशाखोत्थितो विधिः । तेन सन्तनुयाद्यज्ञं न कुर्यात्पारतन्त्रिकम् ॥'.

1015. ततो निवृत्ते मध्याह्ने लुप्तरोमनखान् द्विजान् । अवगम्य (अभिगम्य) यथासामर्ग्यं प्रयच्छेद्वन्तधावनम् । आसध्वमिति सञ्जल्पन्नासीरस्ते पृथक् पृथक् । तैलमभ्यञ्जनं कानं स्त्रीतीयं च पृथग्विधम् । कूर्म (उत्तरार्ध 22. 20-21). In B. I edition the order of verses is different. The first is quoted by हेमाद्रि (on आ.) p. 1167 from देवल and कूर्म and by कल्पतरु (आ. p. 117) from देवल,

who have shaved themselves and pared their nails, should offer them materials for brushing the teeth and request them to sit down on separate seats, then give them oil and water for bathing. It will be seen that here the purāṇa has added several details that were not provided for by the Āśv. gr. (n. 966), Manu (III. 208), Yāj. (I. 226) and even by some of the purāṇas such as the Varāha 14. 8, which begin the procedure with seating the brāhmaṇas in the afternoon on seats after welcoming them. Many more examples could be given, but that attempt is not made owing to considerations of space.

Before proceeding to give some idea as to how the pārvana-śrāddha was dealt with in medieval and modern times, observations must be made on several relevant matters, on which there is a difference of views or which are important in a general way.

When the invited brāhmaṇas come after noon, it is provided in some of the purāṇas that two *maṇḍalas* should be made in front of the performer's residence for receiving the brāhmaṇas. For example, the Nārada-purāṇa states¹⁰¹⁶ 'the *maṇḍala* for a brāhmaṇa performer should be square (four cornered) in size, for a kṣatriya triangular, circular for a vaiśya and for a śūdra mere sprinkling of the ground with water is enough.' The *maṇḍalas* should be made on ground smeared with cowdung and with water mixed with cow's urine. Of the two *maṇḍalas* one should be on the northern side sloping towards the north and the other on the southern side sloping towards the south. On the northern *maṇḍala* kuśas with points towards the east should be placed along with akṣata (unbroken or whole) grains and on southern one double-folded kuśas should be placed along with sesamum grains. The northern *maṇḍala* should generally be two cubits on each side while the southern one should be four cubits on each side. The brāhmaṇa or brāhmaṇas that represent the *Viśvedevāḥ* should be honoured in the northern *maṇḍala* first by the performer himself with water for washing their feet after bending his right knee and the brāhmaṇas representing the pitṛs should be then honoured in the southern *maṇḍala* with water for washing the feet (hence called *pādya*) after bending his left knee. The mantra at the time of offering *pādya* is 'san

1016. श्राद्धार्थं समनुज्ञातः कारयेन्मण्डलद्वयम् । चतुरस्रं ब्राह्मणस्य त्रिकोणं क्षत्रियस्य च । वैश्यस्य वर्तुलं ज्ञेयं शूद्रस्यायुक्षणं भवेत् ॥ नारदपुराण (पूर्वार्ध 28. 32-33) । शारंगपुराण (19. 13-14) has almost the same verse as चतुरस्रं etc. Vide अपराक १७. 475 for मण्डलः.

no devīr' Rg. X. 9. 4).¹⁰¹⁷ After the mantra is recited he should give the water to the Vaiśvadeva brāhmaṇas and to the pitrya brāhmaṇas as noted below (in n. 1017). After the pādya water is offered the brāhmaṇas should come in front of the maṇḍalas and sip water (take ācamana).

The ancient sūtras and smṛtis like those of Manu and Yāj. (I. 229) say generally that the Viśvedevāḥ are to be invoked, but some of the later smṛtis (such as Prajāpati, verses 179-190) and purāṇas contain verses enumerating ten names of Viśvedevās and assign two each (out of the ten) to five classes of śrāddhas. They say: ¹⁰¹⁸ "in śrāddha performed in an iṣṭi the Viśvedevas are Kratu and Dakṣa, in a Nāṇḍimukha śrāddha they are Vasu and Satya, in Kāmyaśrāddha Dhuri and Locana, in naimittika śrāddha Kāla and Kāma and in Pārvaṇa-śrāddha Purūravas and Ādrava'. According to the Sm. C. and Hemādri a seat (āsana) is to be given to the Vaiśvadeva brāhmaṇas and invocations are to be made in the several śrāddhas after taking the names enumerated above. The Mit. on Yāj. I. 229, Hemādri (on śrāddha p. 1225) and other digests state that the mantras

1017. शं नो देवीरिति मन्त्रं पठित्वा पुरुरवार्द्रवसंज्ञका विश्वेदेवा इदं वः पाद्यमिति दद्यात्। एवं पितृर्था ब्राह्मणपादयोरपि शं नो देवीति मन्त्रान्ते पितरमुकगोत्रामुकशर्मन् वसुरूप इदं ते पाद्यमिति दद्यात्। मद्. पा. p. 567.

1018. ऋतुर्दक्षो वसुः सत्यः कालः कामस्तथैव च। धुरिश्वारोचनश्चैव तथा चैव पुरुरवाः। आर्द्रवश्च दशैते तु विश्वे देवाः प्रकीर्तिताः। बृहस्पति q. by अपरार्क p. 478, कल्पतरु (आ. p. 142), स्मृतिच. (आ. pp. 442-443); the words विश्वे देवाः are to be kept separate and not compounded. 'इष्टिश्चाद्धे ऋतुर्दक्षः सत्यो नान्दीमुखे वसुः। नैमित्तिके कालकामौ काम्ये च धुरिलोचनौ॥ पुरुरवा आर्द्रवश्च पार्वणे समुदाहृतौ। बृह. q. by अपरार्क p. 478, आ. प्र. p. 23, मद्. पा. (p. 573-574) which explains 'इष्टिश्चाद्धमाधानादौ क्रियमाणं...। नैमित्तिके सपिण्डीकरणे। कामनयानुष्ठेयगयामहालयादि श्राद्धं काम्यम्। इष्टिश्चाद्ध is the कर्माङ्गश्राद्ध, 9th among the 12 श्राद्धs quoted above from विश्वामित्र (in n. 858). The आ. प्र. p. 23 notes the different readings of some of the names such as पुरुरवस् and आर्द्रव, some saying the first is पुरुरव and the second is माद्रव. The printed श्राद्धतत्त्व p. 199 has माद्रव and so has टोडरानन्द (श्राद्धसौख्य folio 57 a). श्राद्धतत्त्व explains इष्टिश्चाद्ध as इच्छाश्राद्ध and नैमित्तिक as एकोद्दिष्ट. The आ. क्रि. कौ. (p. 56) reads पुरुरवाः and माद्रवाः. कल्पतरु (आ. p. 142) reads मार्द्रवश्च दशैते तु. The ब्रह्माण्डपुराण (III. 3. 30-31) enumerates the ten विश्वेदेवाः somewhat differently. It reads 'पुरुरवो माद्रवसो रोचमानश्च'. The ब्रह्माण्ड (III. 12. 3 ff.) states that ten sons were born to विश्वा, one of the daughters of दक्ष. When they performed severe tapas on a Himalaya peak Brahmā gave them the boon they wanted (आप्तेस्माकं भवेदंशो ह्येष नः कांक्षितो वरः) and the pitrs agreed. The pitrs said (verse 13) 'अग्रे दत्त्वा तु युष्माकमस्माकं दास्यते ततः। विसर्जनमथास्माकं पूर्वं पश्चात्तु दैवतम्'। This legend is obviously an attempt to explain the usage about Vaiśvadeva brāhmaṇas at a श्राद्ध.

for invoking the Viśvedevas in Pārvaṇa-śrāddha are two viz. 'Viśvedevāsa āgata' (Rg. II. 41. 13) and 'āgacchantu mahābhāgā' (q. above in note 984), while the Sm. C. (p. 444) prescribes an additional mantra 'viśve devāḥ śruṇu' (Rg. VI. 52. 13).

The general rule is that the Vaiśvadeva brāhmaṇas are to be seated facing the east and the *pitrya* brāhmaṇas facing the north (Yāj. I. 228, Varāha 14. 11), but there were at least five differing views about the directions which the brāhmaṇas were to face as Hemādri (on śrāddha p. 1200) points out. It is further pointed out by Hemādri and others (like Yāj. I. 247) that in all items in the procedure of śrāddha the Vaiśvadevika brāhmaṇas have precedence except in the matter of washing the hand smeared with the remains of food and the final dismissal of the brāhmaṇas at the end of the śrāddha.¹⁰¹⁹ It may be noted that in southern and western India brāhmaṇas invited at śrāddha are worshipped, while in Bengal it is the effigy made with darbhas (darbhabaṭu) that is worshipped as shown by the late M. M. Haraprasad Shastri (Catalogue of Mss. vol. III p. 406). The Śrāddha-tattva (folio 2b) of Raghunandana provides for the same: 'purūravā-mādravasor viśveśām devānām pārvaṇa-śrāddham kuśamayabrāhmaṇe kariṣye iti prcchet.'

In the Vāyupurāṇa¹⁰²⁰ it is stated that the following mantra should be repeated thrice at the beginning and end of a śrāddha and at the time of offering piṇḍas; on repeating it the pitṛs come quickly to the śrāddha and rākṣasas run away and that the mantra saves the pitṛs in all the three worlds. The mantra is 'Perpetual adoration to the gods, to pitṛs and to the great Yogins, to svadhā, to svāhā'. The Sm. C. (on śrāddha

1019. उच्छिष्टावलितहस्तक्षालनं विसर्जनं च वर्जयित्वा सर्वेषां श्राद्धीयपदार्थानां वैश्वदेविकपूर्वकत्वात् । हेमाद्रि (श्रा.) p. 1196. This is supported by विष्णुधर्मोत्तर I. 140. 15 'वैश्वदेवनिविष्टानां चरमं हस्तधावनम् । विसर्जनं च निर्दिष्टं तेषु रक्षा यतः स्थिता ॥.'

1020. मन्त्रं वक्ष्याम्यहं तस्मादमृतं ब्रह्मनिर्मितम् । देवताभ्यः पितृभ्यश्च महायोगिभ्य एव च । नमः स्वधायै स्वाहायै नित्यमेव भवन्त्युत । आद्यावसाने श्राद्धस्य त्रिरावर्तं जपेत्सदा । पिण्डनिर्वापणे चैव जपेदेतत्समाहितः । पितरः क्षिप्रमायान्ति राक्षसाः प्रव्रजन्ति च । पितृस्तत्रिषु लोकेषु मन्त्रोऽयं तारयत्युत ॥ वायुपुराण 74. 15-18. These verses are स्कन्द VII. 1. 206. 114-116, ब्रह्माण्ड III. 11. 17-18, विष्णुधर्मोत्तर I. 140. 68-72 (with slight variations). The मन्त्र occurs in गरुडपुराण (आचारखण्ड) 218. 6. कल्प-तरु (श्रा.) p. 144 quotes these. In most other purāṇas the मन्त्र ends 'निर्यमो नमो नमः'. हेमाद्रि (on श्राद्ध pp. 1079 and 1208) calls it सप्तार्चिस् and notes that it occurs in seven purāṇas. It is stated in some works that the reading भवन्त्युत is for followers of सामवेद. अत्र सम्बन्धनामगोत्रशब्दानां नानाक्रमदर्शनाद्विकल्पः । स ऐच्छिकः शाखाभेदेन वा व्यवस्थितः । श्रा. प्र. p. 29,

p. 441) states that the mantra should be repeated after the brāhmaṇas come and sit down and before kuśas are placed on the seats of the brāhmaṇas. This mantra occurs also in Brahmapurāṇa 220. 143, Brahmāṇḍa (Upodghātapāda 11. 22), Viṣṇudharmottara I. 140. 68-70 and is styled 'saptārcis' by the last two and is said to be equal to Āśvamedha.

A certain order of words about referring to the ancestors in offering a seat, offering kuśas on seat, and *arghya* is laid down by Brhaspati,¹⁰²¹ some of the purāṇas and the digests. As almost in every case there are different views here also. Brhaspati says: 'when giving a seat, when offering *arghya*, or piṇḍas, in offering ablutions of water on piṇḍas, the performer has to declare his relation to each of the ancestors, the names and *gotras* of the ancestors and also the form in which each of the ancestors is to be contemplated (viz. as Vasu, Rudra, Āditya respectively). It is further laid down that the genitive is to be employed for the ancestor's name in offering a seat (to the *pitṛya* brāhmaṇa) and *akṣayyodaka*, the objective in invoking the pitṛs, the dative in offering food, the vocative in other cases.

It is laid down that the performer has to take *ācamana* (sip water) in śrāddha rite six times viz., at the commencement of śrāddha, when washing the feet of invited brāhmaṇas, in worshipping them, in making the *vikira*, in offering piṇḍas and at the end of the śrāddha.¹⁰²²

1021. आसने चाह्यदाने च पिण्डदानेऽग्नेजने । सम्बन्धनामगोत्राणि यथार्हमनु-
कीर्तयेत् ॥ बृहस्पति q. by हेमाद्रि (on आ. p. 1257). The word आसन is only illustra-
tive and is meant to include आवाहन and other पिण्ड items. अक्षय्यासनयोः
षष्ठी द्वितीयावाहने तथा । अन्नदाने चतुर्थी स्याच्छेषाः सम्बुद्धयः स्मृताः ॥ सम्बन्धं प्रथमं
ब्रूयात् नामगोत्रं तथैव च । पश्चाद्गुणं विजानीयात् क्रम एव सनातनः ॥ आद्रकलिका folios
6b and 7a, आद्रसंग्रह q. by स्मृतिच. (आ.) p. 442 and p. 449. The verse
अक्षय्यासन० is found in नारदपुराण (पूर्वार्ध 28. 38) also. The स्मृत्यर्थसार (p. 50)
quotes it as from श्लोकसंग्रहकारस्मृति. The formula may be 'ओं अमुकगोत्राणाम-
मुकशर्मणामस्मत्पितॄणां सपत्नीकानां वसुरूपाणामिदमासनम्'; then in place of पितॄणां
पितामहानां and प्रपितामहानां and in place of वसुरूपाणां, रुद्ररूपाणां and आदित्य-
रूपाणां will have to be respectively employed. The words may also be
employed in the singular as the स्मृतिच. (आ. p. 449) says 'एतासु च षष्ठ्यादि-
विभक्तिषु सर्वत्रैकवचनबहुवचनयोर्विकल्प एव स्मृतिपुराणग्रन्थादिषु पितृपितामहादिश्रद्धानां
कचिदेकवचनान्तया कचिद्बहुवचनान्तया च प्रयोगदर्शनात् ॥'.

1022. स्मृत्यन्तरे । आद्रारम्भेऽवसाने च पादशौचे द्विजार्चने । विकिरे पिण्डदाने च
षट्सु चाचमनं चरेत् ॥ q. by पृथ्वीचन्द्र (on आ.) folio 62a.



An important question which exercised the minds of many medieval writers was 'who was the real recipient (*sampradāna*)¹⁰²³ of the offerings made in śrāddha, whether the brāhmaṇas or the pitṛs'. Relying on the words of the Āśv. gr. IV. 8. 1 (quoted above in n. 966 'etasmin kāle ... dānam) and passages of the purāṇas such as the Varāha (13. 51) 'vibhave sati viprebhyo asmān uddiśya dāsyati', the Mahārṇavaprakāśa, Harihara and some others held that brāhmaṇas were the recipients, while others like Śrīdatta, relying on indications furnished by śruti passages like Vāj. S. 19. 36 (*akṣan pitarah amīmadanta pitarah*) and such formulas as 'pitar-etat te arghyam' or 'etadvah pitaro vāsaḥ,' held that the real recipients intended were the pitṛs, but, as the pitṛs had gone to another world and could not be bodily present to receive the gifts of such things as sandalwood paste, flowers and clothes, the latter were only handed over or assigned to the brāhmaṇas who were for the moment contemplated as not different from the pitṛs.^{1023a} Vide Sm. C. (śrāddha pp. 447-449), Śr. Pr. pp. 30-31 for a discussion of these two viewpoints. It should, however, be noted that the water given to the brāhmaṇas and the *dakṣiṇā* given to them were only meant for the brāhmaṇas, the former for purification and the latter for the inexhaustible merit that *dakṣiṇā* to brāhmaṇas conferred.

It is to be noted that in the invocation (*āvāhana*) of the pitṛs there is a divergence of views as to the mantras to be employed and also as to the stage when it is to be made. Hemādri (śrāddha, pp. 1254-56) states that there were five different views on the latter point, the three most important of which were that *āvāhana* should come before giving darbhas as *āsana* on the left side of the seats of the *pitṛya* brāhmaṇas or after giving such darbhas or after *agnaukarana*. As regards the former (viz. the mantras), Yāj. (I. 232-233), the Brahmandapurāṇa and several others say that the invocation mantra is 'uśantas-tvā' (Rg. X. 16. 12, Vāj. S. 19. 70, Tai. S. II. 6. 12. 1) and after the *āvāhana* the performer should perform *japa* of the verse 'a yantu naḥ' (Vāj. S. 19. 58). The Viṣṇudharma-sūtra¹⁰²⁴ (73. 10-12) states 'The performer after having received

1023. For the meaning of संप्रदान, vide पा. I. 4. 32 'कर्मणा यमभिप्रैति स संप्रदानम्'.

1023 a. Vide n. 911 for the विष्णुपुराण passage (III. 14. 22-23) which means 'that will give jewels &c to brāhmaṇas for our benefit'.

1024. ततो ब्राह्मणानुज्ञातः पितृनावाहयेत्। अपयन्त्वसुरा इति द्वाभ्यां तिलैर्वापानानां विसर्जनं कृत्वा। एत पितरः सर्वास्तान् आ मे यन्वेतद्दः पितर इत्यावाहनं कृत्वा...

(Continued on the next page)

permission from the brāhmaṇas should invite the Manes. Having driven away the *Yātudhānas* (demons) by strewing grains of sesamum and by reciting the two mantras (the first of which begins with 'may the Asuras go away') he should invite the Manes with the four mantras 'come near, ye Manes!', 'conduct them here, O Agni!', 'May my (ancestors) come near', 'this is your (share), O Manes'. Hemādri (*śrāddha* pp. 1260-1267) points out how the mantras differ according to different writers.

There is a great deal of discussion about *agnaukarana* mentioned in Yāj. I. 236-237. The Mit. points out that if a man has kept śrauta fires by the *sarvādhāna* method then in the pārvana-śrāddha that he offers after pīṇḍapitryajña he offers homa in the Dakṣiṇāgni, as he has no *aupāsana* (i. e. grhya) fire and supports this by quoting a passage which occurs in the Viṣṇudharmottara-purāṇa.¹⁰²⁵ But if a man consecrates the śrauta fires by the *ardhādhāna*¹⁰²⁶ method, then he has to offer pārvana homa in the *aupāsana* fire and one who is without śrauta fires and has kept up only *aupāsana* fire has to offer homa in that fire. One who has neither the śrauta fires nor the grhya fire offers it in the brāhmaṇa's hand only. The Mit. relies on Manu III. 212 and on two verses from a grhya and comes to the conclusion that one who has consecrated śrauta fires performs homa in dakṣiṇa fire in the case of Anvaṣṭakya śrāddha, the śrāddha on the day previous to Aṣṭakā, the śrāddha

(Continued from the last page)

धर्मसूत्र 73. 10-12. The commentator notes that here it is the काठकीय-श्राद्ध-प्रयोग that is set out. Compare काठकगृह्य 63. 2-4, 10 for all these mantras except one 'पितृनावाहयिष्यामीत्युक्त्वा । अपयन्त्वसुरा इति द्वाभ्यां तिलैः सर्वतोऽवकीर्य । एत पितर आगच्छत पितर आ मे यन्त्वन्तर्दधे पर्वतरिति जापित्वा । ये मामकाः पितर एतद्वः पितरोऽयं यज्ञ इति तिसृभिः कल्पिताज्जमभिमृशति ।.' Dr. Caland (the editor) notes that these are not found in the printed काठकसंहिता. The विष्णुधर्मोत्तर (I. 140. 9-10) corresponds with the विष्णुधर्मसूत्र completely as to the mantras. अन्तर्दधे पर्वते:—is आप. म. पा. II. 19. 4.

1025. यथाह मार्कण्डेयः । आहिताग्निस्तु जुहुयादक्षिणाग्नौ समाहितः । अनाहिताग्निस्त्वौपसदे अग्न्यभावे द्विजेप्सु वा ॥ मित्ता. on या. I. 236. This is विष्णुधर्मोत्तर I. 140. 18, as हेमाद्रि says 'तदेतदाह विष्णुधर्मोत्तरे मार्कण्डेयः' (श्रा. p. 1330).

1026. For सर्वाधान and अर्धाधान, vide above n. 991. यतः श्राद्धाङ्गमशौकरणाहोमो लौकिकाग्नौ न युक्तः किंतु दक्षिणाग्नौवेव स च दर्श एव भवति । अतो दर्शेन विना श्राद्धाङ्गमशौक्योत्तः श्राद्धम् । टीडरानन्द (on श्राद्ध folio 24a). न दर्शेन विना श्राद्धमाहिताग्निर्द्विजन्मनः ॥ मनु III. 282, which कुल्लुक explains as 'आहिताग्नेर्द्विजस्य नामावाह्यादयसि रेकेण कुण्ठपक्षे दशभ्यादौ श्राद्धं विधीयते.'

performed in the dark half of each month on some day from the 5th and in the case of pārvana-śrāddha, but he performs, in the case of *kāmya*, *ābhyudayika*, *Ekoddiṣṭa* and *Aṣṭakā śrāddhas*, *homa* only on the *pitrya* brāhmaṇa's hand; while for one who has kept no sacred fire the *homa* is to be made only in the *pitrya* brāhmaṇa's hand. Vide Hemādri (śrāddha pp. 1328-1344), Bālabhaddi (on ācāra p. 518). The Tōdarānanda (śrāddha-saukhyā) following Manu III. 282 states that one who is an Agnihotrin cannot perform a pārvana-śrāddha on any day except on *darśa* (i. e. on *amāvāsyā*).

Another important question on which there is great divergence concerns the number of āhutis to be offered in *agnaukarana*, the deities to whom the *homa* was to be offered, the order in which the deities were to be named and the form of words to be used. On these matters there appears to have been divergent views from very ancient times. According to the Śat. Br. II. 4. 2. 12-13 the āhutis were only ¹⁰²⁷ two, they were offered to Agni and Soma in that order and the word *svāhā* was used at the end. According to the Tai. Br. I. 3. 10. 2-3 ¹⁰²⁸ the āhutis were three, they were to be offered to Soma, Agni and to Yama in that order and the formula ended with 'svadhā namaḥ' (and not with 'svāhā'). It is therefore that a verse of Kātyāyana ¹⁰²⁹ says "whether to employ the word 'svāhā' or the words 'svadhā namaḥ', whether and when to wear the sacred chord in the *yajñopavīta* form or *prācīnāvīta* form and what was to be the number of āhutis—all these have to be understood from one's own sūtra." The difference of views which is noticed as far back as the Brāhmaṇas persists in the sūtras, smṛtis, purāṇas and is briefly indicated here. The Āp. Gr. S. (quoted above in n. 981) speaks of thirteen āhutis, seven with food and

1027. स जुहोति । अग्नये कव्यवाहनाय स्वाहा सोमाय पितृमते स्वाहेत्यग्नौ मेक्षण-
मभ्यादधाति तत्स्विष्टकृद्भाजनम् । शतपथब्रा. II. 4. 2. 13. The words अग्नये... पितृमते
स्वाहा are वाज. सं. II. 29.

1028. सोमाय पितृपीताय स्वधा नम इत्याह । ... अग्नये कव्यवाहनाय स्वधा नम
इत्याह य एव पितृणामग्निस्तं प्रीणाति । तिस्र आहुतीर्जुहोति । तै. ब्रा. I. 3. 10. 2-3, on
which सायण explains 'शाखान्तरगतेन यमायाङ्गिरस्वते पितृमते स्वधा नम इति मन्त्रेणैका-
माहुतिमाभिप्रेत्य त्रित्वं विदधाति'. Vide अथर्व. 18. 4. 71-74 also. आप. श्रौ. (I. 8. 3-4
and 6) says 'सोमाय पितृपीताय स्वधा नम इति दक्षिणाग्नौ जुहोति । यमायाङ्गिरस्वते पितृमते
स्वधा नम इति द्वितीयाम् । अग्नये कव्यवाहनाय स्वधा नम इति तृतीयाम् । न यमाय
जुहोतीत्येके ।'

1029. स्वाहा स्वधानमः सव्यमपसव्यं तथैव च । आहुतीनां तु या संख्या साव्यग्नौ
स्वसूत्रतः ॥ कात्यायन q. by स्मृतिच. (आ. p. 458).

six with clarified butter. Two āhutis only are mentioned by Āśv. Śrauta II. 6. 12 (quoted in note 974), Āśv. gr. IV. 7. 20, Śāṅkha-Likhita,¹⁰³⁰ Kāthaka-grhya, Nārada-purāṇa (pūrvārdha 28. 48) and Mārkaṇḍeya-purāṇa. Three āhutis are mentioned by most of the smṛtis and purāṇas, such as Baud. Dh. S. II. 14. 7,¹⁰³¹ Śāṅ. Śrauta IV. 3 and grhya IV. 1. 13, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 73. 12, Manu III. 211, Varāhapurāṇa¹⁰³² (14. 21-22), Brahmāṇḍa-purāṇa (Upodghātapāda 11. 93-94), Viṣṇudharmottara I. 140. 19. It is here that various combinations of the order of the deities and of the words 'svāhā' and 'svadhā' occur. The texts of a few works are cited below for illustration. Some give the order as 'Soma accompanied by the pitṛs, Agni the carrier of *kavya*, Yama Āngiras;,' while others give it as 'Agni the carrier of *kavya*, Soma accompanied by the pitṛs, Yama Vaivasvata &c.' It is further provided that the āhuti to Agni is made to the southern side of the fire, to Soma on the northern part of it and in the middle of the two sides to Vaivasvata (Yama).¹⁰³³

Various rules of etiquette about serving food, about the way brāhmaṇas are to eat and related matters have been laid down from ancient times and are observed even now. The Sm. C. (p. 465-470), Hemādri (śrāddha pp. 1367-1384), the Śr. Pr. pp. 116-123 and other digests contain elaborate rules on these matters. Yāj. I. 237 prescribes that what remains after offering homa should be served in the plates meant for the brāhmaṇas representing the Fathers and the plates should preferably be

1030. धूपगन्धमाल्यैरलङ्कृत्य ब्राह्मणान्सधृतमक्षमनुज्ञाप्य दर्भैर्दक्षिणाग्रैरग्निं परिस्तीर्य जुहुयादग्नये कव्यवाहनाय स्वाहा सोमाय पितृमते स्वाहेति । शङ्खलिखितौ q. by हेमाद्रि (श्रा. p. 1354), मद. पा. p. 589; अग्नौ करवाणीत्युक्त्वा । अग्निं परिस्तीर्य सोमाय पितृमते स्वधा नमोऽग्नये कव्यवाहनाय स्वधा नम इत्यग्नौ हुत्वा । काठकगृह्य 63. 89; उपासनाग्निमाधाय स्वगृह्योक्तविधानतः । सोमाय च पितृमते स्वधा नम इतीरयेत् ॥ अग्नये कव्यवाहनाय स्वधा नम इतीह वा । स्वाहान्तेनापि वा प्राज्ञो जुहुयात्पितृयज्ञवत् ॥ नारद (पूर्वार्ध 28. 48-49).

1031. अक्षस्यैव तिस्र आहुतीर्जुहोति । सोमाय पितृपीताय स्वधा नमः स्वाहा । यमायाङ्गिरस्वते पितृमते स्वधा नमः स्वाहा । अग्नये कव्यवाहनाय स्विष्टकृते स्वधा नमः स्वाहेति । तच्छेषेणाक्षमभिधायान्नस्यैता एव तिस्रो जुहुयात् । बौ. ध. सू. II. 8. 8-12. It should be noted that बौ. employs both स्वधा नमः and स्वाहा. अग्नये कव्यवाहनाय स्वाहा सोमाय पितृमते स्वाहा यमायाङ्गिरस्वते पितृमते स्वाहेति । शाङ्खायनश्रौत. IV. 4. 1.

1032. अग्नये कव्यवाहनाय स्वाहेति प्रथमाहुतिः । सोमाय वै पितृमते दातव्या तदनन्तरम् ॥ वैवस्वताय चैवान्या तृतीया दीयते हुतिः ॥ बराहपु. 14. 21-22; सोमायादौ पितृमते कव्यवाहनाय चाग्नये । यमाय चैवाङ्गिरसे हुत्वा प्रयतमानसः । विष्णुधर्मोत्तर I. 140. 19-20; मार्कण्डेय (28. 47-48) prescribes the आहुतिस as अग्नये कव्यवाहनाय स्वाहा, सोमाय पितृमते स्वाहा, यमाय प्रेतपतये स्वाहा ।

1033. दक्षिणतोऽग्नये नित्यं सोमागोत्तरतस्तथा । एतयोरन्तरे नित्यं जुहुयाद्भिरस्वते ॥ q. by कल्पतरु (श्रा. p. 169),



of silver. Kātyāyana says that the performer who has no fire (either śrauta or smārta) should offer the homa on the hand of the most eminent among the pitrya brāhmaṇas to the accompaniment of a mantra and should offer the remainder in the plates of the other pitrya brāhmaṇas.¹⁰³⁴ The Sm. C. notes that Yama and the Vāyupurāṇa say that the homa should be in the hand of the *daiva* brāhmaṇa and that on account of this conflict there is an option. It is further provided that a portion of the food from which agnaukarāṇa was effected should be kept aside for making piṇḍas (Mārkaṇḍeya and Garuḍa). The food should be served by the performer himself wearing the sacred thread in the *yajñopavīta* form or by his wife of the same caste or by some attendant who is purified. Manu (III. 224-229, 231-233, 236-238) contains several rules.^{1034a} 'Himself holding the vessels full of food with both hands the performer should slowly place them near the brāhmaṇas seated for dinner while thinking of his ancestors. That food, which is brought near the brāhmaṇas without (the containing vessel being held in) both hands, is snatched away by wicked *asuras*. The performer being himself pure and concentrating his mind (only on the serving of food) should place the vessels containing the

1034. पित्र्ये यः पङ्क्तिर्मुर्धन्यस्तस्य पाणावनशिमान् । हुत्वा मन्त्रवदन्येषां तृष्णीं पात्रेषु निक्षिपेत् । गोभिल II. 120 q. by स्मृतिच. II. p. 462.

1034 a. मनु III. 225 is almost the same as Baud. Dh. S. II. 8. 22 and Vas. XI. 25. मनु III. 224 is पाणिभ्यां तूपसंगृह्य स्वयमन्नस्य वर्धितम् । विप्रान्तिके पितृ-
न्ध्यायञ् शनकैरुपनिक्षिपेत् ॥ अन्नस्य is to be taken as अन्नेन and पिठरं is to be under-
stood after वर्धितम्. The आद्धतत्त्व (p. 229) explains: 'पाकस्थाल्या आकृत्य प्रथमं
भोजनपात्रे न देयं किन्तु स्थाल्यादिकं पाणिभ्यां पात्रसमीपे भूमौ संस्थाप्य पश्चादुभाभ्यां पाणिभ्यां
पात्रान्तरिताभ्यां आद्धे परिवेशयेत्' and relies on मत्स्य 17. 28 'उभाभ्यामपि हस्ताभ्या-
माहृत्य परिवेशयेत्', ब्रह्मोद्याश्च—मनु III. 231. ब्रह्मोद्याः are such riddles, ques-
tions and answers as are found in Tai. S. VII. 4. 18, वाज. सं. 23. 9-12 (कः
स्विदेकाकी चरति etc.) and 23. 45-62; Ait. Br. (अथ ब्रह्मोद्यं वदन्त्यग्निर्गृहपतिरिति
हेक आहुः ॥). Or ब्रह्मोद्य may mean, as explained by मेधा० (ब्रह्मणि वेदे या
उद्यन्ते कथ्यन्ते ता ब्रह्मोद्याः), the legends of the wars of gods and asuras, the
slaughter of Vṛtra, the story of Saramā &c. Or ब्रह्मोद्याः कथाः may mean
'talks relating to the exposition of Brahma' (the cause of the world), as
Kullūka explains. विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 81. 19 is हविर्गुणाक्ष ब्राह्मणा ब्रूयुर्दात्रा पृष्टाः. This is
like Manu III. 236. मनु III. 237 is the same as वसिष्ठ XI. 32, Viṣṇu Dh. S.
81. 20, Āṅgiras verse 133, Brhad-Yama III. 27, Laghu-Sātātapa 103
Viṣṇudharmottara I. 140. 46. About the sacred texts and other verses to be
recited by the performer (being upavītin) while the brāhmaṇas are dining,
vide above p. 445 and notes 994 and 994a. जमदग्नि says 'अपसव्येन कर्तव्यं
आहुं यथाविधि । सूक्तस्तोत्रजपं सुक्त्वा विप्राणां च विसर्जनम् ।' q. by आद्धप of
folio 101a,

side dishes viz. broths, vegetables, milk, curds, ghee and honey on the ground (and not on a wooden stool or the like). The vessels placed on the ground should contain various kinds of food (such as sweetmeats, *pāyasa*), fruits and roots, delicious flesh, spiced or perfumed drinks. Having brought near the brāhmaṇas all the vessels containing food, he should serve it in the plates declaring the characteristic of each kind of food (saying 'this is sweet, this is sour' &c.). The performer while serving should not shed tears (remembering his ancestors), he should not become angry, should not utter falsehood, he should not touch the (vessel containing) food with his foot and should not serve food with a violent jerk. Whatever is liked by the brāhmaṇas should be served to them without any grumbling and he should talk about Brahma (or about Vedic riddles), because that is agreeable to the pitṛs. The performer himself, being pleased, should (by his sweet speech) gladden the brāhmaṇas, should make them partake of food without hurry, and should urge them on frequently (to take more food) by declaring the good points of the various items of food. All food should be steaming hot and the brāhmaṇas should partake of it silently and should not themselves speak of the good points of the food even when questioned by the performer. When the food is hot, when the brāhmaṇas eat in silence and when the good qualities of the food are not declared by the brāhmaṇas, the Fathers partake of it. When a brāhmaṇa (at a śrāddha dinner) partakes of food, having his head covered with a garment (a turban &c) or facing the south or having his sandals on, evil spirits partake of the food (and not the Fathers). As early as Gaut., it is provided that the food for the brāhmaṇas should be of the highest sort and should be enriched by condiments and flavoured.

Some of the other rules are: The Prajāpati-smṛti (verses 57-62) states who should cook the food for the śrāddha dinner. The wife, any fortunate (or handsome) woman of the performer's gotra whose husband is living and who has a son or brother and is devoted to waiting upon her elders, the performer's teacher's wife, his maternal uncle's wife, paternal or maternal aunt, his sister, his daughter or daughter-in-law, all of them having their husbands alive, should engage in the cooking of the food for śrāddha. Women of good family, who have a large progeny, whose husbands are alive and who are about 50 years old or these women if they have become widows, and the wife of one's paternal uncle or brother, one's mothers (natural or



step-mothers) and the mothers of one's father may cook the śrāddha food and also a woman of the same gotra who is mild by temper. In the Anuśāsana parva (92.15) it is stated that a woman belonging to a gotra other than that of the deceased should not be employed for cooking śrāddha food. One's brother, paternal uncle, brother's son, sister's son, one's son, pupil, one's daughter's son or daughter's husband may also engage in cooking the śrāddha food, but not a woman who wears a white and wet garment, who has let her hair loose, who does not wear a bodice, who is ill or who has bathed her head. Before the brāhmaṇas begin to eat, the food should be first served in the plates for the Vaiśvadeva brāhmaṇas and then in those of the *pitrya* brāhmaṇas (Viṣṇu Dh. S. 73. 13-14), but once the brāhmaṇas have begun to eat there is no such precedence; whatever each brāhmaṇa may be noted as requiring should be served to him (as indicated by Manu III. 231). The performer of the śrāddha when serving food to the brāhmaṇas (including *pitrya*) wears his sacred thread in the *upavīta* form. Though it is said that the food should be hot, that does not apply to such eatables as curds, fruits and roots and flavoured¹⁰³⁵ drinks (as Śaṅkha XIV.13 and Skandapurāṇa say). As Hemādri (śrāddha p. 1371) points out, the serving of food in a śrāddha rite should be done with the right hand supported by the left; besides, nothing should be served with the bare hand or with a single hand, but with a wooden ladle or other utensil (but not an iron one). All cooked food, all side dishes and ghee should be served with a ladle (and not with the bare hand) but not water or eatables like *ladḍus*. No salt was to be directly served (Viṣṇu Dh. S. 79. 12). In Kātyāyana's Śrāddha-sūtra it is provided¹⁰³⁶ "The food that remains after *agnaukarāṇa* should be served in the plates of the *pitrya* brāhmaṇas and the performer should touch

1035. उष्णमक्षं द्विजातिभ्यः श्रद्धया विनिवेशयेत् ॥ अन्यत्र फलपुष्पेभ्यः पानकेभ्यश्च पण्डितः ॥ हस्ते दत्त्वा तु वै स्नेहलवणव्यञ्जनानि च । आयसेन च पात्रेण तद्दे रक्षांसि भुञ्जते ॥ स्कन्दपुराण VII. 206. 37-39; शङ्ख (14. 12-13) has the first verse but with slight variations and also कूर्म II. 22. 64; शक्तिः प्रकर्षेद् गुणसंस्कारविधिरक्षस्य । गौ. 15. 6.

1036. पिण्डपितृयज्ञवद्धत्वा हुतशेषं दत्त्वा पात्रमालभ्य जपति पृथिवी ते पात्रं द्यौरपिधानं ब्राह्मणस्य मुखे अमृतं अमृतं जुहोमि स्वाहेति वैष्णव्यर्चा यजुषा वाङ्मन्त्रेणैवगाह्यमहता हति तिलान् प्रकीर्योष्णं स्विष्टमक्षं दद्याच्छक्त्या वा । कात्या० श्रद्धसूत्र 3 quoted and explained by हेमाद्रि on श्रद्ध p 1374. The वैष्णवी rk is 'इदं विष्णुर्विचक्रमे' (श्रद्धा 22.17) and वैष्णवी *yajus* is 'विष्णो हव्यं रक्षस्व' (तै. सं. I. 1. 3. 1. वाज. सं. I. 1. 1. 1. अपहताः— is वाज. सं. II. 29.

each plate for those brāhmaṇas after repeating the mantra 'the earth is thy vessel, the sky is the cover, I offer nectar in the brāhmaṇa's nectar-like mouth; svāhā'. Then the performer plunges the (right) thumb of the *pitrya* brāhmaṇa in the food (the remains of the homa in fire) with the *rk* or *yajus* addressed to Viṣṇu; and after scattering sesamum grains all round the place where the dinner is to go on with the mantra 'the asuras and rākṣasas) are struck and driven away' he (the performer) should serve hot food very much liked (by the departed or by the brāhmaṇas)". Yāj. I. 238 briefly refers (as translated above) to the mantras and the item of plunging the thumb of the brāhmaṇas in the food; and so does the Baud. Dh. S. also (II. 8. 15-16). The Kālikā-purāṇa prescribes¹⁰³⁷ that the thumb of the brāhmaṇa should be moved about in the food covered with ghee and honey with the mantra 'the earth is thy vessel &c.' because Viṣṇu in the form of the thumb protects food meant for sacrifices to gods and manes. The Baud. Pitrmedhasūtra provides that while plunging the thumb of the brāhmaṇa in the food served it should be so arranged that the nail of the thumb is not smeared with food.¹⁰³⁸ Vasiṣṭha provides that the brāhmaṇas eating śrāddha food should always hold the plate from which they are eating with (the left) hand till the end of the dinner. Śaṅkha-Likhita provide¹⁰³⁹ that brāhmaṇas (eating śrāddha food) should not declare the good or bad points of the food served, should not say what is untrue, should not praise each other, nor should they say 'there is plenty of food and drink (and so do not serve more food),

1037. धृत्वाङ्गुष्ठं द्विजानां तु आवर्त्याज्यमधुपुते । पृथिवी त इति मन्त्रेण हव्यकव्ये च रक्षयेत् ॥ विष्णुर्ह्यङ्गुष्ठरूपेण तस्य चाक्षस्य रक्षिता । कालिकापुराण q. by हेमाद्रि (आ. p. 1378). अथैतानि ब्राह्मणेभ्य उपनिक्षिप्य ब्राह्मणस्याङ्गुष्ठेनानखेनानुदिशति-अमुष्मा उपतिष्ठतु-इति । बौ. पितृमेधसूत्र II. 9. 19 (Mysore ed.).

1038. तस्मादक्षून्य (न्य?) हस्तेन कुर्यादन्नमुपागतम् । भोजनं (भाजनं?) वा समालभ्य तिष्ठेतोच्छेषणे ह्युभे (०तोच्छेषणाद् द्विजः?) ॥ वसिष्ठ 11. 26 explained by हेमाद्रि (आ.) p. 1024 as 'तस्माद्यदैवान्नमुपागतं भवति ततः प्रभृत्योच्छेषणात् भुक्तशिष्टान्नस्य भाजनाद्वहिः-करणपर्यन्तं वामहस्तेन भाजनं विधृत्य तिष्ठेत् । कण्डूयनाद्यर्थं वामहस्तव्यापारसमये तु दक्षिण-हस्तेन भाजनं समालभ्य वर्तेतेति तात्पर्यार्थः' । आ. प्र. p. 119 reproduces this explanation verbatim.

1039. शङ्खलिखितौ । ब्राह्मणा अन्नगुणं दोषं नाभिवदेयुर्नादृतं ब्रूयुरन्योन्यं न भोजनं-युरन्नपानं न प्रभूतमिति ब्रूयुरन्यत्र हस्तसंज्ञायाः । q. by हेमाद्रि (आ.) p. 1019, आ. प्र. p. 118, which says पात्रे प्रभूतमन्नमस्ति, अन्यत्र परिवेष्यमिति भोक्तृभिर्न वक्तव्यं किंतु हस्तसंज्ञेन सूचनीयमित्यर्थः ।

except by signs made with the hand.' Whatever is offered in a brāhmaṇa's hand (by way of agnaukarāṇa) and whatever food is placed in the plates should be mixed up and eaten. Hemādri quotes passages from the Maitrāyaṇīya-sūtra and from the Skandapurāṇa setting out the mantras wherewith certain articles were to be served; e. g. the Skandapurāṇa says that *pāyasa* should be served with the verse 'namo vaḥ pitaro' (Vāj. S. II. 32. Tai. S. III. 2. 5. 5), clarified butter with the mantra 'Tejosi śukram', curds with the mantra 'dadhikrāvṇo' (Rg. IV. 39. 6, Vāj. S. 23. 32, Tai. S. 1. 5. 11. 4). Ap. Dh. S. (II. 8. 18. 11) provides that the leavings of a śrāddha dinner should not be given to one who is inferior to the invited brāhmaṇas in qualities and Manu III. 249 states that the man who after eating śrāddha dinner gives the leavings to a śūdra falls in the Kālasūtra Hell.

The Matsyapurāṇa and some other works provide that the brāhmaṇas should pronounce blessings on the performer (who faces the east) after they have sipped water and have been given water, flowers and *akṣata* grains. The performer prays 'May our Fathers be not terrible (i. e. be kind) to us.' The brāhmaṇas reply 'let it be so'. The performer prays 'May our family grow', 'May donors increase in our family and also food', 'May these blessings turn out to be true'. To all these the brāhmaṇas reply after each one of the prayers¹⁰⁴⁰ 'May it be so'. There are rules about the time when the leavings or particles of food in the plates of the brāhmaṇas that ate the dinner should be removed or swept away. Vas. (XI. 21-22) and the Kūrmapurāṇa provide that the leavings of food should not be removed till the Sun sets, since streams of nectar flow from them, which are drunk by the (spirits of) those departed persons for whom no water was offered. Manu III. 265 (which is the same as Matsya 17.56 and Padma, Śrīṣṭikhaṇḍa 9.185) provides another rule that the leavings of the food in the plates may remain where they are till the brāhmaṇas are dismissed and depart.

1040. ततः स्वधावाचनिकं विश्वेदेवेषु चोदकम् ॥ दत्ताशीः प्रतिगृह्णीयाद् द्विजेभ्यः प्राङ्मुखो बुधः । अधोराः पितरः सन्तु सन्वित्युक्तः पुनर्द्विजैः ॥ गोत्रं तथा वर्धतां नस्तथेत्युक्तश्च तैः पुनः । दातारो नोऽभिवर्धन्तामिति चैवमुदीरयेत् ॥ एताः सत्याशिषः सन्वित्युक्तश्च तैः पुनः स्वस्तिवाचनिकं कुर्यात्पिण्डाबुद्धृत्य भक्तितः ॥ मत्स्य 17. 52-55 q. by हेमाद्रि (p. 1482), स्मृतिच. (आ.) p. 482, कल्पतरु (आ. p. 220). Compare आप. I. 10. 4 गृहाक्षः पितरो दत्त सद्यो वा पितरो देष्टव्यम् । Yāj. I. 246 (दातारो नो etc.) the same as भविष्य I. 185. 28.

Hemādri (śrāddha, p. 1512)¹⁰⁴¹ therefore provides that if the performer has another house the leavings may not be removed till sunset, but if he has only one house, they may be removed after the brāhmaṇas have gone away (vide Yāj. I. 257, Matsya 17.56). It is further provided by Brhaspati¹⁰⁴² that the plates should not be removed before the brāhmaṇas pronounce the word 'svasti', and Jātūkarnya¹⁰⁴³ and the Skandapurāṇa say that the plates and the leavings should be removed by the performer himself or by his pupil or son, but not by women nor by a child nor by one who is not of the same caste. Manu III. 258 provides that, after the brāhmaṇas have left, the performer should look at the south and pray to the pītr̥s for certain blessings contained in Manu III. 259 which are the same as Yāj. I. 246 translated above (vide p. 447), Viṣṇu Dh. S. 73. 28, Matsya 16. 49-50. The Āp. gr. 20.9 (q. in note 981), Āp. Dh. S. II. 7. 17. 16, Manu III. 264, Yāj. I. 249 provide that the performer should partake of the remainder of the food cooked for the śrāddha along with his wife, paternal and maternal relatives after reciting (according to Haradatta) the Yājusa mantra (Āp. M. P. II. 20.26) which means 'entering the life breath I offer nectar; my soul is centred in Brahman for the sake of immortality.' The Āp. gr. and Āp. Dh. S. provide¹⁰⁴⁴ that the performer must eat at least a morsel of the food left after serving to the brāhmaṇas. Vyāsa and Devala prescribe that on the day of śrāddha the performer must not observe a fast (even if he usually does so as on Ekādaśī or Śivarātra). A way out was provided by the Brahṃavaivarta-purāṇa by recommending that the performer should merely smell the remnants of the śrāddha food. Vide

1041. आद्धे नोद्वासनीयानि उच्छिष्टान्या दिनक्षयात् । श्रच्योतन्ते हि सुधाधारस्ताः पिवन्त्यकृतोदकाः ॥ वसिष्ठ XI. 21; नोद्वासयेत्तदुच्छिष्टं यावन्नास्तमितो रविः । कूर्मपुराण II. 22. 85. कल्पतरु (आ. p. 227) remarks 'नोद्वासनीयान्युच्छिष्टानीति भूमिष्टोच्छिष्टविषयम् । उच्छिष्टं न प्रमृज्यात्-इति भूमिगतोच्छिष्टपात्रविषयम् ।'.

1042. भाजनेषु च तिष्ठत्सु स्वस्ति कुर्वन्ति ये द्विजाः । तद्वत्तमसुरैर्भुक्तं निराशैः पितृभिर्गतेः ॥ बृहस्पति q. by स्मृतिच. (आ. p. 482), हेमाद्रि (आ. p. 1485).

1043. पात्राणि चालयेच्छ्राद्धे स्वयं शिष्योऽथवा सुतः । न स्त्रीभिर्न च बालेन नासजात्या कथंचन ॥ जातुकर्ण्य q. by स्मृतिच. (आ. p. 482), हेमाद्रि (आ. p. 1486); न स्त्रीभिर्न च बालेन नान्येनैव च केनचित् । आद्धे पिण्डं च पात्रं च स्वयमेव प्रचालयेत् ॥ स्कन्द (नागर खण्ड) q. by हेमाद्रि (आद्ध) p. 1486.

1044. सर्वेषु वृत्तेषु सर्वतः समवदाय शेषस्य ग्रासावरार्थं प्राश्नीयाद्यथोक्तम् । आप. ध. सू. II. 7. 17. 16. यथोक्तं refers to आप. गृ. 20. 9 The यजुस् referred in the latter is प्राणे निविष्टोऽमृतं जुहोमि ब्रह्मणि मे आत्मावृतत्वाय । आप. म. पा. II. 26. 26. This मन्त्र occurs also in ते. आ. X. 33.

Hemādri (śrāddha, pp. 1519-1521) for the discussion. Hemādri (p. 1485) refers to the practice (observed even now) that after the performer receives the blessings referred to above, his son, grandson and the like should offer adoration to the *devatās* in the form of *piṇḍas*. The *brāhmaṇas* should praise the good characteristics of the food served at the end of the *śrāddha* ceremony.¹⁰⁴⁵ The *brāhmaṇas* should not get up from the dinner, carelessly leaving remnants of food in their plates, but they may leave in the plates a little food except milk, curds, honey or barley flour.¹⁰⁴⁶

There were several views as to the exact stage at which the offerings of *piṇḍas* were to be made. According to Śān. Gr. IV. 1.9., Āśv. gr. IV. 8. 12,¹⁰⁴⁷ Śāṅkha 14.11, Manu III. 260-261, Yāj. I. 242 and several other works, the performer offers the lumps of boiled rice after the *brāhmaṇas* have finished eating their dinner. The *piṇḍas* are made with boiled rice mixed with sesame and are placed on *darbhas* on a clean spot and at a distance of about one *aratni* from¹⁰⁴⁸ the plates in which the *brāhmaṇas* ate and the performer faces the south. Here again there are two opinions, one being that *piṇḍas* were to be offered before the *brāhmaṇas* sip water (perform *ācamana*) after dinner (e. g. Āśv. gr. IV. 8. 12-13, Śrāddha-sūtra of Kātyāyana, *kaṇḍikā* 3), while others hold that they were to be offered after the *brāhmaṇas* have rinsed their mouth and taken *ācamana*. Another view referred to as the view of some by Śān. gr. IV. 1. 10 and Manu III. 261 was that *piṇḍas* were to be offered to the ancestors first after honouring the invited *brāhmaṇas* or after *agnaukarana* and then the *brāhmaṇas* were to partake of the dinner. The

1045. आद्धावसाने कर्तव्या द्विजैरन्नगुणस्तुतिः । वृद्धवसिष्ठ q. by हेमाद्रि (आ. p. 1019).

1046. तदाहोशनाः । भोजनं तु न निःशेषं कुर्यात्प्राज्ञः कथंचन । अन्यत्र दध्नः क्षीराद्वा क्षौद्रात्सक्तुभ्य एव च ॥ q. by हेमाद्रि (आ. p. 1026). Acc. to मनु III. 245-46, विष्णु 81. 22-23, मत्स्य 17. 56-57, the leavings of food in the plates of ब्राह्मणस and the विकिर were the lot of persons of the family dying young, while the leavings of food that fell or were left on the ground were the share of deceased slaves. 'पात्रगतमुच्छिष्टमसंस्कृतप्रमीतानां भूमिगतं दासवर्गस्य' हलायुध on कात्यायन's आद्धसूत्र (folio 30a). Vide n. 1007 above for मनु III. 245.

1047. अभिमतेनुमते वा भुक्तवत्स्वनाचान्तेषु पिण्डाज्जिदध्यात् । आचान्तेष्वेके गृ. IV. 8. 12-13.

1048. सतिलेन ततोन्नेन पिण्डान् सर्वेण पुत्रक । पितृनुदिश्य दर्भेषु दद्यादुच्छिष्टसंनिधौ मार्कण्डेयपुराण 28. 55. अरति is the hand from the wrist to the small finger.



Brahmāṇḍapurāṇa¹⁰⁴⁹ emphatically asserts that this is the correct position as stated by Brhaspati. The Viṣṇu Dh. S. (73 15-24) provides that the piṇḍas are to be offered to the ancestors while the brāhmaṇas are actually eating. A fourth view is that of the Āp. gr. 24.9, Hir. gr. (II. 12.2-3) which state that the performer¹⁰⁵⁰ should, after the brāhmaṇas have eaten and gone away and he has followed and circumambulated them, offer piṇḍas. Owing to this conflict of views Hemādri (quoting smṛti) and the Madanapārijāta (p. 600) say that each one should follow the procedure laid down in his own śākhā.¹⁰⁵¹ Hemādri adds that those in whose gr̥hyasūtra no special time is mentioned for piṇḍadāna should follow the view that piṇḍas are to be offered after the brāhmaṇas have partaken of the dinner and sipped water. The Śr. P. (p. 247) endorses this view.¹⁰⁵² The piṇḍas were to be deposited on bunches of (25) darbhas for each piṇḍa. Aparārka on Yāj. I. 24 states that in all cases without exception piṇḍas were to be offered near the plates from which the brāhmaṇas took their meals, while Hemādri who relies on Kātyāyana's word 'ucchiṣṭasannidhau' says that where the performer is an *āhitāgni* the piṇḍas were to be offered near his sacred fire, but when a performer had not kept the sacred fires piṇḍas were to be offered near the plates from which brāhmaṇas ate the śrāddha food. The Śrāddhasāra (p. 163) quotes Atri to the effect that piṇḍas should be offered at a distance of three *aratnis* from where the brāhmaṇas ate the śrāddha dinner and that in such śrāddhas as Navaśrāddhas Vaiśvadeva is to be performed before piṇḍadāna and that it is to be performed after

1049. पूजनं चैव विप्राणां पूर्वमेवेह नित्यशः ॥ तद्धि धर्मार्थकुशलो नेत्युवाच बृहस्पतिः ।
पूर्वं निवेदयेत् पिण्डान् पश्चाद्विप्रांश्च भोजयेत् ॥ ब्रह्माण्ड, उपोद्घात 12. 24-26. These
verses are quoted from ब्रह्मपुराण by कल्पतरु (श्रा. p. 221). The सौरपुराण
19. 23 says 'पिण्डनिर्वपणं कृत्वा ब्राह्मणांश्चैव भोजयेत् । केचिदप्येवमिच्छन्ति नैव भानोर्मतं
द्विजाः ॥'

1050. भुक्तवतोऽनुप्रव्रज्य शेषमनुज्ञाप्योदकुम्भं दर्भमुष्टिं चादाय दक्षिणपूर्वमवान्तर-
क्षेत्रं गत्वा दक्षिणाग्रान्दर्भान् संस्तीर्य तेषवाचीनपाणिर्दक्षिणापवर्गान्स्त्रिदुकाञ्जलिं निनयति
मार्जयन्तां पितरः सोम्यासः मार्जयन्तां पितामहाः सोम्यासः मार्जयन्तां प्रपितामहाः सोम्यास
इति । असावनेनिंश्वासावनेनिंश्वेति वा । तेषवाचीनपाणिर्दक्षिणापवर्गान् पिण्डान्ददाति । हिरण्य.
गु. II. 12. 2-3. For आप. गु. vide n. 981.

1051. तथा च स्मृतिः । मुनिभिर्भिन्नकालेषु पिण्डदानं तु यत्स्मृतम् । तत् स्वशाखासं
यत्र तत्र कुर्याद्विचक्षणः ॥ हेमाद्रि (श्रा. p. 1408), who adds 'उपलक्षणं यत्तत् स्म-
रुह्याद्यनुमतेः ।'

1052. येषां तु गृह्यादौ पिण्डदानकालो नोक्तस्तेषां सौकर्यादाचान्तेऽप्युक्तः पक्षो
ग्राह्य इति बहवः । श्रा. प्र p. 247.



piṇḍadāna in Sāmvatsarika śrāddha, Mahālaya and the like (p. 164).

There is another conflict of views as regards the ancestors to whom piṇḍas are to be offered at the śrāddha on amāvāsyā. Most of the ancient Vedic works refer only to the three paternal ancestors as the *devatās* of the Pārvaṇa-śrāddha and not to any other relatives. The three paternal ancestors are separately the *devatās* of śrāddha and not cumulatively, as indicated by the Āśv. Śrauta II. 6. 15 and Viṣṇu Dh. S. 73. 13-14. The important questions are whether the wives of the paternal ancestors, viz. the mother, the grandmother and the paternal great-grandmother were associated with their husbands in ancient times and secondly, whether the three paternal ancestors of one's mother viz. the maternal grandfather, the maternal great-grandfather and the maternal great-great-grandfather were invoked together with their wives in the Pārvaṇa. The answer to both these questions so far as the Vedas and Brāhmaṇas are concerned is in the negative. Vide Tai. S. I. 8. 5.1, Tai. Br. I. 3. 10, II. 6. 16, Vāj. Ś. 19. 36-37, Śat. Br. II. 4. 2. 16, in all of which the only persons expressly named are the pitṛs and three paternal ancestors. It may be noted, however, that in Vāj. S. 9. 19 (which is cited by Kātyāyana at the end of Śrāddhasūtra 3 as the mantra to be recited when following the brāhmaṇas that are dismissed) there is a clear reference to paternal ancestors and also to mothers. Almost all sūtras also are silent as regards the invocation of the maternal ancestors in Pārvaṇa-śrāddha along with paternal ones. Vide ¹⁰⁵³ Āśv. Śr.; Sudarsana on Āp. gr. VIII. 21. 2 states that the Sūtrakāra and Bhāṣyakāra did not speak of Mātāmahaśrāddha as it is not obligatory for a daughter's son to offer it. The Śrāddhasūtra of Kātyāyana ¹⁰⁵⁴ speaks of three piṇḍas being made for the paternal ancestors and three for the mother's paternal

1053. तस्यां पिण्डान् निपृणीयात्पराचीनपाणिः पित्रे पितामहाय प्रपितामहायैतत्तेऽसौ ये च त्वामत्रान्विति । आश्व. श्रौ. II. 6, 15 on which गार्ग्यनारायण explains 'निपरणं पित्र्येणैव तीर्थेन । पाणेरुत्तानत्वमजहदेव पित्र्येण तीर्थेन यदा कुर्यात् तदा पराचीनपाणिर्भवति । असावित्यस्य स्थाने सम्बुद्धयन्तानि पित्रादीनां नामानि गृह्णीयात्' । तस्यां refers to लेखायां.

1054. सर्वमन्त्रमेकतोद्धृत्योच्छिष्टसमीपे दर्भेषु त्रींस्त्रीन् पिण्डानवनेज्य दद्यादाचान्ते-
ष्वित्येके । ... वाच्यतामित्यनुज्ञातः पितृभ्यः पितामहेभ्यः प्रपितामहेभ्यो मातामहेभ्यः प्रमाता-
महेभ्यो वृद्धप्रमातामहेभ्यश्च स्वधोच्यताम् । ... वाजे वाजेऽवतेति विसृज्य आ मा वाजस्येति विसृज्य
प्रदक्षिणीकृत्योपविशेत् । कात्यायन's श्राद्धसूत्र III. The मन्त्र reads 'आ मा वाजस्येति विसृज्य
प्रसवो जगम्यादेमे द्यावापृथिवी विश्वरूपे । आ मा गन्तां पितरा मातरा चा मा सोमो अमृतस्य
गम्यात् । वाज. सं. 9. 19.

ancestors. The Gobhilasmṛti provides ¹⁰⁵⁵ that six pinḍas should be offered except in the Anvaṣṭakāśrāddha, the first śrāddha (on the 11th day), the sixteen śrāddhas and the yearly śrāddha for a deceased person. Dhaumya ¹⁰⁵⁶ prescribes that where the paternal ancestors are honoured (or fed) the maternal ancestors also should be certainly honoured without making any difference (between the two classes); if he makes a distinction the performer will go to Hell. The Viṣṇupurāṇa, ¹⁰⁵⁷ the Brahmāṇḍapurāṇa and the Varāhapurāṇa say that some hold that a śrāddha for maternal ancestors is to be performed separately while other sages hold that one śrāddha is to be offered at the same time to the paternal and maternal ancestors. Brhaspati (q. by Kalpataru on śrāddha p. 204) prescribes ¹⁰⁵⁸ that one should offer pinḍas made from all food cooked for the śrāddha and mixed with honey and sesamum grains for both paternal and maternal ancestors according to the rules of one's grhyasūtra. The Varāhapurāṇa (14. 40-41) says that *pitrya* brāhmaṇas should be dismissed first and then the *daiva* brāhmaṇas together with those for the mother's ancestors and that separate pinḍas were to be offered to the mother's paternal ancestors (14.37). Some held the view that the offering of pinḍas to maternal ancestors was obligatory for the *putrikā-putra* ¹⁰⁵⁹ (son of the appointed daughter) or for a daughter's son that inherited the wealth of his maternal grandfather. Brhat-Parāśara (chap. V. p. 153) mentions several views on this point. It seems probable that when the appointment of a

1055. कर्षुसमन्वितं सुक्त्वा तथायश्चाद्धषोडशम् । प्रत्याब्धिकं तु शेषेषु पिण्डाः स्युः षडिति स्थितिः ॥ गोभिलस्मृति III. 73. कर्षुसमन्वितं is explained by निर्णयसिन्धु (III. p. 395) and हेमाद्रि as सपिण्डीकरण and by आ. क्रि. कौ. p. 93 as अष्टकाश्चाद्ध.

1056. पितरो यत्र पूज्यन्ते तत्र मातामहा ध्रुवम् । अविशेषेण कर्तव्यं विशेषाक्षरकं व्रजेत् ॥ धौम्य q. by आ. प्र. p. 14; स्मृतिच. (आ. p. 337) quotes it as स्मृत्यन्तर; the स्मृत्यर्थसार p. 56 merely quotes it (without name) and आ. क्रि. कौ. p. 93 quotes it from योगियाज्ञवल्क्य.

1057. पृथक्तयोः केचिदाहुः आद्धस्य करणं नृप । एकत्रैकेन पाकेन वदन्त्यन्ये महर्षयः ॥ विष्णुपुराण III. 15. 17; पृथङ्मातामहानां तु केचिदिच्छन्ति मानवाः । त्रीन् पिण्डानां तु पूर्येण साङ्गुष्ठान् पुष्टिर्धनान् ॥ ब्रह्माण्ड (उपोद्धातपाद) 11. 61. The verse पृथक्तयोः is also ब्राह्मपुराण 14. 12.

1058. सर्वस्मात्पृथक्तादज्ञात् पिण्डान् मधुतिलान्वितान् । पितृमातामहादीनां दद्याद्दूध-विधानतः ॥ बृहस्पति q. by स्मृतिच. (आ. p. 479). हेमाद्रि (आ.) p. 1428 may be noted that या. (I. 242) does not mention honey.

1059. Vide मनु IX. 132 and H. of Dh. vol. III. pp. 647 and 657 (for पुत्रिकापुत्र).

daughter as a son became rare or went out of vogue the maternal ancestors came to be associated with the paternal ancestors in pārvana-śrāddha.

The question when the wives of ancestors became associated with the male ancestors cannot be solved satisfactorily. The *pitāmahi* is not mentioned in the extant Vedic Literature. But it is certain that the wives of male ancestors had come to be associated with their husbands in the sūtra period. For example, the Hir. Gr. II. 10 associates the mother, the paternal grandmother and the paternal great-grandmother with their respective husbands in the monthly śrāddha performed in the dark half. Similarly, the Baud. gr. II. 11.34 not only associates in the Aṣṭakā śrāddha the male maternal ancestors with the male paternal ancestors, but also their respective wives. The Āp. M. P.¹⁰⁶⁰ has mantras referring to the three male paternal ancestors as well as their wives. The Śāñ. gr. (IV. 1.11) provides that behind the lumps for the paternal ancestors the performer places the lumps for their wives, putting something between the two sets of piṇḍas and the commentator explains that darbhas are placed between the two sets. The Kauśika sūtra (88.12) also provides for the offering of piṇḍas to the wives of male ancestors to the south of the piṇḍas for male ancestors. The Āśv. gr. (II. 5. 4-5), while speaking of the Anvaṣṭakya rite, refers to piṇḍas to be offered to the wives of ancestors with the addition of rum and the scum of boiled rice. The Vaikhāṇasa-smārta-sūtra IV. 7 (after describing the Piṇḍapitryajña in IV. 5-6) notes that the difference between it and the ordinary monthly śrāddha is that in the latter piṇḍas are offered to the wives of the pitṛs¹⁰⁶¹. Dr. Caland (in 'Ahnencult' p. 164) thinks that this inclusion of the women ancestors among those to whom piṇḍas were to be offered was made by taking over from Anvaṣṭakya ceremonial described above. This conjecture does not look very probable. The Aṣṭakā rites existed from remote antiquity as shown above. If the offering of piṇḍas to women ancestors were borrowed from the Anvaṣṭakya

1060. मार्जयन्तां मम पितरो मार्जयन्तां मम पितामहा मार्जयन्तां मम प्रपितामहाः ॥
मार्जयन्तां मम मातरो मार्जयन्तां मम पितामहो मार्जयन्तां मम प्रपितामहः । आप. म. पा.
II. 19. 2-7.

1061. अथ श्राद्धं मासि मास्यपरपक्षेऽन्यतमेहन्यजन्मर्क्षे ब्राह्मणनिमन्त्रणादि सुवेमष्ट-
कावत् । तथाज्यचरु हुत्वाहं पिण्डार्थं पात्रे समवदाय ब्राह्मणान्भोजयित्वा नमो वः पितरो
रसायेति पिण्डं प्रथमं पितृभ्यो नमो वः पितरः सोम्यास इति द्वितीयतृतीयौ पितामहप्रपितामहा
भ्याम् । पितृभ्यस्तत्पत्नीभ्यः पिण्डानर्पयतीति विशेषः । वैखानसगृह्य IV. 7.

this item would have figured in all sūtras just as Aṣṭakā śrāddha does. It is rather more probable that the extension to women was a natural growth in course of time. Some of the smṛtis emphasize the participation of the wives of paternal ancestors in the *pārvaṇaśrāddha* offerings. Śātātapa states¹⁰⁶²: 'In what is offered to the pitṛs after Sapinḍikaraṇa, the mother is a participant everywhere. A śrāddha may be separately offered to the mother in the Anvaṣṭakā rites, in Vṛddhi-śrāddha, at Gayā and on the anniversary of the day of her death; but in other cases it is performed along with the husband'. It is stated by Brhaspati that the mother partakes of the śrāddha food along with her husband (i. e. the father of the performer); that the same rule applies to the paternal grandmother and the paternal great-grandmother¹⁰⁶³. The Kalpataru¹⁰⁶⁴ and others held that the wives of the paternal ancestors were not *devatās* in the *pārvaṇa-śrāddha*, but they only enjoyed the ethereal food which came to the pitṛs, while Hemādri and other southern writers held that the mother and other female ancestors were among the *devatās* of *pārvaṇa-śrāddha*, but not the step-mother. There was a divergence of views whether the words 'mother', 'paternal grandmother' and 'paternal great-grandmother' included the co-wives (*sapatnīs*) of these. Hemādri (on śrāddha pp. 97-104) has a long disquisition on this question. According to one view the step-mother, the co-wife of the *pitā-mahī* and the co-wife of the *prapitāmahī* would be included in

1062. सपिण्डीकरणादूर्ध्वं यत्पितृभ्यः प्रदीयते। सर्वत्रांशहरा माता इति धर्मेण निश्चयः ॥ अन्वष्टकासु वृद्धौ च गयायां च क्षयेऽहनि। मातुः आहुतं पृथक् कुर्यादन्यत्र पतिना सह ॥ शातातप q. by आ. प्र. p. 9, स्मृतिच (आ.) p. 369 as स्मृत्यन्तर.

1063. स्वेन भर्त्रा सह आहुतं माता भुङ्के स्वधामयम्। पितामही च स्वेनैव तथैव प्रपिता-
मही ॥ बृहस्पति q. by स्मृतिच. (आ.), p. 369, हेमाद्रि (आ.) p. 99, आ. प्र. p. 9.

1064. न सपत्नीकानां देवतात्वमिति कल्पतरुप्रभृतयः। हेमाद्रिप्रभृतयो दक्षिणात्यास्तु... एकस्यामेव आहुत्यक्तौ पितृन् तयोषितश्च देवतात्वेनोद्दिशेदिति विधीयते। आ. प्र. pp. 9-10. The argument of those who hold the former view is 'सपत्नीकपितरमुकशर्मजित्युल्लेखे पितुरेव देवतात्वं भवेन्न तु विशेषणीभूतायाः पत्न्याः—इति।' टोडरानन्द (आहुतसौख्य) folio 3a. The आहुतत्व p. 190 similarly says 'उक्तश्रुत्यादिषु पित्रादीनां प्रत्येक-निर्देशात्, अत्र पितरो देवता इत्यापस्तम्बसूत्रे देवता इति बहुवचननिर्देशात्, न योषिदभ्य इत्यादिवचनाच्च पित्रादीनां प्रत्येकेन पत्नीनिरपेक्षेण च देवतात्वम्।' Vide n. 783 for the आप. ध. सू. passage. न योषिदभ्यः—is apparently गोभिलस्मृति II. 102 'न योषिदभ्यः पृथग्दद्यादवसानदिनाहते। स्वभर्तृपिण्डमात्राच्च तृप्तिरासां यतः स्मृता ॥'. The कल्पतरु (आहुतकाण्ड p. 4) says: नापि पित्रादेः सपत्नीकस्य देवतात्वं तथात्वे प्रमाणाभावात्। प्रत्युत न योषिदभ्यः पृथग्दद्यादवसानदिनाहते। स्वभर्तृपिण्डमात्राभ्यास्तृप्तिरासां यतः स्मृता ॥ इति शातातपवचने भर्तृसम्बन्धि पिण्डभागस्यैव पत्नीतृप्तिहेतुत्वेनाभिधानाद् विपरीतमेव प्रमाणाभावेन। कल्पतरु, आ. p. 260.

the presentation formula (as quoted below), while according to Hemādri only the real mother, the real paternal grand-mother and the real paternal great-grandmother would ordinarily be included except on rare occasions such as a Mahālayaśrāddha or a śrāddha at Gayā. ¹⁰⁶⁵

As regards the mantra to be recited when offering each of the pīṇdas there is some divergence of views, which reaches far into antiquity. The pīṇda ¹⁰⁶⁶ is offered to each ancestor after stating his gotra, his relationship to the performer and name (all in the vocative). According to several writers the form of the presentation of the pīṇda is 'this is for thee, O Father! N. N. (by name) and so and so by gotra.' In the Tai. S. I. 8.5 1, in the Āp. M. P. II. 20.13 and in some sūtras, the following is added 'and for those who follow thee' (ye ca tvām-anu). ¹⁰⁶⁷ In the Gobhila-grhya IV. 3.6 and Khādiragrhya the formula is still longer 'This pīṇda is thine, O father! and of those who follow thee and of those whom thou followest. ¹⁰⁶⁸ To thee, Svadhā!'. The Bhāradvaja ¹⁰⁶⁹ gr. II. 12 introduces slight changes. It has been already noted above (n. 781) how the Śat. Br. disapproves of

1065. तदेवमेतन्निर्व्यूढं यद्बहुपत्नीकपित्रादिदेवत्यामावास्यादिसाधारणकालिकश्राद्ध-प्रयोगे अस्मत्पितर्यज्ञदत्तशर्मन् वासिष्ठगोत्रासुकामुकनामिकाभिर्वासिष्ठगोत्राभिः पत्नीभिः सहैतन्नुभयमन्नमित्यादिभिः स्त्रीपुंसोद्देशोपलक्षितैर्वाक्यैरनुष्ठानं कर्तव्यमिति। This is the पूर्वपक्ष view. हेमाद्रि replies 'अत्र सिद्धान्तोऽभिधीयते। तत्र तावन्मुख्ये पार्वणे जननीव्यतिरिक्तानां पितृपत्नीनां न सहोद्देशः कार्यः। नापि पितृजननीव्यतिरिक्तानां पितामहपत्नीनां नापि पितामहजननीव्यतिरिक्तानां प्रपितामहपत्नीनाम्। हेमाद्रि (आ.) p. 100. हेमाद्रि adds (p. 102) 'यदा तु नानापितृवृत्तिकामनया विशिष्टे महालयादिकालविशेषे गयादि-तीर्थविशेषे वा श्राद्धं कुर्यात्तदा पुत्रवतीनामपुत्राणां वा मातृसपत्नीनामपि श्राद्धं कुर्यात्।'

1066. अर्घदानेऽथ सङ्कल्पे पिण्डदाने तथा क्षये। गोत्रसम्बन्धनामानि यथावत्प्रतिपादयेत् ॥ पारस्कर q. by अपरार्क p. 506, हेमाद्रि (आ. p. 1434), आ. प्र. p. 258 which explains 'सङ्कल्पे अन्नत्यागे'. The form of the address will be 'अमुकगोत्रास्मत्पितरमुकशर्मन् एतत्तेऽन्नं (or एष ते पिण्डः) स्वधा नम इदममुकगोत्रायास्मत्पित्रे अमुकशर्मणे न ममेति' हेमाद्रि (आ. p. 1436). It should be noted that this formula is to be employed only by the Vājasaneyins.

1067. एतत्ते ततासौ ये च त्वामनु, एतत्ते पितामहासौ ये च त्वामनु, एतत्ते प्रपितामह ये च त्वामनु। आप. म. पा. II. 20. 13. Vide note 781 for तै. सं. passages and n. 1053 for आश्व. श्रौ. passage.

1068. असाववनेनिक्ष्व ये चात्र त्वामनु यांश्च त्वमनु तस्मै ते स्वधेति। गोभिलगृह्य III. 3. 6 and खादिरगृह्य III. 5. 17. The टोडरानन्द (श्राद्धसौख्य folio 77a) gives the formulas for followers of यजुर्वेद and सामवेद as follows: अमुकगोत्रपितरमुकशर्मन् एतत्तेऽन्नं स्वधेति यजुर्वेदिनामुत्सर्गवाक्यम्। अमुकसगोत्र पितरमुकदेवशर्मन्नेतत्तेऽन्नं ये चात्र त्वामनु यांश्च त्वमनु तस्मै ते स्वधेति छन्दोगानाम्।; compare श्राद्धतत्त्व p. 237 and आ. क्रि. का. p. 70 for similar formulas.

1069. यांश्च त्वमन्नान्वति ये च त्वामनु। भारद्वाजगृह्य II. 12.

the usage of the Tai. S. in this matter, the reason being¹⁰⁷⁰ that when the son offers a pinḍa to his father and employs the formula 'this is thine and of those that follow thee', he would be included among those that follow the father and be thus offering a pinḍa to himself, which is inauspicious. It is provided by Gobhila-grhya¹⁰⁷¹ that if he does not know the names of his ancestors he should put down the first pinḍa with the Formula 'svadhā to the Fathers dwelling on the earth', (he should put down) the 2nd pinḍa with the formula 'svadhā to the fathers dwelling in the air', the third with the formula 'svadhā to the Fathers dwelling in heaven' and should recite in a low voice the words 'Here, O Fathers, gladden yourselves, show your vigour each according to his own part.' Yama quoted by Kalpataru (on Śr. p. 203), following Gobhila provides generally (whether the ancestors be known or not) that the first pinḍa should be offered to the father with the expression 'pṛthivī', the second to the grandfather in the aerial regions and the third to the paternal great-grandfather with the mantra 'dyaaur darvī'. The Viṣṇu Dh. S. (73.17-19) has similar provisions, the mantras respectively being 'pṛthivī darvirakṣitā', 'antarikṣam darvirakṣitā', 'dyaaur-darvirakṣitā'. Medhātithi on Manu III. 194 says (following Āśv. Śr. and others) that if the names of the ancestors are not known he should simply say 'O Father, Grandfather' &c. If the gotra be not known then he should employ the gotra name Kaśyapa.¹⁰⁷²

Certain matters pertaining to pinḍas must be stated in one place once for all. There is a good deal of discussion about the

1070. तदेतदमङ्गल्यमभिधानं भवति । यतोऽयं पिण्डदानं कुर्वाणः पुत्रादिः ये च त्वामनु इति मन्त्रेण येषां प्रमीतानां सहेत्याह तेषां पश्चाद्भूतः स्वयमेव सह भवति । अतश्चासौ स्वस्मा एव पिण्डदानं करोतीति प्रतिभाति । हेमाद्रि (आ.) p. 1437.

1071. यदि नामानि न विन्द्यात् स्वधा पितृभ्यः पृथिवीषद्भ्य इति प्रथमं पिण्डं निदध्यात् । स्वधा पितृभ्योऽन्तरिक्षसद्भ्य इति द्वितीयं स्वधा पितृभ्यो दिविषद्भ्य इति तृतीयं निधाय जपति अत्र पितरो मादयध्वं यथाभागमावृषायध्वमिति । गोभिलगृह्य IV. 3. 10-11 q. by हेमाद्रि p. 1443 and आ. प्र. 260. Compare तै. सं. I. 8. 5. 1 एतत्ते तत ... प्रपितामह ये च त्वामन्वत्र पितरो यथाभागं मन्दध्वम्, and वाज. सं. II. 31 'अत्र पितरो मादयध्वं यथाभागमावृषायध्वम्'. The आश्व. श्रौ. सू. II. 6. 24 says 'नामान्यविद्वांस्ततपितामह-प्रपितामहेति'.

1072. गोत्राज्ञानेऽप्याह व्याघ्रपादः—गोत्रनाशे तु कश्यपः—इति । गोत्राज्ञाने कश्यप-गोत्रग्रहणं कर्तव्यम् । कश्यपसगोत्रस्य सर्वसाधारणत्वात् । तथा च स्मृतिः । तस्मादाहुः सर्वाः प्रजाः काश्यप्य इति । स्मृतिच. (आ. p. 481); vide आ. प्र. p. 260 for a similar provision. The शूद्रकमलाकर p. 49 says: यद्यपि तस्मादाहुः सर्वाः प्रजाः काश्यप्य इति शतपथश्रुतेः ... कश्यपं गोत्रमस्ति तथापि आहु एव तत् । 'सर्वाः प्रजाः काश्यप्यः' These words occur in शतपथब्राह्मण VII 5. 1. 5.

size of the piṇḍas. Marīci (quoted by Aparārka p. 507) provides that in pārvana-śrāddha the piṇḍa should be of the size of undried āmalaka fruit, of the size of a bilva fruit in Ekoddiṣṭa, in navaśrāddhas the piṇḍa should be bigger than in any one of the preceding when offered every day during the days of impurity on death. The Skandapurāṇa says that piṇḍas should be of such a size as would enable a calf two years old to put it easily into its mouth.¹⁰⁷³ Āngiras (q. by Sm. C. p. 475 and Hemādri, śrāddha p. 1429) prescribes that the piṇḍas may be of the size of kapittha or bilva fruit or of the size of a hen's egg or of an āmalaka or badara fruit. In the Maitrāyaṇīya-sūtra¹⁰⁷⁴ it is said that the piṇḍa for the paternal grandfather should be bigger than that for the father and should be in the middle (of the three piṇḍas), that the piṇḍa for the great-grandfather should be the largest of all. The next point is from what materials the piṇḍas were to be made. If piṇḍas were offered before agnaukarāṇa they were to be made from the boiled rice (caru) prepared for agnaukarāṇa. If made after agnaukarāṇa, the piṇḍas were to be made from the cooked food (remaining after agnaukarāṇa) mixed with sesamum (vide Yāj. I. 242). If piṇḍas were to be offered after the brāhmaṇas took their dinner, the piṇḍas were to be made from the remainder of the food cooked for the brāhmaṇas which was to be mixed with the boiled rice for agnaukarāṇa as stated in Kātyāyana's Śrāddha-sūtra.¹⁰⁷⁵ The piṇḍas were to be placed according to the Matsya¹⁰⁷⁶ on darbhas spread on the ground cleaned with water mixed with cow's dung and urine. There were others such as Devala, the Brahmapurāṇa and Bhaviṣyapurāṇa that prescribed that an altar, either circular or square, of sand was to be raised on ground 4 fingers in height and one cubit in extent near the plates from which brāhmaṇas were to eat and thereon darbhas

1073. द्विहायनस्य वत्सस्य विशन्त्यास्यं यथासुखम् । तथा कुर्यात्प्रमाणेन पिण्डान् व्यासेन भाषितम् ॥ स्कन्द VII. 1. 206. 41 q. by स्मृतिच. (आ. p. 475) and हेमाद्रि (आ.) p. 1429 as व्यास's.

1074. द्वयोर्द्वयोर्द्वतेषु पिण्डान्निदधाति पितुर्नाम्नाऽसावेतत्ते ये चात्र त्वानु तस्मै तेभ्यश्च स्वधेति प्रथमं, पितामहस्य नाम्ना स्थवीयांसं मध्यमं, प्रपितामहनाम्ना स्थविष्ठं दक्षिणं द्वयोः परयोर्नामनी गृह्णन् मूलदेशे लेपं निर्माष्टि । मैत्रायणीयसूत्र q. by हेमाद्रि (आ.) p. 1430, आ. प्र. p. 257.

1075. तृताः स्म इत्यनुज्ञातः शेषमन्नमनुज्ञाप्य सर्वमन्नमेकतोद्धृत्योच्छिष्टसमीपे दर्भेषु त्रींस्त्रीन्पिण्डानवनेज्य दद्यात् । आह्नसूत्र of कार्या. III.

1076. उपलिप्ते महीपृष्ठे गोशङ्कुन्मूत्रवारिणा । निधाय दर्भान् विधिवदक्षिणाग्रान्प्रयत्नतः । सर्ववर्णेन चाब्जेन पिण्डान्स्तु पितृयज्ञवत् । मत्स्यपुराण 16. 45-46.

were to be placed and then piṇḍas. The Vāyupurāṇa provides that a line should be drawn on the altar or the ground with the root of a *darbha* to the accompaniment of the following mantras viz. ¹⁰⁷⁷ 'I destroy whatever is impure; I have killed all *asuras*, *dānavas*, *rākṣasas*, *yakṣas*, *piśācas* (goblins), *guhnyakas* and *yātudhānas*' and the mantra 'struck down (are the *asuras* and *rākṣasas* sitting on the Vedi)'. In Āp. Śr. I. 10.2, Manu III. 217, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 73.17-19, Yama (q. by Hemādri p. 1440), the Kalpataru (on Śr. p. 203), Mahārṇavaprakāśa (q. by Hemādri), Hemādri (Śr. pp. 1440-42) and Śr. P. pp. 266-267 reference is made to adoration of the six seasons and the obeisance (*namaskāra*) to the pitṛs in the words 'namo vaḥ pitaro' (Vāj. S. II. 32) ¹⁰⁷⁸ and the repetition of three mantras when each of the three piṇḍas is offered, some holding that the seasons were to be deemed as identified with '*rasa*', '*śoṣa*' and four other words (in Vāj. S. II. 32), while others held that the adoration of the seasons is quite distinct from the *namaskāras* to the pitṛs. In the Śaunakātharvapaśrāddha-kalpa, the piṇḍas are offered in the reverse order i. e. first to the great-grandfather, then to the grandfather and then to the father (Hemādri on śrāddha p. 1442). Āp. Śr. I. 9. 4 refers to this method in 'pitāmahaprabhṛtīn vā'.

1077. निहन्मि सर्वं यदमेध्यवद्भवेद्धताश्च सर्वेऽसुरदानवा मया । रक्षांसि यक्षाश्च पिशाच-
सङ्घा हता मया यातुधानाश्च सर्वे ॥ अनेन मन्त्रेण सुसंयतात्मा वेदीं च सर्वां सकृदुल्लिखेच्च ॥
ब्रह्माण्डपुराण q. by कल्पतरु (आ.) p. 214, 216, आ. प्र. p. 251. This is cited as
from ब्रह्माण्डपुराण by अपरार्क p. 478 (which reads सुसंयतात्मा तिलान् क्षिपेद्दिक्षु
तथा विदिक्षु). The verses are वायुपुराण 75. 45-46 and are mentioned as from
वायुपुराण in आद्धतत्त्व p. 235. Both अपरार्क and आ. प्र. add the vedic mantra
'अपहताः' (वाज. सं. II. 29) here.

1078. पूर्वपिण्डं प्रयच्छेत्तु पित्र्यं च पृथिवीति च । पितामहाय त्वपरमन्तरिक्षे च दाप-
येत् ॥ प्रपितामहाय च ततस्तृतीयं तु निवेदयेत् ॥ द्यौर्दक्षिरिति मन्त्रेण श्रुतिरेषा सनातनी ॥
यम q. by कल्पतरु (आ. p. 203), हेमाद्रि (आ. p. 1440). उच्छिष्टसंनिधौ दक्षिणाग्रेषु
दर्भेषु पृथिवीं दक्षिरक्षिता इत्येकं पिण्डं पित्रे निदध्यात् । अन्तरिक्षं दक्षिरक्षिता इति द्वितीयं
पितामहाय । द्यौर्दक्षिरक्षिता इति तृतीयं प्रपितामहाय । विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 73. 17-19. आचम्यो-
दक् परावृत्य त्रिरायम्य शनैरसून् । षडृतुंश्च नमस्कुर्यात् पितृनेव च मन्त्रवित् ॥ मनु III. 217.
The मन्त्र is: पृथिवीं दक्षिरक्षिता तृप्तिः स्वधानुपदस्ता तां पृथिवीं दक्षिमक्षितां तृप्तिं स्वधामनु-
पदस्तामाग्निरिव पृथिवीमुपजीवासौ ये चात्र त्वामन्वेष्टा ते स्वधा. In the other two
mantras in honour of पितामह and प्रपितामह substitute अन्तरिक्षं and द्यौः for
पृथिवी, वायुः and सूर्यः for अग्निः wherever necessary. The meaning is 'the
earth is a ladle giving inexhaustible gratification' &c. The काठकपुराण
(63. 14) provides 'पृथिवीं दक्षिरिति निपरणं कुर्यात्' and the कौशिकसूत्र (88. 8-10)
also mentions the three mantras uttered at the time of offering the three
piṇḍas (viz. पृथिवीं दक्षिरक्षिता, अन्तरिक्षं दक्षिरक्षिता, द्यौं दक्षिरक्षिता). Compare
काठकसंहिता IX. 23,

About the final disposal (*pratipatti*) of the *piṇḍas* several views were entertained. We have already seen (note 780) that the Vāj. S. and several sūtras provided that the middle one of the three *piṇḍas* for paternal ancestors was to be eaten by the wife of the performer of the *śrāddha* if she was desirous of a son. Manu (III. 262-263) provides that the *dharmapatnī* (i. e. a wife of the same *varṇa* and married before any other wife) should eat the middle *piṇḍa* with the mantra 'ādhatta pitaro garbham' (q. in n. 780) and then she gives birth to a son who lives long, secures fame, is intelligent and obtains wealth and progeny and who is of a good and righteous turn of mind. The same rule is provided for by the Laghu-Āśvalāyana 23.83, the Kūrma II. 2. 71, 76, Matsya 16.52, Vāyu 76.31, Viṣṇudharmottara I. 171 8, 220. 149, Padma (*sr̥ṣṭikhaṇḍa* 9.121) and other purāṇas. As regards *piṇḍas* in general, the Āśv. Śr. (II. 7. 14-17) says that the other two *piṇḍas* (except the middle one) should be cast into water or in fire or they may be eaten by a brāhmaṇa who has suddenly developed a distaste for food or they may be partaken by one who has been suffering from a serious disease (such as tuberculosis or leprosy) and that in the latter case the man either recovers or dies. The Gobhila-gr. (IV. 3. 31-34) provides that the *piṇḍas* should be thrown into water or in fire or should be given to a brāhmaṇa or a cow to eat. Manu (III. 260-261) says the same and adds that they may be given to a goat for eating and that some allow them to be devoured by birds. Yāj. I. 257, Matsya 16.52-53, and Padma¹⁰⁷⁹ mention the same five ways of disposal but the last adds one more viz. placing them near a mound of earth. The Varāha-purāṇa¹⁰⁸⁰ (190.121) says that the performer may eat the first *piṇḍa* himself, he should give the middle to his wife and the third he should cast into water. The Anuśāsanaparva (125.25.26) provides that the first and the third should be thrown into water or fire and the middle *piṇḍa* should be eaten by the wife. It is provided by Brhaspati that if the wife is suffering from a disease or is already pregnant or is staying in some other

1079. पिण्डांश्च गोजविभेभ्यो दद्यादग्नौ जलेपि वा । विप्रान्ते वाथ विकिरेदापोभिरथ वाहयेत् ॥ पद्म (सृष्टि 9. 120); अपरार्क p. 550 and हेमाद्रि read विप्रान्ते and वयोभिरथ वाहयेत् (p. 1504). That birds should be allowed to eat the *piṇḍas* is natural since it was believed as stated above (p. 339) that the *pitṛs* wander about in the form of birds. Vide कूर्म II. 22.83 for a similar verse.

1080. भक्षयेत् प्रथमं पिण्डं पत्न्यै देयं तु मध्यमम् । तृतीयमुदके दद्याद्वादे एवं शिष्टिः स्मृतः ॥ वराहपुराण 190.121.

place, then an old bull or a goat may eat the middle piṇḍa (quoted by Sm. C. on Śr. p. 486, Kalpataru on Śr. p. 224). The Viṣṇudharmottara (I. 141. 8) prescribes that when a śrāddha is performed at a *tīrtha*, the piṇḍas should be cast into the sacred water. The Anuśāsanaparva 125. 38-40 and some of the purāṇas such as Vāyu (76.32-34) and Brahma (220.150-152) provide that certain consequences follow from the disposal of piṇḍas in one way or another viz. the best worlds by giving piṇḍas to cows, intellect and fame from casting into water, long life from offering them to birds &c. Vide also Brahmāṇḍa (upodghāta, chap. 12. 31-35) which provides that if given to cows the result is best complexion, if to cocks then delicacy, long life if given crows. In this connection it should be noted that piṇḍas of rice or of flour were not to be offered in all śrāddhas. The Śrāddha-kalpalatā (pp. 86-89) has a long discussion about the śrāddhas in which the offering of piṇḍas of food is forbidden. For example, it quotes Pulastya to the effect that in śrāddhas performed on the two *ayana* days, on the two equinoctial days, on any saṅkrānti, no piṇḍas are to be offered, so also in śrāddhas on Ekādaśī, Trayodaśī, on Maghā and Kṛttikā nakṣatras, if a man desires to have sons and wealth.

On the question as to what is the principal item in the śrāddha there are three views. Some, like Govindarāja,¹⁰⁸¹ hold that feeding of brāhmaṇas is the principal thing and they rely on Manu III. 129 which says 'One may feed even a single learned brāhmaṇa in a rite for gods and manes and not many who do not know vedic mantras; by doing so he reaps abundant reward'. Here the reward or fruit is associated with feeding a learned brāhmaṇa. There is a maxim¹⁰⁸² of the Pūrvamīmāṃsā that 'whatever is mentioned in proximity with an action that has a reward or fruit but has no special reward of its own, is subsidiary (*aṅga*) to what is declared to have a reward.' Besides, there is no piṇḍadāna in certain śrāddhas such as āmaśrāddha, śrāddha on the Yugādi days.¹⁰⁸³

1081. पुष्कलं फलमाप्नोतीत्यभिधानात् ब्राह्मणस्य भोजनमत्र प्रधानं पिण्डदानादि त्वङ्गमित्यवसीयते । गोविन्दराज on मनु III. 129 (Mandlik's ed.). कुल्लुक on the same verse refers to this opinion.

1082. The न्याय is फलवत्संनिधावफलं तदङ्गम् mentioned by शबर on IV. 4. 19 and by शङ्कर on वेदान्तसूत्र II. 1. 14. Vide जै. IV. 4. 29-38.

1083. तथा च पुलस्त्यः । अयनादितये श्राद्धं विषुवददितये तथा । युगादिषु पिण्डनिर्वपणादिते ॥ इति । कर्तव्यमिति शेषः । स्मृतिच. (आ.) p. 369; vide हेमाद्रि pp.334-336.

Others like Karka hold the view that piṇḍadāna is the principal item in śrāddha. They rely upon the fact that in the śrāddha at Gayā it is the offering of piṇḍas that is the most important matter and upon the fact that in the Viṣṇudharmasūtra (78. 52-53, and 85. 65-66) and in several Purāṇas such as the Varāha (13.50), Viṣṇu (III. 14.22-23), Brahma (220.31-32), Viṣṇudharmottara (I. 145.3-4) the pitṛs are stated to have expressed a deep yearning for a son who would offer them piṇḍas at Gayā and water on sacred rivers &c. (vide note 911). Further support is sought for this view in the fact that in the śrāddha on the birth of a son and in śrāddha offered even by a good sūdra the feeding of brāhmaṇas is forbidden. A third view is that both the feeding of brāhmaṇas and the offering of piṇḍas are the principal matters in a śrāddha. The Gobhila-smṛti, after stating¹⁰⁸⁴ the other two views and some of the reasons therefor, tells us that the author of it is himself in favour of this third view. In cases where the word śrāddha is employed and there is neither brāhmaṇa feeding nor piṇḍadāna as in Daiva śrāddha, the word śrāddha is applied in a secondary sense (*gaṇa*). Vide Hemādri (śrāddha) pp. 157-160. In the Dharmapradīpa it is said that among the followers of the Yajurveda (i. e. Vājasaneyins) the offering of piṇḍas is principal, among the followers of the Ṛgveda the feeding of brāhmaṇas is principal, while among the followers of the Sāmaveda both are principal. In this way śrāddha partakes of two characters viz. it is a *yāga* (sacrifice) and also¹⁰⁸⁵ a gift (*dāna*). Haradatta, Hemādri, Kapardī and others appear to hold that all three (bhojana piṇḍadāna and agnaukarāṇa) are principal. Vide Saṃskāra-ratnamālā p. 1003.

The Matsyapurāṇa says in a famous passage 'ancestors from the fourth (i. e. the father, grand-father and great-grand-father of the great-grandfather of performer) are entitled only to the wipings of the articles of food (sticking to

1084. प्राधान्यं पिण्डदानस्य केचिदाहुर्मनीषिणः । गयादौ पिण्डमात्रं तु दीयमान-
निदर्शनात् ॥ भोजनस्य प्रधानत्वं वदन्त्यन्ये महर्षयः । ब्राह्मणानां परीक्षायां महायज्ञे प्रदर्शनात् ।
आमश्राद्धविधानस्य विना पिण्डैः क्रियाविधिः । तदालभ्याप्यनध्यायविधानश्रवणादपि ॥
विद्वन्मतमुपादाय ममाप्येतद्धृदि स्थितम् । प्राधान्यमुभयोर्यस्मात्तस्मादेष समुच्चयः ॥ गोभिल-
स्मृति III. 160-163.

1085. धर्मप्रदीपेपि । यजुषां पिण्डदानं तु बहुचानां द्विजार्चनम् । श्राद्धशस्त्राभिप्रे-
स्यादुभयं सामवेदिनाम् ॥ तच्च पितृभ्यजेत पितृभ्यो दद्यादित्युभयप्रयोगदर्शनाद्यागदानाभ्या-
त्मकम् । निर्णयसिन्धु III. उत्तरार्धे p. 372.

the hand of the performer of *śrāddha*); the father, (the grand-father and great-grandfather) are entitled to the *piṇḍa*; the offerer of the *piṇḍa* is the 7th; thus *sapiṇḍa* relationship extends to seven generations¹⁰⁸⁶. The *Mārkaṇḍeya-purāṇa* states that three ancestors beginning from the paternal grandfather of the paternal grandfather enjoy the wipings (of the hand of the performer when he offers *piṇḍas*).¹⁰⁸⁷ The *Brahma-purāṇa* (220. 84-86) has similar verses. *Manu* provided¹⁰⁸⁸ that the performer should place three *piṇḍas* on *darbhas* and then wipe off from his hand the particles of food and water sticking to it with the roots of the *darbhas* (on which the *piṇḍas* were placed) and that such wipings are meant for those who are called 'lepabhāgin' (the three paternal ancestors after the paternal great-grand-father). Similar provisions are made by the *Viṣṇu Dh. S.* 73.22, *Varāhapurāṇa* 14.36, *Garuḍapurāṇa* (*Ācārakāṇḍa* 218.24), *Kūrma* II 22.52. *Medhātithi* on *Manu* III. 216 says that even if no food or water sticks to the hand still the performer rubs the hand against the roots of the *darbhas* on which the first *piṇḍa* was placed. A special rule was provided by *Devala* quoted in *Śrāddhakalpalatā* (p. 14) that if the father or mother became a *mleccha* (by forcible or voluntary conversion &c.) one should not observe any impurity for him or her and no *śrāddha* should be offered and when offering the three *piṇḍas* in place of the father the name of *Viṣṇu* should be uttered.

One question that exercised the minds of well-known writers was whether the daily *Vaiṣvadeva* should be performed before starting the *śrāddha* ceremonies or after the latter were finished. We have to remember first that several works state that rites for *pitṛs* deserve pre-eminence over those for the

1086. लेपभाजश्चतुर्थाद्याः पित्राद्याः पिण्डभागिनः। पिण्डदः सप्तमस्तेषां सापिण्डं साप्तपौरुषम्॥ मत्स्य 18.29. These very verses occur in पद्मपुराण (सृष्टिखण्ड 10. 34-35), which reads सापिण्डाः सप्त पूरुषाः. They are quoted from मत्स्यपुराण by अपरार्क p. 507. मत्स्य 16.38 is तेषु दर्भेषु तं हस्तं निमृज्यालेपभागिनाम्।.

1087. लेपसम्बन्धिनश्चान्ये पितामहपितामहात्। प्रभृत्युक्तास्त्रयस्तेषां यजमानश्च सप्तमः। इत्येवं सुनिभिः प्रोक्तः सम्बन्धः साप्तपौरुषः। मार्कण्डेय 28. 4-5 q. by दायभाग (which connects these verses with the rules of impurity on death). The printed दायभाग reads पिण्डलेपभुजश्चान्ये.

1088. न्युज्य पिण्डांस्ततरतांस्तु प्रयतो विधिपूर्वकम्। तेषु दर्भेषु तं हस्तं निमृज्यालेपभागिनाम्॥ मनु III. 216. The latter half occurs in मत्स्य 16.38,



gods¹⁰⁸⁹. Manu (III. 265) states¹⁰⁹⁰ that after the brāhmaṇas have been dismissed the performer of śrāddha shall offer the (daily) domestic *bali* offering and that this is the settled rule of dharma. Medhātithi explains that the word 'bali' is merely illustrative. The Matsyapurāṇa¹⁰⁹¹ 17.61, the Varāha-purāṇa (14.43), Skanda VII. 1. 266. 101-102, Devala, Kārṣṇājini and others provide that after the rites for the fathers are finished Vaiśvadeva should be performed. When Vaiśvadeva is performed after the completion of śrāddha rites, it is to be offered from the food that remains after being utilized for the śrāddha dinner. But Hemādri (pp. 1058-1065) holds a long discussion and arrives at the following conclusions. In the case of an *āhitāgni* (p. 1064), Vaiśvadeva is to be performed before śrāddha except in the case of the śrāddha on the 11th day after death. In the case of one who has not kept the sacred fires there are three optional times for Vaiśvadeva, viz. after *agnaukarana* or after the *vikira* (scattering of food on darbhas for those dying without the *samskāras* being performed for them), or after the brāhmaṇas are dismissed on the completion of the śrāddha (p. 1064). If Vaiśvadeva is to be performed before śrāddha or in the midst of it, then the cooking of food must be done separately for Vaiśvadeva and for śrāddha. In the case of all, whether *sāgnika* or *anagnika*, Vaiśvadeva must be performed with the remainder of the food left after use in śrāddha, if the former is performed after the latter. There were sages like Paithīnasi¹⁰⁹² that held that Vaiśvadeva should not be performed with the food cooked for śrāddha without first offering the food to the brāhmaṇas invited for śrāddha dinner i. e. Vaiśvadeva must be performed after śrāddha if the same food is to be used

1089. देवकार्याद् द्विजातीनां पितृकार्यं विशिष्यते । मनु III. 203, ब्रह्माण्ड (उपो-
ज्जातपाद 10. 104), मत्स्यपुराण 15. 40, वायु 73. 55.

1090. ततो गृहबलिं कुर्यादिति धर्मो व्यवस्थितः ॥ मनु III. 265. मेधातिथि remarks
'ततो गृहबलिं निष्पन्ने आहुकर्मण्यनन्तरं वैश्वदेवहोमान्वाहिकातिथ्यादिभोजनं कर्तव्यम् ।
बलिशब्दस्य प्रदर्शनार्थत्वात् ।'.

1091. निवृत्य प्रणिपत्याथ पर्युक्ष्याग्निं समन्त्रवत् । वैश्वदेवं प्रकुर्वीत नेत्यकं बलिमेव च ॥
मत्स्य 17. 61; निवर्तेताभ्यनुज्ञात आह्वारान्तमनुव्रजेत् । ततस्तु वैश्वदेवाख्यां कुर्यान्नित्यक्रियां
ततः ॥ वराह 14. 43; पितृपाकात् समुद्धृत्य वैश्वदेवं तु होमयेत् । देवल q. by हलायुध in
his com. on कात्यायन's आहुसूत्र (folio 31a). The verse निवृत्य प्रणिपत्याथ
occurs in पद्मपुराण (सृष्टिखण्ड 9. 190) also.

1092. पितृणामनिवेद्य तस्मादन्नाद्वैश्वदेवादिकमपि न कार्यम् । तथा च पैथीनासः ।
पितृपाकात्समुद्धृत्य वैश्वदेवं करोति यः । आसुरं तद्भवेच्छ्राद्धं पितृणां नोपतिष्ठते ॥
(आ.) p. 410, टोडरानन्द (folio 75b).

for the former. The Nirpayasindhu (III. p. 459) states that as most smṛtis place the performance of Vaiśvadeva after śrāddha and as many writers of commentaries and digests such as Medhātithi and Smṛtiratnāvali do the same all should perform Vaiśvadeva after finishing śrāddha.

It is now necessary to illustrate how *pārvaṇa śrāddha* is performed in modern times. Here the greatest variety prevails. The details of the rite vary in the different parts of India. They vary also according as the performer belongs to a particular Veda or a particular recension of the Veda, they vary according to the particular eminent writer that is followed and further additions are made according as the performer is a Vaiṣṇava or a Śaiva. Such differences have to be passed over here, particularly because they are not material. We saw above that the Pārvaṇa-śrāddha was very simple in the days of the Brāhmaṇas and most of the sūtras. There was then no express mention of the worship of Viśvedevāḥ in Pārvaṇa-śrāddha, or of the maternal ancestors or of the wives of any ancestors. Gradually these came to be added and by the time of the Yājñavalkyasmṛti there was special invocation of the Viśvedevāḥ. But these latter were probably not expressly divided into groups at the time of that work. During the smṛti period groups of Viśvedevāḥ came to be assigned to different kinds of śrāddhas (vide p. 457 note 1018). The Purāṇas prescribed several Paurāṇic mantras for being recited during the śrāddha rite, such as the verse 'āgacchantu' (note 984) and the verse 'devatābhyaḥ pitṛbhyaśca' (p. 458 note 1020). Then there arose the principle of the Pūrvamīmāṃsā that all rites described in the different śākhās and sūtras constitute but one rite, and that one may take over from another śākhā or sūtra details described therein, which are not opposed to one's own śākhā or sūtra (vide pp. 453-55 notes 1011-1013). This principle tended to make the śrāddha rites all inclusive and the whole procedure became swollen to an enormous extent. How even the slightest variation causes difference in the details may be illustrated by an example. In Mithilā villages even among poor men eleven brāhmaṇas are invited for pārvaṇa-śrāddha, but it is often difficult to secure a very learned man (who is called *pātra* or *mahāpātra*) to officiate. In such a case where a *mahāpātra* or a *pātra* brāhmaṇa is not available the śrāddha is called *apātraka-pārvaṇaśrāddha* (for which really there is no śāstric authority) and is distinguished from the *sapātraka-pārvaṇa-śrāddha* in several matters, two of which in the case of the



Vājasaneyins may be stated here. Though the Śrāddhasūtra of Kātyāyana, which is of special authority among Vājasaneyins, declares (at the end of kaṇḍikā III) that the brāhmaṇas are to be dismissed at the end of the śrāddha with the verse 'Vāje vāje' (Vāj. S. 9. 18) and the performer should circumambulate the brāhmaṇas with the mantra 'ā mā vājasya' (Vāj. S. 9. 19), it is not the practice among the śiṣṭas in Mithilā according to the editor of the Śrāddharatna to observe these directions in what is called 'apātraka-pārvaṇa-śrāddha' in these days. In Rudradhara's Śrāddhaviveka (pp. 138-146) the 'apātraka-pārvaṇa-śrāddha-prayoga' is set out at length.

In medieval and modern times in the different provinces of India different manuals are followed by the followers of the several Vedas. For example, in Bengal the Sāmavedins, Yajurvedins and Ṛgvedins follow the procedure of pārvaṇa-śrāddha laid down in the manuals (or *paddhatis*) of Bhavadeva, Paśupati and Kālesi respectively and there are many persons who follow the rules laid down by Raghunandana in his Śrāddhatattva and Yajurvediśrāddha-tattva. In Mithilā, Śrīdatta wrote his Piṭṛbhakti for Yajurvedins and the Śrāddha-kalpa for Sāmavedins and the Śrāddha-ratna of Mahāmahopādhyāya Lakṣmīpati (between 1500 to 1640 A. D.) which is printed at Darbhanga and claims to be the traditional manual for Maithilas (Maithila-sāmpradāyika-śrāddhapaddhati) in several places says that it follows the Sugatisopāna of Prati-hastaka for Chandogas and also for Vājasaneyins. In the Madras State Vaiṣṇava brāhmaṇas follow special treatises on *Pūrva* and *Apara kriyās* of Vaidika-Sārvabhauma or Hārīta Venkaṭācārya or Tolappar and Smārta brāhmaṇas follow the Smṛtimuktāphala of Vaidyanātha, which does not much differ in major matters from the works of Vaidikasārvabhauma. Often the only differences are in the saṅkalpa and at the end. It is impossible to exhibit in this work the contents of all these manuals and to compare and contrast them. Therefore I shall set out here a model pārvaṇaśrāddha rite as performed by Ṛgvedins in Western India and then a Śukla Yajurveda rite. The Pratisāmvatsarika śrāddha¹⁰⁹³ rite for Ṛgvedins in

1093. The darśaśrāddha differs only very slightly from the above. The summary here is taken from the 'Ṛgvedibrahmakarma-samuccaya' published by the Nirṇayasāgara Press in Bombay in Poṭhi size, folios 98-108 (ed. of 1936, śaka 1858).



Western India may be set out as follows :—(From the references added in the text and notes it will be clear that this modern rite is all inclusive i. e. it follows the Āśv. Śr. often taking passages verbatim from it, the smṛtis and purāṇas). The performer wears white garments (lower and upper) and sits on a seat of *kuśas* or of wool or deer skin and then sips water twice and wears a *pavitra* on the finger next to the small finger with Rg. IX. 83.1. He ties his top knot on the head and sacred thread with *kuśas*, and ties three *kuśa* blades with *tilas* on the left of the *dhoti* worn by him. Then he performs *prāṇāyāma* and declares the resolve (*saṅkalpa*)¹⁰⁹⁴ to perform (the Sāmvaṭsarika) śrāddha after referring to the time and place and together with *agnaukarāṇa*, *piṇḍadāna* &c. The invited *brāhmaṇas* reply 'do so'. Then the performer puts into a copper vessel water with the mantra 'imam me Gange' (Rg. X. 75. 5), sandalwood paste with the mantra 'Gandhadvārām,' yava grains with the mantra 'thou art yava, king of cereals, Varuṇa is thy patron, thou art endowed with sweetness, thou art the remover of all sins and art known by all sages as holy', betelnut (with Rg. X. 97,15), gold (or some coin) with the mantra 'Hiranyarūpaḥ' (Rg. II. 35.10), flowers and basil leaves. (Then he becomes *prācīnāvīti*)¹⁰⁹⁵ and puts sesamum grains in the water

1094. The सङ्कल्प will be श्रीमद्भगवतो महापुरुषस्य विष्णोराज्ञया प्रवर्तमानस्य ब्रह्मणो द्वितीये परार्धे...भरतवर्षे दक्षिणापथे दण्डकारण्ये देशे शालिवाहनशके अमुकनाम संवत्सरे गोदावर्या दक्षिणे तीरे (उत्तरे तीरे वा)...अमुकतिथौ अमुकवासरे...पुरुषा-द्रवसंज्ञकानां विश्वेषां देवानां अस्मत्पितृपितामहप्रपितामहानाममुकशर्मणां अमुकसगोत्राणां वसुरुद्रादित्यस्वरूपाणां एतेषां श्रेयर्थं मोक्षार्थं मम पितॄणां प्रतिसंवत्सरिकश्राद्धं सदैवं सपिण्डं साग्रीकरणं पार्वणेन विधिना अज्जेन हविषा सद्यः करिष्ये. The performer becomes प्राचीनावीति when repeating the words अस्मत्पितृ...स्वरूपाणां and reverts to उपवीति form when saying एतेषां etc. Among the Mādhyas the सङ्कल्प contains the words 'पित्रन्तर्यामिणो विश्वेदेवान्तर्यामिणोऽनिरुद्ध-प्रद्यम्न-सङ्कर्षण-वासुदेव-चतुर्मुर्त्यात्मक-श्राद्धस्वामि-श्रीमध्वजनार्दनस्य समाराधनं करिष्ये ।'

1095. The terms प्राचीनावीतिन्, यज्ञोपवीतिन् or उपवीतिन्, सव्यं and अपसव्यं occur almost at every step in the श्राद्धप्रयोग. They will be explained once for all here and instead of repeating lengthy translations the original Sanskrit words will be kept in the *prayoga* set out hereafter. Gobhila gr. I. 2.2-3, Khādīragr I. 1. 4-6 and Manu II. 63 define *yajñopavītin* or *upavītin* as one who suspends the sacrificial chord round his neck and raises the right arm so as to wear the chord on his left shoulder and *prācīnāvītin* as one who raises the left arm and wears the chord on his right shoulder. *Savya* means left. Acc. to लघ्वाश्वलायन I. 91 when the sacred chord hangs down from the left shoulder (and under the right arm) that is said to be 'savyam' and when the chord hangs down from the right shoulder (and under the left arm) that is अपसव्यम्.

(in another vessel) with the mantra 'Tilosi' (quoted in note 966), Bhr̥ṅgarāja leaf with the mantra 'mā kākam' (Rg. VI. 48. 17), betelnut, gold (or coin). Then he repeats the Puruṣa-sūkta ¹⁰⁹⁶ (Rg. X. 90), Rg. X. 128.1-9, IX. 58. 1-4, Rg. X. 126. 1-8, Rg. IV. 40.5, Rg. VII. 89. 5, the sacred Gāyatrī with *om* and the three Vyāhṛtis, Rg. VII. 56. 12, Rg. VIII. 44. 21, 17, Rg. VIII. 95. 7-9. Then after repeating the well-known verse 'apavitraḥ pavitro vā' ¹⁰⁹⁷ (whoever, whether pure or impure or being in any state whatever, remembers the name of Viṣṇu becomes pure externally as well as internally), he requests 'May everything such as the place and the materials be rendered pure'. The brāhmaṇas reply 'let it be so.' Then placing some coin on the ground, the performer having in his hand sesamum grains, water and kūśas goes round (pradakṣiṇā) the brāhmaṇas thrice, and repeats three verses (in classical sanskrit) in praise of the dust of the feet of brāhmaṇas and a Vedic passage from Tai. Ā. II. 15 ¹⁰⁹⁸ 'All the devatās reside in a brāhmaṇa who knows the Veda; therefore every day one should perform obeisance to brāhmaṇas knowing the Veda. He should not utter anything derogatory or evil (either true or false) about them. (By doing so) he pleases all these devatās.' After making obeisance (to the brāhmaṇas) twice he should be prācīnāvītī, repeat the verse 'akrodhanaiḥ' (note 913 p. 407 above) and request the brāhmaṇas 'may you be pleased to say that I have complete adhikāra to perform the sām̐vatsarikaśrāddha of my pitṛs this day.' The brāhmaṇas should reply 'let there be this adhikāra for the performance of śrāddha.' Then being upavītin the performer requests 'may you declare that this time is the proper time and that the food cooked is fit for being offered.' The brāhmaṇas reply 'let it be so.' Then he asks the permission to give invitation to the brāhmaṇas. They give it. Then he touches the right knee of one brāhmaṇa and says 'you should find time to accept the invitation to act as representing the Viśve-devas named Purūrava and Ārdrava in this pratisām̐vatsarika śrāddha of my pitṛs'. The brāhmaṇa replies 'yes, be it so.' Then the performer addresses the second Vaiśvadevika brāhmaṇa in the

1096. Hardly any sūtra or any single digest prescribes the recital of so many mantras as is done here.

1097. This occurs in the Garuḍapurāṇa (ācārakāṇḍa) chap.

1098. यावतीर्वे देवतास्ताः सर्वा वेदविदि ब्राह्मणे वसन्ति तस्माद् ब्राह्मणेभ्यो वेदविदिभ्यो दिवे दिवे नमस्कु र्यात् । नाश्लीलं कीर्तयेद्देता एव देवताः प्रीणाति । तै. आ. II. 15 (at end)



same way (if two brāhmaṇas have been invited for the purpose) and then wearing the sacred thread in the prācīnāvita way should touch the left knee of the brāhmaṇa (*pitrya*) and say to him 'you should accept the invitation to represent my father, grandfather and great-grandfather in this pratisāmvatsarika śrāddha.' The brāhmaṇa should reply 'so be it.' He should request 'you should repair to my house.' The brāhmaṇa replies 'I shall do so.' Then he should make maṇḍalas¹⁰⁹⁹ for the daiva and pitrya brāhmaṇas. Then *savyam*. The performer should offer seat, sandalwood paste, flowers and say 'may all the items (*upacāras*) of showing honour be complete by means of *yava* grains.' Then *apasavyam*. He offers *āsana* (seat), sandalwood paste and flowers and declares 'may all the *upacāras* be completed by means of sesamum grains.' Then *savyam*. He offers welcome to the daiva brāhmaṇas, to which they respond by saying 'susvāgatam' (it is a good welcome). Then he should say 'here is *pādya* for you, O Viśve devas called Purūrava and Ārdrava! Bhūr-bhuvah-svah to the (daiva) brāhmaṇa'; the response is 'supādyam'. He should wash the feet of (the daiva) brāhmaṇa or brāhmaṇas with the mantra 'śan no devīr' (Rg X. 9.4, vide n. 968). Then he wears the thread in the *apasavya* way and offers welcome to the pitrya brāhmaṇa or brāhmaṇas representing the three male ancestors¹¹⁰⁰ and offers to give *pādya* to them and they respond with the words 'susvāgatam' and 'supādyam'. He also employs the verse 'śan no devīr' as in the case of daiva brāhmaṇas.

Then the performer casts away the *pavitra* worn so far, washes his hands and feet, performs *ācamana* and wears two pavitras. Then *savyam*. He says 'welcome to all.' They respond with 'susvāgatam'. Then holding the right hand (except the thumb) of the daiva brāhmaṇas he says 'Ye gods, occupy seats'; they respond by saying 'susamāsmāhe' (we have well occupied them). Then *apasavyam*. He addresses similar words to pitrya brāhmaṇas who respond in a similar way. Then *savyam*. He seeks permission in the words 'I

1099. For maṇḍalas vide above pp. 456-457.

1100. The पाद्य would be offered in the words 'पितः, असुकशर्मन् असुकगान् वसुरूप ब्रह्मणे भूर्भुवः स्वः, इदं ते पाद्यम्'. In the case of the पितामह and प्रपितामह the words रुद्ररूप and आदित्यरूप would respectively be substituted for वसुरूप. We have to construe as ब्रह्मणे ते पाद्यम् (अस्तु) and भूर्भुवः स्वः as the mantra accompanying the पाद्य.

shall perform the Pratisāmvatsarika śrāddha of my pitrs that has been begun'. The brāhmaṇas say 'do so'. Then the verse 'śam no devīr' (Rg. X. 9. 4) is repeated and also the words 'thou art yava, separate from us those who hate us and who are our enemies'. Then *apasavyam*. The following texts are repeated viz. Rg. X. 9.4, Rg. X. 15.1 and with the mantra 'The asuras, rākṣasas, the piśācas, that dwell along the earth are struck down; may they go from this place elsewhere wherever their mind may be fixed', he scatters sesamum grains everywhere and repeats the mantra, Rg. X. 87.1. There are eight Vasus, eleven Rudras and twelve Ādityas. Let there be protection given by Viṣṇu at the door where śrāddha is being performed and may this spot be Gayā. The brāhmaṇas reply 'Let it be a good spot.' Then *savyam*. He sprinkles drops of water with darbhas over the food that is cooked for the śrāddha dinner with the mantras viz. Rg. IX. 58, 1, IX. 67. 26-28 and with the three Vyāhrtis and the Gāyatri. Then he requests 'May there be purity of the cooking' and 'may the sprinkling of the cooked food be according to the rules prescribed,' to which the response is 'so be it.' Then the verse 'āgacchantu mahābhāgāḥ' (vide note 984) is recited and the brāhmaṇas reply 'we are careful (or attentive).' Then *apasavyam*. He announces 'contemplating upon this spot where śrāddha is being performed as Gayā and concentrating the mind on Gadādhara (Viṣṇu) and the pitrs in the form of Vasus and the like, the śrāddha (rite) proceeds'. The brāhmaṇas say 'do proceed.' Then *savyam*. He gives water on the hand of the *daiva* brāhmaṇas, places on the right side of the seat occupied by them two darbhas together with yavas with his upturned right hand held by the left hand and says with the Vyāhrtis (Bhūr, bhuvah, svah) 'this is the seat for the brāhmaṇa representing the Viśve devas called Purūrava and Ādrava'. The brāhmaṇa replies 'svāsanam'. This is done also for the second *daiva* brāhmaṇa. He then says 'Please sit down here, though art Dharma' and seizing the brāhmaṇa's hand (except the thumb) he says 'accept the invitation for being *daiva* brāhmaṇa in the Pratisāmvatsarika śrāddha.' The response is 'so be it.' Then reaching the *arghya* water, he sprinkles the ground in front of the (*daiva*) brāhmaṇas with water, spreads two darbhas (in front of each *daiva* brāhmaṇa) with their tips towards the east, places down two vessels with their tops turned downwards, sprinkles water over them with the Gayatri mantra, raises the vessels up (i. e. turns their tops upwards) again sprinkles water over them and places over them (the two



vessels) two kūrcaś ¹¹⁰¹ with the tips turned to the east, pours into them water and invokes the water once with the mantra, 'śan no devīr' (Rg. X. 9. 4). Then he puts yava grains into the two *arghya* vessels for daiva brāhmaṇas with the mantra 'Yavosi dhānyarājo vā' (note 985) and also sandalwood paste, flowers, basil leaf and performs obeisance. He says 'May all the upacāras be completed by means of yavas; the two *arghya* vessels for daiva brāhmaṇas are fully ready'. The response is 'susampanne'. He says 'svāhā, these are *arghya* waters'. The response is 'let there be *arghya* waters'. Placing his left hand in which he holds kuśas and yava grains on the right knee of the daiva brāhmaṇa and holding in his (right) hand yava grains he says 'I shall invoke the Viśve devas called Purūrava and Ardrava to be present in you'. They respond 'do invoke'. He invokes the Viśve-devas with the mantra 'viśve devāsa' (Rg. II. 47. 13) separately repeated as regards each daiva brāhmaṇa. He says, 'I invoke the Viśve devas with the mantra 'viśve devāḥ śrṇutemām' (Rg. VI. 52. 13). Having invoked Viśve devas he casts the remaining yava grains on the ground near the feet of the daiva brāhmaṇas. Then he gives water to them (daiva brāhmaṇas) and he puts in their hands the darbhas placed over the *arghya* vessels; he says 'O Viśve devas called Purūrava and Ārdrava! this is *arghya* water for you; svāhā, adoration'. They respond 'let there be *arghya*'. Repeating the mantra 'yā divyā āpaḥ' (vide Āśv. Gr. IV. 7. 13 above in n. 966) he says 'this *arghya* has been offered, it is no longer mine.' They respond 'let it be so offered'. The same process is followed as to the second daiva brāhmaṇa. Then he offers fragrant ¹¹⁰² substances (sandalwood paste etc.), flowers, basil leaves, incense, lamp, and cash according to his ability as substitute for garment, *gopīcandana* for unguent, sacred chord and two kuśa blades for pavitra with the words 'O Viśve devāḥ, called Purūrava and Ārdrava! these are fragrant substances for you according

1101. कूर्च is a bundle of fifteen darbhas one cubit long having tops of four angulas in length and having a knot two angulas from the bottom part. पञ्चदशदर्भैर्ग्रथितं चतुरङ्गुलाग्रं द्व्यङ्गुलग्रन्थि हस्तमात्रं प्रोक्षणकूर्चम्। वैखानसस्मार्त-सूत्र I. 8.

1102. Each of the things is offered with the same formula and as to each there is a response from the brāhmaṇas with 'su' prefixed to each article offered. It would be like this 'पुरुषार्द्रवसंज्ञका विश्वेदेवाः यथा भागशः अमी वो गन्धाः स्वाहा नमः। सुगन्धाः। पुरु...विश्वेदेवा यथा भागशः एष वो दीपः स्वाहा नमः सुदीपः' and so on.



to your portions; svāhā, adoration'. When offering a garment or cash therefor he recites 'yuvā suvāsāḥ' (Rg. III. 8.4). Then he says 'these items viz. *gandha*, leaves, flowers, incense, lamp ending with covering (garment) be all of them complete. Let there be good worship in the rite of worship; May that which is wanting or is excessive be according to prescribed rules'. The brāhmaṇas respond 'astu vidhivat' and the performer recites the verse 'I do obeisance to Acyuta by remembering whom or by uttering whose name whatever is wanting in *tapas* (observances) or sacrifices becomes at once perfect'.

Then he says to the pitrya brāhmaṇas 'with your permission I shall offer worship to the pitrs'. They reply 'do offer.' Then *apasavyam*. After bending his right knee, the performer says 'Bhūr bhuvaḥ svaḥ to Brahman, this is the seat for my father, grandfather and great-grandfather, named N. N., whose gotra is so and so and who are identical with Vasu, Rudra and Āditya'. So saying he offers double-folded darbhas with sesamum grains to the pitrya brāhmaṇas who reply 'svāsanam'. Then follows the same procedure as regards pitrya brāhmaṇas which has been already set out as to daiva brāhmaṇas. The only difference is that instead of two darbhas three darbhas are spread on the ground with their tips towards the south, three vessels are placed towards south-east with faces downwards and three double-folded darbhas are placed on each of the three vessels, instead of 'yavosi' the mantra is 'tilosi somadevatyaḥ' (vide note 966) and instead of 'svāhā namaḥ' the words 'svadhā namaḥ' are employed, and instead of *tulasī* leaf *bhr̥ṅgarāja* leaf is employed. In *āvāhana* the performer places his left hand holding kuśas and sesame on the left knee of the pitrya brāhmaṇa and the verse repeated is 'uśantas tvā' (Rg. X. 16. 12) as to each pitrya brāhmaṇa and he should honour the pitrs by repeating one mantra 'ā yantu naḥ' (Vāj. S. 19. 58). He offers *arghya*¹¹⁰³ water with the right hand supported by the left to the father and the other two paternal ancestors. He brings together the *samsravas*¹¹⁰⁴ in the first pitrya vessel and anoints his face with that water if he desires a son. The brāhmaṇas respond 'may you have a son'.

1103. The form will be: अपो दत्त्वा पात्रोपरिस्थदर्भान् विप्रहस्ते दत्त्वा अस्त्वर्घ्यं ते अर्घ्यम् । अस्त्वर्घ्यम् । अपसव्यम् । या दिव्या आपः पृथिवी० । पित्रे इदमर्घ्यं दत्तं न मम । अस्तु दत्तम् । सव्यम् । पितामहेदं तेऽर्घ्यम् । अस्त्वर्घ्यम् । अपसव्यम् । या दिव्या० पितामहाय इदमर्घ्यं दत्तं न मम । and so on for प्रपितामह.

1104. For संस्रव, vide note 1001.

He places the vessel containing *samsravas* with the top upside down on darbhas to the north of the daiva vessel, with the mantra 'thou art a place for the pitṛs.' Then *gandha*, flowers with *tulasī* and *bhr̥ṅgarāja* leaves, incense, lamp, garment or cash therefor, *gopīcandana*, sacred chord, betelnut, *kuśas* for *pavitra* are offered to the pitṛs and he repeats the verse 'idam pitṛbhyah' (Rg. X. 15. 2). After repeating the verse 'yat smṛtyā' (vide above) there is 'savyam'. The performer says 'with your permission I shall prepare maṇḍalas and place the plates'. The response is 'do so'. On the spot where the plates for daiva brāhmaṇas are to be placed a four-cornered maṇḍala beginning from the south-west to north-east and made with the right hand towards it and on the spot for the plates for pitṛya brāhmaṇas the maṇḍala is circular beginning from north-east to south-west made with the left hand towards it. Then the plates for the diners are to be placed inside those maṇḍalas. Then taking holy ashes (*apasavyam*) he draws a line round the plates for pitṛya brāhmaṇas with the mantra 'piśaṅga-bhṛīṣṭim' (Rg. I. 133. 5). Then *savyam*. Then round the plates of the daiva brāhmaṇas he draws lines with the mantras 'rakṣā no' (Rg. IV. 3. 14) and 'brahma ca' (Rg. X. 4. 7) and two more verses (probably Paurāṇic) which pray that the mark made with ashes may guard all, just as Viṣṇu protects the worlds. Just as Viṣṇu renders ineffective the eyes of all men of evil sight, so one should make a maṇḍala with ashes and when this is done there is no blemish in sitting in the same row for dining. Then the purification of the hand (right) of the brāhmaṇas is done, beginning with the pitṛya brāhmaṇa first. Then the performer requests 'let me perform *agnaukarāṇa* with your permission in the hand¹¹⁰⁵ of the (pitṛya) brāhmaṇa.' The reply is 'do so'. Then *apasavyam*. Taking some cooked food and anointing it with clarified butter and dividing it into parts, having touched the two parts placed towards the south he says 'this for Soma accompanied by the Pitṛs, this for Agni, the carrier of *kavya*' and having spread the left hand underneath the right hand, having cut off portions from the middle and the part to the east according to the rules for *avadānas*¹¹⁰⁶

1105. If there are three brāhmaṇas to represent the three paternal ancestors, then he should say 'in the hands of the brāhmaṇas.' The *Nirṇayasindhu* (III. Uttarārdha p. 440) says that a widower performs *agnaukarāṇa* in the hand of the daiva brāhmaṇa.

1106. As laid down in Āśv. gr I. 7. 10-12 the अवदानघर्म्मs are द्विस्त्रिश्चावदानं हविरवदानयोश्च प्रत्यभिधारणम्.

and having poured clarified butter on the food in the vessel and on the food cut off for oblations, he should offer the oblations with the words 'To Soma accompanied by pitṛs, *svadhā* and adoration; this for Soma with the pitṛs and it is not (now) mine' and 'to Agni the bearer of *Kavya*, *svadhā* and adoration; this is for Agni *Kavyavāhana* and not mine.' This is the mode everywhere. He touches water with the left hand and repeats the following (which is called 'saṁsthā-japa' and occurs in Āśv. Śr. I. 11.15) 'Om ca me...te namaḥ'. Obeisance to Agni. *Svasti*. Then he prays 'O *Kavyavāhana*! bestow on me faith, memory, glory, intelligence, learning, intellect, wealth, strength, long life, brilliance, health.' He says 'offering has been made on the hand'. The response is 'suhutam'. Then he pours ghee on the vessel containing the food and repeats 'mūrdhānam divaḥ' (Rg. VI. 7. 1). Then the brāhmaṇas should cast the food on their hands in the vessel over which ghee has been poured and then mutter *Trisuparṇa*,¹¹⁰⁷ the hymns to *anna* (Rg. I. 187. 1-11 and several others) and other hymns. Then certain paṇḍaric verses should be repeated, viz. 'Devatā-bhyaḥ' (note 1020), the verse 'one should always recite at a śrāddha these holy places viz Kurukṣetra, Gayā, Gangā Prabhāsa and Puṣkara', the two verses¹¹⁰⁸ 'saptavyādhā' (note 994a) and three more verses, one speaking of adoration to pitṛs and the other two praying to Viṣṇu and Śiva for favours. Then *savyam*. Then he sprinkles water (*prokṣaṇa*) on the food with the Gāyatrī mantra. Then bending his right knee he silently spills water. Then holding the plate with the right hand above and the left hand below he utters the mantra 'the earth is thy vessel^{1108a}, the heaven is the lid. I sacrifice thee in the brāhmaṇa's mouth. I sacrifice thee in the Prāṇa (breath) and Apāna (breath) of learned brāhmaṇas. Thou art imperishable. Do not perish for these (Fathers) here and in the next world.' Then he repeats 'ato devā' (Rg. I. 22. 16) and 'O Viṣṇu, guard the sacrificial food'. With the hand

1107. For *Trisuparṇa*, vide p. 364 note 862a, The अक्षुक्त are Rg. I. 187. 1-11, IV. 31.1-3 and several others which the brāhmaṇas are in the habit of reciting in these days.

1108. The meaning of the two verses (in note 994a) viz. सप्तव्याधा has been stated above on p. 445.

1108 a. For 'Prthivī te pātram' vide note 992.



turned downwards he thrusts in the food (served in the plate) the root of the thumb of the brāhmaṇa turned downwards and should revolve it (in the food) from right to left. Then touching the plate with his left hand the performer should say 'The Viśve devās called Purūrava and Ādrava are the deity, this food is the sacrificial offering, this brāhmaṇa serves as āhavanīya fire, this place is Gayā, this brāhmaṇa diner is Gadādhara, this food is Brahma, the golden vessel is the shade of the Akṣayyavata (at Gayā). This food together with the flavouring dishes which is already served (in the plate) and which may be served therein (later), is the sacrificial food offered to the Viśve devas called Purūrava and Ādrava till this brāhmaṇa is satisfied. Adoration. It is not mine. *Om Tat Sat*. May the food offered at the fourteen spots such as Viṣṇupada at Gayā be inexhaustible!'. So saying he should cast on the ground towards the left side of the plate water mixed with darbhas and yavas. He says 'May Gadādhara (Viṣṇu) of Gayā be pleased'. The brāhmaṇas respond 'May he be pleased'. Then he repeats 'Ye devāso' (Rg. I. 139.11). Then he says 'with the permission of the daiva brāhmaṇas I shall present food to the Father and others'. They reply 'do so'. Then *apasavyam*. Then silently sprinkling water round the plate, and touching the plate (of the pitrya brāhmaṇa) with the left hand above and the right hand below it, he repeats the formula 'pṛthivī te pātram...loke' (vide p. 444 note 992) and the verse 'idam Viṣṇur' (Rg. I. 22. 17) and say 'O Viṣṇu! guard the *kavya* food,' he should thrust the root of the thumb of the (pitrya) brāhmaṇa in the food (served in the plate) and revolve it from right to left. Then touching the plate (of the pitrya brāhmaṇa) with the left hand he should say 'the father, grand-father and great-grand-father are *devatā*, this food is of the nature of *kavya*, the brāhmaṇa is in place of the āhavanīya fire, this place is Gayā, this dining brāhmaṇa is Gadādhara, this food is Brahma, this silver plate is the shade of the Akṣayyavata (at Gayā), svadhā to my father, grandfather and great-grandfather named so and so, of gotra so and so, that are Vasu, Rudra and Āditya respectively, this food with the side dishes that is already served in the plate and that may be served (later) is *kavya* up till this brāhmaṇa is satiated. Adoration! It is not mine. *Tat sat*. May the food given at the 14 spots such as Rudrapada at Gayā be inexhaustible. May Gadādhara of Gayā be pleased. The brāhmaṇa replies 'May he be pleased.' He then repeats the verse 'ye ceha pitaro' (Rg. X. 15. 13) and says 'May the food

intended for the *pitṛs* please them'. Then *savyam*.¹¹⁰⁹ Then *naivedya* is offered with the verse 'brahmārpaṇam' (Gītā 4. 24) and with three more verses in which Hari is said to be giver and the enjoyer and the food as having both natures viz. those of *pitṛs* and *devas* and ultimately he winds up by saying 'tat sat brahmārpaṇamastu'. Then *apasavyam*. Then two verses are repeated in which adoration is offered to the feet of Śiva, Viṣṇu, Brahmā and other gods, in which even remembrance of Gayā-kṣetra is highly eulogised. Adoration to Kāśī Viśveśvara! adoration to Viṣṇu and Gadādhara at Gayā! Then *savyam*. Then he says 'I shall repeat in your hearing the *madhumatī* verses beginning with 'madhu vātā' (Rg. I. 90. 6-8). Then he repeats the word 'madhu' thrice. The *brāhmaṇas* respond 'sumadhu, all food is sweet.' Then *apasavyam*. Then a verse in praise of Viṣṇu (*eko Viṣṇur &c.*) 'there is one great Being viz. Viṣṇu &c.' is recited and the performer says 'May Janārdana Viṣṇu who has assumed the form of my father, grandfather and great-grandfather be pleased by this feeding of *brāhmaṇas* at the *pratisāmvatsarika śrāddha* of my *pitṛs*'. The response is 'may he be so pleased'. *Tat sat brahmārpaṇam-astu*. Then having given water to the *brāhmaṇas* for *apośana*^{1109a} (then *savyam*) he says 'partake of (the food) at your pleasure' and 'though art the first layer of nectar'. Then he repeats the mantra¹¹¹⁰ 'fixing myself in faith and in Prāṇa I offer nectar; being beneficent enter me without burning me. Svāhā to Prāṇa'. This is repeated as to Apāna, Vyāna, Udāna, Samāna with the substitution of each of these four remaining life-breaths. Then he winds up 'my soul is in Brahma for the sake of immortality' and then 'svāhā to Brahma'. Then the hands are purified (by washing them with water). After muttering the Gāyatrī verse ten times or three times, he repeats the hymn to Śraddhā (Rg.

1109. The printed text is *पितृभ्यः सङ्कल्पितः प्रीयताम्*. This makes hardly any sense. I take that what is intended is *पितॄन् सङ्कल्पितमन्नं प्रीणयतु* or *पितरः सङ्कल्पितेन (अन्नेन) प्रीयन्ताम्*.

1109a. 'Apośana' literally means 'taking or drinking water'. It is a technical term applied to the sipping of water before beginning a meal with the words 'amṛtopastaranamasi' and after the eating is finished with the words 'amṛtāpidhānamasi'. Vide Tai. Ā. X. 32, Āp. M. P. II.10.3-4, Āśv. gr. I.24.12, Yāj. I.31 and 106.

1110. The mantras are *श्रद्धायां प्राणे निविष्टोऽमृतं जुहोमि शिवो माविशोऽमृतं प्राणाय स्वाहा। श्रद्धायामपाने निविष्टोऽमृतं जुहोमि शिवो माविशोऽमृतं प्राणाय स्वाहा। श्रद्धायामपाने निविष्टोऽमृतं जुहोमि शिवो माविशोऽमृतं प्राणाय स्वाहा।* and so on. *प्राणे निविष्टोऽमृतं जुहोमि शिवो माविशोऽमृतं प्राणाय स्वाहा।*—is आप. स. पा. II. 20.26. The whole passage from *प्राणे निविष्टोऽमृतं जुहोमि शिवो माविशोऽमृतं प्राणाय स्वाहा।* to *अमृतत्वाय* occurs in तै. आ. X. 34.

X. 151. 1-5). Then the performer requests 'you should ask for what is wanted; seating yourself you should with minds at ease eat at your pleasure. You should take from the foods and vegetables that are cooked and are ready whatever pleases you and should discard what you do not like. You should eat at ease'. They respond 'we partake (of the food)'. He says 'I shall recite the hymns called Rākṣoghna ¹¹¹¹ as far as I can.' They respond 'repeat'. Then towards the end of the dinner a little boiled rice with curds (should be served) and nectar-like Ganges water. He says 'everything is perfect. Ask for whatever you like out of the sacrificial food that is cooked'. They respond 'we have had enough'. He says 'I shall recite the Madhumatī verses (Rg. I. 90.6-8) in your hearing'. They respond 'recite them'. Then *apasavyam*. He recites Rg. I. 82.2 ^{1111a} and should say 'The śrāddha called so and so is completed'. They should respond '*susampannam*'. Then *savyam*. He asks 'Ye Viśvedevāḥ! are you satisfied?' They reply 'we are satisfied'. Then *apasavyam*. He asks 'Ye (brāhmaṇas) representing my father, grandfather and great-grandfather! are you satisfied?'. They reply 'We are satisfied'. He asks 'what is to be done with the food that remains?'. They reply 'it may be eaten in the company of your friends (and relatives)'. Then *savyam*.

Then the performer declares that he would perform in the Prati-sāmvatsarika-śrāddha *pinḍapradāna* (the offering of lumps of rice) together with water and sesamum grains. They reply 'do so'. 'Let food be given to those who take as their share what remains outside the plates of the brāhmaṇa diners'. The performer says ¹¹¹² 'May all the (deceased) men and women slaves that were born in the performer's household obtain satisfaction by the food given by me on the ground'. (Then he offers water to the brāhmaṇas with the words) 'thou art the nectarial lid' (or covering). He says 'May the water given to those who hanker for it, who dwell in Padma and Arbuda and

1111. The hymn beginning with कृणुष्व पाजः (Rg. IV. 4. 1-15) is called राक्षोघ्न. The first five verses of it are वाज. सं. 13. 9-13. All fifteen verses occur in तै. सं. I. 2. 14. 1-6. So also are Rg. X. 87 (beginning with रक्षोघ्नं वाजिनमाजिधर्मि), Rg. VII. 104 (beginning with इन्द्रासोमा तपतं रक्ष उब्जतं), Rg. X. 118, Rg. X. 162.

1111 a. अक्षन्मीमदन्त ह्यव प्रिया अधूषत...हरी॥ This is ऋ. I. 82.2 वाज. सं. III. 51, तै. सं. I. 8. 5. 2.

1112. Compare मनु III. 246, which is the same as विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 81.23 मत्स्य 17.57, पञ्चपुराण (सृष्टिखण्ड 9. 186).



Raurava (hells) full of pus reach them inexhaustibly'. Then *apasavyam*. He repeats the mantra ¹¹¹³ 'The asuras and rākṣasas that sit on the altar are struck and driven away' (Vāj. S. II. 29). Sprinkling the ground with water and strewing thereon darbhas cut with one stroke that have their tips turned towards the south-east he says ¹¹¹⁴ 'May the Fathers wash themselves, may the grandfathers wash themselves, may the great-grandfathers wash themselves'. In the same way he should sprinkle on the kuśa grass water mixed with sesamum grains for the mothers and the rest. Then he says 'This (food) is for thee, my father named so and so, of such and such gotra, who is (to be contemplated) as Vasu and for those who come here after thee; this is the piṇḍa for thee ¹¹¹⁵, svāhā! This piṇḍa occupying the position of a piṇḍa offered at Gayā is presented to my father named so and so and of such and such gotra and who is in the place of Vasu, it is (now) not mine'. Similar formulas are repeated for the piṇḍa offered to the grandfather (who is styled 'Rudrarūpa' instead of 'Vasurūpa') and to the great-grandfather (who is styled 'Ādityarūpa'). Then he utters 'Tat sat.' 'May whatever is offered in Gayā at the fourteen spots such as Viṣṇupada be inexhaustible'. Then he wipes off on the roots of ¹¹¹⁶ the darbhas on which the piṇḍas are placed the particles (of rice, ghee and water) sticking to his hand for the gratification of those that are entitled to the wipings. Having uttered ¹¹¹⁷ once over the piṇḍas the mantra 'O fathers; regale yourselves here, come as bulls each to his share', he should turn towards the north with the left side of his body,

1113. He draws with the roots of darbhas as many lines (as the number of piṇḍas offered, 3 or 6) repeating this mantra at each line (Vāj. S. II. 29).

1114. This is taken from आश्व. श्रौ. सू. II. 6. 14-15 'मेक्षणेनानुप्रहृत्य प्राचीनावीती लेखां त्रिरुदकेनोपनयेत् शुन्धन्तां पितरः ... प्रपितामहा इति। तस्यां पिण्डान् निपृणीयात् पराचीनपाणिः पित्रे पितामहाय प्रपितामहायैतत्तेऽसौ ये च त्वामत्रान्विति।'. Compare आप. म. पा. II. 20. 4-7 मार्जयन्तां मम पितरो etc. q. in note 1060 above; vide n 1053 for पराचीनपाणिः.

1115. With the food that remains after अग्नौकरण mixed with honey, sesamum grains and ghee piṇḍas are made by the performer or are got made by his wife and are offered by the पितृतीर्थ. Vide note 962.

1116. For लेपभाजः vide n. 1086 above.

1117. Vide n. 960a for अत्र पितरो मादयध्वं...यध्वम् and अमीमदन्तः पितरः यीषत. The words in the text are taken from आश्व. श्रौ. सू. II. 6.16-21 on पितृयज्ञ 'निपृताननुमन्त्रयेतात्र पितरो माद...यध्वमिति। सव्यावृद्धदण्डवर्त्य यथाशक्त्युपायं चासित्वाभिपर्यावृत्यामीम...यीषतेति। चरोः प्राणभक्षं भक्षयेत्।'.



and having held his breath according to his ability he should return to the original position and utter the words 'the Fathers regaled themselves and came like bulls, each to his share' and having smelt the remains of the boiled rice from which piṇḍas are made from the left side (to the right) he should cast the piṇḍas (on the darbhas) and should partake of the boiled rice by taking in as much steam and flavour out of it as he can by smelling it. He should say 'my father! N. N. by name, so and so by gotra, apply unctuous substance'; with these words he should anoint the piṇḍas by means of darbhas with ghee or sesamum oil. And he should apply collyrium to the piṇḍas with the words 'O father! N. N. by name and so and so by gotra apply collyrium'. He should put on the piṇḍas unctuous substance, collyrium and garment,¹¹¹⁸ the last being the fringe of a garment or a tuft of wool with the words 'O fathers! this is the garment for you, do not take up any other (garment) than this'. Then *savyam*. He then says 'I shall offer worship to the piṇḍas for the prosperity of my family'. He then offers to the pitṛs present in the piṇḍas *pādya*, *arghya*, water for ācamana, bath, *gandha*, flowers, *bhr̥ṅgarāja* leaf, incense, lamp and *naivedya* of apūpa (cakes) and *pāyasa* (rice cooked in milk), *tāmbūla* and *dakṣiṇā*, using the word 'svadhā' after each of them. Then he should worship¹¹¹⁹ them with the mantra 'Fathers! obeisance to you for the sake of food, for strength, for *śuśma*, for the non-terrible (*aghora*), for *jīva*, for *rasa*; svadhā to you, O pitṛs, obeisance to you; these are yours, O pitṛs! these are ours; we are your living (descendants), may we be alive here'! He then recites the verses¹¹²⁰ Rg. X. 57. 3-5. Having thus worshipped them he then (*apasavyam*) with the palm of the hand turned upwards moves the piṇḍas with the mantra¹¹²¹ 'paretana' which means 'O fathers who love soma

1118. Vide आश्व. औ. सू. II. 7.6 'वासो दद्याद् दशमूर्णास्तुकां वा पञ्चाशद्वर्षताया ऊर्ध्वं स्वं लोम एतद्वः पितरो वासो मा नोतो न्यत् पितरो युग्ध्वमिति'. The text translated is based on this; when the performer is over 50 years of age he may place on the piṇḍa the hair from his chest.

1119. नमो वः पितर इषे नमो वः पितर ऊर्जे ... सन्तः स्याम—This passage is taken *verbatim* from आश्व. औ. सू. II. 7. 7.

1120. मनो न्वा हुवामह इति तिसृभिः । आश्व. औ. सू. II. 7. 8. आप. औ. सू. I. 10. 5 calls them मनस्वती verses, as the word मनः occurs in each of the three.

1121. परेतन—compare तै. सं. I. 8. 5. 2 'परेत पितरः सोम्या गन्धर्वा पतिभिः पूर्यैः'. The 2nd half is different. The आश्व. औ. सू. II. 7. 8 says that he should pour a stream of water with this mantra on the piṇḍas which represent the Fathers for the time being.

drink! Go away by the sombre ancient paths, after bestowing on us wealth and endow us here with auspicious prosperity and all valiant sons'. He should repeat thrice the prayer 'O fathers! bestow on us a valiant son' ¹¹²².

Then *savyam*. On the ground near the plates of the Vaiśvadeva brāhmaṇas he scatters food together with yavas and water with the verse 'I shall offer food scattered (*vikira*) near the Vaiśvadeva brāhmaṇas to those gods to whom no soma drink is offered and who are bereft of a share in sacrifices; this scattered food is offered to Viśvedevas who do not partake of the soma drink; it is not (now) mine'. Then *apasavyam*. He says 'I shall offer food scattered near *pitrya* brāhmaṇas on the ground covered with darbhas to those who died without the *samskāras* being performed for them and to those women of my family who left the family (for bad deeds); this scattered food is presented to those boys and girls that came out of the womb; it is not mine'. So saying he strews food with water and sesamum seeds and then says after reciting Rg. X. 15.14 'this pinda made from the remainder of the food and occupying the position that a pinda given at Gayā occupies, has been offered to those persons who were born in my family and died and who were cremated or were not cremated; this is not mine'. So saying he offers near the *pitrya* brāhmaṇas a ball of rice and water mixed with sesamum grains.

Then he washes his hands and feet, sips water twice and puts on his finger a *pavitra* with the mantra 'pavitravantah' (Rg. IX. 73. 3). He then requests that the water in the hands of the *daiva* brāhmaṇas be auspicious (or beneficial). The brāhmaṇas reply 'may the waters be auspicious.' In the same way there are requests for goodwill, for protection due to yavas, for long life, welfare, peace, prosperity, contentment and responses by the *daiva* brāhmaṇas giving blessings as to these. Then *apasavyam*. Then the same request for auspiciousness of waters, goodwill, protection by sesamum grains &c. and blessings about them by *pitrya* brāhmaṇas. Then the performer requests 'may my family increase (or prosper) and may the procedure of worshipping the pindas be good,' to which the *pitrya* brāhmaṇas respond 'may

1122. वीरं मे दत्त पितरः—If the wife desires a son then with this mantra the middle pinda is given over to her and she eats it with the mantra आधत्त पितरो गर्भम्. Vide note 780 for that mantra. The आश्व. औ. सू. II. 12-13 says 'वीरं मे दत्त पितर इति पिण्डानां मध्यमम् । पत्नी प्राशयेदाधत्त ... सदिति ।'

it be so.' Then raising the *praṇītā* ^{1122a} vessel the performer requests 'May you say that the water and food and the like offered in the Pratisāmvatsarikaśrāddha to pitṛ, pitāmaha and pra-pitāmaha, so and so by name and gotra, be inexhaustible.' The *pitṛya* brāhmaṇas reply 'so be it.' Then *savyam*. The same request is made to the *daiva* brāhmaṇas and the reply is the same. Then gold is given to the *daiva* brāhmaṇas and silver to *pitṛya* brāhmaṇas and the performer says 'may the dakṣiṇās (fees) given to the brāhmaṇas that ate the śrāddha dinner protect (me).' They reply 'may they do so.' Then he says 'I shall request you to utter the word *svadhā*!' They reply 'do so.' Then *apasavyam*. Then he says 'May (the brāhmaṇas representing) father, grandfather and great-grandfather utter the word *svadhā*.' They reply 'let there be *svadhā*.' Then he should place over the piṇḍas sesamum grains and water. Then he says 'May you declare that *svadhā* be accomplished.' They reply 'may *svadhā* be accomplished.' Then *savyam*. Then he says 'may you say that the gods led by Agni be pleased.' They reply 'may the Viśvedevāḥ be pleased.' Then *apasavyam*. Then he requests 'May you declare that the pitṛs led by the Vasus be pleased'. They reply 'may the pitṛs be pleased.' *Savyam*. He says 'May you declare that there is accomplishment of the saṅkalpa' (made at the beginning of the rite). They reply 'May there be accomplishment of the saṅkalpa'. He asks 'were the vegetables and cooked food liked by the pitṛs'. They reply 'they were most excellent'. Then the performer decks himself by applying sandal paste to his forehead. After doing obeisance to the piṇḍas he requests for blessings for his family (which are the same as those set out above from the Padma-purāṇa on p.452 above) and one more blessing 'May persons beg of us but may we not beg of any one' (vide n. 998). The brāhmaṇas reply in the same words only employing the words 'you' or 'your' for 'us' or 'our'.

He says 'I shall remove the piṇḍas'. They reply 'do remove'. Then he repeats the verses 'Tad Viṣṇoḥ' (Rg. I. 22.20), 'Tad viprāso' (Rg. I. 22.21) and two more verses and then a Paurāṇic verse enumerating the seven holy cities of Ayodhyā, Mathurā, Māyā, Kāśī, Kāñcī, Avantikā and Dvārakā. He says 'May there be peace, prosperity and contentment on the spot where the piṇḍas are'. They reply 'these (peace &c.) dwell in their own places'. He says 'I shall

remove the plates in which the brāhmaṇas had their dinner.' Then he lays aside the *kūrca*. He then recites the verse 'Vāje vāje' (Rg. VII. 38. 8). Then *savyam*. Then he says 'O pitṛs, get up together with the devas' and repeats the verses 'ā mā vājasya' (Vāj. S. 9. 19), 'svāduṣamsadaḥ' (Rg. VI. 75. 9), 'brāhmaṇāsaḥ pitarāḥ' (Rg. VI. 75. 10), 'ihaiva stam' (Rg. X. 85. 42). Then he recites 'may the grandfathers being pleased grant to men (their descendants) long life, progeny, wealth, learning, heaven, *mokṣa*, happiness and kingdom' (Yāj. I. 270, but reads 'prayacchantu' for 'prayacchanti'). Then he prays 'May these blessings turn out to be true, may my family prosper, may this Pratisāṁvatsarika-śrāddha have the same fruits as that of a śrāddha performed at Gayā! May the pitṛs secure inexhaustible gratification.' Then he proceeds 'Today my birth has had its reward by bowing to your feet &c.' (vide n. 999 for the two verses repeated here). The brāhmaṇas reply 'we forget the trouble and excuse you.' Then he says 'Today this *tithi* is like a day sacred to the sun; the brāhmaṇas invited are like Vyāsa, Vasiṣṭha and Vāmadeva; may you declare that whatever is lacking as regards seats, dinner, mantras, procedure, materials and fees in this prati-sāṁvatsarika śrāddha of my pitṛs performed by me today become all perfect at the words of brāhmaṇas'. They reply 'May all be perfect'. Then he recites the two verses 'Vasiṣṭhāsaḥ pitṛvad' and 'devān vasiṣṭho' (Rg. X. 66. 14-15) and then at the end he repeats the verse containing a salutation (the word 'namah') viz. 'idam pitṛbhyo namo astvadya' (Rg. X. 15. 2). Therefore at the end (of a śrāddha rite) one does obeisance to the pitṛs (in the words 'namo vaḥ pitaro &c.'). Therefore they say "should one repeat the pitṛyā verses with āhāva mantra specially recited with each verse or without repeating the āhāva mantra separately with each verse; for it is better not to finish Pitṛyajña quickly. He who separately recites the āhāva with each verse makes the *pitṛyajña* that is imperfect, complete and therefore one must recite specially employing the āhāva with each verse."¹¹²³ The conclusion is

1123. The words in the प्रयोग (p. 108a) are 'इदं पितृभ्यो नमो अस्त्वद्येति नमस्कारवतीमन्ततः शंसति तस्मादन्ततः पितृभ्यो नमस्क्रियते । तदाहुर्व्याहावं पित्र्यः शंसेत् अग्न्याहावां ३ इति । व्याहावमेव शंसेदसंस्थितं वै पितृयज्ञस्य साध्वसंस्थितं वा एष पितृयज्ञं संस्थापयति यो व्याहावं शंसति तस्माद् व्याहावमेव शंसत्व्यम् ।'. The passage इदं पितृभ्यो नमो ... up to शंसत्व्यम् is taken verbatim from the ऐतरेयब्राह्मण 13th chapter 13th khanda (end). The khanda (13) starts with the question whether the
(Continued on the next page)

one should repeat each verse with āhāva separately uttered. The performer should follow the brāhmaṇas up to the boundary (of the village). He says 'whatever blemish there may be in *japa*, *tapas* or *śrāddha* rite—may all that become free from blemish by the favour of brāhmaṇas. I do adoration to that Acyuta (Viṣṇu) by remembering whom &c. O best of brāhmaṇas! may this *śrāddha*, even if devoid of mantras, or of some rite or of faith, become perfect by your favour'. Then he concludes 'May Janārdana Vāsudeva who assumes the forms of father, grand-father and great-grand-father be pleased by this sacrifice, viz. the *pratisāmvatsarika-śrāddha* of the pitṛs. This is a sacrifice to the manes. *Tat sat*. May it be dedicated to Brahma.' Then he repeats the verse 'Vasat te' (Rg. VII. 99. 7) and then says 'adoration to Viṣṇu (Viṣṇave namaḥ) thrice and sips water twice. The fruit of offering *piṇḍas* is stated by Bṛhaspati and Vṛddha-Parāśara as follows: If the pitṛs are in the world of gods they are gratified by the food offered in fire, if they are in the world of pitṛs they are gratified by the dinner to brāhmaṇas and if in hell they are gratified by the balls offered on the ground.^{1123a}

Comparing the above rather elaborate and exhaustive procedure with the procedure of *pratisāmvatsarikaśrāddha* as

(Continued from the last page)

verse 'devānām patnīr' (Rg. V. 46. 6) or the ṛk verse referring to Rākā should be recited first in the आग्निमारुतशस्त्र in तृतीयसवन. The conclusion reached is that the verse referring to देवपत्नीs should be recited first by the होतृ. In the same context a question is raised whether the Yāmī verse (Rg. X. 14.4 'Imām yama prastaram') or the Pitryā verses (Rg. X. 15.1-3) should be recited first. The conclusion is that the यामी verse should be first recited, then the Kāvya verse (Rg. X. 14. 3 'Mātālī kavyair') and then the pitryā verses, out of which Rg. X. 15. 2 (इदं पितृभ्यो नमो अस्त्वद्य) is recited last in which the word नमः occurs. आहाव means the mantra शोरेसावोरेम्. The figure 3 is a sign of the छुत accent. The sign of छुत shows deliberation. आहुः—we have to understand ब्रह्मवादिनः as the subject. Then comes the question whether the आहाव should be recited at the beginning of each of the three pitryā verses or not. The conclusion is that the आहाव should be recited at the beginning of each of the three pitryā verses. Apparently it is rather difficult to say why this passage of the ऐतरेयब्राह्मण should occur in this प्रयोग. The only reason appears to be that the ऐ. ब्रा. passage has something to say about पितृs and hence as this is a प्रयोग for पितृs it is introduced here.

1123 a. पिण्डदानफलमाह बृहस्पतिः । अग्नौ हुतेन देवस्थाः पितृस्था द्विजतर्पणे । नरकं स्थानं नृप्यन्ति पिण्डैर्दत्तैस्त्रिभिर्भुवि ॥ वृद्धपराशरोपि । ये देवलोकं पितृलोकमापुः प्राप्स्यन्ति ते नरकं नरा ये । अग्नौ हुतेन द्विजभोजनेन नृप्यन्तु पिण्डैर्भुवि ते प्रदत्तैः ॥ q. in पृथ्वीचन्द्र

practised in Madras in these days only a few points of differences in detail emerge. In the Madras procedure the numerous mantras as set out above (p. 448) do not occur nor does the Tai. Ā. passage occur therein, but the verses in praise of the dust of brāhmaṇa's feet do occur. Most of the mantras both Vedic and Paurāṇic are the same. The blessings (āśirvādas) in the Madras manual are more elaborate and include even the performer's cattle in the blessing of health and long life. In the Madras manual several mantras are set out as 'annasūkta' mantras in the procedure itself. The Madras paddhati adds at the end the well known verse 'kāyena vācā manasendriyairvā'.

The procedure for Yajurvedins of the Mādhyandina Śākhā in Bengal as set out by Raghunandana in his Yajurvedi-śrāddhatattva is entirely based on the 2nd and 3rd kaṇḍikās of the Śrāddha-sūtra of Kātyāyana. The Pārvaṇaśrāddha-prayoga in Halāyudha's Brāhmaṇasarvasva closely follows Kātyāyana and I am assured by a careful student of Dharmaśāstra that the procedure of pārvaṇaśrāddha followed by Mādhyandinas at Bhatpara in Western Bengal is in strict conformity with the procedure laid down by Raghunandana. The Śrāddhasūtra of Kātyāyana is translated here with some explanations and additions made by Halāyudha and Raghunandana and the whole text, being not very extensive, is given in the note below¹¹²⁴.

1124. दैवपूर्वं आहुं पिण्डपितृयज्ञवदुपचारः पित्र्ये। द्विगुणास्तु दर्भाः पवित्रपाणिर्दद्या-
दासीनः सर्वत्र। प्रश्नेषु पङ्क्तिमूर्धन्यं पृच्छति सर्वान्वा। आसनेषु दर्भानास्तीर्य विश्वान् देवाना-
वाहायिष्य इति पृच्छत्यावाहयेत्यनुज्ञातो विश्वे देवास आगतेत्यनयावाह्यावकीर्य विश्वेदेवासः
शृणुतेममिति जपित्वा पितृनावाहायिष्य इति पृच्छत्यावाहयेत्यनुज्ञात उशन्तस्त्वेत्यनयावाह्याव-
कीर्य आयन्तु न इति जपित्वा यज्ञियवृक्षचमसेषु पवित्रान्तर्हितेष्वेकैकस्मिन्नाप आसिञ्चति शं नो
देवीरिति। एकैकस्मिन्नेव तिलानावपति तिलोसि सोमदैवयो गोसवे देवनिर्मितः। प्रत्नमद्भिः
पृक्तः स्वधया पितृलोकाम् प्रीणाहि नः स्वाहेति। सौवर्णराजतौदुम्बरखड्गमाणिमयानां पात्राणाम-
न्यतमेषु यानि वा विद्यन्ते यत्र पुष्टेः वैकैकस्यैकैकेन ददाति सपवित्रेषु हस्तेषु या दिव्या आपः
पयसा सम्बभूवुर्या अन्तरिक्षा उत पार्थवीर्याः। हिरण्यवर्णा यज्ञियास्ता न आपः शिवाः
शं स्थोनाः सुहवा भवन्त्विति। असावेष तेऽर्घ इति। प्रथमे पात्रे संस्त्वान्समवनीय पितृभ्यः
स्थानमसीति न्युब्जं पात्रं निदधाति। अत्र गन्धपुष्पदीपवाससां च प्रदानम्। उद्धृत्य घृताक्त-
मक्षं पृच्छत्यग्नौ करिष्य इति। कुरुष्वेत्यनुज्ञातः पिण्डपितृयज्ञवद्धृत्वा हुतशेषं दत्त्वा पात्रमालभ्य
जपति पृथिवी ते पात्रं द्यौरपिधानं ब्राह्मणस्य सुखे अमृते अमृतं जुहोमि स्वाहेति। वैष्णव्यर्चा
यजुषा वाङ्मष्टमक्षेऽवगाह्यापहता इति तिलान्प्रकीर्य उष्णं स्विष्टमक्षं दद्याच्छक्त्या वा। अन्नमिदं
जपेद् व्याहृतिपूर्वा गायत्रीं सप्रणवां सकृत्तित्र्यां राक्षोघ्नीः पित्र्यमन्त्रान् पुरुषसूक्तमप्रतिरथमन्त्रान्
च पवित्राणि। तृप्ताः सन्ति पृच्छति। तृप्ताः स्मेत्यनुज्ञातः शेषमक्षमनुज्ञाप्य सर्वमक्षमेकतोऽर्घ्यं
मध्विति च। तृप्ताः स्थिति पृच्छति। तृप्ताः स्मेत्यनुज्ञातः शेषमक्षमनुज्ञाप्य सर्वमक्षमेकतोऽर्घ्यं

(Continued on the next page)

"The pārvana-śrāddha is preceded by the rite for Viśvedevas. The procedure follows that of Piṇḍapitryajña^{1124a}. In the rites for the pitṛs double-folded darbhas are to be used (while in Vaiśvadevika rite straight darbhas are used). Whenever any thing is to be gifted, the performer (in all daiva as well as pitrya rites) wears a *pavitra* and makes the gift sitting. (When questions are to be asked) the performer puts the question to the most eminent in the row of diners (to the best daiva brāhmaṇa in daiva rites and to the best pitrya brāhmaṇa in pitrya rites) or he may put the question to all (and the reply is given by one or by all). Spreading darbhas on the seats (he makes the brāhmaṇas occupy them), he puts the question 'shall I invoke the Viśvedevas (to the daiva brāhmaṇa)'. Being permitted (by the daiva brāhmaṇas) in the words 'do invoke', he invokes the Viśvedevas with the mantra¹¹²⁵ 'Viśve devāsa āgata' (Vāj. S. 7. 34 'Ye All Gods, come, listen to this my call and sit down on this darbha grass'). Then he scatters yavas (in front of the brāhmaṇas), mutters a mantra 'Viśvedevāḥ śruputemam' (Vāj. S. 33. 53, 'Ye All Gods, hear this call of mine'). After this *japa* he asks (the pitrya brāhmaṇas) 'I shall invoke the pitṛs'. When permitted (by the pitrya brāhmaṇas) in the words 'do invoke', he invokes them with the mantra 'uśantas tvā' (Vāj. S. 19. 70, 'O Agni! we longing for our fathers place you down' &c.). Then he scatters (sesamum

(Continued from the last page)

च्छिष्टसमीपे दर्भेषु त्रींस्त्रीन्पिण्डानवनेज्य दद्यादाचान्तेष्वित्येके । आचान्तेषूदकं पुष्पाण्यक्षता-
क्षय्योदकं च दद्यात् । अघोराः पितरः सन्तु सन्त्वित्युक्ते गोत्रं नो वर्धतां वर्धतामित्युक्ते-दातारो
नोभिवर्धन्तां वेदाः सन्ततिरेव च । श्रद्धा च नो मा व्यगमद्बहु देयं च नोस्त्वित्याशिषः प्रतिगृह्य
स्वधावाचनीयान्सपवित्रान् कुशानास्तीर्य स्वधां वाचयिष्ये इति पृच्छति । वाच्यतामित्यनुज्ञातः
पितृभ्यः पितामहेभ्यः प्रपितामहेभ्यो मातामहेभ्यः प्रमातामहेभ्यो वृद्धप्रमातामहेभ्यश्च स्वधोच्यता-
मिति । अस्तु स्वधेत्युच्यमाने स्वधावाचनीयेष्वपो निषिञ्चत्यूर्जमिति । उत्तानं पात्रं कृत्वा यथा-
शक्ति दक्षिणां दद्याद् ब्राह्मणेभ्यो विश्वे देवाः प्रीयन्तामिति दैवे वाचायेत्वा वाजे वाजेऽवतेति
विसृज्या मा वाजस्येत्यनुव्रज्य प्रदक्षिणीकृत्योपविशेत् ।

1124 a. पिण्डपि ... चारः—so the result is: अपराह्णः कालः, श्राद्धकर्तुः प्राचीना-
वीतिता, दक्षिणाभिमुखता, वामजानुनिपातः, पितृतीर्थ, अप्रादक्षिण्यं, दक्षिणापवर्गता, दर्भानां
दक्षिणाग्रता चेत्यादयः पैतृकाः धर्माः. From this it follows that in वैश्वदेविकब्राह्मणो-
पचार there are यज्ञोपवीतिता, कर्तुर्दुःखता, दक्षिणजानुनिपातः, दैवतीर्थ, प्रादक्षिण्यं,
उदगपवर्गता, प्रागग्रता चेत्यादयो दैविकधर्माः. There are of course a few exceptions
to the first part, such as दक्षिणादान, स्तोत्रजप and विप्रविसर्जन.

1125. It may be noted that almost all mantras quoted by Kātyāyana are very apt and appropriate for the purposes for which they are to be repeated. For reasons of space the full texts and translation of the mantras could not be given here.



grains in front of the pitrya brāhmaṇas) and mutters the mantra 'ā yantu naḥ pitaraḥ' (Vāj. S. 19. 58, 'May the soma-loving pitrs come to us' &c.). Then he pours water in each of the cups made of a sacrificial tree (such as palāśa, udumbara &c.), in which a pavitra is dipped with the mantra 'śan no devīr' (Vāj. S. 36. 12, 'May the divine waters be for our happiness' &c.). (He puts yavas in the vessel for daiva rite). He puts in each of the cups sesamum grains with the mantra 'Thou art Tila ¹¹²⁶ &c.'. He offers on the hands of each of the brāhmaṇas (first daiva and then pitrya) that wear a pavitra water in a vessel made of gold, silver, copper, rhinoceros horn or precious stone or in whatever vessels may be available or in vessels made of bunches of leaves with the mantra 'yā divyā ¹¹²⁷ āpaḥ &c.'. The water is offered in the words 'O father' N. N. by name, this is *arghya* for you' (and then to other ancestors). Having mixed together in the first vessel (meant for the father) the drops of water remaining in the other vessels ¹¹²⁸ for other ancestors, he puts down on the ground the first vessel face downwards with the words 'thou art a place for the pitrs'. Then (at this stage) *gandha* ¹¹²⁹ (sandalwood paste), flowers, incense, lamp and garment are offered (to the brāhmaṇas representing the ancestors).

Having taken out in another vessel some food from out of the food already cooked for śrāddha and having anointed it with ghee he (the performer) asks 'I shall perform *agnaukarana*'. Being permitted by the brāhmaṇas in the words 'do so', he offers into (*grhya*) fire oblations ¹¹³⁰ as in Pinda-

1126. तिलोसि. This mantra occurs in आश्व. गृ. सू. quoted in note 966 above. हलायुध and रघुनन्दन state that यव are to be scattered with the mantra 'यवोऽसि यवयास्मद् द्वेषो यवयारातीः' (वाज. सं. 5.26) and sesamum grains are to be scattered with the mantra अपहता असुरा रक्षांसि वेदिषदः (वाज. सं. 2.29). Vide या. I. 230.

1127. For the मन्त्र 'या दिव्या etc.' vide note 966 above.

1128. There are six ancestors, three paternal and three maternal and therefore six vessels; drops of water from five vessels are poured into the first vessel. रघुनन्दन adds that the first vessel is covered with the vessel for great-grandfather and is then put down with top downwards. The ब्राह्मणसर्वस्व explains 'तत्र च पितरस्तिष्ठन्तीति बृहस्पतिः । आवृतास्तत्र तिष्ठन्ति पितरः श्राद्धदेवताः'.

1129. रघुनन्दन adds 'गन्धादीनां द्वन्द्वनिर्देशान्मिलितानामेव तन्त्रेण मुद्दिश्य उत्सर्गः'.

1130. Both हलायुध and रघुनन्दन state that the two मन्त्र in अग्नाकरण are 'ओं अग्नये कव्यवा इनाय स्वाहा, ओं सोमाय पितुमते स्वाहा'.



pitryajña, having served (into all the plates for all the brāhmaṇas invited) the food that remains after being offered in fire, he touches with his hands (above and below each plate) and repeats the mantra 'The earth is thy vessel &c.' (notes 992, 1108a). (He keeps some food aside for making piṇḍas later on). Then (having served the food in the plates) he plunges the thumb of the brāhmaṇas in the food with a ṛk (Rg. I. 22. 17, 'idam Viṣṇur vicakrame') addressed to Viṣṇu or with a Yajus so addressed ('Viṣṇo kavyamidam rakṣasva'). Then he scatters about (yavas before daiva brāhmaṇas silently and) sesamum grains with the mantra 'apahatā asurā rakṣāṃsi vedīśadaḥ' (Vāj. S. 2. 29). Then he should serve hot food very much liked (by diners or by the departed) or he may serve such food as he can afford. While the brāhmaṇas are engaged in eating (the dinner) he should perform *japa* of the following ¹¹³¹, viz. the sacred Gāyatrī once or thrice preceded by *om* and the vyāhrtis, the verses called Rākṣoghñī (note 1111), mantras addressed to the pitrs (Rg. X. 15. 1-13 beginning with 'udiratām-avara ut parāsaḥ'), Puruṣasūkta (Rg. X. 90. 1-16), Apratiratha hymn (Rg. X. 103. 1-13) beginning with 'āsuḥ śīśānaḥ') and other holy texts. Then finding that the brāhmaṇas are satiated with food, he should scatter some food in front of the dining brāhmaṇas, he should give to each brāhmaṇa water once (for *apośana* at the end of dinner). Then he should mutter as before the Gāyatrī, the (three) Madhumatī verses (Rg. I. 90. 6-8) and the word 'madhu' (thrice). Then he asks 'are you satiated'. Being permitted by them in the words 'we are satiated', he makes them give their consent as to the rest of the food, collects together all food in one vessel (in order to make piṇḍas from it); he offers (two sets of three piṇḍas, three for paternal ancestors and three for maternal ancestors) on darbhas near the spot where ¹¹³² the brāhmaṇas dined and left uneaten food in plates and pours water over the piṇḍas for ablution ¹¹³³. Some authors say that piṇḍas are to

1131. It may be noted that in Bengal the numerous verses that are prescribed here for *japa* are apparently not muttered in modern times.

1132. उच्छिष्टसमीपे-गदाधर notes 'ब्राह्मणानामग्रतोऽन्नं प्रकिरेदिति कर्काचार्याः। पङ्क्तिर्मुर्धन्यस्योत्तरदिग्भागे अरत्निमात्रे विकिरं दद्यादिति हेमाद्रिः'.

1133. एकतोद्भूत्य is grammatically irregular; it should be एकतोद्भूत्य. The पिण्डs are offered to paternal ancestors with their wives (सपत्नीक) and to maternal ancestors with their wives. The formula would be; अनुकामाय

It is to be noted that in the Bengal Manual of Pārvaṇa-śrāddha based on the Brāhmaṇasarvasva of Halāyudha and also on Raghunandana's Yajurvedi-śrāddhatattva the following details are added after the piṇḍas are placed on the darbhas and before the dismissal of the brāhmaṇas. He turns towards the north and says 'O pitṛs, regale yourselves here and come like bulls each to his portion.' Then he turns round to his former position and says 'the pitṛs regaled themselves and came like bulls each to his own share.' Then he loosens ¹¹³⁵ the side of his *dhoti* which has been tucked up and then folds up his hands (i. e. offers six namaskāras) with the mantra ¹¹³⁶ 'Namo vaḥ pitaro rasāya' (Vāj. S. II. 32). He smells ¹¹³⁷ the piṇḍas and gives the middle one to his wife, if she desires a son, with the mantra 'ādhatta' (Vāj. S. II. 33).

From considerations of space the procedure of pārvaṇa śrāddha among Hiranyakeśins in modern times is passed over here. Moreover, it closely resembles the procedure in Āśv. Gr. set out above, the principal difference being that some of the mantras are different. The Samskāraratnamālā of Gopinātha deals with this from p. 985 onwards. But one noticeable feature of this last work is that of making hair-splitting distinctions. On p. 985 it refers to two śrāddhas (other than piṇḍa-pitṛ-yajña) to be performed on amāvāsyā, viz. *māsi-śrāddha* and *māsika-śrāddha*, the first being described by the Dharmasūtra of Hiranyakeśin and the second by the Grhyasūtra. Gopinātha further says that *māsikaśrāddha* is the model of the other śrāddhas described in the Grhyasūtra and *māsiśrāddha* is the model of śrāddhas described in the Dharmasāstras, such as Mahālayaśrāddha or Sāmvatsarika-śrāddha, that Darśaśrāddha itself is *māsi-śrāddha* (p. 988) and that *māsika-śrāddha* may be performed on each *darśa* or on any one *darśa* day in a year and that *māsi-śrāddha* follows immediately after Piṇḍapitṛyajña as

1135. About नीवीविस्त्रंसन, vide शतपथ q. in n. 960a. वृद्धयाज्ञवल्क्य says 'दक्षिणे कटिदेशे तु तिलैः सह कुशत्रयम् ।'

1136. नमो वः पितरो रसाय—vide note 963 above. रघुनन्दन (यजुर्वेदिश्राद्धतत्त्व) remarks that in नमो वः पितरो रसाय...मन्यवे he offers obeisance to the pitṛs identifying them with the six seasons, that in 'namo vaḥ pitaraḥ' (Vāj. S. 2.32) he offers namaskāra to the pitṛs as identified with Agni Kavyavālāna and then prays to the pitṛs to bestow on them a house in the words 'namo vo gṛhān naḥ pitaro datta' Vāj. S. 2. 32).

1137. Vide Manu III. 218 अवाजिघ्रेच्च तान् पिण्डान् and note 960 towards the end.

laid down by Manu (III. 122) and māsikaśrāddha may be performed after māsi-śrāddha. In modern times no one performs māsiśrāddha or māsika-śrāddha strictly in accordance with the ancient rules. Śrāddha is supposed to be performed by feeding a brāhmaṇa and giving him a dakṣiṇā of a few annas. The Śrāddhatattva (Jiv., part 1 p. 254) provides, after quoting Matsya and Bhaviṣya, that, if a person is unable to perform a pārvanaśrāddha every month, he should perform one at least thrice a year when the sun is in the zodiacal signs of Kanyā, Kumbha and Vṛṣabha and that if he is unable to perform even thrice then he should perform at least once when the sun is in the sign of Kanyā.

The two meanings of sapinda given by the Mit. and the Dāyabhāga have already been explained at great length in H. of Dh. vol. II. pp. 452-458 and pp. 472-477. The Dāyabhāga propounded the theory that whoever conferred greater spiritual benefit on the deceased by the performance of śrāddhas and the offering of pinḍas was entitled to be preferred as an heir to the deceased's wealth. The Mit. said that heirship depended on blood relationship and the nearest in blood to the deceased was the preferential heir. But even under the Mit. whoever took the wealth of the deceased was bound to pay his debts (Yāj. II. 51) and to offer śrāddha and pinḍa to him. This subject and the several propositions deduced from the texts have been dealt with in H. of Dh. vol. III. pp. 734-745.

One thing to be remembered is that in determining the preferential right regard is to be had to the capacity of a person and the efficacy of the pinḍas when offered. After a person takes the wealth of the deceased, there is no legal machinery to enforce his duty to offer pinḍas¹¹³⁸. It was argued in *Nalinaksha v. Rajani Kanto* 35 C. W. N. 726 that, if an heir does not offer pinḍas or refuses to offer them to his ancestor, he was not entitled under Hindu Law to succeed to him. This argument was repelled by the judges with the remark that there was no authority for such a proposition and that the right to inheritance is based under the Dāyabhāga not on offering pinḍa but on the capacity to offer it (p. 729). Vide *Gooroo Gobinda Saha v. Anand Lal* 5 Beng. L. R. 15 (F. B.) and *Digambar v. Motilal* 9 Cal. 563 (F. B.) for the statement that the principle of spiritual benefit is the sole foundation of the theory of inheritance.

1138. Vide H. of Dh. vol. III. p. 740 and note 1431.

heritance propounded in the Dāyabhāga. But in certain later cases such as *Akshayachandra v. Hari Das* 35 Cal. 721 it was rightly pointed out that spiritual benefit is not always the guiding principle under the Bengal school of law, that the principle of spiritual efficacy as the guiding principle fails in all classes of female relations such as the wife, the daughter and the mother whose rights are really based on special texts and that the reason for inheritance by a re-united coparcener was not spiritual benefit but was based on a *quasi* contract and affection.

The question about how śrāddha was to be performed if one or more of the three paternal ancestors were alive engaged the thoughts of writers from very ancient times. The Āśv. ¹¹³⁹ Śr. S. (II. 6. 16-23) first sets out the views of Gāṇagāri, Taulvali and Gautama and then refutes them. Gāṇagāri held that out of the three paternal ancestors pindās should be offered to those that were dead and those that were alive should be honoured in person, since the śrāddha rite is meant for pleasing the ancestors; Taulvali opined that pindās should be offered to all the three ancestors, whether living or dead, since in the rite of śrāddha they are only a secondary matter (a detail). Gautama thought that pindās should be offered to dead ancestors, upto three from the father if the latter was living, from the grandfather if he was alive and from the great-grandfather if all the three be living. Āśv. replies; one cannot offer pindās to three ancestors ¹¹⁴⁰ beyond the father, grand-father or great-grandfather, since one has no *adhikāra* to do so; one cannot offer pindās to an ancestor after whom there is an ancestor (within three degrees) living. One may offer *homa* into fire to those that are alive. (If all three ancestors are alive) all the three pindās must be cast into fire or he may not begin the rite at all. The Kātyāyana śr. ¹¹⁴¹ sūtra provides

1139. तस्मै तस्मै य एषां प्रेताः स्युरिति गाणगारिः प्रत्यक्षपितरानर्चयेत् तदर्थत्वात् । सर्वेभ्य एव निपृणीयादिति तौल्वलिः क्रियागुणत्वात् । अपि जीवान्त एव आ त्रिभ्यः प्रेतेभ्य एव निपृणीयादिति गौतमः क्रिया ह्यर्थकारिता । उपायविशेषो जीवमृतानाम् । न परेभ्योऽनधिकारात् । न प्रत्यक्षम् । न जीवेभ्यो निपृणीयात् । न जीवान्तर्हितेभ्यः । जुहुयाज्जीवेभ्यः । सर्वहुतं सर्वजीविनः ॥ आश्व. श्रौ. II. 6. 16-23.

1140. One can offer pindās only to three ancestors beginning with the father according to Vedic passages quoted in notes 958, 960a above and Manu IX. 186. So there is no ancient authority to offer pinda to 4th or 5th or 6th ascendant.

1141. प्रेतेभ्यो ददाति । जीवत्पितृकोपि । जीवान्तर्हितेपि । जीवत्पितृकस्य होमन्तर्गतम् । स्मो वा । न व्यवेते जातृकण्यो न जीवन्तमतिददातीति । कात्या. श्रौ. सू. IV. 1. 23-27. Vide also शाङ्खायन श्रौ. सू. IV. 4. 12-15 for similar rules.



that piṇḍas are offered only to deceased ancestors; therefore if a person's father be alive or if there is a deceased ancestor between whom and the performer there is an ancestor that is alive, then one whose father is alive can only perform *homa* (into fire, but no piṇḍadāna) or he should not undertake at all (the rite of piṇḍa-pitṛyajña or pārvanaśrāddha); that Jātūkarnya prescribes that no piṇḍadāna is possible when a living ancestor (father) intervenes between the performer and a deceased ancestor, since a śruti text says 'one does not offer piṇḍas to ancestors that are beyond a living ancestor.' Manu (III. 220-222) deals with this question as follows: If the performer's father be alive he should offer piṇḍas to three ancestors beginning from the paternal grand-father or he may request the father to dinner as he would do to a stranger brāhmaṇa and offer piṇḍas to the deceased grand-father and great-grand-father. If the father be dead and the grandfather be alive, he may offer a piṇḍa only to the father and the great-grandfather (i. e. only two piṇḍas) or the grand-father who is alive may be invited to dinner as if he were the stranger brāhmaṇa invited to represent a deceased grand-father or if permitted by the grandfather who is alive he may offer piṇḍas to father, great-grandfather and great-great-grandfather. The Viṣṇudharmasūtra (chap. 75) has several rules of a similar character. Some of the Purāṇas such as Skanda VI 225.24-25, Agni 117.58-59 deal with this matter. Gobhilasmṛti (II. 93 ff) has a long passage on this question, one verse of which is quoted below.¹¹⁴² Many of the commentaries and digests hold divergent views on this subject, viz. the Mit. on Yāj. I. 254, Kalpataru (śr. pp. 240 ff), Śr. K. K. pp. 552-556 and Nirṇayasindhu (III. pp. 499-503). It is impossible to reconcile all the views. The Kalpataru (on śr. p. 240) states that there are three alternative courses for him whose father is alive; (1) he should pass over the father that is alive and offer piṇḍas to those three ancestors to whom his father offers piṇḍas; (Manu. III, 220, Viṣṇu Dh. S. 75.1); (2) he should simply offer *homa* into fire as stated in Āśv. Śr. S. quoted above; (3) he should not engage in the rite of piṇḍapitṛyajña or pārvanaśrāddha at all (Gobhila-smṛti II. 93). The Nirṇaya-sindhu says that there are numerous alternatives mentioned by different writers, that they are forbidden in the Kali age and

1142. सपितुः पितृकृत्येषु अधिकारो न विद्यते । न जीवन्तमतिक्रम्य किञ्चिद् दद्यादिति श्रुतिः ॥ गोभिलस्मृति II. 93, q. by आ. क्रि. कौ. p. 552. Compare कात्या. श्रौ. सू. in note 1141.

that one view is that a man whose father is alive cannot engage in a pārvaṇaśrāddha and that the real conclusion is that śrāddha may be offered to those to whom the father (of the performer) who is living offers piṇḍas. It is clear that one whose father is living should have nothing to do with piṇḍadāna for deceased ancestors. Manu (in latter half of III. 220) allowed an alternative viz. one should feed one's father at a dinner (and honour him with the details of worship such as *gandha*, *dhūpa*, *dīpa*) and offer piṇḍas to the deceased grandfather and great-grandfather. When any one or two out of the three paternal ancestors are alive and śrāddha is permitted to a descendant several alternatives become possible by permutation and combination, which are passed over here from considerations of space and utility. But the various views held by different writers as described above show clearly what a firm grip the theory of the supreme benefits to be derived from śrāddhas had on the minds not only of common people but of learned men, who, in spite of the fact that the father was alive and was there to offer piṇḍas to his three ancestors, allowed even the son (whose father was living) to offer piṇḍas to the same three ancestors. The Viṣṇu Dh. S. extends the procedure about 'jīvatpitṛka' to one's mother's paternal ancestors (changing the mantra where necessary).^{1142a} Similar rules apply where the performer's mother is alive (Agnipurāṇa 117.60 'evam mātṛādikasyāpi tathā mātāmahādike').

It is provided by Gobhilasmṛti (III. 157) that a śruti injunction should be made effective by means of *anukalpa* (of some substituted procedure) if the primary procedure cannot be carried out.¹¹⁴³ If a person cannot secure several brāhmaṇas but can secure only one, he should perform Pārvaṇa-śrāddha in which six piṇḍas are to be offered with a single brāhmaṇa, provided he is *pañkti-pāvana*¹¹⁴⁴ (sanctifier of a row of diners) and in such a case, *naivedya* should be offered in place of the dinner

1142 a. मातामहानामप्येवं श्राद्धं कुर्याद्विचक्षणः । मन्त्रोद्देशेन यथान्यायं शेषाणां मन्त्रवर्जितम् ॥ विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 75.8. मन्त्रोद्देशेन—This is to be understood as follows: "सुन्धन्तां पितरः" इत्यादौ सुन्धन्तां मातामहा इत्यादिपदक्षेपेण । शेषाणां पितृव्यमातुलादीनां मन्त्रवर्जितं आवाहनादिमन्त्रवर्जितं कुर्यादित्यर्थः ।" पृथ्वीच. folio 222 a.

1143. चरितार्था श्रुतिः कार्या यस्मादप्यनुकल्पतः । अतो देयं यथाशक्ति श्राद्धकाले समागते ॥ कार्यायन q. by हेमाद्रि (श्रा. p. 1522). The first half occurs in the Smṛiti III. 157, but the 2nd half is different.

1144. भोजयेदथवाप्येकं ब्राह्मणं पञ्चपावनम् । देवे कृत्वा तु नैवेद्यं पश्चात्तस्य तु निर्वपेत् । तत्क्षिपेत् ॥ शङ्ख 14.10; हेमाद्रि (श्रा. p. 1524) reads पश्चात्तस्य तु निर्वपेत्.

to the *daiva* brāhmaṇas and the food should be thrown into fire; so says Śaṅkha 14.10. If even a single brāhmaṇa cannot be had for a pārvanaśrāddha, then one should prepare with kuśas the effigy of brāhmaṇa students (*baṭu*) and the performer should himself ask the questions and give the answers required in pārvanaśrāddha.¹¹⁴⁵

When one cannot secure a brāhmaṇa nor materials, or when one is on a journey, or on the birth of a son, or when one's wife is in her monthly illness, one may perform āmaśrāddha (śrāddha with uncooked grains).¹¹⁴⁶ This is stated by the Skandapurāṇa VII. 1. 206. 52. Kātyāyana and Saurapurāṇa 19.32 have similar verses 'a twice-born person should perform āmaśrāddha when he is on a journey or is in distress, or if he has no fire for cooking and those who are weak may always perform it.' The Madanapārijāta (p. 483) states that one who has the *adhikāra* for pārvanaśrāddha can alone offer āmaśrāddha. Hārīta says that when there is an obstacle in performing a śrāddha, āmaśrāddha is prescribed except in the case of māsika and sāmvaṭsarika śrāddhas.¹¹⁴⁷ Āmaśrāddha is always prescribed for śūdras. It was further provided that the grains offered in śrāddha should be utilized by the brāhmaṇas for eating the cooked food for themselves and were to be applied for no other purpose (Hemādri, Śr. p. 1527). Vyāsa provides¹¹⁴⁸ that the quantity of grains should be at least two or three or four times as much as the grains required for offering cooked food. Some words employed in the various items such as *āvāhana*¹¹⁴⁹

1145. निधाय वा दर्भबहुनासनेषु समाहितः। प्रैषानुषैषसंयुक्तं विधानं प्रतिपादयेत् ॥ देवल q. by हेमाद्रि (आ. p. 1526), आ. क्रि. कौ. p. 89 (ascribes to सत्यव्रत and reads निधायथ दर्भचयम्).

1146. द्रव्याभावे द्विजाभावे प्रवासे पुत्रजन्मनि। आमश्राद्धं प्रकुर्वीत यस्य भार्या रज-स्वला ॥ स्कन्द VII. 1. 206. 52, quoted as व्यास's in स्मृतिच. (आ. p. 492); आपद्य-नग्नौ तीर्थे च प्रवासे पुत्रजन्मनि। आमश्राद्धं प्रकुर्वीत भार्यारजसि संक्रमे ॥ कात्या. q. by निर्णयसिन्धु III. p. 462, मद. पा. p. 480; कल्पतरु p. 234 explains 'अनग्निश्चात्र पाक-समर्थोऽग्निरहितः। न पुनरनग्निरनाहिताग्निः ॥'.

1147. श्राद्धविघ्ने द्विजातीनामामश्राद्धं प्रकीर्तितम्। अमावास्यादि नियतं मास-संवत्सराद्वेत् ॥ हारीत q. by अपरार्क p. 468, स्मृतिच. (आ. p. 492), आ. क्रि. कौ. p. 26 (लघुहारीत).

1148. आमं ददद्भिः कौन्तेय तद्वानं द्विगुणं भवेत्। त्रिगुणं चतुर्गुणं वापि न त्वेकगुणम-पयेत्। व्यास q. by हेमाद्रि (आ. p. 1528).

1149. आवाहने स्वधाकारे मन्त्रा जप्या विसर्जने। अन्यकर्मण्यनूह्याः स्युरामश्राद्ध-विधिः स्मृतः ॥ q. by हेमाद्रि (आ. p. 1529), स्मृतिच. (आ. p. 492) ascribes to मरिचि and explains "स्वधाकारे 'नमो वः पितर इषे' इत्यादिमन्त्रे इष इतिपदस्थाने आम-द्रव्यायेत्यूहः ॥".



svadhākāra and dismissal of the brāhmaṇas had to be changed e. g. in āvāhana the verse employed is 'uśantastvā' (Vāj. S. 19.70) which ends with the words 'haviṣe attave' (which means 'in order to eat the *havis*') the words 'haviṣe svikartave' would have to be substituted.

Āmaśrāddha is to be performed in the first part of the day, ekoddiṣṭa in the noon, the pārvanaśrāddha in the afternoon and vṛddhiśrāddha in the first part of the day (divided into five).^{1149a}

If even uncooked food grains cannot be offered the performer should perform hemaśrāddha (śrāddha with money). When the sun passes from one sign of the zodiac into another, in default of food and brāhmaṇas, on a journey, on the birth of a son, in an eclipse, in the case of women and śūdras hemaśrāddha is allowed or when one's wife is in her monthly illness. In āmaśrāddha twice the quantity of grains required in offering cooked food and in hemaśrāddha four times (the price of the grains required for cooked food) has to be offered. If no money can be had the digests prescribe several modes which have already been set out above (vide p. 425, n. 955).



1149 a. आमश्राद्धं तु पूर्वाह्ने एकोदिष्टं तु मध्यतः । पार्वणं चापराह्णे तु प्रातर्वह्ने निमित्तकम् ॥ हारीत and शातातप q. in अपरार्क p. 468, पृथ्वीच. folio 124a.

CHAPTER X

EKODDIṢṬA AND OTHER ŚRĀDDHAS

Having dealt at great length with Pārvaṇaśrāddha which is the model of all śrāddhas it is now time to speak of Ekoddiṣṭa śrāddha that is a modification of Pārvaṇaśrāddha.¹¹⁵⁰ The word Ekoddiṣṭa means 'that in which only one deceased person¹¹⁵¹ is intended (to be invoked or benefited)'. The Pārvaṇaśrāddha is intended for three paternal ancestors and is thus distinguished from Ekoddiṣṭa. In Śān. gr. IV. 2, Baud. gr. III. 12.6, the Śrāddhasūtra of Kātyāyana (kaṇḍikā 4), and Yāj. I. 251-252, the points of difference between the two are clearly set out.¹¹⁵² In this śrāddha only one *arghya* is offered, there is only one *pavitra* and only one *piṇḍa* is offered, there is no *āvāhana* (as there is in Pārvaṇa), no *agnaukarana*, there are no brāhmaṇas invited to represent the Viśve-devas; the question about being satiated by the dinner is to be asked in the word 'svaditam' (did it taste well) and the brāhmaṇas reply with 'susvaditam' (it had excellent taste); instead of saying 'may it be inexhaustible,' the formula here used is 'May it approach' (or wait upon the deceased person); when the brāhmaṇas are sent away at the end of the dinner the word used is 'be satisfied (or delighted)' and they reply 'we are delighted.' The Viṣṇu-purāṇa (III. 13. 23-26) and Mārkaṇḍeya (28. 8-11) closely follow the Śrāddhasūtra and Yāj. According to Śān. gr. (IV. 2. 7),¹¹⁵³

1150. अथेत्यनेनैकोद्दिष्टस्य पार्वणानन्तर्याभिधानं तयोः प्रकृतिविकृतित्वं सूचयति ।
श्राद्धतत्त्व p. 244.

1151. एक उद्दिष्टो यस्मिन् श्राद्धे तदेकोद्दिष्टमिति कर्मनामधेयम् । मिता. on या. I. 251; elsewhere it says 'तत्र त्रिपुरुषोद्दिष्टेन यत् क्रियते तत्पार्वणम्, एकपुरुषोद्दिष्टेन क्रियमाणमेकोद्दिष्टम्' । मिता. on या. I. 217. हलायुध (folio 32 b) on श्राद्धसूत्र says 'एकोत्र संप्रदानत्वेनोद्दिष्ट इति ।'.

1152. अथैकोद्दिष्टेषु नाग्नौकरणं नाभिश्चावणं न पूर्वं निमन्त्रणं न देवं न धूपं न दीपं न स्वधा न नमस्कारो नात्रापूपम् । बौ. गृ. सू. III. 12. 6.†

1153. अथैकोद्दिष्टम् । एकोऽर्घ्यं एकं पवित्रमेकः पिण्डो नावाहनं नाग्नौकरणं नाभिश्च देवाः स्वदितमिति तृप्तिप्रश्नः सुस्वादितमितीतरे ब्रूयुरुपातिष्ठतामित्यक्षयस्थानेऽभिरुच्यतामिति विसर्गोऽभिरुच्यताः स्म इतीतरे । श्राद्धसूत्र 4 (कात्यायनीय). Almost the same words occur in कौषीतकिगृह्य 4. 2 (Benares S. Series). The यजुर्वेदिश्राद्धतत्त्व (p. 495) explains 'एकं एकदलरूपं पवित्रम्'.



Manu III. 257, Mārkaṇḍeya (28. 11), Yāj. I. 256 and others, for one year after the death of a twice-born person till the sapīṇḍikarāṇa śrāddha is performed this is the way in which śrāddha is to be performed for the *preta* every month. The Viṣṇudharmasūtra 21. 2 provides that suitable changes (ūha) should be made in the mantras employed (e. g. instead of 'atra pitaro mādayadhvam' the mantra should be 'atra pitarmādayasva' (O father! ¹¹⁵⁴ regale thyself here). In Ekoddiṣṭa such a formula as 'ye ca tvām-anu' (those that come after thee) cannot be employed and the word 'pitṛ' is not to be employed (till sapīṇḍikarāṇa is performed), but the word 'preta' (Aparārka p. 525 quoting Śaunaka-gr̥hyapariśiṣṭa).¹¹⁵⁵

As seen above (p. 262, note 591a) Ekoddiṣṭa śrāddhas are of three kinds, nava, navamiśra and purāṇa. Navaśrāddhas are those that are performed till the 10th or 11th day after death, navamiśras (or miśras) are those that are performed after the 11th day till one year (or six months, according to some) after death. Aparārka quotes a verse from Vyāghra ¹¹⁵⁶ that Ekoddiṣṭa-śrāddha is performed on the 11th day, on the 4th day, at the end of each month for a year after death and every year on the day of death and a verse of Kātyāyana that (ekoddiṣṭa) śrāddha should be performed for one who had kept sacred fires on the 11th day after the day of cremation and that the Dhruva śrāddhas should always be performed on the day of death. Aparārka explains 'Dhruvāṇi' as meaning those that are performed after three fortnights from death. About the navaśrāddha there is again a divergence of views. One meaning has already been given above on p. 262 note 593. The Skandapurāṇa VI (Nāgarakhaṇḍa) 205. 1-4 and Garuḍapurāṇa (pretakhaṇḍa 5. 67-69) state that navaśrāddhas are nine viz. the three performed where a man died, where the funeral procession rested on the way and where the burnt bones were collected and six more performed on the 5th, 7th, 8th, 9th, 10th, and 11th days after death.

1154. एकवन्मन्त्राचूहेतैकोद्दिष्टे । विष्णुध. सू. 21. 2. On this the दीपकालिका explains "अत्र पितरो मादयध्वमिति बहुवचनान्तेषु अत्र पितर्मादयस्व इति एकवचनेनोहः कार्यः".

1155. ये च त्वामनु इत्यादि मन्त्रो न युज्यते । पितृशब्दं न कुर्वीत नमोऽपि पितर इत्यादि मन्त्रं न पठेत् । कल्पतरु (श्रा.) p. 246.

1156. तत्र व्याघ्रः । एकादशे चतुर्थे च मासि मासि च वत्सरम् । प्रतिसंवत्सरं चैव मेकोद्दिष्टं स्मृताहनि ॥ कात्यायनः । श्राद्धमग्निमतः कार्यं दाहादेकादशेऽहनि । ध्रुवाणि तु प्रकुर्वीत प्रतीताहनि सर्वदा ॥ अपरार्क p. 521. This last is गोभिलस्मृति III. 66 which reads प्रत्याब्धिकं प्रकुर्वीत.



Numerous works lay down that there are sixteen śrāddhas which must be performed for a deceased person and that if these are not performed then his spirit is not freed from the condition of being a *preta* and a *piśāca*.¹¹⁵⁷ There is a great deal of divergence of views about what these sixteen śrāddhas are, some works including sapīṇḍikarāṇa among the 16, others excluding it therefrom. Gobhilasmṛti III. 67 enumerates¹¹⁵⁸ the 16 as follows: The twelve monthly śrāddhas (performed every month on the *tithi* of death), the first (i. e. the śrāddha on the 11th day), two śrāddhas on (a day prior to the expiry of) every six months from the *tithi* of death and sapīṇḍikarāṇa are the sixteen śrāddhas. The Garuḍapurāṇa¹¹⁵⁹ refers to three groups of sixteen, one of which enumerates the 16 śrāddhas as those performed on the 12th day (after death), after three fortnights, after six months, after every month and at the end of the year, while the Padmapurāṇa¹¹⁶⁰ enumerates them as follows: the sixteen śrāddhas are those performed on the 4th day after death, at the end of three fortnights, after six months, after a year and twelve śrāddhas performed each month (on the *tithi* of death). The Kalpataru p. 25 and Brahmapurāṇa q. by Aparārka (p. 523) state that the 16 śrāddhas are those performed on 4th, 5th, 9th and 11th days after death and the twelve monthly śrāddhas (on the *tithi* of death¹¹⁶¹). Laugākṣi and

1157. यस्यैतानि न दीयन्ते प्रेतश्राद्धानि षोडश। पिशांचत्वं ध्रुवं तस्य दत्तैः श्राद्ध-
शतैरपि॥ यम q. by आ. क्रि. कौ. p. 362. The same verse occurs in गरुडपुराण
(प्रेतखण्ड 5. 50-51), लिखितस्मृति 16 (reads यस्यैतानि न कुर्वति एकोद्दिष्टानि), लघुशङ्ख
13 (with variations), पद्म (सृष्टिखण्ड 47. 272 reads न सन्तीह यथाशक्त्या च श्राद्धया).
The verse is quoted by the मिता. on या. I. 254 (reading न दत्तानि and प्रेतत्वं
सुस्थिरं तस्य). प्रेतलोके तु वसतिर्नृणां वर्षं प्रकीर्तता। क्षुत्तुष्णे प्रत्यहं तत्र भवेतां भृगुनन्दन॥
मार्कण्डेयः q. by मिता. on या. I. 253.

1158. द्वादश प्रतिमास्यानि आद्यषाण्मासिके तथा। सपिण्डीकरणं चैव एतद्वै श्राद्ध-
षोडशम्॥ गोभिलस्मृति III. 67. The word आद्य has been explained by या. I. 256
as मृतदेहानि प्रकर्तव्यं प्रतिमासं तु वत्सरम्। प्रतिसंवत्सरं चैवमाद्यमेकादशेऽहनि॥ on which
the मिता. says 'आद्यं सर्वैकोद्दिष्टप्रकृतिभूतमेकोद्दिष्टमेकादशेऽहनि'. गरुड (प्रेत 5.51) says:
एकादशे द्वादशे वा दिने आद्यं प्रकीर्तितम्। But अपरार्क p. 543 explains आद्य differently
'आद्यशब्देन नवश्राद्धान्युच्यन्ते'. षाण्मासिके is explained by गोभिलस्मृति III. 68 as
एकाहेन तु षण्मासा यदा स्युरपि वा त्रिभिः। न्यूनोः संवत्सराच्चैव स्यातां षाण्मासिके तथा॥ q.
by अपरार्क p. 522, आ. क्रि. कौ. p. 338 and explained as 'एकेनाह्ना त्रिभिर्वा अहोभिर्यदा
षण्मासा न्यूनाः स्युः संवत्सरश्च तावत्संख्यया न्यूनास्ति तदा षाण्मासिके श्राद्धे कार्ये' इत्यर्थः.

1159. द्वादशाहे त्रिपक्षे च षण्मासे मासिकेऽद्विके। तृतीयां षोडशीमेतां वदन्ति मतभेदात्॥
गरुड (प्रेतखण्ड 5.49-50); the other two groups are at chap. 35. 33-36 and in 37.

1160. चतुर्थाहे त्रिपक्षे च षण्मासे चाद्विके तथा। द्वादश प्रतिमास्यानि श्राद्धान्य-
तानि षोडश। पद्म, सृष्टिखण्ड 5. 271.

1161. ब्रह्मपुराणे। नृणां तु त्यक्तदेहानां श्राद्धाः षोडश सर्वदा। चतुर्थे पञ्चमे चैव त्रयो-
कादशे तथा। ततो द्वादशभिर्मासैः श्राद्धा द्वादशसंख्यया। q. by अपरार्क p. 523.



others say that after performing the 16 śrāddhas according to the procedure for Ekoddiṣṭa śrāddhas sapinḍana should be performed.¹¹⁶² The Madanapārijāta (p. 615), the Nirṇaya-sindhu (III. p. 599) and others say that in this conflict of views one should follow the usage of one's country, Vedic Śākhā or family. There were two views about the śrāddha on the 11th day. It should be remembered that Yāj. III. 22 laid down impurity on death for 10, 12, 15 and 30 days respectively for the four varṇas. One view espoused by Śaṅkha and Paithīnasi was that in spite of the days of impurity not being over śrāddha must be performed on the 11th day (and for the moment the performer becomes pure for that purpose). The other view was that of the Matsyapurāṇa and Viṣṇudharmasūtra 21.1 that the first śrāddha (ekoddiṣṭa) was to be performed on the expiry of āśauca.

In the case of ascetics dying it is provided by Uśanas¹¹⁶³ that by the fact of their taking to the order of *sannyāsa* (of the ekadāṇḍi kind in the Kaliyuga) they have not to undergo the condition of being *preta*, no Ekoddiṣṭa nor Sapinḍikarāṇa should be performed for them by their son or other relative but only pārvāṇaśrāddha on the 11th day and every year thereafter. Śātātapa provides¹¹⁶⁴ that no Ekoddiṣṭa, no water, no pinḍa and no cremation rites should be offered to an ascetic nor mourning should be observed, but pārvāṇa-śrāddha should be performed. Pracetas quoted by Mit. on Yāj. I. 256 states that no ekoddiṣṭa is to be performed for an ascetic nor sapinḍikarāṇa, but only pārvāṇa on the day of death every year in Bhādrapada dark half. The Śivapurāṇa (Kailāsa-saṁhitā) chapters 22 and 23 deal with the rites to be performed on an ascetic's death on the 11th and 12th days.

In the Navaśrāddhas no incense, no lamps are employed. All mantras having the words 'pitr' and 'svadhā namaḥ' are

1162. आञ्जानि षोडशापाद्य विदधीत सपिण्डनम् । लौगाक्षि q. by मिता. on या. I. 255, निर्णयसिन्धु p. 599, भट्टोजि on चतुर्विंशतिमतसंग्रह p. 168; ascribed to वायु-पुराण by अपरार्क p. 532; सपिण्डीकरणाद्वार्क कुर्याद्वाञ्जानि षोडश । एकोद्दिष्टविधानेन कुर्यात्सर्वाणि तानि तु ॥ q. by अपरार्क p. 522.

1163. एकोद्दिष्टं न कुर्वीत यतीनां चैव सर्वदा । अहन्येकादशे प्राप्ते पार्वणं तु विधीयते ॥ सपिण्डीकरणं तेषां न कर्तव्यं सुतादिभिः । त्रिदण्डग्रहणादेव प्रेतत्वं नैव जायते ॥ उशनास q. by मिता. on या. I. 255, परा. मा. I. 2. p. 458, आ. क्रि. कौ. pp. 444-445.

1164. एकोद्दिष्टं जलं पिण्डमाशौचं प्रेतसत्क्रियाम् । न कुर्याद्वापिकादन्यद् ब्रह्मभूताय भिक्षवे । स्मृताः ॥ शातातप q. by मद. पा. p. 627, आ. क्रि. कौ. p. 445, अपरार्क p. 532 (पार्वणादन्यद् ब्रह्मभूताय भिक्षवे).

omitted and so is the word 'anu' omitted and there is no *japa* and no recital of mantras in the hearing of the brāhmaṇas. As stated in the Brahmapurāṇa, the śrāddhas performed in the house at the end of impurity on the 12th day, at the end of a month etc. are called ekoddiṣṭa. It follows that the rites called navaśrāddhas offered during the days of impurity are performed at the place of death or in the cemetery or at a place where water and piṇḍa are offered (and not in the house); vide Sm. C. (āśauca p. 176). In the *navamiśra* śrāddha mantras are employed according to some. In former times and now also all the 16 śrāddhas are performed on the 11th day. Hardly any one waits for one year to perform Sapindīkarana. In former times it was laid down (e. g. by the Mit.) that in times of difficulty, Sapindīkarana should be performed even before a year elapses after performing the sixteen śrāddhas. But now this exception has become the rule.

Sapindīkarana or **Sapindana** is the reception of a deceased person into the community of pitṛs to whom piṇḍas are offered. Several times were prescribed by ancient works for this. Acc. to the Kauṣītaki gr. IV. 2 this śrāddha could be performed after the death of the deceased at the end of a year or at the end of three fortnights or on the happening of a lucky event (like the birth of a son or a marriage). The Bhāradvāja¹¹⁶⁵ gr. (III. 17) allowed it at the end of a year (after death) or in the 11th or 6th or 4th month or on the 12th day. The Baud. Pitrmedhasūtra II. 12.1 mentions five times for sapindīkarana viz. one year, 11th, 6th or 4th month or 12th day. The Garuḍapurāṇa (Pretakhaṇḍa 6. 53-54) states the time of Sapindīkarana to be one year, six months, three fortnights, the 12th day or on a lucky occasion. The Viṣṇupurāṇa (III. 13. 26ff) makes similar provisions about sapindīkarana (which is an ekoddiṣṭa śrāddha). Aparārka (p. 540) after a long discussion holds that there are three times for a performer who is an āhitāgni viz. 12th day, some day between the end of āśauca and the first amāvāsyā (after death) or the first amāvāsyā after āśauca ends and prescribes four times for one who has not kept sacred fires, viz. a year, six months, three fortnights or when a lucky event occurs. The Madanapārijāta quotes a verse of Vyāsa that the 12th day is

1165. संवत्सरे सपिण्डीकरणमेकादशे मासि षष्ठे चतुर्थे द्वादशे हनि। भारद्वाजगृह्ये ॥
17.1; आनन्त्यात्कुलधर्माणां पुंसां चैवायुषः क्षयात्। अस्थिरत्वाच्छरीरस्य द्वादशाहो प्रशस्यते॥
व्यास q. by मद. पा. p. 631, आ. क्रि. कौ. p. 350 (ascribes to व्यास), पृथ्वीच. १०१०
237 a (ascribes to व्यास), भट्टोजि p. 176 of चतुर्विंशति, आद्भुतच p. 301.



commended (for the sapinḍana śrāddha) because family usages are innumerable, because man's life is short and because the body is evanescent. The Viṣṇu Dh. S. (21.20) provides that for śūdras 12th day after death is the only day for Sapinḍikarāṇa (but without Vedic mantras). Gobhila laid down that after Sapinḍikarāṇa was performed, there was to be no performance of śrāddhas every month, but Gautama (or Śaunaka, according to Aparārka p. 543) held the view that they may be performed according to the procedure of ekoddiṣṭa śrāddhas. Bhaṭṭoji says ¹¹⁶⁶ that when sapinḍikarāṇa is performed before the end of the year, then all the sixteen śrāddhas must be performed before Sapinḍikarāṇa, yet the monthly śrāddhas should again be performed at their proper times for one year. Yāj. I. 255 and Viṣṇu Dh. S. 21. 23 prescribe that even if Sapinḍikarāṇa is performed for a deceased person within less than a year from death still for one year food and a jar of water should be given to a brāhmaṇa for the whole year (for the benefit of the deceased). Uśanas provides that even if the heirs of a deceased person are divided in wealth, still the *navaśrāddhas*, the sixteen śrāddhas, and sapinḍikarāṇa must be performed by one alone ¹¹⁶⁷ (e. g. the eldest son), but Pracetas provides that when a year has (elapsed) śrāddha may be performed separately by each heir ¹¹⁶⁸.

The procedure of Sapinḍana or Sapinḍikarāṇa is described in numerous works such as the Śān. gr. V. 9, Kauṣītaki gr. IV. 2, Baud. Pitrmedhasūtra III. 12.12, Śrāddha-sūtra of Kātyāyana (kaṇḍikā 5), Yāj. I. 253-254, Viṣṇupurāṇa III. 13.27 ff., Viṣṇu Dh. S. 21. 12-23, Padma (Sṛṣṭikhaṇḍa 10. 22-33), Mārkaṇḍeya-purāṇa 28. 12-18, Garuḍa-purāṇa I. 220, Viṣṇu-dharmottara II. 77, Smṛtyarthasāra pp. 57-58, Nirṇayasindhu (III. p. 614). It is briefly set out here. ¹¹⁶⁹ As said by Baud.

1166. यदा संवत्सरपूर्ते प्रागेव सपिण्डीकरणं क्रियते तदा यद्यपि षोडश श्राद्धानि ततः प्रागेव कृतानि-श्राद्धानि षोडशादत्रा न कुर्यात्तु सपिण्डनम्—इति वृद्धवासिष्ठोक्तेः, तथापि स्व-स्वकाले पुनरपि मासिकादीन्यावर्तनीयानि। भट्टोजि on चतुर्विंशतिमतसंग्रह p. 171.

1167. नवश्राद्धं सपिण्डत्वं श्राद्धान्यपि च षोडश। एकेनैव हि कार्याणि संविभक्त-धनेष्वपि ॥ उशनस् q. by अपरार्क p. 524, मिता. on या. I. 255 (without name). This verse is गरुडपुराण, प्रेत° 34. 128-129.

1168. अर्वाक् संवत्सरात्सर्वे कुर्युः श्राद्धं समेत्य वै। संवत्सरे व्यतीते तु कुर्युः श्राद्धं पृथक् पृथक् ॥ प्रचेतस् q. by अपरार्क p. 524.

1169. The सङ्कल्प in सपिण्डन will be somewhat as follows: अमुकशर्मणः प्रेतस्य प्रेतत्वनिवृत्त्या पितृलोकप्राप्त्यर्थममुकगोत्रैः अमुकशर्मभिर्वसुदेवादिभ्यः स्वस्वरूपैः प्रेतपितृपितामहप्रपितामहैः सह सपिण्डीकरणं मृताहाद् द्वादशेऽह्नि पार्ष्णिनीयादि विधिना करिष्ये ।।

Pitrmedhasūtra III. 12.12, in this śrāddha there is invitation to the brāhmaṇas the previous day, there is agnaukarāṇa, there is the recital of Vedic texts when the brāhmaṇas are engaged in eating, Vaiśvadeva brāhmaṇas are honoured, the Viśvedevas are Kāma and Kāla (vide n. 1018), there is the presentation of incense and lamp, there is *svadhā* and also *namaskāra*. Four vessels for *arghya* should be got ready and filled with sandal-wood paste, water and sesamum grains, one being for the deceased (the *preta*) and three for his paternal ancestors; two daiva brāhmaṇas should be invited, one to represent the *preta* and three to represent the three paternal ancestors of the *preta*; if a man is unable to invite so many brāhmaṇas, he should invite three, one for Viśvedevas, one for the *preta* and one for the three paternal ancestors. He should request 'I shall unite the vessel for the *preta* with the vessels for his three paternal ancestors.' When permitted in the words 'do unite', he should cast the kuśas in the vessel for the *preta* into the vessels for his three paternal ancestors, should keep a little water mixed with kuśas in the vessel for the *preta* and distribute the rest of the water from the *preta* vessel into the three vessels for his ancestors with the two mantras^{1169a} 'ye samānā' (Vāj. S. 19. 45-46). Arghya is offered to the brāhmaṇa representing the *preta* with the water that remains in the *preta* vessel, arghya is offered to the three *pitrya* brāhmaṇas from the three *pitrya* vessels. Four piṇḍas should be prepared, one for the *preta* and three for his ancestors and then the performer requests 'I shall unite the pretapiṇḍa with the piṇḍas for the three ancestors of his'; when permitted in the words 'do unite', the performer divides the pretapiṇḍa into three parts and puts each third into each of the three piṇḍas with the same two mantras (Vāj. S. 19. 45-46). The Garuḍapurāṇa (I. 220.6) strikes a discordant note in that it states that the pretapiṇḍa is to be divided in two parts, each of which is to be placed inside the piṇḍas for pitāmaha and prapitāmaha only.

1169 a. The two mantras are : ये समानाः समनसः पितरो यमराज्ये । तेषां लोकः स्वधा नमो यज्ञो देवेषु कल्पताम् ॥ ये समानाः समनसो जीवा जीवेषु मामकाः । तेषां श्रीमयि कल्पतामस्मिँल्लोके शतं समाः ॥ वाज. सं. 19. 45-46, काठकसंहिता 38. 23-24. भारद्वाज गृह्य III. 17 sets out the following formula for तिलप्रदान 'ये समाना ये सजातो द्यौर्वा द्वाभ्यामसौ पितृभिः पितामहेभिः प्रपितामहेभिः सहैतत्ते तिलोदकं तस्मै ते स्वधा नम इति तिलोदकप्रदानम् ॥'. In place of असौ one has to use the vocative 'अस्मत्पितरमुकशर्मन् प्रेत'. पितामहेभिः and प्रपितामहेभिः are Vedic Instrumentals (plural).



Sapindikarāṇa partakes of the character of both ekoddīṣṭa and pārvāṇa, the first applying to the *preta* and the 2nd to the three ancestors of the *preta*, so that in it two kinds of śrāddhas are combined. When the sapindikarāṇa rite is completed by the giving of dakṣiṇā to the brāhmaṇas, then the *preta* ceases to be so and himself becomes a pitṛ. The status of being a *preta* involves the experiencing of great torments due to hunger and thirst and becoming a pitṛ means being brought in contact with the śrāddha *devatās* called Vasu, Rudra and Āditya.¹¹⁷⁰ The word *preta* has two meanings, (1) a person who is dead and (2) one who being dead has not the sapindikarāṇa performed for him. The result of sapindana is that the¹¹⁷¹ great-grandfather of the deceased whose sapindana is performed drops out from the list of pitṛs entitled to piṇḍa and becomes one called 'lepabhāk' (entitled to only wipings of the hand) and the former *preta* becomes one of the pitṛs and entitled to participate in the piṇḍas offered at a pārvāṇaśrāddha thereafter. As stated in the Garuḍapurāṇa I. 220. 2 the sapindikarāṇa-śrāddha is to be performed like the pārvāṇa in the afternoon.

It may be noted that in some works the mantras recited at the time of pouring the water from the *preta* vessel into the pitṛ vessels are different. For example, the Viṣṇu Dh. S. 21. 14 says¹¹⁷² the mantras are 'Samsrjatu tvā prthivī' (May the earth unite thee) and 'samānī va ākutih' (Rg. X. 191. 4), while the

1170. प्रेतत्वं च क्षुत्तृष्णोपजनितात्यन्तदुःखानुभवावस्था । यथाह मार्कण्डेयः । प्रेतलोके तु वसतिर्दृष्टां वर्षं प्रकीर्तिता । क्षुत्तृष्णे प्रत्यहं तत्र भवेतां भृशुनन्दन॥ इति । पितृत्वप्राप्तिश्च वस्वादिश्राद्धदेवतासम्बन्धः । मिता. on या. I. 254, या. I. 255-256 presuppose this idea.

1171. सपिण्डीकरणादूर्ध्वं पितुर्यः प्रपितामहः । सुतलेपभुजो याति प्रलुप्तपितृपिण्डकः॥ मार्कण्डेय 29. 1; ततः प्रभृति वै प्रेतः पितृसामान्यमाप्नुयात् । विन्दते पितृलोकं च ततः श्राद्धं प्रवर्तते॥ हारीत q. by कल्पतरु (श्रा.) p. 256, हेमाद्रि (श्रा. p. 1640), श्रा. क्रि. कौ. p. 262 which last explains 'पितृसामान्यं पितृभिः सह पार्वणश्राद्धभोक्तृत्वमित्यर्थः । तेन पञ्चदश-श्राद्धानां प्रेतत्वपरीहारः फलं सपिण्डनस्य तु प्रेतत्वपरीहारः पितृलोकप्राप्तिः पितृभिः सह पार्वणभोक्तृत्वं च फलत्रयमिति ।'. Vide also स्मृतिच. on आशौच (Mysore University ed.) p. 158 quoting प्रचेतस् and विष्णु.

1172. संवत्सरान्ते प्रेताय तत्पित्रे तत्पितामहाय तत्पितामहाय च ब्राह्मणान् देवपूर्वान् भोजयेत् । अत्राग्नौकरणमागहनं पाद्यं च कुर्यात् । संसृजतु त्वा पृथिवी समानी व इति प्रेतपाद्यपात्रं पितृपाद्यपात्रत्रये योजयेत् । विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 21. 12-14, q. by हेमाद्रि (श्रा. p. 1640). The mantra is संसृजतु त्वा पृथिवी वायुरग्निः प्रजापतिः । संसृजध्वं पूर्वभिः पितृभिरनुसृजतु॥. The काठकगृह्य 66.7 prescribes that when parts of pretapiṇḍa are mixed up with पितृपिण्ड, this mantra and two more viz. 'samānā va ākutih' and 'sam vo manānsi' (काठकसंहिता 10. 38-39) are recited.

Grhya-pariśiṣṭa ¹¹⁷³ of Āśv. employs the three Madhumatī verses (Rg. I. 90.6-8) and the three fine verses at the end of the Rgveda beginning with 'saṅgacchadhvam' (Rg. X. 191. 2-4, 'May you unite' &c.).

Yāj. (I. 254) and Mārkaṇḍeya (28. 17-18) provide that Ekoddiṣṭa and Sapindikarāṇa śrāddhas are performed for women also (but not pārvāṇa nor ābhyudayika). About the Sapindikarāṇa of the mother there are somewhat conflicting dicta. If a woman dies sonless and her husband is alive, her sapindana is effected with her mother-in-law (Gobhīlasmṛti II. 102). If a woman dies leaving no son and the husband also is dead, then no sapindana can be performed for her. If she died either on the funeral pyre of her husband ¹¹⁷⁴ or afterwards (as a *Sati*) then her son should perform her sapindana with her husband (i. e. the son's father) and there is no separate sapindana for her. If she was married in the *āsura* form or she was made a *putrikā*, then the son should perform his mother's sapindana with his maternal grandfather; while a son born of a woman married in the *Brāhma* and three other proper forms may perform her sapindana with her husband or the paternal grandmother or the maternal grandfather. In the case of these three alternatives if there is a certain family usage that should be followed; otherwise there is an option. If a woman has a step-son, the latter should perform her sapindana with his father, as Manu IX. 183 (= Vas. 17. 11) indicates. Vide the Mit. on Yāj. I. 253-254 and Sm. C. (on āśauca p. 169) for discussion of these points and for various alternatives. ¹¹⁷⁵

The Nirṇayasindhu (III. p. 388) says that there is no sapindana for one whose upanayana was not performed when

1173. प्रेतपिण्डं त्रिधा विभज्य पितृपिण्डेषु त्रिष्वदधाति मधु वाता इति तिसृभिः सङ्गच्छध्वमिति द्वाभ्यामनुमन्त्य शेषं पार्वणवत्कुर्यात् । आश्व. गृ. परि. 3. 11.

1174. सपिण्डीकरणं तासां पुत्राभावे न विद्यते । प्रतिसंवत्सरं कार्यमेकोद्दिष्टं नरैः स्त्रियाः ॥ मार्कण्डेय 28.18 on which रुद्रधर (श्राद्धविवेक p. 113) says: अत्र पुत्राभाव इत्युपलक्षणं पतिपुत्राभाव इति द्रष्टव्यम् ।

1175. स्वेन भर्त्रा समं श्राद्धं माता भुङ्क्ते सुधामयम् । पितामही च स्वेनैव स्वेनैव प्रपितामही ॥ बृहस्पति q. by स्मृतिच. (आ.) p. 449, कल्पतरु (आ.) p. 259 (reads स्वधामयं and तथैव प्रपितामही) and आ. क्रि. कौ. p. 428; मातुः सपिण्डीकरणं पितामह्या सहोदितम् । गोभिलस्मृति II. 102 आ. क्रि. कौ. p. 428; पितुः पितामहे पितृ पूर्णं संवत्सरे सुतैः । मातुर्मतामहे तद्वदेषा कार्या सपिण्डता ॥ उशनस् q. by मिता. on Yāj. I. 253-254. The गरुड (प्रेत 34.121) says 'पितामह्या समं मातुः पितुः सह पितामहे सपिण्डीकरणं कार्यमिति तदर्थं मतं मम ॥'. Therefore the मिता. says 'मातुः सपिण्डीकरणेपि विरुद्धानि वाक्यानि दृश्यन्ते ।'.

he died, but if he was more than five years old then the 16 śrāddhas are performed for him (though not sapindana) and pinda is offered on bare ground. It may be noted that no auspicious rite like marriage in which ābhyudayika śrāddha is necessary can be performed until the sapindana of a deceased person of the family has been effected (except in the case of such absolutely necessary ceremonies as śimantonnayana).

Manu (V. 89-90) prescribes that no water and other rites like sapindikarāṇa are offered and performed for those who had left off their faith, who were born of condemned mixed marriages, who entered ascetic orders, who had committed suicide (by hanging, poison &c.), who had embraced heretical doctrines, for women that wilfully seek illicit connection with men, that did harm to their foetus or husband (were guilty of abortion and murder of husband) and that were addicted to drinking *surā*. Yāj. III. 6 contains similar provisions. It has to be noted that every kind of suicide is not condemned by the ancient smṛtis. Vide H. of Dh. vol. III, pp. 939, 958-9 for cases where suicide was not condemned. Except in those cases Yama (q. by the Mit. on Yāj. III. 6) provides that in the case of the persons mentioned in Manu and Yāj. there is to be no āśauca observed, no water offered, no tears shed, no cremation and no last rites. The Mit. (on Yāj. III. 6) quotes Vṛddha Yājñavalkya and Chāgaleya that in the case of those who are guilty of condemned suicide the procedure of Nārāyaṇabali should be resorted to after a year and then śrāddha may be offered to them. Then the Mit. describes at length the procedure of Nārāyaṇabali. Vide note 838 b p. 370 above for the Skandapurāṇa, Nāgarakhaṇḍa 219. 19-21 on the view that śrāddha may be performed on the 14th of the dark half for persons who committed suicide or who met a violent death.

The *Abhyudayika-śrāddha* is to be now described. Āśv. gr. IV. 7 mentions in one place only four śrāddhas viz. Pārvaṇa, Kāmya, Ābhyudayika and Ekoddiṣṭa (note 966 above). Many of the sūtras such as Āśv. gr. II. 5. 13-15, Śān. gr. IV. 4, Gobhila gr. IV. 3. 35-37, Kauṣītaki gr. IV. 4, Baud. gr. III. 12. 2-5, the Śrāddhasūtra of Kātyāyana (kaṇḍikā 6) briefly describe this śrāddha. According to most of these sūtras this śrāddha is performed when there is a lucky event such as the birth of a son, or his *caula*, *upanayana* or marriage or there is the commencement of a charitable (*pūrta*) act (such as the dedication of a well or a tank or a park to the public). Āśv.

gr. and Gobhila gr. are very brief. They say that in this śrāddha performed on auspicious occasions or on the undertaking of meritorious acts an even number of brāhmaṇas is to be fed, that the rite is to be performed from left to right and that *yavas* (barley) are to be used instead of *sesamum* grains. As this śrāddha is only a modification (*vikṛti*) of *pārvaṇa* (as said by Aparārka p. 514) all rules of the latter will be applicable to the former except where special directions are given. The Āśv. gr. *pariśiṣṭa* II. 19, *Smṛtyarthasāra* (p. 56), *Pitṛdayitā* pp. 62-71 give a compact but tolerably full description of this śrāddha.

In this śrāddha which is to be performed in the morning (except on the birth of a son when it is to be done at once) the *Viśve-devas* are called *Satya* and *Vasu*, it is performed in the forenoon, the brāhmaṇas to be invited must be even in number, the *darbhas* are to be straight (and not doublefolded) and are not to be with their roots; the performer wears his sacred thread in the usual form (and not in the *prācīnāvīta* form), all actions are to be done from left to right (*pradakṣiṇam* and not *prasavyam*); the word *svadhā* is not to be used; *yava* grains are to be employed instead of *sesamum* grains; he invites them with the words 'find time to attend *Nāndīśrāddha*'. The brāhmaṇas say 'be it so'. He says 'May you two come (to my house)'; they reply 'we two shall come'. The performer faces the east or north (but never the south); the mantra about *yavas* is '*yavosi*' (vide note 966)¹¹⁷⁶ he requests 'I shall invoke the *pitṛs* called *Nāndīmukha*'.¹¹⁷⁷ When permitted by the brāhmaṇas in the words 'do invoke' he says 'may the *Nāndīmukha* *pitṛs* be pleased'; he offers *arghya* only once with the words 'O *Nāndīmukha* *pitṛs*! this is the *arghya* for you'. Sandalwood paste, incense, lamp are to be given twice; the *homa* is made on the hand of the brāhmaṇa, the two mantras being 'to *Agni*, the bearer of *kavya*! *svāhā*' and 'to *Soma* accompanied by the *pitṛs*! *svāhā*.' While the

1176. The मन्त्र here repeated is 'यवोसि...प्रतः पुष्ट्या (in place of स्वधया) नान्दीमुखान् पितॄन्...नः स्वाहा नमः (instead of स्वधा नमः)'.
 1177. The सङ्कल्प will be somewhat as follows: ओम्, अद्यामुकगोत्राणां मातृपितामहीप्रपितामहीनाममुकामुकामुकदेवीनां नान्दीमुखीनां तथामुकगोत्राणां पितृपितामहप्रपितामहानाममुकामुकामुकशर्मणां नान्दीमुखानां तथामुकगोत्राणां मातामहप्रपितामहवृद्धप्रमातामहानाममुकामुकामुकशर्मणां नान्दीमुखानाममुकगोत्रस्य कर्तव्यामुककर्मनिमित्तं कामाभ्युदयिकश्राद्धमहं करिष्ये। श्राद्धविवेक of रुद्रधर p. 149. For देवीनां it is usual to put दानां.

brāhmaṇas are eating the dinner, the Rākṣoghna mantras and mantras addressed to Indra and propitiatory mantras may be recited but not the mantras addressed to pitṛs (viz. Rg. X. 15. 1-13); when he sees that the brāhmaṇas are satiated, he recites the five verses (Rg. IX. 11. 1-5) beginning with 'upāsmāi gāyatā naraḥ' (O men! sing for this soma) instead of the Madhumatī verses (viz. Rg. I. 90. 6-8) and at the end he makes the brāhmaṇas hear the mantra 'the pitṛs have partaken (of the food), they have regaled themselves'. The performer should ask 'I shall request the nāndīmukha pitṛs to utter benedictions' at the stage where (in Pārvaṇa) 'akṣayyodaka' is asked for, to which the brāhmaṇas respond with the words 'do request.' The performer employs the word 'sampaṇnam' (was it perfect) in asking about the gratification of the brāhmaṇas, who reply with the word 'susampaṇnam' (it was quite perfect). On the brāhmaṇas sipping water after their dinner, he coudungs the places where the dinner was taken, strews darbha grass thereon with their tips turned towards the east and offers thereon two piṇḍas for (each of the ancestors) made with the food that remains after the brāhmaṇas have eaten mixed with curds, jujube fruit and *prṣadājya* ¹¹⁷⁸ (mixture of curds and clarified butter). The piṇḍas are offered to the mātṛs, to the three paternal ancestors and the three maternal ancestors (viz. mother's father, mother's paternal grandfather and her paternal great-grandfather). Some do not offer piṇḍas in this śrāddha (as stated by Āśv. gr. parisiṣṭa II. 19). The Pitṛdayitā and Śrāddha-tattva (Jiv. p. 297) say that no mātṛśrāddha is to be performed in Ābhyudayikaśrāddha by the followers of the Sāmaveda. It is possible that the śrāddha for the mother, paternal grandmother and paternal great-grandmother was inspired by the Anvaṣṭakya śrāddha, as the sūtras from Āśv. gr. quoted below will indicate. ^{1178a}

The words Nāndīśrāddha and Vṛddhiśrāddha are synonymous. When Yāj I. 250 says ¹¹⁷⁹ that the Nāndīmukha pitṛs should be worshipped with piṇḍas when there is *vṛddhi* (a lucky or auspicious event), he indicates that Nāndīśrāddha and Vṛddhi-

1178. पृषदाज्य is defined in आश्व. गृ. IV. 1. 17 as 'दधन्यत्र सर्पिरानुसृज्य-
त्पिड्यं पृषदाज्यम्'.

1178 a. अपरेद्युरन्वष्टक्यम्।...पिण्डपितृयज्ञे कल्पेन। हुत्वा मधुमन्थवजं
दद्यात्। स्त्रीभ्यश्च सुरा चाचाममित्यधिकम्। आश्व. गृ. II. 5. 1, 3-5.

1179. एवं प्रदक्षिणावृत्को वृद्धौ नान्दीमुखान् पितॄन्। यजेत दधिकर्कशमिथान्
पिण्डान्यवैः क्रियाः॥ या. I. 250.



śrāddha mean the same thing. As noted by the Mit. on Yāj. I. 250 quoting Śātātapa this śrāddha is made of three parts, viz. mātṛ-śrāddha, pitrśrāddha and mātāmahaśrāddha.¹¹⁸⁰ On the other hand the Bhaviṣya-purāṇa I. 185. 15 states that there are two śrāddhas in this viz. Mātṛ-śrāddha and Nāndimukha-pitrśrāddha. Ābhyudayika-śrāddha and Vṛddhiśrāddha are treated as synonyms in some works such as the Padmapurāṇa,¹¹⁸¹ though it may be said that Ābhyudayika śrāddha is wider in import than Vṛddhiśrāddha, since it is also applicable to śrāddha performed on the commencement of a *pūrta* act.

The Viṣṇupurāṇa III. 13. 2-7, Mārkaṇḍeya 28. 4-7, Padmapurāṇa (srṣṭi 9. 194-199), Bhaviṣyapurāṇa I. 185. 5-13, the Viṣṇudharmottara I. 142. 13-18 describe briefly the procedure of Nāndīśrāddha and also the occasions on which it is to be performed. The occasions specified are¹¹⁸²: on the marriages of sons and daughters, on entering a new house, on naming a child, at the time of Cūḍākarma, at Sīmantonnayana, on the birth of a son, a householder should honour the group of pitṛs called Nāndī-mukha. The Mārkaṇḍeya-purāṇa 28. 6 notes that some desire that this śrāddha should not have Vaiśvadeva brāhmaṇas, but the Padmapurāṇa (srṣṭikhaṇḍa 9.195) says that in this Vṛddhiśrāddha the mothers are to be first honoured, then the fathers, then the mātāmahas and then the Viśve-devas. Hemādri (śr. p. 107) quotes two verses from the Brahmapurāṇa to the effect that the father, paternal grandfather and paternal great-grandfather are called *aśrumukha* pitṛs, while the three paternal ancestors beyond the great-grandfather are called Nāndī-mukha pitṛs.¹¹⁸³ The Kalpataru (on śrāddha p. 270) explains these verses as meaning no more than this that in case the three paternal ancestors of a man are living and there is a lucky event, then the devatās for Nāndīśrāddha in his case would be the three

1180. यद्यपि पितृन्यजेतेति सामान्येनोक्तं तथापि आर्द्धत्रयं क्रमश्च स्मृत्यन्तरादव-
गन्तव्यः। यथाह शातातपः। मातुः आर्द्धं तु पूर्वं स्यात्पितृणां तदनन्तरम्। ततो मातामहानां
च वृद्धौ आर्द्धत्रयं स्मृतम् ॥ मिता. on या. I. 250, कल्पतरु (आ.) p. 271.

1181. तृतीयमाभ्युदायिकं वृद्धिआर्द्धं तदुच्यते। पद्म (सृष्टिखण्ड 9. 194).

1182. कन्यापुत्रविवाहेषु प्रवेशे नववेश्मनि। नामकर्मणि बालानां चूडाकर्मादिके तथा।
सीमन्तोन्नयने चैव पुत्रादिमुखदर्शने। नान्दीमुखं पितृगणं पूजयेत् प्रयतो गृही। पितृपूजा-
विधिः प्रोक्तो वृद्धावेशे समासतः। विष्णुपुराण III. 13. 5-7, quoted by अपरार्क p. 515
(except the last half).

1183. पिता पितामहश्चैव तथैव प्रपितामहः। त्रयो ह्यश्रुमुखा होते पितरः संप्रकीर्तिताः॥
तेभ्यः पूर्वं त्रयो ये तु ते तु नान्दीमुखा इति॥ ब्रह्मपुराण q. by हेमाद्रि (आ. p. 107)
कल्पतरु (आ.) p. 270, मद्. पा. p. 633. नान्दी means समृद्धि acc. to ब्रह्मपुराण q. by
कल्पतरु (आ.) p. 268.

paternal ancestors beyond the great-grandfather. The Bhaviṣya-purāṇa notes that according to family usage some did not offer pīṇḍas in Vṛddhiśrāddha ^{1183a}.

The word 'mātarah' has two meanings. Gobhilasmṛti ¹¹⁸⁴ prescribes that at the beginning of all rites the Mātṛs together with Gaṇeśa have to be worshipped and it names fourteen mātṛs such as Gaurī, Padmā, Śacī (I. 11-12). ¹¹⁸⁵ In the Mārkaṇḍeya-purāṇa (88.11-20 and 38) they are said to be seven viz. Brahmānī and others. Vide H. of Dh. vol. II pp. 217-218 for the Mātṛs and their worship. ¹¹⁸⁶ Aparārka (p. 517) quotes verses to the effect that in Vṛddhiśrāddha one must offer worship to the seven mātṛs (Brahmānī and others), then to one's mother, paternal grandmother, and paternal great-grandmother, then to the Nāṇḍimukha pitṛs and then to the mātāmahas together with their wives. The Śrāddhaprakāśa (of Vīramitrodaya) quotes Vṛddha-Vasiṣṭha to the effect that in the Mātṛśrāddha (as part of Vṛddhiśrāddha) if a sufficient number of brāhmaṇas be not available then for the groups of mātṛs and of mātāmahis four women (for each group) whose husbands are living and who have a son or sons should be invited to dinner ^{1186a} and honoured.

The *Pratisāmvatsarika* or *Pratyābdika* śrāddha has already been described above at great length. It is to be performed every year on the day of death (Gobhilasmṛti III. 66). It is

1183a. पिण्डनिर्वपणं कुर्यान्न वा कुर्याद्विचक्षणः । वृद्धिश्चाद्धे महाबाहो कुलधर्मानवेक्ष्य तु ॥ भविष्यपुराण ; on this the पृथ्वीच० folio 167a remarks 'अतश्चाशौकरणादीनामपि निषेधः । तथा । अशौकरणमर्घं चावाहनं चावनेजनम् । पिण्डश्चाद्धे प्रकुर्वीत पिण्डहीने निर्वर्तते ॥'.

1184. कर्मादिषु तु सर्वेषु मातरः सगणाधिपाः । पूजनीयाः प्रयत्नेन पूजिताः पूजयन्ति ताः ॥ गोभिलस्मृति I. 13, q. by कल्पतरु (श्रा. p. 272).

1185. ब्रह्माण्याद्यास्तथा सप्त दुर्गाक्षेत्रगणाधिपान् । वृद्ध्यादौ पूजयित्वा तु पश्चात्तान्दी-
मुखान् पितॄन् ॥ मातृपूर्वान् पितॄन्पूज्य ततो मातामहानपि । मातामहीस्ततः केचिद्युग्मा भोज्या
द्विजातयः ॥ q. by अपरार्क p. 517.

1186. The worship of the mother Goddess or of mother Goddesses is one of the oldest and most widespread forms of religion. The mother Goddess appears in the civilizations of Mesopotamia and Syria, in prehistoric Europe and west Africa. Rude female figures, which represent idols of the mother Goddesses, have been discovered in the earliest deposits of prehistoric cultures. • Vide 'Mother Goddesses' by Mr. S. K. Dikshita

1186 a. मातृवर्गे मातामहीवर्गे वा ब्राह्मणालाभे पतिपुत्रान्विताश्चतस्रश्चतस्रः सुवासिनी भोजनीया इत्युक्तं वृद्धवसिष्ठेन । मातृश्चाद्धे तु विप्रणामलाभे पूजयेदपि । पतिपुत्रान्विता भव्या योषितोऽष्टौ मुदान्विताः ॥ श्राद्धप्रकाश p. 298.


laid down that in the case of one's parents this śrāddha partakes of the character of *pārvaṇa*.^{1186b} The Bhaviṣya-purāṇa and Skanda state that the Sāmvatsarika śrāddha is the most eminent among śrāddhas and that if a son does not perform the yearly śrāddha of his parents on the day of death he goes to the horrible Hell called Tāmisra and then is born as a pig in a town.¹¹⁸⁷ In connection with this, if the tithi or month of death or both are not known then Brhaspati, the Skandapurāṇa, Padma and Bhaviṣyapurāṇa lay down certain rules, viz.¹¹⁸⁸ (1) if the tithi is known but the month is not known, then the śrāddha should be performed on that tithi in the month of Mārgaśīrṣa or Māgha; (2) if the month is known but the tithi is not known, then the śrāddha should be performed on the amāvāsyā of the month; (3) if both the tithi and the month are not known, then one should take the tithi and the month when the deceased started from home; (4) if even the day and month of starting be not known, then the tithi and month in which a person hears of the death of a relative should be taken. It is to be noted that the month in pitrya rites is lunar and the words 'dina, ahaḥ, vāsara' in connection with pitrya rites mean 'tithi' (Aparārka p. 545). There is no *pratyābdika* śrāddha in an intercalary month (Skanda VII. 1. 206. 59).

A few words may now be said about some other śrāddhas.

A well-known śrāddha is the Mahālayaśrāddha. Some of the Purāṇas deal with this. The Padmapurāṇa (Sṛṣṭi-khaṇḍa) says 'In the fifth fortnight (*pakṣa*) beginning from the Full Moon day of Āṣāḍha, one should perform a śrāddha, whether the Sun is by that time in the zodiacal sign of Kanyā (Virgo) or not. The sixteen days when the Sun is in Kanyā are equal to the solemn sacrifices which are completed with the gift of the

1186 b. एतच्च मृताहर्षपार्वणं मातापित्रोरेव । तथा च हेमाद्रिधृतकात्यायनवचनं 'सपिण्डीकरणादूर्ध्वं पित्रोरेव हि पार्वणम् । पितृव्यभ्रातृमातृणामेकोद्विष्टं सदैव तु ॥ मातृपदं सपत्नीमातृपरम् ।' आहृतत्त्व p. 304.

1187. सर्वेषामेव आह्वानां श्रेष्ठं सांवत्सरं स्मृतम् । क्रियते यत्स्वगश्रेष्ठं मृतेऽहनि बुधैः सह ॥...स याति नरकं घोरं तामिस्रं नाम नामतः । ततो भवति दुष्टात्मा नगरे सूकरः स्वग ॥ भविष्य. I. 183. 20 and 25. The first occurs also in स्कन्दपुराण VII. 1. 205. 43.

1188. मृताहस्य यदा मासो न ज्ञायेत कथंचन । मार्गशीर्षेऽथवा माघे आह्वं तद्विषये स्मृतम् ॥ यदा तु वासराज्ञानं मासज्ञानमथैव च । अमायामेव तन्मासं आह्वं सांवत्सरं भाव्यम् ॥ पद्म (पातालखण्ड 101. 73-74). Vide भविष्यपुराण I. 183, 28-29, स्कन्द VII. 1. 205. 52 for similar rules. बृहस्पति q. by अपरार्क p. 545 has similar verses and 'दिनमासौ न विज्ञातौ मरणस्य यदा पुनः । प्रस्थानादिनमासौ तु ग्राह्यौ पूर्वोक्तया दिशा ॥'  Chandarkar Oriental Research Institute

best of dakṣiṇās. If it is not possible to perform the śrāddha in the dark half (when the Sun is in Kanyā), one may perform it when the Sun is in Tulā (Balance). When the Sun enters the sign of Scorpion (without a śrāddha being performed), the Fathers go away losing all hope and after pronouncing a terrible curse (on their descendants) they return to their abode.' 1189 The fifth fortnight from the Full Moon day of Āṣāḍha is the dark half of Bhādrapada. The dark half is the preserve of pitṛs. In Bhādrapada the Sun is in the middle of its apparent motion in dakṣiṇāyana. Therefore the dark half of Bhādrapada is specially chosen as the best period for śrāddha to the pitṛs i. e. for the Mahālaya. The śrāddha performed in Bhādrapada dark half is called Mahālaya-śrāddha, since that fortnight is the abode (ālaya) as it were of the maha (i. e. festival day) for pitṛs. The real idea is that the dark half of Bhādrapada is specially to be welcomed for a śrāddha when the Sun is in Kanyā during that fortnight and that even if the Sun is not in Kanyā the dark half of Bhādrapada is still a good time for a śrāddha to the pitṛs. The Skandapurāṇa 1190 also says 'In the fifth fortnight from the Full Moon of Āṣāḍha, when the Sun occupies the sign of Kanyā, the pitṛs of him who offers a śrāddha on the tithi of the death (of one's father) certainly derive gratification for one year thereafter.' The Kalpataru quotes the Bhaviṣya-purāṇa to the effect that if a man has not performed śrāddha in

1189. आषाढीमवधिं कृत्वा यस्तु पक्षस्तु पञ्चमः । तत्र आर्द्रं प्रकुर्वीत कन्यां गच्छतु वा न वा ॥ कन्यागते सवितरि यान्यहानि तु षोडश । क्रतुभिस्तानि तुल्यानि समाप्तवरदक्षिणैः ॥ ...अभावात् कृष्णपक्षादौ तुलायां कर्तुमर्हति ॥ अतो वृश्चिकमायाते निराशाः पितरो गताः । पुनः स्वभवनं यान्ति शपं दत्त्वा सुदारुणम् ॥ पञ्च (सृष्टिखण्ड 47. 225-228). The first verse आषाढी० occurs in अग्निपुराण 175.33 and is ascribed to जातूकर्ण्य by आ. क्रि. कौ. p. 283 and अपरार्क p. 423, which reads the third पाद as आर्द्रकालः स विज्ञेयः. The verse कन्यागते० is ascribed to the ब्रह्मपुराण by आ. क्रि. कौ. p. 285 (which reads तुल्यानि देवो नारायणोऽब्रवीत्) and to ब्रह्माण्डपुराण by अपरार्क p. 424 (which reads last पाद as तत्र दत्तं महाफलम्) and to श्लोकगौतम by आ. क. ल. p. 99. यान्यहानि तु षोडश—These words are explained in two ways: 'कदाचित् पक्ष-विद्वद्भौ षोडशदिनात्मकोऽपि नभस्यस्यापरः पक्षः आर्द्रकर्मणि कालो न तु पञ्चदशदिनात्मको वेति दर्शयितुमुक्तम् । यद्वा अमावास्याया अनन्तरभूतायाः प्रतिपत्तिथ्या अपि संग्रहणार्थं 'तिथि-षोडशकः' इत्युक्तम् । प्रतिपदोपि क्षीणचन्द्रत्वे सापरपक्षतुल्यत्वात् । स्मृतिच. (आ. p. 365). There is also a third way viz. including the preceding full moon day along with the 15 days of the dark half. प्रजापतिस्मृति verse 161 is very similar to the verse कन्यागते० and कल्पतरु (आ. p. 16) quotes it from ब्रह्माण्ड.

1190. आषाढ्याः पञ्चमे पक्षे कन्यासंस्थे दिवाकरे । मृताहनि पुनर्यो वै आर्द्रं दास्यन्ति मानवः ॥ तस्य संवत्सरं यावच्छताः स्युः पितरो ध्रुवम् । स्कन्द. VI. 216. 96-97, q. १५ आर्द्र-कल्पलता p. 98.



Mahālaya (i. e. in the dark fortnight of Bhādrapada when the Sun is in the sign of Kanyā) he should offer it on the 15th day (of the dark half of Āśvina) on which, it is well-known, lamps are lighted.¹¹⁹¹ The Śrāddha-sāra (p. 113) and the Smṛtimuktā-phala (on śrāddha p. 745) quote Vṛddha-manu to the effect that the latter half of Bhādrapada when the Sun is in Kanyā is called Mahālaya and also Gajacchāyā. Various views are held on the question of the exact day on which the Mahālayaśrāddha is to be performed, viz. it may be performed on any day from the first *tithi* of the dark half of Bhādrapada to the amāvāsyā or from the fifth of the dark half to the amāvāsyā of Bhādrapada or from the 8th or 10th of the dark half to amāvāsyā or from the 5th of the dark half of Bhādrapada to the 5th of the next fortnight or on any day on which the Sun is in Kanyā or on any day till the Sun enters Scorpion.¹¹⁹² Prajāpati states that there are numerous śrāddhas described by the Purāṇas, all of them yield rewards but the Mahālaya (śrāddha) is the most eminent among them.¹¹⁹³

The Mahālayaśrāddha is to be performed, as stated by the Mārkaṇḍeyapurāṇa, in accordance with the procedure of Pārvaṇaśrāddha.¹¹⁹⁴ The Smṛtyarthasāra states that if it is not possible to perform all śrāddhas (except sapīṇḍikaraṇa) according to the detailed procedure of Pārvaṇaśrāddha they should be performed by the procedure called 'Sankalpavidhi', which consists in performing the details laid down for Pārvaṇa as far as possible except the details of *āvāhana*, *arghya*, *homa* and *piṇḍadāna*.¹¹⁹⁵ The Madanapārijāta (pp. 609-610) also states that when a man has to perform a 'saṅkalpa-śrāddha' he need not go through the details of *arghyadāna*, *vikira* and there is no *āvāhana*, no *agnaukaraṇa* and no *piṇḍadāna* even, but he has simply to feed a brāhmaṇa or brāhmaṇas.

1191. येयं दीपान्विता राजन् ख्याता पञ्चदशी भुवि। तस्यां दद्यात्त चेद्भूतं पितॄणां तु महालये ॥ भविष्यपुराण q. by कल्पतरु (on आ. p. 17) and आ. क्रि. कौ. p. 291, स्मृतिमु. (आ. p. 747 ascribes to सुमन्तु).

1192. तदेवं कृत्स्नः पञ्चमः पक्षः पञ्चम्यादिदर्शान्तमष्टम्यादिदर्शान्त-दशम्यादिदर्शान्त-पञ्चमीदर्शयोः मध्ये अनिषिद्धमेकं वा दिनं महालयश्चाद्धकालः। स्मृतिमु. (आ. p. 747).

1193. आह्वान्यनेकशः सन्ति पुराणोक्तानि वै रुचे। फलप्रदानि सर्वाणि तेषामग्न्यो महालयः ॥ प्रजापति verse 37.

1194. कन्यागते सवितरि दिनानि दश पञ्च च। पार्वणेनैव विधिना तत्र आहुं विधीयते ॥ मार्कण्डेयपु. q. by स्मृतिमु. (आ. p. 745).

1195. सपिण्डीकरणवर्ज्यं सर्वश्राद्धेषु विस्तृतपार्वणविधिनासम्भवे सङ्कल्पविधिनैव कार्यम्। सङ्कल्पविधानं नामावाहनाद्यर्घ्यहोमपिण्डवर्जं पार्वणोक्तं यथासम्भवं भवति। स्मृत्यर्थसार



In the Mahālayaśrāddha the Viśvedevas are Dhuri and Locana. This śrāddha is performed for the benefit not only of the paternal and maternal ancestors with their wives, but also for other relatives and persons that are dead (together with their wives, sons and husbands if these be dead) viz. one's step-mother, one's wife, son, daughter, paternal uncle, maternal uncle, brother, paternal aunt and maternal aunt, sister, paternal uncle's son, son-in-law, sister's son, father-in-law, mother-in-law, ācārya, upādhyāya, *guru*, friend, pupil and any other relative.¹¹⁹⁶ Some perform only for the paternal ancestors with their wives and the maternal ancestors with their wives. The day on which the moon is in Bharanī nakṣatra in the dark half of Bhādrapada is called Mahābharanī and śrāddha performed on that day is said to be equal to Gayāśrāddha (Matsyapurāṇa q. by Śr. K. L. p. 99). The Mahālaya-śrāddha is to be performed on the 12th tithi of Bhādrapada dark half in the case of a sannyāsin and on no other tithi and his yearly śrāddha is to be performed by his son according to pārvana method as in the case of householders. The dvādaśī is sacred to Viṣṇu and *yatis* always repeat the words 'namo Nārāyaṇāya' and therefore the 12th is the special tithi for the mahālaya-śrāddha of *yatis*. The Mahālayaśrāddha is not to be performed in an intercalary month (*malamāsa*).

Two more śrāddhas that are performed even to this day may be mentioned here. One is called 'Mātāmahaśrāddha' or 'Dauhitra-pratipad-śrāddha'. A daughter's son whose parents are alive can alone perform a śrāddha for his maternal grand-father (together with the maternal grand-mother if she also be dead) on the first tithi of the bright half of Āśvina¹¹⁹⁷. A daughter's son can perform it even if his maternal grand-father has a son or sons living. It may be performed with or without piṇḍadāna (generally without it) and it may be performed even if the daughter's son has not been invested with the sacred thread. The Śrāddhasāra notes that the mātāmahaśrāddha is based only on the usage of śiṣṭas (p. 24).

Another is the 'Avidhavānavamiśrāddha', which is performed for one's mother or other women of the family who died while the husbands were alive. It is performed on the 9th of

1196. Vide धर्मसिन्धु II. p. 79 for the सङ्कल्प in महालयश्राद्ध.

1197. गर्भस्थोऽपि च दौहित्रो अश्वयुक्प्रतिपदिने । कुर्यान्मातामहश्राद्धं पितरौ यत्नं जीवतः ॥ प्रजापतिस्मृति verse 170.



the dark half of Bhādrapada. It ceases to be performed when the husband dies after the woman's death. The Nirpayasindhu notices several views about this and says that one should follow the usage of one's country ¹¹⁹⁸. According to the Mārkaṇḍeyapurāṇa in this śrāddha not only a brāhmaṇa but also a woman whose husband is alive is to be fed and presents of a girdle, a garland and bangles are to be made to her.

It will have been seen from the translation of Āśv. gr., Yāj. and the Padmapurāṇa that dakṣiṇā, according to one's ability, has to be given in each śrāddha towards the end of the rite. The Skandapurāṇa (VI. 218. 12-14) provides that whatever is wanting in mantras or the proper time or in procedure becomes perfect by dakṣiṇā. Śrāddha without dakṣiṇā is like rain on an arid place or like dancing in the dark or like singing before a deaf person, that he who desires the permanent gratification of himself and his Manes should not offer a śrāddha without dakṣiṇā. The Rāmāyaṇa shows how on the 12th day after the death of king Daśaratha gifts of jewels, of hundreds of cows, wealth, food in abundance and vehicles, of male and female slaves, of spacious houses were made to the brāhmaṇas. ¹¹⁹⁹ The Āśramavāsikaparva (14. 3-4) recounts the valuable gifts to brāhmaṇas in honour of Bhīṣma, Droṇa, Duryodhana and other fallen warriors, adding that persons of all varṇas were treated to profuse food and drink. The Vāyupurāṇa (chapter 80) propounds in great detail the rewards of various kinds of gifts made in śrāddhas. From considerations of space those descriptions are passed over here and only a brief eulogy of the gift of cooked food is given in the note below. ¹²⁰⁰ The Śāntiparva (chap. 42. 7)

1198. अत्र भर्तृमरणोत्तरं पूर्वमृतश्राद्धं न कार्यमिति केचिदाहुः पठन्ति च श्राद्धं नवम्यां कुर्यात्तन्मृते भर्तरि लुप्यते-इति तदेतन्निर्मूलत्वान्मूर्खप्रतारणमात्रम्। श्राद्धदीपकलिकायां ब्राह्मे-पितृमातृकुलोत्पन्ना याः काश्चिन्मृताः स्त्रियः। श्राद्धार्हा मातरो ज्ञेयाः श्राद्धं तत्र प्रदीयते॥ इति। अत्र देशाचाराद् व्यवस्था। निर्णयसिन्धु II. p. 154.

1199. ताते दशाहेऽतिगते कृतशौचो वृषात्मजः। द्वादशेऽहनि संप्राप्ते श्राद्धकर्माण्य कारयत्॥ ब्राह्मणेभ्यो ददौ रत्नं धनमञ्जं च पुष्कलम्। वास्तिकं बहुशुक्लं च गाश्चापि शतशस्तदा। दासीदासं च यानं च वेश्मानि सुमहान्ति च। ब्राह्मणेभ्यो ददौ पुत्रो राजस्तस्यौर्ध्वदेहिकम्। रामायण, अयोध्याकाण्ड 77. 1-3 (M. L. J. edition, 1933). ततोऽनन्तरमेवात्र सर्ववर्णा-न्महामते। अन्नपानरसौघेण स्नाययामास पार्थिवः॥ आश्रमवासिकपर्व 14. 12.

1200. अन्नदो लभते तिस्रः कन्याकोटीस्तथैव च। अन्नदानात्परं दानं विद्यते नेह किञ्चन। अन्नाद् भूतानि जायन्ते जीवन्ति च न संशयः॥ जीवदानात्परं दानं न किञ्चिदिह विद्यते। अन्नैर्जीवति त्रैलोक्यमन्नस्यैव हि तत्फलम्। अन्ने लोकाः प्रतिष्ठन्ति लोकदानस्य तत्फलम्। अन्नं प्रजापतिः साक्षात्तेन सर्वमिदं ततम्॥ वायुपुराण 80. 54-57.



states that while Yudhiṣṭhira performed the after-death ceremonies of the fallen heroes he erected *sabhās*, *prapās*, water reservoirs and the like intending them for each separately. Devala states: 'when the brāhmaṇas have sipped water after dinner, dakṣiṇā is to be given' and Brhaspati prescribes 'Dakṣiṇā should be given to all the brāhmaṇas according to the learning of them by means of (gifts of) cows, land, gold, clothes. He should do this in such a way that they feel satisfied; one who is well-off should do this specially.'¹²⁰¹ The Āśvamedhika-parva (62. 2-5) states that Vāsudeva offered śrāddha to his sister's son Abhimanyu and donated to sixty thousand brāhmaṇas, gold, cows, bed-steads, clothes and fed them. A special rule was provided by Brhaspati that the clothes, ornaments, bed-stead and the like, the horse and the like that were used by the father during his lifetime should be presented to the brāhmaṇa invited for śrāddha after honouring him with sandalwood paste and flowers.^{1201a} The Anuśāsana-parva (chapt. 96) states the origin of the practice of giving an umbrella and sandals on the completion of a śrāddha.

Something must be said about the gift of the bed-stead (*śayyā*) used by the deceased on the 11th or 12th day after death. The Garuḍapurāṇa (Pretakhaṇḍa 34. 69-89), Padma (srṣṭikhaṇḍa 10. 12), the Matsyapurāṇa highly eulogise the gift of śayyā to a brāhmaṇa and his wife. The Matsyapurāṇa states that on the 2nd day after the end of impurity on death the performer (of śrāddha) should donate a bed-stead possessing special characteristics; on it the golden image of the deceased should be placed and also fruits and clothes. After honouring a brāhmaṇa couple with many ornaments this should be done; then a bull should be let loose (for the benefit of the deceased) and the gift of a dark brown cow should also be made.¹²⁰² The Garuḍapurāṇa (Pretakhaṇḍa 34. 73-82) gives a more elaborate description which appears to be almost identical with the

1201. बृहस्पतिरपि । प्रदद्यादक्षिणां तेषां सर्वेषामनुरूपतः । गोभूहिरण्यवासोभिस्तुष्टिर्भुक्तवतां यथा । तथा भवति कर्तव्यं समर्थेन विशेषतः ।' q. by पृथ्वीच. folio 112b; यद्यद्विष्टतमं लोके यच्चास्य दयितं गृहे । तत्तद्गुणवते देयं तदेवाक्षयमिच्छता ॥ मार्कण्डेय 32.91, वामनपुराण 14. 106.

1201 a. वस्त्रालङ्कारशय्यादि पितुर्यद्वाहनादिकम् । गन्धमाल्यैः समभ्यर्च्य आद्रभोजने तदर्पयेत् ॥ बृहस्पति q. by व्य. म. p. 129, आ. क. ल. p. 213.

1202. सूतकान्बाह्व द्वितीयेऽह्नि शय्यां दद्याद्विलक्षणां । काञ्चनं पुरुषं तद्विष्णुवत्समन्विताम् । सम्पूज्य द्विजदाम्पत्यं नानाभरणभूषणैः । वृषोत्सर्गं च कुर्वीत देव्यं च कायलां शुभा ॥ मत्स्यपुराण 18. 12-14 q. by आ. क. ल. p. 213, आद्ररत्न p. 199.



verses of the Bhaviṣya quoted by Hemādri. The Bhaviṣya-purāṇa quoted by Hemādri (and from Hemādri by the Nirṇaya-sindhu p. 596) states the mantra to be recited viz. 'just as the bed-stead of Kṛṣṇa is never devoid of Lakṣmī, the daughter of the ocean, similarly my bed may not be empty in each birth that I may have to undergo.'¹²⁰³ Acceptance of the gift of a śayyā was looked down upon in former times and even now it is only the poor brāhmaṇas (that are not generally learned) that accept this gift. The Padmapurāṇa condemns the acceptance of the gift of śayyā in no measured terms. It says 'when a brāhmaṇa accepts the gift of a bed-stead, he should have to undergo the ceremony of upanayana again. In the Veda as well as in the Purāṇa (the gift of) a bed-stead is everywhere condemned and all those who accept the gift go to hell.'¹²⁰⁴

Certain other matters connected with śrāddhas may be briefly touched upon. In very ancient times twelve kinds of sons were recognized out of whom the kṣetraja,¹²⁰⁵ the putrikāputra and dattaka were most important. All these were the sons of two fathers. The question mooted was : to whom were they to offer piṇḍas ? The Madanapārijāta (pp. 607-608) quotes a passage from the Hārīta-dharmasūtra¹²⁰⁶ and explains it. Hārīta says : 'seed does not grow without a field. Since it is seen that both are necessary the child born is the child of both. Out of the two (fathers) the procreator is to be first invoked

1203. मन्त्रस्तु—यथा न कृष्णशयनं शून्यं सागरजातया । शय्या ममाप्यशून्यास्तु तथा जन्मानि जन्मानि ॥ यस्मादशून्यं शयनं केशवस्य शिवस्य च । शय्या...जन्मानि ॥ नि सि. III. p. 597. The गरुडपुराण (प्रेतखण्ड 34.81) has the verse यथा न etc

1204. गृहीतायां तु शय्यायां पुनः संस्कारमर्हति । वेदे चैव पुराणे च शय्या सर्वत्र गर्हिता ॥ ग्रहीतारस्तु जायन्ते सर्वे नरकगामिनः ॥ पद्म (सृष्टिखण्ड 10. 17-18).

1205. The kṣetraja son was procreated on the wife or widow of a sonless man by a *sagotra* (a brother or other agnate) or even an *asagotra* according to the rules of *niyoga*, the procreator being called *bījin* and the husband on whose wife or widow the son was begotten was called *kṣetrin*. The putrikāputra is of two kinds, (1) a sonless man gives his daughter in marriage to another with the stipulation that the son born of the marriage will be the son of the girl's father (Vas. 17. 17, Manu IX. 127); (2) A daughter herself may be made a son (Vas. 17. 16). A dattaka is a son whom his father or mother gives to another as a son confirming the gift with water (Manu IX, 168). Vide H. of Dh. vol. III. pp. 647-650 for detailed explanations about these and other secondary sons.

1206. तत्र हारीतः । नाक्षेत्रं बीजं रोहति । उभयदर्शनादुभयोरपत्यमिति । तेषामुभयोरपत्यं प्रथमः प्रवरो भवति । द्वौ द्वौ पिण्डौ निर्वपेत् । अथैकपिण्डे द्वावनुकीर्तयेत् । द्वितीये पौत्रो लेपिनश्च त्रीनन्वाचक्ष्ण आ सप्तमादित्येके । मद. पा. pp. 607-608 and कल्पतरु (on आ. pp. 241-242).

(and then the *kṣetrin*). He (the son) may offer two *piṇḍas* to each grade of the ancestors or he may offer a single *piṇḍa* (to the father and) may repeat the names of both (fathers) as to that single *piṇḍa*. The son (of the son of two fathers) may repeat two names as to the 2nd *piṇḍa* (i. e. the *piṇḍa* for paternal grand-father); the grand-son (of the son of two fathers) may do the same as to the third *piṇḍa* (viz. the *piṇḍa* for paternal great-grandfather).’ *Manu* IV. 140 and *Gobhila-smṛti* II. 105 say about the *putrikāputra*¹²⁰⁷ that he presents the first *piṇḍa* to his mother (as she was appointed as a son), the 2nd to her father and the third to his father’s father. This appears to be one order in which *piṇḍas* are to be offered by the *putrikāputra*, while *Manu* IX. 132 sets out another method since it says that a *putrikāputra* inherits the entire wealth of his own father if he is sonless and he gives two *piṇḍas* (i. e. performs two *śrāddhas*) for his own father and for his maternal grandfather. The *Sān. Śr. S.* provides¹²⁰⁸ that if there be two fathers, the son should recite the names of both (*bījin* and *kṣetrin*) with reference to the same *piṇḍa*. Even *Yāj.* says ‘The son procreated according to the rules of *niyoga* by a sonless man on the wife of another inherits the wealth of both and offers *piṇḍa* to both.’¹²⁰⁹ The *Mit.* adds that if a person appointed to procreate a son on another’s wife has a son, then the son so begotten becomes the son of the *kṣetrin* alone and not of the *bījin*. As the *kṣetrāja* and *putrikāputra* have become obsolete for several centuries the subject has only an academic interest now. But the *dattaka* is still in vogue and a few words must be said here about the persons to whom the *dattaka* offers *piṇḍas*. The *Kalpataru* quotes from the *Pravarādhyāya* a passage on this point which is as

1207. मातुः प्रथमतः पिण्डं निर्वपेत् पुत्रिकासुतः। द्वितीयं तु पितुस्तस्यास्तृतीयं तु पितुः पितुः॥ गोभिलस्मृति II. 105. कुलूक appears to be wrong in explaining पितुः पितुः in मनु IX. 140 as ‘तृतीयं मातुः पितामहाय दद्यात्।’. मनु IX. 132 is ‘दौहित्रो ह्यखिलं रिक्थमपुत्रस्य पितुर्हरेत्। स एव दद्याद् द्वौ पिण्डौ पित्रे मातामहाय च॥’. Here दौहित्र means पुत्रिकापुत्र.

1208. असावेतत्ते ये च त्वामत्रान्विति पिण्डान् यथावनेजितं निधायोभावेकस्मिन् पिण्डे पितृभेदे। शाङ्खायनश्रौ. सू. IV. 3. 10-11 q. by कल्पतरु p. 241 (on आ.) The आप. श्रौ. I. 9. 7 says ‘यदि द्विपिता स्यादेकैकस्मिन् पिण्डे द्वौ द्वावुपलक्षयेत्।’

1209. अपुत्रेण परक्षेत्रे नियोगोत्पादितः सुतः। उभयोरप्यसौ रिक्थी पिण्डदत्ता स धर्मतः॥ या. II. 127; यदा तु नियुक्तः पुत्रवान् केवलं क्षेत्रिणः पुत्रार्थं प्रयतते तदा तद्वत् क्षेत्रिण एव पुत्रो भवतीति न बीजिनः। स च न नियमेन बीजिनो रिक्थहारी पिण्डदो वा तद्वत्

follows: ¹²¹⁰ 'If these (i. e. those who are *bijin*) have no issue born of their own wives, (the sons begotten by *nijoga* or given in adoption) should inherit their wealth and offer *pinḍas* to them up to three ancestors; if both (the *bijin* and *kṣetrin* or the giver and taker in adoption) have no other son, then they (sons begotten or adopted) should offer *pinḍa* to both; in one and the same *śrāddha* they should repeat (the names of) the two ancestors respectively (of the acceptor and that of the begetter) after having separately intended the same *pinḍa* for both up to the third ancestor.' The Baud. Dh. S. ¹²¹¹ quotes a verse as follows 'The son of two fathers shall give the *pinḍa* (to his two fathers and pronounce) two names with each *pinḍa*; three *pinḍas* will thus serve for six persons (ancestors).' It would be seen from the passage quoted above from *Hārīta* that some authorities allowed two separate *pinḍas* for each degree of ancestors when there were two in the same degree. *Manu* IX. 142 lays down 'the son given should not take the *gotra* and wealth of his natural father; the *pinḍa* follows the *gotra* and wealth; the *svadhā* (obsequies) of him who gives (his son in adoption) cease or fail (so far as that son is concerned).' This verse has been so interpreted by some decisions of the High Courts and of the Privy Council as to mean that the son adopted becomes totally severed from the family of his birth. This subject has been discussed at great length in H. of Dh. vol. III pp. 690-697 and it is established there that the severance of the son given in adoption is only partial, that the *gotra* of the natural family persists even after adoption into another family for purposes of marriage and *āśauca* and that the *Nirṇayasindhu*, ¹²¹² the *Dharma-sindhu* and the *Dattaka-candrikā* declare that the son given away in adoption into another family can perform the *śrāddha* of his natural father,

1210. अथ यद्येषां स्वभार्यास्वपत्यं न स्याद्विकथं हरेयुः पिण्डं चैभ्यस्त्रिपुरुषं दद्यात् यद्युभयोर्न स्यादुभभ्यां दद्युरेकस्मिन्ब्राह्मे पृथगुद्दिश्यैकपिण्डे द्वावनुकीर्तयेत् प्रतिग्रहीतारं चोत्पादयितारं चा तृतीयात्पुरुषात् । q. by कल्पतरु (आ. p. 241) with variations. The same passage is cited as from कात्यायन by the vy. m. p. 115 (my edition), and from कात्यायन and लौगाक्षि (quoted in प्रवरमञ्जरी) by नि. सि. III. p. 389.

1211. अथाप्युदाहरन्ति । द्विपितुः पिण्डदानं स्यात् पिण्डे पिण्डे च नामनी । त्रयश्च पिण्डाः षण्णां स्युरेवं कुर्वन् मुह्यति ॥ इति । बौ. ध. सू. II. 2. 22-23.

1212. दत्तकस्तु जनकस्य पुत्राद्यभावे दद्यात् तत्सत्त्वे । गोत्ररिक्थे जनयितुर्न भवेत् दत्तमः सुतः । गोत्ररिक्थानुगः पिण्डो व्यपैति ददतः स्वधा ॥ इति मन्त्रेः । इदं जनकस्य पुत्रसत्त्वविषयम् । नि. सि. III. p. 389 ; दत्तकस्तु जनकपितुः पुत्राद्यभावे जनकपितुः कुर्याद् धनं च गृह्णीयात् । धर्मसिन्धु III. (उत्तरार्ध) p. 371.



if the latter has no son at the time of his death and can also take his wealth.

Vṛṣotsarga (the letting loose of a bull). This topic has been dealt with by several sūtra works such as the Śān. gr. III. 11, the Kauṣītaki gr. III. 11 (in Benaras S. S. and III. 6 in Madras University Series), Kāthaka gr. 59, 1 ff., Pāraskara gr. III. 9, Viṣṇu-dharmasūtra, chap. 86. 1-20. In numerous works some verses called *gāthās* sung by the pitṛs are set out one of which expresses the yearning of the pitṛs as follows: ¹²¹³ 'one should desire to have many sons; since if even one (of the sons) goes to Gayā (and offers śrāddha after his father's death) or if he performs a solemn horse sacrifice or lets loose a dark-coloured bull (the man having such a son will secure final release)'. The description in the Viṣṇudharmasūtra being tolerably full is set out here; ¹²¹⁴ "(This ceremony) takes place on the full moon day in Kārtika or Āśvina. In this rite he must first examine the bull. The bull must be the offspring of a milch cow having young ones living, he must have all auspicious

1213. एष्टव्या बहवः पुत्रा यद्येकोपि गयां व्रजेत् । यजेत वाश्वमेधेन नीलं वा वृषमु-
त्सृजेत् ॥ विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 85. 67, बृहस्पतिस्मृति verse 21, लघुशङ्ख 10, मत्स्यपुराण 22 6,
ब्रह्मपुराण 220. 32-33, वायुपुराण 83. 11-12, पद्म (सुष्टिखण्ड 11.68), ब्रह्माण्ड (उपोद्धात-
पाद 19.11), विष्णुधर्मोत्तर I. 146.58 and I. 144.3. The meaning is 'बहूनां पुत्राणां
मध्ये एकेनापि गयाश्राद्धकरणे पितृमुक्तिर्भवति,' as stated in स्कन्दपुराण, नागरखण्ड,
chap. 216. 114-117. The first half occurs in अनुशासनपर्व 88. 14 and the whole
verse in मत्स्य 207. 40 (which says it is an ancient *gāthā* and reads the third
pāda as 'गौरीं वाप्युद्धहेत्कन्यां'). Compare कूर्म II. 20. 30-31.

1214. अथ वृषोत्सर्गः । कार्तिक्यामाश्वयुज्यां वा । तत्रादिवेव वृषभं परीक्षेत । जीवद्वत्सायाः
पयस्विन्याः पुत्रम् । सर्वलक्षणोपेतम् । नीलम् । लोहितं वा । मुखपुच्छपादशृङ्गशुक्लम् । यूथस्या-
च्छादकम् । ततो गवां मध्ये सुसमिद्धमग्निं परिस्तीर्य पौष्णं चरुं पयसा श्रपयित्वा पूषा गा
अन्वेत न इह रतिरिति च हुत्वा वृषमयस्कारस्त्वङ्कयेत् । एकास्मिन् पार्श्वे चक्रेणापरस्मिन् पार्श्वे
शूलेन । अङ्कितं च हिरण्यवर्णा इति चतसृभिः शं नो देवीरिति च स्नापयेत् । स्नातमलङ्कृतं
स्नातालङ्कृताभिश्चतसृभिर्वत्सतरीभिः सार्धमानीय रुद्रान् पुरुषसूक्तं कृष्माण्डोश्च जपेत् । पितॄं
वत्सानामिति वृषभस्य दक्षिणे कर्णे पठेत् । इमं च । वृषो हि भगवान्धर्मश्चतुष्पादः प्रकीर्तितः ।
वृणोमि तमहं भक्त्या स मे रक्षतु सर्वतः ॥ एतं युवानं पतिं वो ददामि तेन क्रीडन्तीश्वरत प्रियेण ।
मा हास्महि प्रजया मा तनूभिर्मा रधाम द्विषते सोम राजन् । वृषं वत्सतरीयुक्तमैशान्यां कारये-
द्दिशि । होतुर्वस्त्रयुगं दद्यात्सुवर्णं कांस्यमेव च ॥ अयस्कारस्य दातव्यं वेतनं मनसोप्सितम् ।
भोजनं बहुसर्पिष्कं ब्राह्मणांश्चात्र भोजयेत् ॥ उत्सृष्टो वृषभो यस्मिन् पिबत्यथ जलाशये । जला-
शयं तत्सकलं पितृंस्तस्योपतिष्ठति ॥ शृङ्गेणोल्लिखेत धूमिं यत्र कचन दर्पितः । पितृणामिच्छानं
तत्प्रभूतमुपतिष्ठति ॥ विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 86. 1-20. The काठकगृह्य (59.3) reads 'इह रतिरिति
हुत्वा'. The commentator gives ten mantras here of which इह रतिरिति is the
2nd. The first half of एतं युवानं occurs in तै. सं. III. 3.9.1 (reads परि वो ददामि).
The whole verse occurs in a corrupt form in विष्णुधर्मोत्तर I. 147. 12 and the
verse वृषो हि is विष्णुधर्मोत्तर I. 147. 10.

marks (i. e. must not be deficient in any limb), must be dark-coloured ¹²¹⁵ or red but having a white mouth, white tail, white feet and white horns, he must be one that can protect the herd (or that throws into the background by his height all the herd). Then after having kindled a blazing fire among the cows (in the cowpen) and having strewn kuśa grass around it let him boil with milk a dish sacred to Pūṣan and offer (two oblations) with the mantra 'May Pūṣan follow our cows' (Rg. VI. 54.5) and the mantra 'here is pleasure' (Vāj. S. 8.51); a blacksmith should then mark the bull, on one flank with a discus and on the other flank ¹²¹⁶ with a trident. Let him wash the bull after he is marked with four mantras beginning with 'the golden-coloured' (Tai. S. V. 6.1. 1-2) and with the (five) mantras beginning with 'May the divine (waters) bring us happiness' (Rg. X. 9. 4-8). Having washed and decked the bull he should bring him together with four young cows which also should have been washed and decked and mutter the Rudras (Tai. S. IV. 5. 1-11), the Puruṣasūkta (Rg. 10. 90. 1-16) and the Kūṣmāṇḍis (Vāj. S. XX. 14-16, Tai. Ā. X. 3-5). Then let him recite in the right ear of the bull the mantra ¹²¹⁷ 'father of calves' and the following mantras 'The holy dharma ¹²¹⁸ is a bull and is declared to have four feet; I choose him with devotion (as the object of worship); may he protect me on all sides. This young bull I give you as husband (O young cows!), roam

1215. A नीलवृष is variously defined. The मत्स्यपु. 207.38 and विष्णुधर्मोत्तर I, 146.56 define 'चरणानि सुखं पुच्छं यस्य श्वेतानि गोपतेः। लाक्षारससवर्णश्च तं नीलमिति निर्दिशेत्'। In विष्णुधर्मोत्तर I. 146.42-55 and मत्स्य 207 the characteristics of auspicious and inauspicious bulls are given. The आ. क. ल. p. 214 quotes शौनक as 'लोहितो यस्तु वर्णेन सुखे पुच्छे च पाण्डुरः। श्वेतः खुरविषाणाभ्यां स नीलो वृष उच्यते'। This is ascribed to ब्रह्माण्डपुराण (रेवाखण्ड) by आ. प्र. and शु. प्र. p. 226.

1216. The विष्णुधर्मोत्तर says शूलं दक्षिणे पार्श्वे वामे चक्रेण निर्दहेत्। I. 147.6; while the भविष्योत्तर q. by शु. प्र. p. 227 says 'ततो वामे त्रिशूलं च दक्षिणे चक्रमालिखेत्'.

1217. The आश्वविवेक of रुद्रधर (p. 75) sets out the whole verse as 'पिता वत्सानां पतिरध्वयानामथो पिता महतां गर्गराणाम्। वत्सो जरायु प्रतिधुक् पीयूष आमिक्षा घृतं तद्वदस्य रेतः॥' It is a corrupt reading of तै. सं. III. 3. 9. 2 (which reads पातिरध्वयानां and आमिक्षा मस्तु घृतमस्य रेतः).

1218. The holy dharma.....four feet—This refers to the idea that Dharma, when in pristine glory in the कृतयुग, has four feet, but in each succeeding युग one foot is lost; vide मनु I. 81 (= शान्तिपर्व 232.37). Dr. Jolly is not right when he refers (in SBE vol. 7 p. 262) the words to नारद I. 11 (SBE vol. 30 p. 7) where व्यवहार is said to have four feet of which धर्म is one. Vide H. of Dh, vol. III. pp. 259-262 for explanation.

about sportingly with him as your lover. May we not lack progeny, O king Soma, nor physical fitness and may we not succumb to our enemy'. He must drive away the bull together with the young cows in the north-eastern direction and give a pair of garments, gold and a vessel of bell metal to the hotṛ (officiating priest). The blacksmith should be given wages as desired by him and food seasoned with a good deal of clarified butter should be served to (three) brāhmaṇas (at least). That ¹²¹⁹ pool at which a bull let loose (in honour of a deceased person by his son or the like) drinks water serves (reaches) the manes. Wherever a bull (let loose) exulting in his strength scratches (or digs up) the earth, that earth becoming abundant food and water waits upon the manes." ¹²²⁰ In the Anuśāsanaparva the pitṛs are represented as saying that by letting loose a dark-coloured bull, by offering water mixed with sesame and by lighting lamps in the rains a man becomes free from the debt he owes to the pitṛs (chap. 125. 73-74).

In the Garuḍapurāṇa it is stated that the deceased person for whom a bull is not let loose on the 11th day after death permanently remains a *preta*, even if hundreds of śrāddhas are offered for him. The same Purāṇa further provides that if a bull be not available on the 11th day, then the effigy of a bull made of darbhas and flour or clay should be symbolically let loose. ¹²²¹ In the Bhaviṣyapurāṇa the 12th day after death is prescribed for the letting loose of a bull (N. S. III. p. 505). The Nirṇayasindhu says that the making of an effigy of a bull with clay, darbhas and flour is without authority. Even at present people let loose a bull but owing to the rise in the prices of bulls this is becoming less frequent. Several medieval digests such as the Pitṛdayitā (pp. 84, 94), Śrāddhaviveka of Rudradhara (pp. 69-77), Nirṇayasindhu (III. pp. 595-596), Śuddhiprakāśa

1219. 'That pool' etc. The वायुपुराण (83. 45-48) contains verses of similar import, only two of which are quoted here 'वृषोत्सृष्टा पुनात्येव दशाति-तान्दशावरान् ... शुद्धैः सुरैर्वा यद् भूमिमुल्लिखत्यानिशं वृषः । मधुकुल्याः पितृन्तस्य अक्षयास्ता भवन्ति वै ॥' 45, 48.

1220. The वृषोत्सर्गविधि in विष्णुधर्मोत्तर (I. 147. 1-19) closely follows the विष्णुधर्मसूत्र.

1221. एकादशाहे प्रेतस्य यस्योत्सृज्येत नो वृषः । प्रेतत्वं सुस्थिरं तस्य दत्तैः श्रद्धातिरिच्य ॥ ... एकादशेऽह्नि संप्राप्ते वृषालाभो भवेद्यदि । दर्भैः पिष्टैस्तु संपाद्य तं वृषं मोचयेद्बुधः ॥ गरुडपुराण II. 5.40, 44-45. बृहस्पति q. by आ. क. ल. p. 214 and बृहन्निशान्त q. by शु. प्र. p. 225 have a verse very similar to the first and the 2nd is ascribed to संग्रह by the आ. क. ल.



he should himself bathe his body with (the water in) the jars with verses of Puruṣasūkta and with pañcagavya and pure water and eat in the evening food mixed with sesamum grains together with clarified butter. He should give dinner to brāhmaṇas for the gratification of the servants of Yama. On the 4th day he burns (the effigy) with mantras. He should offer water and piṇḍa with the words 'piṇḍa to me of such and such a gotra for benefit in the next world; *svadhā namah.*' With these words he should bring to a close the rite. He should observe impurity for ten days for himself, but his agnates have not to observe impurity for him. On the 11th day he performs ekoddiṣṭa. They also cite the following verse 'one who is in distress, a woman and a śūdra having burnt one's body (i. e. effigy) with mantras should perform all rites on that very day. This is the revelation.' In the case of women the rite is performed silently or with (?) Vedic mantras. In this way he should perform his own śrāddha every month for a year and at the end of each year up to twelve years. And then he should stop. When he is not able to do all these (himself) his son and the like may perform them. They also recite the following verse; 'Although heirs may be alive one may perform one's śrāddha while alive, having quickly set about doing everything according to the rules, except Sapiṇḍana. One should not make delay as to the time specified above, since life is evanescent'."

It may be noted that the Baud. grhyaśeṣasūtra III. 22 contains a very brief procedure of the same rite, but therein two verses of Kaṇva and one of Viṣṇu are quoted. It appears that this is a later addition. The text of Baud. grhyaśeṣasūtra III. 19 is quoted by Śr. Pr. pp. 361-363. But the Śrāddha-prakāśa also quotes a long passage from the Lingapurāṇa and explains it (pp. 363-368). The procedure in the Lingapurāṇa, however, materially differs from that of Baudhāyana. It is passed over here from considerations of space. The Śrāddha-mayūkha also gives an elaborate description. Some of its provisions are stated here. In Jivat-śrāddha the word *preta* should nowhere be used. An effigy of the person is made with fifty kuśas and is to be burnt by another with the mantra 'kravyādam-agnim' (Rg. X. 16. 9). The person has to kindle fire on the banks of a river with his face to the south with his grhya fire or ordinary fire and has to dig up a pit and make a prayer to the earth as in the case of an actual death.

In the Bombay University Library there is a Ms. of Jivat-śrāddha ascribed to Śaunaka in the Bhadkamkar Collection.



It contains a far more elaborate procedure than that of Baudhāyana and is in prose. It contains many of the provisions of Baudhāyana. Further details are passed over here.

The provision of a śrāddha for a living person offered by himself is a perversion of the ancient idea of śrāddha. The basic and fundamental conception of a śrāddha was to gratify the spirits of *deceased* ancestors. People had gone crazy with the idea of śrāddhas and invented this new mode to satisfy that craze. I have known persons that performed Jivat-śrāddha, though they had sons, younger brothers and nephews who would have certainly performed śrāddhas for them on their death.

It is customary to make a gift of a cow with a calf to a brāhmaṇa, preferably a kapilā cow, on the 2nd day after the period of āsauca. Often times this is the only cow given, and the cow called Vaitaraṇī referred to above (p. 183, note 427) is rarely donated in the midst of the sorrow and turmoil immediately on the death of a dear and near relative. A declaration is first made that a gift of a cow will be made and then water is poured on the hand of a brāhmaṇa. Then holding kuśas in his hand the donor makes a gift of the cow with a formula noted below ¹²²⁴. The donee replies with the words 'om svasti' (Yes, may it be well!). Then dakṣiṇā (in gold or silver coins) is given and the brāhmaṇa says 'om svasti', holds the tail of the cow and repeats a Kāmastuti (eulogy of Kāma) ¹²²⁵ according to the recension of the Veda he has studied. The Anuśāsana-parva (57. 28-29) eulogises the gift of a kapilā cow with the calf, given with a milking pail of bell-metal, whose horn tips are decked with gold, by stating that such a gift not only saves the donor in the other world but also his sons, grandsons and family for seven generations. The Anuśāsana-parva (77.10 ff) sets out a legend why the kapilā cow is the best of all cows.

The Purāṇas and digests devote a good deal of space to śrāddhas at tirthas and at Gayā. Vide Atri 55-58, Vāyupurāṇa 83. 16-42, Hemādri (on Śr.) pp. 1568 ff and 1575 ff. This subject will be briefly dealt with in the section on *tirthas*.

1224. ओम्। अद्याशौचान्ते द्वितीयेद्वि अमुकगोत्रस्य पितुरमुकप्रेतस्य स्वर्गप्राप्तिकामः
इमां कपिलां गां हेमवर्णीं रौप्यचुरां वस्त्रयुगच्छन्नां कांस्योपदोहां सुक्तालाङ्गुलभूषितां सत्रसां
रुद्रदेवत्याममुकगोत्रायामुकशर्मणे ब्राह्मणाय तुभ्यमहं संपददे। आद्विवेक of रुद्रपुर 77.

1225. For कामस्तुति, vide p. 184, n. 430 above.

Much is said on the question whether śrāddhas should be performed in the intercalary month. The intercalary month is called by various names, viz. Malimluca (Kāthaka Sam. 38. 14),¹²²⁶ Samsarpa or Amhasaspati (Vāj. S. 7.30 and 22.31), Mala-māsa, Adhimāsa. An intercalary month is known even to the R̥g-veda (R̥g. I. 25.8). The vendor of soma and the thirteenth month are condemned as *pāpa* (sinful) in the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa¹²²⁷. The Purāṇas tried to bolster up the intercalary month by calling it Puruṣottama-māsa (i. e. the month of Viṣṇu) but the original stigma attaching to the 13th month seems to have persisted. The general rule about an intercalary month is stated by the Gr̥hyaparīṣiṣṭa:¹²²⁸ 'the month called Malimluca is polluted and springs from sin; it is condemned for all acts; it should be discarded in all rites in honour of gods and pitṛs.' But exceptions to this sweeping prohibition have been recognized. Hārīta provides¹²²⁹ that all śrāddhas that come after Sapinḍana are not to be performed in an intercalary month. Vyāsa laid down¹²³⁰ that such ceremonies as jātakarma, annaprāśana, the navaśrāddhas, śrāddha on Maghā and the thirteenth *tithi*, the sixteen śrāddhas, bath, gifts, japa and śrāddha at the time of the eclipse of the sun or moon—these should be performed even in an intercalary month. The Smṛtimuktāphala concludes (p. 728) that there is no blemish in performing a śrāddha in an intercalary month provided it is to be performed before the end of one year from death. It is provided by Bhṛgu¹²³¹ that the sām̐vatsarika śrāddha of those who die in an intercalary month

1226. मलिम्लुचो नामासि त्रयोदशो मास इन्द्रस्य शर्मासि। काठकसं. 38. 10 (161-162); संसर्पस्य हस्पत्याय त्वेत्याहास्ति त्रयोदश मास इत्याहुस्तमेव तत् प्रीणाति। तै. सं. VI. 5. 3.4.

1227. तं (सोमं) त्रयोदशान्मासादकीर्णस्तस्मात्त्रयोदशो मासो नानुविद्यते न वै सोम-विक्रय्यनुविद्यते पापो हि सोमविक्रयी। ऐ. ब्रा. III. 1 (com. त्रयोदशमासो नानुविद्यते शुभ-कर्मानुकूलो नास्ति).

1228. मलिम्लुचस्तु मासो वै मलिनः पापसम्भवः। गर्हितः पितृदेवेभ्यः सर्वकर्मसु तं त्यजेत्। गृह्यपरिशिष्ट q. by आ. क्रि. कौ. p. 38.

1229. सपिण्डीकरणादूर्ध्वं यत्किञ्चिच्छ्राद्धिकं भवेत्। इष्टं वाप्यथवा पूर्तं तन्न कुर्यान्मलि-म्लुचे॥ हारीत. q. by स्मृतिच. (आ. p. 374), आ. क्रि. कौ. p. 323, आह्वतत्त्व p. 252 (as लघुहारीत).

1230. जातकर्मान्त्यकर्मणि नवश्राद्धं तथैव च। मघात्रयोदशीश्राद्धं श्राद्धान्यपि च षोडश। चन्द्रसूर्यग्रहे स्नानं श्राद्धं दानं तथा जपः। कार्याणि मलमासेऽपि नित्यं नैमित्तिकं तथा॥ व्यास q. by श्राद्धतत्त्व p. 283, स्मृतिच. (आ. p. 373 ascribes to यम).

1231. मलमासे मृतानां तु श्राद्धं यत्प्रतिवत्सरम्। मलमासेऽपि तत्कार्यं नान्यथा कथंचन॥ भृगु q. by स्मृतिच. (आ. p. 375). The नि. सि. III. p. 474 says 'मलमासे मृतानां तु यदा स एवाधिकः स्यात्तदा तत्रैव कार्यमन्यथा शुद्ध एव'.

may be performed in the intercalary month, but if there be none such then in the ordinary month of the same name. When the *tithi* for performing a śrāddha comes and there is then an intercalary month, Vṛddha-Vasiṣṭha says that śrāddha should be performed in both months.¹²³²

Further discussion about what may be done in *Malamāsa* and what is prohibited therein will be taken up in the section on *Kāla*. The question as to the day on which a śrāddha is to be performed if the *tithi* is spread over two days or if there is a *kṣaya* of the *tithi* will also be discussed in that section.

Some of the works on śrāddha such as the *Prthvī-candro-daya* deal with what is called 'saṅghāta-śrāddha.'^{1232a} When on the same day several persons die, but not at the same time, then the śrāddhas for them should be performed, as said by Rṣyaśṛṅga, in the order in which they died. But if five or six persons die at the same time on the same day (as when a vessel sinks in the sea or a market is burnt down all at once), then the order in which śrāddhas are to be performed is determined by the nearness of relationship to the performer of śrāddha in the case of each. For example, if a person's wife, son, brother and paternal uncle meet death at the same time, then the order should be this that the śrāddha of the wife is performed first, then of the son, then of the brother and then of the uncle. If the parents die at the same time by accident, then the father's cremation or other rites should be first performed and then of the mother.

Provision is made if the performance of a śrāddha is rendered impossible by some obstacle. Rṣyaśṛṅga provides¹²³³

1232. आर्द्धीयाहनि संप्राप्ते अधिमासो भवेद्यदि। मासद्वयेऽपि कुर्वीत आर्द्धमेवं न मुह्यति॥ वृद्धवसिष्ठ q. by स्मृतिच. (आ. p. 375), नि. सि. p. 13.

1232 a. तत्रैकस्मिन्नहनि क्रमेण मृतान्। मरणक्रमेणैकेन कर्त्रा आर्द्धं कर्तव्यम्। तदाह ऋष्यशृङ्गः। कृत्वा पूर्वमृतस्यादौ द्वितीयस्य ततः पुनः। तृतीयस्य ततः कुर्यात्संनिपाते त्वयं क्रमः।... भवेद्यदि सपिण्डानां युगपन्मरणं तदा। सम्बन्धासत्तिमालोच्य तत्क्रमाच्छ्राद्धमाचरेत्॥ पृथ्वीच. folio 265 a; जाबालिः। पित्रोस्तु मरणं चेत्स्यादेकदैव यदा तदा। पितृर्द्धादिकं कृत्वा पश्चान्मातुः समाचरेत्॥ *ibid* folio 266 a.

1233. देये पितॄणां आर्द्धे तु आशौचं जायते यदि। आशौचे तु व्यतिष्ठन्ते तेषां आर्द्धं प्रदीयते॥ एकोद्दिष्टे तु संप्राप्ते यदि विघ्नः प्रजायते। मासेऽन्यस्मिंस्तिथौ तस्यां आर्द्धं कुर्यात्प्रयत्नतः॥ ऋष्यशृङ्ग q. by अपरार्क p. 561, आ. क्रि. कौ. p. 480, मंद. पा. 618. स्कन्दपुराण VII. 1. 206. 70 is a very similar verse and the verse एकोद्दिष्टे स गुरुपुराण (प्रेतखण्ड 45.9).

'if impurity (on death) intervenes when a śrāddha is to be offered to the pitrs, śrāddha should be offered at the end of the period of impurity. If an obstacle arises at the time when an ekoddiṣṭa is to be performed, the śrāddha should be performed in another month on the same *tithi*'. This last refers to a monthly śrāddha. If any of the sixteen śrāddhas fails owing to an obstacle it should be performed on the amāvāsyā or better still on the 11th day of the dark half. If there is an obstacle owing to impurity on death in the performance of a monthly śrāddha or yearly śrāddha it should be performed at the end of the impurity or on amāvāsyā.¹²³⁴ The Padmapurāṇa (Pāṭalakhanda 101. 68-70) provides similar rules. If the obstacle is the performer's illness or his inability to collect materials or his wife being in her monthly illness, he may offer āmaśrāddha described above.

It may be noted that while great emphasis was laid on inviting a very learned brāhmaṇa at a śrāddha, that object was often frustrated in practice by the provisions made in certain smṛtis that one¹²³⁵ should not partake of śrāddha food for three years after sapindana (which is often one year after death) and that by dining at a śrāddha in the first year one eats the bones and marrow of the deceased, in the second year his flesh, in the third year his blood and śrāddha in the 4th year is (somewhat) pure. Vide Par. M. vol. II part 1 p. 423, where smṛti passages prescribing prāyaścittas for partaking of food at various śrāddhas including *sāmvatsarika* are set out. Hārīta says: one partaking of food at Navaśrāddha should undergo Cāndrāyana, the Prājāpatya for dining at a monthly śrāddha and fast for one day for dining at a *pratyābdika* śrāddha. This is on the same lines as acceptance of gifts. A donor collected merit by making gifts, but it was for the acceptor to decide whether he should accept gifts. The ideal

1234. मासिकाब्दे तु संप्राप्ते त्वन्तरा मृतसूतके। वदन्ति शुद्धौ तत्कार्यं दर्शे वापि विचक्षणाः॥ षट्त्रिंशन्मत q. by अपरार्क p. 561; मासिकाभ्युदकुम्भानि आद्यानि प्रसवेषु च। प्रति-संवत्सरं आर्द्धं सूतकानन्तरं विदुः।...एकादश्यां कृष्णपक्षे कर्तव्यं शुभमिच्छता। तत्र व्यतिक्रमे हेतावमायां क्रियते तु तत्॥ पद्म० (पातालखण्ड 101. 68 and 71).

1235. अथ शुद्धआर्द्धं दिवोदासीये। सपिण्डीकरणादूर्ध्वं यावदब्दत्रयं भवेत्। तत्तद्वि-न भोक्तव्यं क्षयेऽहानि कदाचन॥...प्रथमेऽर्थीनि मज्जा च द्वितीये मांसभक्षणम्। तृतीये रुधिरं प्रोक्तं आर्द्धं शुद्धं चतुर्थकमिति आर्द्धकारिकोक्तेः। नि. सि. III p. 475; चान्द्रायणं नव-आर्द्धे प्राजापत्यं तु मिश्रके। एकाहं तु पुराणेषु प्रायश्चित्तं विधीयते॥ हारीत q. in परा. मा. 1. p. 423; see आर्द्धविवेक of रुद्रधर p. 113, आ. क्रि. कौ. p. 345 for similar rules from other स्मृतिस; पद्म V. 10. 19 says 'नवआर्द्धे न भोक्तव्यं भुक्त्वा चान्द्रायणं'.



placed before brāhmaṇas was that one, though entitled to accept gifts on account of his vedic learning and *tapas*, should not accept gifts, if he desires to secure the highest world (Yāj. I. 213), while Manu IV. 186 affirms ¹²³⁶ that though entitled to accept gifts a brāhmaṇa should not again and again resort to that method, since the spiritual power that he acquires by Vedic study is lost by accepting gifts. Manu IV. 85-86 (= Padma V. 19. 236-237) say that acceptance of a gift from the king is terrible (in its consequences) and Padma warns that gift appears sweet like honey but is like poison (i. e. deadly in its effects). This reasoning applied with greater force to officiating and dining at a śrāddha, where not only gifts are to be received, but also sumptuous food that will please the palate is served in abundance.

It has been seen above how the most ancient literary monument, viz. the Rgveda, shows that the funeral rites performed immediately after death were prompted by affectionate concern for the departed spirit mingled with some element of fear, that the object of those rites was to provide sustenance to the departed spirit and to endow it with an intermediate body before it became one of the pitrs. It has also been found that in the most ancient times of which we have literary evidence, there were rites for the worship of ancestors, being the Pinda-pitṛyajña performed every month on amāvāsyā, the Mahāpitṛyajña performed in the Śākamedha and the Aṣṭakā śrāddhas. Gradually the rites for deceased ancestors became more and more frequent, all-inclusive and elaborate, so that ultimately an exaggerated importance came to be attached to the cult of śrāddhas over which there was an enormous expenditure of time, effort and wealth. The question now arises what Indians of the 20th century should do about śrāddhas. One finds that in these days when many brāhmaṇas even do not engage in any of the five daily obligatory yajñas (the pañca-yajñas), they are solicitous to offer śrāddha at least once a year to their ancestors. The following may be therefore suggested as a *via media* for all kinds of people. Those who have faith in the duty of performing śrāddhas and their efficacy for the benefit of

1236. प्रतिग्रहसमर्थोऽपि प्रसङ्गं तत्र वर्जयेत् । प्रतिग्रहेण ह्यस्याशु ब्राह्मं तेन पश्याम्यसि ॥
मनु IV. 186; vide पद्म. IV. 19. 268 for a similar verse. राजन् भवग्रही धीरो
मध्वास्वादो विषोपमः । तद् ज्ञायमानः कस्मात्त्वं कुरुषेऽस्मत्प्रलोभनम् ॥ दशरूपसमर्थोऽपि...
तेन तुल्यस्ततो राजा धीरस्तस्य प्रतिग्रहः ॥ पद्म V. 19. 235.



the dead may perform them on a small scale, bearing in mind the emphatic admonition of Manu (III. 125-126), the Kūrmapurāṇa II. 22. 27, Padmapurāṇa V. 9. 98¹²³⁷ that one should desist from extravagance in the matter of śrāddhas, particularly in the number of brāhmaṇas to be invited. Those whose faith is shaken or shattered by the onrush of modern ideas and English education or firm belief in the doctrines of *karma* and *punarjanma* should also remember one thing. The main underlying conception of śrāddha is certainly admirable, viz. a tender and affectionate regard for one's near and dear relatives. It is a good practice to set apart at least one day in a year for the remembrance of one's near and dear relatives that are no more, to invite relatives, friends, and learned people to a dinner in memory of the dead and to bestow monetary gifts on poor but learned persons of character and devoted to the practice of plain living and high thinking. This will be in keeping with our past traditions and will also give a new orientation to and infuse new life into practices and usages that have become lifeless and meaningless to many people. From very ancient times one of the fundamental conceptions of our faith has been the idea of three debts owed to sages, gods and *pitrs*. The debt owed to the ancestors is paid off by the procreation of a son who would offer *pindas* to his (and therefore also to his father's) ancestors. This is a grand conception. Nothing can be more sublime than the formula which one has to repeat at the time of offering *pindas* and water (with sesame) at Gayā 'may those of my ancestors that are in the form of *pretas* be all satiated by means of the (balls made) of barley flour mixed with sesame and may everything, whether moving or immoveable from Brahmā up to blades of grass derive satisfaction from the water offered by me.' If the implication of this formula be thoroughly understood and

1237. द्वौ देवे पितृकृत्ये त्रीनेकैकमुभयत्र वा । भोजयेद्दीश्वरोपीह न कुर्याद्विस्तरं बुधः ॥ पद्म V. 9. 98. जायमानो ह वै ब्राह्मणस्त्रिभिर्ऋणवा जायते ब्रह्मन्वर्येण ऋषिभ्यो यज्ञेन देवेभ्यः प्रजया पितृभ्य एष वा अनृणो यः पुत्री यज्वा ब्रह्मचारिवासी । तै. सं. VI. 3. 10.5 ; ऋणमस्मिन् संनयत्यमृतत्वं च गच्छति । पिता पुत्रस्य जातस्य पश्येच्चैजीवतो मुखम् ॥ ऐ. बा. 33.1. This subject has been dealt with already in H. of Dh. vol III. pp. 414-416 and may be further dilated upon under Gayāśrāddha. ये केचित्प्रेतरूपेण वृक्षे पितरो मम । ते सर्वे वृक्षिमायान्तु सक्तुभिस्तिलमिश्रितैः ॥ आब्रह्मस्तम्भपर्यन्तं यत्किञ्चित्सचराचरम् मया दत्तेन तोयेन वृक्षिमायान्तु सर्वशः ॥ वायुपुराण 110. 63-64. Compare also a similar invocation in वायु. 110. 21-22 and the Mettasutta in the Suttanipāṭa.

implemented by actual practice, it will make the whole world kin. Therefore, while discarding the heavy accretions accumulated through ages, we Hindus of these days must see to it that we do not throw overboard the gold that lies buried under the crust of ritual and ill-understood ceremonies.*

* In passing I may mention that my friend Mr. N. G. Chapekar, B. A., LL. B., retired First Class Subordinate Judge residing at Badlapur in the Thana District, has been celebrating the yearly śrāddha of his mother in the manner indicated above for about twenty-five years.



SECTION IV

CHAPTER XI

TĪRTHAYĀTRĀ (pilgrimages to holy places)

All religions have laid great emphasis on the sacredness of certain localities and have either enjoined or recommended with great insistence pilgrimages to them. Among the five incumbent practical religious duties¹²³⁷ of a Moslem, pilgrimage at least once in his life to Mecca and Medina, the birth place and burial place of the prophet Mohammad, is one. The four places of pilgrimage for Buddhists have been the place of the birth of Buddha (Lumbinī or Rummindei), the place where he attained perfect enlightenment (Bodh Gayā), the place where he set in motion the wheel of *dharma* by delivering his first sermon (at Sārnāth near Benares) and the place where he passed away into the state of *nirvāṇa* (Kusīnārā). Vide Mahāparinibbānasutta (S. B. E. vol. XI. p. 90). For Christians Jerusalem has been the holiest place and no religious community except the Christians undertook in historic times several great military pilgrimages. The crusades were launched to free the Holy Land of Christians from the domination of Moslems. In spite of what Gibbon says¹²³⁸ somewhat cynically about those who joined the crusades, it must be admitted that there were thousands among the crusaders who risked their lives and fortunes in the pursuit of an ideal. In India holy places have played a very important part. Large rivers, mountains and forests have always been venerated as sacred¹²³⁹

1237. Vide S. B. E. vol. VI, Introduction LXXI, for the five duties. The pilgrimage is called *Hāj* and the Moslem who performs it is entitled to be called *Hāji*.

1238. Gibbon remarks 'At the voice of their pastor, the robber, the incendiary, the homicide arose by thousands to redeem their souls by repeating on the infidels the same deeds which they had exercised against their christian brethren and the terms of atonement were eagerly embraced by offenders of every rank and denomination.' Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire, vol. VII (ed. of 1862) p. 188.

1239. Tagore in his 'Sādhanā' (p. 9) remarks 'India chose her places of pilgrimage wherever there was in nature some special grandeur of

(Continued on the next page)



Bhandarkar Oriental
Research Institute

and as the abodes of gods. In ancient and medieval India pilgrimages brought many advantages to the community as well as to the pilgrims themselves. Though India was divided into many kingdoms and the people of India followed several cults and sub-cults, pilgrimages tended to foster the idea of the essential and fundamental unity of Indian culture and of India also. Benares and Rāmeśvara were held sacred by all Hindus, whether they hailed from the north of India or from the peninsula. Though the Hindu community was broken up into numerous castes and suffered from caste exclusiveness, pilgrimages tended to level up all men by bringing them together to the same holy rivers or shrines. The traditions associated with holy places, the discipline through which the pilgrims passed, association with holy and philosophic men and the whole atmosphere and environment at *tīrthas* made it easy for pilgrims to remain at a high spiritual level and inculcated in them a mood of reverence that lasted long even after they returned from the pilgrimage. Pilgrimages supplied the much needed stimulus to draw ordinary men away from selfish pursuits and to make them think of the higher and more enduring moral and spiritual values. These obvious benefits and the belief that a holy place was the abode of some divinity led ancient dharmaśāstra writers to lay emphasis on visits to *tīrthas*. The Viṣṇu Dh. S. provides ¹²⁴⁰ that the *dharma* common to all men comprises the following: forbearance, truthfulness, restraint of the mind, cleanliness, charity, control of the senses, *ahimsā*, obedience to elders, *visiting holy places*, compassion, straightforwardness,

(Continued from the last page)

beauty so that her mind could come out of its world of narrow necessities and realize its place in the Infinite. This was the reason why in India a whole people who once were meat-eaters gave up taking animal food to cultivate the sentiment of universal sympathy for life, an event unique in the history of mankind.' There is a fundamental difference in the outlook of modern Westerners and that of ancient and medieval Indians (which persists to a large extent even now). If there is a beauty spot anywhere most men in the West would think of building a hotel there for tourists, while ancient and medieval Indians would have thought of erecting a shrine there.

1240. क्षमा सत्यं दमः शौचं दानमिन्द्रियसंयमः । अहिंसा गुरुश्रुत्वा तीर्थयात्रायां
दया । आर्जवं लोभशून्यत्वं देवब्राह्मणपूजनम् । अनभ्यसूया च तथा धर्मः सामान्यः ।
विष्णुधर्मसूत्र II 16-17. Vide विष्णुधर्मोत्तर II. 80. 1-4 for a list of सामान्यधर्मः
such as अहिंसा, सत्यवचन, तीर्थयात्रा and H. of Dh. vol. II. p. 11 notes 28-30
for quotations about सामान्यधर्मः from शान्तिपर्व, वामनपुराण, ब्रह्मपुराण and other
sources.

freedom from avarice, honouring gods and brāhmaṇas and freedom from jealousy. Modern men whose faith in some of the aspects of the religious beliefs of our forefathers has been weakened or altogether sapped by the sight of the professional ministrants at the tīrthas and their rapacity and ignorance should not judge the ancient attitude towards tīrthas harshly.

The word tīrtha occurs frequently in the Rgveda and other Vedic saṁhitās. In several passages of the Rgveda tīrtha appears to mean a road or a way (e. g. in Rg. I. 169. 6 'tīrthe nāryaḥ paumsyāni tasthuḥ', Rg. I. 173. 11 'tīrthe nācchā tāṛṣāṇam-oko', Rg. IV. 29. 3 'karan-na Indraḥ sutīrthābhayam ca.' In some places tīrtha may be taken to mean a ford in a river, as in Rg. VIII. 47. 11 'sutīrtham-arvato yathānu no neṣathā sugam &c.', Rg. I. 46. 8 'aritrām vām divas-pr̥thu tīrthe sindhūnām rathaḥ'. In Rg. X. 31. 3 'tīrthe na dasmam-upa yantyūmāḥ', tīrtha probably means 'a holy place'. On Rg. VIII. 19. 37 'Suvāstvā adhi tugvani' the Nirukta IV. 15 explains that Suvāstu is a river and *tugvan* means 'tīrtha' (either a ford or a holy spot). In the Tai. S. VI. 1. 1. 1-2¹²⁴¹ it is said that the sacrificer is to bathe at a tīrtha (probably a holy river). The Rudras are said to prowl about tīrthas (ye tīrthāni pracaranto śṛkāvanto niṣaṅgiṇaḥ) in Tai. S. IV. 5. 11. 1-2 and Vāj. S. 16. 61 (reads 'śṛkāhastā'). In the Śāṅkhāyana Br.¹²⁴² it is said that Day and Night are the sea that absorbs everything and the twilights are the unfathomable tīrthas (of the sea). Tīrtha also means the way between the 'utkara' and 'cātvāla' pit for going to or coming from the sacrificial ground (the *viḥāra*).^{1242a} Vide H. of Dh vol. II. p. 984.

It is said that, just as some parts of the human body (e. g. the right hand or ear) are held to be purer (than others), so some localities on the earth are held to be very holy. Tīrthas are held to be holy (on three grounds, viz.) on account of some wonderful natural characteristic of the locality or on account of the peculiar strikingness (or grandeur) of some watery place or on account of the fact that some (holy) sages resorted to

1241. अप्सु स्नाति साक्षादेव दीक्षातपसी अवरुन्धे तीर्थे स्नाति। ते. सं. VI. 1.1.1-2
Vide जैमिनि III. 4. 14-16 for a discussion on the purpose of this passage.

1242. समुद्रो वा एष सर्वहरो यदहोरात्रे तस्य हैते अगाधे तीर्थे यत्सन्ध्ये
अगाधाभ्यां तीर्थाभ्यां समुद्रमतीयात्तादृक् तत्। शां. ब्रा. II. 9.

1242 a. ते अन्तरेण चात्वालोत्करा उपनिष्क्रामन्ति तद्धि यज्ञस्य तीर्थमाप्तानं नाम
शां. ब्रा. 18.9.



them (for bathing, austerities &c.). Tirtha, therefore, means a locality or spot or expanse of water which gives rise to the accumulation of righteousness (merit) owing to its own peculiar nature without any adventitious circumstance (such as the presence of Śālagrāma near it).¹²⁴³ Or it is better to say that those localities that have been technically spoken of by wise and great sages as tirthas are tirthas, just as Pāṇini employs such technical terms as Nadi and Vṛddhi in his grammar. The Skandapurāṇa¹²⁴⁴ says that a spot of the earth resorted to by ancient good men for the collection of merit is called tirtha and that the main thing is to go to (i. e. associate with holy) men and pilgrimage is only a secondary object. ✓

In the Rgveda waters, rivers in general and certain named rivers¹²⁴⁵ are referred to with great reverence as holy and are deified. In Rg. VII. 49 the refrain of all four verses is 'may the divine waters protect me' (tā āpo devīr-iha māmavantu). In Rg. VII. 49. 1 waters are spoken of as purifying (punānāḥ). Rg. VII. 47, X. 9, X. 30¹²⁴⁶ are hymns addressed to waters as divinities. They are said to purify a man not only physically but are also invoked to rid a man of all sins and lapses from the right path. The Tai. S. II. 6. 8. 3 asserts that all deities are centred in waters (āpo vai sarvā devatāḥ). In the Atharvaveda¹²⁴⁷ (I. 33.1) waters are described as holy and purifying and are invoked to confer happiness. About twenty rivers in all

1243. यथा शरीरस्योद्देशः केचिन्मेध्यतमाः स्मृताः । तथा पृथिव्या उद्देशः केचित् पुण्यतमाः स्मृताः॥ प्रभावादद्भुताद्भूमेः सलिलस्य च तेजसा । परिग्रहान्मुनीनां च तीर्थानां पुण्यता स्मृता॥ पद्मपुराण (उत्तरखण्ड) 237.25-27, स्कन्द, काशीखण्ड 6. 43-44, नारदीय-पुराण II. 62. 46-47. These verses are quoted by कल्पतरु on तीर्थ pp. 7-8 (ascribes them to महाभारत) and by तीर्थप्र. p. 10. Similar verses occur in अनु-शासनपर्व 108. 16-18 'शरीरस्य यथोद्देशः शुचयः परिकीर्तिताः । तथा पृथिव्या भागाश्च पुण्यानि सलिलानि च ।...परिग्रहाच्च साधूनां पृथिव्याश्चैव तेजसा । अतीव पुण्यभागास्ते सलिलस्य च तेजसा ॥'.

1244. मुख्या पुरुषयात्रा हि तीर्थयात्रानुषङ्गतः । सद्भिः समाश्रितो भूप भूमिभागस्तथो-च्यते॥ स्कन्द I. 2. 13.10; यद्भिः पूर्वतमैः सद्भिः सेवितं धर्मसिद्धये । तद्भिः पुण्यतमं लोके सन्तस्तीर्थं प्रचक्षते॥ स्कन्दपुराण q. by पृथ्वीच० folio 135 b.

1245. Vide H. of Dh. vol. II. p. 12 for the rivers mentioned in the Rg.

1246. इदमापः प्रवहत यत्किं च दुरितं मायि । यद्वाहमभिदुद्रोह यद्वा शेष उवाच तमः ॥ ऋ. X. 9.8.

1247. हिरण्यवर्णाः शुचयः पावका यासु जातः सविता यास्वाग्निः । या अग्निं गर्भं दधति सुवर्णास्ता न आपः शं स्योना भवन्तु॥ अथर्व० I. 33. 1.



are invoked in Rg. V. 53. 9, X. 64. 9, and X. 75. 5-6.¹²⁴⁸ In Rg. X. 104. 8 Indra is said to have secured for gods and men ninety-nine flowing rivers. Vide also Rg. I. 32. 14 for 99 rivers. Rg. X. 64. 8 speaks of rivers that are thrice seven and the next verse mentions the three great rivers, viz. Sarasvatī, Sarayu and Sindhu, as divine and as mothers. Sāyana remarks that these three are the principal rivers of three groups of seven rivers each. Seven Sindhus are mentioned in many verses of the Rgveda (e. g. I. 32. 12, I. 34. 8, I. 35. 8, II. 12. 12, IV. 28. 1, VIII. 24. 27, X. 43. 3) and the Atharvaveda (VI. 2. 1 'apām napāt sindhavaḥ sapta pātana). The river Sarasvatī has three hymns devoted to it as a deity in the Rg. (viz. VI. 61, VII. 95 and 96) and it is addressed in many detached verses also. Rg. VII. 95. 2 says that the pure Sarasvatī, flowing from the mountains up to the sea, alone among rivers, knew the prayer of Nāhuṣa and granted it. A king and smaller people are said to dwell on the banks of the Sarasvatī (Rg. VIII. 21. 18)¹²⁴⁹. The impetuous and roaring

1248. इमं मे गङ्गे यमुने सरस्वति शुतुद्रि स्तोमं सचता परुष्ण्या। असिकन्या मरुद्वृषे
वितस्तयाऽऽर्जकीये वृणुह्या सुषोमया॥ तुष्टामया प्रथमं यातवे सज्जः सुसर्त्वा रसया श्वेत्या त्या।
त्वं सिन्धो कुभया गोमतीं क्रुमुं मेहन्वा सरथं याभिरीयसे॥ ऋ. X. 75. 5-6.

1249. Vide Journal of the Department of Letters, Calcutta University, vol. XV. pp. 1-63, where an attempt is made to show that Sarasvatī was really the Indus. But this is far from acceptable. Sarasvatī, Sarayu and Sindhu are mentioned in Rg. X. 64. 9 as the chief rivers of three groups. Prof. Ksetreschandra Chattopadhyaya refers to the conflict of views among scholars, admits (on p. 22) that, in the 10th Maṇḍala of the Rgveda, Sarasvatī cannot be identified with the Indus, that in Rg. III. 23. 4 Sarasvatī cannot be held to be the Indus and asserts that in Maṇḍalas VI and VII of the Rg. Sarasvatī is really the Indus, while in Maṇḍala X it is not so. The whole argument is vitiated by several unwarranted assumptions. He takes the modern conditions of Sarsuti as existing in the early Vedic period. What reasons are there against holding that the Sarasvatī was in very ancient times a mighty river like the modern Indus and that owing to volcanic eruptions or earthquake upheavals and convulsions in the dim past the Sarasvatī lost its mighty character? Further how many centuries does he postulate as having intervened between the composition of the 6th and 7th Maṇḍalas and Rg. III. 23. 4 and Rg. X. 75. 5? [I for my part find no difficulty in holding that in Rgvedic times there were two mighty rivers, the Sindhu (Indus) and the Sarasvatī.] I cannot enter into this question in greater detail here. Even in the Purāṇas the Sarasvatī is described as springing from a Plakṣa tree, as flowing through Kurukṣetra, as rending asunder thousands of hillocks and as entering the Dvaita forest. Vide Vāmana-purāṇa chap. 32. 1-4 'सैषा शैलसहस्राणि विदार्य च महानदी। प्रविष्टा पुण्यतोयं वनं द्वैतमिति श्रुतम्॥'

flood of the Sarasvatī impinging by its powerful waves against the tops of hills is referred to in Rg. VI. 61. 2 and 8¹²⁵⁰. In VII. 96. 1, Sarasvatī is spoken of as *asuryā* (of divine origin) among rivers. Sacrifices are said to have been performed on the Dr̥ṣadvatī, the Āpayā and Sarasvatī (Rg. III. 23. 4). In Rg. II. 41. 16 Sarasvatī is called the best of rivers and goddesses (ambitame naditame devitame Sarasvatī). Rg. I. 3. 11-12 praise¹²⁵¹ Sarasvatī as a river and a deity, as a purifier (*pāvaka*), as the impeller of sweet but truthful words and the inspirer of good thoughts and as bringing to notice its great flood of waters. From Rg. VII. 95. 2, VII. 49. 2 and I. 71. 7 it is obvious that the Rgvedic sages knew that the seven rivers fell into the sea. It would be proper to hold that the seven rivers are Sindhu (Indus), the five rivers of the Panjab and the Sarasvatī. [Though from the Rgveda passages cited above it appears that in the times of the hymns of the Rgveda Sarasvatī was a big river with abundant waters, that it flowed between the Yamunā and Śutudrī (X. 75. 5), in the times of the Brāhmanas it disappeared in the sands. It is now generally identified with the modern Sarsuti which is lost in the desert at Bhatnair.] The Vāj. S. 34. 11 says that five rivers together with their tributary streams fall into Sarasvatī.¹²⁵² There were three *sattras* called Sārasvata, viz. the first in honour of Mitra and Varuṇa, the 2nd for Indra and Agni and the third for Aryaman. The *dikṣā* (consecration ceremony) was to be performed on the south bank of the dry bed of the Sarasvatī where it disappeared underground¹²⁵³. Vide Tāṇḍya Br.

1250. इयं शुष्मेभिर्विसखा इवारुजत्सात् गिरीणां तविषेभिर्मुभिः। ऋ. VI. 61.2; यस्या अनन्तो अद्भुतस्त्वेषश्चरिणुरर्णवः। अमश्चरति रोरुवत् ॥ ऋ. VI. 61.8. The निरुक्त II. 23 remarks 'तत्र सरस्वती इत्येतस्य नदीवत् देवतावच्च निगमा भवन्ति' and explains Rg. VI. 61.2 as a verse where सरस्वती is described as a river.

1251. चोदयित्री सृष्टतानां चेतन्ती सुमतीनाम्। यज्ञं दधे सरस्वती॥ महो अर्णः सरस्वती प्र चेतयति केतुना। ऋ. I. 3. 11-12. For this last, vide निरुक्त XI. 27.

1252. पञ्च नद्यः सरस्वतीमपि यन्ति सप्तोत्तसः। सरस्वती तु पञ्चधा सो देशेऽभवत्सरित्॥ वाज. सं. 34. 11.

1253. सरस्वत्या विनशने दीक्षन्ते।... इषद्वत्या अप्ययेऽपोनपत्रीयं चरुं निरूप्याथाति-यन्ति। चतुश्चत्वारिंशदाश्वीनानि सरस्वत्या विनशनात् कृक्षः प्रास्रवणः तावदितः स्वर्गो लोकः सरस्वतीसंमितीनाध्वना स्वर्गलोकं यन्ति।... यदा कृक्षं प्रास्रवणमागच्छन्त्यथोत्थानम्।... कृक्षं पञ्चवं प्रति यमुनामवभृथमभ्यवयन्ति। ताण्ड्य 25. 10. 1, 15, 16, 21, 23. मनु II. 17 de fines ब्रह्मावर्त as the country between the divine rivers सरस्वती and इषद्वती and (II. 21) मध्यदेश as the country between the Himālaya and Vindhya mountains.

(Continued on the next page)

25. 10 for the first Sārasvata-sattra, 25. 11 for the 2nd and 25.12 for the third. The land between Vinasana and Plakṣa Prāsravana (which was the source of the Sarasvatī) was the proper locality for Sārasvata sattra. [At the confluence of Sarasvatī and Dṛṣadvatī an *iṣṭi* to Apām Napāt was performed wherein boiled rice (*caru*) was the offering.] From the place where the Sarasvatī disappeared up to Plakṣa-Prāsravana the distance was a journey on horse-back for forty days and nights. When the sacrificers (in the sattra) reach Plakṣa Prāsravana they should stop the performance of the items of the sattra and undergo the Avabhr̥tha bath near the river Yamunā (modern Jumna) which flows through the country called Kārapacava (and not in the Sarasvatī even if it had water). For details, vide Kātyāyana Śrautasūtra (10. 15-19) which mentions (in 10. 19. 1) a spot called Parīṇaḥ in Kurukṣetra where the Vedic fires were to be kindled, the Āśv. Ś. S. 12. 6. 1-28 which adds that at the distance of each throw of the Śamyā from the Vinasana one day is to be spent by the sacrificers, the Kātyāyana Śrauta-sūtra (24. 5-6) which states that the *iṣṭi* at the confluence of the Dṛṣadvatī and Sarasvatī is to be offered to Agni Kāma, Āp. Ś. S. 23. 12-13 (which gives more details than any one of the other three sūtras). In the Ait. Br. a story is narrated that the sages performed a sattra on the Sarasvatī and Kavaṣa who was sitting amongst them was driven out by them as not a brāhmaṇa but the son of a female slave and left in a sandy desert with the idea that he would die of thirst; but he praised the waters or *Apām napāt* with the hymn, Rg. X. 30 ('pra devatrā brahmaṇe') called 'Aponaptriya' and Sarasvatī came rushing towards the place where Kavaṣa stood and surrounded it, which (spot) thence-

(Continued from the last page)

ains, which is to the east of विनशन and west of Prayāga. For the mention of विनशन in the Baud. Dh. S., Vanaparva and Salyaparva, vide H. of Dh. vol. II. p. 14 note 35. Dr. D. R. Patil in his thesis 'Cultural History of Vāyupurāṇa' (p. 334) remarks that the institution of pilgrimage was first started by Buddhists and Jains and that later on it became common to all faiths in India. This is quite wrong. The Brāhmaṇa and Śrautasūtra passages clearly show that there were holy places in the comparatively small part of India up to the Yamunā where the Sārasvata sattras had to be carried on. The importance of holy places, visiting them and performing religious rites there were known in the Brāhmaṇa period at least a thousand years before Buddhism and Jainism began to spread.



forward came to be called ¹²⁵⁴ 'Parisaraka'. This shows that in the times of the Ait. Br. and long before it the bed of the Sarasvatī was dry. Devala ¹²⁵⁵ mentions several places as Sārasvata tīrthas. The Rgveda ¹²⁵⁶ VIII. 6.28 appears to hold that the valleys of mountains and the confluences of rivers are sacred. Mountains have been held by most ancient peoples to be the abodes of gods. Mount Parnassus north of Delphi was one of the most holy mountains in classical Greece and Olympus was supposed to be the home of the gods. In the Rgveda Parvata is a dual deity with Indra. 'O, Indra and Parvata! may you two sharpen (or purify) us (our intellects)' Rg. I. 122.3 ¹²⁵⁷; O, Indra and Parvata! May you two, being in the forefront of battle, kill with the thunderbolt every one who desires to attack us with an army' Rg. I. 132. 6. In Rg. VI. 49. 14 a prayer is addressed to Parvata separately 'May the god Ahirbudhnya, may Parvata and may Savitr bestow on us food together with the waters on account of our prayers'. In Rg. III. 33.1 the two great rivers Vipāś (modern Beas) and Śutudrī are described as issuing from the lap of mountains. Here the word 'Parvata' is used in its ordinary sense. The Atharvaveda ¹²⁵⁸ speaks of a salve (āñjana) from Traikakuda peaks of the Himālaya mountain 'May that salve which comes off the Himālaya from Traikakuda (peaks) destroy all wizards and all witches'. The Hir. Gr. I. 3.11.5 (S. B. E. vol. 30 p. 168) also

1254. ऋषयो वै सरस्वत्यां सत्रमासत। ऐ. ब्रा. 8. 1; माध्यमाः सरस्वत्यां सत्रमासत तद्वापि कवषो मध्ये निषसाद। तं हेम उपोदुर्दस्या वै त्वं पुत्रोऽसि न वयं त्वया सह भक्षयिष्याम इति। स ह क्रुद्धः प्रद्रवत्सरस्वतीमेतेन सूक्तेन तुष्टाव तं हेयमान्वियाय। शां. ब्रा. XII. 3. It may be noted that the Vanaparva chap. 83 when enumerating the numerous tīrthas on the Sarasvatī and in कुरुक्षेत्र mentions a famous tīrtha called Saraka which is said to contain in it the sanctity of three *crores* of tīrthas (verses 75-76). This सरक appears to be the same as the परिसरक tīrtha of सरस्वती.

1255. पृथ्वीपर्वणं वृद्धकन्याकं सारस्वतमादित्यतीर्थं कौबेरं वैजयन्तं पृथूदकं नैमिशं विनशनं वंशोज्जेदं प्रभासमिति सारस्वतानि। देवल q. by तीर्थकल्पतरु p. 250.

1256. उपहरे गिरीणां सङ्गथे च नदीनाम्। धिया विप्रो अजायत॥ ऋ. VIII. 6. 28 = वाज. सं. 26. 15 (which reads सङ्गमे).

1257. शिशीतमिन्द्रापर्वता युवं नस्तन्नो विश्वे वरिवस्यन्तु देवाः॥ ऋ. I. 122. 3 (सायण explains पर्वतः पर्ववान् वृष्ट्यादिपूरणवान् पर्जन्यः); युवं तमिन्द्रापर्वता पुरोयुधः पृथ्व्यादप तंतमिन्द्रतं वज्रेण तंतमिन्द्रतम्। ऋ. I. 132. 6 (सायण explains पर्वतः पर्ववान् न्मेघः। तदभिमानी देवः); तन्नोऽहिर्बुध्न्यो अद्भिरकैस्तत्पर्वतस्तत्सविता चनो धातुः॥ ऋ. VI. 49. 14.

1258. यदाञ्जनं त्रैककुदं जातं हिमवतस्परि। यातुंश्च सर्वाज्जम्भयत्सर्वाश्च यतुधाराः॥ अथर्व. IV. 9.9; vide also Sat. Br. in SBE vol. 26 p. 15.



refers to this salve. Gaut., Baud. Dh. S. and Vas. Dh. S. have the same sūtra ¹²⁵⁹ stating that the 'deśas (localities) that are holy and hence destroyers of sin are all mountains, all rivers, holy lakes, places of pilgrimage, the dwellings of sages (ṛsis), cowpens and temples of the gods.' The Vāyupurāṇa ¹²⁶⁰ and Kūrma state that all parts of the Himālaya are holy, the Ganges is holy everywhere, all rivers falling into the sea and all seas are holy. The Padmapurāṇa (Bhūmikhanda 39. 46-47) says that all rivers, whether flowing through a village or a forest, are holy and that where no name of a tīrtha on rivers is known it should be called Viṣṇutīrtha. Kālidāsa speaks of the Himālaya as *devatātmā* (as vivified by the presence of gods) in the Kumārasambhava (I. 1). The Bhāgavata V. 19.16 names 27 holy mountains while the Brahmāṇḍa (II. 16. 20-23) names thirty. The grandeur and sublimity of snow-capped mountains, of large life-sustaining rivers and of great forests easily impress the minds of almost all people and induce them to think that there is something divine about them, that the Supreme

1259. सर्वे शिलोच्चयाः सर्वाः स्रवन्त्यः पुण्या ह्यदास्तीर्थान्यृषिनिवासा गोष्ठपरिस्कन्दा इति देशाः। गौ. 19. 14 = वसिष्ठ 22. 12 = बौ. ध. सू. III. 10. 12 (which reads ऋषिनिकेतनानि गोष्ठक्षेत्रपरिस्कन्दा इति०).

1260. सर्वे पुण्यं हिमवतो गङ्गा पुण्या च सर्वतः। समुद्रगाः समुद्राश्च सर्वे पुण्याः समन्ततः॥ वायुपुराण 77. 117; सर्वत्र हिमवान् पुण्यो गङ्गा...न्ततः। नद्यः समुद्रगाः पुण्याः समुद्रश्च विशेषतः॥ कूर्म II. 37. 49-50; 'राजा समस्ततीर्थानां सागरः सरितां पतिः।' नारदीय (उत्तर) chap. 58. 19; सर्वे प्रसवणाः पुण्याः सर्वे पुण्याः शिलोच्चयाः। नद्यः पुण्याः सदा सर्वा जाह्नवी तु विशेषतः॥ शङ्ख 8.14 (reads सरांसि च शिलोच्चयाः) q. by तीर्थ-प्रकाश p. 14; सर्वाः समुद्रगाः पुण्याः सर्वे पुण्याः नगोत्तमाः। सर्वमायतनं पुण्यं सर्वे पुण्या वनाश्रमाः॥ श्लोक q. by तीर्थकल्पः p. 250; पद्म IV. 93.46 has almost the same words (reads वराश्रमाः). The great mountains (called कुलपर्वताः) generally enumerated are: महेन्द्रो मलयः सह्यः शुक्तिमातृक्षपर्वतः। विन्ध्यश्च पारियात्रश्च सप्तत्र कुलपर्वताः॥ कूर्म I. 47. 23-24, वामन 13. 14-15; वायु I. 85, मत्स्य 113.10-12. ब्रह्मा 18.16 enumerate them somewhat differently. The बार्हस्पत्यसूत्र III. 81 says: 'तत्रापि रैवतविन्ध्यसह्यकुमारमलयश्रीपर्वतपारियात्राः सप्त कुलाचलाः।' The नीलमतपुराण 57 reads 'महेन्द्रो...ऋक्षवानपि। विन्ध्यश्च पारियात्रश्च न विनश्यन्ति पर्वताः॥.' The ब्रह्माण्डपुराण (II. 16.39) and वायु (45.108) observe about rivers falling into the sea: तास्तु नद्यः सरस्वत्यः सर्वा गङ्गाः समुद्रगाः। विश्वस्य मातरः सर्वा जगत्पापहराः स्मृताः॥ In some Purāṇas certain great rivers are said to be specially holy at certain times. For example, देवीपुराण quoted by कल्पः (on तीर्थ) p. 242 states 'कार्तिके ग्रहणं श्रेष्ठं गङ्गायमुनसङ्गमे। मार्गे तु ग्रहणं पुण्यं देविकायां महामुने॥ पौषे तु नर्मदा पुण्या माघे संनिहिता शुभा। फाल्गुने वरणा ख्याता चैत्रे पुण्या सरस्वती॥ वैशाखे महापुण्या चन्द्रभागा सरिद्वरा। ज्येष्ठे तु कौशिकी पुण्या आषाढे तापिका नदी। श्रावणे सिन्धुनामा च भाद्रमासे च गण्डकी। आश्विने सरयूश्चैव भूयः पुण्या तु नर्मदा॥ गोदावरी महापुण्या चन्द्रे राहुसमन्विते॥' 'एवमादिष्वथान्येषु तीर्थेषु सरिद्वरासु सर्वेष्वपि स्वभावेषु पुलिनेषु प्रसवणेषु पर्वतेषु निकुञ्जेषु वनेषूपवनेषु गोमयलिप्तेषु मनोज्ञेषु। विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 85.

Being is partially revealed in such surroundings. In Protestant Europe and the U. S. A. hardly anyone performs a pilgrimage to a holy place in these days. Instead, they tour different countries for rest, health and in search of natural beauty and a respite from humdrum existence. But pilgrimage to a place supposed to be holy for the curing of disease is not rare even now. When one reads a work like that of Louis Carell, a great surgeon and a winner of the Nobel prize, on the miracles worked at Lourdes in France (in 'a Journey to Lourdes') one sees that pilgrimage has taken on a new motive in the West. Similarly, pilgrimage to the tombs of unknown warriors has become common owing to the two world wars.

In Rg. X. 146 a large forest ¹²⁶¹ (Aranyāni) is invoked as a deity. The Vāmanapurāṇa mentions ¹²⁶² seven forests in Kurukṣetra as holy and as removers of sin, viz. Kāmyaka, Aditivana, Vyāsavana, Phalakivana, Sūryavana, Madhuvana and Puṇyaśītavana.

In the Sūtras and ancient smṛtis like those of Manu and Yājñavalkya tīrthas do not occupy a very prominent position. But in the Mahābhārata and the Purāṇas they are highly lauded and placed even above sacrifices. In the Vanaparva ¹²⁶³ a comparison is made between sacrifices to gods and pilgrimages. Sacrifices require numerous implements, collection of materials, the co-operation of priests and the presence of a wife and so

1261. अरण्यान्यरण्यान्यसौ या प्रेव नश्यसि। कथा ग्रामं न पृच्छसि न त्वा भीरिव विन्दती३॥ ऋ. X. 146. 1. The निरुक्त 9. 30 explains this verse and says अरण्यानी means अरण्यस्य पत्नी, while the वार्तिक 'हिमारण्योर्महत्त्वे' on पा. IV. 1. 49 holds that अरण्यानी is formed from अरण्य in the sense of महत्त्व.

1262. शृणु सप्त वनानीह कुरुक्षेत्रस्य मध्यतः। येषां नामानि पुण्यानि सर्वपापहराणि च॥ काम्यकं च वनं पुण्यं०। वामनपुराण 34. 3-5.

1263. ऋषिभिः क्रतवः प्रोक्ता देवेष्विव यथाक्रमम्। फलं चैव यथातथ्यं प्रेत्य चेह च सर्वशः॥ न ते शक्या दरिद्रेण यज्ञाः प्राप्तुं महीपते। बहुपकरणा यज्ञा नानासम्भारविस्तराः॥ प्राप्यन्ते पार्थिवैरतैः समृद्धैर्वा नरैः क्वचित्। नार्थन्यूनैर्नोवगणैरेकात्मभिरसाधनैः॥ यो दरिद्रेऽपि विधिः शक्यः प्राप्तुं नरेश्वर। तुल्यो यज्ञफलैः पुण्यैस्तं निबोध युधां वर॥ ऋषीणां परमं गुह्यमिदं भरतसत्तम। तीर्थाभिगमनं पुण्यं यज्ञैरपि विशिष्यते॥ महाभारत, वनपर्व 82. 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 33, 34, 35, 36, 37, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43, 44, 45, 46, 47, 48, 49, 50, 51, 52, 53, 54, 55, 56, 57, 58, 59, 60, 61, 62, 63, 64, 65, 66, 67, 68, 69, 70, 71, 72, 73, 74, 75, 76, 77, 78, 79, 80, 81, 82, 83, 84, 85, 86, 87, 88, 89, 90, 91, 92, 93, 94, 95, 96, 97, 98, 99, 100, 101, 102, 103, 104, 105, 106, 107, 108, 109, 110, 111, 112, 113, 114, 115, 116, 117, 118, 119, 120, 121, 122, 123, 124, 125, 126, 127, 128, 129, 130, 131, 132, 133, 134, 135, 136, 137, 138, 139, 140, 141, 142, 143, 144, 145, 146, 147, 148, 149, 150, 151, 152, 153, 154, 155, 156, 157, 158, 159, 160, 161, 162, 163, 164, 165, 166, 167, 168, 169, 170, 171, 172, 173, 174, 175, 176, 177, 178, 179, 180, 181, 182, 183, 184, 185, 186, 187, 188, 189, 190, 191, 192, 193, 194, 195, 196, 197, 198, 199, 200, 201, 202, 203, 204, 205, 206, 207, 208, 209, 210, 211, 212, 213, 214, 215, 216, 217, 218, 219, 220, 221, 222, 223, 224, 225, 226, 227, 228, 229, 230, 231, 232, 233, 234, 235, 236, 237, 238, 239, 240, 241, 242, 243, 244, 245, 246, 247, 248, 249, 250, 251, 252, 253, 254, 255, 256, 257, 258, 259, 260, 261, 262, 263, 264, 265, 266, 267, 268, 269, 270, 271, 272, 273, 274, 275, 276, 277, 278, 279, 280, 281, 282, 283, 284, 285, 286, 287, 288, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 294, 295, 296, 297, 298, 299, 300, 301, 302, 303, 304, 305, 306, 307, 308, 309, 310, 311, 312, 313, 314, 315, 316, 317, 318, 319, 320, 321, 322, 323, 324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329, 330, 331, 332, 333, 334, 335, 336, 337, 338, 339, 340, 341, 342, 343, 344, 345, 346, 347, 348, 349, 350, 351, 352, 353, 354, 355, 356, 357, 358, 359, 360, 361, 362, 363, 364, 365, 366, 367, 368, 369, 370, 371, 372, 373, 374, 375, 376, 377, 378, 379, 380, 381, 382, 383, 384, 385, 386, 387, 388, 389, 390, 391, 392, 393, 394, 395, 396, 397, 398, 399, 400, 401, 402, 403, 404, 405, 406, 407, 408, 409, 410, 411, 412, 413, 414, 415, 416, 417, 418, 419, 420, 421, 422, 423, 424, 425, 426, 427, 428, 429, 430, 431, 432, 433, 434, 435, 436, 437, 438, 439, 440, 441, 442, 443, 444, 445, 446, 447, 448, 449, 450, 451, 452, 453, 454, 455, 456, 457, 458, 459, 460, 461, 462, 463, 464, 465, 466, 467, 468, 469, 470, 471, 472, 473, 474, 475, 476, 477, 478, 479, 480, 481, 482, 483, 484, 485, 486, 487, 488, 489, 490, 491, 492, 493, 494, 495, 496, 497, 498, 499, 500, 501, 502, 503, 504, 505, 506, 507, 508, 509, 510, 511, 512, 513, 514, 515, 516, 517, 518, 519, 520, 521, 522, 523, 524, 525, 526, 527, 528, 529, 530, 531, 532, 533, 534, 535, 536, 537, 538, 539, 540, 541, 542, 543, 544, 545, 546, 547, 548, 549, 550, 551, 552, 553, 554, 555, 556, 557, 558, 559, 560, 561, 562, 563, 564, 565, 566, 567, 568, 569, 570, 571, 572, 573, 574, 575, 576, 577, 578, 579, 580, 581, 582, 583, 584, 585, 586, 587, 588, 589, 590, 591, 592, 593, 594, 595, 596, 597, 598, 599, 600, 601, 602, 603, 604, 605, 606, 607, 608, 609, 610, 611, 612, 613, 614, 615, 616, 617, 618, 619, 620, 621, 622, 623, 624, 625, 626, 627, 628, 629, 630, 631, 632, 633, 634, 635, 636, 637, 638, 639, 640, 641, 642, 643, 644, 645, 646, 647, 648, 649, 650, 651, 652, 653, 654, 655, 656, 657, 658, 659, 660, 661, 662, 663, 664, 665, 666, 667, 668, 669, 670, 671, 672, 673, 674, 675, 676, 677, 678, 679, 680, 681, 682, 683, 684, 685, 686, 687, 688, 689, 690, 691, 692, 693, 694, 695, 696, 697, 698, 699, 700, 701, 702, 703, 704, 705, 706, 707, 708, 709, 710, 711, 712, 713, 714, 715, 716, 717, 718, 719, 720, 721, 722, 723, 724, 725, 726, 727, 728, 729, 730, 731, 732, 733, 734, 735, 736, 737, 738, 739, 740, 741, 742, 743, 744, 745, 746, 747, 748, 749, 750, 751, 752, 753, 754, 755, 756, 757, 758, 759, 760, 761, 762, 763, 764, 765, 766, 767, 768, 769, 770, 771, 772, 773, 774, 775, 776, 777, 778, 779, 780, 781, 782, 783, 784, 785, 786, 787, 788, 789, 790, 791, 792, 793, 794, 795, 796, 797, 798, 799, 800, 801, 802, 803, 804, 805, 806, 807, 808, 809, 810, 811, 812, 813, 814, 815, 816, 817, 818, 819, 820, 821, 822, 823, 824, 825, 826, 827, 828, 829, 830, 831, 832, 833, 834, 835, 836, 837, 838, 839, 840, 841, 842, 843, 844, 845, 846, 847, 848, 849, 850, 851, 852, 853, 854, 855, 856, 857, 858, 859, 860, 861, 862, 863, 864, 865, 866, 867, 868, 869, 870, 871, 872, 873, 874, 875, 876, 877, 878, 879, 880, 881, 882, 883, 884, 885, 886, 887, 888, 889, 890, 891, 892, 893, 894, 895, 896, 897, 898, 899, 900, 901, 902, 903, 904, 905, 906, 907, 908, 909, 910, 911, 912, 913, 914, 915, 916, 917, 918, 919, 920, 921, 922, 923, 924, 925, 926, 927, 928, 929, 930, 931, 932, 933, 934, 935, 936, 937, 938, 939, 940, 941, 942, 943, 944, 945, 946, 947, 948, 949, 950, 951, 952, 953, 954, 955, 956, 957, 958, 959, 960, 961, 962, 963, 964, 965, 966, 967, 968, 969, 970, 971, 972, 973, 974, 975, 976, 977, 978, 979, 980, 981, 982, 983, 984, 985, 986, 987, 988, 989, 990, 991, 992, 993, 994, 995, 996, 997, 998, 999, 1000.

they can be performed only by princes or rich men. They cannot be performed by poor men, who are devoid of wealth, who are without a wife and without friends, who are helpless. The reward that a man gets by visiting holy places cannot be secured by performing such sacrifices as Agniṣṭoma in which large fees are paid (to priests); therefore visiting holy places is superior to sacrifices. But the Mahābhārata (Vanaparva 82. 9-12 and Anuśāsana 108. 3-4) lays the greatest emphasis on the cultivation of high moral and spiritual qualities if the full reward of pilgrimages is to be reaped. It says ¹²⁶⁴ 'He whose hands, feet and mind are well controlled and who possesses knowledge, austerities and a good reputation derives the (full) reward of pilgrimages. He who turns his face away from receiving gifts and is content with what little he gets and is free from vanity obtains the rewards of pilgrimages. He, who is free from hypocrisy (or deceit), is not engaged in various undertakings (for earning money), is not a heavy eater, has subdued his senses and is (therefore) free from all sins; so also he who does not fly into a rage, who always speaks the truth, who is firm in his observances, and acts towards all beings by treating them like himself, obtains the full reward of pilgrimages'. The idea seems to be that pilgrimages may help to remove the sins of men who are not possessed of the above characteristics, while those who possess these acquire a great store of merit in addition. The Skanda (Kāśīkhaṇḍa 6.3) asserts 'snāna cannot be predicated of a man whose body alone is flooded with water; that man who is plunged in restraint of senses, who is pure, relieved of all taint and is stainless, is alone to be called snāta' (as having had a bath). The Anuśāsana has almost the same

1264. यस्य हस्तौ च पादौ च मनश्चैव संयतम् । विद्या तपश्च कीर्तिश्च स तीर्थफलमश्नुते ॥ प्रतिग्रहादुपावृत्तः सन्तुष्टो येन केनचित् । अहङ्कारनिवृत्तश्च स तीर्थफलमश्नुते ॥ अकल्कको निरारम्भो लब्धाहारो जितेन्द्रियः । विमुक्तः सर्वपापेभ्यः स तीर्थफलमश्नुते ॥ अक्रोधनश्च राजेन्द्र सत्यशीलो दृढव्रतः । आत्मोपमश्च भूतेषु स तीर्थफलमश्नुते ॥ वनपर्व 82. 9-12 q. by the तीर्थकल्पतरु pp. 4-5, तीर्थप्र. p. 13 (only 9 and 12). 'हस्तयोः संयमः परपीडाचौर्यादिनिवृत्त्या, पादयोः संयमः अगम्यदेशगमनपरताडनादिनिवृत्त्या । मनसः संयमः कुत्सितसङ्कल्पादिनिवृत्त्या । विद्या अत्र तत्तत्तीर्थगुणज्ञानम्, तपः तीर्थोपवासादि, कीर्तिः सञ्चारितत्वेन प्रसिद्धिः' तीर्थप्र. p. 13. 'अकल्ककः दम्भरहितः, निरारम्भोऽत्रार्थार्जनादिव्यापाररहितः' तीर्थकल्पतरु p. 5. Vide also वनपर्व 92.11, 93. 20-23. The above verses of the वनपर्व occur in पद्म, आदिखण्ड 11. 9-12 and the first two in पद्म, उत्तरखण्ड 237. 30-32; all occur in स्कन्द, काशीखण्ड 6. 48-51; वायु 110. 4-5 are the same as the first two; the verse यस्य हस्तौ च is शङ्खस्मृति 8. 15, ब्रह्म 25.2, अग्नि 109. 1-2; the स्कन्द (I. 2.2. 5-6) says that Aṅgiras sang the gāthā यस्य हस्तौ च पादौ च मनश्चैव संयतम् । निर्विकाराः क्रियाः सर्वाः स...श्नुते.

words (108.9).^{1264a} The Vāyupurāṇa states¹²⁶⁵ 'A steadfast (or wise) man visiting tīrthas with faith and controlling his senses would be purified even if he has been guilty of sins; what need is there to say about him whose actions have been pure? One who has no faith, who is full of sins, whose mind is not free from doubts (about the rewards of pilgrimages and the rites there), who is an atheist and who is bent on bad reasoning—these five do not reap the rewards of pilgrimages'. The Skandapurāṇa (I. 1. 31. 37) remarks that all holy places, sacrifices and various gifts are meant for cleansing the mind (of its sins and sinful proclivities, *manah-śuddhi*). The Padmapurāṇa (IV. 80. 9) remarks: sacrifices, *vratas*, *tapas* and *dāna* cannot be carried out fully in the Kali age; but bathing in the Ganges and taking the name of Hari are free from all defects. The Viṣṇudharmottarapurāṇa¹²⁶⁶ puts the matter very clearly when it says 'When resort is made to a tīrtha, it removes the sins of the sinful and tends to the increase of merit in the case of the good and that a holy place yields fruit to men of all *varṇas* and *āśramas*.' Some of the Purāṇas (such as Skandapurāṇa, Kāśikhaṇḍa 6, Padma, Uttarakhaṇḍa, 237) say that in addition to the holy places on land (*bhauṃsa*) there are certain virtues that may be called *mental tīrthas* (in a figurative sense). According to them 'truthfulness, forbearance, restraint of the senses, compassion for all beings, straight-forwardness, charity, self-control, contentment, celibacy (*brahmacarya*), sweet speech, knowledge, patience, austerity, are tīrthas and the highest tīrtha is *purity of mind*.' They further state that a man who is avaricious, wicked, cruel, hypocritical and immersed in pleasures of senses is still sinful and impure even if he bathes in all tīrthas and that fish are born and die in holy waters but they do not go to heaven because their minds are not purified and that even charity, sacrifices, austerity,

1264 a. नोदकक्लिन्नगात्रस्तु स्नात इत्यभिधीयते । स स्नातो यो दमस्नातः सचाह्याभ्यन्तरः शुचिः ॥ अनुशासन 108.9.

1265. तीर्थान्यनुसरन् धीरः श्रद्धधानो जितेन्द्रियः । कृतपापो विशुध्येत किं पुनः शुभकर्मकृत् ॥ अश्रद्धधानाः पाप्मानो नास्तिकाः स्थितसंशयाः । हेतुद्वष्टा च पश्येते न तीर्थफलभागिनः ॥ वायु 77. 125 and 127 q. by तीर्थकल्प० pp. 5-6, ती. चि. p. 4 (which explains पापात्मा बहुपापग्रस्तस्तस्य पापशमनं तीर्थं भवति न तु यथोक्तफलम्). These verses occur also in स्कन्द, काशीखण्ड 56. 52-53.

1266. पापानां पापशमनं धर्मवृद्धिस्तथा सताम् । विज्ञेयं सेवितं तीर्थं तस्मात्तीर्थपरा भवेत् ॥ सर्वेषामेव वर्णानां सर्वाश्रमनिवासिनाम् । तीर्थं फलप्रदं ज्ञेयं नात्र कार्या विचारणा ॥ विष्णुधर्मोत्तर III. 273, 7 and 9.

cleanliness, frequenting sacred places, learning—all these are not tīrthas, if the mind is not pure.¹²⁶⁷ The Brahmapurāṇa (25.4-6) states 'a heart that is wicked is not purified by baths at holy places, just as a vessel in which *surā* (liquor) was carried remains impure even after being washed with water hundreds of times, that tīrthas, gifts, *vratas*, or (residence in) hermitages do not purify a man whose heart is wicked, who resorts to hypocrisy and whose senses run away (are uncontrolled). Wherever a man who has his senses under control may dwell, there are present Kurukṣetra, Prayāga and Puṣkara'. The Vāmanapurāṇa has a fine^{1267a} *Rūpaka* about the soul being a river full of the water of control, flowing with truth and having character as the bank and the waves of compassion (for all beings) and states that the soul cannot be purified by water. The Padmapurāṇa (II. 39. 56-61) extends the meaning and scope of tīrthas by remarking that places where Agnihotra and śrāddha are performed, a temple, a house where Veda is being studied, a cowpen, the place where a soma drinker dwells, parks, a place where the *Aśvattha* exists, a place where Purāṇa is being recited or where one's teacher stands or where a chaste housewife dwells, or where a father and a worthy son dwell are all holy.

Numberless tīrthas and holy shrines have been mentioned from ancient times. The Matsyapurāṇa states¹²⁶⁸ that Vāyu declared that there are 35 millions of tīrthas in the sky, in the aerial regions and on the earth and all of them are centred in the Ganges; while the Vāmanapurāṇa 46. 53 states that there are 35 millions of Liṅgas. The Brahmapurāṇa says that the number of tīrthas and shrines is so large that they cannot be

1267. सत्यं तीर्थं क्षमा तीर्थं...तीर्थानामुत्तमं तीर्थं विशुद्धिर्मनसः पुनः।...जायन्ते च म्रियन्ते च जलेष्वेव जलौकसः। न च गच्छन्ति ते स्वर्गमविशुद्धमनोमलाः॥...दानमिज्या तपः शौचं तीर्थसेवा श्रुतं तथा। सर्वाण्येतान्यतीर्थानि यदि भावो न निर्मलः॥ स्कन्द, काशी० 6. 28-45, पद्म, उत्तरखण्ड 237. 11-28; compare मत्स्य 22.80 (सत्यं तीर्थं दया तीर्थं०)।

1267 a. आत्मा नदी संयमतोयपूर्णा सत्यावहा शीलतटा दयोर्मिः। तत्राभिषेकं कुरु पाण्डुपुत्र न वारिणा शुध्यति चान्तरात्मा॥ वामनपुराण 43. 25.

1268. तिस्रः कोट्योऽर्धकोटिश्च तीर्थानां वायुरब्रवीत्। दिवि भुव्यन्तरिक्षे च तत्सर्वं जाह्नवी स्मृता॥ मत्स्यपुराण 110.7, नारदीय (उत्तर) 63. 53-54, and पद्म IV. 89. 16-17 and V. 20. 150 (last पाद is तानि ते सन्ति जाह्नवी); वराह 159. 6-7 षष्टिकोटिसहस्राणि षष्टिकोटिशतानि च। तीर्थान्येतानि देवाश्च तारकाश्च नभस्तले। गणितानि समस्तानि वायुना जगदायुषा॥; तिस्रः कोट्योर्धकोटी च तीर्थानि भुवनत्रये। तानि स्नातुं समायान्ति गङ्गायां सिंहगे गुरौ॥ ब्रह्मपु. 175. 83; तस्माच्छृणुष्वं वक्ष्यामि तीर्थान्यायतनानि च। विस्तरेण शक्यन्ते वक्तुं वर्षशतैरपि॥ ब्रह्मपुराण 25. 7-8.

enumerated in detail even in hundreds of years. The Vanaparva ¹²⁶⁹ remarks that Naimiṣa is the (best) tīrtha on the earth and Puṣkara in the aerial region, while Kurukṣetra is the most distinguished in all the three worlds and that all the ten thousand crores of tīrthas are present in Puṣkara (chap. 82.21). New tīrthas were added from time to time and the monetary benefits derived by the permanent residents and particularly by the tīrtha priests led them to prepare numerous mātmyas of an apocryphal character and father them on Vyāsa, the reputed author of the Mahābhārata and the Purāṇas. Most of the writers of digests on tīrthas follow a process of selection. The Tīrthakalpataru of Lakṣmīdhara, one of the earliest digests (about 1110-1120 AD), devotes more than half the work to Vārāṇasī and Prayāga alone, assigns only two or three pages to such famous tīrthas as Puṣkara, Pṛthūdaka, Kokāmukha, Badarikāśrama, Kedāra. The Nṛsiṃhaprasāda (Tīrthasāra) mostly deals with tīrthas in the Deccan and southern India such as Setubandha, Puṇḍarīka (modern Pandharpur), Godāvarī, Kṛṣṇā-venyā, Narmadā. The Tri-sthalīsetu of Nārāyaṇabhaṭṭa devotes two-thirds of it to Benares and its sub-tīrthas and the rest to Prayāga and Gayā. This unequal treatment arose from various causes, such as the localities where the authors lived, their familiarity with the holy places and their predilections. There was also another tendency among the authors of Purāṇas, Mātmyas and digests viz. that of great exaggeration and over-statement which is often repellent. If a man reads the description of one tīrtha and does not discount much as sheer hollow laudation, he is likely to feel that a pilgrimage to a certain tīrtha will yield all the desires in this life as well in the next and that after visiting a holy tīrtha like Kāśī or Prayāga he need not go to any other tīrtha, nor need he perform any *yajña* or act of charity and the like. A few striking passages may be cited here. The Vanaparva remarks that ¹²⁷⁰ even gods and sages secured

1269. पृथिव्यां नैमिषं तीर्थमन्तरिक्षे च पुष्करम्। त्रयाणामपि लोकानां कुरुक्षेत्रं विशिष्यते॥ वनपर्व 83. 202, q. by तीर्थप्र. p. 19 and तीर्थकल्पतरु p. 178; नीलकण्ठ explains: नैमिषारण्ये कृतं पुण्यं पृथिव्यामेव सन्ततिसंपत्तिसार्वभौमादिपदप्राप्तिहेतुरित्यर्थः, अन्तरिक्षे सूर्यचन्द्रादिमार्गे नक्षत्रादिचक्रेषु पुष्करं प्रापयतीत्यर्थः। The same verse occurs in मत्स्य 109.3, पद्म (आदिखण्ड 27.87) and the first half in वामन 7. 37.

1270. पुष्करेषु महाभाग देवाः सर्षिगणाः पुरा। सिद्धिं समभिसंप्राप्ताः पुण्येन महासा-
न्विताः॥ तत्राभिषेकं यः कुर्यात्पितृदेवार्चने रतः। अश्वमेधादशयुगं फलं प्राहुर्मनीषिणः॥ वनपर्व
82. 26-27; नास्मात्परतरं तीर्थं लोकेऽस्मिन्परिपठ्यते। पद्म. (5th खण्ड, 27.78)

perfection at Puṣkara and that whoever takes a bath there and devoutly worships gods and his pitṛs secures rewards ten times of what the performance of Aśvamedha might give. About this very tīrtha viz. Puṣkara, the Padmapurāṇa says that there is no holier tīrtha in this world. The Vanaparva (83. 145) in its eulogy of Pṛthūdaka asserts that Kurukṣetra is holy, that Sarasvatī is holier than Kurukṣetra and that Pṛthūdaka is holier than all other tīrthas. The Matsyapurāṇa puts the comparative holiness of several tīrthas thus 'the waters of the Sarasvatī purify after (one bathes for) three days, those of Yamunā in seven days, those of the Ganges at once, while the water of the Narmadā purifies a man at sight of it.' In its eulogy of Vārāṇasī the Kūrma-purāṇa states 'there is no place higher than Vārāṇasī nor will there be one' (I. 31. 64). The inveterate habit of exaggeration goes so far that it is said that by merely residing in Kāśī till one's death not only does a man become free from the great sin of brāhmaṇa murder but from the never-ending cycle of births and deaths and is not born again.¹²⁷² The Lingapurāṇa says the same thing. The Vāmana-purāṇa remarks ¹²⁷³ that *mukti* (release from *samsāra*) can be secured in four ways, viz. by knowledge of *Brahman*, by śrāddha at Gayā, by loss of life in repelling the carrying away of cows and by residence in Kurukṣetra and that those who die in Kurukṣetra never come down (to the earth). Mere residence in Kāśī was so much lauded that the Matsya (181. 23), the Agni (112. 3) and other Purāṇas say that after repairing to Kāśī one should smash one's feet with a stone (in order that

1271. त्रिभिः सारस्वतं तोयं सप्ताहेन तु यामुनम्। सद्यः पुनाति गाङ्गेयं दर्शनादेव नार्मदम्॥ पद्म, आदिखण्ड 13, 7, मत्स्य० 186.11. The अभिलषितार्थचिन्तामणि (Mysore ed.) I, 1.130 has a very similar verse 'सरस्वती त्रिभिः स्नानैः पञ्चभिर्यमुनाषट्। जाह्नवी स्नानमात्रेण दर्शनेनैव नर्मदा' ॥

1272. आ देहपतनाद्यावत्तत्क्षेत्रं यो न मुञ्चति। न केवलं ब्रह्महत्या प्राकृतं च निवर्तते। प्राप्य विश्वेश्वरं देवं न स भूयोऽभिजायते। मत्स्य 182. 16-17, q. by तीर्थकल्प० p. 17 (which reads प्राकृतश्च that is explained as संसारबन्ध) and तीर्थचि. p. 345 which quotes the passage from लिङ्गपुराण, but those verses are not found in chap. 92 of the लिङ्गपुराण (Venk. ed.) which deals with वाराणसीमाहात्म्य. लिङ्गपुराण I. 92.63 is विषयासक्तचित्तोऽपि त्यक्तधर्मरतिर्नरः। इह क्षेत्रे मृतः सोऽपि संसारे न पुनर्भवेत्। कामं ह्यत्र मृतो देवि जन्तुर्मोक्षाय कल्पते॥ लिङ्ग० I. 92. 94. The verse आ देहपतनात् occurs in स्कन्द, काशीखण्ड 25. 67.

1273. ब्रह्मज्ञानं गयाश्राद्धं गोग्रहे मरणं ध्रुवम्। वासः पुंसां कुरुक्षेत्रे मुक्तिरुक्ता चतुर्विधा॥ ग्रहनक्षत्रताराणां कालेन पतनाद्भयम्। कुरुक्षेत्रमृतानां च पतनं नैव विद्यते॥ वामनपुराण 33.8 and 16; the first occurs in वायु० 105.16, अग्नि 115. 5-6.



one may not be induced to visit another tirtha)¹²⁷⁴ and stay in Kāśī forever.

The Brahmapurāṇa classifies tirthas into four divisions¹²⁷⁵ viz. daiva (created by gods), āsura (those associated with such asuras as Gaya), ārṣa (those established by sages) such as Prabhāsa, Naranārāyaṇa and mānuṣa (created by kings like Ambarīṣa, Manu, Kuru) and provides that each preceding one is superior to each succeeding one. It enumerates six rivers to the south of the Vindhya and six rivers having their sources in the Himālayas as most holy and as devatīrthas, viz. Godāvarī, Bhīmarathī, Tūṅgabhadrā, Venikā, Tāpī, Payoṣṇī, Bhāgīrathī, Narmadā, Yamunā, Sarasvatī, Viśokā, and Vitastā. Similarly, Kāśī, Puṣkara and Prabhāsa are devatīrthas (Tirthapr. p. 18). The Brahmapurāṇa (175. 31-32) assigns daiva, āsura, ārṣa and mānuṣa tirthas respectively to the Kṛta, Tretā, Dvāpara and Kali yugas.

There is a good deal of discussion in the Purāṇas and digests about those who are entitled or have the eligibility or capacity (*adhikāra*) for tīrthayātrā. The Vanaparva¹²⁷⁶ provides that brāhmaṇas, kṣatriyas, vaiśyas and śūdras, when they have bathed in holy places, are not born again. The same work further states that whatever sin a man or a woman may have committed from birth, the moment a person takes a bath in the holy Puṣkara all that sin vanishes.¹²⁷⁷ Therefore not only men but women also had the right to undertake tīrthayātrā. The Matsyapurāṇa¹²⁷⁸ goes further and asserts that 'Avimukta

1274. अश्मना चरणौ हत्वा वसेत्काशीं न हि त्यजेत्। आग्नि 112.3; अविमुक्तं यदा गच्छेत् कदाचित्कालपर्ययात्। अश्मना चरणौ भित्त्वा तत्रैव निधनं व्रजेत् ॥ मत्स्य 181.23, which last is quoted in तीर्थकल्प० p. 16; अश्मना चरणौ हत्वा वाराणस्यां वसेत्तरः। कूर्म I. 31.35 q. by तीर्थप्र. p. 140.

1275. चतुर्विधानि तीर्थानि स्वर्गे मर्त्ये रसातले। देवानि मुनिशार्ङ्गल आसुराण्यारुषाणि च। मानुषाणि त्रिलोकेषु विख्यातानि सुरादिभिः।...ब्रह्माविष्णुशिवैर्देवैर्निर्मितं देवमुच्यते। ब्रह्मपुराण 70. 16-19 q. by तीर्थप्रकाश p. 18, which also quotes the verses from ब्रह्मपुराण 70. 33-35 about the twelve rivers (देवतीर्थसः). आरुष stands for आर्ष. Vide ब्रह्म 70. 33-40 for examples of the four kinds of तीर्थसः.

1276. ब्राह्मणाः क्षत्रिया वैश्याः शूद्रा वा राजसत्तम। न वै योनौ प्रजायन्ते स्नातास्तीर्थे महात्मनः। वनपर्व 82. 30-31 q. by तीर्थप्र. p. 19 (which reads न वियोनिं व्रजस्त्येते, meaning 'are not born in a condemned or low body').

1277. जन्मप्रभृति यत्पापं स्त्रिया वा पुरुषेण वा। पुष्करे स्नातमात्रस्य सर्वमेव प्रणश्यति। वनपर्व 82. 33-34 q. by तीर्थप्र. p. 23.


1278. नानावर्णा विवर्णाश्च चण्डाला ये जुगुप्सिताः। किल्बिषैः पूर्णदेहाश्च प्रकृष्टः पातकैस्तथा। भेषजं परमं तेषामविमुक्तं विदुर्बुधाः। मत्स्यपुराण 184. 66-67, कूर्मपुराण 31. 42-43 q. by तीर्थकल्पतरु p. 26, तीर्थप्र. (on p. 140), तीर्थचि. p. 140.



(Vārāṇasī) is the highest cure for men of numerous castes, for men not (recognized as) belonging to any particular *varṇa*, for cāṇḍālas who are abhorred (by people) and for persons whose bodies are full of diseases and of aggravated sins.' It is stated in the Vāmanapurāṇa: ¹²⁷⁹ persons of all the four āśramas (i. e. brahmacārins, householders, forest hermits and *sannyā-sins*) by bathing in the tīrtha (mentioned by it) save seven generations in their families and that persons belonging to the four varṇas and women, when they bathe in tīrthas with devotion, see the highest goal. It was provided by the Brahmapurāṇa that a brahmacārin can undertake a pilgrimage only if ordered or directed by his guru, and that a householder whose wife is alive and is chaste must go on a pilgrimage with her; otherwise he would not reap the fruit of pilgrimage. The Padmapurāṇa (Bhūmikhaṇḍa chap. 59-60) narrates the story of a vaiśya called Kṛkālā who went on a pilgrimage without his virtuous wife and did not reap the fruits of a long pilgrimage (bhāryām vinā yo dharmāḥ sa eva viphalo bhavet, 59. 33). The Tīrthacintāmaṇi and Tīrthaprakāśa quote a passage (from the Kūrmapurāṇa) which glorifies Vārāṇasī (called Avimukta there) as follows ¹²⁸⁰ 'brāhmaṇas, kṣatriyas, vaiśyas, śūdras, persons of mixed castes (varṇasankara), women, *mlecchas* and others who are born in evil forms and are of mixed blood, worms, ants, birds and beasts when they die in Avimukta are born as human beings in Benares and no one guilty of sins dying in Avimukta goes to Hell.' As regards ¹²⁸¹ women and śūdras, a smṛti verse provided 'Japa, tapas, pilgrimage to holy places, becoming an ascetic (sannyāsin), efforts to attain mastery over mantras and worshipping deities (as a priest)—these six lead to sinfulness in the case of women and

1279. ब्रह्मचारी गृहस्थश्च वानप्रस्थो यतिस्तथा । कुलानि तारयेत्स्नातः सप्त सप्त च सप्त च ॥ ब्राह्मणाः क्षत्रिया वैश्याः स्त्रियाः शूद्राश्च तत्पराः । तीर्थस्नाता भक्तियुताः पश्यन्ति परमं पदम् ॥ वामनपुराण 36. 78-79.

1280. ब्राह्मणाः क्षत्रिया वैश्याः शूद्रा ये वर्णसङ्कराः । स्त्रियो म्लेच्छाश्च ये चान्ये सङ्कीर्णाः पापयोनयः ॥ कीटाः पिपीलिकाश्चैव ये चान्ये मृगपक्षिणः । कालेन निधनं प्राप्ता अविमुक्ते वरान्ने ।... शिवे मम पुरे देवि जायन्ते तत्र मानवाः । नाविमुक्ते मृतः कश्चिन्नरकं याति किल्बिषी । कूर्म I. 31. 32-34, मत्स्यपुराण 181. 19-21 q. by तीर्थचि. p. 346, तीर्थप्र. p. 139 (which quotes from कूर्मपुराण and adds नाविमुक्ते मृतः कश्चिन्नरकं याति किल्बिषी) । ईश्वरानुगृहीता हि सर्वे यान्ति परां गतिम् । नाविमुक्ते मृतः कश्चिन्नरकं याति किल्बिषी । कूर्म I. 31. 31-34 q. by तीर्थचि. p. 346, तीर्थप्र. p. 139. The same verses occur in पद्म I. 33. 18-21.

1281. जपस्तपस्तीर्थयात्रा प्रव्रज्या मन्त्रसाधनम् । देवताराधनं चेति स्त्रीशूद्रपतयः । निषट् ॥ q. by तीर्थप्र. p. 21, ascribed to मनु by भट्टोजि in त्रिस्थलीसेतुसारसंग्रह p. 11. 

śūdras.' This was explained away by stating that this text refers to undertaking pilgrimage without the husband's permission (in the case of a woman) and as to a śūdra in such a way as to be opposed to the primary duty of a śūdra to wait upon learned brāhmaṇas (as laid down in Manu X. 123). Kātyāyana¹²⁸² as quoted in the Vyavahāramayūkha provides 'whatever a woman does that relates to (benefit in) a future state (i. e. state after death) without the permission of her (husband's) father, husband or son, would become fruitless.' It is clear therefore that it was recognized early that *tīrthayātrā* was a popular way for redemption of sins in the case of all classes of men and women. Though a Hindu woman succeeding as heir to her husband's estate has only a limited and qualified ownership over it, judicial decisions have recognized that she can alienate a small portion of her husband's estate for the expenses of a pilgrimage to Gayā for performing her husband's śrāddha for the latter's spiritual benefit or of a pilgrimage to Pandharpur. Vide *Muteeram v. Gopal* 11 Beng. L. R. 416; *Darbari Lal v. Gobind* 46 All. 822; *Ganpat v. Tulsiram* 36 Bom. 88 (pilgrimage to Pandharpur).¹²⁸³ It was also provided that there was no question of untouchability¹²⁸⁴ when bathing in holy waters.

1282. नारी खल्वननुज्ञाता पित्रा भर्त्रा सुतेन वा । विफलं तद्भवेत्तस्या यत्करोत्यौर्ध्व-
देहिकम् ॥ कात्या. q. by व्य. म. ; p. 113; this verse is quoted by चतुर्वर्ग on व्रत I. p. 327 as from आदित्यपुराण and और्ध्वदेहिकं is explained as व्रतानि.

1283. Strangely enough, the Calcutta High court has held that a widow cannot validly alienate a part of her husband's property inherited by her as heir for a pilgrimage to Benares; vide *Hari v. Bajrand* 13 C. W. N. 544 at p. 547. But a gift to the temple of Jagannātha at Purī for *bhog* (offerings of cooked food) to the deity and for the maintenance of the priests there for the salvation of the husband and the members of his family and for the widow's own salvation was upheld by the Privy Council in *Sardar Singh v. Kunj Behari* 49 I. A. 383. As seen in note 1294 below, a person on returning from a pilgrimage had to honour and feed brāhmaṇas. In *Dinanath v. Hrishikesh* 18 C. W. N. 1303, 1306, where a widow on returning from a pilgrimage to Gayā for the benefit of her husband's soul incurred a debt for feeding brāhmaṇas and her husband's relatives and alienated a portion of her husband's property, it was held that the debt was one for a spiritual purpose and was binding on the reversioners after the death of the widow.

1284. तीर्थे विवाहे यात्रायां संग्रामे देशविक्षेपे । नगरग्रामदाहे च स्पृष्टास्पृष्टिर्न दुष्यति ॥
बृह. q. by कल्पतरु on शुद्धि p. 169, स्मृतिच. I. p. 122. This is variously explained. The तीर्थप्र. p. 41 says 'तीर्थे विवाह इत्यनेनानिवार्य-तीर्थाद्यधिकरणकास्पृश्यसाक्षी न दोषायेत्यभिधानात् । स्पृष्टास्पृष्टिर्न दुष्यतीति वचनं पक्वान्शुद्धौ कल्पतरुकृता लिखिते तीर्थे पक्वान्स्पर्शे न दोष इति । अत एव पुरुषोत्तमक्षेत्रादौ तथैव शिष्टाचार इति ।' Vide above note 750 for the same quotation. The शुद्धिप्र. p. 130 explains: तीर्थादौ अस्पृश्य-
स्पर्शने नाचमनस्नानादि.

There is a verse of Bṛhaspati: 'At holy places, in marriages, in a religious festival (or procession), in a battle, when there is an invasion of the country and when a town or village is on fire, no blame attaches on the ground of incurring contact with untouchable persons or things.'

In order to guard against the facile assumption that without a change of heart or change in one's sinful mode of life a mere physical act of pilgrimage and bath in holy waters would be enough, some of the texts in the Mahābhārata and Purāṇas adopted two propositions: viz. the one noted above that it is the pure mind that is a real tīrtha and further emphasized that it is better to stay at home and perform all the duties of a householder including the performance of vedic sacrifices than to go on a pilgrimage. The Śānti-parva¹²⁸⁵ in the dialogue between Tulādhāra and Jājali (a brāhmaṇa proud of his *tapas*) asserts that puroḍāśa is the holiest of offerings, that all rivers are (holy like) Sarasvatī and all hillocks (and not merely Himālaya and the like) are holy, that one's soul is a tīrtha and advises Jājali not to be a guest (i. e. to be wandering in quest of tīrthas) to several countries. The Tīrthacintāmaṇi and Tīrthaprakāśa quote passages from the Brahmapurāṇa that a brāhmaṇa should wander about tīrthas after his capacity to perform sacrifices has come to an end, that it is better for a man to stay at home and perform the duties of an householder when he has the capacity and authority to perform *īṣṭis* and *yajñas*, and that all the tīrthas do not come up (in their rewards) to the performance of *agnihotra*.¹²⁸⁶ The Kūrmapurāṇa¹²⁸⁷ has the following remarkable verses on this point. 'That person who abandoning his proper duties¹²⁸⁷ resorts to tīrthas does not reap the fruits of

1285. पुरोडाशो हि सर्वेषां पशूनां मेध्य उच्यते। सर्वा नद्यः सरस्वत्यः सर्वे पुण्याः शिलोच्चयाः। जाजले तीर्थमात्मैव मा स्म देशातिथिर्भव। एतानीदृशकान् धर्मानाचरात्तिह जाजले। कारणैर्धर्ममन्विच्छन् स लोकानाप्नुते शुभान्। शान्तिपर्व 263. 40-42. नीलकण्ठ explains: 'यत्रैवात्मसमाधानं तत्रैव सर्वाणि तीर्थानि सन्तीत्यर्थः'।

1286. यज्ञाधिकारेऽप्यथवा निवृत्ते विप्रस्तु तीर्थानि परिभ्रमेत्।... यस्येष्टियज्ञेष्वधिकारितास्ति वरं गृहं गृहधर्माश्च सर्वे। एवं गृहस्थाश्रमसंस्थितस्य तीर्थे गतिः पूर्वतरैर्निषिद्धा। सर्वाणि तीर्थान्यपि चाग्निहोत्रतुल्यानि नैवेति वयं वदामः। ब्रह्मपुराण q. by तीर्थकल्पतरु p. 9, तीर्थचि. pp. 5-6 and तीर्थप्र. p. 19. Vide नारदीय (उत्तर) 62. 22 for the first verse.

1287. यः स्वधर्मान् परित्यज्य तीर्थसेवां करोति हि। न तस्य फलते तीर्थमिह लोकं परत्र च॥ प्रायश्चित्ती च विधुरस्तथा यायावरो गृही। प्रकुर्यात्तीर्थसंसेवां यश्चान्यस्तथा जनः॥ सहाग्निर्वा सपत्नीको गच्छेत्तीर्थानि यत्नतः। सर्वपापविनिर्मुक्तो यथोक्तां गतिमाप्नुयति॥ ऋणानि त्रीण्यपाकुर्यात्कुर्वन्वा तीर्थसेवनम्। विधाय वृत्तिं पुत्राणां भार्यां तेषु निधाय च॥ कूर्म II. 44. 20-23.



pilgrimage in this world as well as in the next. A person who has to undergo an expiation (for a sin), or who is a widower or who is a householder of the *yāyāvara*¹²⁸⁸ type or similar persons may resort to pilgrimages. One may go to holy places with his vedic fires or with his wife; he becomes free from all sins and secures the best goal as stated above. One who wants to go on pilgrimages should pay off the three debts, should provide means of maintenance for his sons and should consign his wife to their care.'

Ancient writers on Dharmaśāstra favoured pilgrimages by prescribing, as stated in the Viṣṇu Dh. S., that¹²⁸⁹ no money was to be demanded from a Vedic student, a forest hermit, an ascetic, a pregnant woman and a pilgrim by a ferryman or by a toll officer and that if he took money from such persons he was to be made to return it. But this prescription was not invariably followed even by Hindu Kings. The Rājatarāṅgiṇī (VI. 254-255 and VII. 1008) notices that a tax was levied on Kashmirians performing śrāddhas at Gayā.¹²⁹⁰ It appears that Siddharāja king of Anahilavād (1095-1143 A. D.) levied a tax on pilgrims going to Somanātha at the frontier town Bāhuloda, that he remitted the tax at the intercession of his mother and that the tax thus remitted amounted to 72 lakhs of rupees every year (this last may be an exaggeration to glorify Siddharāja).^{1290a} Moslem kings levied this tax. It appears that a great writer called Kavīndrācārya took up the cause of Hindu pilgrims visiting Prayāga and Kāśī and so eloquently pleaded it before Emperor Shah Jehan that the latter remitted the tax altogether

1288. A householder is said to be of two sorts, *śālīna* and *yāyāvara*. The latter is one who subsists by picking up grains that fall down when the corn that is reaped is taken from the fields to the house or threshing floor or who does not accumulate wealth or who does not earn his livelihood by officiating as a priest or by teaching or by accepting gifts. Vide H. of Dh. vol. II. pp. 641-642 and notes 1501-1504. For the three debts to Gods, Manes and sages, vide. H. of Dh. vol. II. pp. 270 and 425.

1289. ब्रह्मचारिवानप्रस्थाभिर्भुगुर्विणीतीर्थानुसारिणां नाविकः शौलिकः शुल्कमाद-
दानश्च । तच्च तेषां दद्यात् । विष्णुधर्मसूत्र V. 132-133.

1290. काश्मीरिकाणां यः श्राद्धशुल्कोच्छेत्ता गयान्तरे । सोप्येरमन्तकः शूरः
परिहासपुराश्रयः ॥ बद्धा महाशिलां कण्ठे वितस्ताम्भसि पातितः । राजतः । VI. 254-55.
The valiant एरमन्तक of परिहासपुर who had relieved Kashmir residents from the tax at Gayā was drowned in Vitastā (by queen Diddā) with a big stone tied round his neck.

1290a. Vide Bom. G. vol. I. part 1 p. 172 and Prabandha-cintāmaṇi (tr. by Tawney p. 84).



and conferred upon the great scholar ¹²⁹¹ the title of 'Sarva-vidyā-nidhāna'. People throughout India felt such relief at the remission of the tax that congratulatory letters and addresses (several of them couched in very poetic language) poured upon Kavindrācārya. These have been published in a work styled 'Kavindra-candrodaya' by Dr. Har Dutta Sharma and Mr. M. M. Patkar (in the Poona Oriental series), a characteristic verse from which is quoted below.¹²⁹² In a remarkable copper-plate Inscription in Sanskrit¹²⁹³ and Kannada issued by the Hoysala king Narasimha III in Māgha śake 1200 (1279 A. D.) it is said that the king granted the revenues (amounting to 645 *niṣkas* a year) of a village called Hebbāle to the pilgrims of Kāśī and to god Śrīviśveśvara for the purpose of enabling the pilgrims to Benares (including those from the whole of Karnāṭaka, from the countries of Telingana, Tulu, Tirhut, Gauda and others) to pay off the tax levied by the Turuṣkas (Moslem kings).¹²⁹³

The digests quote certain verses of the Brahmapurāṇa about the rites to be performed when a person decides to start on a pilgrimage. The Brahmapurāṇa provides that the intending pilgrim should restrain his senses the previous day, should observe a fast and on the next day he should offer worship to Gaṇeśa, the gods, the pitrs and honour good brāhmaṇas according to his ability and when he returns from the pilgrimage he should offer similar worship and honour.¹²⁹⁴ The digests

1291. Vide I. A. vol. 41 (1912) p. 7 at p. 11 for an account by the late M. M. Haraprasad Shastri of the abolition of the pilgrim tax by Shah Jehan.

1292. येन श्रीसाहिजाहाँ नरपतितिलकः स्वस्य वश्यः कृतोऽभूत्किं चावश्यं प्रपन्नः पुनरापि विहितः साहिदाराशकोहः । काशीतीर्थप्रयागप्रतिजनितकरग्राहमोक्षकहेतुः सोयं श्रीमान्कवीन्द्रो जयति कविगुरुस्तीर्थराजाधिराजः ॥ कवीन्द्रचन्द्रोदय p. 23 No. 169. There is possibly a veiled allusion to गजेन्द्रमोक्ष in the words 'ग्राहमोक्ष'.

1293. Vide Epigraphia Carnatica, vol. 15 No. 298 pp. 71-73 (containing transliterated text) and p. 12 of the dynastic list; the important words in Kannada are 'Ellā-kṣetravāsi-gaḷu Turuṣkarige ... Kula karnāṭagaru Telugaru...Tulū-Maleylaru...Tirabhukti-garu...Gavudigaru' &c. This inscription indicates that the expression 'Turuṣkadanḍa' occurring in certain Gāhaḍvāla Inscriptions such as those in E. I. IX at p. 305, E. I. XIII, p. 295, E. I. XIV, p. 195 meant a levy imposed by Moslem raiders and rulers.

1294. यो यः कश्चित्तीर्थयात्रां तु गच्छेत्सुसंयतः स च पूर्वं गृहे स्वे । कृतोपवासः शुचिरप्रमत्तः सम्पूजयेद्भक्तिमग्नौ गणेशम् ॥ देवान् पितॄन् ब्राह्मणांश्चैव साधून् धीमान् पितॄन् ब्राह्मणान् पूजयेच्च । प्रयागतश्चापि पुनस्तथैव देवान् पितॄन् ब्राह्मणान् पूजयेच्च । ब्रह्मपुराण q. by तीर्थकल्पः p. 9, तीर्थचि. p. 6 (explains सुसंयत इति पूर्वदिने कृतैकभक्तादिनियमः), तीर्थचि.

(Continued on next page)

explain that on return there is no fast and no worship of Gaṇeśa. He should perform śrāddha in which there is plenty of ghee, honour three brāhmaṇas (at least) with the offer of sandalwood paste &c. and then make a resolve (*saṅkalpa*) to go on pilgrimage. The Vāyupurāṇa ¹²⁹⁵ and the digests lay down that (after the worship of Gaṇeśa, the planets and the deities) he should put on the dress of a *kārpaṭi* viz. wear a copper-ring, a copper bracelet and reddish garments. Bhaṭṭoji (p. 5) states that according to some the apparel of *kārpaṭika* is to be put on by a pilgrim going to Gayā. The Padma (IV. 19. 22) prescribes the pilgrim's dress for other tirthas also. The Tīr. C. adds that this dress is to be worn only on the journey to a tirtha, when the pilgrim is in a tirtha, but not at the time of performing his daily duties such as taking meals (p. 9).

There is a difference of opinion among the digests as to whether tonsure of the head is obligatory when starting on a pilgrimage. The Padmapurāṇa ¹²⁹⁶ and Skandapurāṇa appear to make it obligatory. The Tīrtha-Kalpataru does not ¹²⁹⁷ refer to tonsure at all, while a fast at a tirtha is declared by it to be optional. The tendency of later digest-writers is generally to make every religious act more elaborate and harder. The tonsure of the head and beard was prescribed for a sacrificer

(Continued from the last page)

p. 23 (which states 'सुसंयतः पूर्वदिने कृतैकभक्तादिनियम इति केचित्, ब्रह्मचर्यादियुक्त इति तु युक्तम्'). In *Dinanath v. Hrishikesh* 18 C. W. N. 1303 this passage of the Brahmapurāṇa is quoted and relied upon. These verses occur in नारदीय (उत्तर) 62. 24-25). The स्कन्दपु. (काशीखण्ड 6. 56-57) and पद्म have similar verses: तीर्थयात्रां चिकीर्षुः प्राग्विधायोपोषणं गृहे । गणेशं च पितृन् विप्रान् साधून् शक्त्या प्रपूज्य च । कृतपारणको हृष्टो गच्छेन्नियमधृक् पुनः । आगत्याभ्यर्च्य च पितृन् यथोक्तफलभागवत् ॥ पद्म, उत्तरखण्ड 237. 36-38. ब्रह्म 76. 18-19 provide नान्दीमुखश्राद्ध, देहशुद्धि, ब्राह्मणभोजन, remaining celibate and not talking with *patita* people, when one is on a pilgrimage to गोदावरी.

1295. उद्यतश्चेद्गयां गन्तुं श्राद्धं कृत्वा विधानतः । विधाय कार्पटीवेषं कृत्वा ग्रामं प्रदक्षिणम् । ततो ग्रामान्तरं गत्वा श्राद्धशेषस्य भोजनम् । वायुपु. 110. 2-3, q. by तीर्थचि. p. 7, तीर्थप्र. p. 29 (which explains 'कार्पटीवेषः ताम्रमुद्राताम्रकङ्कणकाषायवस्त्रधारणम्'). The तीर्थचि. remarks that although these requirements are mentioned in connection with Gayā, these hold good as to pilgrimages to all holy places. Besides, this *kārpaṭika* apparel is to be worn only when actually travelling and not when the pilgrim performs his daily duties or takes his meals or offers śrāddha.

1296. तीर्थोपवासः कर्तव्यः शिरसो मुण्डनं तथा । शिरोगतानि पापानि याप्ति मुण्डनतो यतः । पद्म (उत्तरखण्ड 237. 45), स्कन्द (काशीखण्ड 6. 65).

1297. तीर्थोपवासश्च फलविशेषार्थः । तीर्थमभिगम्य व्रतोपवासनियमयुक्तं यत्प्रवृत्तिं गृह्णति तत्रात्रमुषित्वा सर्वपापैः प्रमुच्यते स्वस्तिमांश्च भवतीति देवलवचनात् । तीर्थकल्प (p. 11)



when undertaking such solemn Vedic sacrifices as Cāturmāsyas and Agniṣṭoma.¹²⁹⁸ The termination of the stage of Vedic studenthood (*samāvartana*) was also marked by tonsure.¹²⁹⁹ Further, tonsure was prescribed when undergoing *prāyaścitta* for sins (vide p. 122 above). The Tīr. C. and Tīr. Pr. both quote a verse of Viṣṇu ¹³⁰⁰ from the Smṛtisamuccaya, viz. 'at Prayāga, on a pilgrimage, on the death of one's father or mother one should cut one's hair; but one should not cut one's hair without cause.' The Mit. on Yāj. III. 17 quotes a verse as follows: 'On the Ganges, in Bhāskarakṣetra, on the death of one's father, mother and *guru*, at the time of consecrating Vedic fires and at a *soma* sacrifice—tonsure is prescribed in these seven cases. Some read 'saṭsu' and therefore they take the first two words as meaning 'on the Ganges only at Prayāga.' Both Tīr. C. and Tīr. Pr. quote a verse ¹³⁰¹ which says that tonsure and fast are acts that must be done at all tirthas except at Kurukṣetra, Viśālā (Ujjayinī or Badarikā), Virajā (river in Orissa) and Gayā.' In the case of a *snātaka*, all the hair except the top-knot is cut and

1298. Vide Sat. Br. II. 6. 3. 14 ff. (S. B. E. vol. 12 pp. 448).

1299. Pāraskara gr. II. 6. 17, Khādīra gr. III. 1. 2. 23, Sāh. gr. III. 1. 1-2 (S. B. E. vol. 29. p. 314, p. 408, p. 91 respectively). The Khādīra gr. is 'prāśya vāpayet śikhāvarjam keśāśmaśrulomanakhāni.'

1300. मनुष्याणां तु पापानि तीर्थानि प्रतिगच्छताम्। केशमाश्रित्य तिष्ठन्ति तस्मात्तद्वपनं चरेत् ॥ पद्म, पातालखण्ड 19. 21; उपवासदिने मुण्डनमपि। प्रयागे तीर्थयात्रायां पितृमातृवियोगतः। कचानां वपनं कुर्याद्द्विधा न विकचो भवेत् ॥ इति स्मृतिसमुच्चयधृत-विष्णुलिखितवचनात्। तीर्थचि. p. 7, तीर्थप्र. p. 28. This verse is नारदीय (उत्तर) 62. 28. The मिता. on या. III. 17 quotes the following verse: गङ्गायां भास्करक्षेत्रे मातापित्रोर्गुरुर्मृतौ ॥ आधानकाले सोमे च वपनं सप्तसु स्मृतम् ॥. भास्करक्षेत्र is प्रयाग acc. to some and कोणार्क acc. to others. It is not correct to translate 'ādhanē' as 'in the Garbhādhāna ceremony' (as Dr. Chaudhuri does on p. 55 of his English Intro. to गङ्गावाक्या°). आधान by itself in धर्मशास्त्र works generally means अग्न्याधान. गर्भाधान is referred to by the word निषेक or गर्भाधान itself. भास्करक्षेत्र is really कोणार्क and not प्रयाग, which latter is called प्रजापतिक्षेत्र in मत्स्य 104.5 and 111. 14.

1301. मुण्डनं चोपवासश्च सर्वतीर्थेष्वयं विधिः। वर्जयित्वा कुरुक्षेत्रं विशालां विरजां गयां ॥ वायुपु. 105. 25 q. by तीर्थचि. p. 14 (ascribes to स्कन्दपुराण), तीर्थप्र. p. 50 (ascribes to देवल and स्कन्द). The तीर्थप्र. (p. 50) refers to the view of तीर्थकल्प°. 'यद्यपि कल्पतरुकारेण तीर्थे मुण्डनं नोक्तं न वा तत्र प्रमाणं दर्शितं तथापि मुण्डनं चोपवासश्चेत्यादिवाक्यस्य सकलशिष्टपरिगृहीतत्वात्तत्कर्तव्यमेव'. The तीर्थचि. p. 32 also does the same. In the गङ्गावाक्या° second half is read as वर्जयित्वा गयां गङ्गां विशालां विरजां तथा ॥ and is said to be from स्कन्दपुराण. The बालम्भट्ट on या. III. 17 explains विरजं as दक्षिणदेशस्थं लोणारक्षेत्रमपि विरजमित्यादित्यपुराणम्. The first half is अग्नि 115. 7 and the whole verse is ascribed to अग्निपुराण by the पृथ्वीचन्द्रोदय folio 141a and occurs also in नारदीय (उत्तर) 62. 45.

in the case of women whose husbands are living only two finger-breadths of hair are cut. Vṛddha-Hārīta (IX. 386-387) lays down that in the case of women whose husbands are living tonsure of the head should not be carried out, but that holding up all their hair only three finger-breadths should be cut off. Other smṛtis like Āpastamba in verse (I. 33-34), Āṅgīras verse 163, Yama 54-55, Parāśara q. by the Mitākṣarā on Yāj. III. 263-264 lay down that tonsure is limited to the cutting of two finger-breadths of hair in the case of woman (nārī). Par. M. ¹³⁰² II. 1. p. 291 reads 'evam nārikumārīṇām' and holds that nārī means here 'a woman whose husband is alive'. Although the smṛti passages occur in the section on prāyaścitta still by analogy they are to be applied to the tonsure in holy places. As regards widows, ascetics ¹³⁰³ and śūdras all hair are to be cut. The Tirthaprakāśa finds fault with Vācaspatimīśra for saying that there is no tonsure on the Ganges. When there is such a conflict of views, the final decision rests with the usage of each country or the individual's choice. The Tir. K. (p. 10) appears to hold that honouring the pitṛs at the time of starting on a pilgrimage is specially obligatory on a man with means. The texts make a difference between kṣaura and muṇḍana. The latter means 'shaving the hair on the head as well as the moustache and beard,' while kṣaura means only shaving the head. Therefore the Nāradya says that all sages did not prohibit kṣaura even at Gayā but only muṇḍana is forbidden there ^{1303a} and there is no muṇḍana on the Ganges anywhere except at Prayāga. The Tirthenduśekhara (p. 7) gives it as its opinion that tonsure and fast are not obligatory but are only kāmya (i. e. to be done if certain rewards are desired) and points out that śiṣṭas do not resort to these two at many tirthas.

1302. स्त्रीणां पराशरेण विशेषोऽभिहितः। वपनं नैव नारीणां... सर्वान्केशान्समुद्धृत्य छेदयेदङ्गुलिद्वयम्। सर्वत्रैवं हि नारीणां शिरसो मुण्डनं स्मृतम्॥ मिता. on या. III. 263-264; सर्वान् केशान्... मुण्डनं भवेत्॥ इत्यस्य प्रायश्चित्तप्रकरणे श्रुतस्याकांक्षातौल्येनात्राप्यन्यथात्। प्रयागादावपि तासां द्व्यङ्गुलकेशाग्रकर्तनमात्रं वपनम्। तीर्थप्र. pp. 50-51.

1303. यतिः शूद्रश्च विधवा सशिखं वपनं चरेत्। इति दाक्षिणात्याः। वाचस्पति-मिश्रास्तु-वर्जयित्वा गयां गङ्गां विशालां विरजां तथा-इति पठित्वा गङ्गायां न मुण्डनमिति प्रलपन्ति। तन्न साधीयः। अस्य पाठस्य शिष्टैरपरिग्रहात्। तीर्थप्र. p. 51.

1303 a. गयादावपि देवेशि श्मश्रूणां वपनं विना। न क्षौरं मुनिभिः सर्वत्रैवं हि नारीणां शिरसो मुण्डनं स्मृतम्॥ सश्मश्रुकेशवपनं मुण्डनं तद्विदुर्बुधाः। न क्षौरं मुण्डनं सुभ्रु कीर्तितं वेदविभिः॥ नारदीय (उत्तर) 62. 54-55, प्रयागव्यतिरेके तु गङ्गायां मुण्डनं नहि। *ibid* chap. 62. 52.

The Purāṇas and digests devote some attention to the mode of travel. The Matsya (106. 4-6) states that ¹³⁰⁴ if a pilgrim goes to Prayāga in a conveyance drawn by bulls he falls into hell and his pītṛs do not accept the water offered by him at the holy place and if a pilgrim because of riches or avarice or foolishness goes in a conveyance (not drawn by bulls) all his effort (as a pilgrim) becomes fruitless and therefore a pilgrim should avoid journey in a conveyance. According to the Kalpataru (on Tirtha p. 11) using a conveyance is forbidden only in the case of pilgrimage to Prayāga (and not in the case of other tirthas), while the Tir. C. (p. 8) and Tir. Pr. (p. 45) quote a verse ¹³⁰⁵ which provides that if a pilgrim uses a cart drawn by bulls he is guilty of *govadhā* (killing a cow), if he travels on horse-back (or in a horse-drawn carriage) his pilgrimage yields no fruit, if he is carried by men (in a palanquin or the like) he secures only half the merit but if he travels bare-footed then he wins the full merit. The Padma-purāṇa (IV. 19. 27) has a similar verse. The Tir. Pr. p. 34 quotes a verse from the Kūmapurāṇa that those who are unable to perform a pilgrimage otherwise do not incur blame (or loss) by making use of a conveyance drawn by men or a chariot which is drawn by mules or horses. Similarly, a verse of the Viṣṇupurāṇa ¹³⁰⁶ quoted by both Tir. C. and Tir. Pr. (pp. 34-35) provides that one should always go on a journey wearing shoes and holding an umbrella in the rains or in summer and armed with a staff at night or in a forest. The Viṣṇudharmottara takes a more practical view when it says that to make a pil-

1304. प्रयागतीर्थयात्रार्थी यः प्रयाति नरः क्वचित्। बलीवर्दसमारूढः शृणु तस्यापि यत्फलम्॥ नरके वसते घोरे गवां क्रोधो हि दारुणः। सलिलं न च गृह्णन्ति पितरस्तस्य देहिनः॥ ऐश्वर्यालाभमोहाद्वा गच्छेद्यानेन यो नरः। निष्फलं तस्य तत्सर्वं तस्माद्यानं विवर्जयेत्॥ मत्स्य. 106. 4-5 and 7. These verses are quoted by तीर्थचि. p. 8 (its reading ऐश्वर्यालाभमाहात्म्यात् is better) and तीर्थप्र. pp. 33-34. The verse ऐश्वर्यालाभमाहात्म्यात्° is q. by प्राय. तत्त्व p. 492. The कूर्म (I. 37. 4-5) has the verse ऐश्वर्यालोभमोहाद्वा।... वर्जयेत्. The गङ्गावाक्या° p. 13 reads ऐश्वर्यमदमोहेन and remarks 'मत्स्यपुराणीय-वचनस्य प्रयागयात्राप्रकरणस्थत्वात् ऐश्वर्यमदमोहेनैव प्रयागगमनेपि दोषाभावः।'

1305. गोयाने गोवधः प्रोक्तो हययाने तु निष्फलम्। नरयाने तदर्थं स्यात् पद्भ्यां तच्च चतुर्गुणम्॥ q. by गङ्गाभक्ति° p. 13, तीर्थचि. and तीर्थप्र. ; 'उपानद्भ्यां चतुर्थीशं गोयाने गोवधादिकम्' पद्म° IV. 19.27.

1306. वर्षातपादिके छत्री दण्डी रात्र्यदवीषु च। शरीरत्राणकामो वै सोपानत्कः सदा व्रजेत्॥ इति विष्णुपुराणीयवचनेन निष्प्रतिपक्षसदाशब्दस्वरसात् तीर्थयात्रायामपि उपान-परिधानमावश्यकमिति। तीर्थचि. pp. 8-9. This verse is विष्णुपु. III. 12. 38; नारदीय (उत्तर) 62. 35 is almost the same; तीर्थानुसरणं पद्भ्यां तपः परमिहोच्यते॥ तदेव कृत्वा यानेन स्नानमात्रफलं लभेत्॥ विष्णुधर्मोत्तर III. 273. 11-12.



grimage on foot is the highest *tapas* (austerity) and that if a pilgrimage be made in a conveyance the pilgrim will reap only the reward of the bath. The Tīr. Pr. (p. 35) allows the use of a vessel to reach holy places like Gaṅgāsāgara which cannot be reached otherwise.

The Tristhali-setu (pp. 1-3) has a long discussion about the *saṅkalpa*¹³⁰⁷ (declaration) to be made at the time of starting on a pilgrimage. The conclusions reached are that the declaration should not include the names of all the holy places intended to be visited, but should expressly state the last one up to which one desires to go, that persons from southern or western India should make a *saṅkalpa* about Gayā (and pilgrimage to Prayāga and Kāśī will be implied) and that a person from East India should make a *saṅkalpa* about Prayāga (and pilgrimage to Gayā and Kāśī will be included as a matter of course) and that (as an alternative method) a man from south or west India should at first make a *saṅkalpa* about pilgrimage to Prayāga, then while in Prayāga he should make a *saṅkalpa* about visiting Kāśī and then in Kāśī he should make a *saṅkalpa* about visiting Gayā. A pilgrim from Eastern India should first make a *saṅkalpa* about Gayā, then, while in Gayā, he should make one about Kāśī and so on. The Tīrthaprakāśa (p. 326) appears to criticize the first method proposed by the Tristhalisetu and states its own view to be that those who intend to visit many sacred places should make a *saṅkalpa* in the form 'I shall perform pilgrimage' (Tīrtha-yātrāmaham kariṣye). The Tīrthaprakāśa, however, approves of the second method proposed as an alternative.

That the merit of a pilgrimage could be collected in a vicarious manner is laid down by the Smṛtis and Purāṇas. Atri (50-51) provides¹³⁰⁸ 'He for whom an effigy made with kuśa grass intending it as a representative is dipped in the waters of a holy place secures one-eighth part of the merit' (that he would have secured by himself bathing in the waters). If a man takes a bath (in a holy place) having in view (the benefit

1307. The *saṅkalpa* may take the form ओं अद्य प्रतिपदमश्वमेधयज्ञजन्य-फलसमफलप्राप्तिकामोऽमुकतीर्थयात्रामहं करिष्ये।

1308. प्रतिकृतिं कुशमयीं तीर्थवारिषु मज्जयेत्। यमुद्दिश्य निमज्जेत अष्टभागं लभेत सः। मातरं पितरं वापि भ्रातरं सुहृदं गुरुम्। यमुद्दिश्य निमज्जेत द्वादशांशफलं लभेत्। अत्रि 50-51। The first verse is quoted as पैठीनासि's by तीर्थकल्प० p. 11 and by तीर्थचि. pp. 14 and occurs in स्कन्द (काशी० 6. 64); the 2nd is q. by प्राय. तत्त्व. 492, as from अत्रि. The गङ्गावाक्यावली (p. 59) reads लभेत् सः and attributes it to गङ्गाधर पाण्डेय।

of his mother, father, brother, friend or guru, these latter receive one-twelfth of the fruit (of the pilgrimage). Another verse of Paithīnasi says that he who visits a holy place for money (wages) from another gets only a 16th part of the merit, but he who goes to a tirtha while bent on another purpose or errand (such as study, business, waiting on a guru) ¹³⁰⁹ reaps only half the merit. The Viṣṇudharmottara has a similar verse. It was owing to this idea of collecting merit and God's Grace that wealthy men built *Dharmaśālās*, *tanks*, and *annasattras* and wells for the conveniences of pilgrims and the planting of trees by the sides of roads had in view the comfort of pilgrims as well as of the general public. The Prabhāsa-khaṇḍa remarks 'A wealthy man who enables another to perform pilgrimage by providing his own money or conveyances gets one-fourth of the merit of the pilgrimage.' ¹³¹⁰

The Prāyaścittatattva of Raghunandana quotes from the Brahmāṇḍapurāṇa some verses which enumerate fourteen acts that a pilgrim has to give up after reaching the Ganges viz. *śauca* (punctilious performance of bodily purification), *ācamana* (sipping water on various occasions in the day), hair (dressing), wearing *nirmālya* (flowers taken away after being offered in worship), repeating the Aghamarṣaṇa hymn (Rg. 190. 1-3), shampooing the body, sports, acceptance of gifts, sexual dalliance, devotion to another tirtha, praising another tirtha, the gift to others of clothes (worn by oneself), striking any one and swimming across the water of the tirtha.

One noticeable rule is that, though Manu III. 149 requires strict examination of the ancestry and learning of brāhmaṇas to be invited at a śrāddha, some of the Purāṇas provide ¹³¹¹ that

1309. पैठिनसिः। षोडशांशं स लभते यः परार्थेन गच्छति। अर्थं तीर्थफलं तस्य यः प्रसङ्गेन गच्छति। तीर्थकल्प. p. 11, प्राय. तत्त्व. p. 492 (explains परार्थेन वेतनादिना प्रसङ्गेन उद्देश्यान्तरप्रसङ्गेन), तीर्थप्र. p. 36 (प्रसङ्गेन गुरुसेवाध्ययनवाणिज्यादिरेव विहितविहितरूपः). This is found in स्कन्द (काशी° chap. 6.63). The first half is पद्म VI. 237. 43.

1310. यश्चान्यं कारयेत् शक्त्या तीर्थयात्रां तथेश्वरः। स्वकीयद्रव्ययानाभ्यां तस्य पुण्यं चतुर्गुणम्॥ प्रभासखण्ड q. by तीर्थप्र. p. 36; तीर्थ प्राप्यानुषङ्गेन स्नानं तीर्थे समाचरेत्। स्नानजं फलमामोति तीर्थयात्राफलं न तु॥ शङ्ख 8.12 q. by स्मृतिच. I. p. 132 and कल्पतरु (तीर्थ) p. 11. Almost the same verse occurs in पद्मपु. VI. 237, 41-42; vide विष्णुधर्मोत्तर III. 273.10 for a similar verse.

1311. तीर्थेषु ब्राह्मणं नैव परीक्षेत कथंचन। अन्नार्थिनमनुप्राप्तं भोज्यं तं मनुजब्रवीत्॥ पद्म V. 29.212 and देवीपुराण q. by तीर्थकल्प° p. 10; ब्राह्मणास्त परीक्षेत श्राद्धे क्षेत्रिणो वासिनः। सुमहान्परिवादोऽस्य ब्राह्मणानां परीक्षणे॥ स्कन्द° (प्रभासखण्ड) quoted by पृथ्वीचन्द्रोदय folio 130 b; न परीक्ष्यो द्विजस्तीर्थेऽन्नार्थी भोज्य एव च। सक्तुभिः पिण्डदानं च चरुणा पायसेन वा। स्कन्द° (काशी° 6. 56-57).



one should not enter upon an examination of the worth of brāhmaṇas at holy places and this view is endorsed by several digests such as the Kalpataru on tirtha (p. 10), the Tīr. C. (p. 10) and the Tīr. Pr. (p. 73). The last work remarks that brāhmaṇas who are known for certain to possess defects deserving condemnation should be avoided. The Varāhapurāṇa goes¹³¹² so far as to say that at Mathurā a pilgrim should prefer to honour a brāhmaṇa born and bred up in Mathurā rather than a brāhmaṇa who has studied the four Vedas (but is a stranger to Mathurā). Similar passages from the Vāyu and Skandapurāṇa have been quoted above in note 910 and there is another similar passage in Skanda. It is provided by the Vāyupurāṇa¹³¹³ that when a son goes to Gayā, he should invite only those brāhmaṇas that have been settled in Gayā by Brahmā and that such brāhmaṇas are above ordinary mortals, that when they are gratified the gods together with one's *pitṛs* become pleased, that one should not enter upon a consideration of their family, their character, their learning or their austerities and that when the Gayā brāhmaṇas are honoured the man doing so secures release (from saṃsāra). In Vāyu 106. 73-84 and Agni 114. 33-39 and Garuḍa it is narrated that, after Gayāsura fell down and asked for boons which were granted by Viṣṇu, Brahmā bestowed upon the Gayā brāhmaṇas 55 villages and Gayātirtha extending over five *krośas*, gave them well-appointed houses, desire-yielding cows and trees, but he enjoined on them not to beg or accept a gift from others. The brāhmaṇas, however, greedy as they were, officiated at a sacrifice performed by Dharma (Yama) and begged him for fees and accepted them. Then Brahmā cursed them that they would always be in debt and took away the Kāmadhenu and Kalpavṛkṣa and other gifts. The Agnipurāṇa¹³¹⁴ (114. 37) adds that Brahmā cursed them to be bereft of all learning and to be full of greed. The brāhmaṇas then begged Brahmā to favour them with some means of livelihood (as they had been deprived by the curse of Brahmā of all that had been bestowed on them). Brahmā pitied them and told them that they would maintain themselves at Gayā-tirtha

1312. चतुर्वेदं परित्यज्य माथुरं पूजयेत्सदा । मथुरायां ये वसन्ति विष्णुरूपा हि ते नराः । ज्ञानिनस्तान् हि पश्यन्ति अज्ञाः पश्यन्ति तावत्तु हि । वराह 165. 57-58.

1313. यदि पुत्रो गयां गच्छेत्कदाचित्कालपर्ययात् । तानेव भोजयेद्विप्रान् ब्रह्मणामेव प्रकल्पिताः । अमानुषतया विप्रा ब्राह्मणा (ब्रह्मणा?) ये प्रकल्पिताः । वायु 82. 25-27.

1314 स्थिता यदि गयायां ते ज्ञातास्ते ब्रह्मणा तदा । विद्याविवर्जिता यूयं तेषामप्युक्ता भविष्यथ ॥ अग्नि 114. 36-37.

till the end of the world and that those who would perform śrāddha at Gayā and worship them (by engaging them as officiating priests and pay them) would secure the merit of having worshipped Brahmā. From this it is clear that the Gayā brāhmaṇas at the time of the composition of the section on Gayā at the end of the Vāyupurāṇa possessed the same characteristics as the modern Gayā brāhmaṇas (Gayāls or Gayāwals as they are called) and made the Gayā pilgrimage their business even then (as now). One of the early historic references to Gayā brāhmaṇas occurs in the Śaktipur copper-plate of king Lakṣmaṇasena of Bengal in his 6th year (i. e. about 1183 A. D.)¹³¹⁵.

The result of this teaching of the Purāṇas was that the brāhmaṇas at Gayā became a guild or a close corporation and the Gayāwals resent the intrusion of an outsider. Disputes between Gayāwals and outside priests and cases of Gayāwals have come before the courts and have gone up even to the Privy Council in England. It has been a usage for orthodox Hindu pilgrims going to Gayā to shave themselves at the river called Punpun,^{1315a} then on arrival at Gayā to worship the feet of one of the Gayāwal brāhmaṇas. The Gayāwal himself or his agent takes the pilgrim to the sacred spots (Vedīs) in and around Gayā. The priest is paid a fat fee near the Akṣaya-vāṭa and the Gayāwal puts a garland of flowers on the folded hands of the pilgrim and pronounces the word 'suphala' and utters a blessing that the pilgrim's ancestors would go to heaven on account of the pilgrim's visit to Gayā. In order to keep this business in their own families the Gayāwals have adopted loose and peculiar customs. If a Gayāwal is sonless he makes a gift of his office (called *gādi* or *gaddi*) to another Gayāwal, who describes himself as the adopted son of the Gayāwal making the gift. There is no real adoption in the strict sense. Therefore, the so called adopted son retains his rights in the family of birth, he is not severed from his natural family and it is not rare to find that one Gayāwal claims to have succeeded to four *gādis* (i. e. claims to be the son adopted by several persons simultaneously). The Gayāwals have got books in which they enter the names and addresses of

1315. Vide E. I. vol. XXI. p. 211 at p. 219 'श्रीबल्लालसेनदेवप्रदत्त-गयाल ब्राह्मणहरिदासेन प्रतिगृहीतपञ्चशतोत्पात्तिकक्षेत्रपाटकाभिधानशासनविनिमयेन.'

1315 a. The गरुडपुराण says: वाराणस्यां कृतश्राद्धस्तीर्थे शोणनदे तथा। पुनःपुनः महानद्यां श्राद्धं स्वर्गं पितृभ्योऽर्पयेत्॥ q. in पृथ्वीच. folio 141 a.



their clients, who sign such entries and enjoin upon their descendants to make members of that particular Gayāwal family their *gurus* whenever they might visit Gayā. Thus large incomes and properties come to the hands of the Gayāwals. They send their agents throughout India, who bring as many pilgrims as possible. In *Lachman Lal v. Kanhaya Lal* the Privy ¹³¹⁶ Council had to deal with the case of a Gayāwal who claimed to be an adopted son without loss of his interest in the property of the natural family on the ground of these peculiar practices of the Gayāwals and that claim was upheld. In *Lachman Lal v. Baldeo Lal* ¹³¹⁷ the Patna High Court gives a brief summary of the origin, history and customs of the Gayāwals, remarks that though in former times there were several hundred families of Gayāwals their number is now reduced to about 150, that the Gayāwals so-called *gaddi* is not a hereditary office, but only a business to which a goodwill is attached. The Calcutta High Court decided in *Dwarkanath Misser* ¹³¹⁸ v. *Rampertab Misser* that persons who require religious ceremonies to be performed for their benefit are at liberty to choose the priest by whom they shall be performed, that plaintiffs are not entitled to a declaration that they along with defendants are exclusively entitled to officiate as priests when pilgrims, on their way to the holy city of Gayā, perform the *śrāddha* ceremony of their ancestors on the bank of the sacred river Punpun, and that the plaintiffs could be given a declaration that they are entitled to officiate as priests for such pilgrims as may choose to employ them for the purpose of religious ceremonies and that the defendants are not entitled to prevent the plaintiffs from the exercise of their calling. In *Narayan Lal* ¹³¹⁹ v. *Chulhan Lal* the Calcutta High Court decided how the books containing the names and addresses of pilgrims kept by a joint family of Gayāwals were to be divided at the time of the partition of all the properties of the family.

The literature on tīrthas is probably far more extensive than on any other single topic of Dharmaśāstra. Not to mention the Vedic Literature, the Mahābhārata and the Purāṇas

1316. 22 Cal. 609 at pp. 615-618 (P. C.) = 22 I. A. 51.

1317. 2 Patna Law Journal 705.

1318. 13 C. L. J. p. 449.

1319. 15 C. L. J. p. 376.



contain on a very modest calculation at least 40000 verses on tirthas, sub-tirthas and legends connected with them. In the Vanaparva (chap. 82-156) and Śalyaparva (chap. 35-54) alone there are about 3900 verses on *tīrthayātrā*. To mention only a few of the Purāṇas, the Brahmapurāṇa devotes about 6700 verses (i. e. nearly half of its total extent of 13783 verses) to tirthas, the Padma about 4000 verses out of the 31000 verses of the first five khaṇḍas, the Varāhapurāṇa devotes about 3182 verses to tirthas (out of which about 1400 refer to Mathurā) out of about 9614 verses, the Matsya about 1200 verses out of 14002. Besides these, the following well-known digests and works on tirthas deserve mention. The Tīrthavivecana-kāṇḍa of the Kalpataru of Lakṣmīdhara (G. O. S. series); the Caturvarga-1320 cintāmaṇi of Hemādri (1260-1270 A. D.) contained a section on tirthas (no Ms. has yet been discovered); the Tīrthacintāmaṇi of Vācaspati (1450-1480 A. D.) published in B. I. series; the Tīrthasāra, part of Nṛsiṃhaprasāda about 1500 A. D. (published in the Sarasvatī-bhavana series); the Tristhalīsetu of Nārāyaṇabhaṭṭa (about 1550-1580 A. D.) printed by the Ānandāśrama Press, Poona; Tīrthasaukhya, a part of Tōḍarānanda (1565-1589 A. D.); Tīrthatattva or Tīrthayātrāvidhitattva of Raghunandana whose literary activity lies between 1520-1570 A. D. (printed in Bengali characters and over and above the 28 *tattvas* of his *Smṛtitattva*); Tīrthaprakāśa by Mitrāmīśra about 1610-1640 (published in the Chowkhamba Sanskrit series); the Tristhalīsetusāra-saṅgraha of Bhaṭṭoji (about 1625); Tristhalīsetusāra-saṅgraha of Nāgeśa; the Tīrthenduśekhara of Nāgeśa or Nāgoji (published in the Sarasvatībhavana series, Benares, 1936). There are several works on tirthas (not yet printed) mentioned in H. of Dh. vol. 1. p. 554, of which the Tīrtharatnākara of Anantabhaṭṭa composed at the order of Anūpasimha is probably the largest work on tirthas (ms. no. 1822 in the Anup Library at Bikaner). Besides these there are special works on indivi-

1320. Vide H. of Dh. vol. 1 p. 354 n. 838 which shows that Hemādri had completed his section on tīrtha when he commenced the *Parīṣeṣa-khaṇḍa*. It may be noted that the *त्रिस्थलीसेतु* and the *तीर्थप्रकाश* had the work of Hemādri on tīrtha before them. For examples, the *त्रिस्थलीसेतु* p. 53 'तथा च हेमाद्र्यादिष्वदिपुराणवाक्यानि ब्राह्मणस्यापि मरणविधायकानि; p. 55 'विशेषस्तु हेमाद्रीयशरीरोत्सर्गविधेरवगन्तव्यः'; the *तीर्थप्रकाश* pp. 122, 123, 136, 377 refer to हेमाद्रि's quotations from the *स्कन्दपुराण*, *भविष्यपुराण*, *जाबालोपनिषद्* and *कूर्मपुराण* respectively, which unmistakably refer to *tīrthas* and p. 478 speaks of *तीर्थहेमाद्रि*.



dual tīrthas such as the Gaṅgā-vākyāvalī¹³²¹ (on the Ganges) of Vidyāpati (1400-1450 A. D.) published by Dr. J. B. Chaudhuri; Kāśīmr̥timokṣa-vicāra of Sureśvarācārya (published in the Sarasvatībhavana Texts series, Benares 1936); the Gayāśrāddha-paddhati of Raghunandana, the Puruṣottama-kṣetratattva of Raghunandana (published by Jivananda). Only printed works have been drawn upon in this work (except where expressly stated otherwise).

The preliminaries before starting on a pilgrimage to any tīrtha prescribed by the purāṇas and digests may be brought together. On a certain day (when a person has decided on tīrtha-yātrā) he should take only one meal, then the next day he should shave himself (according to most digests) and observe a fast; then on the day after the fast he should perform his daily duties, should make a *sankalpa* (declaration of intention) in the form 'I shall perform a pilgrimage to such and such a place and I shall worship Gaṇeśa and my favourite deities for the accomplishment of the pilgrimage without obstacles'; offer worship to Gaṇeśa, to the planets (nine) and his favourite deities with five or sixteen upacāras,¹³²² then perform a pārvapa-śrāddha with plenty of ghee according to his own gr̥hyasūtra, honour three brāhmaṇas at least and donate some money to them. Then he should put on a pilgrim's dress as described above (p. 573), go round the village in which his house is located (or at least round his own house), reach another village not more distant than one *krośa* (two or two and half miles) and break his fast by eating the remainder of the food cooked and ghee used for the śrāddha (this applies to pilgrimage to Gayā). He may break his fast

1321. The last verse of the Gaṅgā-vākyāvalī is कियञ्चिन्धमालोक्य श्री-विद्यापतिसूरिणा । गङ्गावाक्यावली देव्याः प्रमाणैर्विमलीकृता ॥. This verse shows that the famous Maithila scholar Vidyāpati at least provides the authorities on which the work is based. Some scholars hold that it is really Vidyāpati who wrote the work for commemorating the queen who had honoured and patronized him. The 2nd Introductory verse claims the work as Viśvāsa-devī's own. In the दानवाक्यावली of धीरमति the last verse is निबन्धान् सम्यगालोक्य...सूरिणा । दानवाक्यावली देव्याः...कृता ॥ (D. C. ms. No. 216 of 1881-82).

1322. For the sixteen and five upacāras, vide H. of Dh. vol. II. pp. 729-730. The ब्रह्मवैवर्तपुराण (Ānandāśrama ed.), ब्रह्मखण्ड, chap. 26.90-92 mention 16, 12 or five upacāras as follows: आसनं वसनं पाद्यमर्घ्यमाचमनीयकम् । पुष्पं चन्दनधूपं च दीपं नैवेद्यमुत्तमम् ॥ गन्धं माल्यं च शय्यां च ललितां सुविलक्षणां । अलम्बनं च ताम्बूलं साधारं देयमेव च । गन्धान्नतल्पताम्बूलं विना द्रव्याणि द्वादश । पाद्यार्घ्यजल-नैवेद्यपुष्पाण्येतानि पञ्च च ॥

in his own house (in the case of other tīrthas) and then start. Then the next day he should bathe with pure clothes on and then put on his pilgrim dress and start on his pilgrimage in the forenoon with his face to the east, preferably bare-footed. There are two views here. Some say that on the day on which a man reaches a tīrtha he should observe a fast, while the other view is that the pilgrim should fast on the day previous to his reaching the tīrtha. In the first case he will have to perform a śrāddha on the day of the fast and in that case he cannot actually taste the remnants of śrāddha food but should only smell the cooked food. The Kalpataru (on tīrtha p. 11) and the Tīrtha-cintāmaṇi (p. 14) quote Devala for the proposition that a fast on reaching a tīrtha is not obligatory, but if observed yields special merit.

CHAPTER XII

THE GANGES

Since the Ganges is the holiest of rivers and since such highly esteemed tirthas as Kanakhala, Haridvāra, Prayāga and Kāśī are situated on it, it would be most proper to begin the treatment of individual tirthas with the Ganges.

It has been already seen (p. 556) how the Ganges is the first among the many rivers invoked in the famous *Nadistuti* hymn (Rg. X. 75.5-6). In Rg. ¹³²³ VI. 45.31 we have the word 'Gāngyah' which most probably means 'growing on the Ganges'. In the *Satapatha Brāhmaṇa* XIII. 5. 4. 11 and 13 and *Ait. Br.* 39. 9 the victories and sacrifices of Bharata Daśśanti on the Gāṅgā and Yamunā are mentioned. In *Sat. Br.* XIII. 5.4.11 and 13 an ancient *gāthā* is quoted 'At Nādapit the Apsaras Śakuntalā conceived Bharata who after conquering the whole earth brought to Indra more than 1000 horses meet for sacrifice.' The *Mahābhārata* (*Anuśāsana* 26. 26-103) and the *Purāṇas* (such as *Nāradiya*, *Uttarārḍha*, chap. 38-45 and 51. 1-18, *Padma* V. 60. 1-127, *Agni* chap. 110, *Matsya* chap. 180-185, *Padma*, *Ādikhaṇḍa*, chap. 33-37) contain hundreds of verses eulogising the greatness and the sanctifying activity of the Ganges. The *Skandapurāṇa*, *Kāśikhaṇḍa*, chap. 29 (verses 17-168) contains one thousand names of the Ganges. It is not possible to reproduce here even a small fraction of what is said in these works about the Ganges. To most men in India great rivers like the Ganges, great mountains like the Himālaya present a double aspect, viz. the physical aspect and the spiritual aspect. A great river apart from its volume of water is deemed to have a spiritual or divine life which animates it. Tylor (in 'Primitive Culture', 2nd ed. p 477) observes 'What we call inanimate objects—rivers, stones, trees, weapons and so forth—are treated as living intelligent beings, talked to, propitiated, punished for the harm they do.' There are separate treatises devoted to the glorification of the Ganges and the pilgrimage to it such as the

1323. अधि वृक्षः पणीनां वर्षिष्ठे मूर्धनस्थान्। उरुः कक्षो न गाङ्गयः॥ ऋ. VI. 45.31.
The last pāda means 'like a broad patch of grass or bush growing on the banks of the Ganges'.

Gaṅgāpattalaka of Gaṇeśvara (1350 A. D.), Gaṅgāvākyaṅgalī of Viśvāsadevī, queen of king Padmasimha of Mithilā, the Gaṅgābhakti-taraṅgiṇī of Gaṇapati, the Gaṅgākṛtyaviveka of Vardhamāna. Vide H. of Dh. vol. I. p. 538 for the dates of some of these works.

The Vanaparva, chap. 85, has a grand eulogy of Gaṅgā in verses 88-97, some of which may be translated here ¹³²⁴. "The Ganges is equal to Kurukṣetra wherever one may take a bath in it, but there is a speciality about Kanakhala and in Prayāga there is the greatest and highest (holiness). If a person, after committing a hundred bad deeds, sprinkles himself with Ganges (water), the waters of the Ganges burn all of them as fire burns fuel. In the Kṛta age all (places) were holy, in Tretā age Puṣkara was (the holiest place), in Dvāpara Kurukṣetra and in the Kali age the Ganges. The Ganges, when its name is uttered, purifies a sinner, when seen it yields good fortune, when a bath is taken in it or its water is drunk, it sanctifies the family up to the seventh ancestor. As long as (a particle of) the bones of a man touches Ganges water (i. e. lies inside it), so long does the man remain happy (or honoured) in heaven. There is no holy place equal to the Ganges, there is no god higher than Keśava. That country and that penance-grove where the Ganges flows should be known as the sacred spot of success (or perfection) since it attaches itself to the Ganges." The Anuśāsana (26.26, 30-31) asserts 'those districts and countries, those hermitages and mountains, in the midst of which the Ganges flows are pre-eminent in *punya* (religious merit). Even those men who, after committing sinful acts in the first part of their lives, resort afterwards to the Ganges reach the highest world (or goal). That increase (in merit) which comes to men that bathe in the holy waters of the Ganges and that then become pure in spirit, cannot be secured

1324. कुरुक्षेत्रसमा गङ्गा यत्र तत्रावगाहिता। विशेषो वै कनखले प्रयागे परमं महत् ॥ यद्यकार्यशतं कृत्वा कृतं गङ्गावसेचनम्। सर्वं तत्तस्य गङ्गापो दहत्यग्निरिवेन्धनम् ॥ 88; सर्वं कृतयुगे पुण्यं त्रेतायां पुष्करं स्मृतम्। द्वापरेपि कुरुक्षेत्रं गङ्गा कलियुगे स्मृता ॥...पुनाति कीर्तिता पापं दृष्टा भद्रं प्रयच्छति। अवगाढा च पीता च पुनात्यासप्तमं कुलम् ॥ यावदस्थि मनुष्यस्य गङ्गायाः स्पृशते जलम्। तावत्स पुरुषो राजन् स्वर्गलोके महीयते ॥ 94... न गङ्गासदृशं तीर्थं न देवः केशवात्परः।... यत्र गङ्गा महाराज स देशस्तत्तपोवनम्। सिद्धिक्षेत्रं च तज्ज्ञेयं गङ्गातीर-समाश्रितम् ॥ वनपर्व 85.88-97 = पद्म I. 39.81-90. नारदीय. (उत्तर) 39. 46 is कुरुक्षेत्र... गाहिता। हरिद्वारे प्रयागे च सिन्धुसङ्गे फलाधिका ॥ The नारदीयपु. (उत्तर) 38. 20 is कृतं तु सर्वतीर्थानि त्रेतायां...कलौ गङ्गा विशिष्यते ॥ The कूर्म. I. 27. 37 has कृते तु नैमिषं तीर्थं The same verse is quoted from भाविष्य by तीर्थचि. p. 191.

even by the performance of hundreds of solemn Vedic sacrifices.' 1325

In the Bhagavadgītā (X. 31) Lord Kṛṣṇa says that among streams he is the Ganges (srotasāmasmi Jāhnavī). The Manusmṛti setting out an exordium to a witness to tell the truth indicates that the Ganges and Kurukṣetra were the most sacred spots in the age of the Manusmṛti.¹³²⁶ Some of the Purāṇas describe the Ganges as flowing in Heaven (as Mandākinī), on the earth (as Gangā) and in the nether regions or Pātāla (as Bhogavatī). Vide Padma VI. 267. 47. The Viṣṇupurāṇa¹³²⁷ and other Purāṇas state that the Ganges springs from the toe-nail of the left foot of Viṣṇu. In some Purāṇas it is said that Śiva let off from his matted hair the Ganges in seven streams, three flowing towards the east (Nalinī, Hlādinī, Pāvanī), three to the west (Sitā, Cakṣus and Sindhu) and Bhāgīrathī (vide Matsya 121. 38-41, Brahmanḍa II. 18. 39-41, Padma I. 3. 65-66). The Kūrmapurāṇa (I. 46. 30-31) and Vārāha (chap. 82 in prose) state that the Ganges flows first in four different streams, Sitā, Alakanandā, Sucakṣu and Bhadrā and that the Alakanandā flows towards the south, comes to Bhāratavarṣa and falls into the sea with seven mouths.¹³²⁸ In the Brahmapurāṇa (73. 68-69) the Ganges is described as sprung from the foot of Viṣṇu and as established in the matted hair of Mahēśvara (Śiva).



The Viṣṇupurāṇa eulogises¹³²⁹ the Ganges as follows : The Ganges purifies all beings from day to day when its name is

1325. स्नातानां शुचिभिस्तोयैः गाङ्गेयैः प्रयतात्मनाम् । व्युष्टिर्भवति या पुंसां न सा क्रतु-
शतैरपि॥ अथुशासन 26.31, नारद (उत्तर) 39. 30-31 and also 40. 64.

1326. यमो वैवस्वतो देवो यस्तवैष हृदि स्थितः । तेन चेदविवादस्ते मा गङ्गां मा कुरु-
न्ममः॥ मनु 8. 92.

1327. वामपादाम्बुजाङ्गुष्ठनखस्रोतोविनिर्गताम् । विष्णोर्विभर्ति यां भक्त्या शिरसाहर्नि-
शं ध्रुवः॥ विष्णुपु. II. 8. 109, q. by कल्पतरु (तीर्थ) p. 161 (reads शिवः); नदी सा
वैष्णवी प्रोक्ता विष्णुपादसमुद्भवा । पद्म V. 25. 188.

1328. तथैवालकनन्दा च दक्षिणादेत्य भारतम् । प्रयाति सागरं भिक्षा सप्तभेदा
द्विजोत्तमाः॥ कूर्म I. 46. 31.

1329. श्रुताभिलषिता दृष्टा स्पृष्टा पीतावगाहिता । या पावयति भूतानि कारिता च
दिने दिने॥ गङ्गा गङ्गेति यैर्नाम योजनानां शतेष्वपि । स्थितैरुच्चारितं हन्ति पापं जन्मव्या-
जितम्॥ विष्णुपु. II. 8. 120-121 q. by गङ्गावा. p. 110, तीर्थचि. p. 202.  पद्म 175. 82
p. 9. The 2nd verse is variously read in पद्म VI. 21.8 and 23.12.  पद्म
as गङ्गा...यो व्याधयोजनानां शतैरपि । मुच्यते सर्वपापेभ्यो विष्णुलोकं स गच्छति, while पद्म
I. 31.77 reads शतैरपि । नरो न नरकं याति किं तथा सदृशं भवेत्.

heard, when one desires to see (it), when it is seen or touched or when its waters are drunk or when one plunges into it or when one takes (or sings) its name; when people utter the name 'Ganges' even though living at a distance of hundreds of yojanas, their sins accumulated in three births are destroyed.' The Bhaviṣyapurāṇa¹³³⁰ has a similar verse 'one becomes free from sins at once by seeing the Ganges or touching it or drinking its water and by uttering the name Gaṅgā and also by remembering it.'¹³³¹ The Matsya, Kūrma, Garuḍa and Padma remark that the Ganges is easy of access everywhere but is difficult to reach at three places viz. at Gaṅgādvāra (Haridvāra), at Prayāga and where it joins the sea and that those who bathe therein reach heaven and that those who die there are not born again. The Nāradiyapurāṇa, on the other hand, says that the Ganges is difficult of access everywhere, but much more so at three places. The man, whether desiring it or not, who draws near the Ganges and dies (near it) secures heaven and does not see hell (Matsya 107.4).¹³³² The Kūrmapurāṇa represents that the Ganges¹³³³ is equal to all the 35 millions of holy places declared by Vāyu in the heaven, in mid region and on the earth and that all of them are represented by the Ganges. The Padmapurāṇa asks 'what is the use of sacrifices rich in large wealth, what is the use of very difficult austerities when there is the Ganges honoured easily and gracefully that yields Heaven and *mokṣa*'? A similar verse occurs in the Nāradiya-purāṇa 'what is the use of Yoga with its eight *āṅgas*, of austerities, of solemn (Vedic) sacrifices? Residence

1330. दर्शनात्स्पर्शनात्पानात् तथा गङ्गेति कीर्तनात्। स्मरणादेव गङ्गायाः सद्यः पापैः प्रमुच्यते॥ भविष्यपु. q. by तीर्थचि. p. 198, गङ्गावा. p. 12, गङ्गाभ० p. 9. The first half is अनुशासन 26.64, अग्निपु. 110.6; गच्छंस्तिष्ठन् जपन्ध्यायन् भुञ्जन् जायन् स्वप्नं वदन्। यः स्मरेत् सततं गङ्गां सोऽपि मुच्येत बन्धनात् ॥ स्कन्द (काशीखण्ड) पूर्वार्ध 27.37, नारद (उत्तर) 39. 16-17.

1331. सर्वत्र सुलभा गङ्गा त्रिषु स्थानेषु दुर्लभा। गङ्गाद्वारे प्रयागे च गङ्गासागरसङ्गमे॥ तत्र स्नात्वा दिवं यान्ति ये मृतास्तेऽपुनर्भवाः॥ मत्स्य. 106.54, कूर्म. I. 37.34, गरुड (पूर्व०) 81. 1-2, पद्म V. 60.120. The नारदीय (उत्तर 40. 26-27) reads: सर्वत्र दुर्लभा गङ्गा त्रिषु स्थानेषु चाधिका। गङ्गाद्वारे...सङ्गमे॥ एषु स्नाता दिवं...र्भवाः॥

1332. अकामो वा सकामो वा गङ्गायां योऽभिपद्यते। मृतस्तु लभते स्वर्गं नरकं च न पश्यति ॥ मत्स्य. 107. 4, q. by कल्पतरु (on तीर्थ) p. 145 (reads यो विपद्यते). कूर्म. I. 37.39 has the same verse with slight variations; compare पद्म I. 44.4.

1333. तिस्रः कोट्योर्धकोटी च तीर्थानां वायुरब्रवीत्। दिवि भूव्यन्तारिक्षे च तत्सर्वं जाद्वि स्मृता॥ कूर्म I. 39.8, पद्म I. 47.7, V. 60. 59, मत्स्य. 102. 5 (reads तानि ते सारि जाद्वि).



on the Ganges alone is superior to all these' ¹³³⁴. Two verses of the Matsya-purāṇa ¹³³⁵ deserve mention here 'even a man of sinful deeds, on remembering the Ganges even at a distance of thousands of yojanas, attains the highest goal. A person is delivered from sin by uttering the name (of the Ganges), on seeing it a person sees happiness; by bathing in the Ganges and drinking its water he purifies his family up to the seventh ancestor'. It is stated in the Kāśikhaṇḍa that on the banks of the glorious Ganges all times are auspicious as well as all countries, and all men are fit for receiving gifts.

In the Varāhapurāṇa (chap. 82) the name 'Gaṅgā' is derived as 'gām gatā' (that has gone to the earth). The Padmapurāṇa (Śrīstikhaṇḍa 60. 64-65) specifies the *mūlamantra* about the Ganges as follows: 'Om namo Gaṅgāyai, viśvarūpiṇyai nārāyaṇyai namo namaḥ'.

The Padmapurāṇa (śrīsti 60.35) holds that Viṣṇu represents all the gods and the Ganges represents Viṣṇu. It eulogises the Ganges as follows: Sons abandon their fathers, wives their husbands, friends and relatives abandon a friend or a relative if any one of these is adulterous, or *patita*, or wicked or becomes a cāṇḍāla or kills his *guru*, or is full of all kinds of sins and hatreds; but the Ganges does not forsake such persons ¹³³⁶.

The extent of the holy region of the Ganges is laid down in some purāṇas. The Nāradiya ¹³³⁷ states: the region

1334. किं यज्ञैर्बहुवित्ताढ्यैः किं तपोभिः सुदुष्करैः। स्वर्गमोक्षप्रदा गङ्गा सुखसौभाग्य-पूजिता॥ पद्म V. 60.39; किमष्टाङ्गेन योगेन किं तपोभिः किमध्वरैः। वास एव हि गङ्गायां सर्वतोपि विशिष्यते॥ नारदीय (उत्तर) 38.38, q. in तीर्थचि. p. 194 (reads गङ्गायां ब्रह्मज्ञानस्य कारणम्) and प्राय. तत्त्व. p. 498. The first verse किं यज्ञैः is quoted as from ब्रह्माण्ड by तीर्थचि. p. 195 (last pāda is सुखसेव्या यतः स्थिता).

1335. योजनानां सहस्रेषु गङ्गायाः स्मरणान्नरः। अपि दुष्कृतकर्मा तु लभते परमां गतिम्॥ कीर्तनान्मुच्यते पापाद् दृष्ट्वा भद्राणि पश्यति। अवगाह्य च पीत्वा तु पुनात्यासप्तमं कुलम्॥ मत्स्य. 104. 14-15 q. by कल्पतरु (तीर्थ) p. 160; vide also मत्स्य. 108.25-26. Compare वनपर्व 87.93 (पुनाति कीर्तिता) quoted in n. 1324; सर्व एव शुभः कालः सर्वो देशस्तथा शुभः। सर्वो जनो दानपात्रं श्रीमतीजाह्नवीतटे॥ काशीखण्ड 27. 69.

1336. जारजं पतितं दुष्टमन्त्यजं गुरुघातिनम्। सर्वद्रोहेण संयुक्तं सर्वपातकसंयुतम्॥ त्यजन्ति पितरं पुत्राः प्रियं पत्न्यः सुहृद्गणाः। अन्ये च बान्धवाः सर्वे गङ्गां तान्न परित्यजेत्॥ पद्म (सृष्टिखण्ड 60. 25-26).

1337. तीराद्रव्यूतिमात्रं तु परितः क्षेत्रमुच्यते। तीरं त्यक्त्वा वसेत्क्षेत्रे तीरे वासो न चेष्ट्यते॥ एकयोजनविस्तीर्णा क्षेत्रसीमा तद्वयात्। नारदीय (उत्तर) 43. 119-120. The first is quoted from स्कन्द by तीर्थचि. p. 266, which remarks 'उभयतः प्रत्येकं क्रोशद्वयं क्षेत्रम्'. The half verse एक० is quoted from भविष्य by तीर्थचि. p. 267.

within one *gavyūti* from the banks of the Ganges is called *kṣetra*; one should reside within the *kṣetra* limits, but not on the bank itself; residence on the bank (of the Ganges) is not desired. The limits of the *kṣetra* are of the extent of one *yojana* between both the banks' i. e. the *kṣetra* extends for two *krośas* from each bank. The general rule is stated by Yama that forests, mountains, holy rivers and *tīrthas* are without an owner; these cannot be possessed (by a person as owner). The *Brahmapurāṇa*¹³³⁸ says that measuring from the flowing waters for a distance of four *hastas*, God *Nārāyaṇa* is the Lord (or owner) and no one should accept a gift in that strip even if he be on the point of death. A difference is made between the *garbha* (the inner circle) of the *Gaṅgākṣetra*, the *tīra* and the *kṣetra*. '*Garbha*' extends up to that portion of the river stream which is reached on the 14th of the dark half of *Bhādrapada*; beyond that is the *tīra* (bank), which extends upto 150 *hastas* from *garbha* and *kṣetra* extends up to two *krośas* from each bank.

Let us suppose that the pilgrim has come to the Ganges. Then the question is, how is he to proceed about a bath in the Ganges. Many of the digests contain several alternate forms of the *sankalpa* to be made at the time of *Gaṅgā-snāna*. For example, the *Prāyaścittatattva* (pp. 497-498) contains a very elaborate *sankalpa*. A simple one is quoted below from the *Gaṅgāvākyaṇī*.¹³³⁹ The mode of bathing prescribed in the

(Continued from the last page)

गङ्गावा. p. 136. गव्यूति is a measure of length or distance generally taken as equal to two *krośas*. There was some difference about the measures of length. According to the *Amarakośa* a *gavyūti* is equal to two *krośas* 'गव्यूतिः स्त्री क्रोशयुगम्'. According to the वायु 8. 105-107 and 101. 122-126 and ब्रह्माण्ड II. 7. 96-101 the measures are 24 अङ्गुलः = one हस्त, 96 अङ्गुलः = धनुः (which is same as दण्ड, युग and नाली); 2000 धनुः = गव्यूति and 8000 धनुः = योजनः; acc. to the मार्कण्डेय 46. 37-40, 4 हस्तः = धनुः or दण्ड, or युग or नालिका); 2000 धनुः = क्रोश, 4 क्रोशः = गव्यूति which is the same as योजन. Vide H. of Dh. vol. III. p. 145 n. 185.

1338. प्रवाहमवधिं कृत्वा यावद्द्वस्तचतुष्टयम् । अत्र नारायणः स्वामी नान्यः स्वामी कदाचन ॥ न तत्र प्रतिगृह्णीयात्प्राणैः कण्ठगतैरपि ॥ भाद्रशुक्लचतुर्दश्यां यावदाक्रमते जलम् । तावद्गर्भं विजानीयात्तद्दूरं तीरमुच्यते । नारद (उत्तर) 43. 116-118 q. by तीर्थचि. p. 266 and प्राय. तत्त्व. p. 499 (from ब्रह्मपुराण and the verse भाद्र० from दानधर्म) and by गङ्गावा. p. 136 (the first verse from ब्रह्माण्ड); नारद (उत्तर) 43. 118 (last half) सार्धहस्तशतं यावद्गर्भस्तीरं ततः परम् ॥. The digests read भाद्रकृष्ण० for भाद्रशुक्ल०.

1339. अद्यामुके मासि अमुकपक्षे अमुकतिथौ सद्यःपापप्रणाशपूर्वकं सर्वपुण्यप्राप्तिकामा गङ्गायां स्नानमहं करिष्ये । गङ्गावा. p. 141. Vide तीर्थचि. pp. 206-207 for several alternative सङ्कल्पः before गङ्गास्नान.



Matsyapurāṇa 102 is common to people of all varnas and students of all the different recensions of the Veda. The Matsyapurāṇa, chap. 102, which contains one of the earliest procedure of a religious bath, and which has been taken over by several digests such as the Gaṅgāvākyāvalī (pp. 148-152) is summarised here. Cleanliness (of the body) and clean thoughts do not exist without a bath; therefore bathing is first prescribed for making the mind pure. One may bathe with water drawn (in a vessel from a well or stream) or with water not so drawn. A wise man should fix upon a holy spot after repeating the fundamental mantra 'namo Nārāyaṇāya' (reverent bow to Nārāyaṇa). A man holding darbha grass in his hand and being clean and pure should perform *ācamana* (ceremonial sipping of water). He should select a spot four *hastas* square on all sides and invoke the Ganges (to come or be present there) with the following mantras 'you are sprung from the foot of Viṣṇu, you are a devotee of Viṣṇu, you worship Viṣṇu; therefore save us from sins committed from birth to death. Vāyu declared that there are three and a half crores (35 millions) of holy places in heaven, on the earth and in mid air; all these, O Ganges (daughter of Jahnu), belong to you. Your name among the gods is Nandinī (the joy-giving) and also Nalinī and there are other names of yours viz. Dakṣā, Pṛthvī, Vihagā, Viśvakāyā, Amṛtā, Śivā, Vidyādhari, Suprasāntā, Viśva-prasādinī, Kṣemā, Jāhnavī, Śāntā, Śāntipradāyinī.^{1339a} One should utter these holy names at the time of bathing; then the Ganges flowing in the three worlds would be near (even if a man bathed at home). He should, after folding his hands, cast on his head thrice, four times, five times or seven times water on which he has muttered the mantras seven times. After having invoked the clay (in the river bed) with the mantras 'O earth! Oh clay! you are crossed over by horses and chariots, by Viṣṇu, remove my sin which I may have committed by my evil deeds; you were brought up (from the depths of the sea) by the Boar incarnation of Kṛṣṇa with his hundred hands. O clay! you are given (to the world) by Brahmā and you had mantras repeated over you by Kāśyapa. Occupying my limbs may you drive away all my sin! Oh clay! Give us

1339 a. Verses 1-8 of मत्स्य० chap. 102 are q. by the स्मृतिच. I. p. 182. The स्मृतिच. I. p. 183 also gives the twelve names of गङ्गा differently. मत्स्य (IV. 89. 17-19) has the same holy names of the Ganges that the Matsya (102. 6-8) mentions. For the thousand names of the Ganges, vide above p. 585.

prosperity; everything is centered in you; a bow to you, that are virtuous and the source of all worlds'. Having thus bathed and having sipped water (*ācamana*) according to the procedure prescribed, he should get out of the Ganges and should put on two white and pure garments. Then he should perform *tarpaṇa*¹³⁴⁰ for the satisfaction of the three worlds. (He should say) 'This water is being offered by me for satiating gods, yakṣas, nāgas, gandharvas, apsaras, asuras, cruel snakes, eagles, trees, jackals, birds, creatures that sustain themselves on air and water or that move in the sky, all beings that are without support and those that are devoted to the dictates of *dharma*'. The person (performing *tarpaṇa*) should wear the sacred thread in the *upavīta* form (when satiating gods) and then wear it in the

1340. *Tarpaṇa* (satiating with the offering of water) is of two kinds viz. principal (*pradhāna*) and subsidiary (*aṅga*). The first has to be performed every day by a twice-born person (who has finished his studies) for the gods, sages and pitṛs in that order. The 2nd is performed as an *aṅga* of *snāna*. नित्यं नैमित्तिकं काम्यं त्रिविधं स्नानमुच्यते। तर्पणं तु भवेत्तस्याङ्गत्वेन प्रकीर्तितम्॥ ब्रह्मपुराण q. by गंगाभक्ति० p 162. तर्पणं is an *aṅga* of bath as well as of *brahma-yajña*. *Tarpaṇa* has been described at great length in H. of Dh. vol. II. pp. 668-669 and pp. 689-695. Therefore it is not necessary to make any lengthy remarks on *tarpaṇa* here. A few matters that deserve attention are mentioned. One rule is that one has to perform *tarpaṇa* according to the provisions of his own recension of the Veda. The persons to whom water is to be offered and the manner in which it is to be offered are set out on p. 692 of vol. II of H. of Dh. Another rule is that *tarpaṇa* has to be done (even if the day is not auspicious) at a *tīrtha*, in *Gayā*, in *pitṛpakṣa* (i. e. the dark half of *Bhādrapada*) with water mixed with sesame 'तार्थे तिथिप्रवेशे (तिथिविशेषे?) च गयायां प्रेतपक्षके। निषिद्धेऽपि दिने कुर्यात्तर्पणं तिलमिश्रितम्॥'. A widow also has to perform *tarpaṇa* for her husband and his relatives at a sacred place. An ascetic (*sannyāsin*) has not to do it. A person whose father is living has not to perform *tarpaṇa*, but acc. to *Viṣṇupurāṇa* he offers three handfuls to gods, three to the sages and one to *Prajāpati* (in the form '*devās-trpyantām*'). Another rule is the one makes an offering in *śrāddha* or into fire with one hand only (the right hand) but in *tarpaṇa* water is poured into the stream in which one is bathing or on land with both hands. 'श्राद्धे हवनकाले च पाणिनैकेन दीयते। तर्पणे तुभयं कुर्याद्विष एव विधिः स्मृतः॥' नारदीयपुराण (उत्तर) 57.62-63. If a man is not able to perform the elaborate *tarpaṇa* described in vol. II, he should repeat the mantras from वायुपुराण 110. 21-22 set out here and offer three *aṅgalis* of water mixed with sesame and kuśas; आब्रह्मस्तम्भपर्यन्तं देवर्षिपितृमानवा वृष्यन्तु पितरः सर्वे मातृमातामहादयः॥ अतीतकुलकोटीनां सप्तद्वीपनिवासिनाम्। आ ब्रह्म भुवनाल्लोकादिदमस्तु तिलोदकम्॥.



nivāta ¹³⁴¹ form (when satiating men). He should devotedly satiate men, the sages who were sons of Brahmā; he should say "May Sanaka, Sananda and Sanātana, Kapila, Āsuri, Vodhu, Pañcaśikha—may all these reach satiety by the water offered by me." Then he should satiate with water and *akṣata* grains (the sages) Marici, Atri, Angiras, Pulastya, Pulaha, Kratu, Pracetas, Vasistha, Bhṛgu, Nārada; he should satiate all these *devarṣis*, and *brahmarṣis*, ¹³⁴² and *rṣis* with water and *akṣatas*. Then wearing the sacred thread in the *apasavya* mode, bending his left knee on the ground, he satiates with water mixed with sesame and sandal-wood paste *pitṛs* called Agniṣvāta ¹³⁴³, Saumya, Havīṣmat, Ūṣmapa, Sukālin, Barhiṣad and others called Ājyapa. He should make a bow to Yama, Dharmarāja, Mrtyu, Antaka, Vaivasvata, Kāla, destroyer of all beings, Audumbara, Dadhna, Nila, Paramēsthin, Vṛkodara, Citra and Citragupta. With darbhas in his hand a wise man should satiate his *pitṛs*. He should satiate with devotion his father and the rest by uttering their names and gotra and his maternal grandfather and others in the same way and should recite the following *mantra* 'May those who are my bandhus or not my bandhus or were my bandhus in some previous life reach satisfaction and also whoever desires satisfaction from me.' Then he should sip water (perform *ācamana*) in the prescribed way and draw the figure of a lotus in front of himself and offer thereon to the Sun *arghya* (respectful offering of water) with water mixed with red sandal-wood paste, flowers and *akṣatas* (grains of rice) and repeat the names of Sūrya (the Sun) 'Bow to thee! that art Viṣṇu in another form, that art the face of Viṣṇu, that hast thousand rays and that art all refulgence. Bow to thee that art beneficent, the lord of the world. Bow to thee that art adorned with divine sandalwood, that art seated on a lotus, adorned with ear-rings and armlets, the lord of people; that awakenest (or enlightenest) the whole world, that goest everywhere and markest the good and evil

1341. निवीतं मनुष्याणां प्राचीनावीतं पितृणामुपवीतं देवानाम् । तै. सं. II. 5. 11. 1.

For explanation of these three modes of wearing the sacred thread, vide H. of Dh. vol. II pp. 287-288 and *apasavya* has been explained in this volume in note 1095.

1342. Vide Vāyu 61.80-90 for definitions and eumeration of देवर्षि, देवर्षि, राजर्षि and also Baud. Gr. I. 7 and Devala q. by अपरार्क pp. 442-443 for ऋषि and other terms.

1343. For Agniṣvāta and other names of classes of *pitṛs*, vide above pp. 343-344 and Brahmānda III. 10. 53, 75, 93, 96.

deeds; a bow to thee who art a god to all. O Bhāskara (Sun)! be well disposed to me. A bow to thee, Divākara (maker of day). A bow to thee, Prabhākara (source of refulgence). Having thus bowed to the Sun and having circumambulated thrice (the lotus drawn for representing the sun) and touching a brāhmaṇa, gold and a cow, the person (bather) should go to a temple of Viṣṇu (or to his own house, according to another reading).¹³⁴⁴

It may be noted that the verses of the Matsyapurāṇa (102. 2-31) summarised above occur (with slight variations of a word here and there) in Padma (Pātāla-khaṇḍa 89. 12-42) and Śrīti-khaṇḍa, chap. 20. 145-176.

The Sm. C. and Raghunandana in his Prāyaścittatattva (p. 502) lay down two mantras to be recited at the time of taking a bath in the Ganges¹³⁴⁵ 'O Ganges, daughter of Jahnu! That flowest in three worlds, that art sprung from the lotus-like feet of Viṣṇu, that art far-famed as devoted to (the spread of) dharma, remove my sin; O divine mother, O Bhāgīrathī! purify with your immortal waters me who am full of faith and devotion'. The mantra to be repeated at the time of the bath at the place where the Ganges falls into the ocean according to the same two works is "O god that art the lord of rivers! O goddess that art the best among rivers! Having bathed at the confluence of both I shall cast off my sins".

On pp. 243-244 above it has been stated that the Viṣṇu Dh. S. and other works recommend the casting of the ashes or charred bones of a cremated body in the Ganges at Prayāga, Kāśī or other holy place and the rites accompanying the casting of ashes have been there set out. A few words are added here. The same verse¹³⁴⁶ (with slight variations) about casting

1344. धर्मराज to चित्र are the names of यम and for चित्रगुप्त vide p. 160 above and वराहपुराण chap. 203-205.

1345. विष्णुपादाब्जसम्भूते गङ्गे त्रिपथगामिनि । धर्मव्रतेति विख्याते पापं मे हर जाह्नवि ॥ अद्भुता भक्तिसम्पन्ने (क्व?) श्रीमातर्देवि जाह्नवि । अमृतेनाम्बुना देवि भागीरथि पुनीहि माम् ॥ स्मृतिच. I. 131; प्राय. तत्त्व p. 502; त्वं देव सरितां नाथ त्वं देवि सरितां वरे । उभयोः सङ्गमे स्नात्वा मुञ्चामि दुरितानि वै ॥ *ibid.* पद्म, सृष्टिखण्ड 60, 60 is the same as the first verse and 60. 62 offers some variant readings for the second.

1346. यावदास्थि मनुष्यस्य गङ्गायाः स्पृशते जलम् । तावत्स पुरुषो राजन् स्वर्गलोके महीयते ॥ वनपर्व 85.94 = पद्म I. 39 87; अनुशासन 26.32 is यावदस्थीनि गङ्गायां तिष्ठन्ति दि शरीरिणः । तावद्वर्षसहस्राणि...महीयते ॥ = मत्स्य. 106.52, कूर्म I. 37.32 (reads पुरुषस्यैव) । नारद (उत्तर) 43.109 यावन्त्यस्थीनि गङ्गायां तिष्ठन्ति पुरुषस्य वै । तावद्वर्ष...महीयते । नारद (उत्तर) 62.51 is यावन्ति नखलोमानि गङ्गातोये पतन्ति वै ॥ तावद्वर्षसहस्राणि स्वर्गलोके महीयते ॥ नारदीय (पूर्वार्ध) 15.163 'केशास्थिनखदन्ताश्च भस्मापि नृपसंनयन्ति विष्णुसद्वनं स्पृष्टा गाङ्गेन वारिणा ॥'.



ashes in the Ganges occurs in several works. The Agnipurāṇa observes 'the deceased man benefits if his bones are thrown into the Ganges; a man stays in heaven as long as (even a particle of) his bone remains in the waters of the Ganges. No rites for the dead are performed for those who commit suicide or who are *patita*; but even in their case the fall of their bones in Ganges water is beneficial to them.' The Tīr. C. and Tīr. Pr. quote two verses and a half from the Brahmapurāṇa¹³⁴⁷ which set out a briefer rite of throwing ashes than the one in the Nirṇayasindhu. The verses mean: "The man carrying the ashes should take a bath, sprinkle *pañcagavya* over the ashes, should place on them a piece of gold, honey, ghee and sesame; then he should deposit them in an earthen vessel; he should then look in the southern direction, say 'salutation to Dharma,' enter the waters (of the Ganges), utter, 'may he (Dharma or Viṣṇu?) be pleased with me' and then cast the ashes in the water; then he should bathe in the river, come out of it, cast a look at the Sun and then give a present (*dakṣiṇā*) to a brāhmaṇa; if he does so, then the state of the deceased person will be like Indra.' Vide Skanda, Kāśī-khaṇḍa 30. 42-46 where a little more elaborate procedure is prescribed. The importance of casting ashes in the Ganges probably owes its origin to the story of king Sagara's sons who were reduced to ashes by the wrath of the sage Kapila and who were saved by the ashes being washed in the waters of the Ganges brought down from heaven by Bhagiratha. Vide Vanaparva chap. 107-109, Viṣṇupurāṇa II. 8-10 for the story. The Nāradiya makes not only the throwing of calcined bones a source of benefit to the departed but even his nails and hair when cast in the Ganges confer the same benefit. It is stated in the Kāśīkhaṇḍa that those who, while standing on the banks of the Ganges, praise another tīrtha or do not think very highly of the Ganges go to hell.^{1347a} The Kāśīkhaṇḍa further provides that there is special and

1347. स्नात्वा ततः पञ्चगवेन सिक्त्वा हिरण्यमध्वाज्यतिलेन योज्यम् । ततस्तु मृत्पिण्डपुटे निधाय पश्यन् दिशं प्रेतगणोपगृह्णाम् ॥ नमोऽस्तु धर्माय वदन् प्रविश्य जलं स मे प्रात इति क्षिपेच्च । स्नात्वा तथोत्तीर्य च भास्करं च दृष्ट्वा प्रदद्यादथ दक्षिणां तु ॥ एवं कृते प्रेतपुर-

स्थितस्य स्वर्गे गतिः स्यात्तु महेन्द्रतुल्या । ब्रह्मपुराण q. by तीर्थचि. pp. 265-266 and तीर्थ-
म. p. 374. The गङ्गावा. p. 272 quotes these as from ब्रह्माण्ड (with slight variations, one of which is यस्तु सर्वहितो विष्णुः स मे प्रीत इति क्षिपेत् ।) These verses are नारद (उत्तर chap. 43. 113-115) with slight variations.

1347 a. तीर्थमन्यत्प्रशंसन्ति गङ्गातीरे स्थिताश्च ये । गङ्गां न वन्दन्त्यन्यत्ते ते ह्युर्निरयगामिनः ॥ स्कन्द, काशी० 27. 80.

excessive merit in Gaṅgāsnāna on special days e. g. the merit of bath on New Moon has one hundred times as much merit as on an ordinary day, a thousand times on a saṅkrānti, one hundred thousand on the eclipse of the sun or moon and unlimited times when a bath is taken on moon eclipse on a Monday and on sun eclipse on Sunday.¹³⁴⁸

TRISTHALĪ

The three great tīrthas of Prayāga, Kāśī and Gayā are referred to as Tristhalī and the great scholar, Nārāyaṇabhaṭṭa (born in 1513 A. D.), wrote (about 1580 A. D.) in Benares a famous work called Tristhalīsetu (a bridge to the Tristhalī) wherein he gives a thorough and exhaustive treatment of the pilgrimage to these three holy places^{1348a} alone. Prayāga is assigned pp. 1-72, Kāśī pp. 72-316 and Gayā pp. 316-379 (of the Ānandāśrama edition). Following with all humility the footsteps of such an illustrious and venerable scholar I shall deal with the three tīrthas in the same order.

PRAYĀGA

One of the most ancient reference to the greatness of the confluence of the Ganges and the Yamunā occurs in a khila¹³⁴⁹ verse which is usually placed in Rg. X. 75 and may be rendered as follows: "Those who take a bath at the place where the

1348. दर्शे शतगुणं पुण्यं संक्रान्तौ च सहस्रकम् । चन्द्रसूर्यग्रहे लक्षं व्यतीपाते
स्वनन्तकम् । ... सोमग्रहः सोमदिने रविवारे रवेर्ग्रहः । तच्चूडामणिपर्वाख्यं तत्र स्नानम-
संख्यकम् ॥ स्कन्द, काशी० 27. 129-131.

1348 a. त्रयाणां स्थलानां समाहारः त्रिस्थली ।

1349. सितासिते सरिते यत्र सङ्गते तत्राप्नुतासौ दिवमुत्पतन्ति । ये वै तन्वं विमुञ्चन्ति
धीरास्ते जनासो अमृतत्वं भजन्ते ॥ The त्रिस्थली० p. 3 says it is a supplementary śruti
text of the Āśvalāyana school, while the Tīr. C. p. 47 quotes it as a verse of
the Rgveda. It is quite possible to hold that the verse does not encourage
religious suicide but only makes this distinction that by a bath only once
a man goes to heaven and that if he dies at Prayāga he attains mokṣa even
without correct metaphysical knowledge. Vide रघुवंश 13.58 'तत्त्वावबोधेन विनापि
भूयस्तनुत्यजां नास्ति शरीरबन्धः' q. by तीर्थप्र. p. 313. The स्कन्द says: श्रुतिभिः परि-
पठ्येते सितासिते सरिद्वरे । तत्राप्नुताङ्गा ह्यमृतं भवन्तीति विनिश्चितम् । काशी. 7. 54 q.
त्रिस्थली० p. 11. Vide also काशीखण्ड 7.46 for a similar verse. The verse no
doubt has a vedic ring about it. The त्रिस्थली० p. 4 notices another reading
The waters of the Ganges are whitish while those of the Jumunā are dark
Classical Sanskrit poets very often harp on these colours of the waters of the
two rivers. Vide रघुवंश 13. 54-57.



two rivers, white and dark, meet together, rise up (fly up) to heaven; those determined men who abandon their body there (i. e. commit suicide by drowning themselves) secure immortality (or *mokṣa*)". This must have been a comparatively early verse. The Skandapurāṇa refers to it as śruti. The greatness of Prayāga is dwelt upon in the Mahābhārata (Vana-parva 85. 69-97, 87. 18-20, Anuśāsana 25. 36-38)¹³⁵⁰ and in many purāṇas such as the Matsya (chapters 103-112, in all 260 verses), Kūrma I. 36-39 (verses 121), Padma (I. chap. 40-49), Skanda, Kāśi-Khaṇḍa, chap. 7. 45-65). Only a few out of the hundreds of verses on Prayāga can be cited here by way of sample. One remarkable fact is that the Rāmāyana does not say much about Prayāga. The confluence of the two rivers is no doubt referred to (Rām. II. 54.6) but from the description it appears that there was a forest at what is now Prayāga. Prayāga is called Tīrtharāja (the prince among tīrthas) in the Matsya 109. 15, Skanda (Kāśi 7. 45), Padma VI. 23. 27-35 (where the refrain at the end of each verse is 'sa tīrtharājo jayati prayāgaḥ') and elsewhere. The legend runs that Prajāpati or Pitāmaha (Brahmā) performed a sacrifice here and Prayāga is the middle one of the vedīs of Brahmā, the others being Kurukṣetra in the north (uttaravedī) and Gayā in the east. It is believed that three rivers meet at Prayāga viz. Gaṅgā, Yamunā and Sarasvatī (underground between the two). It is said in the Matsya¹³⁵¹, Kūrma and other Purāṇas that at the very sight of Prayāga, even by taking its name or by applying its clay to one's body a man becomes free from sin. The Kūrmapurāṇa¹³⁵² proclaims "it is the sacred spot of Prajāpati; those who bathe here go to heaven and those who die here are not born again." That sacred spot is known as tīrtharāja; it is dear to Keśava. The same is known as Trivenī.

1350. दशतीर्थसहस्राणि तिस्रः कोट्यस्तथापराः । समागच्छन्ति माध्यां तु प्रयागे भरतर्षभ ॥ माघमासं प्रयागे तु नियतः संशितव्रतः । स्नात्वा तु भरतश्रेष्ठ निर्मलः स्वर्गमाप्नुयात् । अनुशासन 25. 36-38.

1351. दर्शनात्तस्य तीर्थस्य नामसंकीर्तनादपि । मृत्तिकालम्भनाद्यापि नरः पापात् प्रमुच्यते ॥ मत्स्य. 104. 12, कूर्म. I. 36. 27. The अग्नि (111. 6-7) reads 'सर्वपापनादस्य तीर्थस्य'; वनपर्व 85. 80 reads 'गमनात्तस्य...दपि । मृत्युकालभयाच्चापि नरः मुच्यते'.

1352. एतत् प्रजापतेः क्षेत्रं त्रिषु लोकेषु विश्रुतम् । अत्र स्नात्वा दिवं याति पुनर्भवाः ॥ कूर्म. I. 36. 20. मत्स्य. (104. 5 and 111. 14) and नारद (उत्तर 67. 127-128) also calls it प्रजापतिक्षेत्र.

The word Prayāga is employed in the neuter when connected with such words as tīrtha or kṣetra, as in Matsya (111. 14 prajāpater-idam kṣetram prayāgam-iti viśrutam), but when employed along with words (in the masculine gender) such as tīrtharāja, it takes the masculine gender.

The word Prayāga is derived in various ways. The Vana-parva¹³⁵³ appears to suggest that the word Prayāga is derived from the root 'yaj' when it says 'Brahmā who is the soul of all beings performed formerly a sacrifice here; therefore it became known as Prayāga'. In the Skanda¹³⁵⁴ purāṇa also it appears to be explained by taking the two parts *pra* and *yāga* separately. "It is mentioned as Prayāga because it is superior to all sacrifices; Prayāga was the name given to it by the gods Hari, Hara and others seeing that it is superior to all sacrifices though the latter be enriched with fees and the like." The Matsyapurāṇa¹³⁵⁵ appears to lay emphasis on the part 'pra' when it says 'on account of its efficacy (or power) as compared with all other tīrthas it prevails (or is useful) far more'. The Brahmapurāṇa¹³⁵⁶ affirms "It is called prayāga on account of its eminence and it has the word 'rāja' (in Tīrtharāja) applied to it on account of its being the chief".

We must distinguish between Prayāga-maṇḍala, Prayāga and Venī or Trivenī, each subsequent one being smaller and holier than each preceding one. The Matsya¹³⁵⁷ states that the sphere of Prayāga is five *yojanas* in circumference and that the moment a man enters inside this strip of land, there is an Aśva-medha at every step. This has been explained by the Tristhali-setu (p. 15) as follows: Regarding Brahmayūpa (the sacrificial post of Brahmā) as the spike or peg, if one measures with a rope one and one half yojana long all round, that would be the

1353. गङ्गायमुनयोर्वीर सङ्गमं लोकविश्रुतम् ॥ यत्रायजत भूतात्मा पूर्वमेव पितामहः । प्रयागमिति विख्यातं तस्मान्मरुतसत्तम ॥ वनपर्व 87. 18-19; तथा सर्वेषु लोकेषु प्रयागं पूजयेद् बुधः । पूज्यते तीर्थराजस्तु सत्यमेव युधिष्ठिर ॥ मत्स्य. 109. 15.

1354. प्रकृष्टं सर्वयागेभ्यः प्रयागमिति गीयते । दृष्ट्वा प्रकृष्टयागेभ्यः पुष्टेभ्यो दक्षिणादिभिः । प्रयागमिति तन्नाम कृतं हरिहरादिभिः ॥ q. in त्रिस्थली° p. 13. The first half is स्कन्द, काशी° 7. 49; so प्रयाग means प्रकृष्टो यागो यत्र.

1355. प्रभावात्सर्वतीर्थेभ्यः प्रभवत्याधिकं विभो । मत्स्य. 110. 11.

1356. प्रकृष्टत्वात्प्रयागोसौ प्राधान्याद्वाजशब्दवान् । ब्रह्मपुराण q. in त्रिस्थली° p. 13.

1357. पञ्चयोजनविस्तीर्णं प्रयागस्य तु मण्डलम् । प्रविष्टमात्रे तज्जमावश्वमेधः पदे पदे मत्स्य. 108. 9-10, 111. 8, पद्म I. 45.8. The कूर्मपुराण has पञ्चयोजनविस्तीर्णं ब्रह्मणः परमेष्ठिनः । प्रयागं प्रथितं तीर्थं यस्य माहात्म्यमीरितम् ॥ II. 35.4.



Prayāgamaṇḍala of five *yojanas* in circumference. The boundaries of Prayāga itself are defined by Vanaparva,¹³⁵⁸ the Matsyapurāṇa (104. 5 and 106. 30) and others. 'Prayāga extends from Pratiṣṭhāna up to the pool of Vāsuki and upto the two *nāgas* Kambala and Aśvatara and the *nāga* Bahumūlaka; this is known in the three worlds as the sacred spot of Prajāpati' (Matsya 104. 5), while Matsya 106. 30 provides that to the east of the Ganges is the Sāmudrakūpa, which is the same as Pratiṣṭhāna. This is explained by the Tristhalīsetu as follows: the eastern boundary is the kūpa called Pratiṣṭhāna¹³⁵⁹; the northern one is the Vāsuki pool, the western limit is formed by Kambala and Aśvatara; the southern boundary is Bahumūlaka. This would be a four-cornered space which is included within Prayāga-maṇḍala. According to the Matsyapurāṇa as quoted by the Kalpataru on tīrtha p. 143 the two Nāgas are on the south bank of Yamunā while the printed text has 'vipule Yamunātate' (106. 27)¹³⁶⁰. The printed text of Padma I. 43. 27 supports the Kalpataru reading ('Yamunā-dakṣiṇe tate). Venī-kṣetra is within the limits of Prayāga itself and is twenty bow lengths in extent, as stated in the Padma. There are three *kūpas* viz. Prayāga, Pratiṣṭhāna and Alarkapura. The Matsya and Agni say 'there are three fire kuṇḍas and the Ganges flows in their midst'. It should be noted that except where special reference is made in the Purāṇas to the sub-tīrthas, the reference to a bath at Prayāga in general means bath in the Venī i. e. the confluence of the two rivers, as e. g. in Vanaparva 85.81 and 85 and Matsya 104. 16-17.¹³⁶¹

1358. आ प्रयागं प्रतिष्ठानाद्यत्पुरा वासुकेर्हृदात्। कम्बलाश्वतरौ नागौ नागश्च बहु-
मूलकः॥ एतत् प्रजापतेः क्षेत्रं त्रिषु लोकेषु विश्रुतम्। मत्स्य. 104. 5; पञ्च I. 39. 69-70, 41.
4-5 are similar. वनपर्व 85. 76-77 are: प्रयागं सप्रतिष्ठानं कम्बलाश्वतराबुधौ। तीर्थं भोग-
वती चैव वेदिरेषा प्रजापतेः। तत्र वेदाश्च यज्ञाश्च मूर्तिमन्तो युधिष्ठिर।। अग्नि 111. 5. has the
verse प्रयागं...प्रजापतेः (reads वेदी प्रोक्ता).

1359. पूर्वपार्श्वे तु गङ्गायास्त्रिषु लोकेषु भारत। कूपं चैव तु सासुद्रं प्रतिष्ठानं च विश्रुतम्॥
मत्स्य. 106. 3.

1360. माघः सितासिते विप्र राजसूयैः समो भवेत्। धनुर्विंशतिविस्तीर्णे सितेऽथिलाम्बु-
सङ्गमे॥ इति पाद्मोमोक्तेः। त्रिस्थली० p. 75. सितासित (white and dark) means Venī.
Vide n. 1337 above for धनुः being equal to four hastas and 96 angulas.

1361. तत्र त्रीण्यग्निकुण्डानि येषां मध्येन जाह्नवी। वनपर्व 85. 73; त्रीण्यग्निकुण्डानि-
कुण्डानि येषां मध्ये तु जाह्नवी। मत्स्य. 110.4 and अग्नि 111.12, पञ्च I. 39. 49. 4;
while मत्स्य. 104.13, कूर्म. (I. 36. 28-29) read पञ्च कुण्डानि.

The Vanaparva¹³⁶² and some of the Purāṇas represent that the country between the Ganges and the Yamunā is (like) the hips and loins of the earth (i. e. it is the most prosperous and plentiful part of the earth) and that Prayāga is like the inmost part of the hips.

The Narasimha-purāṇa says that Viṣṇu is in the form of Yogamūrti in Prayāga (65. 17). It is said in the Matsya-purāṇa¹³⁶³ (111. 4-10) that when Rudra dissolves the world at the end of the Kalpa, the holy place of Prayāga is not destroyed, that Brahmā, Viṣṇu and Maheśvara (Śiva) stay in Prayāga, that to the north of Pratiṣṭhāna Brahmā stays in it under guise, that Viṣṇu stays there as Venī-Mādhava, that Śiva stays there as the Vāta (banyan tree) and that therefore the gods with the Gandharvas, the Siddhas and great sages always protect the sphere (*maṇḍala*) of Prayāga by guarding it against evil actions. The Matsyapurāṇa, therefore, recommends that a pilgrim should go to Prayāga which is protected by all the gods, stay there for a month, avoid sexual intercourse, worship gods and pitrs and thereby secure his desired objects (104. 18). The same Purāṇa highly eulogises the gift at Prayāga of a *kapilā* cow properly decked (105. 16-22) with clothes, ornaments and jewels. The Padmapurāṇa (Ādi. 42. 17-24) has the same verses as the Matsya on this subject. Similarly, the marriage of a daughter in the *ūrṣa* form at Prayāga is highly spoken of in Matsya (106. 8-9). The Matsya (105. 13-14 and 106. 10) says generally that if a man makes a gift of a cow, of gold, of precious stones, of pearls and of other things that he owns his pilgrimage becomes fruitful (*saphala*) and he collects religious merit (*punya*) and that when a man makes gifts according to his ability and wealth, the fruit of his pilgrimage increases and he remains in heaven till the end of the world. The Brahmāṇḍa¹³⁶⁴ assures pilgrims that whatever gifts are made according to one's ability at

1362. गङ्गायमुनयोर्मध्यं पृथिव्या जघनं स्मृतम् । प्रयागं जघनस्थानमुपस्थमृषयो विदुः ॥ वनपर्व 85. 75 = पद्म I. 39. 69 and I. 43. 19, अग्नि 111. 4, कूर्म. I. 37. 12, मत्स्य. 106. 19. The idea appears to be that holy places are like the children of the earth.

1363. प्रयागे निवसन्त्येते ब्रह्मविष्णुमहेश्वराः ।... उत्तरेण प्रतिष्ठानाच्छ्रमना ब्रह्म तिष्ठति । वेणीमाधवरूपी तु भगवांस्तत्र तिष्ठति ॥ माहेश्वरो वटो भूत्वा तिष्ठते परमेश्वरः । ततो देवाः सगन्धर्वाः सिद्धाश्च परमर्षयः । रक्षन्ति मण्डलं नित्यं पापकर्मनिवारणात् । मत्स्य. 111. 4-10. Vide कूर्म. I. 36. 23-26, पद्म, आदिखण्ड 41. 6-10 for similar verses.

1364. कुरुक्षेत्रे प्रयागे च गङ्गासागरसङ्गमे । गङ्गायां पुष्करे सेतौ गङ्गाद्वारे च नैमिषे । यद्दानं दीयते शक्यता तदानन्त्याय कल्पते ॥ ब्रह्माण्ड q. in. त्रिस्थलीः p. 24.



Kuruksetra, Prayāga, at the mouth of the Ganges where it falls into the sea, on the Ganges, at Puskara, at Setubandha, at Gaṅgādvāra and in Naimiṣa tends to confer inexhaustible rewards. In the Vanaparva ¹³⁶⁵ it is stated that this sacrificial ground (of Brahmā) is honoured even by the gods, that even a small thing donated here assumes greatness (i. e. produces the rewards of large gifts).

The confluence of the three rivers came to be associated with *omkāra*, ¹³⁶⁶ the mystic syllable that stands for *Brahma*. It is said in a purāṇa passage (probably Brahmapurāṇa) that the three parts of *om* (a u m) respectively are Sarasvatī, Yamunā and Gaṅgā and that the waters of three rivers represent Pradyumna, Aniruddha and Sankarṣaṇa Hari.

It may be noted that, in spite of the fact that the Matsya, Kūrma (I. 36-39), Padma (Ādi. chapters 41-49), Agni 111 and other Purāṇas contain several hundred verses on Prayāga, the Kalpataru (on tīrtha), the earliest extant digest on tīrthas, quotes only the Matsya (104. 1-13 and 16-20, 105. 1-22, 106. 1-48, 107. 2-21, 108. 3-5, 8-17 and 23-34, 109. 10-12, 110. 1-11, 111. 8-11, in all about 151 verses) and Vanaparva chap. 85. 79-87 and 97 and does not add a single word of explanation or discussion. But the other digests profusely quoting mostly from Purāṇas discuss at some length several topics and a few words must be devoted to some of those topics.

One such topic is tonsure at Prayāga. It is stated by the Gaṅgāvākyāvalī (p. 298) and the Tir. Pr. (p. 335) that, though the author of the Kalpataru says nothing about tonsure at Prayāga, yet as śiṣṭas (respectable and learned people) and the writers of digests accept it as necessary, certain authorities would be set out. The two verses quoted by most ^{1366a} writers are 'one should tonsure the head at Prayāga, offer piṇḍas at Gayā, make gifts in Kuruksetra and should commit

1365. एषा यजनभूमिर्हि देवानामपि सत्कृता । तत्र दत्तं स्वल्पमपि महद्भवति भारत ॥ वनपर्व 85. 82 = 83. 77 of the cr. ed. which reads तत्र दत्तं सूक्ष्ममपि.

1366. ओमित्येकाक्षरं ब्रह्म परब्रह्माभिधायकम् । तदेव वेणी विज्ञेया सर्वसौख्य-प्रदायिनी ॥ अकारः शारदा प्रोक्ता प्रद्युम्नस्तत्र जायते । उकारो यमुना प्रोक्तानिरुद्ध-स्तज्जलात्मकः । मकारो जाह्नवी गङ्गा तत्र सङ्कर्षणो हरिः । एवं त्रिवेणी विख्याता वेदवीजं प्रकीर्तिता ॥ q. by त्रिस्थली° p. 8.

1366 a. प्रयागे वपनं कुर्याद्द्वयायां पिण्डपातनम् । दानं दद्यात् कुरुक्षेत्रे नारदीयं वचं त्यजेत् ॥ किं गयापिण्डदानेन काश्यां वा मरणेन किम् । किं कुरुक्षेत्रदानेन प्रयागे वपनं यदि ॥ q. by गङ्गावा. p. 298, तीर्थचि. p. 32, त्रिस्थली° p. 17, तीर्थप्र. p. 335. These two verses occur in नारदीय (उत्तर) 63. 103-104.

(religious) suicide at Benares. What is the use (or necessity) of pinda offerings at Gayā or death in Kāśī, or gifts at Kuruksetra, if one has tonsured one's head at Prayāga? ". Elaborate discussions are held by all these works about the exact intention of the verses, about the application of the maxim of *rātrisattra* ¹³⁶⁷ to them and about the results derived from tonsure. They have to be passed over here from considerations of space. The Tristhali-setu (p. 17) holds that the verse only praises the rite of tonsure at Prayāga and the fruit thereof is simply the removal of sin. The Tri. S. refutes (p. 17) the application of *rātrisattra-nyāya* to these verses, while Tir. C. (p. 32) applies it. Some of the conclusions drawn by the Tri. S. are that in one and the same yātrā at Prayāga (even if a man stays there for some days) ceremonial tonsure takes place only once, that widows have to tonsure their heads, that in the case of women whose husbands are living only two or three finger-breadths of tresses are to be cut and offered at the *Trivenī*, that even ^{1367a} boys whose *upanayana* has not been performed have to undergo tonsure provided the *cūdā* rite has already been performed. The Tristhalisetu (p. 22) notes that certain traditionalists, ¹³⁶⁸

1367. रात्रिसत्रन्याय occurs in जै. IV. 3. 17-19. There is a passage in the पञ्चविंशब्राह्मण 23. 2. 4 'प्रतितिष्ठन्ति य एता रात्रीरुपयन्ति.' Here in the पञ्चविंश रात्रिसत्र is enjoined but no fruit thereof is expressly promised. The question arises whether in the absence of an express reward, heaven should be understood as the reward (because as explained in Jai. IV. 3. 15-16 *svarga* is the reward of all sacrifices for which no express reward is mentioned) or whether प्रतिष्ठा (stable position) which occurs in the above arthavāda passage should be held to be the reward of रात्रिसत्र. The reply is that here the reward is प्रतिष्ठा and not स्वर्ग i. e. though there is no express mention of the reward in the passage about *rātrisattra*, the *arthavāda* passage should be construed as laying down the reward. In the two verses, there is a vidhi in the words प्रयागे वपनं कुर्यात् and the second verse is an अर्थवाद. The question is what reward is promised in it. If रात्रिसत्रन्याय applies, then मुण्डन secures all the fruits of गयापिण्डदान, कुरुक्षेत्रदान and काशीतृत्याग. If it does not apply then the only fruit is पापाभाव.

1367a. अनुपनीतानामपि प्रयागे वपनं कार्यम् । यस्तु पुत्रांस्तथा बालान्स्नापयेत्पाय-
येत्तथा । यथात्मना तथा सर्वं दानं विप्रेषु दापयेत् ॥ इति मत्स्यपुराणवचने तृतीयपादस्य...
मुण्डनादिविधायकत्वात् । त्रिस्थली० pp. 23-24. यस्तु पुत्रांस्तथा० is मत्स्य. 106.6.

1368. सांप्रदायिकास्तु...तस्मात्समूलमेव केशवपनमिह स्त्रीणामिति । अत्रापि नोन्मुक्त-
केशवपनं किंतु वेणीं कृत्वा कुङ्कुमादिमङ्गलद्रव्यालङ्कृता भर्तारं नमस्कृत्य तदनुज्ञाता वापयेत् ।
तां च वेणीमञ्जलौ निधाय यथाशक्तिकृतां स्वर्णमयीं रूप्यमयीं वा वेणीं मुक्ताप्रवालादि-
निधाय-वेण्यां वेणीप्रदानेन सर्वं पापं प्रणश्यतु । जन्मान्तरेष्वपि सदा सौभाग्यं मम वधिष्याम् ।
इति पठित्वा वेण्यां क्षिपेत् ॥ त्रिस्थली० p. 22 ; प्रयागे स्त्रीणामपि मुण्डनं न तु वक्ष्यमाण-
वचनाभ्यां केशानां द्व्यङ्गुलच्छेदमात्रम् ॥ प्रायश्चित्ततत्त्व p. 493.

relying on passages that aver that all sins cling to the roots of a person's hair, say that cutting two or three tresses would be merely *kartana* and not *vapana* (tonsure), that even women whose husbands are alive must shave themselves at Prayāga, that such women should make a braid of all their hair, should deck the braid with saffron and other auspicious materials, bow to their husbands and with the husband's permission have the head tonsured, that then they should place the cut hair in their joined hands, place thereon a golden or silver *venī* and pearls and coral and should cast all these into the confluence (*Venī*) of the Ganges and Jumnā after repeating the mantra 'May all my sins be destroyed by this offering of my braided hair into the *Venī*! may my blessedness (the auspicious state of wifehood) always increase in the lives to come.' The Tri. S. states that women do not tonsure their head at any tirtha except at Prayāga and the only reason for this is that it is the practice of *śiṣṭas*. Vide above pp. 122-124 for tonsure as expiation for sins. The Nāradya (Uttara) 63. 106 provides the same rule as Parāśara (in note 278 above) for women. The Prāyaścittatattva of Raghunandana prescribes the complete tonsure of the head for women at Prayāga.

It appears probable that the provision for the casting of *venī* (braided hair) on the part of women whose husbands were alive was suggested by the word *Venī* applied to the confluence of the two rivers, where the river Ganges appears to make a bend or curve for some distance.¹³⁶⁹

One important question that very much exercised the minds of ancient and medieval Indian writers was whether and when suicide, particularly at sacred spots like the confluence of the Ganges and Jumnā or at the foot of the Aṅgasa Vata at Prayāga, would involve no sin.¹³⁷⁰ This matter has already been

1369. ओमित्येकाक्षरं ब्रह्म परब्रह्माभिधायकम्। तदेव वेणी विज्ञेया सर्वसौख्य-
प्रदायिनी ॥ स एव तीर्थराजोयं त्रिवेण्या यत्र सङ्गमः। त्रिस्थली० p. 8.

1370. प्रयागः...विभो॥ श्रवणात्तस्य...प्रमुच्यते ॥ तत्राभिषेकं यः कुर्यात्सङ्गमे सांशित-
व्रतः। पुण्यं सकलमामोति राजसूयाश्वमेधयोः ॥ एषा यजन...महद्भवति भारत ॥ न वेद...
प्रयागमरणं प्रति ॥ दशार्थसहस्राणि षष्टिकोट्यस्तथापराः। येषां सांनिध्यमत्रैव कीर्तितं कुरु-
नन्दन। चातुर्वेदे च यत्पुण्यं सत्यवादिषु चैव यत्। स्नात एव तदामोति गङ्गायमुनसङ्गमे ॥ वनपर्व
85. 79-85. After quoting the last verse and several other verses the त्रिस्थली-
सेतु observes (p. 30) 'एतेषु सर्वेषु वचनेषु यद्यपि प्रयागशब्दस्याविशेषतः उपादाने तथापि
तदन्तर्गततत्तत्तीर्थस्नानफलस्य वाक्यान्तरैरुक्तत्वात् स्थलमात्रे च जलाभावेन स्नानाभावे-
ण्युपलक्षकः प्रयागशब्दः'। The same verses occur in पद्म (आदि 39. 78) स्कन्द
(काशी० chap. 7, 63 and 65) says 'तद्विष्णोः परमं पदं सदा पश्यन्ति सूरयः' तद्विष्णोः
वेदे तत्प्रयागं पुनः पुनः ॥ इयं वेणी हि निःश्रेणी ब्रह्मणो वरमं यास्यतः ॥
सूरयः।—is ऋ. I. 22.20.

dealt with at length in H. of Dh. vol. II. pp. 924-928 and vol. III. pp. 939, 948-949. Only a brief treatment by way of a summary of the pages and a few notes will be added here. The general sentiment of Dharmaśāstra works is to condemn suicide or an attempt to commit suicide as a great sin (vide H. of Dh. vol. II. page 924 for texts). The Āp. Dh. S. (I. 10. 28. 15-17) mentions the view of Hārīta which condemns suicide even as *prāyaścitta* for committing a *mahāpātaka* (like incest) and puts killing another or killing oneself on the same footing. Manu V. 89 and Yāj. III. 154 condemn suicide by denying after-death rites to those who commit it, but Manu allowed suicide in various ways as *prāyaścitta* for *mahāpātakas* (vide Manu XI. 73, 90-91, 103-104). But exceptions to the condemnation of suicide are found in the *smṛtis*, *epics* and *purāṇas*. They may be grouped under several heads. (1) Suicide as an exception in various ways by those guilty of *mahāpātakas* (viz. *brāhmaṇa* murder, drinking of *surā*, theft of *brāhmaṇa*'s gold and incest); vide H. of Dh. vol. II. pp. 924-925 for *smṛti* and other texts. (2) Starting on the Great Journey (*mahāprasthāna-gamana* or *mahāpathayātrā*) by a forest hermit (Manu VI. 31, Yāj. III. 55) suffering from incurable diseases and unable to perform the duties of his order. (3) An old man or one who cannot observe the rules of bodily purification or who is so ill as to be beyond medical skill may kill himself by throwing himself from a precipice or by fire or by drowning or fasting or start on the Great Journey into the *Himālaya* or by jumping from the branches of the *Vaṭa* tree at *Prayāga* (Aparārka p. 877 quoting *Ādi-purāṇa* and *Atri-smṛti* verses 218-219 q. by *Medhātithi* on Manu V. 88 and *Mit.* on Yāj. III. 6). (4) Even a householder, otherwise all right, may resort to suicide by the means stated (in No. 3) if his life's work is done, if he has no desire for the pleasures of the world and does not desire to live, or if he is a *Vedāntin*¹³⁷¹ and convinced of the ephemeral nature of life and may kill himself by fast in *Himālaya*. (5) Religious suicide was allowed at the confluence of the two great rivers *Gaṅgā* and *Yamunā*, at the *Vaṭa* there and at some other *tirthas*. (6) A wife dying by *sahagamana* or *anumarāṇa*. As to *Satī*, the *Nāradiya* (*pūrvārdha* 7. 52-53) provides that a woman should not burn herself on the funeral pyre of her husband if she has

1371. शरीरमुत्सृजेत्तत्र विधिपूर्वमनाशकं। अध्रुवं जीवितं ज्ञात्वा यो वै वेदान्तगो विजुः
अभ्यर्च्य देवतास्तत्र नमस्कृत्य मुनींस्तथा। ततः सिद्धो दिवं गच्छेद् ब्रह्मलोकं सनातनम् ॥ अत्र
शासन 25. 63-64, तत्र refers to हिमालय as the context shows.



young child or young children, if she is pregnant or if she has not attained puberty, or if she is in her monthly illness at the time. Not only did common men believe in the promise of the Purāṇas that those who killed themselves at Prayāga (at the *saṅgama* or near Vata) secured mokṣa (freedom from the everlasting cycle of births and deaths) which was the highest of the four *puruṣārathas* (goals of human existence), but even great poets like Kālidāsa held the view that, though mokṣa or *kaivalya* or *apavarga* requires correct knowledge and realisation of the Supreme Spirit according to the Vedānta, Sāṅkhya and Nyāya systems, death at the sacred saṅgama led to mokṣa even without 'tattvajñāna.' In H. of Dh. vol. II pp. 925-927, historical examples of kings such as Yaśaḥ-karṇadeva, Candella Dhaṅgadev and Cālukya Someśvara committing suicide at Prayāga or the Tūṅgabhadra have been given. The king Kumāragupta of Magadha is said to have entered the fire of dry cow-dung cakes. This is in accordance with the prescriptions in the Matsya-purāṇa 107. 9-10 (=Padma, Ādi-khaṇḍa 44.3) which states ¹³⁷² 'the man who, suffering from no diseases, having no deficiency as to his limbs and being in full possession of his five senses, encompasses (his death) in cowdung fire remains honoured in heaven for as many years as there are pores on the whole of his body.' ¹³⁷³ The Rājatarāṅgiṇī VI. 14 refers to officers entrusted with the duty of supervising suicide by fast (*prāyopaveśa*).

1372. गङ्गायमुनयोर्मध्ये कर्षाग्निं यस्तु साधयेत्। अहीनाङ्गो ह्यरोगश्च पञ्चेन्द्रिय-
समन्वितः। यावन्ति रोमकृपाणि तस्य गात्रेषु देहिनः॥ तावद्वर्षसहस्राणि स्वर्गलोके महीयते॥
मत्स्य 107.9, कूर्म I. 38. 3-4, नारदीय, उत्तर, 63.154 (reads करीषाग्निं तु धारयेत्), पद्म
I. 44. 9 (reads पञ्चाग्निं यस्तु). कर्षाग्निं is short for करीषाग्निं for metrical reasons.
कूर्म I. 38.3 reads 'करीषाग्निं च साधयेत्.' Vide Gupta Inscriptions No. 42 p. 200,
the Ahsaid Stone Inscription of आदित्यसेन of मगध, which states that his
fifth ancestor Kumāragupta plunged himself in the slow-burning fire of
dried cowdung cakes as if in water at Prayāga. शौर्यसत्यव्रतधरो यः प्रयागगतो
धने। अम्भसीव करीषाग्नौ मग्नः स पुष्पपूजितः॥ p. 203 (of the text). धने means धने
सत्यपि. The learned editor was probably unaware of the provisions about
suicide at Prayāga by being burnt with dry cowdung cakes in the Matsya
and other purāṇas.

1373. The Ain-i-Akbārī (tr. by Gladwin and published in 1800) speaks
of the following as the meritorious kinds of suicide (vol. I. p. 531 and p. 802
of the Popular edition, edited by J. Mukhopadhyaya). These are five in
number viz. (1) starving; (2) covering himself with cowdung and setting it on
fire and consuming himself therein; (3) burying himself in snow (4) to
plunge into water at the *Gaṅgāsāgara-saṅgama*, enumerate one's sins and
pray till alligators come and devour the man; (5) cut his throat at Allahabad
at the confluence of the Ganges and the Jumna.

The important verse on which reliance is placed for sanctioning religious suicide at Prayāga may be translated¹³⁷⁴ as follows: 'You should not set aside (pass over) your wish about dying at Prayāga on account of the words of the Veda or the words of the people.' The words of the Veda¹³⁷⁵ are Vāj. S. 40. 3 (=Īśāvāsyopanīṣad 3) which literally translated means 'there are worlds of Asuras enveloped in blinding darkness; those who have killed themselves repair after death to those worlds.' This verse does not in the context appear to refer to a person committing suicide, but rather to a person who kills his soul by remaining in ignorance of the true Self. But even learned writers and poets took it to refer to suicide (vide Uttara-rāmacarita, Act IV after verse 3). Another passage of the Veda on which reliance may be placed is the one in the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa X. 2. 6. 7 'one ought not to yield to his own desire and pass away before the full extent of life, for it (such shortening of full life) does not make for the (heavenly) world'. By 'the words of the people' are meant smṛti passages condemning suicide such as Gaut. 14. 12, Vas.^{1375a} 23. 14-15, Manu V. 88 (which says that no water is to be offered to those who kill themselves), Viṣṇu Dh. S. 22. 56 (ātmatyāginah patitāś-ca naśaucodakabhājah).

1374. न वेदवचनात्तात न लोकवचनादपि । मतिरुत्क्रमणीया ते प्रयागमरणं प्रति ॥ वनपर्व 85.83, नारदीय (उत्तर) 63.129, पद्म (आदि 39.76 reads न देव०), अग्नि 111.8 (reads मतिरुत्क्रमणीयान्ते प्रयागे मरणं प्रति). मत्स्य. 106.22 reads न देववचना... प्रयागमरणं प्रति) and पद्म, आदि 43.22 reads प्रयागमरणं प्रति. The कूर्मपुराण I. 37.14 is न मातृवचनात्तात न...दपि । मति...प्रयागमरणं प्रति ॥; पद्म, आदिखण्ड 33.64 reads न लोकवचनात् पित्रोर्न चैव गुरुवादतः । मतिर्न क्रमणीया स्यादविमुक्तगतिं प्रति ॥. This entirely changes the meaning and avers that if one has a desire to go to Kāśī, one should not heed the words of one's parents or elders or of the people (dissuading him from going).

1375. असूर्या नाम ते लोका अन्धेन तमसावृताः । तांस्ते प्रेत्याभिगच्छन्ति ये के चात्महनो जनाः ॥ वाज. सं. 40.3; The ईशावास्योप. reads असूर्या (sunless). Vide for आत्महन् the sūtra of वसिष्ठ quoted below. यो वा शतं वर्षाणि जीवति स हैवैतदमृतमामोति...तस्माद् ह न पुरायुषः स्वकामी प्रेयादलोक्यं हैत उ वा लोका० । शतपथब्रा. X. 2. 6. 7 q. by मेधातिथि on मनु V. 88 (आत्मनस्त्यागिनां चैव निवर्तेतोदकाक्रिया) and VI. 32. The printed text of मेधातिथि and कुल्लुक reads स्वःकामी (desiring heaven).

1375 a. य आत्मत्याग्यभिज्ञस्तो भवति सपिण्डानां प्रेतकर्मच्छेदः । काष्ठजलसंस्कारे पाषाणशस्त्रविषरज्जुभिर्न आत्मानमवसादयति स आत्महन् भवति ॥ वसिष्ठ 23. 14-15.



There is no doubt that some of the smrtis, the Mahābhārata¹³⁷⁶ itself and some purāṇas do recommend (or at least do not condemn) suicide in certain circumstances. A few purāṇa passages may be quoted here. Two verses of the Kūrma state 'That goal (or state), which a wise man that is devoted to Yoga and that has become an ascetic (or has forsaken all actions) reaches, is secured by him who gives up life at the confluence of the Gaṅgā and Yamunā. Whoever dies in the Gaṅgā whether wilfully or unintentionally is born after death in heaven and does not see hell'.¹³⁷⁷ The Kūrma is quite clear 'Mokṣa may be secured or not after a thousand births elsewhere but in Benares mokṣa can be secured in a single birth' (I. 32. 22). The Padma¹³⁷⁸ is quite emphatic 'a man who, knowingly or unknowingly, wilfully or unintentionally, dies in the Ganges secures on death heaven and 'mokṣa'. A verse of the Skanda asserts 'He who abandons his life in this sacred place in some way or other does not incur the sin of suicide but secures his desired objects.' The Kūrma (I. 38. 3-12) refers to four modes of suicide and promises residence in heaven and various other rewards for thousands of years, viz. by (1) burning oneself in the slow fire of dry cowdung cakes, (2) by entering the water at the confluence of Gaṅgā and Yamunā, (3) by hanging with head down in the stream and feet up and drinking

1376. Vide the references given under No. 2 and 3 of the five classes of excusable or permitted suicides on p. 604 above. The Mahābhārata has a *parva* called Mahāprāsthānika in which it is narrated (chap. I. 24) that Yudhiṣṭhira with his four brothers, queen Draupadī and a faithful dog started on the Great Journey towards the Himālaya and that they fell down dead one after another, Draupadī being the first and Bhīma the last.

1377. या गतिर्योगयुक्तस्य संन्यस्तस्य मनीषिणः । सा गतिस्त्यजतः प्राणान् गङ्गायमुनसङ्गमे ॥ अकामो वा सकामो वा गङ्गायां यो विपद्यते । स मृतो जायते स्वर्गे नरकं च न पश्यति ॥ कूर्म. I. 37. 16, 39. The first verse is read in पद्म, सुष्टिखण्ड 60.56 as या गति...सत्त्वस्थस्य मनीषिणः । सा...गङ्गायां तु शरीरिणः ॥. नारद (उत्तर) 43.97 is the same as पद्म.

1378. ज्ञानतोऽज्ञानतो वापि कामतोऽकामतोऽपि वा । गङ्गायां च मृतो मर्त्यः स्वर्गे मोक्षं च विन्दति ॥ पद्म, सुष्टि. 60.65 q. by त्रिस्थली० p. 47. यथा कथंचित्तीर्थेस्मिन् प्राणत्यागं करोति यः । तस्यात्मघातदोषो न प्राप्नुयादीप्सितानपि ॥ स्कन्द, काशी० 22.76. The कल्पतरु on तीर्थ p. 258 quotes from वायुपुराण 'यो वाहिताग्निप्रवरो वीराध्यानं (०ध्वानं?) गतोपि वा । समाधाय मनः पूर्वं मन्त्रमुच्चारयेच्छनैः ॥ त्वमग्रे रुद्रस्त्वं सुधामहोदधिस्त्वं सर्वे मारुताः क्षिप्रमीयिरे । त्वं वातैयासिसगरी यस्त्वं प्रस्थिमायीरूपः पातयन् माम् ॥. The *mantra* as printed makes no sense. The editor should have separated the words properly even if the mss. were unsatisfactory. It appears to be *Rg. II. 1. 6* (= Tai. S. I. 3. 14. 1) त्वमग्रे रुद्रो असुरो महो दिवस्त्वं शर्धो मारुतं पुष्प इति । त्वं वातैरुणैर्यासि शङ्खयस्त्वं पुष्पा विधतः पासि नु त्मना ॥.

the waters of the Ganges, (4) by cutting off his own flesh and giving it as food to birds. The famous Chinese traveller Hien T'sang (about 629-645 A. D.) clearly refers to this practice of religious suicide (vide Beal's 'Buddhist Records of the Western world,' vol. I. pp. 232-234). The Kalpataru on Tirtha (composed about 1110-1120 A. D.) devotes a special section to Mahāpathayātrā (pp. 258-265). Gradually, the idea of securing heaven and *mokṣa* by committing suicide at Prayāga or Benares appears to have spread to other tirthas. Vanaparva¹³⁷⁹ speaks of suicide at Prthūdaka (Pehova in the Karnal district of Punjab, 14 miles from Thanesar). The Brahmapurāṇa¹³⁸⁰ calls upon *dvijas* who are intent on securing *mokṣa* to commit suicide at Puruṣottama-kṣetra. The Lingapurāṇa¹³⁸¹ says 'if a brāhmaṇa kills himself on Śrīśaila he destroys his sins and attains *mokṣa* as at Avimukta (Benares); there is no doubt about this'. The Padma promises¹³⁸² a similar reward for suicide by fire or by fast at the confluence of Narmadā and Kāverī (a small river, not the great South Indian river).

Gradually there was a revulsion of feeling against suicide at Prayāga or Kāśī or starting on the Great Journey. Among the actions forbidden in the Kali age are included 'starting on the Great Journey' and 'suicide of old people jumping from a precipice or by fire' (vide H. of Dh. vol. III. pp. 939, 958-59). Some of the later medieval writers try very hard to combat the view that religious suicide is permitted¹³⁸³. Nilakantha, the commentator of the Mahābhārata, holds that Vanaparva 85. 83 (na vedavacanāt &c.) refers to natural death at Prayāga and not to wilful death and that the Khila verse ('Sitāsītā' quoted above on p. 596) has the same meaning. Then he propounds two alternative interpretations of Vanaparva 85.

1379. उत्तमं सर्वतीर्थानां यस्त्यजेदात्मनस्तनुम् । पृथुदके जप्यपरो नैव श्वो मरणं तपेत् ॥ गीतं सनत्कुमारेण व्यासेन च महात्मना ॥ वनपर्व 83. 146, 147 q. by तीर्थकल्प. p. 180 (reads श्रुतं मे सर्वं).

1380. तस्मात्सर्वप्रयत्नेन तस्मिन् क्षेत्रे द्विजोत्तमाः । देहत्यागो नरैः कार्यः सम्यङ्मोक्षाभिकाङ्क्षिभिः ॥ ब्रह्मपुराण 177. 25; vide also ब्रह्मपुराण 68. 75 and 177. 16-17.

1381. श्रीशैले सन्त्यजेद् देहं ब्राह्मणो दग्धकिल्बिषः । मुच्यते मात्र सन्देहो ह्यविमुक्ते यथा शुभम् ॥ लिङ्ग (पूर्वार्ध 92. 168-169).

1382. अग्निप्रवेशं यः कुर्याद्यश्च कुर्यादनाशनम् । अनिवर्तिका गतिस्तस्य मे शङ्करोऽब्रवीत् ॥ पद्म., आदि. 16. 14-15.

1383. Vide a learned paper on 'suicide at Prayāga' by Prof. Chattopadhyaya in Journal of the U. P. Historical Society, vol. X, pp. 65 ff.



83, viz. that this passage allows those who are suffering from an incurable disease to commit suicide at Prayāga instead of dying by falling from a precipice and the like or that this verse does not apply to brāhmaṇas but only to the other three varṇas.¹³⁸⁴

Both the Gangāvākyaṭī (pp. 304-310) and the Tīr. C. (pp. 47-52) hold that all varṇas have the authority to resort to suicide at Prayāga. The Tīr. Pr. holds a long, learned and highly polemic discussion on the subject of religious suicide at Prayāga (pp. 346-355). Its own view appears to be that a brāhmaṇa should not commit this suicide at Prayāga on account of the prohibition contained in Kalivarjya verses and that members of the other varṇas may do so. The Tristhalīsetu also enters upon a long discussion (pp. 47-55) and its conclusions are that in suicide at Prayāga for the attainment of *mokṣa* or other rewards (such as heaven) there is no sin, that this suicide at Prayāga is not forbidden^{1384a} to brāhmaṇas as some think (since Agni 111. 8 reads 'na vedavacanād vipra'), that persons whether seriously ill or in good health¹³⁸⁵ may resort to suicide at Prayāga, that no one has authority to commit suicide at Prayāga after abandoning to their fate one's old parents, young wife and children that require support, nor should a woman who is pregnant or who has young children or who has no permission from her husband, commit suicide at Prayāga.¹³⁸⁶ It is refreshing to find Nārāyaṇabhaṭṭa, perhaps

1384. शूद्राश्च क्षत्रिया वैश्या अन्त्यजाश्च तथाधमाः । एते त्यजेयुः प्राणान्वै वर्जयित्वा द्विजं ह्यपि । पतित्वा ब्राह्मणस्तत्र ब्रह्महा वात्महा भवेत् । q. by त्रिस्थली० p. 52, which remarks that these verses are not found in any authoritative source and they involve a contradiction, in as much as क्षत्रियस्य and वैश्यस्य are allowed to kill themselves though they are *dvijas*. This is q. also by भट्टोजि in त्रि. से. सा. स. p. 33.

1384 a. तथा च हेमाद्र्यादिष्वादिपुराणवाक्यानि ब्राह्मणस्यापि मरणविधायकानि । वृद्धः शौचस्मृतेर्लुप्तः—इत्याद्युपक्रम्य गच्छेन्महापथं वापि तुषारगिरिमादरात् । प्रयागवटशाखायां देहत्यागं करोति वा ॥ स्वयं देहविनाशस्य काले प्राप्ते महामतिः । उत्तमान्प्राप्त्याल्लोकान्नात्मघाती भवेत्कचित् ॥ एतेषामधिकारस्तु सर्वेषां सर्वजन्तुषु । नराणामथ नारीणां सर्ववर्णेषु सर्वदा ॥ त्रिस्थली० p. 53.

1385. तस्मादातुरादेरनातुरादेश्च सर्वस्याधिकारः । किं तु वृद्धौ पितरौ तरुणीं भार्यां पोष्यमपत्यं च विहाय नाधिकारः । एवं स्त्रिया अपि गर्भिण्या बालापत्याया भर्तृननुज्ञाताया वा नाधिकार इत्यादि ज्ञेयम् । त्रिस्थली० p. 55.

1386. काश्यादिमरणान्मुक्तिरित्यत्र प्रयोजकत्वे पञ्चमी । तज्जन्यादात्मज्ञानादेव मोक्षोत्पत्तेः । ज्ञानेन विना मिथ्याज्ञाननिवृत्तेरसम्भवात् । 'अत्र हि जन्तोः...रुद्रस्तारकं ब्रह्म ज्ञानादे' इति श्रुतेश्च । यत्तु काश्यां देहावसाने रुद्रोपदेशश्रुतेरस्तु ज्ञानापेक्षा न तु सर्वत्र । प्रयागभूषणादौ विनैवात्मसाक्षात्कारमपवर्गौ दयात् । ...तदसत् विना ज्ञानं मिथ्याज्ञाननिवृत्तेरसम्भवात् । तदर्थम् ।

(Continued on the next page)

the most learned and renowned Pandit of his age steeped in all the lore of ancient India, make, in spite of the overwhelming weight of śāstric authority in favour of suicide at Prayāga, exceptions that surely appeal to reason, sentiment and common sense.¹³⁸⁷ Nārāyaṇabhaṭṭa probably followed traditions several hundred years older than his times. Alberuni in his work on India composed about 1030 A. D. says about religious suicide that 'it was resorted to by those who are tired of life, who are distressed over some incurable disease, some irremovable bodily defect or old age or infirmity. This however no man of distinction does, but only vaiśyas and śūdras. Burning oneself is forbidden to brāhmanas and kṣatriyas by a special law. Therefore these if they want to kill themselves do so at the time of an eclipse in some other manner or they hire somebody to drown them in the Ganges.' (tr. by Sachau, vol. II. p. 170). The Tri. S. S. provides that a man desirous of committing religious suicide at Prayāga should first perform a prāyaścitta,

(Continued from the last page)

p. 313; the passage of the जाबालोपनिषद् is: अविमुक्तं वै कुरुक्षेत्रं देवानां देवयजनं सर्वेषां भूतानां ब्रह्मसदनम्। तस्माद्यत्र क्वचन गच्छति तदेव मन्येत तदविमुक्तमेव। इदं वै कुरुक्षेत्रं देवानां...सदनम्। अत्र हि जन्तोः प्राणेषूत्क्रममाणेषु रुद्रस्तारकं ब्रह्म व्याचष्टे येनासावमृतीभूत्वा मोक्षीभवति।'. In the Bhau Daji collection of mss. at the Bombay Asiatic Society there is a ms. called अविमुक्तनिरुक्तिसार (cat. No. 1047) which contains 15 verses and comments thereon intended to explain the purport of the Jābālopaniṣad passage quoted and also some other passages from the same. In this work कुरुक्षेत्र occurring in जाबालोपनिषद् is explained as 'कुत्सितं रावयतीति कुरु पापं तस्य क्षेपणात् इति कुरुक्षेत्रं पापनाशनमित्यर्थः' and देवयजनं as ब्रह्मोपास्तिस्थानम्.

1387. काम्यमप्यत्र मरणम्। अत्र तु सर्ववर्णानामधिकारः। गङ्गावा. p. 305 and तीर्थचि. p. 47. It is a most remarkable thing that the treatment of प्रयागमरण in both these works is word for word the same, except that the तीर्थचि. quotes the verses न वेदवचनाः from the पद्मपुराण while the गङ्गावा. quotes them from the मत्स्य. It appears probable that the तीर्थचि. borrows from the गङ्गावा. since वाचस्पति appears to have been a younger contemporary of Vidyāpati who helped विश्वासदेवी in composing गङ्गावा. Both were closely connected with the several kings and queens of the कामेश्वर dynasty of Mithilā and it is difficult to assert with confidence who borrows from whom. In New I. A. vol. VII. at p. 53 Prof. G. C. Basu while describing a newly found ms. of a work called व्याडिभक्तिरङ्गिणी ascribed in the colophon to विद्यापति states that that work mentions the द्वैतनिर्णय of वाचस्पति. So it is not unlikely that विद्यापति helped विश्वासदेवी by taking a part from the तीर्थचिन्तामणि of वाचस्पति. Vide H. of Dh. vol. I. pp. 739-740, Journal of Dept. of Letters, Calcutta University, Vol. XVI, New I. A. vol. VII pp. 49 ff, I. H. Q. vol. XX. (1944) pp. 211-2 for the date and works of विद्यापति and H. of Dh. vol. I. pp. 404-405 for the date of वाचस्पति.

should perform his own śrāddha upto the offering of pinda if he has no relative entitled to perform it, should fast that day, should make a saṅkalpa next day preceded by a writing (to inform people of his desire to die in that way) and enter the holy waters contemplating on Viṣṇu. On his death, his relatives have to observe āsauca only for three days (and not for ten) and on the 4th day the śrāddhas of the 11th day are to be performed for him.¹³⁸⁸

The psychological background behind the religious suicide at Prayāga and other places is not difficult to realise. Centuries of philosophical thought had made a very deep impression on the minds of all people that the soul has to submit to a never-ending cycle of births and deaths. Ancient scriptures had offered a release in two ways viz. by *tattvajñāna* and by suicide at a tīrtha. Death had no great terror for the pilgrim who submitted to various inconveniences and privations ungrudgingly. If one is determined to put an end to *samsāra* by taking one's life, what nobler environment could have been imagined or indicated than at Prayāga, where two mighty rivers flowing from the sacred Himalaya unite and carry on unceasingly their work of fertilizing the land and bringing prosperity and solace to millions of needy and anxious people?

While on this topic of religious suicide, it would not be out of place to briefly refer to the discussion in the digests about the meaning of the statement in the purāṇas that those who die at Prayāga are not born again (e.g. Matsya 180. 71 and 74). The answer is foreshadowed in the Matsyapurāṇa itself (182. 22-25) which ¹³⁸⁹ says: At the time of death, when the vital

1388. वृद्धः शौचस्मृत्युत्तमः प्रत्याख्यातभिषक्क्रियः। आत्मानं घातयेद्यस्तु भृग्वग्न्यन-
शनादिभिः। तस्य त्रिरात्रमाशौचं द्वितीये त्वस्थिसञ्चयम्। तृतीये तूदकं कृत्वा चतुर्थे श्राद्धमा-
चरेत् ॥ अत्रि 218-219 q. by मेधा° on मनु V. 89. कल्प° (on आशौच p. 87) quotes
these slightly differently and remarks वैधे तु देहत्यागे वृद्धः...माशौचं कर्तव्या चोदक-
क्रिया इति वचनाद्भवत्येवोदकादिक्रिया.

1389. The स्कन्दपुराण, काशी° has the following verses which repeat what the Matsya (182. 22-25) says viz. Śiva whispers into the right ear of a man dying at Kāśī the knowledge of *brahma* that will save his soul. ब्रह्मज्ञानेन मुच्यन्ते नान्यथा जन्तवः क्वचित्। ब्रह्मज्ञानमये क्षेत्रे प्रयागे वा तनुत्यजः॥ ब्रह्मज्ञानं तदेवाहं काशीसंस्थितिभागिनाम्। दिशामि तारकं प्रान्ते मुच्यन्ते ते तु तत्क्षणात् ॥ chap. 32, verses 115-116; साक्षान्मोक्षो न चेतासु पुरीषु प्रियभाषिणि। स्कन्द, काशी° 8.3 (अगरुय tells लोपासुद्धा). The मत्स्य° verses are: अन्तकाले मनुष्याणां छिद्यमानेषु मर्त्येषु वायुना प्रेर्यमाणानां स्मृतिर्नैवोपजायते॥ अविमुक्ते ह्यन्तकाले भक्तानामीश्वरः स्वयम्। प्रेर्यमाणानां कर्णजापं प्रयच्छति। मणिकर्ण्यं त्यजन्देहं गतिमिष्टां ब्रजेन्नरः। ईश्वरप्रेरितोऽयति द्रुष्माणामकृतात्मभिः ॥ 182. 22-25. The words अन्तकाले ... जायते refer to the general rule. The verses अविमुक्ते° state the special case of death in Avimukta. The त्रिस्थली° p. 297 quotes these verses and reads अविमुक्ते त्वन्तकाले

parts of the human body are being shattered, memory must fail a human being that is about to be pushed on (to another body) by the vital breath (when it leaves the mortal coil). But at the time of death in Avimukta (Vārāṇasī) Lord (Śiva) himself whispers (higher knowledge) in the ears of his devotees that are about to be pushed (into new bodies) by (accumulations of their actions). A man dying near Maṇikarnikā pool reaches the desired goal; he being guided by the Lord reaches the goal which is difficult of attainment by those whose minds are not pure.' In the Kāśikhaṇḍa it is expressly stated that mokṣa does not directly result in these cities (viz. Kāśī &c.). But in spite of these warnings the popular belief fostered by the literal meaning of hundreds of Purāṇa passages is that mokṣa results from dying at Prayāga or in Kāśikṣetra.

The practice of religious suicide has a very respectable antiquity. In the 4th century B. C. Kalanos, the Indian Gymnosophist from Taxila who had accompanied Alexander from India, burnt himself alive on a funeral pyre at Sousa, when being over 70 years old, he was afflicted with a malady that made life more and more burdensome. Vide J. W. McCrindle's 'Invasion of India by Alexander the Great' (New Edition 1896) pp. 46, 301, 386-392. Strabo informs us of a gymnosophist from India named Zarmanochegas of Broach who accompanied an embassy to Augustus Caesar at Athens and consigned himself to flames (vide 'Invasion of India by Alexander' p. 389). Hiouen Thsang (Beal's 'Buddhist Records of the Western World' vol. I. pp. 232-234) refers to suicide at Prayāga. The Jains, while on the one hand they laid the greatest emphasis on 'ahimsā' (non-injury), encouraged religious suicide (called 'Sallekhanā') in certain cases ¹³⁹⁰.

Some of the works, viz. the Kāśimṛti-mokṣa-vicāra of Sureśvara (pp. 2-9), the Tristhalīsetu (pp. 50-55) and the Tirthaparakāśa (pp. 313-318) discuss at some length how mere death (either involuntary or voluntary) in Vārāṇasī or Prayāga would lead to mokṣa. Considerations of space prevent a complete statement of their views. Their arguments are briefly as follows:—Karma is of three kinds, viz. *sañcita* (collected in former births), *prārabdha* (that has begun to

1390. Vide I. A. vol. II. p. 322 'Jain Inscriptions at Sravana Belgola' where some verses are quoted from the Ratnakaraṇḍa of which the following one may be noted: उपसर्गे दुर्भिक्षे जरासि रुजायां च निष्प्रतीकारे । धर्माय व्रतव्रतम्
चनमाहुः सल्लेखनामार्याः ॥

operate by giving the soul the present body) and *kriyamāṇa* (to be done in this body and in future). The Upaniṣads and the Gītā¹³⁹¹ declare that, just as waters do not stick to a lotus leaf, so evil deeds do not cling to a man who knows this (knowledge of *brahma*), that the fire of knowledge reduces to ashes all *karma* and that *mokṣa* results from the realization of the Supreme Spirit (Vedānta-sūtra IV. 1. 13). From this it follows that a man who has realized the Highest Reality will not be affected by the acts done by him after realization and his accumulated actions (*sañcita*) will be destroyed by that realization. The present body in which the soul realizes *brahma* was due to that part of his *karma* which had begun to operate. When the present body perishes in the case of a man who has realized *brahma* he attains final release, since no actions remain for producing effects. To the man who dies a natural death in Benares is given at the time of death the Tāraka (saving) mantra. The Matsyapurāṇa says:¹³⁹² those who enter fire according to the rules in Avimukta (i. e. Benares) enter the mouth of Śiva and so also those determined devotees of Śiva who die by fast in Benares do not return (to this world) even after millions of *kalpas*. Therefore all those who die in any way at¹³⁹³ Benares receive Grace from Śiva after their death. That leads to *tattvajñāna* (correct spiritual knowledge) which leads to *mokṣa*. In rare passages it is expressly stated that *mokṣa* cannot¹³⁹⁴ be immediately secured

1391. यथा पुष्करपलाश आपो न श्लिष्यन्त एवमेवविदि पापं कर्म न श्लिष्यत इति । छा. उप. IV. 14. 3 ; भिद्यते हृदयग्रन्थिश्छिद्यन्ते सर्वसंशयाः । क्षीयन्ते चास्य कर्माणि तस्मिन् दृष्टे परावरे ॥ मुण्डकोपनिषद् II. 2. 8 ; यथैधांसि समिद्धोऽग्निर्भस्मसात्कुरुतेऽर्जुन । ज्ञानाग्निः सर्वकर्माणि भस्मसात्कुरुते तथा ॥ भगवद्गीता ॥ IV. 37.

1392. अग्निप्रवेशं ये कुर्युरविमुक्ते विधानतः । प्रविशन्ति सुखं ते मे निःसन्दिग्धं वरानने ॥ कुर्वन्त्यनशनं ये तु मद्भक्ताः कृतनिश्चयाः । न तेषां पुनरावृत्तिः कल्पकोटिशतैरपि ॥ मत्स्य. 183. 77-78 q. by कल्पतरु on तीर्थ p. 21.

1393. 'ज्ञानादेव तु कैवल्यम्' इत्यादि श्रुतिस्मृतिभ्यो ज्ञानाभावे मोक्षाभावाद्भिष्वेश्वराख्यशुरूपादिष्टतारकादेवात्रात्मज्ञानोत्पत्तिः । तदुक्तं काशीखण्डे । ब्रह्मज्ञानेन मुच्यन्ते नान्यथा जन्तवः कचित् । ब्रह्मज्ञानं तदेवाहं काशीसंस्थितिभागिनाम् । दिशामि तारकं प्राप्ते मुच्यन्ते ते तु तत्क्षणात् । त्रिस्थली० p. 292 which quotes काशीखण्ड 32. 115-116. Similar statements occur in काशीखण्ड 21. 98 विपन्नानां च जन्तूनां यत्र विश्वेश्वरः स्वयम् । कर्णे जापं प्रकुरुते कर्मनिर्मूलनक्षमम् ॥ and काशीखण्ड 61. 117-118, 64. 98. The मुण्डपुराण (प्रेतखण्ड, 6. 60-61) says 'तीर्थराजस्ततः काशी महादेवो दयानिधिः । मृतानां यत्र जन्तूनां कर्णे जपति तारकम् ॥'.

1394. साक्षान्मोक्षो न चैतासु पुरीषु प्रियभाषिणि । स्कन्द, काशी 8. 2 (अगस्त्य to लोपांमुद्रा). तारकः प्रणवः तारयतीति तारः स्वार्थे कप्रत्ययः । संसारसागरादितारकं तारकं च तद् ब्रह्म इति तारकं ब्रह्म उच्यते । काशीमृतिमोक्षविचार p. 3.



(by dying) in these cities. The Tāraka-mantra is variously explained. According to Suresvara, Tāraka-mantra is the mystic syllable *om* which is a symbol of *brahma* as stated in the Tai. Up. (I. 1.8 *Om-iti brahma*) and the Gītā (8. 13 *Om-ityekākṣaram brahma*). The Tri. S. gives another explanation besides this. According to Rāmatāpanīya Upaniṣad and ¹³⁹⁵ the Padmapurāṇa the mantra is 'śrī-Rāma-Rāma-Rāmeti.'

There are several sub-tīrthas that fall under Prayāga. The most important of them is the famous Vāṭa (banyan tree) called Akṣaya-Vāṭa (the imperishable Vāṭa). The Agni (111. 13) states 'if a man dies at the foot of the Vāṭa and in the Saṅgama he goes to the city of Viṣṇu'. Special reference is made to abandoning one's life at the foot of the Vāṭa. The Kūrma¹³⁹⁶ says 'He, who abandons life at the foot of the Vāṭa, passes beyond heavenly worlds and goes to the world of Rudra'. The following are the sub-tīrthas of Prayāga and only references are given to the works in which they are described: (1) the two Nāgas called Kambala and Aśvatara which according to some are on the spacious (vipula) bank of the Jumnā and according to others on the southern bank of the Jumnā (Vanaparva 85.77, Matsya 106. 27, Padma, Ādi 39. 69, Agni 111. 5, Kūrma I. 37. 19), (2) Pratisthāna on the eastern side of the Ganges, being the same as the Sāmudra-kūpa (Vanaparva 85.77, Matsya 106. 30, Kūrma I. 37. 22, Padma, Ādi. 43, 30; Vanaparva 85. 114 appears to suggest that Pratisthāna is another name of Prayāga; (3) Sandhyāvāṭa (Matsya 106. 43, Kūrma I. 37. 28, Agni 111. 13); (4) Hamsaprapatana to the north of Pratisthāna and to the east of the Ganges (Matsya 106. 32, Kūrma I. 37. 24, Agni 111. 10, Padma, Ādi 39. 80 and 43. 32; (5) Koṭitīrtha (Matsya 106. 44, Kūrma I. 37. 29, Agni 111. 14, Padma, Ādi 43. 44; (6) Bhogavatī, the Vēdī of Prajāpati to the north of Vāsuki (Vanaparva 85. 77, Matsya 106.46, Agni 111. 5, Padma, Ādi 39. 79 and 43. 46; (7) Daśāśvamedhaka (Matsya 106. 46, Padma, Ādi 39. 80); (8) Urvaśipulina, suicide at which

1395. रामतापनीये तु श्रीराममन्त्र एव तारकशब्दार्थ उक्तः। सुमूर्षोर्दक्षिणे कर्णे यस्य कस्यापि वा स्वयम्। उपदेश्यसि मन्त्रं स मुक्तो भविता शिव॥ पद्मे तु श्रीशब्दपूर्वकस्त्रिरावृत्तो रामशब्द एव तारकतयोक्तः। सुमूर्षोर्मणिकर्ण्यन्तरर्थोदकनिवासिनः। अहं दिशामि ते मन्त्रं तारकं ब्रह्मवाचकम्। श्रीरामरामरामेति एतत्तारकमुच्यते॥ त्रिस्थली० p. 291.

1396. वटमूलं समाश्रित्य यस्तु प्राणान् परित्यजेत्। स्वर्गलोकानतिक्रम्य स गच्छति॥ कूर्म. I. 37.8-9 q. by तीर्थचि० p. 48. The same is पद्म, आदिखण्ड (reads सर्वलोकान्).



led to ¹³⁹⁷ various rewards quoted below (Matsya 106. 34-42, ¹³⁹⁸ Padma, Ādi 43. 34-43, Agni 111. 13, Kūrma I. 37. 26-27); (9) Rnapramocana, on the northern bank of Yamunā and to the south of Prayāga (Kūrma I. 38. 14, Padma, Ādi 44. 20); (10) Mānasa on the north bank of the Ganges (Matsya 107. 9, Padma, Ādi 44. 2, Agni 111. 14); (11) Agnitīrtha on the southern bank of the Jumnā (Matsya 108. 27, Kūrma I. 39. 4, Padma, Ādi 45. 27); (12) Viraja on the north bank of Yamunā (Padma, Ādi 45. 29); (13) Anaraka ¹³⁹⁹ to the west of Dharmarāja (Kūrma I. 39. 5).

The Purāṇas lay down that if a man starts on a pilgrimage, but dies on the way to Prayāga he reaps great benefits even without reaching it, provided he dies remembering Prayāga. The Matsyapurāṇa (105. 8-12) asserts: ¹⁴⁰⁰ A man whether in his own country or house or after leaving his country dies in a forest, while remembering Prayāga, he still secures the world of Brahma; he reaches a world where the

1397. उर्वशीपुलिने पुण्ये विपुले हंसपाण्डुरे। परित्यजति यः प्राणाञ्च शृणु तस्यापि यत्फलम्॥ षष्टिवर्षसहस्राणि षष्टिवर्षशतानि च । सेव्यते पितृभिः सार्धं स्वर्गलोके नराधिप ॥ उर्वशीं तु सदा पश्येत्स्वर्गलोके नरोत्तम । पूज्यते सततं पुत्र ऋषिगन्धर्वकिंनरैः ॥ ततः स्वर्गात् परिभ्रष्टः क्षीणकर्मा दिवश्च्युतः । उर्वशीसदृशानां तु कन्यानां लभते शतम्॥ मध्ये नारीसहस्राणां बहूनां च पतिर्भवेत् । दशग्रामसहस्राणां भोक्ता भवति भूमिपः ॥ काञ्चीनूपुरशब्देन सुप्तोसौ प्रतिबुध्यते । भुक्त्वा तु विपुलान्भोगांस्तत्तीर्थं लभते पुनः॥ शुक्लाम्बरधरो नित्यं नियतः संयतेन्द्रियः । एकं कालं तु भुञ्जानो मासं भूमिपतिर्भवेत्॥ सुवर्णालङ्कृतानां तु नारीणां लभते शतम् ।

पृथिव्यामासमुद्रायां महाभूमिपतिर्भवेत्॥ धनधान्यसमायुक्तो दाता भवति नित्यशः । भुक्त्वा तु विपुलान्भोगांस्तत्तीर्थं लभते पुनः ॥ मत्स्य. 106. 34-42 = पद्म, आदिखण्ड 43. 34-42 with some variations. The first two verses are कूर्म I. 37, 26-27 and all occur नारदीय (उ.) 63. 140-149.

1398. It may be noted that the rewards promised for suicide at Urvasīpulina are sex pleasures and secular benefits like becoming a king or governor. Even suicide at the Saṅgama is promised similar pleasures of the flesh and of kingly power and riches in Matsya 105. 1-12.

1399. In मत्स्य. 108. 29 we read तीर्थं निरञ्जनं नाम यत्र देवाः सवासवाः which appears to be a misreading. पश्चिमे धर्मराजस्य तीर्थं त्वनरकं स्मृतम्। कूर्म. I. 395.; the अग्नि 111.14 mentions a तीर्थं called वानरक (or वासरक acc. to some mss.) but that seems to be a misreading of त्वनरकं (तु + अनरकं). मत्स्य. 108. 27 तीर्थं तु नरकं स्मृतम् seems to be a misreading for त्वनरकं. Several tīrthas called अनरक are known. Vide पद्म, आदि 27.56 and list.

1400. देशस्थो यदि वारण्ये विदेशस्थोऽथवा गृहे । प्रयागं स्मरमाणोऽपि यस्तु प्राणान् परित्यजेत्॥ ब्रह्मलोकमवाप्नोति वदन्ति ऋषिपुङ्गवाः । सर्वकामफला वृक्षा मही यत्र हिरण्मयी । ऋषयो मुनयः सिद्धास्तत्र लोके स गच्छति॥ स्त्रीसहस्रावृते रम्ये मन्दाकिन्यास्तदेतत्तीर्थं मोक्षते ऋषिभिः सार्धं सुकृतेनेह कर्मणा ।...ततः स्वर्गात्परिभ्रष्टो जम्बूद्वीपपतिर्भवेत् । मत्स्य. 105. 8-11 q. by गङ्गावा. p. 310; verses from स्त्रीसहस्रा. are quoted from कूर्म by त्रिभयदी. p. 25.

trees yield all desires, where the earth is full of gold and where there are sages and *munis* and *siddhas*; he dwells on the bank of the Ganges full of thousands of women and enjoys the company of sages; when he comes down from heaven he becomes the lord of Jambūdvīpa.

At most famous tīrthas the pilgrim has to perform śrāddha. The Viṣṇu Dh. S. (chap. 85) mentions about fifty-five sacred places which are fittest for śrāddha. The Kalpataru (on tīrtha), the Gaṅgāvākyaṅgāvalī, Tīr. C. and other digests quote several verses from the Devīpurāṇa, the gist of which is as follows : Śrāddha should be performed at tīrthas, but there is no offering of *arghya* and no *āvāhana* (since pitrs are deemed to be always present at tīrthas, as the Kāśīkhaṇḍa says) nor is the entering of the thumb of the invited brāhmaṇa into the food served done, nor is there the question about the brāhmaṇas being satiated, nor *vikira*¹⁴⁰¹ If one is unable to follow the complete procedure of śrāddha one should merely offer piṇḍas made from barley meal or may offer *saṁyāva* (cake of wheat flour fried with ghee and milk), rice boiled in milk, the cake of sesame (after the oil is extracted) or jaggery.¹⁴⁰² It should not be allowed to be seen by dogs, crows and vultures, it may be offered at any time after the pilgrim reaches the holy place. A śrāddha performed at a holy place gives great satisfaction to pitrs. Some of the works such as the Tristhalīsetusārasaṅgraha of Bhaṭṭoji provide that after performing a pārvanaśrāddha at a tīrtha and after making offerings of piṇḍas to one's ancestors one should offer a single piṇḍa to one's other relatives with the following mantra : 'Here I offer piṇḍa to deceased persons of my father's family, and of my mother's family and to the deceased relatives of my guru and of my father-in-law, to those men of my family

1401. अर्घ्यमावाहनं चैव द्विजाङ्गुष्ठनिवेशनम् । तृतिप्रश्नं च विकिरं तीर्थश्राद्धे विवर्जयेत् ॥ q. by त्रि. से. सा. स. p. 18; देवाश्च पितरो यस्माद्भगवां सर्वदा स्थिताः । आवाहनं विसर्गं (०र्गश्च?) तेषां तत्र ततो न हि ॥ काशीखण्ड 28.9; तीर्थे श्राद्धं प्रकुर्वीत पक्वाञ्जेन विशेषतः । आमाञ्जेन हिरण्येन कन्दमूलफलैरपि ॥ सुमन्तु q. in त्रि. से. सा. स. p. 20.

1402. सक्तुभिः पिण्डदानं तु संयात्रैः पायसेन तु । कर्तव्यमृषिभिर्द्विष्टं पिण्याकेन शुद्धेन च । श्राद्धं तत्र तु कर्तव्यमर्घ्यावाहनवर्जितम् । श्वध्वांश्च मृगधकाकानां नैव दृष्टिहतं च यत् । श्राद्धं तत्तैर्धिकं प्रोक्तं पितृणां प्रीतिकारकम् ।...कालेवाप्यथवाऽकाले तीर्थे श्राद्धं तथा नरैः । प्राप्तेरेव सदा कार्यं कर्तव्यं पितृतर्पणम् । पिण्डदानं च तच्छस्तं पितृणामतिवल्लभम् । विलम्बो नैव कर्तव्यो न च विघ्नं समाचरेत् । पद्मपुराण V. 29. 212-218, q. by पृथ्वीचन्द्रोदय folio 135b and 136a. The same verses are quoted from देवीपुराण by कल्प० on तीर्थ p. 10 तीर्थचि. pp. 10-11, गङ्गावा. p. 129. Vide स्कन्द, काशीखण्ड 6. 58-60 for some of the verses and नारदीय (उत्तर) 62. 41-42 for last two verses.

who were devoid of sons or wives and so who would lose the benefit of the pīṇḍa (to be offered by the son or wife) and in the case of whom all rites after death have ceased, those who were blind from birth or were cripples, those who were malformed or died in the womb; to all these, whether known or unknown to me, may this (pīṇḍa) reach inexhaustively'! (Vāyu 110. 51-52). After this he should offer another pīṇḍa for his servants, slaves, friends, dependents, pupils, persons who conferred obligations on him, cattle, trees and those with whom he came in contact in other lives (Vāyu 110. 54-55). If a person is ill or has not the time to go through this elaborate procedure, then he should make a saṅkalpa that he would perform śrāddha and should offer a single pīṇḍa with the mantra (in Vāyu 110. 23-24) 'I offer this pīṇḍa to my father, grand-father, great-grand-father, to my mother, father's mother, grandfather's mother, to my maternal grandfather and to the latter's father and grandfather. May it reach them inexhaustively'!

The Anuśāsana-parva, the Kūrmapurāṇa, Nāradiya (uttara) 63. 19-20 and 36-38 and others highly praise bathing at the *saṅgama* in the month of Māgha¹⁴⁰³. Men of all castes, women and those born of mixed unions can take this bath; śūdras, women and men of mixed castes should not repeat any mantra but should bathe silently or with the word 'namaḥ' (Tri. S. p. 39). Similarly, the Padma, Kūrma, Agni and other Purāṇas wax eloquent over a bath for three days in Māgha saying that it is equal to the gift of three crores of cows.¹⁴⁰⁴ There is great divergence as to exactly what three days are meant, as pointed out by the Tri. S. p. 33. The various views are: the three days are the passage of the sun into Capricornus, Rathasaptamī and the full moon day of Māgha; the three consecutive days including the 10th of the bright half of Māgha; the first three days of Māgha; the three consecutive days from the 13th day of the bright half of Māgha; any three days in Māgha.

1403. दशतीर्थसहस्राणि षष्टिकोट्यस्तथापराः। समागच्छन्ति माघ्यां तु प्रयागे भरतर्षभा अनुशासन 25. 36-37; षष्टितीर्थसहस्राणि षष्टितीर्थशतानि च। माघमासे गमिष्यान्ति गङ्गा-यमुनसङ्गमे॥ कूर्म I. 38. 1; मत्स्य 107.7 is very nearly the same.

1404. गवां कोटिप्रदानाद्यत् त्र्यहं स्नानस्य तत्फलम्। प्रयागे माघमासे तु एवमाह मनो-विणः॥ अग्नि. 111.10-11; गवां शतसहस्रस्य सम्यग्दत्तस्य यत्फलम्। प्रयागे माघमासे तु त्र्यहं स्नानस्य तत्फलम्॥ पद्म, आदि 44. 8, कूर्म I. 38.2.

CHAPTER XIII

KĀŚĪ

There is hardly any city in the world that can claim greater antiquity, greater continuity and greater popular veneration than Banaras. Banaras has been a holy city for at least thirty centuries. No city in India arouses the religious emotions of Hindus as much as Kāśī does. To the Hindu mind it represents great and unbroken traditions of religious sanctity and learning. It is a miniature of Hindu life through the ages in all its great complexities and contradictions. Not only Hinduism with its numerous sects has flourished here for numberless centuries, but the principles of Buddhism, one of the great religions of the world, were first proclaimed here by Śākyamuni after he received Enlightenment at Bodh-Gayā under the Bodhi tree. Thousands of verses are found in the epics and purāṇas about Banaras. Several volumes have been written about Banares during the last hundred years.¹⁴⁰⁵ It would be impossible to do justice here to this vast mass of literature on Banaras. I shall briefly deal with the important topics relating to Banaras. In olden times the name was spelt as Benares, but recently as Banaras, which will be retained here (except in quotations).

Before proceeding further, it is necessary to dwell, however briefly, on the ancient history of Banaras. The Śatapatha Br. quotes ¹⁴⁰⁶ a Gāthā which states that Śatānika, son of Satrājī, carried away the sacred sacrificial horse of the Kāśīs, as Bharata did in the case of the Satvats. In Śat. Br. XIV. 3. 1. 22 king Dhṛtarāṣṭra Vicitravīrya is called Kāśya. In the Gopatha Br. we have ¹⁴⁰⁷ the combination Kāśī-Kośalāḥ. The

1405. Among modern works in English dealing with Banaras the following may be mentioned: 'Benares, a handbook for the visitors' by J. Ewee (Calcutta, 1886), 'The sacred city of the Hindus' by M.A. Sherring with a learned Introduction by Dr. F. E. Hall (London, 1886) and 110 photographs; 'Benares, the sacred city' by E. B. Havell (1905) with many fine illustrations; 'History of Benares' by Prof. A. S. Altekar (1937) with a few diagrams and photographs.

1406. तदेतद्वाथयाभिगीतम्। शतानीकः समन्तासु मेधयं सात्राजितो हयम्। अयं यज्ञं काशीनां भरतः सत्वतामिवेति। शतपथब्रा. XIII. 5.4.21.

1407. विचारी ह वै कावन्धिः कबन्धस्याथर्वणस्य पुत्रो मेधावी मीमांसकोऽनुचान स ह स्वेनातिमानेन मानुषं वित्तं नेयाय। तं मातोवाच। त एवेतद्वन्नमवोचंस्त इममेषु कुरुपञ्चाले ष्वङ्गमगधेषु काशीकोशल्येषु...उदीच्येष्वन्नमदन्ति। गोपथ, पूर्वभाग 2.9.



Cambridge History of India (vol. I. p. 117) remarks that in the Brāhmaṇa period Kāśī, the capital of the Kāśis, was situated on the Varanāvati. In the Br. Up. (II. 1. 1) and the Kausītaki¹⁴⁰⁸ Up. (IV. 1.) there is the story of the proud Bālāki Gārgya going to Ajātaśatru, king of Kāśī, with the assurance that the former would expound *brahma* to the latter. In Pāṇini IV. 2. 116 Kāśī heads a *gaṇa* (Kāśyādibhyas-than-ithau'). Under Pāṇini IV. 2. 113 we get the form 'Kāśiyah.' It is remarkable that in the Sarvānukrama the ṛṣi of Rg. X. 179. 2 is stated to be Pratardana Kāśirāja. In *tarpaṇa*, the Hir. Gr. (II. 8. 19. 6) mentions Kāśīśvara along with Viṣṇu and Rudraskanda (S. B. E. vol. 30 p. 244). Divodāsa figures frequently in the Rgveda. In Rg. I. 130. 7 Indra is said to have conquered ninety cities for Divodāsa, while in Rg. IV. 30. 20 it is stated that Indra gave 100 cities of stone to Divodāsa. From these Vedic references it may be surmised that in later works like the Epics and the Purāṇas Divodāsa was naturally credited with the founding of the most sacred city in India. In the Mahābhāṣya on Vārtika 4 on Pāṇ. IV. 1. 54 (vol. II. p. 223) we find the illustration 'Kāśī-Kosalīyāh.' The Mahābhāṣya (vol. II. p. 413) furnishes the interesting information that there is a difference in the price of cloth manufactured at Kāśī and that manufactured at Mathurā, though the length and breadth of the piece of cloth be the same. This shows that even so early as the 2nd century B. C. Kāśī was famous for the fine qualities of its cloth, as now.¹⁴⁰⁹ From the above passages it is clear that Kāśī was the name of a country long before the Śatapatha Br. was composed and it remained so till the 2nd century B. C. (the date of Patañjali). We have a parallel example. Avanti is the name of a country as shown by Pāṇ. IV. 1. 176 (striyām-avanti-kunti-kurubhyaś-ca) and by the Meghadūta (Prāpyāvantīn-udayana—), but Avanti or Avantikā is also the name of Ujjayinī (as in the well-known verse 'Ayodhyā...Avantikā'). Fa Hien (399 to 413 A. D.) is said to have arrived at the city of Vārāṇasī in the kingdom of Kāśī (Legge's tr. p. 94). This shows that about 400 A. D. Kāśī was still the name of the district and Vārāṇasī was its capital. But from the reference in the Mahābhāṣya it appears that Kāśī had then become the name of the city (and was also

1408. इतबालाकिर्हान्चानो गार्ग्य आस सहोवाचाजातशत्रुं काश्यं गच्छते ब्रह्मणीति ।
बृह. उप. II. 1.1.

1409. इह समाने आयामे विस्तारे पटस्यान्यार्थो भवति काशीकस्यान्यो न भवत्युक्तम् । महा-
भाष्य, vol. II. p. 413 (on Pāṇ. V. 3.35).



the name of the country). In the Anuśāsana-parva (chap. 30) it is said that Haryaśva, the grand-father of Divodāsa, was king of the Kāśis ^{1409a} and was harassed and killed by the Vitahavyas in the *Doab* between the Ganges and Jumna. Haryaśva's son was Sudeva who was crowned king of Kāśi (verse 13, Kāśirājos bhyasicyata) and he also met the same fate as his father did. Then Divodāsa, son of Sudeva, became king of the Kāśis and founded Vārāṇasī thickly populated with men of all varṇas on the northern bank of the Gomatī. This legend shows that Kāśi was the ancient name of a kingdom and the ancient belief was that Vārāṇasī was founded as the capital of the Kāśis by Divodāsa. In the Udyogaparva also Divodāsa is said to be the ruler of Kāśis.¹⁴¹⁰

The Harivamśa (I. chap. 29) has a long but rather confused story about Divodāsa and Vārāṇasī.¹⁴¹¹ It deals with the dynasty of Āyus, one of the sons of Aila. One of the descendants of Āyus was Śunahotra who had three sons, Kāśa, Śala and Gr̥tsamada. From Kāśa arose a branch called Kāśayah. Dhanvantari, a descendant of Kāśa, was king of the Kāśis (verse 22). Divodāsa was great-grandson of Dhanvantari. He killed 100 sons of Bhadrāśreṇya, who first was Lord of Vārāṇasī. Then Śiva sent his *gana* Nikumbha to destroy Vārāṇasī which had been occupied by Divodāsa. Nikumbha cursed it to be devastated for a thousand years. When it became devastated it came to be called Avimukta and Śiva resided there. It was again re-established (verse 68) by Durdama, a son of Bhadrāśreṇya, whom, because he was a child, Divodāsa had not killed. Then Pratardana, son of Divodāsa, took it from Durdama. Alarka, grandson of Divodāsa and king of Kāśis, again established Vārāṇasī. This legend may contain some germs of truth, viz. that Vārāṇasī had become devastated several times and had often changed hands. The Vāyupurāṇa (chap. 92) and the Brahmapurāṇa (chap. 11) also contain the same legends of Dhanvantari, Divodāsa, and Alarka and the vicissitudes of Vārāṇasī.

1409 a. काशिष्वपि नृपो राजन् दिवोदासपितामहः । हर्यश्च इति विख्यातो बभूव जयतां वरः ॥ अनुशासन 30.10.

1410. महावीर्यो महीपालः काशीनामीश्वरः प्रभुः । दिवोदास इति ख्यातो भैमसेनिरुद्धाधिपः ॥ उद्योग 117.1.

1411. सौदेवस्त्वथ काशीशो दिवोदासोभ्यषिच्यत ।...वाराणसीं महातेजा निर्ममे शक्रो शासनात् ॥ विप्रक्षत्रियसम्बाधां वैश्यशूद्रसमाकुलाम् । नैकद्रव्योच्चयवतीं समृद्धविपणापणाम् । गङ्गाया उत्तरे कूले वप्राप्ते राजसत्तम । गोमत्या दक्षिणे कूले शक्रस्येवामरावतीम् । अनुशासन 30.15-18.



In the Mahābhāṣya Patañjali states (vol. I. p. 380,) that Vārāṇasī is alongside of Gaṅgā and on Pāṇ. IV. 3. 84 (vol. II. p. 313) he informs us that traders call Vārāṇasī Jitvarī.

Ancient Buddhist works show that Banaras was, in the times of Buddha (5th Century B. C. at the latest), a great and famous city like Campā, Rājagṛha, Śrāvastī, Sāketa and Kauśāmbī (vide Mahāparinibbānasutta, S. B. E. vol. XI p. 99 and Mahāsudassanasutta, ibid. p. 247). The very fact that Buddha attained Enlightenment at Gayā (which was an out of the way place and on the borders, if at all, of Āryāvarta), thought it necessary to travel hundreds of miles from Gayā and preach his doctrines at Banaras in the Deer-park and set rolling the wheel of the kingdom of Dharma at that place, clearly indicates that Banaras had then become a very holy place and was in the centre of all Aryan activities and culture (vide S. B. E. vol. XI. p. 153 and vol. XIII p. 90, Mahāvagga, S. B. E. vol. 17 p. 21). King Brahmadatta of Banaras figures in many *jātaka* stories. Hardly any part of the *jātaka* tales can be placed earlier than the 3rd century B. C. But it may be admitted that Banaras was well-known as the capital of Brahmadatta kings several centuries before Christ. The Matsyapurāṇa 273, while enumerating hundreds of kings bearing the same surnames, states that there were 100 Brahmadattas and 100 Kāśis and Kuśas.¹⁴¹² But the very fact that Brahmadattas are separately mentioned from the Kāśis largely reduces the value of this piece of information. The ancient Jain works also speak of Banaras and Kāśī. In the Kalpasūtra it is said that Arhat Pārśva was born in Banaras in the month of Caitra on the 4th day of the dark fortnight (S. B. E. vol. XXII p. 271) and that when Mahāvīra died the 18 confederate kings of Kāśī and Kosala along with other kings of the Licchavis and Mallakis instituted an illumination on the day of the New Moon (ibid, p. 266). Aśvaghoṣa appears to identify Vārāṇasī with Kāśī when he says in his Buddhacarita 'Having entered Vārāṇasī, the Jina (Buddha) illumining the city with his light filled the minds of all the inhabitants of Kāśī with excessive interest.'¹⁴¹³ The Buddhacarita further speaks of Buddha as having gone under the shadow of a tree near Vanārā (S. B. E. vol. 49 part I p.

1412. शतमेकं धार्तराष्ट्रा ह्यशीतिर्जनमेजयाः। शतं वै ब्रह्मदत्तानां वीराणां कुरुरः शतम्। ततः शतं च पञ्चालाः शतं काशिकुशादयः॥ मत्स्य. 273. 72-73.

1413. वाराणसीं प्रविश्याथ भासा सम्भासयजिनः। चकार काशीदेशीयान् कोलका। कान्तचेतसः॥ बुद्धचरित 15. 101.



169), which is probably the Varanā. It is thus clear that Vārāṇasī and Kāśī had become synonyms at least sometime about the first century A. D. In the Vāyupurāṇa 45.110 *Kāśi-kośalāḥ* figure among the countries of Madhyadeśa.

In the Viṣṇupurāṇa we have the story of Paṇḍraka Vāsudeva who challenged Kṛṣṇa and asked the latter to surrender his *Cakra* and other symbols. He was helped by the king of Kāśī. The combined armies of Paṇḍraka and Kāśīrāja attacked Kṛṣṇa who killed Paṇḍraka and cut off Kāśīrāja's head (with his discus) which fell in the city of Kāśī. His son performed austerities, propitiated Śaṅkara and secured from him a Kṛtyā (ogress) which entered Vārāṇasī. Kṛṣṇa's discus in pursuit of her burnt the whole of Vārāṇasī together with its king, his servants and citizens. In this account from the Viṣṇupurāṇa (V. 34) the names Kāśī, Vārāṇasī and Avimukta are employed as synonyms (verses 14, 21, 25, 30, 39). The same legend occurs in the same words in Brahmapurāṇa, chap. 207 and is briefly referred to in Sabhāparva, chap. 14.18-20 and chap. 34.11.

From the above-mentioned accounts in the Epic and Purāṇas about Kāśī and Mahādeva, various conclusions¹⁴¹⁴ have been drawn by writers, viz. that Mahādeva was a god of the non-Aryans, that Banaras was a centre of non-Aryan worship for a long time after the advent of the Aryans and that the people of Banaras, though they ultimately turned to the Aryan religion, were more interested in the philosophic speculations of the Upaniṣadic age. I dissent from most of these conclusions. We are on most unsafe ground as regards these conclusions. None of the extant Purāṇas can claim to be older than the 3rd or 4th century A. D. Most people in India lived and even now live a humdrum, placid and unattractive life in which there is nothing to satisfy the ordinary man's appetite for the mysterious, the unusual and the horrible. The purāṇas contain stories that may be divided into several classes and that satisfied the above-mentioned cravings of the common man. Many of the

1414. Vide, for example, Prof. A. S. Altekar's 'History of Benares,' pp. 2-7. The Nāradiya (uttara, chap. 29) states that Banaras was at first the city of Mādhava, but later on became a Saiva-kṣetra; is there any real historical basis here? If any historical conclusion is to be drawn from this statement of the Nāradiyapurāṇa it would be exactly the opposite of what Prof. Altekar has drawn, viz. that the non-Aryans scored a cultural victory over the Aryans at Banaras.

legends contained in the purāṇas were meant for the entertainment of common people, just as even in these days millions in Western countries read with relish detective stories and crime club fiction. Some *paurāṇic* legends had a serious purpose in view viz emphasizing religious or philosophical dogma or moral values and standards and were clothed in a supernatural garb to make them striking and effective. Only a few legends have some historical basis, but the latter is evidently smothered in a mass of exaggerations and prejudices for or against a hero, or a caste, class, tribe or family. It is hardly fair to draw far-reaching historical conclusions from heterogeneous materials in the purāṇas about the conditions of things that prevailed several hundreds or thousands of years before they were compiled. The purāṇas often speak of the quarrels and bickerings among high gods and sages. For example, the Viṣṇupurāṇa V. 30.65 speaks of a fight between Indra and Kṛṣṇa. Was Kṛṣṇa a non-Aryan god originally? Gaṇeśa's left tooth was shattered by the missile of Paraśurāma who comes to fight with Rāma, both being supposed to be *avatāras* of Viṣṇu. The sage Bhṛgu curses Viṣṇu, Gautama curses Indra, Māṇḍavya curses Dharma (vide for all these, Brahmāṇḍa II. 27. 21-25).

In several purāṇas Kāśī or Vārāṇasī has been lauded and described at great length. Vide Matsya 180-185 (411 verses), Kūrma 1.31-35 (verses 226), Lingapurāṇa (pūrvabhāga, chap. 92, verses 190), Padma (Ādikhaṇḍa 33-37, verses 170), Agni 112, Skanda, Kāśīkhaṇḍa, chap. 6 ff., Nāradiya (uttara, chap. 48-51). The Kāśīkhaṇḍa alone has about 15000 verses¹⁴¹⁵ on Banaras and its sub-tīrthas. In the Padmapurāṇa the sages are said to have asked Bhṛgu five questions, viz. what is the greatness of Kāśī, how it is to be understood, who should resort to it, what is its extent (or boundaries) and by what means it (Kāśī) can be secured. In the Skandapurāṇa,

1415. Dr. Fitz-Edward Hall (Introduction to Sherring's work p. XXXII n. 3) criticizes Dr. Wilson for holding that the greater part of the Kāśīkhaṇḍa is anterior to the first attack on Banaras by Mahmud of Gazni and holds that it is later than the Gaznvide invader. Dr. Hall advances hardly any convincing reasons. The work of Alberuni is definite that Sultan Mahmud of Gazni had not spread his depredations as far as Banaras (vide Sachau, vol. 1 p. 22): 'This is the reason why Hindu Sciences...have fled to places which our hand cannot yet reach, to Kashmir, Benares and other places.' The Kalpataru on Tīrtha quotes about one hundred verses on Vārāṇasī.

Kāśikhanda¹⁴¹⁶ (chap. 26.2-5) the following questions are asked, viz. from what time this holy place Avimukta became highly famous, how it received the name Avimukta, how it became the way to *mokṣa*, how the pool of Maṇikarpikā became an object of worship to the three worlds, what was there formerly (when) the Ganges was not there, how it came to be called Vārāṇasī, Kāśī, Rudrāvāsa, how it came to be Ānandakānana (the forest of bliss) and then Avimukta and Mahāśmaśāna (the great cemetery).

Banaras has been known for centuries under five different names viz. Vārāṇasī, Kāśī, Avimukta, Ānandakānana and Śmaśāna or Mahāśmaśāna. The Kāśikhanda states that Śaṅkara first called it Ānandakānana and then Avimukta.¹⁴¹⁷

(Continued from the last page)

from the Skandapurāṇa and holds the latter work to be as authoritative as the Matsyapurāṇa, Liṅgapurāṇa and other Purāṇas. The Kalpataru of Lakṣmīdhara was composed about 1110 A. D. (vide Prof. Aiyangar's Introduction to Tīrthakāṇḍa pp. XVIII-XIX). Therefore a century or two at least before 1100 A.D. there existed a Skandapurāṇa, part of which contained a eulogium of Banaras. Unfortunately the present printed Kāśikhanda of the Skanda does not agree with the quotations from the Skanda given by the Kalpataru. A curious state of things is divulged as regards the quotations from Skanda in the Kalpataru. For example, on pp. 36-37 of the Kalpataru on Tīrtha, about 19 verses are quoted from Skanda which occur verbatim in the Liṅgapurāṇa, chap. 92. 120-142 (with the addition of some half verses). Similarly, on p. 44 of the Kalpataru three verses are quoted from Skanda, which are the same as Liṅga. 92. 87-89. On p. 42 Kalpataru quotes one verse about Goprekṣeśvara from Skanda which is quoted from the Liṅgapurāṇa by Tri. S. p. 171. Some of the Purāṇas say that the Skanda has 81101 verses (Matsya 53. 42-43). But the Skanda printed at the Veṅkaṭeśvara press contains several thousand verses more. It appears that there were different recensions of the Skanda. The Tri. S. quotes verses from specific chapters of the Kāśikhanda which are generally found in the printed work. Vide p. 193 (for chap. 30), 190 (for chap. 32), p. 144 (for chap. 34), p. 160 for chap. 45, p. 154 for chap. 49, pp. 157 and 200 for chap. 61 etc.

1416. किं माहात्म्यं कथं वेद्यं सेव्या कैश्च द्विजोत्तम। परिमाणं च तस्याः किं केनोपायेन लभ्यते॥ पद्म, पातालखण्ड q. by त्रिस्थली० p. 72; अविमुक्तमिदं क्षेत्रं कदारभ्य भुवस्तले। परां प्रथितिमापन्नं मोक्षदं चाभवत्कथम्॥ कथमेषा त्रिलोकीड्या गीयते मणिकर्णिका। तत्रासीत्किं पुरा स्वामिन् यदा नामरनिम्नगा॥ वाराणसीति काशीति रुद्रावास इति प्रसंगे। अवाप नामधेयानि कथमेतानि सा पुरी। आनन्दकाननं रम्यमविमुक्तमनन्तरम्। महाश्मशानमिति च कथं ख्यातं शिखिध्वज॥ स्कन्द, काशी० 26. 2-5.

1417. अस्यानन्दवनं नाम पुराकारि पिनाकिना। क्षेत्रस्यानन्दहेतुत्वादविमुक्तमनन्तरम्। स्कन्द, काशी० 26.34 q. by त्रिस्थली० p. 89 (reads निरन्तरं).



A few words must be said about the derivation and significance of these words as gathered from the Purāṇas and other works. And first comes Kāśī. It is derived from the root *kāś* 'to shine.' The Skandapurāṇa ¹⁴¹⁸ says that the city of Kāśī became famous by that name because it sheds light on (the way to) nirvāṇa (final release) or because that indescribable refulgence, viz. God Śiva shines forth there. The name Vārāṇasī is derived in several Purāṇas from the names of two streams Varanā ¹⁴¹⁹ (modern Bārṇā) and Asi, which are respectively the northern and southern boundaries of the modern city. From the passages quoted below from the Skandapurāṇa (Kāśī-khaṇḍa) it appears that Asi is the correct form of the name of the river. The names most frequently used in the Purāṇas are Vārāṇasī and Avimukta. In the Jābālopaniṣad ¹⁴²⁰ the words Avimukta, Varanā and Nāsī are brought together in an esoteric sense. "Atri asked Yājñavalkya: how is one to know the unmanifested Self? Yājñavalkya explained that he was to be worshipped in Avimukta, since the self is centered in Avimukta. Then a question was asked: in what is Avimukta centered or established? The reply is that Avimukta is established in the midst of Varanā and Nāsī. Varanā is so called because it

1418. काशीतेऽत्र यतो ज्योतिस्तदनाख्येयमीश्वरः । अतो नामापरं चास्तु काशीति प्रथितं विभो ॥ स्कन्द, काशी० 26.67 q. by त्रिस्थली० p. 88; प्रापयामास तां गङ्गां दैलीपिः पुरतश्चरन् । निर्वाणकाशनाद्यत्र काशीति प्रथिता पुरी । स्कन्द, काशी० 30.5; काशी ब्रह्मेति विख्यातं ताद्विवर्तो जगद्भ्रमः । अविमुक्तं तदेवाहुः काशीति ब्रह्मवादिनः ॥ q. by त्रिस्थली० p. 88.

1419. वरणायास्तथा चास्या मध्ये वाराणसी पुरी । पद्म, आदि 33.49, कूर्म I. 31.63 (reads हस्या); वरणाऽसी नदी यावत्तावच्छुक्लनदी (शुक्लनदी?) तु वै । मत्स्य 183.62; असिश्च वरणा यत्र क्षेत्ररक्षाकृतौ कृते । वाराणसीति विख्याता तदारभ्य महामते । असेश्च वरणायाश्च सङ्गमं प्राप्य काशिका । स्कन्द, काशी० 30. 69-70; वरणा च नदी नासी मध्ये वाराणसी तयोः । अग्नि. 112.6. नासी appears to be a misreading for चासी. In काशीखण्ड 30.18 there is a pun on the word असि (a sword, the river) 'असिं महासिरूपां च प्राप्य सन्मतिखण्डनीम् ।'; दक्षिणोत्तरदिग्भागे कृत्वासीं वरणां सुराः । क्षेत्रस्य मोक्ष-निक्षेपरक्षानिर्घृतिमाययुः ॥ क्षेत्रस्य पश्चाद्विभागे तं देहलिविनायकम् । काशीखण्ड 30. 20-21; वरुणा (वरणा?) च असी चापि द्वे नद्यौ सुरवल्लभे । अन्तरालं तयोः क्षेत्रं मध्ये (वध्या?) न विशते कश्चित् । पद्म V. 14.191. वध्या means हत्या. The वामनपुराण, after stating that काशीक्षेत्र is between वरणा and आसी (3.28 ff) contains a poetic description of वाराणसी with श्लेष quite in the style of Bāṇa 'तारागणे कुलीनत्वं मेघे वृत्तच्युतिर्विभो' (v. 38).

1420. अथ हैनमत्रिः पप्रच्छ याज्ञवल्क्यम् । य एषोऽनन्तोऽव्यक्त आत्मा तं कथमहं विजानीयामिति । सहोवाच याज्ञवल्क्यः । सोऽविमुक्त उपास्यः । य एषोऽनन्तोऽव्यक्त आत्मा सोऽविमुक्ते प्रतिष्ठित इति । सोऽविमुक्तः कस्मिन् प्रतिष्ठित इति । वरणायां नास्यां च मध्ये प्रतिष्ठित इति । का वै वरणा का च नासीति । सर्वानिन्द्रियकृतान्दोषान्वारयतीति वरणा भवति । सर्वानिन्द्रियकृतान्पापाप्माशयतीति तेन नासी भवतीति । कतमच्चास्य स्थानं भवतीति । अत्रो-
र्ध्राणस्य च यः सान्धिः स एष द्योलोकस्य परस्य च सान्धिर्भवतीति । जाबालोप०

wards off all faults due to the senses and Nāsī destroys all sins due to the senses. Then a question is asked: what is its location (sthāna)? The reply is that it is the conjunction of the eyebrows and the nose i. e. the upāsana (contemplation) of Avimukta is to be made as located in the span between the eyebrows and the root of the nose." Here it will be seen that Varāṇā and Nāsī are the names (and not Varāṇā and Asi). The Vāmanapurāṇa employs the form Asī (15.50-53). The same is the case with the Padma.

The name Avimukta has generally been explained as derived from the negative particle 'na' (for which 'a' is substituted) and vimukta (forsaken). Many Purāṇas say that the holy place is so called because it was never forsaken by Śiva (sometimes both Śiva and his consort).¹⁴²¹ In the Lingapurāṇa another derivation is suggested:¹⁴²² "avi means 'sin'; that holy place is devoid of sin". The Kāśīkhanda (39.74) states that originally the *kṣetra* was called Ānandakānana and then Avimukta because though Śiva went to stay on Mandara mountain he did not leave it entirely but left his *linga* there.

Vārāṇasī is very dear to Śiva, it gives him joy and therefore it is called Ānandavana or Ānandakānana.¹⁴²³ It is also styled Śmaśāna or Mahāśmaśāna for various reasons. As a belief was entertained by all people that death in Banaras freed a man from *saṃsāra*, and as the thoughts and aspirations of pious Hindus ran in the direction of dying on the sacred soil of Banaras, the old and decrepit crowded therein and persons seriously ill got themselves removed or were removed to the banks of the Ganges when about to die and were cremated there. Cremation of corpses is always seen on the Manīkarnikā *ghāt* near the Ganges. A śmaśāna (cemetery) is considered impure but Banaras with the sacred Ganges was purest in spite of being always the cremation ground for thousands in a year.

1421. मुने प्रलयकालेपि न तक्षेत्रं कदाचन । विमुक्तं हि शिवाभ्यां यदविमुक्तं ततो विदुः॥ स्कन्द, काशी० 26.27 q. by त्रिस्थली० p. 89; लिङ्गपुराण (पूर्वार्ध) 92. 45-46 विमुक्तं न मया यस्मान्मोक्षयते वा कदाचन । मम क्षेत्रमिदं तस्मादविमुक्तमिति स्मृतम्॥; almost the same verse is नारदीय (उत्तर) 48.24: vide मत्स्य. 180.54 and 181.15, अग्नि. 112.2 and लिङ्ग I. 92. 104.

1422. अविशब्देन पापस्तु वेदोक्तः कथ्यते द्विजैः । तेन मुक्तं मया जुष्टमविमुक्तमन्यते॥ लिङ्ग (पूर्वार्ध) 92.143.

1423. यथा प्रियतमा देवि मम त्वं सर्वसुन्दरि । तथा प्रियतरं चैतन्मे सदानन्दकाममम्॥ काशीखण्ड 32.111; अविमुक्तं परं क्षेत्रं जन्तूनां मुक्तिदं सदा । सेवेत सततं धीमान् विद्वान् नमरणान्तिके॥ लिङ्ग I. 91. 76.

The Skanda says: ¹⁴²⁴ 'śma' means a corpse and 'śāna' means 'lying down'; when the end of the world comes, the great elements lie here as corpses and therefore this place is called Mahāśmaśāna." The Padmapurāṇa ¹⁴²⁵ makes Śiva say: 'Avimukta is a famous cemetery: becoming the Destroyer (or the Time Spirit) I being here destroy the world'. Matsya very frequently speaks of Vārāṇasī as Śmaśāna. The Kāśīkhanda states: if a man after reaching the great cemetery dies there by fate he has never again to lie in the cemetery (i. e. he is not born again).

Although generally Kāśī, Vārāṇasī and Avimukta are used as synonyms in the Purāṇas, in some passages a distinction is made between these as to extent. The passages quoted above (in note 1419) show that Vārāṇasī is bounded by the Varanā and Asi on the north and south, ¹⁴²⁶ the Ganges on the east and the shrine of Vināyaka in the west. Ain. A. (vol. II p. 158) remarks that Benares is a large city situated between the rivers Barnā and Asi and that it is built in the form of a bow of which the Ganges forms the string. The Matsyapurāṇa ¹⁴²⁷ states: 'that kṣetra is two *yojanas* and a half east and west and half a *yojana* broad north and south; out of this Vārāṇasī extends up to the dry river (viz. Asi)'. The first part appears to deal with the entire Kāśīkṣetra which according to the Padmapurāṇa ¹⁴²⁸ comprised the tract covered by a circle the radius of which was the line joining Madhyameśvara-līṅga

1424. इमं शब्देन शवः प्रोक्तः शानं शयनमुच्यते। निर्वचन्ति इमं शानार्थं मुने शब्दार्थ-
कोविदाः। महास्त्यपि च भूतानि प्रलये समुपस्थिते। शरतेत्र शवा भूत्वा इमं शानं तु ततो महत्।
स्कन्द, काशी. 30. 103-4; वाराणसीति काशीति रुद्रावास इति द्विज। महाश्मशानमिदमेवं
प्रोक्तमानन्दकाननम्। ibid 30.111.

1425. इमं शानमेतद्विख्यातमविमुक्तमिति श्रुतम्। कालो भूत्वा जगदिदं संहराभ्यत्र
सुन्दरि॥ पद्म. I. 33.14; परं गुह्यं समाख्यातं इमं शानमिति संज्ञितम्। मत्स्य. 184.5; इमं शान-
मिति विख्यातमविमुक्तं शिवालयम्। मत्स्य. 184.19; क्षेत्राणामुत्तमं चैव इमं शानानां तथैव च।
मत्स्य. 184.26; vide also मत्स्य. 182.6; महाश्मशानमासाद्य यदि देवादिपश्यते। पुनः
इमं शानशयनं न क्वापि लभते पुमान्। काशीखण्ड 31.130.

1426. दक्षिणोत्तरयोर्नद्यौ वरणासिश्च पूर्वतः। जाह्नवी पश्चिमे चापि पाशपाणिर्गणेश्वरः॥
पद्म, पातालखण्ड q. by त्रिस्थली० p. 100, तीर्थप्र. p. 175.

1427. द्वियोजनमथार्धं च तत्क्षेत्रं पूर्वपश्चिमम्। अर्धयोजनविस्तीर्णं दक्षिणोत्तरतः
स्थितम्। वाराणसी तदीया च यावच्छुक्लनदी (शुक्लनदी?) तु वै। एष क्षेत्रस्य विस्तारः प्रोक्तो
देवेन धीमता॥ मत्स्य. 184. 50-52.

1428. मध्यमेश्वरभारभ्य यावदेहलिबिघ्नपम्। सूत्रं संस्थाप्य तद्विधु भ्रामयेन्मण्डलाद्वि-
तत्र या जायते रेखा तन्मध्ये क्षेत्रमुत्तमम्। काशीति यद्विदुर्वेदास्तत्र मुक्तिः प्रतिष्ठिता॥ काशीयां तु
परमं क्षेत्रं विशेषफलसाधनम्। वाराणसीति विख्यातं तन्मार्गं निगदामि यः॥ पद्म, पातालखण्ड q.
by त्रिस्थली० p. 100, तीर्थप्र. p. 175.

with the shrine of Dehali-Gaṇeśa. The Matsyapurāṇa (in chap. 183.61-62) makes it two yojanas in extent. Agni 112. 6 also does the same. But that is only approximate. The actual distance covered by a yojana varied. Vide H. of Dh. vol. III. pp. 145-146 n. 185. Rhys Davids in 'Numismata Orientalia' (London, 1877) after examining 30 passages from Pāli texts comes to the conclusion that a yojana was equal to about 7 or 8 miles. Avimukta is said to be that part of the holy place which is represented by a radius of 200 *dhanus* (i. e. 800 *hastas* or about 1200 feet) in all four directions from the shrine of Viśveśvara.¹⁴²⁹ There was no unanimity on the extent of Avimukta. In Kāśikhanda Avimukta^{1429a} is said to be five *krośas* in extent. But there Avimukta appears to stand for Kāśī. The innermost¹⁴³⁰ circle in the holy Kāśikṣetra is defined as that between Gokarṇeśvara to the west, the mid stream of the Ganges to the east, Bhārabhūta to the north and Brahmeśvara to the south. A few more passages on the extent of the sacred place of Banaras may be cited here in one place. The Līngapurāṇa¹⁴³¹ says: 'this kṣetra is declared to be four *krośas* (in extent) in the four directions and also one yojana'. The Nāradiyapurāṇa¹⁴³² puts the extent thus '(The kṣetra) extends over two *yojanas* and a half from east to west and is half a yojana wide from north to south; god Śambhu declared the extent of the kṣetra between the rivers Varuṇā and Asi (which latter is) a dried-up stream.' In the Padmapurāṇa¹⁴³³

1429. विश्वेश्वराच्चतुर्दिक्षु धनुःशतयुगोन्मितम् । अविमुक्ताभिर्धं क्षेत्रं मुक्तिस्तत्र न संशयः । पद्म, पातालखण्ड q. by त्रिस्थली० p. 101, तीर्थचि. p. 175. A धनुः is equal to four हस्तः. Vide note 1337 above.

1429 a. अविमुक्तं महाक्षेत्रं पञ्चक्रोशपरीमितम् । ज्योतिर्लिङ्गं तदेकं हि ज्ञेयं विश्वेश्वराभिर्धम् ॥ काशीखण्ड 26. 31.

1430. गोकर्णेशः पश्चिमे पूर्वतश्च गङ्गामध्यमुत्तरे भारभूतः । ब्रह्मेशानी दक्षिणे संप्रदिष्टस्तु प्रोक्तं भवनं विश्वभर्तुः । पद्म, पातालखण्ड q. by त्रिस्थली० p. 101; काशीखण्ड (74. 45-46) is similar 'पूर्वतो मणिकर्णेशो ब्रह्मेशो दक्षिणे स्थितः । पश्चिमे चैव गोकर्णो भारभूतस्त्वथोत्तरे ॥ इत्येतदुत्तमं क्षेत्रमविमुक्तं महाफलम् ।'.

1431. चतुःक्रोशं चतुर्दिक्षु क्षेत्रमेतत्प्रकीर्तितम् । योजनं विद्धि चार्वाङ्गि मृत्युकालेऽमृत-प्रदम् ॥ लिङ्गपुराण, पूर्वार्ध, 92. 99-100. तीर्थचि. p. 340 and त्रिस्थली० p. 103 quote this verse as from स्कन्द.

1432. द्वियोजनमथार्धं च पूर्वपश्चिमतः स्थितम् । अर्धयोजनविस्तीर्णं दक्षिणोत्तरतः स्थितम् ॥ वरुणासी नदी यावदसिः शुष्कनदी शुभे । एष क्षेत्रस्य विस्तारः प्रोक्तो देवेन शम्भुना ॥ नारदीय (उत्तर chap. 48. 18-19).

1433. पञ्चक्रोशप्रमाणेन क्षेत्रं दत्तं मया तव । क्षेत्रमध्याद्यदा गङ्गा गमिष्यति तदा तेन सा महती पुण्या पुरी रुद्र भविष्यति । पुण्या चोदङ्गुली गङ्गा यत्र प्राची सरस्वती । उदङ्गुली योजने द्वे गच्छन्ती जाह्नवी नदी ॥ पद्म (सुद्धिखण्ड 14. 194-196.



Brahmā is supposed to have said to Rudra 'I have given you a kṣetra of the extent of five krośas; when the best of rivers, Gaṅgā, will flow through this kṣetra, the city will be great and holy; the Ganges, as it flows northwards (in Banaras) for two yojanas, will be holy'. If in any texts there be any differences between the extents of Avimukta, it must be supposed that there is an option; ¹⁴³⁴ (or, as the Tir. C. suggests, the differences refer to different *kalpas* i. e. ages). It is clear that Vārāṇasī was that strip of land, the four boundaries of which were the Ganges to the east, Asi to the south, the shrine of Dehali-Vināyaka to the west and the river Varanā to the north. In the 7th century Hiouen Thsang, the Chinese pilgrim, notes that Banaras was 18 *lis* (about 3½ miles) in length and about 5 or 6 *lis* (a little more than a mile) in breadth. This makes it clear that the city was then bounded as now by the Varanā and Asi. Vide Beal's B. R. W. W. (vol. II p. 44).

Verses laudatory of the greatness and uniqueness of Vārāṇasī literally run into thousands. All that can be done here is to set out a few characteristic verses. The Vanaparva observes: ¹⁴³⁵ a person coming to Avimukta and resorting to the sacred place becomes free from the sin of brāhmaṇa-murder by merely seeing the (image of the) Lord of gods (i. e. Viśveśvara) and if he dies there he secures *mokṣa*. The Matsyapurāṇa ¹⁴³⁶ contains many striking passages about the unique greatness of Banaras: "Vārāṇasī is always my most secret place; it is always the cause of *mokṣa* for all beings. *Mokṣa* may be effected in Prayāga or in this city because I have taken it under my protection; this place is greater than even Prayāga, the foremost among tīrthas. All the sins ¹⁴³⁷ that a man may have

1434. अत्र लैङ्गस्कान्दालोचनया कृत्तिवासमध्यमेश्वरयोश्चतुर्दिक्षु योजनमितम-
विमुक्तम् । पात्रे तु विश्वेश्वरात्सर्वतो धनुःशतद्वयमितम् । तथा चात्र परिमाणविकल्पः ।
त्रिस्थली० p. 103.

1435. अविमुक्तं समासाद्य तीर्थसेवी कुरुद्वह । दर्शनाद्देवदेवस्य मुच्यते ब्रह्महत्याया ॥
प्राणानुत्सृज्य तत्रैव मोक्षं प्राप्नोति मानवः ॥ वनपर्व 84. 79-80.

1436. इदं शुद्धतमं क्षेत्रं सदा वाराणसी मम । सर्वेषामेव भूतानां हेतुर्मोक्षस्य सर्वदा ॥
मत्स्य. 180. 47 q. by तीर्थकल्प० p. 12 (reads जन्तूनां for भूतानाम्). This is the
same as लिङ्ग, पूर्वार्ध 92. 38; प्रयागे च भवेन्मोक्ष इह वा मत्परिग्रहात् । प्रयागादपि तीर्था-
ग्यादिदमेव महत् स्मृतम् ॥ मत्स्य 180. 56-57 quoted by तीर्थकल्प. p. 13 with some
additions. It explains 'इदमेव महत्स्मृतमित्यल्पायासेनैवात्र मोक्षप्राप्तेः'. This is also
लिङ्गपुराण, पूर्वार्ध 92.48.

1437. जन्मान्तरसंक्षेपेण यत्पापं पूर्वसाञ्चितम् । अविमुक्तं प्रविष्टस्य तत्सर्वं प्रजयति क्षीयम् ।
... ब्राह्मणाः क्षत्रिया वैश्याः शूद्रा वै वर्णसङ्कराः । कृमिस्लेच्छाश्च ये चास्ये सङ्कीर्णपापयोगिनः ।
कालेन निधनं प्राप्ता अविमुक्ते शृणु मिये । चन्द्रार्धमौलिनः सर्वे ललाटाक्षा वृषध्वजिनः । शिवे
मम पुरे देवि मोदन्ते तत्र मानवाः ॥ मत्स्य. 181. 17-21 = पद्म. I. 33. 17-20, q. by तीर्थकल्प०
p. 15. The verse ब्राह्मणाः occurs in नारदीय (उत्तर 48. 51-52).

accumulated in thousands of past lives are destroyed the moment he enters Avimukta; brāhmaṇas, kṣatriyas, vaiśyas, sūdras, persons born of mixed marriages, worms, mlecchas and others born of low mixed unions, insects, ants, birds and beasts, when they succumb to death in course of time all find happiness in my auspicious city, all being endowed with a crescent of the moon on their heads, with a (third) eye on their forehead and have a bull as their conveyance." A person,¹⁴³⁸ even though his mind may be addicted to pleasures of sense and though he may have given up devotion to *dharma*, if he dies in this place (Banaras) he does not again enter upon the path of *samsāra* (the cycle of births and deaths); a man concentrating his mind for thousands of past lives may secure Yoga; but by dying (in Banaras) he secures the highest mokṣa in this very life. Even if a man be a sinner¹⁴³⁹ or a rogue or irreligious he becomes free from all sins if he goes to Avimukta. Other women,¹⁴⁴⁰ that act as they like and are intently devoted to enjoyments, when they die here by lapse of time secure the highest worlds. In this world mokṣa¹⁴⁴¹ cannot be secured by men without the (practice of) Yoga; but in the case of those who reside in Avimukta Yoga and mokṣa are both secured. For planets,¹⁴⁴² lunar mansions and stars there is the danger of falling (from the sky) in course of time but there is no fall for those who die in Avimukta. Whatever¹⁴⁴³ evil actions may have been committed by an evil-minded man or woman, knowingly or unknow-

1438. विषयासक्तचित्तोऽपि त्यक्तधर्मरतिर्नरः। इह क्षेत्रे मृतः सोऽपि संसारं न पुनर्विशेत् ॥...जन्मान्तरसहस्रेषु युञ्जन् योगमवाप्नुयात्। तमिहैव परं मोक्षं मरणादधिगच्छति॥ मत्स्य. 180. 71 and 74. इह क्षेत्रे—refer to Banaras and इह means अस्मिन् जन्मनि. These two verses occur in लिङ्गपुराण, पूर्वार्ध 92. 63 and 66 and काशीखण्ड 86. 122 is similar to the first verse.

1439. यदि पापो यदि शठो यदि वाऽधार्मिको नरः। मुच्यते सर्वपापेभ्यो ह्यविमुक्तं ब्रजेद्यदि॥ मत्स्य 183. 11, q. by तीर्थकल्प. p. 18. पद्म (I. 33. 38) has the first half and reads the second half as वाराणसीं समासाद्य पुनाति सकलं कुलम्।

1440. अन्या याः कामचारिण्यः स्त्रियो भोगपरायणाः। कालेन निधनं प्राप्ता गच्छन्ति परमां गतिम्॥ मत्स्य 184. 36.

1441. न हि योगाद्वते मोक्षः प्राप्यते भुवि मानवैः। अविमुक्तं निवसतां योगो मोक्षश्च सिध्यति॥ मत्स्य 185. 15-16 q. by तीर्थकल्प. p. 17.

1442. ग्रहनक्षत्रताराणां कालेन पतनाद्भयम्। अविमुक्ते मृतानां तु पतनं नैव विद्यते॥ मत्स्य 185. 61 = काशीखण्ड 64.96 (reads कालेन पतनं ध्रुवम्).

1443. अज्ञानाज्ज्ञानतो वापि स्त्रिया वा पुरुषेण वा। यत्किञ्चिदशुभं कर्म कृत्वा चेव क्रुद्धद्विना॥ अविमुक्तं प्रविष्टस्य तत्सर्वं भस्मसान्द्रवेत्॥ नारदीय (उत्तर) 48. 33-34 वर काशीपुरीवासी म्लेच्छोऽपि हि शुभायतिः। नान्यत्रत्यो वीक्षितोपि स हि मुक्तेरभाजनम्॥ काशी 85.15.



ingly—all those are reduced to ashes when he enters Avimukta. Even a *mleccha* resident in Kāśī is better, since his future will be blissful, but not one residing elsewhere, though he may be a *dīkṣita*, because he will not be a recipient of *mukti*."

In some passages a mystic flavour is imparted to Vārāṇasī and the rivers. For example, the Kāśīkhaṇḍa says that Asi is the Idā nādī, Varāṇā is the Piṅgalā nādī, Avimukta is suṣūmṇā and Vārāṇasī is all the three.¹⁴⁴⁴ The Līṅgapurāṇa, however, puts the matter somewhat differently. It holds that Asi (the dried-up river), Varāṇā and Matsyodari (i. e. Ganges) are respectively the Piṅgalā, Idā and Suṣūmṇā.

It is time now to turn to the individual sacred spots in Banaras. It is stated in some of the Purāṇas¹⁴⁴⁵ that at every step in the Kāśīkṣetra there is a holy place and that there is not even as much space as a sesamum seed in Kāśī which has not a *līṅga* (emblem of Śiva). As a matter of fact the Kāśīkhaṇḍa names 64 līṅgas in chap. 10 alone. But one must look to the tīrthas that are specifically named. Hiouen Thsang says that there were one hundred temples at Banaras in his day and he speaks of a temple where the copper image of Deva Maheśvara was a little less than 100 feet high (vide Beal's B. R. W. W. vol. II. pp. 44-45). Unfortunately, the fanatical zeal and ruthlessness of Moslem rulers demolished almost all Hindu temples at different times from 1194 to about 1670 A. D. Mosques and mausoleums were erected on their sites, and the materials of the temples thus razed were used in constructing mosques and for serving as breakwaters &c. Kutubdin Aibak destroyed about 1000 temples in 1194 A. D. (vide Elliot and Dowson's 'History of India', vol. II. p. 222). Alauddin Khilji boasted that he had destroyed one thousand temples in Banaras alone (vide Sherring p. 31, Havell p. 76). About 1585 A. D. Nārāyaṇa-bhaṭṭa re-established the temple of Viśvanātha with the help

1444. सहोवाचेति जाबालिरारुणेऽसिरिडा मता। वरणा पिङ्गला नाडी तदन्तस्त्व-
विभुक्तकम्॥ सा सुषुम्णा परा नाडी त्रयं वाराणसी त्वसौ॥ स्कन्द, काशी० 5.25; compare
नारदीय (उत्तर) 47. 22-23; पिङ्गला नाम या नाडी आग्नेयी सा प्रकीर्तिता। शुष्का सरिच्च
सा ज्ञेया लोलाको यत्र तिष्ठति॥ इडानाम्नी च या नाडी सा सौम्या संप्रकीर्तिता। वरणा नाम
सा ज्ञेया केशवो यत्र संस्थितः॥ आभ्यां मध्ये तु या नाडी सुषुम्णा सा प्रकीर्तिता॥ मत्स्योदरी
च सा ज्ञेया विषुवं तत्प्रकीर्तितम्॥ लिङ्गपुराण q. by तीर्थचि. p. 341, विष्णुपुराण pp.
78-79.

1445. तीर्थानि सन्ति भूयांसि काश्यामत्र पदे पदे। न पञ्चनदतीर्थस्य कोऽप्यंशो न समा-
न्यपि॥ स्कन्द, काशी० 59. 118; तिलान्तरापि नो काश्यां भूमिलिङ्गं विना कचिच्च॥ काशी-
खण्ड 10. 103.

of Rājā Todarmal¹⁴⁴⁶. Even this temple was desecrated. The following passage from the Ma-A'sir-i-A'lamgiri quoted by Elliot and Dowson ('History of India,' vol. VII. p. 184) is instructive: "It reached the ears of his Majesty, the protector of the faith, that in the provinces of Thatta, Multan and Benares, but especially in the latter foolish brāhmanas were in the habit of expounding frivolous books in their schools and that students and learners, Musalmans as well as Hindus, went there even from long distances, led by a desire to become acquainted with the wicked sciences they taught. 'The Director of the Faith' consequently issued orders to all the governors of provinces to destroy with a willing hand the schools and temples of the infidels; and they were strictly enjoined to put an entire stop to the teaching and practising of idolatrous forms of worship. On the 15th Rabiū-lākhir (i. e. December 1669) it was reported to his religious Majesty, leader of the Unitarians, that in obedience to order, the Government officers had destroyed the temple of Bishnath at Benares."

A mosque, which still exists, was built on the site of the Viśveśvara temple by Aurangzeb, who even changed the name of Banaras to Muhammadabad. The result is that, as stated by Sherring (p. 32), it would be difficult to find twenty temples in the whole of Banaras of the age of Aurangzeb (1658-1707 A. D.). Many of the temples were built by the Maratha Chiefs and *Sardars* and during the British occupation many more were built. Prinsep calculated in about 1828 that there were in the Banaras city proper 1000 Hindu temples and 333 mosques; a more recent estimate puts the figures at 1454 temples and 272 mosques (Sherring¹⁴⁴⁷ pp. 41-42).

Viśveśvara or Viśvanātha is the tutelary deity of Banaras and the principal and most holy temple in it (vide n. 1429 a). It is prescribed that every resident of Kāśī must every day bathe in the Ganges and visit the temple of Viśveśvara (vide Tri. S. p. 214). After Aurangzeb pulled down the temple of Viśvanātha, there was no shrine of Viśvanātha in Benares for over a hundred years. The *linga* was probably removed from place

1446. Vide Altekar pp. 47-48 and Introduction to my edition of the Vyavahāramayūkha p. VIII (Poona, 1926), where I cite a verse from the Dānahīrāvali-prakāśa of Divākarabhaṭṭa, a daughter's son of Nīlakanṭha, who was the grandson of Nārāyaṇabhaṭṭa.

1447. Havell (p. 76) remarks that there are 1500 temples and 1000 smaller shrines or images in niches of walls or the like are countless.

to place as the vicissitudes of the times required and the pilgrims performed parts of the worship (such as *namaskāra* and circumambulation) at the site of the image, but they could not perform other portions of the worship such as bathing the image with Ganges water ¹⁴⁴⁸. The present temple of Viśvanātha was built in the last quarter of the 18th century by *Devī Ahalyābāi* Holkar (Altekar, p. 57). The Tri. S. p. 183, while on the question of the appearance (*prādurbhāva*) of Viśveśvara, observes that there is no blemish in the case of the Viśveśvara-*linga* due to the touch of the untouchable, that every day Viśveśvara removes it by a bath in *Maṇikarnikā* at dawn and the worship offered by Himself and quotes a verse of the *Sanat-kumāra-saṁhitā* in support ¹⁴⁴⁹. What the Tri. S. means is: Generally great care is taken about *lingas*. All and sundry are not allowed to touch them but in the case of the Viśveśvara-*linga* any one, even a great sinner, may worship it and pour Ganges water over it. Whether *Nārāyaṇabhaṭṭa* meant that even the so-called untouchables might touch it is not clear.

It appears that *Vācaspati* ^{1449a} holds that *Avimukteśvara* *linga* is the same as Viśvanātha, but both the *Tristhalī-setu* (p. 296) and *Tir. Pr.* (p. 187) reject this idea. The *Skandapurāṇa* (Kāśī. 10. 93) mentions Viśveśvara and *Avimukteśvara* as separate *lingas*. Besides worshipping Viśvanātha, every pilgrim to Benares has to visit the five *tīrthas* ¹⁴⁵⁰ (*Pañcatīrthī*). According to the *Matsyapurāṇa* the five essential *tīrthas* in the *Ānandakānana* of Viśveśvara are *Daśāśvamedha*, *Lolārka*, ^{1450a}

1448. अत्र यद्यपि विश्वेश्वरलिङ्गं किञ्चिदपनीयतेऽन्यदानीयते च कालवशात्पुरुषै-
स्तथापि तत्स्थानस्थिते यस्मिन्कार्स्मिन्श्चित्पूजादि कार्यम्।.....यदापि म्लेच्छादिदुष्टराजवशा-
त्तस्मिन्स्थाने किञ्चिदपि लिङ्गं कदाचिन्न स्यात् तदापि प्रदक्षिणानमस्काराद्याः स्थानधर्मा
भवन्त्येव। तावतेव च नित्ययात्रासिद्धिः। स्नापनादयस्तु साधिष्ठाना न भवन्तीति निर्णयः।
त्रिस्थली० p. 208; vide also तीर्थप्रकाश p. 219 (which states that there is no
śāstric authority for this, but only usage of *śiṣṭas*).

1449. विश्वेश्वरलिङ्गेऽस्पृश्यस्पर्शनिबन्धनो दोषो नास्ति प्रत्यहं तेनैव पूजया तस्मिन्
करणात्। तदुक्तं तत्रैव (सनत्कुमारसंहितायां)। ब्राह्मे मुहूर्ते मणिकर्णिकायां स्नात्वा समाराधयति
स्वमेव। अस्पृश्यसंस्पर्शविशोधनाय कलौ नराणां कृपया हिताय॥

1449 a. अविमुक्तश्मशानोभयसंज्ञके क्षेत्रे शिवस्थापितमविमुक्तेश्वरं लिङ्गं विश्वनाथ-
नाम्ना लोकप्रसिद्धम्। तीर्थचि. p. 360.

1450. The *Pañcatīrthī* has received the highest judicial notice in
Maharani Hemanta Kumari v. Gauri Shankar 68. I. A. 53 at p. 57.

1450 a. *Lolārka* is only one of the shrines of the Sun in *Kāśī* vide
Kāśīkhaṇḍa 10.83 (*Lolārka-mukhya-sūryāṁśca pranamya ca punaḥ punaḥ*)
and 46. 45-46, where the shrines of the twelve *Arkas* in *Kāśī* are enumerated
as *लोलार्क*, *उत्तरार्क*, *साम्बादित्य* &c.

Keśava, Bindumādhava and Maṇikarṇikā.¹⁴⁵¹ In modern times the five essential tīrthas called Pañcatīrthī are the confluence of the Asi with the Ganges, the Daśāśvamedha *ghāt*, Maṇikarṇikā, the Pañcagaṅgā *ghāt* and the confluence of the river Varanā (called Bārṇā by the common people) with the Ganges. This is based on the Kāśikhaṇḍa.¹⁴⁵² The shrine of Lolārka is situated at the confluence of the Asi (the southern boundary of Banaras) with the Ganges. The Kāśikhaṇḍa¹⁴⁵³ furnishes a popular etymology for the name Lolārka, viz. that the mind of the Sun on seeing Kāśī became agitated. The Asi is a tolerably wide stream (about 40 feet) in the rainy season, but is dry at other times. The several gigantic ghats with their flights of stone steps are a grand sight at Banaras. The Ganges while passing by Banaras takes a great sweep so that its mighty current flows in a northerly direction (that is towards the Himālaya) and is therefore held to be peculiarly holy here. The Daśāśvamedha-*ghāt* has been famed for centuries. Jayaswal's interpretation of the epithets applied to the Bhāraśivas in Vākāṭaka grants should be accepted viz. the Bhāraśivas were an imperial dynasty, were crowned with the holy waters of the Ganges and took their ceremonial baths on the Ganges at the end of ten Aśvamedha sacrifices, on account of which the Daśāśvamedha-*ghāt*¹⁴⁵⁴ at Banaras was so named (Jayaswal's 'History of India' 150 A. D.-350 A. D. p. 5). In order to realize the grandeur of Banaras on the side of the river one must be at

1451. तीर्थानां पञ्चकं सारं विश्वेशानन्दकानने। दशाश्वमेधं लोलार्कः केशवो बिन्दु-
माधवः। पञ्चमी तु महाश्रेष्ठा प्रोच्यते मणिकर्णिका। एभिस्तु तीर्थवर्षेण वर्णयते ह्यविमुक्तकम् ॥
मत्स्य० 185. 68-69.

1452. प्रथमं चासिसम्भेदं तीर्थानां प्रवरं परम् । ततो दशाश्वमेधाख्यं सर्वतीर्थनिषे-
वितम् । ततः पादोदकं तीर्थमादिकेशवसंनिधौ । ततः पञ्चनदं पुण्यं स्नानमात्रादघौघहृत् ।
एतेषां पञ्चतीर्थानां चतुर्णामपि सत्तम । पञ्चमं मणिकर्ण्याख्यं मनोवयवशुद्धिदम् । पञ्चतीर्थ्या
नरः स्नात्वा न देहं पाञ्चभौतिकम् । गृह्णाति जातुचित्काश्यां पञ्चास्यो वाभिजायते । काशी०
106.110 and 114 q. by त्रिस्थली० p. 261, which explains 'यदि देहग्रहणं तदा
पञ्चास्यः शिव एव भवति कर्मनिबन्धनो देहो नास्तीति भावः.'

1453. तस्यार्कस्य मनो लोलं यदासीत्काशिदर्शने । अतो लोलार्क इत्याख्या काश्यां
जाता विवस्वतः ॥ लोलार्कस्त्वसिसम्भेदे दक्षिणस्यां दिशि स्थितः ॥ स्कन्द, काशी० 46. 48-49.
The shrine of लोलार्क is referred to in E. I. vol. V. p. 117 of Vikrama era
1208 (1151 A. D.), a grant of गोविन्दचन्द्र of Kanoj.

1454. 'अंसभारसंनिवेशितशिवलिङ्गोद्वहनशिवसुपरितुष्टसमुत्पादितराजवंशानां पराक्रम-
धिगतभागीरथ्यमलजलमूर्धाभिषिक्तानां दशाश्वमेधावभृथस्नानानां भारशिवानां महाराजश्रीभवं
नागदौहित्रस्य...। E. I. vol. III. p. 258 (Dudia plates of प्रवरसेन II) and E. I. vol. III. p. 258
Gupta Inscriptions (Chammak plate of प्रवरसेन II) p. 236 and p. 244 (Sivani plate of the same king).



the Daśāśvamedhaghāt at dawn. For the eulogy of Daśāśvamedha, vide Kāśikhanda 52. 83 ff. and Tri. S. p. 159. The Kāśikhanda says that formerly the tīrtha was called Rudrasaras, but as Brahmā performed ten Āśvamedhas there it came to be called Daśāśvamedha (chap. 52. 66-68). The Maṇikarnikā (also called Mukti-kṣetra) pool is the very centre of the religious life of Banaras and ¹⁴⁵⁵ is the most holy among all the Banaras tīrthas. The Kāśikhanda gives a phantastic story of its origin (in chapter 26 verses 51-63 quoted in Tri. S. pp. 145-146): Viṣṇu dug with his discus a puṣkarinī, filled it with the perspiration from his own body and performed severe austerities on its bank for 1050 (or 50000) years. Śiva came there and being pleased shook his head and an ear-ornament studded with jewels fell into the pool, which thenceforward came to be called Maṇikarnikā. The word is ¹⁴⁵⁶ derived in two ways in the Kāśikhanda. Śiva who is like the wish-yielding jewel whispers in the ear (karnikā) of good men the Tāraka mantra at the time of death. The extent of Maṇikarnikā north to south is said to be 105 *hastas* i. e. about 160 feet (Kāśikhanda 99. 54). In modern times the waters of the Maṇikarnikā pool become foul and fetid because it is shallow (two or three feet deep), because hundreds of pilgrims cast into it flowers and money by way of worship and because the priests stir the waters with their hands and feet to find the coins dropped by pilgrims. Our methods of worship must be changed. The flowers and gifts should be placed on the banks of the pool and then taken away by the priests. The Tri. S. p. 147 mentions several mantras (two of which are set out below) to be recited when contemplating on Maṇikarnikā ¹⁴⁵⁷. Near the Maṇikarnikā pool is the temple of Tārakesvara so named from the belief that Śiva will whisper the mantra called *tāraka* in the ear of

1455. तत्र तावत्सकलतीर्थवरिष्ठायाः श्रीमन्मणिकर्णिकाया महिमा। त्रिस्थली० p. 142; तत्रापि सर्वतीर्थानामुत्तमा मणिकर्णिका। नारदीय (उत्तर) 48. 66.

1456. मुक्ताकुण्डलपातेन तवाद्रितनयाप्रिय। तीर्थानां परमं तीर्थं मुक्तिक्षेत्रमिहास्तु वै॥ काशी० 26. 66, q. in त्रिस्थली० p. 146; संसारिच्छिन्तामणिरत्र यस्मात् तारकं सज्जन-कर्णिकायाम्। शिवोभिधत्ते सहस्राप्तकाले तद्गीयतेसौ मणिकर्णिकेति॥ मुक्तिक्षेत्रमिहापीठं मणिस्तच्चरणाब्जयोः। कर्णिकेयं ततः प्रादुर्या जना मणिकर्णिकाम्॥ काशीखण्ड 7. 79-80 q. by त्रिस्थली० p. 148. In the 2nd verse मणि means श्रेष्ठ and the compound is dissolved as मणिश्चासौ कर्णिका च, the meaning being that मणिकर्णिका is the jewel among मुक्तिक्षेत्रs and it is as it were the कर्णिका of the lotus-like feet of मोक्षलक्ष्मी.

1457. तथा चैवं मन्त्रः। ओं ऐं ह्रीं श्रीं क्लीं ओं मं मणिकर्णिके नमः। इति। तथा चैवं मन्त्रः। ओं मं मणिकर्णिके प्रणवात्मिके नमः। इति। त्रिस्थली. p. 147. The second मन्त्र is based on काशीखण्ड 61. 97.

the dying man brought to the sacred pool^{1457a} (vide Kāśikhanda 7.78, 25. 72-73 and 32. 115-116). The Pañcagaṅgā *ghāt* is so called because it is supposed that five rivers, viz. the Kiranā,¹⁴⁵⁸ Dhūtapāpā, Gaṅgā, Yamunā and Sarasvatī, meet here (though four of them are invisible). This is very highly eulogised and it is said in the Nārāḍīyapurāṇa and the Kāśikhanda (59. 118-133) that when a man takes a bath in the Pañcanada he is not born again in a body made up of the five elements. It is said that this confluence of five rivers had different names viz. Dharmanada, Dhūtapātaka, Bindutīrtha and Pañcanada in Kṛta and the following Yugas respectively. The Kāśikhanda in chap. 59 deals with the confluence of five rivers and gives phantastic legends as to why the rivers were called Kiranā (59. 108-113) and Dhūtapāpā (59. 101-106). The river Varanā is the northern boundary of Vārāṇasī and the end of the *ghāts* on the northern side is reached at the confluence of the Varanā with the Ganges. That the *ghāts* have been there for at least a thousand years can be proved from copperplates and inscriptions. The Gāhadvāla rulers of Kanoj (of whose times at least 55 copperplates and 3 inscriptions on stone were issued during the period 1097 to 1187 A. D.), being devotees of Viṣṇu, several times made grants at the Ādi-Keśava *ghāt*. Vide J. R. A. S. for 1896 p. 787 (king Madanapāla's grant on the occasion of a Sun-eclipse after Mahārājñī Prthvīśrikā took a bath), I. A. vol. 19 p. 249 (grant of Govindacandra in *saṃvat* 1188 i. e. 1131 A. D.), E. I. 14 p. 197 (Candrādityadeva, who having bathed at Ādikeśava-ghaṭṭa¹⁴⁵⁹ at the confluence of the rivers Gaṅgā

1457 a. ब्रह्मज्ञानेन मुच्यन्ते नान्यथा जन्तवः क्वचित्। ब्रह्मज्ञानमये क्षेत्रे प्रयागे वा तत्तुल्यजः ॥ ब्रह्मज्ञानं तदेवाहं काशीसंस्थितिभागिनाम्। दिशामि तारकं ग्रान्ते मुच्यन्ते ते तु तत्क्षणात् ॥ काशीखण्ड 32. 115-116; vide also काशीखण्ड 86. 48 and नारदीय (उत्तर) 47. 56, 59-62.

1458. किरणा धूतपापा च पुण्यतोया सरस्वती। गङ्गा च यमुना चैव पञ्च नद्यः प्रकीर्तिताः ॥ अतः पञ्चनदं नाम तीर्थं त्रैलोक्यविश्रुतम्। तत्राप्नुतो न गृह्णीयाद्देहितां पाञ्चभौतिकीम् ॥ अस्मिन्पञ्चनदीनां तु सङ्गमेऽधौघभेदने। स्नानमात्राज्जरो याति भित्त्वा ब्रह्माण्डमण्डपम् ॥... कृते धर्मनदं नाम त्रेतायां धूतपापकम्। द्वापरे बिन्दुतीर्थं च कलौ पञ्चनदं स्मृतम् ॥ नारदीय (उत्तर) 51. 15-18 and 35-36 and काशीखण्ड 59. 115-117 (reads देहं ना पाञ्चभौतिकम्) and 136.

1459. देवश्रीमदादिकेशवदक्षिणमूर्ती ... अद्याक्षततृतीयायां युगादिपर्वणि ... आदिकेशवघट्टे स्नात्वा...वासुदेवस्य पूजां विधाय...पितृपिण्डयज्ञं निर्वर्त्य उपरि लिखितग्रामाः...गोकर्णकुशपूतकरतलोदकपूर्व...प्रदत्ताः। E. I. 14 p. 197 at p. 198. For अक्षयतृतीया as one of the four युगादितिथिः vide n. 841 above. That there were several images of Keśava is expressly stated by the काशीखण्ड 10.82 (आदिकेशवमुख्यांश्च वेष्टितां स्परितोष्य च). Prof. Altekar observes (p. 28) that the Ādikesava-ghaṭ, once a royal favourite, is now in a dilapidated condition and is rarely visited by pilgrims.

and Varanā bestowed on 500 brāhmaṇas 30 villages on the Akṣayya-trītiyā of *saṃvat* 1156). Those rulers made grants at other ghāts and sacred spots also. For example, E. I. vol. IV. pp. 97 ff. (21 copperplates of Gāhadvālas, of which H in *saṃvat* 1178 speaks of the grant of a village after a bath at the Kapāla-mocana-ghaṭṭa at Banaras where the Ganges flows towards the north; grant L. p. 114 of *saṃvat* 1197 made on a queen taking a bath at the ghaṭṭa of god Vedeśvara in Avimuktakṣetra; grant S. mentions god Kṛttivāsa; grant U. is made to the temple of Lolārka by Jayacandra in *saṃvat* 1233), E. I. vol. VIII p. 149 (five copperplate grants of Govindacandra in *saṃvat* 1207 i. e. 1156 A. D. after a bath at Koṭitīrtha on Uttarāyana-saṅkrānti). The Kāśī-khaṇḍa promises Varuṇa-loka to those charitable people that build stone ghāts on the sacred rivers ¹⁴⁶⁰.

One of the most meritorious of all pilgrimages is the Pañcakrośī by road. Lakṣmīdhara in his section on Tirthas in the Kṛtyakalpataru apparently takes no notice of it. The length of the Pañcakrośī road is about 50 miles and there are hundreds of shrines on the road. Taking Maṇikarnikā as the centre the whole road describes an irregular semicircle round the city of Banaras with a radius of five krośas (about ten miles) and hence it is called pañcakrośī. The word 'pañcakrośī' occurs very often in the Kāśīkhaṇḍa (as in chap. 26, verses 80 and 114, chap. 55. 44). This pilgrimage may be very briefly described as follows:—The pilgrim starts from the Maṇikarnikā-ghaṭ and going along the bank of the Ganges arrives at the confluence of the river Asi with the Ganges and halts for the day at a village called Khāṇḍava about six miles from Maṇikarnikā. The 2nd day's march (for eight or ten miles) ends at the village called Dhūpacandī where he offers worship to the goddess of that name. On the 3rd day the pilgrim walks 14 miles to the village Rāmeśvara. On the 4th day he walks eight miles and reaches the village Śivapura. On the 5th day he walks 6 miles and reaches the village Kapiladhārā, where the pilgrim offers oblations to his pitrs. On the 6th day he walks from Kapiladhārā to Varanāsaṅgama and thence to Maṇikarnikā, a distance of six miles. It is the practice for pilgrims to scatter grains of barley from Kapiladhārā to Maṇikarnikā. The pilgrim bathes, pays *dakṣiṇā* to the priest and then goes to the temple of Sākṣī-Vināyaka who is supposed to bear witness to the pilgrim's having performed the Pañcakrośī-yātrā.

1460. घटान्पुण्यतटिन्यादेर्बन्धयन्ति शिलादिभिः । तोयार्थं सुखसिद्धयर्थं भोगिनः ॥ स्कन्द, काशी. 12. 59.

There are numerous other sub-tirthas in Banaras, some of which may be briefly noticed here. The Jñānavāpī may be mentioned first. The story of its origin is narrated in the Kāśikhanda, chap. 33. The Tri. S. (pp. 148-150) refers to it. It is said that when Śiva (Īśāna) saw the Viśveśvara-linga a desire arose in him to bathe with its cool water. He dug a *kunḍa* with his trident to the south of the temple of Viśveśvara and with the water therefrom he bathed Viśveśvara-linga and Viśveśvara granted the boon that the tirtha would be superior to all tirthas and that, as Śiva is knowledge (verse 32), the tirtha would be called Jñānoda or Jñānavāpī. One of the most popular and the most frequented temple is that of Durgā. In chap. 72 (verses 37-65) of the Kāśikhanda there is a Durgāstotra called Vajra-pañjara which is referred to in Tri. S. p. 161. There is a temple of Bhairavanātha about a mile to the north of the temple of Viśveśvara. He is the *Kotwal* or police Magistrate of Kāśī and wields a stone cudgel (of enormous thickness). His *vāhana* is a dog. Vide Kāśikhanda, chap. 30, for Bhairava. There are many temples of Gaṇeśa. The Tri. S. (pp. 198-199) names 56 Gaṇeśas and indicates their locations, following Kāśikhanda, chap. 57.59-115 (ṣaṭ-pañcāṣaḍ-Gajamukhān-etān-yaḥ saṁsmariṣyati). In Kāśikhanda (57.33) the name Dhundhi applied to Gaṇeśa is derived from the root 'dhudhi' in the sense of 'searching' (anveṣaṇe dhudhir-ayam prathitosti dhātuḥ). Compare the Marathi verb dhundane.

The Tri. S. discusses at some length (pp. 98-100) the question whether sins committed in all past lives are destroyed by entering Kāśī or whether it is only the sins committed during the present life that are destroyed. Some hold the view that sins committed in this life only are destroyed by visiting Kāśī and by bath in the various sacred spots the sins of previous lives are destroyed. Others hold that by entering Kāśī the sins of all past lives are destroyed, but bath at various sacred spots brings about only the cessation of the tendency to sin in different lives. Nārāyaṇabhaṭṭa puts forward several other views and says that wise men should hold the view that appears proper.

Many of the purāṇas lay down rules about how one dwelling in Kāśī should act. The injunction is that in Kāśī one should not commit the slightest sin, since the punishment is far more heavy. The Matsya (chap. 185. 17-45) and Kāśīkhanda, chap. 96, narrate the story of Vyāsa, who while wandering about for alms in Kāśī, did not secure alms and



being hungry and angry was on the point of cursing Kāśī in the words quoted below ¹⁴⁶¹ when Śiva coming to know his mind assumed the form of a householder, gave him the best of food and ordered Vyāsa not to enter Kāśikṣetra as he was an irritable man, but allowed him to do so on the 8th and 14th *tithis* only. The Kāśikhaṇḍa 96. 12-80 and 119-180 speak at great length about how one residing in Kāśī should conduct himself.

Some miscellaneous matters in connection with Banaras may be set out here. Vārāṇasī being a great tīrtha, śrāddha for the benefit of ancestors should be performed there and if it is not possible to perform a śrāddha with all details, at least offerings of pinḍas should be made.¹⁴⁶² The construction of *maṭhas* for those who practise penance there and endowing them with means for their maintenance are highly eulogized.¹⁴⁶³

In the 12th century A. D. there was a Kapālamocanaghāṭ¹⁴⁶⁴ situated on the Ganges. In a grant published in E. I. vol. IV p. 110 dated *samvat* 1178 (1122 A. D.) the Emperor Govindacandra bestowed a village on a brāhmaṇa named Vyāsa after bathing at the Kapāla-mocanaghāṭa in Banaras where the Ganges flows to the north. The story of Kapālamocana-tīrtha is narrated in the Matsya-purāṇa, chap. 183. 84-103 and a reference is made to it in Kāśikhaṇḍa 33. 116.

It may be noted that in the Līngapurāṇa, pūrvārdha, chap. 92 verses 67-100, in Padma,^{1464a} Ādikhaṇḍa, chap. 34-37,

1461. तीर्थं चातीर्थतां यातु नगरं शापयाम्यहम् ॥ मा भूत्विपौरुषी विद्या मा भूत्विपौरुषं धनम् । मा भूत्विपौरुषं सख्यं व्यासो वाराणसीं शपन् ॥ अविमुक्ते निवसतां जनानां पुण्यकर्मणाम् । विघ्नं सृजामि सर्वेषां येन सिद्धिर्न विद्यते ॥ मत्स्य 185. 21-23, q. by कल्प० on तीर्थ (p. 28). The verse मा भूत्० is काशीखण्ड 96. 125.

1462. मनुष्यैः पिण्डदानादि कार्यमत्रागतैः सदा । पिण्डदानं च तत्रैव सुपुत्रैः कार्यमादरात् । सुपुत्रास्ते पितॄणां तु भवन्ति सुखदायकाः । q. by त्रिस्थली. p. 129.

1463. मठानपि तपस्विभ्यः कारयित्वात्र योऽर्पयेत् । जीवनोपायसंयुक्तान् सोऽपि सर्वफलाश्रयः ॥ q. by त्रिस्थली. p. 133.

1464. Dr. Altekar (pp. 28-29) notes that at present a *ghāṭ* and a tank near the Rajaghat station is known by the name Kapālamocanaghāṭ, that there exists a temple near this tank dedicated to Kapālamocaneśvara and that the god must have been removed from the original place to the present habitation at some time during the last 700 years.

1464 a. Kūrma I. 32. 3-29 about Omkāra and other Līngas are the same as Padma I. 34. 1-25 (with some half verses omitted) and Kūrma I. 33 is taken over bodily in Padma I. 35 and Kūrma I. 34. 2-16 are the same as Padma I. 37. 1-19 (with a few additions).

Kūrma I. 32. 1-12 and I. 35. 1-15 (tīrthas) and in the Kāśīkhaṇḍa, chap. 10. 86-97, chap. 33, chap. 53. 27 ff., chapters 55, 58 and 61 numerous lingas and tīrthas of Banaras are named. The Kāśīkhaṇḍa, chap. 73. 32-36 (quoted by Tri. S. pp. 264-265) mentions 14 of these as Mahālingas, viz. Omkāra, Trilocana, Mahādeva, Kṛttivāsas, Ratneśa, Candreśvara, Kedāra, Dharmesha, Vireśvara, Kāmesha, Viśvakarmesvara, Maṇikarnīśa, Avimukta, Viśveśvara. It is provided in Kāśīkhaṇḍa 73. 39 that *yātrās* of these main lingas should be celebrated every month from the 1st tithi onwards. In Kāśīkhaṇḍa 73. 45-48 there is another series of fourteen great lingas different from those in chap. 73. 32-36. Fourteen āyatanas are named in Kāśīkhaṇḍa 73. 60-62.^{1464b} Twelve out of these are specified as lingas in Liṅgapurāṇa I. 92.67-107. In Kāśīkhaṇḍa chapters 83 and 84 are enumerated about 125 tīrthas of Banaras. In chap. 94. 36 of the Kāśīkhaṇḍa 36 principal lingas are referred to (14 Omkāradī, 8 Dakṣeśvarādī and 14 Śaileśādī). From considerations of space the other lingas and tīrthas are not mentioned here. But out of all these Viśveśvara is said to give quick results.

It is laid down that every one residing in Kāśī must repair every day to the Ganges, take a bath in the Maṇikarnikā and visit Viśveśvara.¹⁴⁶⁵

What happens if a person commits sins outside Kāśī, comes to Kāśī and then dies, or if a resident of Kāśī commits sins in Kāśī but dies either at Kāśī or outside it? The Tri. S. after quoting several verses from the Kāśīkhaṇḍa, Padmapurāṇa and Brahmavaivarta states the following conclusions (p. 268). Sins committed elsewhere are destroyed by coming to Kāśī.¹⁴⁶⁶ He who residing in Kāśī is always addicted to sins becomes a *piśāca* (goblin) for thirty thousand years, again dwells in Kāśī, secures highest knowledge and then obtains

1464 b. शैलेशः सद्भ्रमेशश्च स्वर्लीनो मध्यमेश्वरः । हिरण्यगर्भ ईशानो गोपेशो वृषभध्वजः । उपशान्तशिवो ज्येष्ठो निवासेश्वर एव च । शुक्रेशो व्याघ्रलिङ्गं च जम्बुकेशं चतुर्दशम् । मुने चतुर्दशैतानि महान्त्यायतनानि वै ॥ काशी० 73. 60-63 q. by. त्रिस्थली० p. 263.

1465. यात्राद्वयं प्रयत्नेन कर्तव्यं प्रतिवासरम् । एका स्वर्गतरङ्गिण्यास्ततो विश्वेशितुः परा ॥ काश्यां लिङ्गान्यनेकानि काश्यां तीर्थान्यनेकशः । तथापि सेव्यो विश्वेशः स्नातव्या मणिकार्णिका ॥ काशीखण्ड 100. 101 q. in त्रिस्थली० p. 266.

1466. अन्यत्र विहितं पापं नश्येत्काशीनिरीक्षणात् ॥ काश्यां कृतानां पापानां दाहयेत्तु यातना ॥ काशीखण्ड 33.115. Vide also काशी० 75.22 'काश्यां तु यत्कृतं पापं तत्पैशाचपदप्रदम् ।'.

mokṣa. Those who being residents of Kāśī commit sins have not to undergo the tortures of Yama whether they die in Kāśī or elsewhere. Those who after committing sins in Kāśī die there will be punished by Kālabhairava. Those who die elsewhere (after committing sins in Kāśī) first undergo torments inflicted by the *gaṇas* of Śiva called Yāma, then undergo torments inflicted by Kālabhairava for thirty thousand years, are then born as mortal men, then die in Kāśī and secure release (from *samsāra*) at the end.

It is remarkable that the Kāśīkhaṇḍa¹⁴⁶⁷ states that a little to the north of Kāśī, Viṣṇu assigned a place for his residence called Dharmakṣetra and that there Viṣṇu assumed the form of Buddha. This is a clear reference to Sārnath about five miles by road to the north of Banaras, where Buddha delivered his first sermon. The general rule for ascetics is that for eight months they must move from place to place and may spend the four months of the rainy season or two months in one place; but this rule is abrogated where ascetics enter Banaras and it is laid down that they should not leave Kāśī at all.^{1467a}

The Kāśīkhaṇḍa remarks 'For devotees of Śiva who are full of faith there is, even in great calamities, no other remedy except the water of the feet of the image of God. Incurable diseases even, whether affecting the body outside or inside, are got rid of by the touch with faith of the water of (washing the image of) the deity.' This reminds one of the miraculous cures believed to have been effected by the water of a pool at Lourdes in the first years of this century^{1467b}.

It would be far beyond the scope of this section to dilate upon the great traditions of learning associated with the name of Banaras. It is sufficient to refer to Alberuni (vol. I. p. 173) who observed that Banaras and Kashmir were the

1467. किञ्चित्काश्यामुदीच्यां च गत्वा देवेन चक्रिणा । स्वस्थिर्यै कल्पितं स्थानं धर्मक्षेत्रमिति रितम् ॥ ततस्तु सौगतं रूपं शिश्राय श्रीपतिः स्वयम् ॥ ch. 58.71-72.

1467 a. अष्टौ मासा विहारस्य यतीनां संयतात्मनाम् । एकत्र चतुरो मासान् मासौ वा निवसेत्पुनः । अविमुक्ते प्रविष्टानां विहारस्तु न विद्यते ।...मोक्षो ह्यसंशयस्तत्र पञ्चत्वं तु गतस्य वै ॥ मत्स्य 184. 32-34 q. by कल्पतरु on तीर्थ p. 24. The same verses (with slight variations) are स्कन्द, काशी. 86. 112-113. The general rule for an ascetic is stated in विष्णुपुराण III. 9. 28 'एकरात्रस्थितिर्ग्रामे पञ्चरात्रस्थितिः पुरे'.

1467 b. श्रद्धावतां स्वभक्तानामुपसर्गे महत्यापि । नोपायान्तरमस्त्येव नैव दकम् ॥ ये व्याधयोऽपि दुःसाध्या बहिरन्तः शरीरगाः । श्रद्धयेशोदकरपशान्तिं नान्यथा ॥ काशीखण्ड 67. 82-83.

'high schools of Hindu Sciences,' to *Ain. A.* vol. II. p. 158 'from time immemorial it has been the chief seat of learning in Hindustan' and to *Kāśikhanda*, chap. 96. 121 that states that Kāśī is the home of learning (*vidyānām sadanam Kāśī*). Vide Prof. Altekar's 'History of Benares' pp. 23-24 and *I. A.* vol. 41 pp. 7-13 and 245-253 for some learned families of Banaras.

CHAPTER XIV

GAYĀ

Gayā occupies a unique place in the hearts of all pious Hindus even in these days. Hundreds of pages have been written about the history, the antiquities, the architectural remains of Gayā, the sacred places in and round about Gayā, the śrāddha rites performed in Gayā and about *Gayāwals* (the priests of Gayā). It is not possible to deal with this vast mass in this work. But it is impossible not to say a few words about the many conflicting views on certain important matters put forward by scholars for about three quarters of a century. Those who are deeply interested in the history and antiquities of Gayā should carefully read the following books and papers; Dr. Rajendralal Mitra's 'Buddha-Gayā' with 51 plates (1878); General Cunningham's 'Mahābodhi' with 31 plates at the end (1892); L. S. S. O'Malley's District Gazetteer of Gayā, vol. XII and J. A. S. B. for 1903 LXXII, No. 3, pp. 1-11 on 'Gayāśrāddha and Gayāwals'; Indian Antiquary, vol. X pp. 339-340 for a Chinese Inscription at Buddha Gayā dated in a Chinese date corresponding to 1033 A. D. and pp. 341-347 for Inscriptions at Gayā, one of which is engraved in a temple of the Sun near a tank 'Dakṣiṇamānasa' near the Viṣṇupada, dated 1813 years after Buddha's Parinirvāṇa; Indian Antiquary, vol. 16 pp. 63 ff Inscription of Yakṣapāla, son of Viśvāditya, which records the building of a temple for certain images in the 15th regnal year of the Pāla king Nayapāladeva who died in 1045 A. D., edited by Kielhorn; Dr. Benimadhav Barua's 'Gayā and Buddha-Gayā' in two volumes (1934) with plates; Journal of Bihar and Orissa R. Society, vol. 24 (for 1938) pp. 89-111 where Dr. J. C. Ghose deals with 'the antiquity of Gayā.' Some of the remarks of Dr. Ghose are most unwarranted and cannot be accepted, such as holding 'maganda' in 'Pramagandasya' in Rg. III, 53, 14 as identical with Magadha and the explanation of 'udantyāḥ' in the Ait. Br. as 'people of sunrise.' Among medieval digests Gayā is dealt with in Kalpataru on Tīrthas pp. 163-174, Tīrthacintāmaṇi of Vācaspati pp. 268-328, Tristhalīsetu of Nārāyaṇa Bhaṭṭa pp. 316-379, Tīrthaprakāśa pp. 384-452, Tīrthendruśekhara pp. 54-59, Tristhalīsetu-sāra-saṅgraha of Bhaṭṭoji pp. 36-38.



The most important work on Gayā relied upon in such works as the Tristhali-setu and in modern times is the Gayā-māhātmya that occurs at the end of the Vāyupurāṇa (chapters 105-112 of the Ānandāśrama ed.). Scholars differ about the antiquity of these chapters. Rajendralal Mitra assigned the Gayā-māhātmya to the 3rd or 4th century A. D. O'Malley was inclined to hold that the legend of Gayāsura was invented in the 14th or 15th century, principally on the ground that the Gayāwals profess the Vaiṣṇava faith established by Madhvācārya¹⁴⁶⁸ and acknowledge as their spiritual head the mahant of Hari Narasimhapura; vide J. A. S. B. vol. LXXII (1903) p. 4. To my mind there is hardly anything in this. The Gayāwals are notorious for their indolence, dissoluteness and ignorance and they are a dying race. O'Malley himself notes in the paper mentioned above (at p. 8) that originally the families of Gayāwals were 1484, that in Buchanan Hamilton's time they numbered about 1000, that in 1893 a Gayāwal counted 128 families, that in the census of 1901 there existed only 168 males (as pure Gayāwals) and 153 females. Gayā is a place sacred to Viṣṇu and if the Gayāwals had to turn in medieval times for support to some great ācārya they would naturally choose to align themselves with the Vaiṣṇava ācārya Madhva rather than with Śāṅkara. Dr. Barua, after an elaborate examination of the several items of evidence, holds that the Gayā-māhātmya is not earlier than the 13th or 14th century A. D. (vol. I, p. 64 of 'Gayā and Buddha Gayā'). From considerations of the space at my disposal I cannot examine in detail his arguments. His conclusion is vitiated mainly for two reasons. He relies too much on the dubious and unconvincing argument from silence. He examines the account of Gayā that appears in the Vanaparva and compares it with the fuller account in the Gayāmāhātmya and arrives at the rather startling conclusion 'The Gayā proper as known to the Epic (the Mahābhārata) is essentially a place sacred to Yama Dharmarāja, Brahmā and Śivaśūlin, and Viṣṇu and Vaiṣṇavism has no place in it either as a name or as an idea. Except

1468. There is conflict about the dates of Madhvācārya's birth and death. The Uttarādi-maṭha records give śake 1040 (1118 A. D.) and śake 1120 (1198 A. D.) as the dates of his birth and death respectively. This is said to conflict with the date given in Madhva's महाभारततात्पर्यनिर्णय viz. that he was born in गतकलि 4300. In a paper published in the Journal of the Annamalai University, vol. III for 1934 pp. 245 ff. the correct dates are said to be 1238 A. D.-1317 A. D.

Brahmayūpa, Śivaliṅga and Vṛṣabha there is no reference to any structural erection nor any iconic suggestion'. In order to show how this conclusion is not at all justified the references to Gayā in the Epic and other Sanskrit works will have to be set out and compared with each other and with the Gayāmāhātmya. The second reason that vitiates Dr. Barua's conclusion is the wrong interpretation that he puts on verse 12 of the Inscription edited by Kielhorn in I. A. vol. 16.

I shall now turn to the name Gayā and references to it or similar names from the Rgveda downwards. A Gaya, son of Plati, is the reputed author of two hymns of the Rgveda (X. 63 and X. 64). In Rg. X. 63. 17 and X. 64. 17 we have the words 'astāvī jano divyo Gayena' (the divine host was praised by Gaya). So Gaya was a proper name applied to a composer of Rgvedic hymns. In the Rg. the word Gaya has several other senses, which are not material here. In the Atharvaveda (I. 14.4) Gaya appears to be a wonder-worker or a sorcerer along with Asita and Kaśyapa. Even in the Vedic Samhitās Asuras, Dāsas and Rākṣasas are credited with tricks and magic. Vide Rg. VII 99.4, VII 104.24-25 and Atharva IV. 23. 5. It is not difficult to imagine how a sorcerer Gaya could have been transformed into Gayāsura later on. Proceeding further, the Nirukta¹⁴⁶⁹ while explaining 'idam Viṣṇu-vi cakrame tredhā nidadhe padam' (Rg. I. 22. 17) gives two very interesting interpretations, one explaining the verse as a natural phenomenon and the other explaining it from geographical or legendary points of view 'He (Viṣṇu) puts down his foot in three ways. According to Śākapūṇi, Viṣṇu plants his foot on the earth, in mid air (sky) and heaven; according to Aurnavābha, on Samārohaṇa, on Viṣṇu-pada and on Gayaśīras.' Whatever the Vedic verse may mean, it is clear that two interpretations had arisen several centuries before Christ and if the usual dates about Buddha's *nirvāṇa* are accepted Aurnavābha and Yāska both flourished before Buddha. Vide S. B. E. vol. XIII pp. XXII-XXIII for Buddha's *nirvāṇa* being placed at 483 B. C. according to Ceylonese chronicle, while some western scholars would place it between 429-400 B. C. ¹⁴⁷⁰ Gayaśīras is named in the Vanaparva (87.

1469. त्रेधा निधत्ते पदम् । पृथिव्यामन्तरिक्षे दिवीति शाकपूणिः । समारोहणे विष्णुपदे गयशिरसि-इति और्णवाभः । निरुक्त 12. 19.

1470. The Nirukta is placed not later than at least 500 B. C. by most Sanskrit scholars. Aurnavābha is earlier than the Nirukta. Vide History of

11, 95. 9), in the Viṣṇudharma-sūtra 85.4 (in the form Gayāśīrṣa), Vāmanapurāṇa (22.20 as the eastern *vedi* of Brahmā), Skanda I. 2. 13.21 and even in the Buddhist books such as the Mahāvagga (I. 21. 1, S. B. E. vol. XIII p. 134) in which last it is said that after having dwelt at Uruvelā, Buddha accompanied by a thousand *bhikkhus* went to Gayāsīsa (which is the Pali equivalent of Gayāśīrṣa). Traditions of Gaya as a king of the territories round about Gayā are mentioned in Jaina and Buddhist works. The Uttarādhyayanasūtra (S. B. E. vol. 45 p. 86 and note 3 there) states that he was son of king Samudravijaya of Rājagṛha and became the 11th Cakravartin. The Buddhacarita of Aśvaghōṣa states that Buddha visited the hermitage called a city of the royal sage Gaya, that the saint (future Buddha) fixed his dwelling on the pure bank of the Nairanjanā river (S. B. E. vol. 49 part 1 p. 132, Canto XII. 87-88) and p. 193 (chap. XVII. 8 of the same work) and that Buddha went to the hermitage of Kāśyapa at Gayā called Uruvilvā. The same work (S. B. E. vol. 49 part 1 p. 192) speaks of Dharmāṭavī where dwelt 700 ascetics whom Buddha helped to enter *nirvāṇa*. Viṣṇupada occurs in the Viṣṇudharmasūtra 85.40 as a holy place very fit for śrāddha. In my opinion at least Aurnavābha held that in a particular region there were three places on which according to the legends current in his day the foot-prints of Viṣṇu's foot could be seen¹⁴⁷¹. Two of

(Continued from last page)

Sanskrit literature by Winternitz, vol. I p. 69 (English tr.). Scholars are not agreed about the exact location and extent of Gayāśīrṣa. Rajendralal in 'Buddha-gayā' p. 19 says 'Gayāśīrṣa is not the Brahmayoni hill but a low spur of it to the north-east about a mile in area forming the site of the old town of Gayā. This Gayāśīrṣa is the most sacred spot in Gayā.' Dr. Barua (vol. I. p. 246) 'Gayā proper is still sandwiched between the Phalgu and a small set of hills containing some 25 hill-tops with Gayāśīra or Gayāśīra (Brahmayoni) in the south-west &c.'. Both are, however, agreed that Gayāśīrṣa is part of the ancient Gayā region. Vide S. B. E. vol. XIII. p. 134 n. 1 about Cunningham's view that गयासीस is the ब्रह्मयोनि hill near Gayā.

1471. I am not unmindful of the fact that in the Iron Pillar Inscription of a king called Candraratna at Meherauli (nine miles south of Delhi) the last verse reads तेनायं प्रणिधाय भूमिपतिना ... प्रांशुर्विष्णुपदे गिरौ भगवतो विष्णोर्ध्वजः स्थापितः' (Gupta Inscriptions, No 32 at p. 141). This shows that near Delhi there was a hill called विष्णुपद. But there is nothing to show that there was a place called गयाशिरस् near it. Hence विष्णुपद and गयाशिरस् being taken together point out to Gayā. The Inscription is undated but looking to the characters it would not be far wrong to assign it to a period near Samudra-

(Continued on next page)



these, Viṣṇupada and Gayāśiras are well-known; hence it would not be unreasonable to hold that 'Samārohana' is a place and has to be located somewhere near the other two. Samārohana means 'mounting up' or 'ascending'. This word probably refers to the ascent of the hill that rises up from the river Phalgu. It is also possible that it is the same as the Udyanta hill echoing with the warbling (of birds).¹⁴⁷² I therefore hold that at least 600 years before Christ (and hence even before Buddha) there was a tradition about Viṣṇu's footprints in at least two well-known places viz. Viṣṇupada and Gaya-śiras (both in Gayā). Even if some other work does not mention any one of these it does not follow from mere non-mention that that spot was not so named or did not exist.

Let us now turn to the Vanaparva. Dr. Barua mainly relies on Vanaparva 84. 82-103 and 95. 9-29. But some preliminary remarks must be made before the two passages are examined.

The Nāradiyapurāṇa (uttara, 46. 16) states that Gayāśiras extends from Krauñcapada to Phalgutīrtha.

Vanaparva chapter 82 sets out Pulastya's replies to Bhīṣma's question about tīrthas. First comes Puṣkara (verses 20-40), then Jambumārga, Tandulikāśrama, Agastyasaraḥ, Mahākāla, Kotitīrtha, Bhadravata (Sthānutīrtha), Narmadā, Prabhāsa and several other tīrthas (not in any particular order but selected at random). In chap. 83 Kurukṣetra is described at some length.

Before discussing the most important passage of the Vanaparva (viz. 84. 82-103) we must see what precedes the description of Gayā. Dr. Barua and many of those that have written on this passage have not carefully considered the implications of verses 1-81 of chapter 84 and also of the following chapters. In Vanaparva 84. 1-81 the author makes Dhaumya name

(Continued from last page)

gupta. Therefore Viṣṇu's footprint existed on a hill near Delhi in the 4th century A. D. There is no sound reason advanced why it could not have existed at Gayā about the same time or even earlier. Besides in the Rām. 11. 68.19 a विष्णुपद south of the river विपाशा is mentioned.

1472. Dr. Barua regards गीतनादित in Vanaparva 84. 93 as the name of a peak (vol. I. p. 246). But this appears to be wrong. It is an adjective of उद्यन्तं (पर्वतं) that immediately precedes. I have not come across any peak called गीतनादित in any other work and Dr. Barua does not cite any other text in support of his view. उद्यन्त would mean 'the hill of sunrise' not necessarily for the whole of Āryāvarta but in the place where both विष्णुपद and गयशिरस् were situated.



about 57 holy places (including such famous ones as Naimiṣa, Śākambharī, Gaṅgādvāra, Kanakhala, the confluence of Gaṅgā and Yamunā, Kubjāmraka) and then comes to speak of the sacred spots in Gayā.¹⁴⁷³ It is therefore clear that the intention of the author is not to speak exhaustively about any tīrtha. For this reason some tīrthas are described twice in the Vana-parva. For example Naimiṣa is very highly praised in chap. 84. 59-64 and again in chap. 87. 6-7. The same happens with regard to Gayā in 85.82-103 and 87.8-12. We cannot at all presume

1473. The verses relating to गया in वनपर्व 84 are set out in full here :
 ततो गयां समासाद्य ब्रह्मचारी समाहितः। अश्वमेधमवामोति कुलं चैव समुद्धरेत्॥ तत्राक्षयवदो
 नाम त्रिषु लोकेषु विश्रुतः। तत्र दत्तं पितृभ्यस्तु भवत्यक्षयमुच्यते॥ महानद्यामुपस्पृश्य तर्पयेद्
 पितृदेवताः। अक्षयान्प्राप्नुयात् लोकान् कुलं चैव समुद्धरेत्॥ ततो ब्रह्मसरो गत्वा धर्मारण्योपशो-
 भितम्। ब्रह्मलोकमवामोति प्रभातामेव शर्वरीम्॥ ब्रह्मणा तत्र सरसि यूपश्रेष्ठः समुच्छ्रितः।
 यूपं प्रदक्षिणीकृत्वा वाजपेयफलं लभेत्॥ ततो गच्छेत् राजेन्द्र धेनुकं लोकविश्रुतम्। एकरात्रो-
 षितो राजन् प्रयच्छेत् तिलधेनुकाम्॥ सर्वपापविशुद्धात्मा सोमलोकं व्रजेद् ध्रुवम्। तत्र चिह्नं
 महद्वाजस्रद्यापि सुमहद् भृशम्। कपिलायाः सवत्सायाश्चरन्त्याः पर्वते कृतम्। सवत्सायाः
 पदानि स्म दृश्यन्तेद्यापि भारत॥ तेषूपस्पृश्य राजेन्द्र पदेषु नृपसत्तम। यत्किञ्चिदशुभं कर्म
 तत्प्रणश्यति भारत॥ ततो गृध्रवटं गच्छेत्स्थानं देवस्य धीमतः। स्नायीत भस्मना तत्र अभिगम्य
 वृषध्वजम्॥ ब्राह्मणेन भवेच्चीर्णं व्रतं द्वादशवार्षिकम्। इतरेषां तु वर्णानां सर्वपापं प्रणश्यति॥
 उद्यन्तं च ततो गच्छेत् पर्वतं गीतनादितम्। सावित्र्यास्तु पदं तत्र दृश्यते भरतर्षभ॥ तत्र
 सन्ध्यामुपासीत ब्राह्मणः संशितव्रतः। तेन ह्यपास्ता भवति सन्ध्या द्वादशवार्षिकी॥ योनि-
 द्वारं च तत्रैव विश्रुतं भरतर्षभ। तत्राभिगम्य मुच्येत पुरुषो योनिसङ्कटात्॥ कृष्णशुक्लाबुभौ
 पक्षौ गयायां यो वसेन्नरः। पुनात्यासत्तमं राजन् कुलं नास्त्यत्र संशयः॥ एष्टव्या...वृषसुत्सुजेत्॥
 ततः फल्युं व्रजेद्वाजन् तीर्थसेवी नराधिप। अश्वमेधमवामोति सिद्धिं च महतीं व्रजेत्॥ ततो
 गच्छेत् राजेन्द्र धर्मप्रस्थं समाहितः। तत्र धर्मो महाराज नित्यमास्ते युधिष्ठिर॥ तत्र कूपोदकं
 कृत्वा तेन स्नातः शुचिस्तथा। पितृन्देवांस्तु सन्तर्प्य मुक्तपापो दिवं व्रजेत्॥ पतङ्गस्याश्रमस्तत्र
 महर्षेर्भावितात्मनः। तं प्रविश्याश्रमं श्रीमच्छ्रमशोकविनाशनम्॥ गवामयनयज्ञस्य फलं प्राप्नोति
 मानवः। धर्मं तत्राभिसंस्पृश्य वाजिमेधमवामुयात्॥ ततो गच्छेत् राजेन्द्र ब्रह्मस्थानमनुत्तमम्।
 तत्राभिगम्य राजेन्द्र ब्रह्माणं पुरुषर्षभ॥ राजसूयाश्वमेधाभ्यां फलं विन्दति मानवः। ततो
 राजशृङ्गं गच्छेत् तीर्थसेवी नराधिप॥ वनपर्व 84. 82-104. These verses are q. in the
 तीर्थचि. pp. 275-277 (except three), त्रिस्थलीसेतु pp. 321-323. It may be
 noted that the Padmapurāṇa, Ādikhaṇḍa, chap. 38 (verses 2-19) contains
 verbatim and in the same order the verses about Gayā in the Vanaparva 84.
 82-99 except that a word is changed here and there. There is hardly any
 doubt that one borrows from the other. Good grounds have been advanced
 by Mr. M. V. Vaidya in his paper 'Tīrthayātrā in the Āraṇyakaparvan and
 the Padmapurāṇa' in the Kane Festschrift pp. 530-537. Dr. S. K. Belvalkar
 in the volume of Indian and Eastern studies presented to Prof F. W. Thomas
 pp. 19-28 in his paper on 'Cosmographical episode in the Mahābhārata and
 the Padmapurāṇa' has shown that chapters 80-83 of the Vanaparva are taken
 over by the author of the Padmapurāṇa in chapters 10. 5 to chapter 39. 129.

from the manner in which tirthas in Gayā are named and described that the writer of Vanaparva (chap. 84. 82-103) meant to be exhaustive as regards the holy spots in Gayā or the legends about Gayā. This conclusion is very much strengthened by the fact that in the Anusāsanaparva three sacred spots in Gayā are mentioned which do not occur in Vanaparva 84. 82-103 viz. 'In Gayā a man becomes purified in Āsmapr̥stha (the same as Pretaśilā), on the hill Niravinda and of even a third brāhmaṇa murder in Krauñcapadī'.¹⁴⁷⁴ These three, Āsmapr̥stha, Niravinda and Krauñcapadī, are in addition to those sacred spots that are mentioned in Vanaparva 84. In Vāyu 109. 15 a hill Aravindaka is said to be a peak of the Śilāparvata and Nāradya (uttara 47. 83), Vāyu 108. 75 and Nāradya (uttara 46. 16) mention the hill Krauñcapada (Muṇḍa-pr̥stha was so called). Therefore it is clear that three important sites in the Gayāmāhātmya are mentioned by the Anusāsanaparva.

It was unfortunate that Dr. Barua confined his attention on the question of the antiquity of Gayā to merely three works viz. the Vanaparva chapters 84 and 95, the Agnipurāṇa chap. 114-116 and the Vāyupurāṇa chapters 105-112. He did not care to investigate all the other Purāṇas nor did it strike him that the explanation of three *padas* of Viṣṇu furnished by Aurnavābha probably referred to spots around Gayā alone. Other Purāṇas such as Padma (Ādikhaṇḍa 38. 2-21), Garuḍa I chapters 82-86, and the Nāradya (uttara chap. 44-47) contain much that concerns Gayā and all of them have many verses in common. The critical edition of the Mahābhārata (published by the B. O. R. I., Poona) reads 'sāvitrām padam' (chap. 82.81) for 'sāvitrīyāstu padam' of the Bombay edition. The reading of the critical edition is supported by numerous and ancient Mss. Further, the printed Padmapurāṇa (in Ādikhaṇḍa 38. 13) reads 'Sāvitrām padam' and thus lends support to the reading adopted in the critical edition. The words 'sāvitrām padam' may be taken to mean the foot-print of Viṣṇu (Savitr). Dr. Barua goes very much further than the facts warrant when he says that there is no reference in the Vanaparva to any structural erection or iconic suggestion. It is clear that there must have been an image of Dharma, since the Vanaparva speaks of

1474. अहमपृष्ठे गयायां च निरविन्दे च पर्वते । तृतीयां कौश्रपद्यां च ब्रह्महत्यां विदुष्यते ॥ अनुशासन 25. 42. नीलकण्ठ explains 'अहमपृष्ठे प्रेतशिलायां एकां ब्रह्महत्यां व्यपोह्य निरविन्दे सुखगन्धहीने द्वितीयां ब्रह्महत्यां निरस्य कौश्रपदीति सर्वेषां विष्णुपदा दीनामुपलक्षणं तेषु तृतीयां ब्रह्महत्यां सकृद्गतां गत एव विदुष्यते पूतो भवति'.

the pilgrim to Gayā having to touch Dharma (Dharmam tatṛābhi-saṁsprīya). Besides, there is a reference to the footprints of a cow with a calf and to 'Sāvitra pada'. All these would surely be things that have an 'iconic suggestion'. Moreover, Dr. Barua forgets for the moment that, according to the Chinese traveller Fa Hien who visited India between 399-413 A. D., the Gayā of the Hindu faith was 'all emptiness and desolation' (vide Legge's translation p. 87). It is possible that Gayā might have suffered from earthquakes before 400 A. D. (as it is a region that is liable to severe earthquakes even in modern times) and therefore no structural erection of the ancient city of Gayā (to which ancient Pāli works and the Lalitavistara p. 311 refer) might have been left in Fa Hien's day. Gayā appears to have passed through several vicissitudes. Some centuries before the Christian era it was in existence and was a flourishing town. By 400 A. D. it had been reduced to desolation. But in the 7th century the Chinese traveller Hiouen Tshang notes that the Hindu Gayā was a town with 1000 brāhmaṇa families (vide Beal's B. R. W. W. vol. II p. 113). Later on when Buddhism waned and vanished, Gayā came to comprehend even Buddhist remnants, since the Vāyupurāṇa speaks of Gayā as extending from Pretaśilā to Mahābodhi tree (a distance of about 13 miles, according to Mitra p. 19).

Dr. Barua has also misunderstood verse 12 of the inscription at Gayā edited by Dr. Kielhorn in I. A. vol. 16 p. 63 ff. The verse¹⁴⁷⁵ set out below may be translated as follows: That wise (prince Yakṣapāla) caused to be constructed a temple for the images of Maunāditya and the other gods (mentioned in it), he dug up the famous Uttaramānasa lake and established a sattra (charity house for food) near the Akṣaya (vata). This inscription of the reign of Nayapāla was

1475. मौनादित्यसहस्रलिङ्गकमलार्धाङ्गीणनारायणद्विसोमेश्वरफल्गुनाथविजयादित्याह-
यानां कृती । स प्रासादमचीकरद् दिविषदां केदारदेवस्य च ख्यातस्योत्तरमानसस्य
खननं सत्रं तथा चाक्षये ॥ verse 12 of the inscription of prince (Narendra)
यक्षपाल son of विश्वादित्य edited in I. A. 16 at p. 65. Kielhorn translated 'this
wise (prince) caused to be built a temple of the inhabitants of heaven
called Maunaditya...He likewise had the famous Uttaramānasa tank dug and
established a sattra (hall of charity) to last forever', Dr. Kielhorn is
wrong in his translation 'to last forever.' Dr. Barua read सप्रासादं as one
word and connects that one word with दिविषदां (vol. I. p. 62n). One fails
to understand how दिविषदां (genitive plural) is to be construed with सप्रासादं
which according to Dr. Barua's construction is only part of a compound
word.

engraved about 1040 A.D. Dr. Barua thought that Uttaramānasa was dug up at that time and therefore Uttaramānasa tank is taken to be not older than 1040 A. D. and that it and many of the sacred spots must have been later and the Gayāmāhātmya which speaks of Uttarmānasa must be much later than the 11th century A. D. But Dr. Barua is entirely mistaken in this. If a tank was dug up for the first time at the time of the inscription, it is impossible that it should have been called 'khyāta' (famous). The tank can become famous some centuries after it was dug. Uttarmānasa tank is mentioned as a sacred spot in Vāyupurāṇa 77. 108 (which verse is quoted about 1110 A. D. in the Kalpataru on tīrtha at p. 168), Vāyu 82. 21, Agni 115. 10. Therefore Uttaramānasa tank was well known at least in the 8th or 9th century A. D. What the inscription means is either that the famous tank had silted up and so it was dug up or that it was made longer, broader and deeper in about 1040. That is all.

In my opinion the Gayāmāhātmya (Vāyu, chap. 105-112), though possibly later than the main text of the Vāyupurāṇa, cannot be placed so late as the 13th or 14th century A. D. It is really a patch-work from many sources of earlier times such as the Vanaparva, Anuśāsanaparva, Padma I. 38, the Nāradiya (uttara) chap. 44-47. Several verses and half verses of it are repetitions (such as the half verse 'Gayāyām akṣayam śrāddham japahomatapāmsi ca' Vāyu 108. 35 and Vāyu 82.43 quoted as from Vāyu in Kalpataru on tīrtha p. 167, and Vāyu 110. 29-30 are the same as Vāyu 105.37-38. So also Vāyu 82. 31-33 are the same as Vāyu 110. 51-53. Dr. Barua does not notice that in chap. 82 of the Vāyu (20-24) several sub-tīrthas of Gayā are expressly mentioned viz. Brahmakunḍa, Prabhāsa, Pretaparvata, Uttaramānasa, Udici, Kanakhala, Dakṣiṇamānasa, Dharmāranya, Gadādhara, Maṭaṅga; so also chap. 77. 97-108 mention Grdhrakūṭa, hermitage of Bharata, Maṭaṅgapada, Muṇḍa-prṣṭha and Uttaramānasa. Many of the verses occurring in the Gayāmāhātmya are found quoted in the Smṛticandrikā 1476

1476. Vide H. of Dh. vol. 1. p. 346 for the date of the Smṛticandrikā.

The verses ब्रह्मज्ञानं...चतुर्विधा (vide note 1484) and ब्रह्महत्या...द्विनिश्चयति (वायु. 105.13) are नारदीय (उत्तर) chap. 44. 20 and 22; Vāyu 110. 63-64 are equal to नारदीय, उत्तर, 45. 64-66; Vāyu 110. 63-64 are the same as Nāradiya (uttara) 45.64-66; Vāyu 108.13-16 are the same as नारदीय (उत्तर) 45. 2-4. Vāyu 110. 4-5 are the same as Vanaparva 82.9-10. गरुडपुराण I,

(Continued on the next page)

(about 1150-1225 A. D.) on Srāddha and Āsauca (without name) as briefly exemplified below. I think that the Gayāmāhātmya is to be assigned to some date between the 7th and 10th centuries A. D.

Having disposed of the question of the date of the Gayāmāhātmya and the references to the sacred spots in Gayā in Vanaparva chap. 84, it is necessary to see how Gayā is spoken of in the other parts of the Mahābhārata and the smṛtis. In the Vanaparva itself references to Gayā occur in chap. 87 and chap. 95. Vanaparva, chap. 87, starts by saying that going towards the east (from Kāmyaka-vana where the Pāṇdavas dwelt for some time) the pilgrim would come to the Naimiṣa forest and the Gomatī river. Thus it is said that in the east there is a holy hill called after Gaya and a holy pool called Brahmasaras; then comes a famous verse¹⁴⁷⁷ 'one should desire to have many sons if even

(Continued from the last page)

85. 2-22) contains most of the verses of Vāyu 110. 34-60. The notes below in this Gayā section will show that the Nāradiya and the Gayāmāhātmya contain scores of verses in common.

The स्मृतिचन्द्रिका (University of Mysore edition) on आशौच has towards the end a section on गयाश्राद्धविधि, several verses of which occur in वायु. A few verses are cited by way of illustration. The first two verses (स्मृतिच. p. 194) though ascribed to आदिपुराण are almost the same as वायु 110. 2-3 ; the verses गोप्रचार...बभूव (in स्मृतिच. on आशौच p. 199) are almost the same as वायु. 111. 35 and 37 ; स्मृतिच. p. 197 the verse मकरे वर्तमाने तु is the same as वायु 105.48 and स्मृतिच. p. 199 the verse या सा वैतरणी नाम is वायु 105. 44.

The Tirtha-cintāmaṇi of Vācaspati quotes many verses from the Gayāmāhātmya of the Vāyupurāṇa. Vācaspati's literary activity lies between 1450 to 1480 (or 1500 AD at the latest). He treats the Gayāmāhātmya as on the same level as the other purāṇas. This position could not have been attained by the Gayāmāhātmya in a century or two. Therefore it must be much earlier than 1300 AD. A few examples of the citations of the Gayāmāhātmya by Vacaspati may be indicated here. On pp. 285-286 the तीर्थचि. expressly quotes from the वायव्य verses 18, 19, 26 of वायु. 105; वायु. 110. 2-3 are quoted as from वायु. in तीर्थचि. p. 7 ; on pp. 280-283 numerous verses are quoted from वायुपुराण which are (with slight variations) the same as वायुपुराण 108. 13-23, 28-30 ; on pp. 284-285 from वायुपुराण are cited वायु. 110. 9-15 and 19-20, 56-59 ; तीर्थचि. pp. 288-293 quote from the वायुपुराण 110. 17, 21-24, 30-32, 34-55 ; तीर्थचि. pp. 298-301 quote वायु. 111. 1-22 (with additions and variant readings) ; similarly the पृथ्वीचन्द्रोदय on श्राद्ध and त्रिस्थलीसेतु quote about 300 verses from गयामाहात्म्य and the त्रिस्थली. (pp. 356-359 &c.) several times refers to the explanations of verses from गयामाहात्म्य given by his predecessors. But space does not allow me to go into this subject at greater length.

1477. एष्टव्या बहवः पुत्रा यद्येकोपि गयां व्रजेत् । यजेत वाश्वमेधेन नीलं वस्त्रं
वृषमुत्सृजेत् ॥ महानदी च तत्रैव तथा गयशिरो हृत् । यत्रासौ कीर्त्यते विप्रैरक्षय्यकरणो वदः ॥

(Continued on the next page)



one (of whom) goes to Gayā, or performs the Aśvamedha sacrifice or lets loose a *nīla* bull' (the pitṛs may be gratified). Then Vanaparva chap. 87 goes on to refer to the holy river (mahā-nadī) Phalgu, the hill Gayāśīras, the Akṣayya Vata, where food offered to pitṛs becomes inexhaustible. In Vanaparva 95 mention is made of Brahmasaras (where Agastya went to Dharmarāja i. e. Yama, verse 12), of Akṣayavata (v. 14) which is an imperishable place of worship and where the fruit (of offerings made) is inexhaustible; it further states that king Gaya, son of Amūrtarayas, ^{1477a} performed a sacrifice in which food and fees in plenty were distributed (verses 18-19). Vas. (XI. 42) states: when a man goes to Gayā and offers food his ancestors become delighted like agriculturists that rejoice when there is good rain and pitṛs become (really) *putrin* (having a son) on account of such a son. The Viṣṇudharmasūtra, chapter 85, ¹⁴⁷⁸ mentions by name about 55 holy places that are most proper for śrāddha among which those connected with Gayā are Gayāśīrṣa, Akṣayavata, Phalgu, Uttaramānasa, Maṅgavāpī, Viṣṇupada, and winds up by quoting three verses as *gāthās* sung by pitṛs. Yāj. I. 261 states that whatever a man gives while in Gayā leads to inexhaustible rewards. Atri-smṛti (55-58) refers to a son's going to Gayā for the benefit of the pitṛs, to a bath in Phalgu and *tarpana* of pitṛs in the river, to seeing Gadādhara (Viṣṇu) at Gayā and to Gayāśīrṣa. Śaṅkha (14. 27-28) refers ¹⁴⁷⁹ to several tīrthas (one being Gayā) the offerings made at which

(Continued from the last page)

यत्र दत्तं पितृभ्योऽन्नमक्षयं भवति प्रभो । सा च पुण्यजला तत्र फलश्रुता महा नदी ॥ वनपर्व 87. 10-12; राजर्षिणा पुण्यकृता गयेनानुपमद्युते । नगो गयशिरो यत्र पुण्या चैव महानदी... ऋषियज्ञेन महता यत्राक्षयवटो महान् । अक्षये देवयजने अक्षयं यत्र वै फलम् ॥ वनपर्व 95. 9-14. The verse एष्टव्या० occurs in numerous works such as the विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 85 (last verse), the मत्स्य. 22. 6, वायु. 105. 10, कूर्म. II. 35. 12, पद्म. I. 38. 17 and V. 11. 68, नारदीय (उत्तर 44. 5-6).

1477 a. It is to be noted that the Rāmāyaṇa I. 32.7 states that Dharmāranya was founded by Asūrtarayas (probably a variant of Amūrtarayas), a son of Kuśa, son of Brahmā.

1478. कुलेऽस्माकं स जन्तुः स्याद् यो न दद्याज्जलाञ्जलीन् । नदीषु बहुतोयासु शीतलासु विशेषतः ॥ अपि जायेत सोऽस्माकं कुले कश्चिन्नरोत्तमः । गयाशीर्षे वदे श्राद्धं यो नः कुर्यात् समाहितः ॥ एष्टव्या... त्सुजेत् ॥ विष्णुधर्मसूत्र 85. 65-67. The verse अपि जायेत is quoted in कल्पतरु on तीर्थ p. 173.

1479. It is somewhat strange that Dr. Barua (in 'Gayā and Buddh gayā' vol. I p. 66) read तीर्थे वामरकण्डके in Śaṅkha and thought that Vāmara kaṇṭaka was a holy place (instead separating as वा अमरकण्डके).



become inexhaustible. The Likhita-Smṛti speaks¹⁴⁸⁰ of the importance of Gayā as follows: In whosoever name a piṇḍa is offered at Gayāśiras, whether for oneself or for another, that person, if in hell, goes to heaven and if in heaven that man secures release (from *samsāra*). The Kūmapurāṇa remarks that one should desire to have many sons so that if one out of them goes to Gayā on some other business and offers śrāddha, he thereby saves his piṭṛs and himself reaches the highest goal. The Matsyapurāṇa (22. 4-6) quoted by the Kalpataru (on tīrtha p. 163) speaks of Gayā as piṭṛtīrtha and as the best among tīrthas where Brahmā himself dwells and also has the verse 'eṣṭavyā bahavaḥ putrāḥ'.

In the Gayāmāhātmya (Vāyupurāṇa, chapters 105-112) there are about 560 verses. An attempt will be made here to give a brief summary of it and some of the important verses will be quoted. Chapter 105 is general and briefly indicates some of the main topics dealt with in the following chapters. It states that in Śvetavārāhakalpa Gaya performed a sacrifice and Gayā was named after him¹⁴⁸¹, that piṭṛs hanker after sons because the son that goes to Gayā saves the piṭṛs from hell¹⁴⁸². At Gayā a man should offer piṇḍas to his father and others and even to himself but without sesame; all the five mortal sins like brāhmaṇa-murder are removed by the performance of śrāddha at Gayā. A piṇḍa offered after uttering the name and gotra of the recipient by the son or any other person in Gayā leads that person to the imperishable *brahma*¹⁴⁸³. Mokṣa is fourfold (i. e. results in four ways) viz. by knowledge of *brahma*, śrāddha at Gayā, death in (a fight for preventing) the seizure of cows and residence in Kurukṣetra and śrāddha at

1480. गयाशिरि तु यत्किञ्चिन्नाम्ना पिण्डं तु निर्वपेत् । नरकस्था दिवं यान्ति स्वर्गस्था मोक्षमाप्नुयुः ॥ आत्मनो वा परस्यापि गयाकूपे यतस्ततः । यन्नाम्ना पातयेत्पिण्डं तं नयेद् ब्रह्म शाश्वतम् ॥ लिखितस्मृति verses 12-13; compare अग्नि 115. 46-47 शमीपत्र-प्रमाणेन पिण्डं दत्त्वा गयाशिरि । नरकस्थाः...माप्नुयुः ॥.

1481. वायु. 105. 7-8, अग्नि. 114. 41 'गयोपि चाकरोद्यागं बह्वन्नं बहुदक्षिणम् । गयापुरी तेन नाम्ना'. Both are quoted by त्रिस्थली° pp. 340-341.

1482. Here occurs the well-known verse एष्टव्या बहवः पुत्राः (वायु. 105.10) q. in n. 1477. A verse is quoted by the त्रिस्थली° p. 319 which defines what makes a son worthy of being so called: 'जीवतो वाक्यकरणात् ... त्रिभिः पुत्रस्य पुत्रता ॥' (quoted above in note 832).

1483. आत्मजन्यजो वापि गयाभूमौ यदा यदा । यन्नाम्ना पातयेत्पिण्डं तन्नयेद् ब्रह्म शाश्वतम् । नामगोत्रेऽसमुच्चार्य पिण्डपातनमिष्यते । वायु. 105.14-15; the half verse यन्नाम्ना पातयेत्पिण्डं तन्नयेद् ब्रह्म शाश्वतम् is अग्नि 116.29.



Gayā renders the others unnecessary¹⁴⁸⁴. Śrāddha may be performed at Gayā at all times, even in an intercalary month, on the anniversary of one's birthday, or even when Jupiter and Venus are invisible or when Jupiter is in Leo. One should honour the brāhmaṇas (of Gayā) that were established there by Brahmā; when they are gratified all deities together with the pitrs are gratified. Tonsure¹⁴⁸⁵ and fast are to be observed at all tīrthas except in Kurukṣetra, Viśālā, Virajā and Gayā. An ascetic¹⁴⁸⁶ (sannyāsin) should not offer pīṇḍas (at Gayā) but should merely exhibit (hold up) his staff and should put it down on Viṣṇupada. The (whole) Gayākṣetra is five krośas in extent and Gayāśiras is one krośa and all the tīrthas of the three worlds are centered in these two¹⁴⁸⁷. At Gayā one may offer (to pitrs) pīṇḍas by means of *pāyasa* (rice cooked in milk), boiled rice, barley flour, fruits and roots, the cake of sesame (after oil is extracted), sweetmeats or jag-gery with ghee or with curds alone or with invigorating honey. In a śrāddha at Gayā, the procedure consists in preparing¹⁴⁸⁸ a seat for the pīṇḍas, the offering of pīṇḍas, the sprinkling of water again (on the kuśa grass), giving fees and declaration of dinner (to brāhmaṇas); but there is no invocation of pitrs, no curtains for privacy and no blemish due to śrāddha being seen (by undesirable persons or animals). Those who desire to reap the full fruit of śrāddha performed at a tīrtha (like Gayā) must give up passionate longings, anger and

1484. ब्रह्मज्ञानं गयाश्राद्धं गोयहे मरणं तथा । वासः पुंसां कुरुक्षेत्रे मुक्तिरेषा चतुर्विधा ॥ ब्रह्मज्ञानेन किं कार्यं ... यदि पुत्रो गयां व्रजेत् ॥ गयायां सर्वकालेषु पिण्डं दद्याद्विचक्षणः । वायु. 105. 16-18; compare न कालादि गयातीर्थे दद्यात्पिण्डांश्च नित्यशः । अग्नि. 115. 8. ब्रह्मज्ञानं...चतुर्विधा ॥—is also नारदीय (उत्तर) 44.20. Both occur in अग्नि. 115. 3-4 and 5-6 (in reverse order) and the verse ब्रह्मज्ञानं occurs in वामनपुराण 33. 8.

1485. मुण्डनं चोपवासश्च ... विरजां गयाम् ॥ वायु. 105.25, q. in n. 1301 above where various readings also are noted.

1486. दण्डं प्रदर्शयेद्भिर्भुग्यां गत्वा न पिण्डदः । दण्डं न्यस्य विष्णुपदे पितृभिः सह मुच्यते ॥ वायु. 105. 26 and नारदीय II. 45. 31 q. by ती. प्र. p. 390.

1487. पञ्चक्रोशं गयाक्षेत्रं क्रोशमेकं गयाशिरः । तन्मध्ये सर्वतीर्थानि त्रैलोक्ये यानि सन्ति वै । 105.29-30 and 106. 65 q. by त्रिस्थली० p. 335, ती. प्र. p. 391; अग्नि. 115. 42 has the half verse पञ्चक्रोशं० and also नारदीय (उत्तर) 44.16. It had become the fashion to speak of famous tīrthas as five krośas in extent.

1488. पिण्डासनं पिण्डदानं पुनः प्रत्यवनेजनम् । दक्षिणा चाक्षसङ्कल्पस्तीर्थाद्विष्णुविधिः ॥ नावाहनं न दिग्बन्धो न दोषो दृष्टिसम्भवः ।...अन्यत्रावाहिताः काले पितरो भान्त्यमुं प्रति । तीर्थे सदा वसन्त्येते तस्मादावाहनं न हि ॥ 105. 37-39. The verses दृष्टिसम्भवः, पिण्डासनं...विधिः are repeated in वायु. 110. 28-29,

gave her in marriage to Marīci, who took her to his hermitage and had one hundred sons from her. Once Marīci being tired lay down for sleep and asked Dharmavratā to shampoo his feet. While she shampooed his feet Brahmā (her father-in-law) came there. She left off shampooing her husband's feet and got up to receive with honour her husband's father. In the meanwhile Marīci awoke and not seeing his wife cursed her to be a śilā (stone slab) as she disobeyed his order by giving up the shampooing of his feet. She being innocent of any fault got angry and was about to curse Marīci but said 'Mahādeva will curse you'. She, standing in the midst of Gārhapatya fire, performed *tapas* and Marīci also did the same. The gods led by Indra got anxious as usual and went to Viṣṇu who asked her to choose a boon. She prayed that the curse pronounced by her husband be annulled. The gods said that Marīci being a great sage the curse could not be annulled and asked her to choose some other boon. She said that she should be a śilā more holy than all rivers, sages and gods and that all tīrthas should stand in the slab of stone, that those who would bathe in the tīrthas on the śilā and offer piṇḍas and śrāddha should be able to go to *brahmaloka*, that all holy rivers like the Ganges should always remain in her. The gods conceded what she prayed for and said that when she would become stable on the head of Gayāsura, they would all stand on the śilā.

Chap. 108 presents numerous divergences in the Mss. In the Ānandāśrama edition its contents briefly are: The śilā was placed on the head of Gayāsura and therefore there was union of two very holy objects, on which Brahmā performed Aśvamedha and when the gods came to receive their share of the sacrificial offerings the śilā said to Viṣṇu and others 'promise that you would remain on the śilā and would bring about the release of pitrs'. The gods agreed and they stayed on the śilā in the form of images and foot-prints. As the śilā was placed on the back of the head of the asura the hill was called Muṇḍapṛsthā (lit. the back of the head) which gave Brahmāloka to pitrs. Then the chapter speaks of a hill called Prabhāsa, of Rāmatīrtha near the place where the great river (Phalgu) and Prabhāsa hill meet, the hermitage of Bharata, of Maṭaṅgapada, of the *bali* to be offered to Yamarāja and Dharma rāja and to the dogs of Yama, viz. Śyāma and Śabala, of the Udyantaka hill near the left of Śilā, of Agastya-kuṇḍa, and numerous other holy places such as Grdhrakūṭa hill, the her-

mitage of Cyavana, the river Punaḥpunā, Krauñca-pada, Janārdana on Bhasmakūṭa.

The story of Gayāsura has puzzled Mitra and subsequent writers. Mitra holds that nothing appears more absurd or stupid than the story of Gayāsura who, he emphasizes, is not a demon or a vicious monster, but a devout Vaiṣṇava ('Bodh-Gaya' pp. 15-16). The story of Gayāsura is not unique. The Purāṇas abound in stories that appear to modern minds absurd and puerile. Besides, there were several asuras like Prahlāda, Bāṇa (devotee of Śiva) and Bali (who was an exemplary and pious king and a worshipper of Viṣṇu) that were not monsters but good and devout persons, and yet fought with gods. For example, Kūrmapurāṇa (I. 16. 59-60 and 91-92) narrates that Prahlāda fought with Nṛsiṃha; the Padma (Bhūmikhaṇḍa 1.8) calls him a Mahābhāgavata but states that he first fought with Viṣṇu and entered Vaiṣṇavītanu; while Vāmanapurāṇa (chap. 7-8) speaks of his fight with Naranārāyaṇa. In Pali works (e. g. Aṅguttara-nikāya, part IV pp. 197-204) he is called Pahārāda and *asurinda* (asurendra). Vide Aṅguttara-nikāya (text) vol. IV p. 197. For Bali who was grandson of Prahlāda, a good king and a devotee of Viṣṇu, vide Brahma-purāṇa, chap. 73, Kūrma I. 17, Vāmana (chapters 77 and 92). For Bāṇa, son of Bali and the fight of Bāṇa helped by Śiva with Kṛṣṇa, vide Brahma chap. 205-206 and Viṣṇupurāṇa V. 33. 37-38.

According to Dr. Rajendralal Mitra (in 'Bodh-Gayā' pp. 14-18) the story of Gayāsura is an allegory of the vanquishing of Buddhism by Brahmanism. O' Malley thought (J. A. S. B. vol. LXXII part 3 p. 7 for 1904) that the Gayāsura legend represents an amalgamation or compromise of Brahmanism with the popular demonolatry which preceded Brahmanism. Dr. Barua criticizes both theories and appears to hold (vol. I. pp. 40-41) that the idea underlying the legend is to impress on people's minds the high sanctity of the Gayā range of hills along the western bank of the river Phalgu, that Gayā figures nowhere in Buddhism, that Gaya¹⁴⁹² or Namuci or Vṛtra is represented as a demon of darkness and as an enemy of Indra and that the Vedic word Trivikrama and the interpretation of Aurnavābha are the nucleus of the legend of Gayāsura. From considerations of space it is not possible to discuss these

1492. It is not clear whence Dr. Barua derived his information that in the Veda Gaya is represented as a demon like Vṛtra. In the Rgveda at least Gaya is not a demon like Vṛtra.



theories here. To my mind it appears that Gayā had become a famous *pitṛtīrtha* centuries before Christ and that the legend of Gayāsura is a *post facto* attempt to account for the sanctity of the place and the numerous shrines and holy places that had sprung up round Gayā.

Chap. 109 deals with the questions how Ādi-Gadādhara abided in manifest and unmanifest forms, how his *gadā* (mace) was produced and how the *tīrtha* called Gadālola became a destroyer of all sins. There was a powerful Asura called Gada, who, when Brahmā requested, gave up his bones to Brahmā. Viśvakarmā, at the desire of Brahmā, fashioned a wonderful mace out of the bones. In the times of Svāyambhuva Manu an Asura named Heti, son of Brahmā, performed severe austerities for thousands of divine years. He secured from Brahmā and other gods the boon that he could not be killed by gods, *daityas*, men or with such weapons as the discus of Kṛṣṇa and others. Heti conquered the gods and became Indra. The gods went to Hari and requested him to kill Heti. He asked for a powerful weapon and the gods gave him the mace manufactured from the bones of Gada and Viṣṇu killed Heti with the Gadā. This story about demon Heti is mentioned in Agni 114. 26-27 and Nāradiya (uttara) 47. 9-11. Hari is called Ādi-Gadādhara because^{1492a} he was the first to wield that mace and stood on the *śilā* on the head of Gayāsura, supported by the Gadā, in order to make (the head of Gayāsura) stable. He shows himself in the form of hills viz. the Muṇḍapṛṣṭha hill, the Prabhāsa and other hills. These and Aksayavata, Phalgu and other rivers are the non-manifest forms of Ādigadādhara. The Viṣṇupada, Rudrapada, Brahma-pada and other padas are the non-manifest and manifest forms of Gadādhara.¹⁴⁹³ The image of Gadādhara is purely a mani-

1492 a. Vide note 1490.

1493. The principal rivers, hills, padas are enumerated here in one place. Unless otherwise expressly mentioned the chapters and verses in this note refer to the वायुपुराण. The holy rivers are; फल्गु often called महानदी (अग्नि. 115, 25), घृतकुल्या, मधुकुल्या (these two, वायु 109. 17), मधुसूता (106. 75), अग्निधारा (from उद्यन्त hill, 108. 59), कापिला (108. 58), वैतरणी (105. 44 and 109. 17), देविका (112. 30), आकाशगङ्गा (अग्नि. 116. 5). Some of these are mere streams. The sacred hills and peaks are; गयाशिरः (109. 36, अग्नि. 115. 26 and 44), मुण्डपृष्ठ (108. 12, 109. 14), प्रभास (108. 13 and 16, 109. 14), उद्यन्त (वनपर्व 84. 93, वायु 108. 59, 109. 15), भस्मकूट (109. 15), अरविन्दक (109. 15), नागकूट (111. 22, अग्नि 115. 25), यष्टकूट (109. 15), प्रेतकूट (109. 15).

fest form. Asura Heti was killed by Viṣṇu and went to Viṣṇu-loka. When the body of Gayāsura was made stable Brahmā sang a hymn of praise to Viṣṇu who asked Brahmā to choose a boon. Brahmā said 'we (gods) shall not abide in the śilā without you, but shall remain therein together with you if you have a manifest form.'¹⁴⁹⁴ Viṣṇu said 'be it so' and Viṣṇu stood on Gayāśiras in the Ādigadādhara form and as Janārdana and Puṇḍarikākṣa. Śiva also praised Viṣṇu (Vāyu 109. 43-50). The Vāyu speaks at several places of 'vyaktāvyakta' symbols of the deity (chap. 109. 20 and 43-45). What is meant is Viṣṇu is non-manifest in Phalgu, vyaktāvyakta in Viṣṇupada and manifest in images and statues (vide Tristhalīsetu p. 365, prati-māsvarūpi vyaktaḥ).

Chap. 110 deals with Gayāyātrā. To the east of Gayā is a great river (Phalgu). (If it is dry) one should dig a pit for water and take a bath, should perform *tarpaṇa* and *śrāddha* according to one's own recension of the Veda, but without *arghya* (water for showing respect) and *āvāhana* (invoking). In the after-

(Continued from the last page)

आदिपाल (109. 15), कौश्रपाद (109. 16), रामशिला, प्रेतशिला (110. 15, 108. 67), नग (108. 28), ब्रह्मयोनि (नारदीय II. 47. 54). The principal bathing places are: फल्गुतीर्थ (111. 13, अग्नि. 115. 25-26 and 44), रामतीर्थ (108. 16-18), शिलातीर्थ (108. 2), गदालोल (111. 75-76, अग्नि. 115. 69), वैतरणी (105. 44), ब्रह्मसरः (वनपर्व 84. 85, वायु 111. 30), ब्रह्मकुण्ड, (110. 8), उत्तरमानस (111. 2 and 22), दक्षिणमानस (111. 6 and 8), रुक्मिणीकुण्ड, प्रेतकुण्ड, निःक्षारा (निःक्षीरा) पुष्करिणी (108. 84), मतङ्गवापी (111. 24). The sacred sites are: पञ्चलोक, सप्तलोक, वैकुण्ठ, लोहदण्डक (all four, in 109. 16), गोप्रचार (111. 35-37 where there were mango trees established by ब्रह्मा), धर्मारण्य (111. 23), ब्रह्मयूप (अग्नि. 115. 39 and वनपर्व 84. 86). The sacred trees are; अक्षयवट (वनपर्व 84. 83, 95. 14, वायु 105. 45, 111. 79-81, अग्नि 115. 70-73), आम्र near गोप्रचार (111. 35-37), गृध्रकूटवट (108. 63), महाबोधितरु (111. 26-27, अग्नि 115. 37). The verse about the mango tree is famous 'एको सुनिः कुम्भकुशाग्रहस्त आम्रस्य मूले सलिलं ददानः। आम्रश्च सिक्तः पितरश्च तृप्ता एका क्रिया द्वयार्थकरी प्रसिद्धा ॥' वायु. 111. 37, अग्नि. 115. 40, नारदीय (उत्तर) 46. 7, पद्म, सुष्टिखण्ड 11.77. There are several other तीर्थs, such as फल्गुवीश, फल्गुचण्डी, अङ्गारकेश्वर (all in अग्नि. 116. 29) which are not mentioned here.

The पद (stone slabs with foot prints thereon) are: वायु. 111. 46-58 mention 16 by name and refer to others generally. अग्नि. 115. 48-53 mentions at least 13. The पदs mentioned by वायु: are विष्णु, रुद्र, ब्रह्मा, कश्यप, दक्षिणाग्नि, गार्हपत्य, आहवनीय, सभ्य, आवसथ्य, शक्र, अगस्त्य, कौश्र, मातङ्ग, सूर्य, कार्तिकेय and गणेश. वायु. 111. 56 states that four out of these are most eminent viz of कश्यप, विष्णु, रुद्र and ब्रह्मा. नारदीय (उत्तर) 46. 27 states that विष्णुपद and रुद्रपद are superior, but ब्रह्मपद is superior to all.

1494. Verses 2-3 and 4-5 of Vāyu 110 are quoted above in notes 1205 and 1264 respectively.



noon the pilgrim should go to the Pretasīlā, take a bath in the Brahmakuṇḍa, offer tarpaṇa to the gods and perform śrāddha of his sapīṇḍas on the Pretasīlā with the mantras set out in Vāyu (110.10-12) and offer piṇḍas to his ancestors. In Aṣṭakās, in Vṛddhiśrāddha, at Gayā and on the anniversary of death, one may offer a śrāddha separately to one's mother but on all other occasions with her husband.¹⁴⁹⁵ To the sapīṇḍas other than one's paternal ancestors he should offer śrāddha to the south (of the place where he offers to his father &c.) viz. should spread kuśas and once offer water mixed with sesame and should offer them a piṇḍa made of barley flour and repeat the mantras (Vāyu 110. 21-22). The piṇḍas to be offered at Gayāsīras may be in size as¹⁴⁹⁶ big as one's closed hand, or an undried āmalaka (myrobalan) fruit or of the size of śamī leaves. By means of these he saves seven gotras viz. that of his father, of his mother, of his wife, sister, daughter, paternal aunt and maternal aunt. Water mixed with sesame and piṇḍas are offered to all persons on the maternal grandfather's side, to all bandhus, to all infants, to persons cremated or not cremated, to persons that were killed by lightning or robbers or that committed suicide in various ways and to those who may be undergoing torments of Hells of various kinds and those who have become beasts or birds or insects or trees owing to evil deeds (Vāyu 110, verses 30-55). The verses of most comprehensive character about offering water have been cited in n. 1237 p. 550 and on pp. 616-617 above.

Chap. 111 deals with the order in which the several tīrthas are to be visited. The full pilgrimage lasts for seven days. In chap. 110 it has been stated as shown above that on entering Gayā, a pilgrim takes a bath in the Phalgu water, performs tarpaṇa and śrāddha, then on the same day he goes to the Pretasīlā (which is a part of the Śīlā as stated in Vāyu 108. 15) and performs a śrāddha there and offers piṇḍas with boiled rice and ghee (Vāyu 110.15). On doing

1495. अष्टकासु च वृद्धौ च गयायां च मृतेहनि । मातुः श्राद्धं पृथक् कुर्यादन्यत्र पतिना सह ॥ वायु. ॥ 110. 17 q. in. तीर्थप्र. p. 389 (reads अन्वष्टकासु), तीर्थचि. p. 298.

1496. मुष्टिमात्रप्रमाणं च आर्द्रामलकमात्रकम् । शमीपत्रप्रमाणं वा पिण्डं दद्याद्दयाशिरि ॥ उद्धरेत्सप्त गोत्राणि कुलानि शतमुद्धरेत् ॥ पितुर्मातुः स्वभार्याया भगिन्या दुहितुस्तथा । पितृष्वसुर्मातृष्वसुः सप्त गोत्राः प्रकीर्तिताः ॥ वायु. 110. 25-26. The त्रिस्थली explains 'अत्र मातृगोत्रं मातामहगोत्रम् । भार्यागोत्रं श्वशुरगोत्रम् । भगिनीदुहितृपितृपितृमातृस्वसृणां गोत्राणि यत्कुले ता दत्तास्तदीयानि । एतेषामेव गोत्राणामेकोत्तरं शतं कुर्यात् । लक्षणया तत्स्थाः पुरुषाः ॥'

this the persons for whom this is done become free from the position of *preta*. It is stated (in Vāyu 108. 17-22) that one should bathe in the Rāmatīrtha which is near the place where Phalgu meets the Prabhāsa hill. By bath in Rāmatīrtha and offering of śrāddha and piṇḍa there the persons for whom this is done become *pitrs* (being already free from *pretatva* by the śrāddha on *pretaśilā*). On a hill on the south of *Pretaśilā* one should offer a *bali* (food offered with kuśa, sesame and water) to Yamarāja and Dharmarāja and to the two dogs Śyāma and Sabala. On the next day after entering Gayā (i. e. the 2nd day), the pilgrim should proceed to the Pretapārvata¹⁴⁹⁷ (Vāyu 110.8) and take a bath in the Brahmakuṇḍa and perform tarpaṇa, śrāddha and giving of piṇḍas mixed with sesame, ghee, curds and honey to his ancestors (father, grandfather &c.) with the mantras 'pitā pitāmahaścaiva' (Vāyu 110. 23-24). Then the pilgrim should offer on kuśas, water, sesame and piṇḍas to persons related in various ways with the mantras 'asmat-kule mṛtā ye ca &c., (Vāyu 110. 34-55). He should then invoke the gods to be witnesses to the fact of his having come to Gayā and become free from the debt to the ancestors (Vāyu 110. 59-60). It is stated in Vāyu 110.61 that at all sacred spots in Gayā the offering of piṇḍas should be done in the same way as at Pretapārvata¹⁴⁹⁸.

On the third day of entering Gaya one has to perform Pañcatīrthī rites¹⁴⁹⁹ (Vāyu 111. 1 ff.). The pilgrim first bathes in Uttaramānasa, offers tarpaṇa to gods, gives water and śrāddha and piṇḍas to his ancestors with the mantras (Vāyu 110. 21-24). The fruit of this rite is the inexhaustible gratification of the *pitrs*. Then the pilgrim goes to the three tīrthas which constitute Dakṣinamānasa, viz. Udicitīrtha (on the north), Kanakhala (in the middle) and Dakṣinamānasa

1497. On प्रेतपर्वत and ब्रह्मकुण्ड, the त्रिस्थली० p. 355 remarks 'प्रेतपर्वतो गयात्रायव्यादिशि गयातो गन्व्यूत्यधिकदूरस्थः। ब्रह्मकुण्डे प्रेतपर्वतमूल ईशानभागे।'.

1498. सर्वस्थानेषु चैवं स्यात्पिण्डदानं तु नारद। प्रेतपर्वतमारभ्य कुर्यात्तीर्थेषु च क्रमात् ॥ वायु. 110. 61.

1499. The five तीर्थs are उत्तरमानस, उदीचीतीर्थ, कनखल, दक्षिणमानस and कल्यु. The त्रिस्थली० says (p. 360) that one has not to take a bath in each of these i. e. there are not five baths on this day. Phalgutīrtha is the same as Gayāśiras and is defined in वायु 111. 22 'नागकूटादधकूटाद्युपादुत्तरमानसात्

एतद्वयाशिरः प्रोक्तं फल्युतीर्थं तदुच्यते ॥. The अग्निपु. (115. 25-26) differs 'सागं जनार्दनकूपाद्वद्वोत्तरमानसात्। एत ... च्यते ॥. गरुड. I. 83. 4 is 'नागाज्जना तदुच्यते ॥. The त्रिस्थली० p. 359 reads मुण्डपृष्ठाक्षगाधस्तात्फल्युतीर्थमनुत्तमम्

(on the south). At each of these three there is a śrāddha. Then the pilgrim goes to the Phalgutīrtha, which is the best of all (Gayā) tīrthas. The pilgrim performs tarpaṇa and śrāddha with piṇḍas on Phalgu. This śrāddha at Phalgu results in *mukti* for the performer and also for those for whose benefit it is performed (*muktir-bhavati kartṛṇām pitṛṇām śrāddhataḥ sadā*, Vāyu 110. 13). It is stated that Phalgu is Ādi-Gadādhara himself in a fluid form.¹⁵⁰⁰ By bath in Phalgu and seeing Gadādhara a man saves himself, ten ancestors and ten descendants. Then he worships Gadādhara by a bath with *pañcāmṛta* after bowing^{1500a} to Vāsudeva, Saṅkaraṣaṇa, Pradyumna, Aniruddha, Viṣṇu, Śrīdhara. On the 2nd day of the Pañcatīrthī rites (i. e. 4th day from entering Gayā) the pilgrim should repair to Dharmāranya which is so-called because Dharma performed a sacrifice there. Then the pilgrim should bathe in the Mataṅgavāpī (which is situated in Dharmāranya), then he should perform *tarpaṇa*, śrāddha and *piṇḍadāna* at the well called Brahmatīrtha and also in the space between Brahma-tīrtha and Brahmayūpa; then bow to Brahmā and Dharm-eśvara.¹⁵⁰¹ He should bow to the Mahābodhi tree (i. e. the sacred *pippala*) and perform śrāddha also underneath it. Agni 115. 34-37 and Nāradiya (uttara) 45. 104 refer to these tīrthas. On the third day of the Pañcatīrthī rites (i. e. on 5th day from entering Gayā) the pilgrim should bathe in Brahmasaras and perform śrāddha with piṇḍas between the Brahmakūpa and the Yūpa (sacrificial post) raised by Brahmā when he performed a sacrifice. By this śrāddha the pilgrim saves his pitṛs.¹⁵⁰² He should go round the Brahma-yūpa and bow

1500. गङ्गापादोदकं विष्णोः फल्गुर्ह्यादिगदाधरः। स्वयं हि द्रवरूपेण तस्माद्गङ्गाधिकं विदुः ॥ वायु. 111. 16.

1500 a. Pañcāmṛta consists of milk, curds, clarified butter, honey and sugar. With these the image of Gadādhara is to be bathed. Vide नारद (उत्तर) 43. 53 'पञ्चामृतेन च स्नानमर्चायां तु विशिष्यते.'

1501. Dr. Barua (in 'Gayā and Buddha-Gayā' vol. I. p. 22 note) holds that Dharma and Dharm-eśvara refer to Buddha, while O'Malley (in J. A. S. B. vol. LXXII for 1904 part 3, p. 5) takes Dharma to mean Yama. I am inclined to agree with O'Malley. Padma, Sṛṣṭikhaṇḍa 11. 73, states that there are three aranyas for piṇḍadāna viz. Puṣkarāranya, Naimiṣāranya and Dharmāranya,

1502. It may be noted that the three verses (Vāyu 111. 27-29) addressed to महाबोधितरु do not occur in त्रिस्थली० p. 361, which gives two other verses instead viz. चलद्दलाय वृक्षाय सर्वदा चलविष्णवे। बोधितस्त्वाय यज्ञाय अर्घ्याय नमो नमः ॥ एकादशोसि रुद्राणां वसूनामष्टमस्तथा। नारायणोसि देवानां वृक्षराजोसि पितॄणां ॥ The त्रिस्थली० remarks that in some mss. even these two are not to be found.



to Brahmā. There are mango trees near Gopracāra established by Brahmā. By watering a mango with water from the Brahmasaras the pitṛs attain *mokṣa*. Here follows the verse ('eko muniḥ' &c.) quoted above (n. 1493). Then a *bali* should be offered to Yama and Dharmarāja, then to the two dogs of Yama, then he should offer a *bali* to crows and then bathe (in Brahmasaras). This is briefly a summary of Vāyu 111. 30-40. Some of these details are mentioned by Agni 115. 34-40 and Nāradya (uttara) 46. Then on the 4th day of the Pañcatīrthī rites (i. e. 6th day from entrance into Gayā) the pilgrim should take an ordinary bath in the Phalgu and should then perform śrāddhas at the several *padas* on Gayāśiras which is near Phalgutīrtha. Gayāśiras extends from Krauñcapāda up to Phalgutīrtha. Śrāddha offered here (on Gayāśiras) becomes inexhaustible.¹⁵⁰³ Here Ādi-Gadādhara abides in the form of Viṣṇupada. By performing a śrāddha with piṇḍas on Viṣṇupada (which is a footprint on a slab deemed to be of Viṣṇu) the pilgrim saves one thousand families and takes them and himself to the blissful, inexhaustible and never-ending world of Viṣṇu. Then Vāyu 111. 47-56 deal with the rewards of śrāddhas performed at Rudrapada, Brahmapada and 14 other *padas* expressly named by it.¹⁵⁰⁴ 'For whomsoever by name a pilgrim offers a piṇḍa on Gayāśiras, that man, if in hell, goes to heaven and if in heaven he secures *mokṣa*.'

On the 5th day of the Pañcatīrthī rites (i. e. the 7th day from entering Gayā), the pilgrim should bathe in the sacred place called Gadālola.¹⁵⁰⁵ By performing śrāddha with piṇḍas at Gadālola he takes his pitṛs and himself to the world of Brahmā. Then at the Akṣayavata he should perform a śrāddha

1503. कौञ्चपादात्फल्गुतीर्थं यावत्साक्षादूयाशिरः। वायु. 111. 44. कौञ्चपाद is the hill मुण्डपृष्ठ as stated in वायु. 108. 75 'कौञ्चरूपेण हि मुनिर्मुण्डपृष्ठे तपोऽकरोत्। तस्य पादाङ्कितो यस्मात्कौञ्चपादस्ततः स्मृतः ॥'

1504. The त्रिस्थली° p. 366 remarks that there is no separate śrāddha on Gayāśiras apart from the śrāddhas on Viṣṇupada and the other *padas*. गयाशिरसि यः पिण्डान्येषां नाम्ना तु निर्वपेत्। नरकस्था दिवं यान्ति स्वर्गस्था मोक्षमामयुः॥ वायु. 111. 73. Agni. 115. 47 has the latter half. Gayāśiras is the centre of Gayā and the most holy spot in it.

1505. This tīrtha was so called because Ādi-Gadādhara washed his mace in the water there after smashing the head of demon Heti with it. हेत्यसुरस्य यच्छीर्षं गदया तद् द्विधा कुतम्। ततः प्रक्षालिता यस्मात्सर्वे तत्र विमुक्तये। गदालोलमिति ख्यातं सर्वेषामुत्तमोत्तमम्। वायु 111, 75. गदालोल is in the stream of the river Phalgu.

and honour the (Gayā) brāhmaṇas established by Brahmā with offerings and food. When they are gratified gods together with pitrs become gratified.¹⁵⁰⁶ Then the pilgrim should bow to the Akṣayavata and worship it with a mantra and also bow to worship Prapitāmaha. Agni 115. 69-73 and Nāradiya (uttara) chap. 47 also refer to these.

The Tristhalisetu (p. 368) remarks that the above are the fixed rites for seven days in Gayā, that other tirthas may be visited according to one's convenience if one stays in Gayā for half a month or a month; that the śrāddha at the Pretaśilā is to be the first and that at the Akṣayavata is to be performed at the end,¹⁵⁰⁷ and that although there is variation between the order in which tirthas are to be visited on the several days according to the Vāyupurāṇa, the Agnipurāṇa and other purāṇas, yet as the Vāyupurāṇa is most detailed as regards Gayā rites, the order therein should be followed and that one not knowing the order may visit the tirthas in any order¹⁵⁰⁸ except Pretaśilā and Akṣayavata. Gayāyātrā, chapter 112 of the Vāyupurāṇa, refers to king Gaya who performed a *yajña* and who got two boons, one about the restoration of the Gayā brāhmaṇas to favour and the other that Gayāpurī be named after him and who then went to Viṣṇuloka. Then it narrates the story of king Viśāla (verses 7-15) who being sonless performed piṇḍadāna on Gayāśirṣa and thereby saved his three ancestors, got a son and also himself went to heaven. Then another story is told (verses 16-20) of a deceased person, who was in the condition of a *preta*, offering one-sixth of his property to a trader and asking him to perform Gayāśrāddha with the rest of his wealth and who on account of śrāddha at Gayā became free from the condition of *preta*.¹⁵⁰⁹ Then verses 20-60 mention several other tirthas of Gayā such as Gāyatrītīrtha, Prāci-sarasvatītīrtha, Viśālā, Leliḥāna, the

1506. Compare 'ये युष्मान्पूजयिष्यन्ति गयायामागता नराः। हव्यकव्यैर्धनैः श्राद्धैस्तेषां कुलशतं व्रजेत्। नरकात्स्वर्गलोकाय स्वर्गलोकात्परां गतिम्।' अग्नि. 114. 39-40.

1507. संसारवृक्षशस्त्रायाशेषपापक्षयाय च। अक्षयवद्भद्रदात्रे च नमोक्षयवदाय वै॥ कलौ माहेश्वरा लोका येन तस्माद्भद्राधरः। लिङ्गरूपोऽभवत्तं च वन्दे श्रीप्रपितामहम्॥ वायु 111. 83-84; श्राद्धं वटतले कुर्याद् ब्राह्मणानां च भोजनम्। एकस्मिन् भोजिते विप्रे कोटिर्भवति भोजिता। किं पुनर्बहुभिर्भुक्तैः पितृणां दत्तमक्षयम्।... वटं वटेश्वरं नत्वा पूजयेत् प्रपितामहम्। अग्नि. 115. 71-73.

1508. क्रमतोऽक्रमतो वापि गयायात्रा महाफला। अग्नि. 115. 74 q. by त्रिस्थली p. 368.

1509. Both the stories occur in अग्निपुराण 115. 54-63, नारदीय (उत्तर) 26-50, गरुड. I 84. 34-43, and the first about king विशाल in वराहपुराण 7. 128.



hermitage of Bharata, Mundapṛstha, Akāśagangā, Vaitaraṇī and other rivers and sacred places. It winds up by saying that six Gayās confer *mukti* (by worship and piṇḍadāna at them) viz. Gayāgaja, Gayāditya, Gāyatrī (tīrtha), Gadādhara, Gayā and Gayāsīras.^{1509a}

The Agnipurāṇa (chap. 116. 1-34) has a long list of tirthas at Gayā that is quoted by the Tristhalīsetu pp. 376-378, which are passed over here.

Though the number of tirthas at Gayā is very large, the majority of pilgrims do not visit them all. Visits to three places are absolutely necessary for every pilgrim to Gayā, viz. Phalgu river, Viṣṇupada and Akṣayavatā, at all of which worship has to be done with milk, water, flowers, sandalwood paste, *tāmbūla*, lighted lamp and piṇḍas to ancestors have to be offered. The Viṣṇupada temple is built over the footprint of Viṣṇu on the rock to the west of the river Phalgu. The old town of Gayā was built round Viṣṇupada and it is the largest and most important temple in Gayā. The footprint (about 16 inches in length) deemed to be God Viṣṇu's is inside an octagonal basin plated with silver. Pilgrims of all castes (except untouchables) surround the basin and cast their offerings inside the basin, though for a substantial payment the priests clear out all people, shut the door for a minute or two and allow a very orthodox or a rich person to make his offerings without being disturbed by anyone else. There are 45 *vedis* (or sacred places) at which the leisured pilgrim may offer piṇḍas in the Gayākṣetra which extends from about five miles to the north-west of Old Gayā town to about 7 miles south of it. Though the ancient Buddhist works and Fa Hien and Hiouen T'sang make a distinction between Gayā and Uruvilvā or Uruvelā where Buddha attained Enlightenment after six years of severe *tapas*, the Bodhi tree (Mahābodhitaru) was recognized by the Gayāmāhātmya as one of the sacred places which Hindu pilgrims should visit and is so regarded even now. When the Hindus appropriated Buddhist sacred places to themselves it is difficult to say. The Bodhi tree is the oldest historical tree in the world. A branch of it is said to have been transplanted to Ceylon in the times of the great Emperor Aśoka (about 250 B.C.)

1509 a. गयामजो गयादित्यो गायत्री च गदाधरः । गया गयाशिरश्चैव षड् गया मुक्ति-
दायिकाः ॥ वायु 112. 60 q. by तीर्थचि. p. 328 (reads षड् गये मुक्तिदायकं), विशुद्धी
p. 372. This occurs in नारदीय (उत्तर) 47. 39-40. गयामजः—probably refers to
the pillar with the figure of an elephant near the Gadādhara temple at Gayā.



and at Kandy in Ceylon a *pippala* tree is even now shown as that transplanted tree or the successor of that branch. The Gayāśīrṣa¹⁵¹⁰ is a set of rocky hills such as Gayāśīrṣa, Muṇḍa-prṣṭha, Prabhāsa, Gr̥dhrakūṭa, Nāgakūṭa, ranging over one krośa (about two miles).

It has been already stated above (p. 666) that the rites at the Akṣayavata are the last in the pilgrimage to Gayā. The Gayā-wal priest binds the thumbs or hands of the pilgrim with a garland of flowers and receives his fees. He gives sweetmeats to the pilgrim as *prasāda*, applies *tilaka* to the pilgrim's forehead, touches the pilgrim on his back, pronounces the word '*suphala*' (the pilgrimage has been fruitful or successful), declares that the pilgrim's ancestors have gone to heaven and blesses the pilgrim. It must be noted that there is a special class of priests called Dhāmin, who alone (and not the ordinary Gayāwals) have the right of officiating at five *vedis* viz. at Pretaśilā, Rāmaśilā, Rāmakunḍa, Brahmakunḍa and Kākabali, that are situated on or about the two hills Rāmaśilā and Pretaśilā (vide Bengal District Gazetteers, vol. 12 for Gayā p. 66). They are regarded as inferior in status to the regular Gayāwals.

One important question on which there is great divergence of views among the medieval digests is about the ancestors to whom śrāddha is to be offered at Gayā. In the Vāyu and other Purāṇas it is frequently said that he who performs śrāddha at Gayā becomes free from the debt due to the pitṛs¹⁵¹¹ or that what is offered to the pitṛs at Gayā, Dharmaprṣṭha, Brahmasaras, or on the Gayāśīrṣa and under the imperishable Vata tree becomes inexhaustible. In most of these passages the plural of the word 'pitṛ' is used. Therefore it follows that śrāddha is to be offered in Gayā to three paternal ancestors. And on account of a verse attributed to Gautama,¹⁵¹² the three male maternal ancestors also are to be offered śrāddha. The difference arises with

1510. Gayāśīras and Gayā were according to Buddhist works well-known places in Buddha's days. Vide the Mahāvagga I. 21. 1 (S. B. E. vol. 13 p. 134) cited above (on p. 646) and Āṅguttara Nikāya (text) vol. IV, p. 302 'एकं समयं भगवा गयायां विहरति गयासीसे'.

1511. आङ्गकुट्टो गयाक्षेत्रे पितृणामनुष्ठानो हि सः। वायु 105. 30; vide also वायु 108. 60 and 90, 109. 41; 'गयायां धर्मपृष्ठे च सरसि ब्रह्मणस्तथा। गयाशीर्षे वटे चैव पितृणां दत्तमक्षयम्॥' नारदीय (उत्तर) 44. 54, गरुड I. 83 42-43. This last is ascribed to बृहस्पति by कल्पतरु (on तीर्थ) p. 167.

1512. पितरो यत्र पूज्यन्ते तत्र मातामहा अपि। अविशेषेण कर्तव्यं विशेषाच्चरकं व्रजेत्॥ इति गौतमोक्तेः। त्रिस्थली० p. 349, quoted also in स्मृत्यर्थसार p. 56.

reference to the wives of these six male paternal and maternal ancestors. The Agnipurāṇa proposes an option (115. 10) that the *devatās* in Gayāśrāddha are nine or twelve. When they are to be nine, the śrāddha is for three paternal ancestors, three male ancestors of the mother and the wives of the latter three male ancestors, while there is a separate śrāddha for the mother, paternal grand-mother and paternal great-grandmother. If there are to be twelve *devatās* in Gayāśrāddha, then all the wives of the paternal ancestors and of maternal ancestors would be included in one śrāddha. Aparārka allowed an option (as in Agni) in Gayā-śrāddha.¹⁵¹³ According to the Smṛtyarthasāra¹⁵¹⁴ and Hemādri the Anvaṣṭakā-śrāddha and Gayāśrāddha for the paternal ancestors and that for the wives of these (i. e. mother, paternal grandmother &c.) must always be separate, but the śrāddha for the mother's paternal ancestors and their wives should be one (and therefore the *devatās* will be nine). Yama (verse 80) appears to hold that the mother, paternal grandmother and paternal great-grandmother are always to be associated with their respective husbands in śrāddha. Some held that the *devatās* of Gayāśrāddha were only six viz. the three male paternal ancestors and three male maternal ancestors.¹⁵¹⁵ The Tri. S. ultimately remarks that the usage of the country should be the deciding principle. The Prajāpati-smṛti (183-184) has some rather contradictory views as to when there would be 12 or 9 or 6 *devatās* in a śrāddha. When there are twelve *devatās*, the *saṅkalpa* at the Pretaśilā-śrāddha which is the model of all the śrāddhas at the other sacred spots in Gayā (with suitable modifications) will be as noted below.¹⁵¹⁶

It should be noted that there are certain special characteristics of Gayāśrāddha. There is no tonsure (Vāyu 83. 18

1513. ततश्चान्वष्टकादित्रये स्त्रीणां श्राद्धं पृथगेव । गयामहालयादौ तु पृथक् सह वा भर्तृभिरिति सिद्धम् । अपरार्क p. 432 ; गरुड I. 84. 24 is 'श्राद्धं तु नवदेवत्यं कुर्याद् द्वादश-देवतम् । अन्वष्टकासु वृद्धौ च गयायां सूतवासरे ॥ '

1514. तत्र मातृश्राद्धं पृथक् प्रशस्तम् । मातामहानां सपत्नीकमेव । स्मृत्यर्थसार pp. 59-60 ; vide त्रिस्थली° p. 349 for the view of हेमाद्रि.

1515. अत्र केचित्पितृवर्गमातामहवर्गरूपतया षड्देवत्यमेवेत्याहुः ।... अत्र सर्वत्र मूल-वचनानि देशाचारतश्च व्यवस्थेति सामान्यविधावेवोक्तम् । त्रिस्थली° p. 349. रघुनन्दन in his तीर्थयात्रातत्त्व notes that this is the गौड view.

1516. ओम् । अद्यामुकगोत्राणां पितृपितामहप्रपितामहानाममुकामुकदेवार्शमणाम्, अमुकगोत्राणां मातृ-पितामही-प्रपितामहीनाममुकामुकदेवीनाम्, अमुकगोत्राणां मातामह-प्रमातामह-वृद्धप्रमातामहानाममुकामुकदेवार्शमणाम्, अमुकगोत्राणां मातामही-प्रमातामही-वृद्ध-प्रमातामहीनाममुकामुकदेवीनां प्रेतत्वविमुक्तिकामः प्रेताशिलायां श्राद्धमहं करिष्ये ।
p. 287. These twelve are specified in गरुडपुराण I. 84. 45-47.



and note 1485 above). One must honour the Gayāwals alone, and not other brāhmaṇas, however learned they may be; one should not consider the family or character or learning of Gayā brāhmaṇas (vide p. 579 above and note 1313). But it has to be remembered that Nārāyaṇabhaṭṭa¹⁵¹⁷ did not accept this for all śrāddhas to Gayā, but only as to the śrāddha under the Akṣaya-vata, since the Vāyu (111. 79-80) again refers under Akṣaya-vata to the worship of Gayā brāhmaṇas and since following the maxim of 'caturdhākarana' laid down in Jai. III. 1. 26-27 the later specific provision narrows down the wide words used in the earlier passage. At Gayā one could offer piṇḍa to oneself but without sesame.¹⁵¹⁸ The Tri. S. (p. 350) observes (relying on Vāyu) that when a man offers a piṇḍa to himself, it should be in the hands of the image of Janārdana on Bhasmakūṭa¹⁵¹⁹ and that the pilgrim to Gayā can offer a piṇḍa to himself only when it is certain that he has no son or other *adhikārin* for offering śrāddha. Further, any one related or unrelated, could offer a piṇḍa¹⁵²⁰ to anybody, as laid down in Vāyu 'Whether it is one's own son or the son of another (who offers), in whosoever name a piṇḍa is let fall at Gayā, that man attains everlasting *Brahma*. It is desired that anyone may offer a piṇḍa to anybody after uttering that person's name and gotra and the latter reaches the highest goal.'

There are several works, printed and in mss., that deal with the procedure of Gayāśrāddha. There is the Gayāśrāddha-paddhati of Vācaspati printed at the Chandraprabha press, Benares city, the Tirtha-yātrā-tattva of Raghunandana (which contains a Gayā-

1517. गयायां तु निर्गुणा अपि तत्रत्या एव द्विजा भोज्या इति तु हेमाद्रिः । वयं तु ब्रह्म-
प्रकल्पितान् विप्रान्भोजयेत्पूजयेदथ इत्यक्षयवटप्रकरणे पुनः श्रवणाच्चतुर्धाकरणोपसंहारन्याये-
नाक्षयवटश्राद्धनियमो न गयाश्राद्धमात्रे । एवं च शिष्टाचारोपयुक्त इति । त्रिस्थली०
p. 352.

1518. आत्मनस्तु महाबुद्धे गयायां तु तिलैर्विना । पिण्डनिर्वपणं कुर्यात्तथा चान्यत्र
गोत्रजाः ॥ वायु. 83. 34 q. by त्रिस्थली० p. 350 from स्मृतिरत्नावली ; vide also वायु.
105. 12 and अग्नि 115. 68 'पिण्डो देयस्तु सर्वेभ्यः सर्वैर्वै कुलतारकैः । आत्मनस्तु तथा
देयो ह्यक्षयं लोकमिच्छता ॥'.

1519. जनार्दनो भस्मकूटे तस्य हस्ते तु पिण्डदः । आत्मनोऽप्यथवान्येषां सव्येनापि
तिलैर्विना ॥ जीवतां दधिसंमिश्रं सर्वे ते विष्णुलोकगाः ॥ वायु. 108. 85 ; vide
गरुडपुराण 'जनार्दनस्य हस्ते तु पिण्डं दद्यात्स्वकं नरः । एष पिण्डो मया दत्तो तत्र हस्ते
जनार्दन । परलोकस्ततो मह्यमक्षय्यमुपतिष्ठताम् ।' ; compare नारद (उत्तर) 47. 62-65 for
very similar verses.

1520. आत्मजोऽप्यन्यजो वापि गयाधूमौ यदा तदा । यज्ञाग्ना पातयेत्पिण्डं तं त्रिभुव-
न्ब्रह्म शाश्वतम् ॥ नामगोत्रे समुच्चार्य पिण्डपातनमिष्यते । येन केनापि कस्मैचित्स याति परमा-
मतिम् ॥ वायु. 105. 14-15. Vide also वायु. 83. 38.



paddhati) published in Bengali characters. Then I consulted two mss. viz. the Gayā-śrāddha-paddhati of Raghunātha son of Mādhava (D. C. ms. No. 93 of 1891-95) and the Gayāśrāddha-vidhi of Vācaspati (D. C. No. 245 of 1887-91). The procedure in the Tīrthayātrā-tattva of Raghunandana is set out here briefly without actually citing in full the Vāyupurāṇa passages which it quotes profusely. Raghunandana appears to follow the Tīrthacintāmaṇi closely as some of the notes will show. After the pilgrim enters Gayā he should first make an appropriate saṅkalpa¹⁵²¹ for a bath in Phalgu, take the clay from the river, apply it to his body and bathe. Then he should perform *tarpana*¹⁵²² to the twelve male and female ancestors (specified in note 1516 above). Then he should declare a saṅkalpa that he would perform Gayāśrāddha with the words 'Om! adyetyādi Gayātīrthapṛāpti-nimittaka-śrāddhamaham kariṣye'. Then he should perform a *pūrvāṇa-śrāddha* (described above pp. 485-505) excepting the *āvāhana* and *arghya* rites. If the pilgrim be unable to perform all the details of śrāddha, he may offer only pīṇḍas. Then on the same day he should go to the Pretaśilā which adjoins the west bank of the river Phalgu and is to the north of Gayā and perform śrāddha there as follows: he should perform the purification of the ground, sit down on it, perform *ācamana*, face the south, wear the sacred thread in the *apasavya* form, recite the verses (Vāyu 110. 10-12 'Kavyavālo...śrāddhenānena śāśvatīm'), contemplate on his pīṭṛs, perform *prāṇāyāma*, sprinkle water on the materials for śrāddha after remembering Puṇḍarikākṣa (Viṣṇu), make the saṅkalpa (set out in note 1516). He should go through the whole procedure of śrāddha up to the payment of dakṣiṇā to brāhmaṇas. After this he should sit to the south of the altar (where he performed the śrāddha), should wear the sacred thread in the *apasavya* form, face the south, place on the ground three kuśas and after reciting the *mantra* (Vāyu 110. 10-12) should make an invocation once in the form of offering an *añjali* of water mixed with sesame, then honour the father with *pādyā* (water for washing the feet), recite the two verses

1521. ओम् । अद्येत्यादि अश्वमेधसहस्रजन्यफलविलक्षणफलप्राप्तिकामः फल्युतीर्थे स्नानमहं करिष्ये । This is the सङ्कल्प in तीर्थचि. p. 286 and तीर्थयात्रातत्त्व p. 2.

1522. रघुनन्दन sets out the formulas of tarpana for Sāmavedins and Yajurvedins 'तत्रामुकगोत्रोऽस्मत्पिता अमुकदेवशर्मा तृप्यतामिदं तीर्थोदकं तस्मै स्वाधा पितरं प्रीणयामीति सामगः । यजुर्वेदोक्तम् । ओं अमुकगोत्रपितरमुकदेवशर्मस्तृप्यस्वैतत्ते तीर्थोदकं स्वाधा पितरं प्रीणयामि । तीर्थयात्रातत्त्व p. 3. The first is set out by तीर्थचि. p. 286 also.

(Vāyu 110. 20-21 ' ā brahma...tilodakam ' with *om* prefixed), perform invocation as before of the father and others with water in folded hands and should offer a piṇḍa to his father of *pāyasa* or other material mixed with sesame, water and honey with the words ' Om, adya amuka-gotra pitar-amukadevaśarman, eṣa te piṇḍaḥ svadhā '. In this way he should offer piṇḍa to the remaining eleven devatās, viz. paternal grandfather and others (or eight or five according to usage). He should donate a fee according to his means. Then he should sit to the south of the place he so far occupied, spread on the ground kuśas having roots but with tips turned to the south, should repeat the mantras (Vāyu 110. 10-12), perform on those kuśas once an invocation in the form of an añjali of water mixed with sesame, repeat the two verses (Vāyu 110. 22-23 ' Pitā pitāmaha...mupatiṣṭhatām ' with *om* prefixed ^{1522a}) and should offer one piṇḍa made of one handful of barley flour mixed with sesame, kuśas, ghee, curds, water and honey to all the twelve devatās (ancestors) together. Then follows what is called *Ṣoḍaśīkarma*, which is as follows: Nineteen spots for piṇḍas should be made (each to the south of the preceding) and should be smeared with *pañcagavya* one after another; then he should spread over each kuśas with their tips to the south, should invoke on the kuśas the persons intended with the mantras (Vāyu 110. 30-32 ' asmat-kule mṛtā.....tilodakaiḥ '), should worship them by offering sandalwood paste and the rest, (and if he is performing the rite of *ṣoḍaśī* on a spot sacred to a specific deity then worship that deity also with an appropriate mantra), should then offer once as before an *añjali* of water mixed with sesame and offer piṇḍas beginning from the first spot, each piṇḍa being offered after reciting each of the 19 mantras (Vāyu 110. 34-55, omitting 110.44 ' asipatra o ', 110. 46 ' anekayātanā-saṁsthāḥ ye nītā o ', and treating 52-53 as one mantra and 54-55 as one mantra) ^{1522b}. He should offer 19 piṇḍas

1522 a. It should be noted that *om* is to be recited before each verse intended as mantra here and below.

1522 b. The Tīr. C. (pp. 290-292) slightly differs. It does include Vāyu 110. 46 and treats the three verses (Vāyu 110. 51-53) as one mantra. It is difficult to understand why the writers of digests did not say that the *śrāddhaṣoḍaśī* should be performed with only 18 mantras from out of the 21 or 22 verses with option to the reciter. Where the mantras exceed the number required, Jaimini X. 5.14 states: ' अपूर्वासु तु संख्यासु विकल्पः स्यात्सर्वासामर्थवत्तान् ' . Raghunandana reads the five verses (51-55) somewhat differently from the printed Vāyupurāṇa, though the sense is not much affected.

of the size already stated and made of the material already mentioned with the sacred thread in the *apasavya* form. Raghunandana explains that although there are nineteen pindas still this is called śrāddhaśodaśī as a technical term.¹⁵²³ It would be noticed that all the mantras refer to males in the words 'ye', 'te', 'tebhyah'. So this is 'Pum-śodaśī.' There is a 'strī-śodaśī' also which only involves changing the words of the mantras in the masculine to words in the feminine gender as indicated in the Vāyupurāṇa itself.¹⁵²⁴ Otherwise there is no difference between the two (pumśodaśī and strīśodaśī). The note below states the mode in which both males and females are to be invoked and gratified.

Water should be sprinkled over all pindas three times with a vessel full of water mixed with sesame. The mantras repeated at the time are quoted below in the note.¹⁵²⁵ Then he prostrates himself on the ground and should dismiss (send away) them (the persons invoked) with the words 'O father and others! forgive me.' Then wearing the sacred thread in the *savya* form, he should sip water (perform *ācamana*) and recite with his face to the east the two mantras (Vāyu 110. 59-60 'sākṣiṇaḥ santu,' and 'āgatosmi Gayām'). If a pilgrim is unable to carry out all this lengthy procedure, he should at least offer pindas on Pretaśilā, by making a saṅkalpa (like the one in note 1516 saying 'pindadānam' for śrāddham'). He should wear the sacred thread in the *apasavya* mode and repeat the verses in Vāyu (110. 10-12 and 110. 59-60) and should perform according to his *sūtra* the various items such as drawing lines on the altar meant for placing pindas, spreading kuśas, sprinkling down water on the pindas, the offering of pindas, re-sprinkling

1523. ऊनविंशतौ षोडशत्वं पारिभाषिकं पञ्चाम्रवत् । तीर्थयात्रातत्त्व p. 8. When a person inquires of another how many mango trees or fruit the latter has got the latter may reply they are five, even if actually they may be six or seven.

1524. एतैश्च सर्वमन्त्रैस्तु स्त्रीलिङ्गानां समुद्य च । पिण्डान् दद्याद्यथापूर्वं स्त्रीणां मात्रादिकाक्रमात् । वायु. 110. 56 q. in त्रिस्थली० p. 356. स्त्रीषोडश्यां तु—अस्मत्कुले मृता ये चेत्यावाहनमन्त्रादारभ्य मित्राणि सख्य इति पर्यन्तं सम्भवत्स्त्रीलिङ्गमूहनीयम्, अन्यन्तु पुंषोडशिवत् सर्वम् । तिथिचि. p. 292. So instead of the मन्त्र 'अस्मत्कुले मृता ये च गतिर्येषां न विद्यते' (वायु. 110. 34), in the स्त्रीषोडशी the मन्त्र will be अस्मत्कुले मृता याश्च गतिर्यासां न विद्यते । तासामुद्धरणार्थाय इमं पिण्डं ददाम्यहम् ॥. त्रिस्थली० p. 357 refers to this स्त्रीषोडशी.

1525. ओम् । ये च वो येचास्मास्वासन् याश्च वो याश्चास्मास्वासन् ते चावाहन्तां ताश्चावाहन्ताम् । तृप्यन्तु भवन्तस्तृप्यन्तु भवत्यस्तृप्यन्तु गोत्रान् पुत्रानभितर्पयन्तीरापो मधुमतास्मा । स्वधां पितृभ्योऽमृतं दुहाना आपो देवीरभयास्तृप्यन्तु । तृप्यन्त तृप्यन्त तृप्यन्तेति । तीर्थचि. p. 293. तीर्थयात्रातत्त्व pp. 10-11.

water, holding one's breath, loosening the knot of one's garment, offering a thread and sandalwood paste.

Then the pilgrim should descend from the hill (Pretaśilā) to the ground below and should bathe in the deep pool well-known as Rāmatīrtha ¹⁵²⁶ (which is in the form of Prabhāsa-hrada) at the meeting place of the great river (Phalgu) with the Prabhāsa hill after making a saṅkalpa (as given in the footnote) and after repeating the mantra 'janmāntaraśatam' (Vāyu 108. 18). He should then perform *tarpaṇa* and perform śrāddha or (if unable to offer śrāddha) offer only piṇḍas according to the procedure of his own grhyasūtra. He should offer as done in the Pretaśilā śrāddha twelve piṇḍas to the father and the others, the single inexhaustible piṇḍa and the ṣoḍaśī-piṇḍas. If he cannot go through all these, he may perform any one of them. Then he should make a saṅkalpa and should offer obeisance to Rāma with the mantra 'Rāma Rāma' (Vāyu 108.20). When a pilgrim performs this bath, śrāddha and piṇḍadāna his pitrs become free from the condition of being *preta* (Vāyu 108. 21). Then he should perform obeisance to the refulgent Prabhāseśa (Śiva). He should offer obeisance to both Rāma and Prabhāseśa with the mantra 'āpastvamasi' (Vāyu 108. 22). Then he should offer a *bali* of boiled rice to Yama with the words 'this is a bali, om! bow to Yama.' Then on a hill called Naga situated to the south of Prabhāsa hill and on the middle of Pretaśilā he should recite the verse 'dvau śvānau' (Vāyu 108. 30) and offer a bali made up of some kind of cooked food with the words 'this is a bali to Yamarāja and Bhramarāja (Dharmarāja?); salutation.' This offering of bali is obligatory (on every pilgrim); the rest may be done according to one's ability. This finishes the rites on the first day (i. e. the day of entering Gayā).

On the 2nd day of entering Gayā the pilgrim should bathe in Phalgu, perform his daily duty of *tarpaṇa* and worship of gods and then in the afternoon bathe in Brahmakuṇḍa ¹⁵²⁷ situated in the north-east corner which touches the root of Pretaparvata, that is at the distance of a gavyūti from Gayā and that (Brahmakūṇḍa) is situated to the north-west of Gayā.

1526. ओम् । अद्येत्यादि सायजन्मान्तरशतकृतदुष्कृतविलयकामोऽस्मिन्नामतीर्थे मङ्गं करिष्ये । तीर्थचि. p. 294, तीर्थयात्रातत्त्व pp. 11-12. The मन्त्र 'जन्मान्तरशत' (वायु. 108. 18) is quoted by both.

1527. The सङ्कल्प at ब्रह्मकुण्डस्नान is ओं अद्येत्यादि पित्रादीनां पुनरावृत्तिरिति ब्रह्मलोकप्राप्तिकामः प्रेतपर्वते श्राद्धमङ्गं करिष्ये । तीर्थयात्रातत्त्व p. 13.



The śrāddha performed here is believed to be performed on the altar of Brahmā (i. e. where Brahmā performed his Aśvamedha). Then he should with the face to the south throw on Pretaparvata barley grains mixed with sesame with the mantra 'ye kecit' (Vāyu 110. 63 q. both by Tīr. C. p. 297 and by Raghunandana) and offer an añjali of water mixed with sesame with the mantra 'ā-brahma' (Vāyu 110. 64).¹⁵²⁸

On the third day after entering Gayā come the rites of Pañcatīrthī described above (pp. 663-666). The pilgrim bathes¹⁵²⁹ in the Uttaramānasa with the mantra 'uttare mānase snānam' (Vāyu 111. 2-3). He should offer one añjali with the verses (Vāyu 110. 20-21) and perform śrāddha. After this śrāddha he sits to the south of Uttara-mānasa, spreads *kuśas* with tips towards the south, offers water with sesame and offers to all together one piṇḍa of one handful of barley flour mixed with sesame, *kuśas*, honey, curds and water. Then he bows to and worships the Sun's image on Uttaramānasa with the mantra 'namostu bhānave' (Vāyu 111. 5). Then he repairs to Dakṣiṇamānasa in silence and there takes a bath in Udici tīrtha, in Kanakhala and then in Dakṣiṇamānasa with the mantra (Vāyu 111. 9-10) and then performs salutation and worship to Dakṣiṇārka, then makes a bow to Maunārka, then goes to Phalgu tīrtha situated to the east of Gadādhara and takes a bath and performs tarpaṇa and śrāddha there; then he worships Pitāmaha (with Vāyu 111. 19), visits Gadādhara and worships (with Vāyu 111.21), then again goes to the five tirthas, at each of which he bathes and performs tarpaṇa. Then he bathes the image of Gadādhara with pañcāmṛta. Raghunandana notes that the bathing of Gadādhara with pañcāmṛta is obligatory, while the rest may be done according to one's ability. This finishes the rites of pañcatīrthī.

The various tirthas to be visited after Pañcatīrthī have been mentioned above. It is not necessary to repeat them here. The special mantras from the Vāyupurāṇa cited by Raghu-

1528. It may be stated once for all that there is a saṅkalpa appropriate to each bath, that a bath in a sacred place is followed by tarpaṇa, that śrāddha is performed as on *Pretaśilā* with all details beginning from invocation and ending with making the gods bear witness. Therefore these items will not be repeated hereafter and only the special provisions in each case will be pointed out.

1529. The सङ्कल्प is ओं अद्येत्यादि पापक्षयपूर्वक-सूर्यलोकादिसंमिदं पितृ मुक्तिकाम उत्तरमानसे स्नानमहं करिष्ये.

nandana will alone be specified here. After bath and śrāddha at Matāṅgavāpī, the pilgrim should go to Matāṅgeśa to the north of Matāṅgavāpī and recite Vāyu 111. 25 (pramānam devatāḥ santu &c.). When pouring water at the root of the mango tree established by Brahmā the pilgrim repeats Vāyu 111. 36 (āmram brahma-sarodhbhūtam &c.). When bowing to Brahmā, the mantra is Vāyu 111. 34 (namo brahmaṇe &c.). The bali to Yama is offered with Vāyu 111. 38 (Yamarāja-dharmarājau &c.). The bali to the two dogs is to be given with the mantra (Vāyu 111. 39) and that to the crows with Vāyu 111. 40 (Aindra-vāruṇa-vāyavya &c.). As regards the *padas* the pilgrim should begin with Rudrapada and perform śrāddha there and then proceed to Viṣṇupada and worship Viṣṇu with five upacāras¹⁵³⁰ with the mantra 'Idam Viṣṇur-vi cakrame' (Rg. I. 22. 17). To the south of the vedī of Viṣṇupada he should perform the śrāddhaśoḍaśī (described above pp. 672-673) up to Vāyu 110. 60 (anṛnosham-rṇatrayāt). About an ascetic, vide above p. 655.

Then Raghunandana briefly touches upon the śrāddhas to be performed at the several *padas* and remarks that the last śrāddha at the *padas* is that at Kāśyapapada. He prescribes Vāyu 111. 76 as the mantra for bath in Gadālola-tīrtha. Then he states that the śrāddha at the 'Akṣayavata' is to be performed on the north side of the Vata near its bottom. He prescribes Vāyu 111. 82-83 (ekārṇave &c.) as the mantras for bowing to the Akṣayavata. Further, he speaks of śrāddhas to be performed at several sub-tīrthas, such as Gāyatrī, Sarasvatī, Viśālā, the hermitage of Bharata, Muṇḍapṛṣṭha. Then he prescribes that the pilgrim should cross the Vaitaraṇī (situated to the east of the Devanadī which is near Bhasmakūṭa) with the mantra (Vāyu 105. 44, yāsau Vaitaraṇī nāma &c.). After referring to several other tīrthas such as Gopracāra, Ghṛtakulyā, Madhukulyā, Raghunandana recommends that the pilgrim should visit Pāṇḍuśilā (which is in Campakavana near Pitāmaha) and perform śrāddha there. He notes that the four rivers and streams called Ghṛtakulyā, Madhukulyā, Devikā and Mahānadī¹⁵³¹ (Phalgu) are called Madhusravā when they meet the Silā (Vāyu

1530. For the five upacāras, vide H. of Dh. vol. II. pp. 729-730.

1531. In the वायुपुराण when speaking of गया the word महानदी occurs frequently (as in 112. 30, 110. 6), but it refers to फल्गु. On वायु. 110. 6 (ततो गयाप्रवेशे च पूर्वतोस्ति महानदी। तत्र तोयं समुत्पाद्य स्नातव्यं निर्मले जले॥) विस्थली° p. 352 observes 'महानदीति फल्गवा एव नामधेयम्। तोयं समुत्पाद्यो विष्णुकनदीत्वाद्वालुकाखननेन तोयमुत्पाद्य ॥'.

112.30) and a bath, tarpaṇa and śrāddha thereon yield immense results. Then are mentioned several other tīrthas such as Daśāśvamedha, Matangapada, Makha-kunda (near Udyanta parvata), Gayākūṭa. Raghunandana winds up by providing that on Bhasmakūṭa the pilgrim should place with his right hand in the hand of Janārdana a piṇḍa mixed with curds (but without sesame) and on doing so recite five verses (Vāyu 108. 86-90, ¹⁵³² 'eṣa piṇḍo mayā' &c.). Then Raghunandana quotes sixteen verses about Mātr̥sodaśī (which do not occur in Vāyupurāṇa and are passed over here).

We have to distinguish between Gayākṣetra, Gayā and Gayāsīras or Gayāsīrṣa. The Vāyu, Agni and Nāradya all assert that Gayākṣetra is five krośas ¹⁵³³ (in extent) and Gayāsīras is one krośa. It had become the fashion to speak of famous tīrthas like Kāśī and Prayāga as pañcakrośa. But so far as the Vāyupurāṇa is concerned the Gayākṣetra is about 13 miles in length from Pretaśilā to Mahābodhi tree as shown above. Gayā is said to be two krośas and a half in extent in all directions from Muṇḍapr̥ṣṭha ¹⁵³⁴. Gayāsīras is smaller than Gayā and is identified with Phalgutīrtha (vide note 1499). Gayā and Gayāsīra (Pāli for Gayāsīrṣa) are well known to ancient Buddhist texts (Mahāvagga I. 21. 1 in S. B. E. XIII p. 136, Aṅguttaranikāya, text vol. IV. p. 302). Vide n. 1510.

Four of the most important and holy tīrthas have been dealt with at some length so far. It is not possible in the space allotted to the section on tīrthas to pursue the same procedure as regards other famous tīrthas. It is proposed to devote a few pages to each of half a dozen or more tīrthas and then to give a somewhat comprehensive list of tīrthas with a few references in the case of each. But before proceeding further reference must be made to certain popular groupings of tīrthas. There is a group of seven cities that are deemed to be very holy and

1532. Raghunandana reads the five verses somewhat differently from the printed Vāyupurāṇa, though the sense is not much affected.

1533. पञ्चक्रोशं गयाक्षेत्रं क्रोशमेकं गयाशिरः। वायु. 106. 65, अग्नि. 115. 42, नारदीय (उत्तर) 44. 16.

1534. मुण्डपृष्ठाच्च पूर्वस्मिन् दक्षिणे पश्चिमोत्तरे। सार्धं क्रोशद्वयं मानं गयां परिकीर्तितम्॥ वायुपुराण १. by त्रिस्थली० p. 342. The printed वायु (105. 48-49 'मुण्डं कुर्याच्च पूर्वस्मिन्') appears to have a corrupt reading.



the bestowers of *mokṣa*.¹⁵³⁵ They are Ayodhyā, Mathurā, Māyā (i. e. Haridvārā), Kāśī, Kāñcī, Avantikā (i. e. Ujjayinī), Dvārakā. In some works it is Kāntī and not Kāñcī that is mentioned. Badarīnātha, Jagannātha Purī, Rāmeśvara and Dvārakā—these four are styled Dhāma. There are said to be twelve Jyotirlingas of Śiva, according to the Śivapurāṇa viz. Somanātha¹⁵³⁶ in Saurāṣṭra, Mallikārijuna on Srisāila hill (in Karnul District and about 50 miles from the Krishna station on the G. I. P. Railway), Mahākāla (in Ujjayinī), Parameśvara in Omkāra-kṣetra (an island in the Narmadā), Kedāra in the Himālayas, Bhīmāśankara (north-west of Poona at the source of the Bhīmā river) in Dākinī, Viśveśvara in Banaras, Tryambakeśvara on the banks of the Gautamī i. e. Godāvari (near Nasik), Vaidyanātha in Citābhūmi, Nāgeśa in Dārūkāvana, Rāmeśvara in Setubandha and Ghr̥ṣṇeśa in¹⁵³⁷ Śivālaya (i. e. the modern shrine at the village of Elura,

1535. अयोध्या मथुरा माया काशी काञ्ची ह्यवन्तिका। एताः पुण्यतमाः प्रोक्ताः पुरीणामुत्तमोत्तमाः ॥ ब्रह्माण्ड IV. 40. 91; काशी कान्ती च मायाख्या त्वयोध्या द्वारवत्यपि। मथुरावन्तिका चैता सप्त पुर्योत्र मोक्षदाः ॥ स्कन्द, काशीखण्ड, 6. 68; काञ्चीवन्ती द्वारवती काश्ययोध्या च पञ्चमी। मायापुरी च मथुरा पुर्यः सप्त विमुक्तिदाः ॥ काशीखण्ड 23. 7; अयोध्या...वन्तिका। पुरी द्वारवती ज्ञेया सप्तैता मोक्षदायिकाः ॥ गरुडपुराण (प्रेतखण्ड) 38. 5-6. In the स्कन्द, नागरखण्ड 47. 4 कान्ती occurs as capital of Rudrasena and in Brahmandā III. 13. 94-97 Kāntipurī is described as possessing a place for Vyāsa's contemplation, a Kumāradhārā and Puṣkarinī. If the reading कान्ती is to be accepted there are divergent views about its location, some holding it to be the ancient name of Khatmandu the capital of Nepal, while A. G. identifies it with Kotival 20 miles north of Gwalior.

1536. पृथिव्यां यानि लिङ्गानि तेषां संख्या न विद्यते।...सौराष्ट्रे सोमनाथं च श्रीशैले महिकार्जुनम्। उज्जयिन्यां महाकालमोङ्गारे परमेश्वरम्॥ केदारं हिमवत्पृष्ठे डाकिन्यां भीमशङ्करम्। वाराणस्यां च विश्वेशं त्र्यम्बकं गौतमीतटे॥ वैद्यनाथं चिताभूमौ नागेशं दारुकावने। सेतुबन्धे च रामेशं पुष्पेशं (पुष्पेशं?) च शिवालये। द्वादशैतानि नामानि प्रातरुत्थाय यः पठेत्। सर्वपापविनिर्मुक्तः सर्वसिद्धिफलं लभेत्। शिवपुराण IV. 1. 18, 21-24. There is divergence of views about the identification of some of these, viz. about ओङ्कार (Dey p. 5), वैद्यनाथ (Dey p. 50 showing it is either Deoghar in the Santal Pargana or in Paralīgrāma near Satara), दारुकावन (Dey, pp. 53-54). Each ज्योतिर्लिङ्ग has an उपलिङ्ग (vide शिवपुराण IV. I. 34. 42). The बृहन्नारदीयपुराण (पूर्वार्ध) I. 6 51 has 'काशीविश्वेश्वरं लिङ्गं ज्योतिर्लिङ्गं तदुच्यते। तद् दृष्ट्वा परमं ज्योतिराप्नोति मनुजोत्तमः॥' Vide 'the Cave Temples of India' by Fergusson and Burgess p. 367 n. 1. In JBBRAS, vol. X, pp. 4-6 the verses about the twelve Jyotirlingas and their locations are set out from morning Stotra.

1537. For Ghr̥ṣṇeśvara or Gr̥stāneśvara at the village Elura, vide A. S. W. I. vol. III pp. 82-83. The famous Kailāsa temple at Ellora is not the Ghr̥ṣṇeśvara līnga.



7 miles from Devagiri or Daulatabad). The Śivapurāṇa (Kotidruda-saṁhitā) chap. 1 names the twelve Jyotirlingas and chapters 14-33 narrate the legends connected with the twelve lingas. The Skandapurāṇa I (Kedārakhaṇḍa) chap. 7 verses 30-35 enumerate several lingas including most of the twelve Jyotirlingas. The Bārhaspatyasūtra (edited by Dr. F. W. Thomas) mentions eight great tīrthas each of Viṣṇu, Śiva and Śakti, that yield all *siddhis* ^{1537a}.

1537 a. अष्ट वैष्णवक्षेत्राः । बदरिका-सालग्राम-पुरुषोत्तम-द्वारका-बिल्वाचल-अजन्त-
सिंह-श्रीरङ्गाः । अष्टौ शैवाः । अविमुक्त-गङ्गाद्वार-शिवक्षेत्र-रामेयमुना (?) - शिवसरस्वती-मध्य-
शार्दूल-गजक्षेत्राः । शाक्ता अष्टौ च ओम्घीण-जाल-पूर्ण-काम-कोल-श्रीशैल-काशी-महेन्द्राः ।
एते महाक्षेत्राः सर्वसिद्धिकराश्च । बार्हस्पत्यसूत्र III. 119-126.



CHAPTER XV

KURUKṢETRA AND SOME OTHER FAMOUS TĪRTHAS

KURUKṢETRA (25 miles east of Ambala) is a very sacred tract, the history of which is lost in the mists of antiquity. In the Rgveda X. 33. 4 there is a reference to a king Kurusravana, son of Trasadasyu.¹⁵³⁸ The Atharva-veda mentions a Kauravya husband (probably a king) who had a talk with his wife.¹⁵³⁹ In the times of the Brāhmaṇas Kurukṣetra had become a very holy land. The Śat. Br. (IV. 1. 5. 13) narrates the legend that the gods performed a sacrifice in Kurukṣetra and at first excluded the two Aśvins from any share in it (S. B. E. vol. 26 p. 275). The Maitrāyaṇī Samhitā (II. 1. 4., devā vai sattramāsata Kurukṣetre) and the Tai. Br. (V. 1. 1., devā vai sattram-āsata teṣām Kurukṣetram vedir-āsīt) also say that the Gods performed a *sattra* in Kurukṣetra. The idea underlying these passages appears to be this. The Vedic people of the Brāhmaṇa period held *yajñas* to be the dharma *par excellence*, as stated in Rg. X. 90. 16 (*yajñena yajñam-ayajanta devāstāni dharmāni prathamānyāsan*). Kurukṣetra was the centre of Vedic culture in the Brāhmaṇa period and sacrifices must have been performed there on a large scale. Hence it was called dharmakṣetra and as gods were supposed to have attained their position by what men believed to be dharma (*yajña, tapas &c.*) it is stated that gods performed *sattras* in Kurukṣetra. The same Brāhmaṇa mentions a Kauravya king Bahlika Prātipīya (XII. 9. 3. 3, S. B. E. vol. 44 p. 269). The Tai. Br. (I 8. 4. 1) informs us that the Kuru-Paṇcālas went towards the east in winter (*śiśira*) and to the west in summer which was the worst season. The references in the Ait. Br. are far more instructive. The legend about Kavaṣa in which Sarasvatī helps the sage has already been referred to above (p. 559 n. 1254). The Ait. Br. (8. 1 or II 19) calls that place, where Sarasvatī came rushing, 'Pariṣaraka'. In another place the Ait. Br. tells us that in its time Nyagrodha (*Ficus India*) was called Nyubja in Kuru.

1538. कुरुश्रवणमावृणि राजानं त्रासदस्यवम् । मंहिष्टं वाचतामृषिः ॥ ऋ. X. 33. 4
कुरुश्रवण may mean literally 'heard or famous in the land of Kuru'.

1539. कुलायन् कृण्वन् कौरव्यपतिर्वदति जायया । अथर्ववेद 20. 127. 8.



kṣetra.¹⁵⁴⁰ Elsewhere the Ait. Br. speaks of the countries of the Kurus and Pañcālas together with the Vaśa-Uśīnaras (38. 3 = VIII. 14). The Tai. Ā. narrates¹⁵⁴¹ that the gods performed a *sattrā* and Kurukṣetra was their altar (for the *sattrā*). The southern side of that Vēdi (i. e. Kurukṣetra) was Khāṇḍava, the northern side was Tūrghna, the hinder part was Parīṇah, and the country of Maru (desert) was the rubbish pit. This shows that Khāṇḍava, Tūrghna and Parīṇah were border parts of Kurukṣetra and the Maru district was somewhat away from Kurukṣetra. The Śrautasūtras of Āśv. XII. 6, Lātyāyana X. 15 ff. and Kātyāyana¹⁵⁴² 24. 6. 5 ff closely follow Tāṇḍya and other Brāhmaṇas and mention several holy places at which parts of the Sārasvatā sattras were performed such as Plakṣa Prasravāṇa where Sārasvatī starts, the Vaitandhava-hrada of Sārasvatī, the tract called Parīṇah in Kurukṣetra, Yamunā flowing through the country of Kārapacava and the country of Triplakṣāvaharaṇa.

In the Chāndogya Upaniṣad (I. 10. 1 ff) occurs the story of Uṣasti Cākṛāyana who, when the Kuru country was struck by hailstorms, lived with his very young wife in Ibhyagrāma and went begging for food.

The Nirukta (II. 10) explains that¹⁵⁴³ Devāpi and Śāntanu mentioned in R̥gveda X. 98. 5 and 7 were historical persons and were brothers, sons of R̥ṣiṣeṇa, a king of Kuru. Pāṇini (IV. 1. 151 and IV. 1. 172) explains the formation of the word Kauravya from 'Kuru', the first in the sense of 'apatya', the second in the sense of 'king'.¹⁵⁴⁴

1540. तत्रैतांश्चमसान्युब्जंस्ते न्यग्रोधा अभवन् न्युब्जा इति हाप्येनानेतर्ह्याचक्षते कुरुक्षेत्रे ते ह प्रथमजा न्यग्रोधानां तेभ्यो हान्येऽधिजाताः। ऐ. ब्रा. 35.4 = VII. 30.

1541. देवा वै सत्रमासत।...तेषां कुरुक्षेत्रे वेदिरासीत्। तस्यै खाण्डवो दक्षिणार्ध आसीत्। तूर्धन्मुत्तरार्धः। परिणजघनार्धः। मरु उत्तरः। तै. आ. V. 1.1. Is तूर्धन् an older form of सुधन्? सुधन्, modern Sugh on the old Jumnā, is about 40 miles from Thanesar and 20 miles to north-west of Saharanpur.

1542. Vide कात्या. श्रौ. 'शम्याप्रासे शम्याप्रासे वसन्तो यजमानाश्च यन्ति दक्षिणेन तीरेण। दृषद्वत्यप्येऽपोनत्त्रियश्चरुः। अग्नये कामायेष्टिः पृक्षे प्रासवणे। अवभृथमभ्यवयन्ति यमुनां कारपचवं प्रति। अपरं व्यर्णे नैतन्धवेऽग्निमिन्धीत। कुरुक्षेत्रे परिणहि स्थलेऽग्न्याधेय-मन्वारम्भणीयान्तं भवति। एत्य च दृषद्वतीतीरेण। अवभृथमभ्यवयन्ति यमुनां त्रिप्लक्षवहरणं प्रति।' 24.6. 5-7, 10, 33-34, 38-39. Similar sūtras occur in लाट्यायनश्रौत X. 15.1, X. 17. 12, X. 18.13, X. 19.1, 4-5, 8-9. कात्यायनश्रौत XXIV. 6. 33 refers to the 2nd year and XXIV. 6.34 to the third year of the सारस्वतसत्र.

1543. तत्रेतिहासमाचक्षते। देवापिश्चाष्टिषेणः शन्तनुश्च कौरव्यौ भ्रातरौ वसवतः। निरुक्त II. 10.

1544. कुर्वादिभ्यो ण्यः। कुरुनादिभ्यो ण्यः। पा. IV, 1. 151 and 172,

The Mahābhārata frequently speaks of the high sanctifying virtues of Kurukṣetra. It appears that the territory to the south of Sarasvatī and to the north of Dr̥ṣadvatī was included in Kurukṣetra and ¹⁵⁴⁵ that those who resided therein were as if residents of paradise. Kurukṣetra appears to be called Brahmāvarta in Vanaparva 86.6. According to the Vāmanapurāṇa Kurujāṅgala is ¹⁵⁴⁶ the country between the Sarasvatī and Dr̥ṣadvatī, while Manu (II. 17, 18) defines Brahmāvarta as the country created by God between the two divine rivers Sarasvatī and Dr̥ṣadvatī, states that Brahmarsīdeśa which is slightly less (in holiness) than Brahmāvarta comprises Kurukṣetra, the countries of Matsya, Pañcāla and Sūrasena. From these passages it is clear that Brahmāvarta is the holiest country in Āryāvarta and that Kurukṣetra was almost like it; [we have seen that in the times of the Brāhmaṇas the most sacred Sarasvatī flowed through Kurukṣetra and that the place where Sarasvatī disappeared in the desert was called Vinaśana and was itself a very holy place.] Originally the land called Kurukṣetra is said to have been the Vēdi (sacrificial altar) ¹⁵⁴⁷ of Brahmā, then it came to be called Samantapañcaka (or syamanta—in some passages) when Paraśurāma made five pools of the blood of kṣatriyas in revenge for his father's murder, which were subsequently turned into holy pools of water by the blessings of his piṭrs and lastly it came to be called Kurukṣetra when king Kuru, son of Samvarana ¹⁵⁴⁸, ploughed the land with a golden plough for seven *krośas* all round. Kurukṣetra is so called after king Kuru. Kuru is said

1545. दक्षिणेन सरस्वत्या दृषद्वत्युत्तरेण च । ये वसन्ति कुरुक्षेत्रे ते वसन्ति त्रिविष्टपे ॥ वनपर्व 83.3. The same verse is वनपर्व 83. 204-205.

1546. सरस्वतीदृषद्वत्योरन्तरं कुरुजाङ्गलम् । वामन 22.47; सरस्वतीदृषद्वत्योर्देवनद्योर्यदन्तरम् । तं देवनिर्मितं देशं ब्रह्मावर्तं प्रचक्षते ॥ कुरुक्षेत्रं च मत्स्याश्च पञ्चालाः शूरसेनकाः ॥ एष ब्रह्मर्षिदेशो वै ब्रह्मावर्तादनन्तरः ॥ मनु. II. 17 and 19. The extent of countries varied from age to age. पञ्चाल was divided into North and South. At the time of Buddha the capital of Pañcāla was Kanoj. Sūrasena is the country of which Mathurā was the capital. अनन्तरः may mean 'slightly less than' or 'not inferior to or not different from.' The verse सरस्वतीदृषद्वत्योः occurs in नारदीय (उत्तर) chap. 64.6.

1547. आद्यैषा ब्रह्मणो वेदिस्ततो रामहृदः स्मृता । कुरुणा च यतः कृष्टं कुरुक्षेत्रं ततः स्मृतम् ॥ वामन 22. 59-60. According to वामन 22. 18-20 there are five vedis of Brahmā viz. समन्तपञ्चक (उत्तरा), प्रयाग (मध्यमा), गयाशिरः (पूर्वा), विरजा (दक्षिणा) पुष्कर (प्रतीची). Vide वामन 22.20 and पद्म IV. 17.7 for the form स्यमन्तपञ्चका.

1548. According to the विष्णुपुराण the genealogy is अजमीढ-ऋक्ष-संवराण-कुरु, about whom it says 'य इदं धर्मक्षेत्रं कुरुक्षेत्रं चकार' (IV. 19. 74-77).



to have asked of Indra the boon that the territory he ploughed might be 'Dharmakṣetra' (domain of righteousness) and that those who may bathe or die there may reap a rich harvest of merit¹⁵⁴⁹. The war between Kurus and Pāṇḍavas was fought there. It is spoken of as 'Dharmakṣetra' in the opening verse of the Bhagavad-gītā. Kurujāṅgala is said to be a very fit country for śrāddha in Vāyu (77. 93) and Kūrma II. 20. 33 and 37. 36-37. In the 7th century the Chinese traveller Hiouen Thsang speaks of the country, the capital of which was Sthān-vīśvara (modern Thanesar which is the heart of Kurukṣetra) as the 'land of religious merit' (Beal's B. R. W. W. vol. I p. 184).

The extent of Kurukṣetra is said to be five *yojanas* in radius (in Vanaparva and the Vāmana Purāṇa)¹⁵⁵⁰. A somewhat corrupt verse occurs in the Mahābhārata and some purāṇas¹⁵⁵¹ about the limits of Kurukṣetra viz. the territory between Tarantu and Kārantuka and between Macakruka (image of a *yakṣa*) and the Rāma-hradas (pools made by Para-śurāma)—this is Kurukṣetra, Samantapañcaka and the northern vedi of Brahmā. The result is that Kurukṣetra is referred to under various names viz. Brahmasaras, Rāmahrada, Samantapañcaka, Vinaśana, Sannihati (vide T. Pr. p. 463). For the boundaries of Kurukṣetra, vide Cunningham's A. S. R. of India, vol. XIV pp. 86-106 where he notes that Kurukṣetra was 30 miles to the south of Ambala and 40 miles to the north of Panipat. In the remote past Kurukṣetra was the centre of

1549. यावदेतन्मया कृष्टं धर्मक्षेत्रं तदस्तु वः। स्नातानां च मृतानां च महापुण्यफलं त्विह। वामनपुराण 22. 33-34. Compare Salyaparva 53. 13-14.

1550. वेदी प्रजापतेरेषा समन्तात्पञ्चयोजना। कुरोर्वै यज्ञशीलस्य क्षेत्रमेतन्महात्मनः॥ वनपर्व 129. 22; समाजगाम च पुनर्ब्रह्मणो वेदिमुत्तराम्। समन्तपञ्चकं नाम धर्मस्थानं मेनुत्तमम्॥ आसमन्ताद्योजनानि पञ्च पञ्च च सर्वतः॥ वामनपु. 22. 15-16. The नारदीय (उत्तर chap. 64. 20) states 'पञ्चयोजनविस्तारं दयासत्यक्षमोदूमम्। स्यमन्तपञ्चकं तावत्कुरुक्षेत्रमुदाहृतम्॥'

1551. तरन्तुकारन्तुकयोर्यदन्तरं रामहृदानां च मच्चक्रस्य। एतत्कुरुक्षेत्रं समन्तपञ्चकं पितामहस्योत्तरवेदिरुच्यते॥ वनपर्व 83. 208, शल्यपर्व 53. 24. पद्म. I, 27. 92 (reads तरण्डकारण्डकयोः), q. by कल्पतरु (on तीर्थ) p. 179 (from the महाभारत). वनपर्व 83. 9-15 and 200 show that मच्चक्र was a यक्ष appointed as one of the द्वारपाल of कुरुक्षेत्र by God Viṣṇu. Should we not separate the first word as तरन्तुक and अरन्तुक? In the नारदीय (उत्तर chap. 65. 24) we have रन्तुक as a sub-tīrtha under कुरुक्षेत्र. Vide तीर्थप्रकाश pp. 464-465 for explanation of this verse. A. G. p. 334 quotes this verse. In Archaeological Survey Reports for India vol. II p. 215 Cunningham quotes the verse as तदन्तुकारन्तुकयोर्यदन्तरं and remarks that Ratnuka is the Ratan *Jaksha* (यक्ष) at the north-east corner of the circuit of Kurukṣetra, four miles to the east of Thanesar.

all the activities and the culture of the Vedic people. Gradually the Vedic people spread towards the east and south and the country between the Ganges and Jumnā and later on Videha (or Mithilā) became the centres of Indian culture.

For reasons of space it is not possible to dwell at length on the greatness and sanctity of Kurukṣetra as described in the Mahābhārata and the Purāṇas. Vanaparva 83 starts by saying that all beings that are in Kurukṣetra are freed from all sins and that he also who always says 'I shall go to Kurukṣetra, and I shall reside in Kurukṣetra' is freed from sins¹⁵⁵². 'In this world there is no place holier than this. Even the particles of dust driven from Kurukṣetra by the wind take a great sinner to the highest goal'¹⁵⁵³. Even the Ganges is compared to Kurukṣetra (vide note 1324 'Kurukṣetrasamā Gangā'). The Nāradiya avers¹⁵⁵⁴ that planets, constellations and stars are subject to the danger of falling down (from the sky) in course of time, but in the case of those that die in Kurukṣetra there is no falling on the earth again (i. e. they would not be born again).

It is a remarkable fact that though the Vanaparva in chap. 83 enumerates several tirthas on the Sarasvatī and in Kurukṣetra, they do not at all tally with the tirthas mentioned in the Brāhmaṇas and the Śrautasūtras (except Vinasāna which is mentioned in Vanaparva 83.11 and probably Saraka which may be identified with Parisaraka of the Ait. Br.). This means that the Vanaparva account of Sarasvatī and Kurukṣetra is later by some centuries than that in the Śrautasūtras. The Nāradiya (uttara, chap. 65) names about one hundred tirthas in Kurukṣetra. It is not possible to set out all of them. But a few words may be said about some of them. First comes the lake called Brahmasaras or Pavana-hrada (Vanaparva 83. 85, Vāmana 49. 38-41, Nāradiya, uttara 65. 95) on

1552. ततो गच्छेत राजेन्द्र कुरुक्षेत्रमभिष्टुतम् । पापेभ्यो विप्रमुच्यन्ते तद्गताः सर्वजन्तवः ॥ कुरुक्षेत्रं गमिष्यामि कुरुक्षेत्रे वसाम्यहम् । य एवं सततं ब्रूयात् सर्वपापैः प्रमुच्यते ॥ वनपर्व 83. 1-2. The commentator नीलकण्ठ furnishes a fanciful derivation of कुरुक्षेत्र (on वनपर्व 83. 6) 'कुत्सितं रौत्तीति कुरु पापं तस्य क्षेपणात् त्रायते इति कुरुक्षेत्रं पापनिवर्तकं ब्रह्मोपलब्धिस्थानत्वात् ब्रह्मसदनम्'. 'सम्यक् अन्तो येषु क्षत्रियाणां ते समन्ता रामकृतरुधिरोद्गदाः, तेषां पञ्चकं समन्तपञ्चकम्. Vide ती. प्र. p. 463.

1553. नातः परतरं पुण्यं भूमेः स्थानं भविष्यति । ... पांसवोपि कुरुक्षेत्रे वायुना समुदीरिताः । अपि दुष्कृतकर्माणं नयन्ति परमां गतिम् ॥ इत्यत्र 53. 17, 22 q. in कल्प. (on तीर्थ) p 178. The verse पांसवोपि also occurs in वनपर्व 83. 3.

1554. ग्रहनक्षत्रताराणां कालेन पतनाद्भयम् । कुरुक्षेत्रसूतानां तु न भूयः पतनं भवेत् । नारदीय II. 64. 23-24, वामन 33. 16 (last pāda is पतनं नैव विद्यते).



which Kuru stayed as an ascetic. A. G. (pp. 334-335) remarks that the lake is 3546 feet long east to west and 1900 feet wide north to south. The Vāmanapurāṇa (22. 50-55) describes it at some length and says that it was half a *yojana* in extent. Cakratīrtha (mentioned by Vāmanapurāṇa 42. 5, 57. 89 and 81. 3) is popularly supposed to be the place where Kṛṣṇa took up the discus for attacking Bhīṣma. Vyāsa-thali¹⁵⁵⁵ (named in Vanaparva 84. 96, Nāradya, uttarārdha 65. 83 and Padma I. 26. 90-91) is the same as modern Basthali, 17 miles to the south-west of Thanesar where Vyāsa resolved to die on the loss of his son. Asthipura (Padma, Ādi. 27. 62) is on the west of Thanesar and south of Aujasa-ghaṭ where the bodies of the warriors killed in the Great Bhārata war were cremated. Cunningham in Archaeological Survey Reports of India vol. II. p. 219 states that Cakratīrtha is the same as Asthipura and that in Alberuni's time it was the most famous shrine in Kurukṣetra. Prthūdaka on the Sarasvatī is very highly spoken of in Vanaparva 83. 142-149. 'They say¹⁵⁵⁶ that Kurukṣetra is holy, that Sarasvatī is holier than Kurukṣetra, that the sacred spots (on Sarasvatī) are holier than the river Sarasvatī and that Prthūdaka is holier than all the other tirthas on Sarasvatī. There is no tirtha that is better than Prthūdaka'. The Śalyaparva¹⁵⁵⁷ remarks that whoever, while intently engaged in repeating holy texts, abandons his life at Prthūdaka on the northern bank of the Sarasvatī would not be troubled by death next day (i. e. he would be free from birth and death). The Vāmanapurāṇa (39. 20 and 23) calls it Brahmayonitīrtha. Prthūdaka is modern Pehova in the Karnal District in Panjab, 14 miles to the west of Thanesar. Vide E. I. vol. I. p. 184 for the Pehova inscription from the temple of Garibnath dated in *saṃvat* 276 (of the Harsa Era) i. e. 882-883 A. D., which records the agreement of certain pious horse-dealers to impose on themselves and their customers certain

1555. सरस्वत्या विनशनं पृथुदकं शुभम् । व्यासतीर्थमिति ख्यातं मेनाकश्च नगोत्तमः ॥ कूर्म. II. 37. 29 ; vide ब्रह्माण्ड III. 13. 69 for a similar verse.

1556. पुण्यमाहुः कुरुक्षेत्रं कुरुक्षेत्रात्सरस्वती । सरस्वत्याश्च तीर्थानि तीर्थेभ्यश्च पृथुदकम् ॥ पृथुदकात्तीर्थतमं नान्यतीर्थं कुरुक्षेत्रम् ॥ वनपर्व 83. 147, शान्तिपर्व 152. 11 (first verse), पद्म (आदि. 27. 33, 34, 36) q. by कल्प (on तीर्थ) pp. 180-181. The वामनपुराण 22. 44 says 'तस्यैव मध्ये बहुपुण्ययुक्तं पृथुदकं पापहरं शिवं च । पुण्यान्महा प्राङ्मुखतां प्रयाता जलौघयुक्तस्य सुता जलादद्या ॥'.

1557. सरस्वत्युत्तरे तीरे यस्त्यजेदात्मनस्तनुम् ॥ पृथुदके जप्यपरो नैनं श्रवणं तपेत् । शतपर्व 39. 33-34; वामनपुराण 39. 19 has the same verse (last *pada* is read as नैतस्य मरणं भवेत्).

taxes and tithes for the benefit of some priests and temples, one of which was the temple of Viṣṇu in his Yajñavarāha *avatāra* built at Prthūdaka.

The Vāmanapurāṇa (34. 3 ff) and Nāradiya (uttarārdha 65. 4-7) enumerate seven forests existing in Kurukṣetra as very holy and as destroyers of all sins, viz. Kāmyaka, Aditivana, Vyāsavana, Phalakivana, Sūryavana, Madhuvana and Sitavana. Vide A. S. R. for India, vol. 14 pp. 90-91 for the *vanas*. In the Śalyaparva (chap. 38) it is said that the world is encompassed by seven Sarasvatis, then they are enumerated and their locations are specified viz. Suprabhā (in Puṣkara, where Brahmā engaged in a great sacrifice remembered her, verse 13), Kāñcanākṣī (in the Naimiṣa forest, v. 19), Viśālā (invoked by Gaya in the Gayā country, verses 20-21), Manoramā (in Auddālaka's yajña in Uttarakosala, verses 22-25), Sureṇu (in Rṣabhadvīpa in Kuru's yajña, verses 26-27), Oghavatī (called by Vasiṣṭha in Kurukṣetra, verses 27-28), Vimalodā (when Brahmā again performed a yajña in the Himālaya). In the Vāmanapurāṇa 34. 6-8 seven rivers in connection with Sarasvatī are said to be very holy (but nine are actually enumerated) viz. Sarasvatī, Vaitaraṇī, Āpagā, Gaṅgā-Mandākinī, Madhusravā, Ambunadī, Kauśikī, Dṛṣadvatī and Hiraṇvatī.

Kurukṣetra was also called Sannihatī or Sannihatya. Vide those words in the list of tīrthas. The Vāmanapurāṇa (32. 3-4) says that Sarasvatī springs from a plakṣa tree, that after piercing many hills it enters Dvaitavana. Vāmana (32. 6-22) contains a eulogy of Sarasvatī by Mārkaṇḍeya. Alberuni (Sachau, vol. I p. 261) states that the river Sarasvatī falls into the sea at the distance of a bowshot east of Somnāth. There is a small but holy stream called Sarasvatī, that rises in the Mahikantha hills and after crossing the south-east corner of Palanpur Agency passes by Siddhapura and Pāṭan, flows underground for some miles and then enters the Runn of Cutch (Bom. G. vol. V. p. 283).^{1557a}

MATHURA

Till now it has not been possible to trace an express Vedic reference to Mathurā, the chief city of the country of Śūrasena. But its existence from at least the 5th century B. C. appears

^{1557a}. Vide A. S. R. of India, vol. 14 pp 97-106 for an exhaustive list of tīrthas in Kurukṣetra.

to rest on firm ground. It is stated in the *Āṅguttaranikāya* (I. 167, *ekam samayam āyasmā Mahākaccāno Madhurāyam viharati Gundāvane*) and *Majjhima* (II. 84 same words) that Mahākaccāyana, a famous disciple of Buddha, assiduously preached in Mathurā the principles of his Master. Megasthenes appears to have known Mathurā and its connection with Heracles¹⁵⁵⁸ (Hari-Kṛṣṇa?). The word 'Māthura' (meaning a resident of Mathurā, or born in or coming from Mathurā) occurs in Jaimini's *Pūrva-mīmāṃsā-sūtra*.¹⁵⁵⁹ Though Pāṇini's *sūtras* do not expressly mention Mathurā, the latter is included in the *Varaṇādi-gaṇa* (Pāṇ. IV. 2. 82). Pāṇini is, however, aware of Vāsudeva and Arjuna (IV. 3. 98), the Andhaka and Vṛṣṇi clans of Yādavas to which Kṛṣṇa belonged (IV. 1. 114) and probably knew the name Govinda (III. 1. 138 and *vārtika* 'gavi ca vindeḥ sañjñāyām'). Mathurā is several times mentioned by the *Mahābhāṣya* of Patañjali who¹⁵⁶⁰ in a famous passage refers to dramatic representations, paintings and stories which depict the destruction of Kāṃsa by Vāsudeva. He also cites a quarter of a verse about the killing of Kāṃsa by Vāsudeva as a well-known past event. Whether the town Śaurya mentioned in the *Mahābhāṣya* on *Vārtika* 2 on Pāṇini II. 4.7 (Śauryam ca Ketavatā ca Śaurya-Ketavate) is the same as Mathurā is doubtful, even though the *Uttarādhyaṇasūtra* speaks of Mathurā as Śauryapura (S. B. E. vol. 45 p. 112). The *Ādiparva* (221. 46) indicates that Mathurā was famed for excellent cows

1558. Vide McCrindle's 'Megasthenes and Arrian' p. 201 where it is said that Heracles was held in special honour by the Sauraseni tribe (Sūrasena) which possessed two large cities, Mathurā and Kleisobora (Kṛṣṇapura?), while Ptolemy calls it 'Modoura of the gods' (vide McCrindle's 'Ancient India as described by Ptolemy', ed. of 1927, p. 124).

1559. स्याद्योगाख्या हि माथुरवत् । जै. I. 3. 21 on which शबर says यतो दृश्यते मथुरामभिप्रस्थितो माथुर इति मथुरायां वसन् मथुरायां निर्गतश्च. The तन्त्रवार्तिक (p. 251) finds fault with the words underlined.

1560. न ह्येको देवदत्तो युगपत्सुग्रे च भवति मथुरायां च । महाभाष्य vol. I. pp. 18, 19 and 244 ; सप्तम्यर्थेऽपि वै वतिर्भवति तद्यथा । मथुरायामिव मथुरावत् । पाटलिपुत्र इव पाटलिपुत्रवत् । महाभाष्य vol. I. p. 192 (on पा. I. 2. 1) and vol. III. p. 299 (on पा. VII. 2. 62, वार्तिक 3). Vide note 1409 above where माथुर cloth is said to be inferior to काशिक cloth and my paper on 'Ancient cities and towns mentioned in the Mahābhāṣya' JBBRAS vol. 27 pp. 39-42 (1951) for other references. ये तावदेते शोभनिका नामैते प्रत्यक्षं कंसं घातयन्ति बलिं बन्धयन्तीति ।... केचित्कंसभक्ता भवन्ति केचिद्वासुदेवभक्ताः । महाभाष्य vol. III. p. 36 on पा. III. 1. 26 and वार्तिक 15 ; प्रयोक्तुर्दर्शनविषये इति किमर्थम् । जघान कंसं विकलं वासुदेवः । महाभाष्य (vol. II, p. 119 on पा. III. 2. 111),

in those days. When Hamsa and Dimbhaka, brave commanders of Jarāsandha, drowned themselves in the Jumnā and when Jarāsandha sorrowfully went to Magadha Kṛṣṇa says 'we shall again joyfully reside in Mathurā' (Sabhāparva 14. 41-45). Ultimately Kṛṣṇa is said to have left Mathurā owing to the constant attacks of Jarāsandha and established the Yādavas in Dvārakā¹⁵⁶¹ (Sabhāparva, 14. 49-50 and 67). The Brahmapurāṇa, on the other hand, states that the Vṛṣṇis and Andhakas on the advice of Kṛṣṇa left Mathurā through the fear of Kālayavana. Vide also Vi. V. 23. 8-15. The Vāyu (88. 185) states that Śatrughna, the brother of Rāma, killed the demon Lavaṇa, son of Madhu and established Mathurā in Madhuvana while the Rāmāyaṇa (Uttara-kāṇḍa 70. 6-9) informs us that Śatrughna took twelve years to make Mathurā a fine and prosperous city. In the Ghāṭa-jātaka (Fausböll, vol. IV. pp. 79-89 No. 454) Mathurā is called Uttara Madhurā (to distinguish it from Madhurā of the Pāṇḍyas in the south) and the story of Kamsa and Vāsudeva is narrated, which differs in some material points from the Mahābhārata and the Purāṇas. In the Raghuvamśa XV.28 it is mentioned as Madhurā and as founded by Śatrughna. Hiouen Tshang states that in Mathurā there existed in his day three *stūpas* built by Aśokarāja, that there were in Mathurā five Deva temples, 20 *sanghārāmas* (Buddhist convents) with 2000 Buddhist priests (Beal's B. R. W. W. vol. I. p. 179). James Allan (in 'Catalogue of the coins of Ancient India' 1936, p. CXVI) states that the coins of the Hindu kings of Mathurā cover the period from the beginning of the 2nd century B. C. to the middle of the first century B. C. For some ancient coins from Mathurā, the Cambridge History of India, vol. I, p. 538 and plate V (No. 5-10) may be referred to. An interesting and informative work is 'Mathurā' by F.S. Growse (2nd ed. 1880). Inscriptions contribute important evidence about the history and antiquity of Mathurā.¹⁵⁶² The famous inscription of Khāravela (E. I. vol. XX. at p. 79) includes among the exploits of that king of Kalinga the retreat of the Yavana king Dimita to Madhurā (i. e. Mathurā). Several

1561. वयं चैव महाराज जरासन्धभयात्तदा । मथुरां सम्परित्यज्य गता द्वारवतीं पुरीम् ॥ सभा 14. 67; ततो वृष्णयन्धकाः कृष्णं पुरस्कृत्य महामतिम् । समेता मन्त्रयामासुर्यवनस्य भयात्तदा । कृत्वा विनिश्चयं सर्वे पलायनमरोचयन् । विहाय मथुरां रम्यां मानयन्ः पिनाकिनम् । कुशस्थलीं द्वारवतीं निवेशयितुमीप्सवः ॥ ब्रह्म 14. 54-56.

1562. Vide Dr. B. C. Law's learned paper on 'Mathurā in Ancient India' in J. A. S. of Bengal, vol. XIII (for 1947) pp. 21-30.



Inscriptions of such Kuṣāṇa rulers as Kanīṣka, Huviṣka and others relating to Mathurā have been published of which the following may be mentioned: Inscription on a Nāga image at Mathurā of 'Mahārāja-rājātirāja Kanikkha' in *samvat* 8 (E. I. vol. 17. p. 10) ¹⁵⁶³; the Mathurā pedestal Inscription of Kanīṣka in the 14th year (E. I. vol. 19 p. 96); inscription on the pedestal of the image of a seated Bodhisattva at Mathurā in the reign of Huviṣka in *samvat* 33 (E. I. vol. 8 pp. 181-182); Inscription of a king Vāsu (rest of the name lost) of the year 74 (E. I. vol. 9 p. 241) and of the time of Śoṇḍāsa (E. I. vol. 9 p. 246); seven Brāhmī inscriptions from Mathurā and its vicinity (E. I. vol. 24 pp. 194-210). There is further an interesting inscription recording the dedication of a stone slab in the temple of Nāgendra Dadhikarṇa by Nandibala and other sons of some actor (Śailālaka) brothers of Mathurā (E. I. vol. I. at p. 390). From the Viṣṇu-purāṇa VI. 8. 31 it follows that an image of Hari had been installed in Mathurā before that purāṇa was composed. The Vāyupurāṇa ¹⁵⁶⁴ informs us in a prophetic vein that seven Nāga kings will rule over Mathurā, Prayāga, Śāketa and Magadha before the Guptas. Alberuni's India (vol. II. p. 147) states that Māhurā (Mathurā) is crowded with brāhmaṇas.

From the above brief historical sketch it would appear that Mathurā was, five or six centuries before Christ, a flourishing city where the epic Hinduism prevailed, that later on Buddhism and Jainism dominated it, that there must have been a revival of Hinduism under the Nāga and Gupta emperors, that in the 7th century A. D., when Hiouen Thsang wrote, Hinduism and Buddhism were equally prominent and that in the 11th century A. D. it was completely dominated by the Brahmanic faith.

The Agnipurāṇa furnishes the strange information that Bharata at the command of Rāma killed three crores of the sons of Śailūṣa in the city of Mathurā ¹⁵⁶⁵. Mathurā has been

1563. The generally accepted date for Kanīṣka is 78 A. D. Vide Journal of the Bihar and Orissa R. Society, vol. 23 (1937) pp. 113-117 (by Dr. A. Banerji-Sastri).

1564. नव नाकास्तु (नागास्तु?) भोक्ष्यन्ति पुरीं चम्पावतीं नृपाः । मथुरां च पुरीं स्मर्यां नागा भोक्ष्यन्ति सप्त वै । अलुगङ्गं प्रयागं च साकेतं मगधांस्तथा । एताब् जनपदास्सर्वान् भोक्ष्यन्ते शुतवंशजाः ॥ वायु 99. 382-83, Br. III. 74. 194. Vide Jayaswal, 'History of India' (150-350 A. D.) pp. 3-15 for the Nāga dynasty.

1565. अभूत्पूर्मथुरा काचिद्रामोक्तो भरतोवधीत् । कोटित्रयं च शैलूषपुत्राणां निशितः शरैः ॥ शैलूषं दृष्टगन्धर्वं सिन्धुतीरनिवासिनम् । अग्नि 11. 8-9. शैलूष also means an

(Continued on the next page)



the centre of Kṛṣṇa worship and of Bhāgavatism for over two thousand years. The Varāha-purāṇa devotes about one thousand verses to the greatness of Mathurā and its sub-tīrthas (chap. 152-178). The Br̥han-nāradiya, chapters 79-80, Bhāgavata X and Viṣṇu-purāṇa V-VI devote much space to Kṛṣṇa, Rādhā, Mathurā, Vṛndāvana, Govardhana and Kṛṣṇa's exploits there.

For want of space only a few verses about Mathurā will be set out here. The Padma (Ādikhaṇḍa 29. 46-47) says 'Yamunā gives mokṣa when united with Mathurā; Yamunā gives rise to great merit in Mathurā and when united to Mathurā it bestows devotion to Viṣṇu'. In the Varāhapurāṇa (152. 8, 11) Viṣṇu says 'There is no place either in the nether regions or on the earth or in mid air as dear to me as Mathurā. Mathurā is a famous kṣetra of mine that confers *mukti*; no place is to me higher than it. It is my birth-place and it is lovely, commendable and dear to me'. The Padma says 'Māthuraka is a name extremely dear to Viṣṇu'. The Harivamśa contains a fine description of Mathurā, one verse from which may be quoted here 'Mathurā is the hump (i. e. the most eminent spot) of Madhyadeśa, it is simply the abode of the goddess of wealth, it is the horn (i. e. the most prominent part) of the earth, there is nothing like it and it is endowed with abundant wealth and agricultural produce'.¹⁵⁶⁶

The tract round about Mathurā is said to be 20 yojanas in extent and the city of Mathurā was in its midst¹⁵⁶⁷. The Varāhapurāṇa and the Nāradiya (uttarārdha) chapters 79-80 mention numerous tīrthas in and about Mathurā. It is not possible to enumerate them here. A few important ones will be noticed briefly. Both Varāha (chap. 153 and 161 6-10) and Nāradiya (uttarārdha 79. 10-18) mention twelve forests near Mathurā viz. Madhu, Tāla, Kumuda, Kāmya, Bahula, Bhadra,

(Continued from the last page)

actor. Has this anything to do with a dispute between the followers of Bharata, the reputed author of the Nāṭyaśāstra, and other actors? The Nāṭyaśāstra chap. 17. 47 (G.O.S.) prefers the dialect of Sūrasena for dramas. Vide my 'History of Sanskrit Poetics' p. 40 (1951).

1566. तस्मान्माथुरकं नाम विष्णोरैकान्तबल्लभम् । पद्म. IV. 69. 12; मध्यदेशस्य ककुदं धाम लक्ष्म्याश्च केवलम् । शृङ्गं पृथिव्याः स्वालक्ष्यं प्रभूतधनधान्यवत् ॥ हरिवंश, पर्व 57. 2-3.

1567. विंशतिर्योजनानां तु माथुरं परिमण्डलम् । तन्मध्ये मथुरा नाम पुरी तमोत्तमा ॥ नारदीय (उत्तर) 79. 20-21.



Khādira, Mahāvana, Lohajāṅgha, Bilva, Bhāṇḍīra and Vṛndāvana. There are also 24 upavanas enumerated by Growse on 'Mathurā' (p. 76) which are not mentioned by the Purāṇas but only by later works. Vṛndāvana¹⁵⁶⁸ was to the north-west of Mathurā on the Yamunā and was five yojanas in extent (Viṣṇupurāṇa V. 6. 28-40, Nāradiya, uttarārdha 80. 6, 8 and 77). It was the scene of Kṛṣṇa's adventures and love-making. The Padma IV. 69. 9 speaks of it as a portion of Vaikuṇṭha on the earth. The Matsya (13. 38) identifies Rādhā in Vṛndāvana as Devī Dākṣāyaṇī.¹⁵⁶⁹ In Kālidāsa's day it had great fame. In Raghuvamśa VI, while describing Suśeṇa of the Nipa family, king of Śūrasena, Vṛndāvana is said to be no less charming than Caitraratha, the park of Kubera (verse 50). Then there is the Govardhana¹⁵⁷⁰ hill, which Kṛṣṇa lifted up on his little finger to afford shelter for seven days to the cowherds and their cattle against the heavy rains sent down by Indra (Viṣṇupurāṇa V. 11. 15-25). It is stated in the Varāhapurāṇa (164. 1) that Govardhana is about two yojanas from Mathurā to its west. This appears to be tolerably correct as at present it is 18 miles from Vṛndāvana. The Kūrma (I. 14. 18) says that the very ancient king Prthu performed austerities here. The details given in the Hari-vamśa and the Purāṇas are sometimes confused and misleading. For example, in the Hari-vamśa (Viṣṇuparva 13. 3) it is stated that Tālavana is to the north of Govardhana on the Yamunā, while it is south-east of Govardhana. Kālidāsa refers to the caverns of Govardhana (Raghuvamśa 6. 51). Gokula is the same as Vraja or Mahāvana, where

1568. The पद्म (पाताल 75. 8-14) puts an esoteric interpretation on कृष्ण, गोपीs and कालिन्दी. The गोपपत्न्यः are योगिनीs, कालिन्दी is सुषुम्न', कृष्ण is सर्व-व्यापक and so on.

1569. Dey (p. 42) regards the identity of the modern Vṛndāvana which is only 6 miles from Mathurā (in the opposite direction to Gokula) with the ancient Vṛndāvana described in the Purāṇas as extremely doubtful on several grounds, the most cogent being that ancient Vṛndāvana and Mathurā appear to have been situated on opposite sides of the Yamunā, while modern Vṛndāvana and Mathurā are on the same side of the river. But the references he gives for this last statement viz. Viṣṇupurāṇa 5. 18. 33 and Bhāgavatapurāṇa X. 39. 34 do not in my opinion bear out what he says. The Nāradiya (II. 80. 6-7) appears to say that Vṛndāvana is near Govardhana and along the Yamunā and Nandigrāma.

1570. यमी पुण्या नदी यत्र पुण्यो गोवर्धनो गिरिः । तत्किं वृन्दावनात्पुण्यमप्युच्यते ॥ कालिकलम्पभीतानां विषयासक्तचेतसाम् । नान्यद् वृन्दावनात्सेव्यमस्ति गोवर्धनादि त्रिषु ॥ नारदीय (उत्तर) 80. 104-105.



Kṛṣṇa was brought up in his early childhood by Nand-gopa who removed his habitation from Gokula to Vṛndāvana out of fear of what Kāṁsa might do. The great Vaiṣṇavite saint Caitanya visited Vṛndāvana (Caitanya-caritāmṛta canto 19 and 9th Act of the drama Caitanyacandrodaya, both by Kavikarṇa-pūra or Paramānandadāsa). In the 16th century Vṛndāvana became a centre of Caitanya's *bhakti* movement owing to the strenuous efforts and learned writings of the *Gosvāmins* of Vṛndāvana, particularly Sanātana, Rūpa and Jīva. Vide Prof. S. K. De's 'Vaiṣṇava faith and movement in Bengal' (1942) pp. 83-122. Vallabhācārya, who was a contemporary of Caitanya founded new Gokula, one mile to the south of Mahāvana in imitation of the ancient Gokula. Caitanya and Vallabhācārya met at Vṛndāvana (vide Manilal C. Parekh's work on Vallabhācārya p.161). The old temples of Mathurā met the same fate at the orders of Aurangzeb as the temples of Banaras.¹⁵⁷¹

The Sabhāparva (319. 23-25) narrates that Jarāsandha threw his mace from Girivraja (Rājgir in Bihar, the ancient capital of Magadha) and it fell in Mathurā at the distance of 99 yojanas before Kṛṣṇa and the place where it fell was thence called *Gadāvasāna*. I have not come across this name anywhere else.

Growse describes in chap. IX pp. 222 ff. the temples of Vṛndāvana and in chap. XI Govardhana, Barsān, the birth-place of Rādhā, and Nandgaon. Vide also 'Picturesque India' by W. S. Caine pp. 253 ff. for Mathurā and neighbouring holy places.

PURUṢOTTAMATĪRTHA (JAGANNĀTHA)

Much has been written about Puruṣottamatīrtha or Jagannātha, both in Sanskrit and in English. The following works in English may be consulted by those who desire to make a thorough study of the sacred place; W. W. Hunter's 'Orissa'

1571. Vide Elliott and Dowson's 'History of India as told by its own historians' vol. VII p. 184, where a passage from the 'Ma-Asir-i-Ālamgiri' is translated to the effect that "Aurangzeb commanded the destruction of the Hindu temple at Mathurā known by the name of 'Dehra Kesu Rai' (which according to that work had been built at a cost of 33 lakhs of rupees) and soon that stronghold of falsehood was levelled with the ground and on the same spot was laid the foundation of a vast mosque."

vol. I. pp. 81-167, Rajendralal Mitra's 'Antiquities of Orissa' vol. II. pp. 99-144, R. D. Banerji's 'History of Orissa' (in two volumes, 1930), Gazetteer on Purī, vol. XX pp. 409-412.

There are four most important tīrthas in Orissa, viz. Bhuvaneśvara (or Cakratīrtha), Jagannātha (or Śaṅkha-kṣetra), Koṇārka (or Padma-kṣetra), Yaṅpura or Jajpur (Gadākṣetra). The first two are still held in high esteem, while the last two are altogether neglected.

Among the Purāṇas, Puruṣottama-tīrtha is extensively dealt with in the Brahma (chap. 41-70, about 1600 verses), in the Brhannāradiya (uttarārdha chap. 52-61, 825 verses). Among digests, the Tīrtha-cintāmaṇi of Vācaspati that devotes nearly one-third of the work to Puruṣottama-tīrtha (pp. 53-175) and that quotes about 800 verses from the Brahmapurāṇa on Puruṣottama, Raghunandana's Puruṣottama-tattva (which is brief and mostly based on the Brahmapurāṇa) and the Tīrthaprakāśa (pp. 561-594) may be mentioned. It is worthy of note that the Kalpataru (composed about 1110-1120 A. D.) does not describe Puruṣottama-tīrtha in its Tīrthakāṇḍa, though it speaks of a few little known tīrthas like Lohārgala, Stutasvāmin and Kokāmukha.

Raghunandana in his Puruṣottama-tattva quotes a verse¹⁵⁷² (which as printed is corrupt) from the Rgveda that from the context appears to be addressed to some evil spirit (*alaksṃī*) and means 'O evil spirit with a wicked looking chin (or that art difficult to be killed)! Have recourse to that far-off wood in the sea, that has no connection with human beings and go to distant lands with it'. Then he states that the Atharvaveda has a similar verse. Probably following Sāyana's inter-

1572. तथा 'आदौ यद्दारु ऋते सिन्धोः पारे अपूरुषम्। तदालभस्व दुर्दुर्नो तेन याहि परं स्थलम्।' अस्य व्याख्या सांख्यायनभाष्ये। आदौ विप्रकृष्टदेशे वर्तमानं... अपूरुषं निर्मातृ-रहितत्वेन तदालभस्व दुर्दुर्नो हे होतः...। अथर्ववेदेऽपि। आदौ... सिन्धोर्मध्ये अपूरुषम्। तदा... स्थलम्। अत्रापि तथैवार्थः। मध्ये तीरे। पुरुषोत्तमतत्त्वं (Jiv. vol. II. p. 563). The first verse is really Rg. X. 155.3 अदो... अपूरुषम्। तदा रभस्व दुर्दुर्नो तेन गच्छ पर-स्तरम्॥१७॥ सायण takes this vedic verse as referring to पुरुषोत्तम in the words यद्दारु दारुमयं पुरुषोत्तमाख्यं देवताशरीरं... हे दुर्दुर्नो दुःखेन हननीय केनापि हन्तुमशक्य हे स्तोतः आरभस्व अवलम्बस्व उपास्स्वेत्यर्थः॥ सायण mentions a predecessor's interpretation of this verse viz. that it is addressed to an evil spirit (*alaksṃī*) and asks it to resort to a boat or a log of wood (as a scapegoat) and to go to a far-off region where there are no human beings. This interpretation is natural and suits the context very well. I could not trace the verse in the Atharvaveda.

pretation, Raghunandana connects this Rgveda verse with Puruṣottama, the image of which is made of wood.

It would be proper to set out as briefly as possible the story of Jagannātha contained in the Brahmapurāṇa. In Bharatavarṣa there is a country called Oṇḍra situated on the shores of the southern ocean, which extends northwards from the sea up to Viraja-maṇḍala¹⁵⁷³ (chap. 28. 1-2). In that country there is a holy place, destroyer of sins and bestower of *mukti*, surrounded on all sides by sand and ten yojanas in extent (chap. 42. 13-14). There is the famous shrine of Puruṣottama in the country of Utkala the whole of which is very holy owing to the favour of the all-pervading Jagannātha (chap. 42. 35-37). Men who reside in Utkala are blessed like gods since Puruṣottama resides there. Chapters 43 and 44 narrate the story of Indradyumna who ruled at Avantī (Ujjayinī) in Mālava (modern Mālvā). He was a very pious, learned and good king who after reading all Vedas, śāstras, epics, purāṇas and Dharmasāstras came to the conclusion that Vāsudeva was the highest Deity, started from his capital Ujjayinī with a vast army, servants, priests and artisans and came to the shores of the southern sea, saw the kṣetra of Vāsudeva, ten yojanas in breadth and five yojanas in length and encamped there. Formerly there was a Vāṭa tree on the shores of the southern sea near which there was an image of Puruṣottama or¹⁵⁷⁴ Jagannātha made of sapphire, which became embedded in sand and was concealed by creepers and plants. King Indradyumna performed Aśvamedha there, erected a great temple (prāsāda) and was anxious to establish a suitable image of Vāsudeva in the temple. In a dream the king saw Vāsudeva who told him to go alone to the shore in the morning and cut the Vāṭa tree growing just on the water line with an axe. The king did so in the morning and then two brāhmaṇas (who were really Viṣṇu and Viśvakarmā) appeared. Viṣṇu told the king that his associate (Viśvakarmā) will manufacture the image. Three images of Kṛṣṇa, Balarāma and Subhadrā were made and given to the king and Viṣṇu further conferred the boon that the pool called

1573. Virajākṣetra extends a little beyond Jāipur on the river Vaitaraṇī in Orissa. On 'Kaliṅga, Oḍra and Utkala' vide R. D. Banerji's 'History of Orissa' vol. I. pp. 42-58.

1574. उत्तमः पुरुषो यस्मात्तस्मात्स पुरुषोत्तमः ॥ ब्रह्म. 45.52; अस्मिन्नायतने पुण्यं विख्याते पुरुषोत्तमे । इन्द्रनीलमयी श्रेष्ठा प्रतिमा सार्वकामिकी ॥ 45.71: इन्द्रनीलमयो विष्णुर्यत्रास्ते वालुकावृतः । अन्तर्धानगतं नत्वा ततो विष्णुपुरं व्रजेत् ॥ ब्रह्म 58.3.



Indradyumna (where the king bathed at the end of his *Aśva-medha*) will be known by the king's name, that whoever took a bath once in it would go to *Indraloka*, and that whoever offered *piṇḍas* on the bank of the pool would save 21 ancestors of his family. Then the king established the three images in the temple built by him.¹⁵⁷⁵ The *Skandapurāṇa* contains a *Puruṣottamamāhātmya* in a sub-section called *Utkala-khaṇḍa* in its section *Vaiṣṇava-khaṇḍa*, where the story of *Indradyumna* is given with some variations.

Stripping this story of the supernatural, it appears probable that the holy place *Puruṣottama* was called *Nilācala* in very ancient times, that *Kṛṣṇa* worship was introduced from Northern India at that place, and that three images of wood were established in comparatively early times. It may be stated here that in the *Maitrāyaṇī Upaniṣad*¹⁵⁷⁶ an *Indradyumna* is named among a host of *cakravartins*. The *Kūrmapurāṇa* (II. 35. 27) makes a brief and colourless reference to *Puruṣottama* (*tīrtham Nārāyaṇasyānyat-nāmnā tu Puruṣottamam*). *Rajendralal Mitra* ('Antiquities of Orissa') surmises that there were three periods in the history of the *Puruṣottama-kṣetra*, viz. early Hindu period, the Buddhist period and the *Vaiṣṇava* period (after the 5th century A. D. when Buddhism began to wane). He notices that from about the 7th century A. D. considerable temple records on palm leaves exist, but that the temple records for the Buddhist period are untrustworthy (p. 104) and that there are indications that *Purī* was probably a place of Buddhist sanctuary (p. 107). The indications of the existence

1575. Vide Hunter's Orissa vol. I. pp. 89-94 for a somewhat different account based on *Kapilasambhitā*, the most important points of which are that *Viṣṇu* shows to *Indradyumna* as His image a log of wood thrown up by the ocean, that the images were being fashioned by the divine carpenter, that it was ordered that no one was to see them till they were ready and that in spite of this, the queen insisted on seeing them when they had been chiselled only up to the waist and when only stems stood in the place of the arms for the images of *Kṛṣṇa* and *Balarāma*, while the image of *Subhadrā* had no arms at all. The present images are to this day in the same condition. The images are described by *Rajendralal Mitra* in 'Antiquities of Orissa' II. pp. 122-123. The story of *इन्द्रद्युम्न* occurs in *नारदीयपुराणे* सर्ग 52. 41-93, 53-57, 58. 1-21, 60-61. *नारदीय* agrees very closely with the *Brahmapurāṇa* and seems to have borrowed its text from the latter.

1576. परेऽन्ये महाधनुर्धराश्चक्रवर्तिनः केचित् सुद्युम्नभूरिद्युम्नेन्द्रद्युम्नकेवलयाश्व-
यौवनाश्ववध्रश्चाश्वपतिशिशिबिन्दुहरिश्चन्द्राम्बरीषननक्तुसूर्यातिययात्यनरण्योक्षसेनादयः ।
त्रायण्युप. I. 4.



of Buddhism in Orissa are the existence of Aśoka's rock edicts on the Dhauli Hill (C. I. I. vol. I. pp. 84-100), the existence of many caves of the Buddhist period on the Khandagiri range about five miles to the west of Bhuvaneśvara, the procession of the car of Jagannātha which resembles the procession of Buddha's Tooth relic as described by Fa Hien (Hunter's Orissa, vol. I. p. 131-132) and the three crude wooden images of Kṛṣṇa, Subhadrā and Balarāma which are hardly found anywhere else and which correspond to the three peculiarities of Buddhism viz. Buddha, Dharma and Saṅgha. Vide Mitra's 'Antiquities of Orissa,' vol. II. pp. 122-126 (where he gives wood-cuts showing the figures of the images and comparing them with Buddhist symbols and Cunningham's 'Ancient Geography of India' pp. 510-511 (the remarks in which appear to me far-fetched). In J. R. A. S. vol. 18 at p. 402 (new series) Sewell thinks that the celebrated image of Jagannātha was originally one of the Trisūlas or developed Taurus symbols.

At present the sacred enclosure of Jagannātha is a square surrounded by a massive stone wall 20 feet high, 652 feet long and 630 feet broad with 120 temples containing various forms of God, 13 being temples of Śiva, some more of Pārvatī and a temple of the Sun. This clearly shows the catholicity of Jagannātha. Almost every form of Hindu faith is represented here. Even the Brahmapurāṇa gives expression to this tolerant view when it says that the holy Puruṣottama-kṣetra forbids all the wranglings between Śaivas and the devotees of Viṣṇu.^{1576a} The great Pagoda of Jagannātha has four chambers, the first being the Hall of Offerings (bhoga-mandira), the 2nd the pillared hall for music and dance (the *nāṭa* mandira), the third the audience hall where pilgrims assemble (the Jaganmohana mandira) and the 4th the inner sanctuary. The great Pagoda of Jagannātha has a conical tower 192 feet high surmounted by a *cakra* ¹⁵⁷⁷ and a flag. The

1576 a. शैवभागवतानां च वादार्थप्रतिषेधकम् । अस्मिन्क्षेत्रे पुण्ये निर्मले पुरुषोत्तमे ॥ शिवस्यायतनं देव करोमि परमं महत् । प्रतिष्ठेय तथा तत्र तव स्थाने च शङ्करम् ॥ ततो ज्ञास्यन्ति लोकेऽस्मिन्नेकमूर्ती हरीश्वरौ । प्रत्युवाच जगन्नाथः स पुनस्तं महामुनिम् ॥ ... नावयोरन्तरं किञ्चिदेकभावो द्विधा कृतौ ॥ यो रुद्रः स स्वयं विष्णुर्यो विष्णुः स महेश्वरः । ब्रह्मपुराण 56. 64-66 and 69-70.

1577. The *cakra* surmounting the temple is mentioned in the Brahmapurāṇa itself 'यात्रां करोति कृष्णस्य श्रद्धया यः समाहितः । सर्वपापविनिर्मुक्तो विष्णुलोकं व्रजेन्नरः ॥ चक्रं दृष्ट्वा हरेर्द्वारात् प्रासादोपरि संस्थितम् । सहसा मुच्यते पापाङ्गरो भक्त्या प्रणम्य तत् ॥ chap. 51. 70-71 = नारदीय (उ.) 55. 10-11.



temple is situated at the distance of about seven furlongs from the sea shore and stands on a mound about 20 feet above the level of the surrounding ground, the mound being dignified by being called Nilagiri (the blue hill). There is a large gate-way on each side of the enclosure, that on the east being the most magnificent. On each side of the entrance there is a colossal crouching lion and hence the door-way is called *simha-dvāra* (lion gate).

There are certain peculiar features of the great shrine of Jagannātha. In the first place, in the court of Jagannātha and outside the Lion Gate no distinction of caste¹⁵⁷⁸ is observed. Jagannātha is the god of all people. The second special feature is that the holy rice cooked as offering to Jagannātha is regarded as so sanctified that all barriers of caste are transcended, so much so that a Purī priest will receive the holy food even from a low caste Hindu. The feeling is that cooked rice when once placed before Jagannātha never ceases to be pure. Hence the *Mahāprasāda* is dried, is taken to all parts of India and at the periodical *śrāddhas* among Vaiṣṇavas a grain of this holy rice is invariably put on the cake as the most sacred article that can be offered to the Manes (vide Mitra's 'Antiquities of Orissa', vol. II p. 199). The third special feature of Jagannātha is the car festival (*rathayātrā*) which is the most important of the 24 high^{1578a} festivals at Purī. The festival is described at length by Hunter in his 'Orissa', vol. I. pp. 131-134. The car festival starts on the 2nd day of the bright half of Āśāḍha. The car of Jagannātha is about 45 feet in height, 35 feet square and is supported on 16 wheels of 7 feet diameter with 16 spokes and has Garuḍa as a crest; the 2nd car is that of Subhadrā, which is a little smaller than Jagannātha's car, resting on 12 wheels with 12 spokes in each and having a *padma* (lotus) as a crest; the 3rd car is that of Balarāma resting on 14 wheels with 14 spokes in each wheel and has Hanūmān for crest. The cars are drawn by pilgrims and hired labourers from the temple to

1578. Hunter in 'Orissa' (vol. I. pp. 135-136) notes that only 21 classes and castes (including Christians and Mahomedans) are excluded, they being mostly flesh-eating and animal-life destroying castes. Even the washerman and the potter whom Hunter includes in the list are allowed to enter the outer court.

1578a. विद्यानिवास (in the middle of 15th century A.D. in Bengal) wrote a work called द्वादशयात्राप्रयोगप्रमाण on 12 festivals in 12 months connected with जगन्नाथ (vide No. 2429 in MM. Haraprasad Sastri's Cat. of mss. vol. III)

the country-house of Jagannātha (which is about two miles away) amidst the shouts and emotional songs of thousands of pilgrims. Owing to the references in English literature to the car of Jagannātha it is supposed by many that pilgrims used to throw themselves before the car in a religious frenzy and were killed. But there is hardly any truth in these suppositions. There might have been a few accidental deaths. Hunter in 'Orissa' (vol. I. pp. 133-34) scouts this idea of suicide under the car and Rajendralal observes (in 'Antiquities of Orissa', vol. II. p. 99) 'No Indian divinity has a more unenviable notoriety in English Literature than Jagannātha. It is certain, nevertheless, that human conception has never realized a more innocent and gentle divinity than Jagannātha and the tenets of his votaries are the very reverse of sanguinary or revolting. Never was opprobrium more unjustly cast on an inoffensive object than in this instance and none merited it less'. On the 10th day of the bright half begins the return of the car from the country house.

According to Rajendralal Mitra the oldest temple in Puri is that of Alābukeśvara built by Lalāṭendu Kesari (623-677 A. D.), the builder of the tower of Bhuvaneśvara; the next oldest is Mārkaṇḍeśvara and next comes the great temple of Jagannātha (vol. II. p. 112). Manmohan Chakravarti in his paper on the 'date of Jagannātha temple in Puri' (J. A. S. B., vol. 67 for 1898, part 1 pp. 328-331) quotes two verses from the Gaṅgavaṁśa copper plates of Orissa which state that Gaṅgeśvara alias Coḍagaṅga built the great temple of Puruṣottama¹⁵⁷⁹. As Coḍagaṅga's coronation took place in śake 999 (i. e. 1078 A. D.) according to M. M. Chakravarti, he put forward the view that the *prāsāda* of Jagannātha was built about 1085-1090 A. D. Dr. D. C. Sirkar (in 'God Puruṣottama at Puri' J. O. R., Madras vol. 17 pp. 209-215) points out that the celebrated Oriya Chronicle *Mādalā-pāñjī* attributes the construction of Puruṣottama Jagannātha not to Coḍagaṅga but to his great-grandson Anaṅga-bhīma III, who also installed an image of Puruṣottama in a temple at Vārāṇasī-Kaṭaka (modern Cuttack)

1579. प्रासादं पुरुषोत्तमस्य नृपतिः को नाम कर्तुं क्षमस्तस्येत्याद्यनूपैरुपेक्षितमयं चक्रेऽथ गङ्गेश्वरः ॥ These verses establish that the shrine of Puruṣottama existed long before the date of the inscription and that the kings who preceded Coḍagaṅga did not care to build a befitting temple. It appears that Coḍagaṅga built only the minor sanctum and the Jaganmohana i. e. the first mandapa (vide R. D. Banerji's 'History of Orissa' vol. I. p. 251)

which was desecrated by Sultan Firuz Shah (vide Elliot and Dowson's 'History of India', vol. III, pp. 312-315). These Gaṅga kings built magnificent temples at Bhuvaneśvara (ancient Ekāmra), Koṇārka and Puri, which are the finest surviving specimens of North Indian Hindu Architecture. Mitra ('Antiquities of Orissa' vol. II, pp. 109-110) and Hunter ('Orissa' vol. I pp. 100-102) note that Anāṅga-bhīma wanted to eclipse the grand tower of Bhuvaneśvara and renovated the temple of Jagannātha in śake 1119 (i. e. 1198 A. D.).¹⁵⁸⁰

The temple of Jagannātha has an army of attendants. They are divided into 36 orders and 97 classes. At the head was the Raja of Khurdha who called himself the 'sweeper of Jagannātha' (vide Hunter's 'Orissa', vol. I. p. 128).

As in Banaras, so here also there are five important tīrthas,¹⁵⁸¹ viz. the pool of Mārkaṇḍeya, the Vata tree (identified with Kṛṣṇa), Balarāma, the sea and Indradyumna pool. A few words may be said here about each. The story of Mārkaṇḍeya is narrated in Brahmapurāṇa, chapters 52-56 and in Nṛsiṃha-purāṇa 10.21 ff (briefly). In chap. 56. 72-73 Viṣṇu asks Mārkaṇḍeya to build a temple of Śiva to the north of Jagannātha and to construct a sacred pool which thenceforward was to become known as 'Mārkaṇḍeya's pool'. The Brahmapurāṇa provides that the pilgrim should bathe in Mārkaṇḍeya's pool, dip his head thrice, utter a mantra (chap. 57. 3-4), then he should perform *tarpaṇa*, go to the temple of Śiva (called Mārkaṇḍeyeśvara) and worship him with the Mūlamantra¹⁵⁸² viz. 'Om namaḥ Śivāya', then with another mantra called Aghora and a Paurāṇic mantra. The pilgrim should, after a bath in Mārkaṇḍeya's pool and visit to the temple of Śiva, repair to the sacred Vata, circum-ambulate it

1580. 'शकाब्दे रन्ध्रशुभ्रांशुरूपनक्षत्रनायके । प्रासादं कारयामासानङ्गभीमेन धीमता ॥
Vide Mitra's work vol. II, p. 110 and 'History of Orissa' by R. D. Banerji vol I. p. 248 for the date of Codagaṅga's accession taken from his own inscription of śake 1003 (1081 A. D.).

1581. मार्कण्डेयं वटं कृष्णं रौहिण्यं महोदधिम् । इन्द्रद्युम्नसरश्चैव पञ्चतीर्थविधिः
स्मृतः ॥ ब्रह्म 60. 11.

1582. मूलमन्त्रेण संपूज्य मार्कण्डेयस्य चेश्वरम् । अघोरेण च भो विष्णोर्नमोऽस्तु
प्रसादयेत् ॥ त्रिलोचन नमस्तेस्तु नमस्ते शशिभूषण । त्राहि मां त्वं विरूपाक्ष महोदधे नमोऽस्तु
ते ॥ ब्रह्म. 57. 7-8 = नारदीय (उ.) 55. 18-19. The ती. चि. p. 88 states that the
अघोरमन्त्र is 'ओं अघोरेभ्यो घोरेभ्यो घोरतरेभ्यः, सर्वेभ्यः सर्वसर्वेभ्यो नमस्तेऽस्तु रुद्ररूपेभ्यः'.

thrice, worship it with the mantra ¹⁵⁸³ noted below. It may be noted that the Brahmapurāṇa 157.17 expressly states that the Vata is Viṣṇu Himself in that form (nygrodhākṛtikam Viṣṇum praṇipatya). The Vata is also styled Kalpavṛkṣa (Brahma 57. 12, 60. 18). The pilgrim should bow to Garuḍa standing in front of Kṛṣṇa and then worship Kṛṣṇa, Saṅkarṣaṇa and Subhadra with mantras. The mantras for Saṅkarṣaṇa are verses 22-23 of Brahmapurāṇa chap. 57 and that for Subhadra is chap. 57. 58. ¹⁵⁸⁴ The mantra to be used in the worship of Kṛṣṇa is either of 12 syllables (om namo bhagavate Vāsudevāya) or of eight syllables (om namo Nārāyaṇāya). Brahmapurāṇa chap. 57 verses 42-51 specify the various rewards of seeing Kṛṣṇa with devotion and wind up by promising mokṣa. ¹⁵⁸⁵ A bath in the sea at Purī is always commendable, but particularly on the Full Moon day (Brahma 60. 10). Brahma chap. 62 deals at length with the bath in the sea (the whole of it except one verse being quoted by Tīr. C. pp. 126-128). The Indradyumna pool has been mentioned above (pp. 694-95). The pilgrim has to bathe in the Indradyumna pool, perform *tarpaṇa* for gods, sages and *pitṛs* and offer *pīṇḍas* to his ancestors (chap. 63. 2-5).

In the Govindapur stone Inscription of the poet Gaṅgādhara (E. I. vol. II. p. 330) of *śake* 1059 i. e. (1137-38 A. D.) there is a clear reference to Puruṣottama. ¹⁵⁸⁶

The Brahmapurāṇa chap. 66 speaks of the Guṇḍicāyātrā for seven days on the bank of the Indradyumna pool in a *maṇḍapa* where reside (temporarily) Kṛṣṇa, Saṅkarṣaṇa and Subhadra. The Tīr. C. which quotes the whole of that chapter (pp. 157-159), calls it Guṇḍikā, while in the drama Caitanya-

1583. ओं नमोऽव्यक्तरूपाय महाप्रलयकारिणे । महद्रूपोपविष्टाय न्यग्रोधाय नमोस्तु ते ॥ अमरस्त्वं सदा कल्पे हरेश्चायतनं वट । न्यग्रोध हर मे पापं कल्पवृक्ष नमोऽस्तु ते ॥ ब्रह्म. 57. 13-14 = नारदीय (उ.) 55. 24-25 (with slight variations).

1584. नमस्ते सर्वगे देवि नमस्ते शुभसौख्यदे । त्राहि मां पद्मपत्राक्षि कात्यायनि नमोस्तु ते ॥ ब्रह्म. 57. 58 = नारदीय (उ.) 55. 64.

1585. किं कार्यं बहुभिर्मन्त्रैर्मनोविभ्रमकारकैः । ओं नमो नारायणायेति मन्त्रः सर्वार्थसाधकः ॥ ब्रह्म. 60. 24 = नारदीय (उ.) 56. 35 ; किं चात्र बहुनोक्तेन माहात्म्ये तस्य भो द्विजाः । दृष्ट्वा कृष्णं नरो भक्त्या मोक्षं प्राप्नोति दुर्लभम् ॥ ब्रह्म. 57. 51 = नारदीय (उ.) 55. 57.

1586. गत्वा श्रीपुरुषोत्तमं (भग)वयो हृद्यः प्रतिष्ठापदं पारावारतटे पटीयसि लसच्चन्द्रग्रहानेहसि । सर्वस्वं विततार तर्पितपितृस्तोमः करोह्यसितैस्तोयैर्यः पिहितस्य पर्वणि विधोः साहाय्यमाप क्षणम् ॥ verse 12 of E. I. II. at p. 334.



candrodaya¹⁵⁸⁷ it is styled Gundicā at the very beginning. It appears that Gundicā is the summer house of Jagannātha about two miles from the great Temple. The word is probably derived from *gunḍi*, which means a thick log of wood in Bengali and Uriya (vide Mitra's 'Antiquities of Orissa', vol. II. pp. 138-139) and has reference to the legend of a log of wood that Indradyumna found floating in the sea.

It may be noted that religious suicide at Puruṣottama is referred to in Brahmapurāṇa:¹⁵⁸⁸ 'those who give up their body (life) in Puruṣottama-kṣetra after mounting up the Vāṭa tree or do so between the Vāṭa and the ocean reach without doubt mokṣa. A man abandoning life, either intentionally or unintentionally, either on his way to Puruṣottama or in the cemetery or in the country house (of Jagannātha) or in the streets (of Jagannātha) or even anywhere else there secures mokṣa. Therefore men desiring mokṣa should by all means give up life at that holy place'.

The Brahmapurāṇa winds up by saying 'it is thrice¹⁵⁸⁹ true that that kṣetra (Puruṣottama) is the greatest and highest

1587. सूत्रधारः। भगवतः श्रीपुरुषोत्तमस्य गुण्डिचायात्रायां ... गजपतिना प्रताप-
रुद्रेणादिष्टोस्मि।... सोयं नीलगिरीश्वरः सविभवो यात्रा च सा गुण्डिचा। चैतन्यचन्द्रोदय I.
(B. I. series). The metre requires that the first two syllables in the name of
the Yātrā should be गुण्डि and चा and वा may have been easily confused by
the copyists of mss. The नारदीय (उ.) chap. 61.40 ff quotes the whole of
ब्रह्म chap. 66 but reads गुण्डिचा. The ब्रह्मपुराण reads 'सप्ताहं सरसस्तीरे तव राजन्
भविष्यति। गुण्डिचा (गुण्डिचा?) नाम यात्रा मे सर्वकामफलप्रदा॥ ये मां तत्रार्चयिष्यन्ति
श्रद्धया मण्डपे स्थितम्। सङ्कर्षणं सुभद्रां च विधिवत्सुसमाहिताः॥ ... न तेषां दुर्लभं किञ्चित्
फलं यस्य यदीप्सितम् 166. 8-9 and 12. Some writers such as Nīlāmbaradāsa in
his 'Deul-tola' state that Gundicā was the name of Indradyumna's queen
(Mahtab's 'History of Orissa' p. 161). I owe this last reference to the kind-
ness of Dr. Raghavan of Madras University.

1588. देहं त्यजन्ति पुरुषास्तत्र ये पुरुषोत्तमे। कल्पवृक्षं समासाद्य मुक्तास्ते नात्र
संशयः॥ वटसागरयोर्मध्ये ये त्यजन्ति कलेवरम्। ते दुर्लभं परं मोक्षं प्राप्नुवन्ति न संशयः॥ पथि
श्मशाने गृहमण्डपे वा रथ्याप्रदेशेष्वपि यत्र कुत्र। इच्छन्निच्छन्नापि तत्र देहं संत्यज्य मोक्षं
लभते मनुष्यः॥ तस्मात्सर्वप्रयत्नेन तस्मिन् क्षेत्रे द्विजोत्तमाः। देहत्यागो नरैः कार्यो सम्यङ्मोक्षा-
भिकाङ्क्षिभिः॥ ब्रह्म 177. 16, 17, 24, 25. The first three are quoted by ती. चि.
p. 175.

1589. सत्यं सत्यं पुनः सत्यं क्षेत्रं तत्परमं महत्। पुरुषाख्यं सकृद् दृष्ट्वा सागराम्भः-
समाप्लुतम्। ब्रह्मविद्यां सकृज्ज्ञात्वा गर्भवासो न विद्यते। ब्रह्म 70. 3-4 (= नारद उक्ताव 52.
25-26) quoted in ती. चि. p. 56 which reads सागराम्भःसकृन्मृतम् and remarks
'एतत्क्षेत्रदर्शनस्य, सागराम्भासि मरणस्य, तथा ब्रह्मविद्याबोधस्य च प्रत्येकं गर्भवासोभावः
फलमित्यर्थः.'



tirtha. A person has not to lie again in the womb after once visiting Puruṣottama which is laved by the waters of the sea or by once attaining the knowledge of *brahma*.

The great Vaiṣṇava saint, Caitanya, settled permanently at Puri in 1515 A. D. at the age of thirty and spent eighteen years there till 1533 (when he died). He appears to have made a great impression on the Gajapati king Pratāparudradeva, ruler of Orissa (1497-1540 A. D.). In the drama Caitanyacandrodaya of Kavikarṇapūra the king is shown to be so anxious for meeting the saint that he declares that he would die if the gracious glance of the saint did not fall on him.¹⁵⁹⁰ This should be attributed to the inveterate habit of gross exaggeration rampant in most Sanskrit writers, particularly amongst devotees and followers of great saints. Caitanya came to be worshipped along with Viṣṇu as a deity in Puri and Orissa (vide Hunter's 'Orissa' vol. I. p. 109). Kavikarṇapūra in his drama (8th Act) makes Sārvabhauma say that there is no distinction between God Jagannātha and Caitanya, the only difference being that Jagannātha is 'dārubrahma' (Godhead manifested in a wooden image) and Caitanya is 'narabrahma' (Godhead in human form).¹⁵⁹¹ The Caitanyacaritāmṛta (a poem) of Kavikarṇapūra in cantos 14-18 deals with the devotional and ecstatic life of Caitanya at Puri and presents a vivid picture of Ratha and other festivals of Jagannātha in which Caitanya took a prominent part. I agree with Dr. S. K. De that there is no satisfactory evidence to show that Pratāparudra was actually converted into the new faith ('Vaiṣṇava faith and movement in Bengal' p. 67).

One regrettable feature of the great temple of Jagannātha is the existence of some obscene and lascivious sculptures that disfigure the walls of the temple and the presence of dancing girls with rolling eyes, to which pointed reference is made by all writers, particularly European ones (vide, for example, Indian Antiquary vol. I. p. 322, Hunter's 'Orissa', vol. I pp. 111, 135). The presence of dancing girls is a legacy from the past. The Brahmapurāṇa (chap. 65) in describing the special *snāna* (bath) festival of Jagannātha on the full moon day of

1590. अतःपरं चेत्स न वीक्षते मां न धारयिष्ये वत जीवनं च । चैतन्यचन्द्रोदय 5th Act p. 187.

1591. 'भगवन्, जगन्नाथस्य भवतश्च कृष्णचैतन्यत्वमविशिष्टमेव तथाप्यस्ति कश्चिद्भेदः । असौ दारुब्रह्म भवान् नरब्रह्म ।' सार्वभौम in चैतन्यचन्द्रोदय 8th Act p. 167.



Jyestha mentions, along with the beating of drums and the music of the flute and the lute and the chanting of holy Vedic mantras, handsome veśyas as *chowrie*-bearers in front of the images of Balarāma and Kṛṣṇa. ¹⁵⁹²

NARMADĀ

Next to the Ganges the most sacred rivers of India are the Narmadā and the Godāvarī. A few words about each of these may be said here.

An express reference to the Narmadā has not so far been traced in the Vedic Literature. The Śatapatha Br. (XII. 9. 3. 1) refers to one Revottaras who was a Pāṭava Cākra and sthapati (a chief) and whom the Sṛñjayas expelled (SBE. vol. 44 p. 269) ¹⁵⁹³. Revā is another name for Narmadā ¹⁵⁹⁴ and it is possible to say that Revottaras was named after Revā. A *vārtika* on Pāṇ. IV. 2. 87 derives the word Mahiṣmat (as the name of a country) from 'Mahiṣa'. This is generally identified with Māhiṣmatī (on the Narmadā). So the name Narmadā was probably known to the author of the Vārtikas (about the middle of the 4th century B. C.). The Raghuvamśa VI. 43 speaks of Māhiṣmatī as the capital of Anūpa on the bank of the Revā (i. e. Narmadā).

The Narmadā is frequently mentioned in the Mahābhārata and some of the Purāṇas. The Matsya (chapters 186-194, 554 verses), Kūrma (Uttarārdha, chapters 40-42 verses 189), Padma Ādikhaṇḍa (chap. 13-23, 739 verses, most of which are the same as in the Matsya) deal with greatness of Narmadā and the tīrthas thereon ^{1594a}. The Matsya (194. 45) and Padma (Ādikhaṇḍa 21. 44) state that from the place where the Narmadā falls into the sea up to the Amara-kaṇṭaka mountain (where it rises) there are ten crores of sacred places, while the Agni-purāṇa (113. 2) and Kūrma II. 40. 13 raise the number to 60 crores and 60 thousand. The Nāradiya (uttarārdha chap. 77)

1592. सुनीनां वेदशब्देन मन्त्रशब्दैस्तथापरैः । नानास्तोत्ररवैः पुण्यैः सामशब्दोपबृंहितैः । श्यामैर्वेश्याजनैश्चैव कुचभारावनामिभिः । पीतरक्ताम्बराभिश्च माल्यदामावनामिभिः ॥ ... चामरै रत्नदण्डैश्च वीज्येते रामकेशवौ ॥ ब्रह्मपुराण 65. 15, 17, 18.

1593. रेवोत्तरसमु ह पाटवं चाक्रं स्थपतिं सृञ्जया अपरुद्धुः । शतपथब्रा. XII. 9. 3. 1.

1594. रेवा तु नर्मदा सोमोद्भवा मेकलकन्यका । अमरकोश.

1594 a. It may be noted that the earliest extant digest, viz. *Kalpataru* on tīrthas (pp. 198-205) quotes verses only from the Matsyapurāṇa, chapter 186-189 (in all about 70 verses on Narmadā) and from no other source.



says (verse 1) that there are 400 principal tīrthas on both banks of the Narmadā, but from Amara-kaṇṭaka three crores and a half (verses 4 and 27-28).¹⁵⁹⁵ The Vanaparva (in chap. 188. 103 and chap. 222.24) mentions the Narmadā along with the Godā-varī and other rivers of the south. In the same parva (chap. 89. 1-3) it is stated that the holy Narmadā is in the Ānarta country¹⁵⁹⁶, that it is endowed with *priyaṅgu* creepers and mango groves, that it has strings of Vānīra fruit, that it flows to the west and that all the holy places in the three worlds come for a bath to the Narmadā. The Matsya and Padma declare¹⁵⁹⁷ that the Ganges is holy in Kanakhala, the Sarasvatī in Kurukṣetra, but the Narmadā is holy everywhere whether in a village or in a forest and that the Narmadā purifies the sinner by its very sight while the waters of the Sarasvatī do so by three baths (on three days), of the Yamunā (by baths) in seven days and of the Ganges by a single bath. The Viṣṇu-dharmasūtra (85.8) in enumerating a list of tīrthas that are eminently fit for śrāddha includes the banks of the Narmadā throughout the whole length among them. The Narmadā is said¹⁵⁹⁸ to have started from the body of Rudra which is a poetic way of saying that it rises from Amarakaṇṭaka that is said to be the abode of God Maheśvara and his spouse (Matsya 188.91). The Vāyupurāṇa declares that the holy Narmadā, the best of rivers, is the daughter of the pitṛs and the śrāddhas offered on it become inexhaustible¹⁵⁹⁹. The Matsya and Kūrma both say

1595. Though रेवा and नर्मदा are generally used as synonyms it is found that the भागवतपुराण in V. 19. 18 enumerates them separately (तापी रेवा सुरसा नर्मदा) and the वामनपुराण (13. 25 and 29-30) states that the Revā springs from विन्ध्य and नर्मदा from ऋक्षपाद. सार्धत्रिकोटितीर्थानि गदितानीह वायुना । दिवि भुव्यन्तरिक्षे च रेवायां तानि सन्ति च । नारदीय (उ.) 77. 27-28; vide note 1268 above for similar eulogy of the Ganges.

1596. Ānarta appears to be the ancient name of Gujarat and Kathiawar together. In the Udyogaparva Dvārakā is called Ānarta-nagarī (7. 6). As Narmadā is said to flow through Ānarta it must be supposed that in the times of the Great Epic Ānarta included both southern Gujarat and Kathiawar.

1597. पुण्या कनखले गङ्गा कुरुक्षेत्रे सरस्वती । ग्रामे वा यदि वारण्ये पुण्या सर्वत्र नर्मदा ॥ त्रिभिः सारस्वतं तोयं सप्ताहेन तु यामुनम् । ग्रामे वा यदि वारण्ये पुण्या सर्वत्र नर्मदा ॥ मत्स्य. 186. 10-11 = पद्म, आदिखण्ड 13.6-7 = कूर्म II. 40. 7-8. Vide note 1271 above and compare नारदीय (उत्तरार्ध 77. 30-31) for the 2nd verse.

1598. नर्मदा सरितां श्रेष्ठा रुद्रदेहाद्विनिःसृता । तारयेत्सर्वभूतानि स्थावराणि चराणि च ॥ मत्स्य 190. 17 = कूर्म II. 40. 5 = पद्म (आदि. 17. 13).

1599. पितृणां दुहिता पुण्या नर्मदा सरितां वरा । तत्र श्राद्धानि दत्तानि अक्षयानि भवन्त्युत ॥ वायु 77. 32.



that the river Narmadā has a course of complete 100 yojanas and its breadth is two yojanas¹⁶⁰⁰. Prof. K. V. Rangaswami Aiyangar seizes upon the length of 100 yojanas and says (on p. 199 note 4 of his edition of Kalpataru on Tirtha in G. O. S.) that the Matsya is very accurate, since the length of the Narmadā is now found to be about 800 miles. But he forgets that the breadth is said to be two yojanas (i. e. 16 miles on the scale for a yojana adopted by him). It is not shown how and where (except at the mouth if at all) the Narmadā is 16 miles in breadth in its long course. Both Matsya and Kūrma state that the Narmadā is (rises) from Amarakaṇṭaka which is to the western side of the country of Kalinga.¹⁶⁰¹

The Viṣṇupurāṇa provides that if a man repeats day and night and whenever he has to go inside a dark place the mantra 'Salutation to Narmadā in the morning! salutation to Narmadā at night! O Narmadā! salutation to you; save me from poisonous serpents'¹⁶⁰² he has no danger from serpents.

It is stated in the Kūrma and the Matsya that a man who commits suicide by entering fire or water or by fasting (on some of the tirthas on the Narmadā or on Amarakaṇṭaka) does not return (to this saṁsāra).¹⁶⁰³

The Narmadā is mentioned as Namados by Ptolemy (p. 102). One of the earliest inscriptional references to it occurs in the Eran stone pillar Inscription of Budhagupta in 165 of Gupta era i. e. 484-85 A. D. Vide C. I. I. vol. III. at p. 89.

Several rivers are mentioned as falling into the Narmadā such as Kapilā (on the south bank, Matsya 186. 40, Padma I. 13. 35), Viśalyā (Matsya 186. 46 = Padma II. 13. 35-39), Eraṇḍī (Matsya 191. 42-43, Padma I. 18. 44), Ikṣu-nādī (Matsya 191. 49, Padma I. 18. 47), Kāverī (Matsya 189. 12-13,¹⁶⁰⁴ Padma I. 16. 6).

1600. योजनानां शतं साग्रं श्रूयते सरिदुत्तमा । विस्तारेण तु राजेन्द्र योजनद्वयमायता ॥ कूर्म II. 40. 12 = मत्स्य 186. 24-25. The अग्नि also (113. 2) gives the same measurements.

1601. कलिङ्गदेशपश्चार्धे पर्वतेऽमरकण्डके । पुण्या च त्रिषु लोकेषु रमणीया मनोरमा ॥ कूर्म. II. 40. 9, मत्स्य. 186. 12.

1602. नर्मदायै नमः प्रातर्नर्मदायै नमो निशि । नमोस्तु नर्मदे तुभ्यं ब्राह्मि मां विषसर्पतः ॥ विष्णुपुराण IV. 3. 12-13.

1603. अनाशकं तु यः कुर्यात्तस्मिन्स्तीर्थे नराधिप । गर्भवासे तु राजेन्द्र न पुनर्जायते पुमान् । मत्स्य. 194. 29-30 ; परित्यजति यः प्राणान् पर्वतेऽमरकण्डके । वर्षकोटिज्ञातं सायं रुद्रलोके महीयते ॥ मत्स्य. 186. 53-54.

1604. The northern branch of the Narmadā where the island Omkāra is situated is called Kāverī (Bom. G. vol. 9 p. 295). Vide in the list under Omkāra.

Many sub-tirthas are enumerated, out of which two or three may be mentioned here. One is Maheśvara-tīrtha (i. e. Omkāra) from where Rudra is said to have burnt down with an arrow the three cities of Bānāsura (Matsya 188. 2 ff, Padma I. 15. 2 ff), Śukla-tīrtha (highly praised in Matsya 192. 3 ff about which it is said that the *rājārṣi* Cāṇakya ¹⁶⁰⁵ attained perfection there), Bhṛgutīrtha (at the very ¹⁶⁰⁶ sight of which a man becomes free from sin, a bath in which leads to heaven and death at which ensures non-return to *samsāra*), the Jāmadagnya-tīrtha (where the Narmadā ¹⁶⁰⁷ falls into the sea and where Lord Janārdana secured perfection). The mountain Amarakaṇṭaka is a tīrtha that dispels all sins including brāhmaṇa-murder and it is one yojana all round in extent (Matsya 189. 89, 98). The most important place on the Narmadā is, however, Māhiṣmatī, about the exact location of which scholars have differed. The general consensus of opinion is that Māhiṣmatī is to be identified with Omkāra Māndhātā, an island in the Narmadā about 40 miles south of Indore. It has a long history. Moggaliputta Tissa is said in Buddhist works to have sent missionaries to several countries in the reign of Aśoka (about 247 B. C.), one of which was sent to Mahiṣamaṇḍala. Dr. Fleet in his paper 'Mahiṣamaṇḍala and Māhiṣmatī' (in J. R. A. S. for 1910 pp. 425-447) assigns cogent reasons for identifying Mahiṣamaṇḍala and Māhiṣmatī. Māhiṣmatī was well-known to the Mahābhāṣya, ¹⁶⁰⁸ from a passage in which it follows that by a forced march a person starting from Ujjayinī could reach Māhiṣmatī the next morning. Kālidāsa describes it as surrounded by Revā (Raghuvamśa VI. 43). Māhiṣmatī is mentioned as being on

1605. शुक्रतीर्थं महापुण्यं नर्मदायां व्यवस्थितम् । चाणक्यो नाम राजर्षिः सिद्धिं तत्र समागतः ॥ मत्स्य. 192. 14 = पद्म. I. 19. 13-14 (reads चाणिक्यो). शुक्रतीर्थं is about 10 miles to the east of Broach. राजर्षिः probably means here राज्ञः ऋषिः and not राजा चासौ ऋषिश्च.

1606. उपासते भृगोस्तीर्थं तुष्टो यत्र महेश्वरः ।... दर्शनान्तस्य तीर्थस्य सद्यः पापान्मुच्यते ।... तत्र स्नात्वा दिवं यान्ति ये मृतास्तेऽपुनर्भवाः ॥ मत्स्य. 193 49-50, 52.

1607. ततो गच्छेच्च राजेन्द्र नर्मदोदधिसङ्गमम् ॥ जामदग्न्यमिति ख्यातं सिद्धौ यत्र जनार्दनः ॥ मत्स्य. 194. 34-35.

1608. चित्रीकरणे प्राप्यर्थे कृदन्ताण्डिजं वक्तव्यः ।... उज्जायिन्याः प्रस्थितो माहिष्मत्यो सूर्योद्गमनं सम्भावयते सूर्यमुद्गमयतीति । महाभाष्य on वार्तिक 10 (चित्रीकरणे प्रापि) on III. 1. 26. चित्रीकरणे means when surprise or wonder is to be conveyed. It is surprising if a man were to say that starting from Ujjayinī on foot he would reach Māhiṣmatī the next day at sunrise. The distance between the two would be more than 60 miles.



the Narmadā or Revā in Udyogaparva 19. 23-24, 166. 4, Anusāsana 166. 4, Bhāgavata X. 79. 21, Padma II. 92. 32.

Another ancient city is Bharukaccha or Bhṛgukaccha (modern Broach) for which the entry in the list may be consulted.

GODĀVARĪ

No mention of Godāvarī has so far been found in the Vedic Literature. In Buddhist works there are traditions about Bāvarī, who was a purohita of Mahākosala and then of Pasenadi, who resided in Assaka's territory in the vicinity of Alaka on the Godāvarī and who is said to have sent several disciples to Buddha at Śrāvastī (vide Suttanipāta, S. B. E. vol. X part 2 pp. 184 and 187). The *Vārtika* 'Sāṅkhyāyā nadī-godāvarī-bhyām ca' on Pāṇ. V. 4.75, expressly mentions Godāvarī and has in view 'Saptagodāvara'. The two Epics and Purāṇas contain numerous references to it. The Vanaparva¹⁶⁰⁹ mentions it as a holy river in the south, abounding in gardens and full of water and resorted to by hermits performing austerities. The Aranyakāṇḍa of the Rāmāyaṇa (13.13 and 21) speaks of the country well-known as 'Pañcavaṭī' frequented by herds of deer which is near the Godāvarī and about two yojanas from Agastya's hermitage. It is in the Brahmapurāṇa that the Godāvarī and the subsidiary tīrthas on it have been lauded at great length in chapters 70-175. The Tīrthasāra (a part of Nṛsimha-prasāda) quotes about 60 verses from chapters 89, 91, 106, 107, 116-118, 121, 122, 128, 131, 144, 154, 159, 172 of the Brahmapurāṇa, which fact shows that the chapters on Gautamī in the present Brahmapurāṇa were part of the Brahmapurāṇa at least some centuries before 1500 A. D. Vide my paper in J.B.B.R.A.S. for 1917 p. 27-28. The Brahmapurāṇa generally refers to the Godāvarī as Gautamī.¹⁶¹⁰ It is stated by the Brahmapurāṇa that the Ganges to the south of the Vindhya mountain is called Gautamī and to its north Bhāgīrathī. The Godāvarī is said to be 200 yojanas long and there are three crores and a half of

1609. यस्यामाख्यायते पुण्या दिशि गोदावरी नदी । बह्वारामा बहुजला तपसा चरिता शिवा ॥ वनपर्व 88.2 ; इतो द्वियोजने तात बहुमूलफलोदकः । देशो बहुमृगः श्रीमान् पञ्चवर्ष्य-भिविश्रुतः । ... गोदावर्याः समीपे च मैथिली तत्र रस्यते ॥ रामायण III. 13. 13 and 21.

1610. विन्ध्यस्य दक्षिणे गङ्गा गौतमी सा निगद्यते । उत्तरे सापि विन्ध्यस्य भागश्च भिधीयते । ब्रह्म. 78. 77 q. in तीर्थसार p. 45.

tirthas on it.¹⁶¹¹ Daṇḍakāraṇya is said to be the seed (source or cause) of dharma and *mukti* and the country embraced by the Gautamī is specially the holiest.¹⁶¹² A verse occurring in several purāṇas states 'These countries (of Madhyadeśa) are immediately next to the mountain Sahya: thereon is Godāvarī and that country is the most charming in the whole world. There is Govardhana there which is (like) Mandara and Gandhamādana'.¹⁶¹³ Brahmapurāṇa (chapters 74-76) narrates how Gautama brought the Ganges from the matted hair of Śiva to Brahmagiri where he had his hermitage and how Gaṇeśa helped in the task by means of a ruse. The Nārada-purāṇa (uttarārdha 72) narrates that no rain fell for 12 years while Gautama practised *tapas*, that owing to famine all sages came to Gautama's hermitage, that he brought Gaṅgā to his hermitage, that he sowed śālī grains in the morning and reaped the crop by midday, that this went on till there was plenty of rain and crops, that Śiva appeared to him, that Gautama prayed that Śiva should stay near his hermitage and that hence the hill on which Gautama had his hermitage came to be called Tryambaka (verse 24). Varāha (71. 37-44) also says that Gautama brought Jāhnavī to Daṇḍaka and the river became Godāvarī. The Kūrma (II. 20. 29-35) mentions a long list of rivers and other sacred places and winds up by saying that the Godāvarī is pre-eminently a place for performing śrāddha. It is stated in the Brahmapurāṇa that for the removal of all kinds of distress two alone are declared (as the means) viz. the holy river Gautamī or Śiva who is full of compassion.¹⁶¹⁴ The Brahmapurāṇa describes about a hundred tirthas on the Godāvarī, such as Tryambaka (79.6), Kuśāvarta (80, 1-3), Janasthāna (88.1), Govardhana (chap. 91), Pravarāsaṅgama

1611. तिस्रः कोट्योऽर्धकोटी च योजनानां शतद्वये। तीर्थानि मुनिशार्दूल सम्भविष्यन्ति गौतम। ब्रह्म० 77. 8-9.

1612. धर्मबीजं मुक्तिबीजं दण्डकारण्यमुच्यते। विशेषाद्गौतमीश्रुष्टो देशः पुण्यतमोऽभवत्॥ ब्रह्म० 161.73.

1613. सहस्रस्यानन्तरे चैते तत्र गोदावरी नदी। पृथिव्यामपि कृत्स्नायां स प्रदेशो मनोरमः॥ यत्र गोवर्धनो नाम मन्दरो गन्धमादनः। मत्स्य. 114. 37-38 = वायु 45. 112-113 (reads सहस्रस्य चोत्तरार्धे तु and नाम सुरराजेन निर्मितः) = मार्कण्डेय 54. 34-35 = ब्रह्माण्ड II. 16. 43 (सहस्रस्य चोत्तरान्तेषु and तत्र गोवर्धनं नाम पुरं रामेण निर्मितम्). ब्रह्म 27. 43 (read सहस्रस्य चोत्तरे यस्तु and गोवर्धनपुरं रम्यं भार्गवस्य महात्मनः।).

1614. सर्वदुःखापनोदाय द्वयमेव प्रकीर्तितम्। गौतमी वा पुण्यनदी शिवो वा करः॥ ब्रह्म. 124. 93,

(106) and Nivāsapura¹⁶¹⁵ (106. 55), Vañjarāsaṅgama (159) but they have to be passed over from considerations of space. A few words must, however, be said about Nasik, Govardhana, Pañcavaṭī and Janasthāna. Nasik must have existed at least 200 years before Christ. An Inscription on one pillar of the railing at Bharhut *stūpa* (about 200 B. C.) records the gift of Gorakṣitā of Nasik, the wife of Vasuka.¹⁶¹⁶ This is the earliest certain historical reference to Nasik discovered so far. The Mahābhāṣya¹⁶¹⁷ speaks of Nāsikya as a city. The Vāyupurāṇa (45.130) mentions Nāsikya as a country. The Nasik Inscriptions in the Paṇḍulēnā caves (Bombay Gazetteer vol. 16 pp. 544-639 and E. I. vol. VIII pp. 59-96 edited by Senart) establish that Nasik was a prosperous place in the centuries before and after Christ. Ptolemy (about 150 A. D.) mentions Nasika (Ptolemy p. 156). It is not possible for reasons of space to go into the detailed history of Nasik, its bathing places and pools, its temples, pilgrimages and rites of worship. For these one may consult the Bombay Gazetteer, vol. 16 (for Nasik District). That volume states that there are about 60 temples in Nasik (pp. 503-512) and 16 in Pañcavaṭī and one on the left bank of the Godāvarī (pp. 512 ff.). But hardly any really old temple has survived. In 1680 A. D. twenty-five temples at Nasik were destroyed by the Deccan Viceroy of Aurangzeb. Almost all the large temples that adorn Nasik were built during the times of the Peshwas of Poona (1750-1818). Three temples are specially worthy of mention, viz. the the Rāmji temple in Pañcavaṭī and Nāro Shankar's temple (or Bell temple) on the left bank of the Godāvarī near the first crossing and that of Sundara-nārāyaṇa in Āditwar Peth at Nasik (p. 503). The Sītā-gumphā (Sītā cave) in Pañcavaṭī close to some very old and tall Banyan trees that are believed to have sprung from the five trees that gave the name to the

1615. शिवशक्त्योर्यतस्तस्मिन्निवासोऽभूत्सनातनः। अतो वदन्ति मुनयो निवासपुरमित्यदः। प्रवरायाः पुरा देवाः सुमीतास्ते वरान् ददुः॥ ब्रह्म. 106. 53-54. निवासपुर is Newasa on the Pravara which falls into the Godāvarī at the sacred place called Toka. The great Marathi poet and saint Jñāneśvara wrote his commentary on the Gitā at Newasa.

1616. Vide Bharhut *stūpa* (by Cunningham) p. 138 'नासिक-शोरखितयथभो दानं वसुकस भारियाय' (No. 87).

1617. नासिक्यं नगरमिति सङ्काशादिषु पाठः करिष्यते। महाभाष्ये vol. III, p. 42 on पा. VI. 1. 63. सङ्काश occurs as one among many *gaṇas* in पा. IV. 2. 80. नासिक्य is derived from नासिका (nose) and was probably so named because the nose of Sūrpanakhā was cut off by Lakṣmaṇa there,

place is a much frequented place. Not far from the Sitā-gumphā is the temple of Kālā Rāma, one of the finest modern temples in Western India. There are numerous bathing places and sacred pools (*kunḍas*) between Govardhana (6 miles to the west of Nasik) and Tapovana (1½ miles to south-east of Nasik). Vide Bombay Gazetteer vol. 16 pp. 522-526. The holiest spot in Nasik is the Rāmakunḍa near the left bank of the Godāvarī where it takes its first bend to the south. For the Kālārāma daily services and the rites pilgrims have to perform at Nasik, vide Bombay Gazetteer vol. 16 pp. 517-518 and 529-531 respectively. Rāmanavamī is one of the great religious festivals at Nasik.

Govardhana town occurs several times in the long and famous Nasik Inscription of Uṣavadāta (No. 10 in Bombay Gazetteer vol. 16 p. 569-70).¹⁶¹⁸ As regards Pañcavaṭī the place still goes by the same name. It is to be noted that in the Rāmāyaṇa III. 13.13 Pañcavaṭī is styled a *deśa* (country). Janasthāna was in Daṇḍakāraṇya according to the Śalyaparva 39.9-10, Rām. III. 21. 19-20, Nāradya-purāṇa II. 75. 30 and Agni 7.2-3¹⁶¹⁹ and Pañcavaṭī was part of Janasthāna. Janasthāna is said to be four yojanas in extent, and it is further stated that it was so called because kings of the Janaka line secured *mukti* there through the favour of the Godāvarī.¹⁶²⁰

A bath in the Godāvarī when Jupiter enters the sign of Leo has been regarded even up to the present day as very

1618. Nasik Cave Inscription No. 20 is नासिककनं धम्भिकगामस दानं (gift of Dhambhika village by the inhabitants of Nasik). Vide Bom. G. vol. XVI. p. 590, E. I. vol. VIII at p. 72. Inscription No 22 is सादवाहनकुले कच्छे राजिनि नासिककेन समणेन महामातेण लेण कारितं 'this cave was caused to be constructed by the great minister who is (now) a śramaṇa, an inhabitant of Nasik, in the reign of king Kṛṣṇa of the Sātavāhana family.' Vide Bom. G. vol. 16 p. 592. These two are the oldest inscriptions in the Pāṇḍulēnā caves dating from at least 100 B. C. राज्ञः क्षहरातस्य क्षत्रपस्य नहपानस्य जामात्रा दीनीकपुत्रेण उषवदातेन... भरुकच्छे दशपुरे गोवर्धने शोर्परगे च चतुःशालावसथप्रतिश्रय-प्रदेन...पीण्डीतकावडे गोवर्धने सुवर्णमुखे शोर्परगे च चरकपर्णद्वयः...द्वात्रिंशच्चालिगेरमुल-सहस्रप्रदेन गोवर्धने त्रिरश्मिषु पर्वतेषु धर्मात्मना इदं लेणं कारितम्। Ins. No. 10 in Bom. G. vol. 16 pp. 569-70 and E. I. vol. VIII at p. 78. गोवर्धन is at present a village near Nasik. Vide Bom. G. vol. 16 p. 636 for a note on गोवर्धन.

1619. (रामः) धनुः खड्गं च संप्राप्य दण्डकारण्यमागतः ॥ जनस्थाने पञ्चवट्यां स्थितं गोदावरीतटे। आग्नि 7. 2-3.

1620 तथा जनकराजानो बहवस्तत्र कर्मणा ॥ मुक्तिं प्राप्नुमहाभागा गौतम्याश्च प्रसादतः ततः प्रभृति तत्तीर्थं जनस्थानेति विश्रुतम् ॥ जनकानां यज्ञसदो जनस्थानं प्रकीर्तितम् चतुर्योजनविस्तीर्णं स्मरणात् सर्वपापनुत् ॥ ब्रह्म. 88. 22-24.



meritorious.¹⁶²¹ The Brahmapurāṇa says that three crores and a half of tirthas that exist in the three worlds come for a bath in the Gaṅgā when Jupiter is in Leo and that bathing in the Bhāgīrathī (every day) for sixty thousand years (is equal) to bathing only once in the Godāvari when Jupiter is in the Zodial sign Leo.¹⁶²² It is stated in the Varāhapurāṇa that when a man repairs to the sacred Godāvari in *simhastha* year, takes a bath and offers *tarpaṇa* (and *śrāddha*) to his pitrs the latter go to heaven if they are in hell and they attain final release if they are already denizens of heaven. Jupiter is in Leo for one year once in twelve years. Crowds of pilgrims throng at Nasik in their thousands from all parts of India in the *simhastha* year.

KĀNCĪ (modern Conjeeveram).

Kāncī is one of the seven holy cities of India (vide p. 678 n. 1535 above) and one of the most ancient towns in southern India. If we rely on the tradition recorded by Hiouen Thsang who stayed in Kāncī about 640 A. D. it would follow that Buddha frequented the region around Kāncīpura and that Kāncī had a *stūpa* about 100 feet high built by Aśokarāja (Beal's B. R. W. W. vol. II. p. 230). Hiouen Thsang informs us that Kāncī was 30 *li* (or about 5½ miles) in circuit, that in his day there were eighty Deva temples and that there were many heretics called Nirgranthas (Beal's B. R. W. W. vol. II. pp. 228-229). The next important datum is the mention of Kāncī-puraka (resident of Kāncīpura) in the Mahābhāṣya on Vārtika 26 to Pāṇ. IV. 2. 104 (Kielhorn, vol. II. p. 298). Several early records relating to the ancient history of the Pallavas of Kāncī (of about 250 to 350 A. D.) have been published, such as the Mayidavolu plates of Yuvamahārāja Śiva-skandavarman (E. I. vol. VI p. 84), the Hirahadagalli Inscription of the 8th year (E. I. vol. I. p. 2), and the Talgunda Pillar Inscription of Kadamba Kākusthavarman (E. I. vol. VIII p. 24). The

1621. अत्र सिंहस्थे शुरौ गोदावरीस्नानं कन्यागते कृष्णास्नानं महापुण्यम् । गोदावर्या यात्रिकाणां मुण्डनोपवासावावश्यकौ न तु तत्तीरवासिनाम् ॥ धर्मसिन्धु p. 7.

1622. तिस्रः कोट्योर्धकोटी च तीर्थानि भुवनत्रये । तानि स्नातुं समर्थास्तु यद्वायां सिंहगे शुरौ ॥ षष्टिर्वर्षसहस्राणि भागीरथ्यवगाहनम् । सकृद्गोदावरीस्नानं सिद्धयुक्तं ब्रह्मपुत्रौ ॥ ब्रह्म० 175. 83-84; vide also ब्रह्म. 152. 38-39; सिंहस्थे च शुरौ तत्र गच्छति समाहितः । स्नात्वा च विधिना तत्र पितृस्तर्पयते तथा ॥ स्वर्गं गच्छन्ति पितरो विरये प्रतिता यदि । स्वर्गस्थाः पितरस्तस्य मुक्तिभाजो न संशयः ॥ वराह 71. 45-46.

Allahabad Prasasti of Samudragupta (Gupta Inscriptions ed. by Fleet p. 7) states that Samudragupta vanquished Viṣṇugopa, king of Kāñcī (Kāñceyaka), in the first half of the 4th century A. D. In the 'Maṇimekhalai' there is an elaborate description of the town of Kāñcī where Maṇimekhalai ultimately attained to enlightenment (vide S. Krishnaswami Aiyangar's 'Manimekhalai in its historical setting' p. 20). It is not necessary for the present purpose to refer to the numerous inscriptions about the Pallavas and Kāñcī and the large number of papers contributed to learned Journals. Reference may, however, be made to the careful and scholarly work 'History of the Pallavas of Kāñcī' by R. Gopalan (1928), which brings together all relevant data published up to the date of its composition.

Let us now turn to some passages from the Purāṇas about Kāñcī. The Brahmāṇḍa asserts:¹⁶²³ 'The two cities of Kāśī and Kāñcī are the two eyes of Lord Śiva; Kāñcī is a famous Vaiṣṇava kṣetra but it also brings about the presence of Śiva'. It is stated in the Bārhaspatya-sūtra (III. 124) that Kāñcī is a Śākta-kṣetra and in the Devibhāgavata (VII. 38. 8) it is said to be a Devīsthāna called Annapūrṇā. The Vāmana-purāṇa¹⁶²⁴ observes: the Jāti is the best among flowers, Kāñcī the best among towns, Rambhā among women, the householder among persons of (the four) āśramas, Kuśasthālī is the best among cities and Madhyadeśa among all countries.

Kāñcī is full of temples and shrines. The most famous are the Vaikuṇṭha Perumal temple of Viṣṇu and the Śaiva temple of Kailāsanātha built by Pallava Rājasimha. This latter has a large hall supposed to contain 1000 columns.¹⁶²⁵ There is an old Jaina temple also.

PANDHARPUR

This is one of the most popular places of pilgrimage in the Bombay State. Hundreds of thousands of pilgrims visit it

1623. नेत्रद्वयं महेशस्य काशी-काञ्चीपुरद्वयम् । विख्यातं वैष्णवक्षेत्रं शिवसांनिध्यकारकम् ॥ ब्रह्माण्ड IV. 19. 15.

1624. पुष्पेषु जाती नगरेषु काञ्ची नारीषु रम्भाश्रमिणां गृहस्थः । कुशस्थली श्रेष्ठतमः पुरेषु देशेषु सर्वेषु च मध्यदेशः ॥ वामन. 12. 50. Vide 'South Indian Inscriptions' vol. I. pp. 8-24 for Inscriptions in Pallava characters of the 6th century A. D. in the Kailāsanātha temple at Kāñcī.

1625. W. S. Caine in his 'Picturesque India' p. 491 remarks that the pillars are only 540 when counted.



every year. The Bombay Gazetteer vol. 20 (for Sholapur District) devotes pp. 415-482 to Pandharpur. This sacred place cannot claim very great antiquity. On the materials so far available it is difficult to decide when the shrine of Viṭhobā was established, but there is sufficient evidence to enable one to say that it was certainly in existence in the middle of the thirteenth century A. D.¹⁶²⁶ The Padmapurāṇa (Uttara-khaṇḍa 176. 56-58) mentions the image of Viṭhala Viṣṇu on the bank of the Bhīmarathī which has only two arms and is called Bindu-mādhava. The difficulty is about the date of this part of the Padmapurāṇa. In my opinion it is a late addition and cannot be placed earlier than about 1000 A. D. The modern town of Pandharpur lies along the right bank of the Bhīmā river. The chief temple in Pandharpur is that of Viṭhobā in the centre of that part of the town which is considered holy. The Bombay Gazetteer vol. 20 describes at some length (pp. 417-424) the main temple of Viṭhobā and its adjoining parts. Behind the temple of Viṭhobā is the temple of Rakhumāī, the consort of Viṭhobā. There is a large staff of priests and attendants in the temple of Viṭhobā, the chief of whom are those called Badves (who are the most numerous body of the staff and who once claimed to be owners of the temple, but who are now held to be the trustees and guardians of the temple property and of the god's jewels under a scheme of management framed by the High Court of Bombay).¹⁶²⁷ Except the Badves all

1626. Vide Dr. R. G. Bhandarkar's 'Vaiṣṇavism, Saivism' pp. 87-89.

1627. In *Gangaram Babaji Badve v. Baji Shankar and others*, Printed Judgments of the Bombay High Court for 1891 p. 182 at p. 186 the High Court declared that the Badves are not owners of the temple, idol and property and that they are the chief priests, managers, overseers and guardians of the idol, the temple and the property belonging thereto and that they are bound to keep order and to bid the *Sevādhāris* perform the duties which belong hereditarily to those priests. In *Sakharam Bhimaji Benare and others versus Gangaram Babaji Badve and others*, Printed Judgments of the Bombay High Court for 1896 p. 644, the position set out above was accepted by both sides and a scheme of management was framed by the High Court (pp. 649-651) which provided for the creation of a Viṭhobā Fund, for the appointment of a committee of management consisting of five Badves to be elected every year, for the keeping of accounts by the Badves, and for the auditing of these accounts by a Devasthanam committee and declared that any cash offering exceeding Rs. 500 was not to be appropriated by the Badves for their own use, but was to be expended for ornaments for the image and to be added to the Viṭhobā fund, if not so required.

other attendants are called *sevādhāris* and they are of various grades, viz. the *pujāris* (who take the principal part in the worship of the God), *Benaris*¹⁶²⁸ (who repeat mantras and hymns at different services), *paricāraakas* (who bring in a large silver dish the water with which the *pujāri* washes the image of the God and brings the lamp for waving it before the image at the evening and night services), *haridās* (who sings generally five verses in honour of the god at the morning, evening and night services), the *dingres* (who hold a mirror before the God at the early morning service after the god has been dressed and before the lights are waved), the *divtes* (the torch-bearers) who hold a lighted torch when the last night ceremonies are over and carry the slippers of the god in torch-light processions three times a year on the Full Moon days of Āṣāḍha and Kārtika and on the *Dasrū* night), the *dange* (who stands with a silver or gold-plated mace outside the ante-chamber at the morning, evening and night services). The goddess *Rakhumāi* has only one set of priests known as *Utpāts*, of whom there are over a hundred families.

The Bombay Gazetteer describes at length (pp. 427-430) the ordinary and special services in the temple of Viṭhobā which are passed over here. Their essence is that the god is treated as if he were some high human person requiring bath, dress, songs, sleep against fatigue and so on. One thing, however, may be noticed that no women singers or dancers are connected with this temple of Viṭhobā in contradistinction to many temples in the Deccan and South India.

The image of Viṭthal or Viṭhobā in the temple is about three feet and nine inches high and together with its base seems to be cut out of one block of trap. Its rough appearance is probably due to the effect of time. The image is standing with its arms *akimbo* and hands resting on the hips; the left hand holds a conch and the right a *cakra* (discus). On the image are carved but so slightly as to be hardly noticeable except on close examination a waist cloth and round the waist a waist-band the end of which hangs on the right thigh. The ornaments consist of a necklace and in the long ears are ear-rings which touch the shoulders. On the head is a long round-topped cap. Mr.

1628. In *Gangaram Babaji and others v. Narayan Annaji*, Printed Judgments of the Bombay High Court for 1891 p. 148 the High Court laid down with minuteness the rights, privileges and duties of the Benaris (the hymnists).

Kantak, the writer of the note on Pandharpur in the Bombay Gazetteer vol. 20, remarks (p. 424): "The dress and ornament of the image belong to a (time) little later than the Guptas, probably not later than the 5th or 6th century after Christ. As far as is known no other existing Vaiṣṇava temple in India has an image of Viṣṇu like the Pandharpur image, but there are two similar images of the third century after Christ in the Udayagiri brahmanical caves near Bhilsā Like the Pandharpur image these are both standing figures with arms *akimbo* and hands resting on the hips and a conch and discus in the hands". Formerly pilgrims used to embrace the image and also touched the feet of the image. But since about 1873 the feet alone are allowed to be touched.

The Bombay Gazetteer (vol. 20 p. 431, note 2) states that the image of Viṭhobā was removed to various places at different times to save it from sacrilege by fanatic Moslem invaders and rulers. About 500 yards east of Viṭhobā's temple in the bed of the Bhīmā river is the temple of Puṇḍlik, one of the most favourite places of worship in Pandharpur. This last temple is not that of a god. It only marks the spot where Puṇḍlik, a great devotee of Viṭṭhal, spent his last days and died. Puṇḍlik was probably a brāhmaṇa from Pandharpur, originally an undutiful son who ill-treated his parents, but who later repented on seeing the dutiful cobbler Rohidās, changed his ways and became a very dutiful son, so much so that tradition says that god Viṭhobā came to visit him. Viṭhobā and Puṇḍlik have become so much coupled together that all pilgrims before beginning to dine and on other occasions shout the cry 'Puṇḍalika varade Hari Viṭṭhal'¹⁶²⁹. The Bom. G. vol. 20 (pp. 432-434) describes the temple of Puṇḍlik and narrates the traditional story about him.

1629. The writer in Bom. G. vol. 20 translates the words पुण्डलीकवरदे हरि विठ्ठल as 'O! Puṇḍalika, grant us a boon, Hari Viṭhal!'. This translation does not appear to me to be correct. The cry is also in the form 'पुण्डलीकवरदा हरि विठ्ठल' (which is the correct one). In my opinion हरि विठ्ठल is only a vocative and the correct form is पुण्डलीकवरदा (for वरद) and the whole cry means 'O Hari Viṭṭhal! that didst grant a boon to Puṇḍalika'. Mr. A. K. Priyolkar kindly pointed out to me an *abhaṅga* from श्री ज्ञानेश्वरमहाराजांची गाथा (ed. by Śrī Vināyakbuwā Sākhare, 1927) which runs as follows 'खुमादेवीवरु तो। पुण्डलीकवरद तो मे बाई॥' (p. 48) and another of Kāṇhopātrā (from 'Śrī-santa-gāthā' edited by Śrī Nānāmahārāja Sākhare, śake 1891) 'अगा पुण्डलीकवरदा। अगा विष्णु तूं गोविंदा॥' (p. 142).

Pages 434-468 of Bom. G. vol. 20 describe the several temples and shrines at Pandharpur such as those of Viṣṇupada, Trimbakeśvara, Candrabhāgā, Janābai's cell, which are all passed over here. The river Bhīmā is styled Candrabhāgā within Pandharpur limits and its water is believed to possess sin-purifying power.

Several important and controversial questions arise in relation to Viṭhobā's temple at Pandharpur; viz. the date when the image of Viṭhobā was installed in the temple at Pandharpur, whether the present image is an old one or a substitute, what the ancient name of Pandharpur was, the derivation of the word 'Viṭthal'. As regards the first question it may be stated that there is not enough evidence to establish with certainty the time when the image was established.¹⁶³⁰ But some of the items of evidence may be briefly set out here. In I. A. vol. 14 pp. 68-75 Prof. K. B. Pathak published an inscription on a copper-plate found at Bendigere (about eleven miles south-east from Belgaum), the inscription being dated in *śake* 1171 (1249 A. D.), in which Pandharpur is called Paṇḍarikakṣetra on the Bhīmarathī (at p. 74) and Viṭhobā is called Viṣṇu and which records the grant of a village in Veṇugrāma district (Belgaum) to a number of brāhmaṇas by a minister of Yādava king Kṛṣṇa (or Kanhara in the inscription) in the presence of god Viṣṇu (p. 74) i. e. before the image of Viṣṇu or Viṭthala. Dr. R. G. Bhandarkar in 'Vaiṣṇavism, Śaivism &c.', (p. 88) and in 'History of the Deccan' (2nd ed. p. 115-6) refers to an inscription on stone dated *śake* 1192 (1270 A. D.) in Pandharpur itself, in which Bhānu, son of Keśava, is represented as having performed the Aptoryāma sacrifice in Pāṇḍurangapura 'on account of which crowds and Viṭthala were greatly pleased'. There is another earlier inscription in the temple of Viṭhobā on three sides of a stone beam in a *sopā* beyond the *maṇḍapa* (porch) of 16 pillars, the script being Devanāgarī and the language being partly Sanskrit and partly Canarese. It was issued in *śake* 1159 (1237 A. D.) by Hoysala king Someśvara and records the grant of an agrahāra to God Viṭthaladeva who resides in a great village called Pāṇḍarage situated on the Bhīmarathī river and who

1630. Besides the Sholapur Gazetteer (Bom. G. vol. 20) the following may be consulted. I. H. Q. vol. 11 pp. 771-778 (paper by Prof. B. A. Saleore on 'the Antiquity of Pandharpur'), Mr. G. H. Khare's monograph in Marāṭhī on 'ओविठल आणि पंढरपूर', and Dr. Krishna's Archaeological Survey Reports of Mysore for 1929 pp. 197-210.

made the heart of sage (*muni*) Puṇḍarīka expand (with devotion). Vide Bom. G. vol. 20 pp. 419-420 and pp. 4-6 of Mr. Khare's monograph (on medieval references). The Mysore Archaeological Survey Report for 1929 (pp. 197-210) publishes a copper-plate inscription issued by the Rāṣṭrakūṭa king Avidheya which records a grant of Pāṇḍaraṅga-palli and four other villages situated to the east of Mahādeva hill to a brāhmaṇa named Jayad-viṭṭha. This grant was confirmed about 820 A. D. by Rāṣṭrakūṭa king Śarvarasa (i. e. Amoghavarṣa I). The editor Dr. Krishna is of opinion that the date of the inscription must be 516 A. D. (*ibid.* p. 203). Therefore the important conclusion follows that Pandharpur was known to Canarese people as Pāṇḍarage and was also called Pāṇḍaraṅgapalli. This inscription does not expressly refer to god Viṭṭhala, but the donee's name Jayad-viṭṭha contains the part Viṭṭha which is most probably an early form of Viṭṭhala.

In a work called 'Viṭṭhalabhūṣaṇa' ¹⁶³¹ by one Gopālācārya about eleven verses are quoted from Hemādri on Tīrtha which are quoted below ¹⁶³². Briefly they state: an excellent tīrtha ex-

1631. This was printed in *śake* 1808 (1886-87 A. D.) at the Bombay City Press. For Puṇḍlik's story, vide Bom. G. vol. 20 p. 433.

1632. तीर्थहेमाद्रौ—भैरव्याश्चैव तदे देवि दक्षिणे तीर्थमुत्तमम्। अस्ति क्षेत्रं देवतं च सर्वोत्कृष्टं सुदुर्लभम्। पुण्डरीकमिति ख्यातं तत्तीर्थं क्षेत्रपूजितः। पाण्डुरङ्गश्च तत्रास्ते मूर्तिमान् देवतोत्तमः। पुष्करात्रिगुणं पुण्यं केदारात् षड्गुणं भवेत्। वाराणस्या दशगुणमनन्तं श्रीगिरेरपि। षष्टिवर्षसहस्राणि दिव्यदेवतदर्शनात्। तत्फलं लभते मर्त्यः सकृदेव हि तत्फलम्। अष्टाविंशतिमे कल्पे द्वापरान्ते च षण्मुख। पुण्डरीक इति ख्यातस्तपस्तेपे सुदारुणम्। भक्त्या पित्रोश्च शुश्रूषां कुर्वन्मुनिवरः सदा। तस्यैवं कुर्वतः पूजां पित्रोरहरहः प्रिये। परितुष्टोऽभवद्देवो गोपीजनमनः-प्रियः। गोवर्धनगिरौ रम्ये चारयन् गोगणं विशुः। गोयष्टिं धारयन्त्यरत्नाच्छत्रोज्ज्वलितकङ्कणम्। नानारत्नप्रभोद्भासि-शिक्यमौलिविराजितः। अतीव सुन्दरः सौम्यो रत्नाङ्कितमहाङ्गदः। दिग्वासाश्चातिसौम्येन गुह्यसूत्रेण वेष्टितः। त्रिवृतेनानुकालेन कटिबन्धेन (कटिबन्धेन?) राजितः। कटिमालम्ब्य तिष्ठन्वै त्रिवृद्वल्या च संयुतः। तत्रैव कूर्मपुराणे। पुण्डरीकं महातीर्थं ब्राह्मणैरुप-सेवितम्। तत्राभिगम्य युक्तात्मा पुण्डरीकफलं लभेत्॥

I am highly obliged to Pandit Balacharya Khuperkar of Kolhapur for sending to me these verses from the copy in his possession. In the T. S. p. 7 the verse पुण्डरीकं महातीर्थं is quoted from the Kūmapurāṇa; on p. 9 of T. S. verses भैरव्याश्चैव...तत्फलम् are quoted from the Skandapurāṇa, as also verses अष्टा-विंशतिमे...संयुतः occur on pp. 12-13 of the Tīrthasāra with a few variant readings such as वेत्रोद्धेलितकङ्कणः (which is a very good variant) for छत्रो...कङ्कणम् and शक्तिमौलिविराजितः for शिक्यं and दिव्यस्रग्वीति सौम्येन for दिग्वासाश्चातिसौम्येन. In a ms. of पुण्डरीकमाहात्म्य kindly lent to me by Pandit Lakṣmanāśrī of Wai 'अन्तःसूत्रेण वेष्टितः कटिबन्धेन राजितः' and शुद्धकाशिक्यनन्दाभ्यामभ्यां शोभितः are the readings. In a ms. of पाण्डुरङ्गमाहात्म्य in the possession of Pandit Khuperkar, the same verses occur with a few additions.

(Continued on the next page)

ists on the southern bank of the river Bhaimī and there is also a rare but fine image there; it is called Paundarīka-kṣetra and the greatest of gods viz. Pāṇḍuraṅga worshipped by the whole kṣetra resides there. It is three times holier than Puṣkara, six and ten times holier than Kedāra and Vārāṇasī respectively. Puṇḍarīka practised severe austerities at the end of Dvāparayuga in the 28th Kalpa and always devotedly attended upon his parents. God Kṛṣṇa who was making a herd of cows graze on Govardhana hill became pleased with him for his devotion to his parents, Kṛṣṇa who wields a stick for driving cows, who has bracelets rendered bright by (the colour) of the umbrella ¹⁶³³ (shade), who is adorned with a head-gear (*mukuta*) and a *śikya* (a loop) scintillating with the lustre of many jewels, who was very charming and had armlets studded with jewels, who does not (appear to) wear any *dhoti*, but has his loins covered with nickers, who is set off by a girdle of three strings tied on his waist and who stands with arms akimbo and appears possessed of three lines on his belly. Though a ms. of the Tirtha portion of Hemādri's work has not yet been recovered, there is no reason to doubt that the verses were taken by Gopālācārya from Hemādri's work, particularly when almost all those verses are quoted by the T. S. (about 1500 A. D.) from the Skandapurāṇa and Kūrmapurāṇa. As Hemādri composed his work about 1260 to 1270 A. D. and as the verses quoted by him are cited from the Skandapurāṇa, it follows that several centuries before 1260 A. D. Pandharpur was known as a tirtha, that the devotee and saint Puṇḍarīka (Marāṭhi 'Pupḍlik') also was so known then and that the image of Viṭhobā was essentially the same in appearance as it is now. That Pandharpur had risen in sanctity and importance in the 15th century follows from the fact that both the great Vaiṣṇava saints, Caitanya and Vallabha, visited it. Vide Prof. S. K. De's 'Vaiṣṇava faith and movement in Bengal' p. 71 for

(Continued from the last page)

reads अन्तःसूत्रेण for गुह्यसूत्रेण, त्रिवृद्धलीकृतेनेशः कटिवन्धेन राजितः and शुद्धकाशिक्य-मद्भाभ्यामूरुभ्यां चातिशोभितः. त्रिवृतेनालुकालेन—makes no sense. It has to be noted that गुह्यसूत्रेण or अन्तःसूत्रेण is mentioned separately from कटिवन्धेन and therefore गुह्यसूत्र or अन्तःसूत्र was something different from कटिवन्ध (waist-band). Probably the original reading was दिग्वासाश्चातिसूत्रेण गुह्यसूत्रेण for दिग्वासाश्चातिसौम्येन, where सौम्य conveys very little sense.

1633. This probably is a reference to the silver shade under which the image of Viṭhobā stood (Bom. G. vol. 20 p. 423).



Caitanya's visit and 'Śrī Vallabhāchārya' by Manilal C. Parekh (pp. 56-59) for Vallabhācārya's visit.

It has been already shown from the Bombay Gazetteer that there is a tradition about the image having been removed several times and brought back. On pp. 16-25 of his work Mr. Khare cites various passages from medieval writers in Sanskrit, Marathi and Canarese and comes to the conclusion that the present image is not only not the ancient one but that it was not there in the 17th century, since the characteristics of the present image do not tally with the description contained in the poems of saint Tukārām. I do not agree with his conclusions. He has overlooked several weighty considerations. He has relied upon inferences drawn from the presence of Afzulkhan and the bigoted emperor Aurangzeb in the Deccan. I have cited above (pp. 632, 692) references to the demolition of North Indian temples and images on the orders of Aurangzeb, but Mr. Khare has been unable to show any direct reference to the demolition of the temple or the image of Viṭhobā on the orders of any Moslem king or officer.¹⁶³⁴ We cannot rely on mere inferences or not properly authenticated letters or verses. Besides, the present image is so much worn that unless one very carefully

1634. It may, however, be stated that there is some evidence that efforts were made to demolish the temple of Viṭhobā by some Moslem king of Bidar and that the Badves (the guardians of the Pandhari temple) fearing destruction of the image removed it and concealed it somewhere else. In a Marāṭhi work called 'महाराष्ट्रमहोदयाचा पूर्वर्द्ध' by Mr. Narayan Krishna Gadre (1905) p. 168 verses are cited from a life (completed in śake 1667 i. e. 1745 A. D.) of one Chāṅgā Mudheśa (who died in śake 1427 i. e. 1505 A.D.) written by his descendant Shamji Gosāvi Vañjarkhede (who was 11th in descent from Chāṅgā Mudheśa). The Marāṭhi verses are: वेदरीचा राजा बामणी पातशहा । ब्राह्मणासी बहु छलियेलें ॥ हिंदुधर्म जितुके तितके वर्जियेलें ॥ राऊळ विध्वंसिलें पंढरीचे ॥ केलीसे मशीद महाद्वार मोडून । सातमास पूर्ण झाले यासी ॥ मूर्ती सिंहासनाह्नि आच्छादिली । गुप्त हो ठेविली बड्यांनी ॥ verses 52-55 of the 7th chapter of the life. This was written two hundred and forty years after the alleged vandalism. Besides the same work mentions in verse 94 (chap. 7) that Chāṅgadeva thought that the mosque should be demolished and a new temple (a complete replica of the old one) should be built. Similarly, in शिवचरित्रसाहित्य part 1 p. 68 (published by the Bhārata-itihāsa-saṁśodhaka-maṇḍala of Poona) there is a letter dated in 1581 śake (i. e. 1659-60 A.D.) in Marāṭhi which states that Shivaji killed Afjalakhan who had removed the image of Viṭthal at Pandharpur and that at Tuljāpur. The letter is not properly authenticated and is not a reliable piece of evidence. I am obliged to Mr. G. H. Khare of Poona for drawing my attention to these two pieces of evidence,

scrutinizes, it would be difficult to pronounce what articles it holds or what dress it wears. Therefore, there is great scope for differences of opinion on the characteristic features of the present image. Conceding for argument that the tradition about the removal of the idol is true, that does not establish that the present image is different from the one that existed in the 13th century or before. The present image has an elongated head dress which some may construe as a simple *mukuta* (crown) with a rim: but the *pujāris* and common people regard it as a *Śivalinga* and the rim as the rope of the *śikya* that is carried on the back (by cowherds). The present image has ear-rings (as Mr. Khare admits) but they are so long that they rest on the shoulders. The present image has *aṅgadas* (armlets) on the upper arms (and that is the description in the *Skanda-purāṇa* quoted by Hemādri). The present image has ornaments on the wrists (which the passage from the *Skandapurāṇa* also mentions). There is a girdle with three strings on the waist of the present image (in *Sk.* also we have 'trivṛtenānukālena kaṭibaddhena or kaṭibandhena rājitaḥ'). The present image¹⁶³⁵ does not clearly show that a *dhoti* was worn (and therefore one reading of the *Skanda* says that it is 'digvāsāḥ') but the *Skanda* adds that the image has arms akimbo. In my opinion the description in the *Skanda-purāṇa* (which must be held to be at least not later than about 1000 A. D.) tallies in essential particulars with the present image; therefore it follows that sufficient evidence has not been adduced to show that it is comparatively a new image and the proposition of Mr. Khare that it is a different one from the original should be held *not proved*. In the descriptions given by Tukārām and others (p. 22 of Mr. Khare's book) actual, legendary and ideal elements are mixed up. For example, Tukārām states that the god has 16000 wives (Mr. Khare's book

1635. Persons not familiar with ancient images or statues in stone might think that an image or statue is naked (*digvāsāḥ*) when as a matter of fact the sculpture itself shows that the image wears a *dhoti* and waistband and yet its private parts are shown as visible, probably because it was the intention of the sculptor to indicate that the garment was made of the finest texture and was transparent. For example, in 'History of Fine Art in India and Ceylon' by Vincent Smith, there is a figure of a Bodhisattva (on p. 143 No. 94) which is clearly draped in a *dhoti* and waistband and the private parts of which are yet visible. The *Viṣṇu* image from Mathura (Plate VI) in a paper on Gupta Art in *Journal of U. P. Historical Society*, vol. 18 pp. 101-134 shows similar characteristics.

p. 22 'Bailā solā hajāra' &c.). But Tukārām does mention the facts that the arms are akimbo, that there is no dhoti (*digambara*), and mentions the existence of a *śikya*, a stick, also a girdle and ornaments. Lastly, Mr. Khare does not attach sufficient importance to two facts, one being that about 1873 two Gosavis damaged the image which was later re-installed and pilgrims were forbidden from embracing it. It is quite possible that some of the features already indistinct were lost in these happenings (vide Bom. G. vol. 20 p. 430). Besides, for hundreds of years the image has been washed with pañcāmṛta (milk, curds, ghee, honey and sugar) and water at least once every day and sometimes several times a day. It is not difficult to imagine that the characteristic marks became blurred by these continual baths.

Some other matters require to be dealt with. The image is variously called viz. Pāṇḍurāṅga, Paṇḍhari, Viṭṭhal, Viṭṭhalanātha and Viṭhobā.

Viṣṇu assumes in Prakrit the forms Viṇhu, Viṇṇu, Venhu, Vetha and others. In Canarese Viṣṇu becomes Bitti, Bittiga, Vittā &c. The changes in names do not necessarily follow the rules laid down in Prakrit or Canarese grammars, which rules themselves are often based on meagre data and Mr. A. K. Priyolkar in his learned paper on 'Bhagat Namdeo of the Sikhs' in the Journal of the University of Bombay vol. VII part 2 (1938) points out (p. 24) that in the Ādi Granth of the Sikhs, in the hymns of Namdeo, God is addressed as 'Bīthal' or 'Bīthalu' (p. 24), that, in the Gujarati poems of Narsinh Mehta and Mirabai, God is addressed as Viṭṭhala (p. 35) and Viṭṭhala is employed by these saints meaning only Viṣṇu and not the deity at Pandharpur. The learned Kāśīnātha Upādhyāya, author of Viṭṭhala-rūp-mantrasāra-bhāṣya, derives the word Viṭṭhala as (*Vit + tha + la*)¹⁶³⁶.

As regards the name of the kṣetra it appears that originally it was called in Canarese Pāṇḍarage, of which Pāṇḍurāṅga is a sanskritized form. When Puṇḍlik, the devotee of Viṭṭhal, became famous the sacred place came to be called Puṇḍarikapura (as in Kūrma) and Paṇḍarikapura (as in Skanda). Vide note 1632 above.

1636. 'वित् वेदनं ज्ञानं तेन ठाः शून्याः तान् लाति स्वीकरोति'. Vide सारभाष्य, D. C. ms. No. 100 of 1869-70 dated śake 1731 (1809 A. D.) quoted in H. of Dh. vol. I p. 464 n. 1161.

The pilgrims to Pandharpur may be divided into two classes, regular visitors and occasional visitors. The first class comprise those called *Vārkaris* (lit. those who keep the fixed times). The *Vārkaris* are of two sorts viz. those who attend every month and those who attend twice a year (on the 11th of Āṣāḍha-sukla and Kārtika-sukla). This cult of *vārkaris* has been a great leveller. In theory and to a large extent in practice it ignores caste exclusiveness. A brāhmaṇa *vārkarī* falls at the feet of a śūdra *vārkarī*. There are certain observances binding on all *vārkaris* (for which, vide Bom. G. vol. 20 p. 471). The *vārkarī* carries a rosary of Tulasī (basil) beads, foregoes flesh-eating, observes a fast on *ekādaśī*, carries an ochre-coloured *patākā* (swallow-tailed banner) and is to speak the truth (and not to cheat) when engaged in his daily occupations.

Some people think that the image of Vithobā is really Buddhist or Jain. There is hardly any evidence for this. When such Marāṭhi poets and saints as Ekanātha, and Tukārām speak of Vithobā as Bauddhāvatāra they have Viṣṇu in mind,¹⁶³⁷ whose 9th avatāra was Buddha according to the Purāṇas and medieval writers.

The question of the attitude that modern Hindus should adopt towards holy places and pilgrimages will be briefly dealt with at the end of the next chapter on the list of *tīrthas*.

1637. One of एकनाथ's अभंग is 'नववा बैसे स्थिररूप । तया नाम बौद्धरूप ॥ सन्त तया द्वारी । तिष्ठताति निरन्तरी । पुण्डलीकासाठीं उभा । धन्य धन्य विठ्ठलशोभा ॥' in एकनाथमहाराजांच्या अभंगांची गाथा (published by Rajaram Tukaram, Bombay, 1903) p. 344 No. 1048; 'बौद्धचरितं माझिया अदृष्टा । मौन्यमुखें निष्टा धरिली ॥' No. 4160 of the तुकारामबावांच्या अभंगांची गाथा p. 522 (published by Bombay Govt., 1950). Vide H. of Dh. vol. II pp. 720-723 for discussion about the time when Buddha came to be looked upon as an *avatāra* of Viṣṇu.

CHAPTER XVI

LIST OF TIRTHAS

This is merely a list of tirthas from the point of view of Dharmasāstra and *not* a treatise on the Ancient Geography of India. The result is that many countries and towns that have no importance or claims as tirthas have been altogether omitted. Bauddha and Jain works on tirthas have only rarely been referred to. Many of the Purāṇas enumerate the mountains and rivers of *dvīpas* and *varṣas* other than those of Jambudvīpa and Bhārata-varṣa such as Harivarsa, Rāmyakavarṣa, Krauñcadvīpa, Śālmalīdvīpa, but they have been excluded from this list. The Brahmapurāṇa (chap. 26 verses 8-83) contains a string of over 520 tirthas without hardly any certain indication of their location and the Bhīṣmaparva in chap. 9 mentions about 160 rivers with practically no indication about their location in most cases. Similarly, the Garuda (I. 81. 1-31) enumerates about 200 and Padma (VI. 129) contains 108 tirtha names. In Banaras alone I have listed about 350 sub-tirthas. But there are about 1500 shrines and temples in Banaras alone. These have not been included. Each great tirtha has numerous sub-tirthas as in the Varāha-purāṇa under Mathurā, in Brahma-purāṇa under Gautamī, in Vāyu-purāṇa under Gayā. Through sheer weariness or inadvertence some of these must have been left out by me and some were left out purposely on account of the absence of any importance. Besides, several tirthas that are regarded as sacred by modern people are not so treated in the Epics or purāṇas and are not even mentioned in them; many of these have been omitted in this list. Our authorities are often very vague about the location or extent of tirthas. Moreover, a number of tirthas scattered in different parts of India bear the same name (e. g. vide under Agnitirtha, Koṭitirtha, Cakratirtha, Varāhatirtha, Somatirtha). I am under great obligations to Cunningham's 'Ancient Geography of India' (ed. of 1872) and to Nundo Lal Dey's 'The Geographical Dictionary of Ancient and Medieval India' (1927). I have had occasions to differ from both, particularly from the latter. But, the space at my disposal being very limited, I could not enter into even brief discussions

in support of my views. It would look ungrateful to find fault with the work of Dey; but it must be said that he relies too much on rather old and antiquated authorities and has not cast his net over a wide area. Often times he mentions no original authorities (vide, for example, Cakratīrtha on p. 43). He is very vague in his references. He hardly ever cites the number of the verse on which he relies and often omits to specify even the part or section of the work relied upon. For example, at p. 13 as regards Avanti he mentions Pāṇini IV. 176, which should be IV. 1.176. Further, he has omitted several well-known tīrthas (e. g. Daśāśvamedhika). He is sometimes wrong in what he says. On p. 54 he states that Kiśkindhā-kāṇḍa 43 refers to Devadāruvana as a proper name, but there the context ('lodhrapadmaka-śaṇḍeṣu devadāruvaneṣu ca' in verse 15) shows that what is meant is 'forests of Deodar trees'. On p. 73 he says Bharatavarṣa was first called Haimavata-varṣa, but the passage of the Lingapurāṇa (I. 49. 7) on which he relies (idam haimavatam varṣam Bhāratam nāma viśrutam) does not bear that out. There is no reference to a prior account here and all that is meant is that Bhāratavarṣa is connected with Himavat, as a previous passage (I. 47. 23 Himādrer-dakṣiṇam varṣam Bharatāya nyavēdayat) expressly states that Bhāratavarṣa is to the south of Himālaya. In Śalya 44.52 Sarasvatī is called Haimavatī, but that does not mean that Haimavatī was the name of Sarasvatī in far-off ages. It simply means that it 'rises in Himavat range.' Only a comparison of the list prepared by me with Dey's work will show the difference in details between the two. I should not undertake that task and leave it to scholarly readers.

I have carefully read the two Epics and most of the Purāṇas. But I do not cite exhaustive references to all the texts where a particular tīrtha is mentioned. I feel satisfied with mentioning two or three. Owing to the several restrictions imposed upon myself this list cannot claim to be thoroughly exhaustive. But I hope that it is comprehensive enough and far larger and more informative than any list of tīrthas presented by any scholar so far. There is ample scope for industrious scholars to improve upon and to add to this list. I have included important tīrthas from Kashmir and given copious references to the Nīlamata-purāṇa, the Rāja-taraṅgiṇī and the Hara-carita-cintāmaṇi. I am highly obliged to the Kashmir Report of Dr. Bühler (published as a special number for 1877



by the B B R A S), to Stein's notes in his translation of the Rāja-taraṅgiṇī and his memoir on the Ancient Geography of Kashmir published separately (and also embodied in the 2nd volume of the translation of Kalhana's work). All the names of tīrthas are transliterated into the English alphabet and arranged according to the English mode of spelling. For the Mahābhārata references are given to the oblong Bombay edition and by citing names of *parvans*, but in the case of the Rāmāyaṇa Roman figures I to VII are employed for the Bāla, Ayodhyā, Aranya, Kiṣkindhā, Sundara, Yuddha and Uttara kāṇḍas respectively. For the Rāmāyaṇa I have used the edition brought out by the Madras Law Journal Press in 1933. Among Purāṇas the Ānandāśrama editions of the Agni, Brahma, Brahmavaivarta, Matsya, Vāyu and Padma have been relied upon and as to the rest of the Mahāpurāṇas the Venkateśvara Press editions have been used (except in the case of the Nṛsimhapurāṇa of which the edition of Messrs. Gopal Narayan & Co. and the Bhāgavatapurāṇa, of which the Nirṇayasāgara edition of the bare text have been referred to). The Skandapurāṇa has been a source of great trouble and labour. Owing to the limited time at my disposal I have not been able to digest thoroughly the ninety thousand and odd verses of that purāṇa, though I have very carefully gone into the Kāśikhanda and some other khaṇḍas. Besides, there are two separate recensions of the Skanda and large portions of it appear to be apocryphal and later additions. The seven big sections of the Skanda viz. Maheśvarakhaṇḍa, Vaiṣṇava, Brāhma, Kāśī, Āvantya, Nāgara, Prabhāsa are indicated by Roman figures from I to VII and the sub-sections by Arabic figures. Some of these sub-sections have further sub-divisions into Pūrvārdha and Uttarārdha.

I have made endeavours to locate the tīrthas as far as possible. Inscriptions have been drawn upon in several cases for locating the tīrthas and for their antiquities and history. The principal Sanskrit authorities (except Kalhana) are often very vague as compared with even foreign writers like Hiouen Thsang, Alberuni and Abul Fazal. Where I was not myself sure I have given references to the texts alone, and in some cases to the views of Cunningham, Dey, Pargiter and others. If the same name happens to be given to different tīrthas located at different places, I have indicated the several different places bearing the same name by employing the capital letters



A, B, C and so on. I may state that I have hardly ever remained content by borrowing references to Sanskrit authorities given by my predecessors, but have seen personally each reference to Sanskrit works except where I expressly state from whom I borrow a particular reference. Sorensen's Index of the Mahābhārata and the Vedic Index of Macdonell and Keith have been used in several places. I have also derived material help from the volumes of the Imperial Gazetteer and from the several volumes of the Bombay Gazetteer. The same may be said about Wilson's translation of Viṣṇupurāṇa (ed. by Hall, 1864-1877), Pargiter's notes to his translation of the Mārkaṇḍeyapurāṇa, Dr. B. C. Law's paper on the 'mountains and rivers of India' in the Journal of the Department of Letters, Calcutta University, vol. 28 and Dr. Hemchandra Raychaudhuri's 'Studies in Indian Antiquities' (1932), and the paper on 'Ancient towns and cities in Gujarat and Kathiawad' in I.A. vol. 54. I have consulted only a few Māhātmyas of tirthas. Recently, Prof. V. R. Ramchandra Dikshitar of Madras has published a useful work 'The Purāṇa Index' (volumes I and II covering over 1400 pages) which collects material from five Purāṇas only viz. the Bhāgavata, Brahmāṇḍa, Matsya, Vāyu and Viṣṇu. The two volumes reach up to the Sanskrit letter 'ma' only. I, for my part, do not agree with much that he says about the age of the Purāṇas in general and of the five Purāṇas (which he has digested) in particular, but this is not the place to go into that question. Besides, his work has to be used with some caution. In several places the work is misleading. To take only a few examples. On p. 547 he lists 'Godhūma', makes the remark 'fit for śrāddha' and cites four references from the Viṣṇupurāṇa alone. One may *prima facie* think that Godhūma is here some place fit for śrāddha. As a matter of fact in all the references from the Viṣṇupurāṇa 'Godhūma' means 'wheat' and nothing more, which no doubt is fit *food* for śrāddha. But other fit things such as 'ikṣu' (declared to be fit for śrāddha by Vāyu 78. 7-8) are not included at all. On p. 123 Aśokavana is not a proper name, but only a forest of Aśoka trees, as the preceding word 'drākṣāvana' (in Vāyu 38. 68) indicates. So also Kamalaprabhava (not 'prabhavā' as printed on p. 316 of vol. I) is not a river (in Matsya 163. 62, Ānandāśrama ed.) but is only an adjective of the word Śoṇa that follows. On p. 316 of vol. II he states that the river Pārā rises from Rṣyavān, but the Matsya 114. 24 on which he relies says it springs from Pāriyātra. On the same page he gives the entry 'Pārāvāratata sacred to



Matā'. This makes no sense. Pārāvāratata would mean 'the shore of the sea'. What is really meant is that Devī is styled or worshipped as Pārā on the bank of the Pārā river (Pārā Pārātate matā). He does not compare the readings of the several printed editions of the five purāṇas. Besides, the information furnished is very meagre. If the whole had been printed in a compact form far more information could have been given in the same number of pages.

In some places I have indicated the rewards promised for bathing in the tīrthas; but I have not done so in every case. The purāṇas promise one or more of the following rewards viz. the same merit as the performance of Aśvamedha or Vājapeya or other solemn Vedic sacrifices or reaching the highest worlds such as those of Brahmā, Viṣṇu or Śiva, the destruction of the gravest sins such as brāhmaṇa murder, the same merit as arises from gifts of a thousand cows &c.

Many of the doubts and difficulties about the identification of several tīrthas can, if at all, be solved only by means of actual journeys to various places and investigations on the spot. That is a task which would require for its proper accomplishment a team of workers. A single individual can hardly attempt such a task with his own resources.

This list will, it is hoped, be of some use in elucidating several problems such as the questions about the relative antiquity of the purāṇas, the dates of several Sanskrit works which mention the tīrthas and the questions about borrowing on the part of purāṇas among themselves and from the Mahābhārata.



Abbreviations employed in this list alone

- AC.—Abhidhāna-cintāmaṇi of Hemacandra (ed. by Böhtlingk, 1847).
 Ādi.—Ādiparva of the Mahābhārata
 Ag.—Agnipurāṇa.
 A. G.—Ancient Geography of India, by Cunningham (1871).
 A. I.—Ancient India as described by Megasthenes and Arrian (Mc Crindle).
 Ain, A.—Ain-i-Akbari by Abul Fazal, translated by Blochmann and Jarrett in three volumes (1873-1894).
 Al.—Alberuni's 'India' translated by Dr. E. C. Sachau, 2 volumes, 1886 (London).
 Anu.—Anusāsana-parva of the Mahābhārata.
 A. S. R.—Archaeological Survey of India Reports.
 B.—Brahmapurāṇa.
 Bār, S.—Bārhaspatya-sūtra edited by Dr. F. W. Thomas.
 Bh.—Bhāgavatapurāṇa.
 Bhav.—Bhaviṣyapurāṇa.
 Bhī.—Bhīṣmaparva of the Mahābhārata.
 Bom. G.—Bombay Gazetteer volumes.
 Br.—Brahmāṇḍapurāṇa.
 Br. S.—Brhatsamhitā with Utpala's com., edited by Sudhākara Dwivedi.
 BV.—Brahmavaivarta-purāṇa.
 C. I. I.—Corpus Inscriptionum Indicarum; vol. I. Inscriptions of Aśoka, vol. III. Gupta Inscriptions.
 Dey.—Nundolal Dey's 'Geographical Dictionary of India' (1927).
 G.—Garuḍapurāṇa.
 Go.—Godāvarī river
 h.—hill
 HC.—Haracaritacintāmaṇi of Jayadratha (Kāvya-mālā ed.)
 I. G. I.—Imperial Gazetteer of India volumes.
 J. U. P. H. S.—Journal of the United Provinces Historical Society.
 K.—Kūrmapurāṇa.
 Kal.—Kālikapurāṇa.
 K. R.—Bühler's Kashmir Report (extra number of BBRAS Journal for 1877)
 l.—lake
 L.—Lingapurāṇa
 m.—Mountain
 M.—Matsyapurāṇa
 Mb.—Mahābhārata
 Mbh.—Mahābhāṣya of Patañjali (ed. by Kielhorn in 3 volumes).
 Mār.—Mārkaṇḍeya-purāṇa
 N.—Bṛhan-nāradya or Nāradya-purāṇa.
 NM.—Nīlamata-purāṇa ed. by Prof. Bhagavad-datta.
 Nr.—Nṛsimha or Narasimha-purāṇa.
 P.—Padma-purāṇa.
 Pargiter.—Translation of Mārkaṇḍeya-purāṇa with notes.
 Ptolemy.—Mc Crindle's 'Ancient India' as described by Ptolemy with notes by Majumdar Sastri (Calcutta, 1927).
 r.—River.
 R.—Rājatarāṅginī (edited and translated by Dr. Stein).
 Rām.—Rāmāyaṇa.
 S.—Sabhāparva of the Mahābhārata.
 Śal.—Śalyaparva of the Mahābhārata.
 Śān.—Śāntiparva of the Mahābhārata.
 SK.—Skandapurāṇa
 SM.—Stein's Memoir on maps illustrating the Ancient Geography of Kashmir.
 T. K.—Kalpataru on tīrthas (G. O. S.)
 T. P.—Tīrthaprakāśa of Mitramiśra, part of Vīramitrodaya
 T. S.—Tīrthasāra, part of Nṛsimha-prasāda (Sarasvatībhavan series, Benares).
 U.—Udyogaparva of the Mahābhārata
 V.—Vanaparva of the Mahābhārata



Va.—Vāyupurāṇa

Vām.—Vāmanapurāṇa.

Var.—Varāhapurāṇa.

VD.—Viṣṇudharmottara-purāṇa.

V. Dh. S.—Viṣṇudharma-sūtra (ed. by Jolly).

Vi.—Viṣṇupurāṇa

Vik.—Vikramāṅka-deva-carita of Bilhana (ed. by Bühler).

V. S.—Vārāṇasī.

Wilson—Translation of Viṣṇupurāṇa, edited by Dr. Hall (1864-1877).

LIST OF TĪRTHAS

A

- Abjaka—(under Go.) B. 129. 137 (it is the heart of Godāvarī)
- Acalā—(r. in Kāśmīra) HC 10.256 (near Anantahrada and Kārkoṭahrada)
- Acalesvara—L. I. 92. 165
- Acchodā—(r. rising from Acchodaka lake) M 121. 7, Vā 47. 6, Br II. 18. 6 and III. 13. 80
- Acchodaka—(a l. at the foot of mount Candraprabha) Vā 47. 5-6 and 77. 76, M 14.3 and 121. 7, Br. III. 13. 77
- Aciravatī—(r. falling into Sarayū) one of the ten great rivers mentioned in 'Questions of Milinda' (SBE vol. 35 p. 171). It is Raptī in Oudh on which Śrāvastī was situated. Var. 214. 47
- Acyutasthala—Vām. 34. 47. Vide under Yugandhara.
- Ādarsā—held to be same as Vinaśana by many scholars. Vide under 'Vinaśana'. The Kāśikā on Pān. IV. 2. 124 (Janapadatadavadhyośca) appears to hold Ādarsā as a Janapada and Br. S. 14. 25 does the same.
- Ādipāla—(a h. under Gayā). Vā 108. 65 (Ganeśa is there in the form of an elephant across Muṇḍaprasṭha), 109. 15
- Ādititīrtha—(under Gaṅgā). N. II. 40. 90
- Ādityasya āśrama—V 83. 184, P. I. 27. 70
- Ādityatīrtha—A (on Sarasvatī) Sal. 49. 17, Devala q. by T. K. p. 250; B (on r. Sābhramatī) P. VI. 167. 1 (near confluence with sea).
- Ādityāyatana—(under Narmadā) M. 191. 77, K II. 41. 37-38, P. I. 18. 5 and 72.
- Ādityeśa—(under Narmadā) M. 191. 5
- Agastyapada—(under Gayā)—Ag. 116. 3, Vā 111. 53
- Agastyasaras—V. 82. 44. It may be noted that Agastya is the reputed author of the Tamil language and the teacher of the author of the Tolkāppiyam, the oldest grammatical work extant (on Tamil). Vide JRAS. vol. 19 pp. 558-559 (New series)
- Agastyāśrama—Vide Dey p. 2 for eight places so called (but he does not state authorities for all). A (on r. Durjayā) V 96. 1 (where demon Vātāpi was killed by Agastya); B V. Dh. S 85. 29, P I. 12. 4, V. 19. 198 (near Puškara); C (near Prayāga) V 87. 20; D (near Gokarna) V 88. 18; E (near Janasthāna and Pañcavaṭī about five yojanas from Sutikṣṇāśrama) Rām. III. 11. 38-42, Raghu. XIII. 36. There is an ancient shrine of Agastya about one mile from Akola village in Nagar District beyond the Pravara river; F (near the sea in Pāṇḍya country) Ādi 216. 3, 88. 13, 118. 4, 130. 6.—one of the five Nārītīrthas), Rām. IV. 41. 16 (on Malaya) and Bh. X. 79. 167.
- Agastyatīrtha—(in Pāṇḍya country) V 88. 13
- Agastyavaṭa—Ādi 215.2
- Agastyeśvara—A (under Narmadā) M. 191.5; B (līṅga in VS) L q. by T. K. p. 116
- Aghoreśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 60
- Agnidhārā—(under Gayā) V 84. 146, Ag. 116. 31.
- Agnikuṇḍa—(on Sarasvatī) Vām. 51. 52 Var. q. by T. K. p. 215.
- Agniṣrabha—(under Gaṇḍakī) Var. 145. 52-55 (its water is hot in winter and cold in summer.)



- Agnipura—Anu. 25. 43. Dey p. 2 says it is Māhīmatī. Vide Raghuvamśa VI. 42
- Agnisaras—A (under Kokāmukha) Var. 140. 34-36; B (under Lohārgala) Var. 151. 52
- Agnisatyapada—(under Badarī) Var. 141. 7
- Agnīśiras—(along the Yamunā) V. 90. 5-7
- Agnīśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. pp. 66, 71
- Agnitīrtha—A (on the southern bank of Yamunā) M 108. 27, P. I. 45.27; B (under VS) K. I. 35. 7, P. I. 37. 7; C (under Go.) B 98.1; D (on Sarasvatī) Sal. 47. 13-14, P. I. 27.27; E (on north bank of Sābhramatī) P VI. 134. 1; F (under Kubjāmraka) Var. 126. 63
- Ahaḥ—V. 83. 100
- Ahalyāhrada—(near Gautama's āśrama) V 84. 109, P. I. 38. 26
- Ahalyātīrtha—A (under Godāvarī); B. 87.1; B (under Narmadā) P. I. 18.84, M. 191. 90-92, K. II. 41. 43
- Ailāpatra—A dikpāla-nāga (guardian of western quarter) in Kāśmīra. NM1118 (modern Ailapatur)
- Airāvati—(The Hydraotes of Arrian, A. I. p. 190, Rāvi in the Punjab?). A r. on the border of Madradēsa rising in the Himālaya. M 115. 18-19, 116 1 and 6 and Devala q. by T. K. p. 249. Dey p. 73 is wrong in taking (in M 116.1) Haimavatī as a proper name, since in M 116. 6 the same river is called 'the eminent daughter of Himavat'
- Ajabila—(under m. Sripārvata). L. I. 92.153
- Ajatūṅga—Vā 77. 48 (śrāddha here is highly efficacious and here the shadow of gods is seen on parvan days)
- Ajeśvara—(a līṅga in VS) L. I. 92. 136
- Ajiravati—a r. referred to in Pān. VI. 3. 119. Probably the same as Aciravati above
- Ākāśa—(under VS) K. I. 35.3, P. I. 37.3
- Ākāśagaṅgā—A (under Gayā) Vā 112. 25, Ag. 116. 5; B (on m. Sahya) Nr 66.35 (sub-tīrtha of Āmalaka)
- Ākāśalinga—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 51
- Akrūra—(under Mathurā) Var. 155.4-5 (name of a hamlet between Mathurā and Vṛndāvana)
- Akṣavāla—(modern Achabal, a large village at west foot of a ridge which lines the Kutahar Pargana in Kāśmīra) R. I. 338, SM p. 180 (it has five springs). NM has the name Akṣipāla
- Akṣayyakaraṇa Vāṭa—(in Prayāga). Vide p. 614 above and AG p. 389 for Hiouen Thsang's reference to it. V 87. 11, P. VI. 25. 7-8 (Viṣṇu is supposed to lie on its leaf at the end of the kalpa).
- Akṣayyavāṭa—A (in Gayā, about half a mile from Viṣṇupada) V. 84. 83, 95. 14, Vā 105.45, 109.16, 111. 79-82 (Viṣṇu in the form of a child lies on its end when the whole world is one mass of water), Ag. 115. 70, P. I. 38. 2; B (under Go. to the north of Vindhya) B. 161. 66-67; C (on Narmadā) BV, III. chap. 33, 30-32 (where Pulastya performed tapas).
- Alābutīrtha—(under Viraja) B. 42. 6.
- Alakanandā—Ādi 170. 22 (Gaṅgā is so called among gods). Acc. to Vā 41. 18, K. I. 46. 31, Vi. II. 2. 36 and II. 8. 114 it is one of the four streams of the Ganges and reaches the sea with seven mouths. Ādi 170. 19 speaks of the seven mouths. N. (II. 66. 4 ff.) states that the Ganges is called Alakanandā after it reaches the earth and begins to follow Bhagīratha's chariot. Bh. IV. 6.24 and V.17.5. The Bhagīrathī is joined by Alakanandā at Deva-prayāga and the combined stream is then called Gaṅgā. N. 11. 67. 72-73 say that Bhagīrathī and Alakanandā meet near Badarīkā-



- śrama. According to I. G. I. vol. XV p. 60 there are five sacred confluences of the Alakanandā with other rivers viz. with Bhāgīrathī (Devaprayāga), Nandaprayāga, Karṇaprayāga (confluence with Pindar river), Rudraprayāga (confluence with Mandākinī), Viṣṇuprayāga. Vide U. P. Gazetteer for Garhwal, vol. 36 pp. 2 and 140.
- Aleśvara—see Brahmeśvara.
- Alitīrtha—(under Narmadā) K. II. 42. 37.
- Āmalaka—A (under Stutasvāmin in U. P.) Var. 148. 67 ff; B (between Brahmagiri and Vedagiri peaks of the Sahya m.) TS p. 78.
- Āmalakagrāma—(on m. Sahya) Nr. chap. 66. 7 ff. q. by T. K. p. 254. Dey p. 4 suggests that it is on the north bank of the Tāmraparṇī.
- Amarakahrada—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. P. 53.
- Amarakaṇṭaka—(m. in the Bilaspur District of Central Provinces). Vide p. 705-6 above. Vā (77. 10-11 and 15-16), V. Dh.S.85.6 highly eulogise śrāddha on this m. M 188. 79, P. I. 15. 68-69 state that the 2nd of the three *purā*s of Bāṇa burnt by Siva fell on this m. K.II.40.36 (high merit of visiting it when there is an eclipse of the sun or moon)
- Amarakeśvara—Līṅga (under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 53
- Āmardaka—Vide T. S. pp. 21-30 quoting SK. It is a Sivakṣetra, one of the twelve Jyotirlingas and is so called because sins are crushed here (āmar-deyāni pāpāni tasmād-āmardakam matam). On p. 22 of TS there is quotation from SK that in the four yugas it was respectively called Jyotirmaya, Mukti, Sparsā and Nāgeśvara. It is said to be a līṅga on p. 22, Vide Victor Cousins' 'Medieval temples of the Dakhan' pp. 77-78 for a description of the temple of Nāga-
- nātha and plates CXIII-CXV for the front of the great temple and portions of the wall and pillars of the porch and of the Hall. This is probably the same as Āvaṇḍhyā Nāganātha (Aundha in Survey of India maps) about 25 miles north-east of Parabhanī in the Hyderabad State.
- Amaresā—A (on Narmadā) M. 186.2; B (līṅga in VS) L. I. 92.37
- Amaresvara—A (on m. Niṣadha) Vām. q. by T. K. p. 236; B (under Srīparvata) L. I. 92.151; C NM 1535, Rāj. I. 267 (yātrā to famous cave of Amaranātha where Śiva is worshipped in līṅga-shaped ice-block. This pilgrimage is now most popular in Kāśmīra. Ain. A. vol. II. p. 360 describes it and states that from New Moon the image increases in size for 15 days and decreases with waning moon)
- Ambājanma (to east of Saraka) V. 83. 81 (it is Nāradatīrtha)
- Ambarīṣeśvara—(under VS) L.q. by T. K. p. 118
- Ambikātīrtha—L. I. 92.166
- Ambikāvana—(on r. Sarasvatī). Bh. X. 34. 1-2
- Amlu—(a very holy r. in Kurukṣetra) Vām. 34. 7
- Amohaka—(under Narmadā) M. 191. 105, P. I. 18. 96-99 (Tapeśvara was so called and there were boulders as big as elephants)
- Āmrātakesvara—(under VS) M. 22. 51, 181.28, Ag. 112. 3
- Amśumatī—(r.). Rg. VIII. 96. 13-15 (on which stayed an *asura* called Kṛṣṇa). According to Bṛhad-devatā (VI. 110) it was in the Kuru country; Rām. II. 55. 6 (near Yamunā).
- Ānanda—Vide under Nandītaṭa.
- Ānandapura—(under VS) K. I. 35. 15, P. I. 37. 18.
- Ananta—a Vaiṣṇava-kṣetra acc. to Bārhaspatyasūtra III. 120, Br. III. 13. 58.
- Anantabhavana or Anantahrada HC X. 253,256 (now called Anantānāga, about one krośa from Mādava



- vartanāga in the middle of the Vitastā river in Kāśmīra.
- Anantanāga—(not far from Puṇyodā). NM 1401-2. It is called Islamabad now and is at the foot of the western extremity of the Mārtāṇḍa plateau in Kāśmīra. SM p. 178
- Anantaśayana—(Padmanābha in Travancore) P. VI. 110.8, VI. 280. 19
- Anantatīrtha—(under Mathurā). Var. 155. 1
- Anaraka—A (under Kurukṣetra) Vām. 41. 22-24; B (under Narmadā) M. 193. 1-3, K. II. 41. 91-92; C (to the west of Yamunā) also called Dharma-rājatīrtha—K. I. 39.5, P. I. 27.56
- Anarakeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 113.
- Anāśaka—Var. 215. 89
- Anasūyā-līṅga—(north of Goprekṣa, under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 42
- Andha—(a *nada*). Bh. V. 19.18, Devī Bhāgavata VIII. 11. 16 (andhaśonau mahānadau); Dey (pp. 7 and 47) says it is the river Chāndan or 'Andhelā' which falls into the Gaṅgā in Bhagalpur
- Andhakeśa—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 65.
- Andhona—(under Narmadā). P. I. 18, 110-113
- Angabhūta—(a tīrtha sacred to pitṛs) M. 22. 51
- Angārakūṇḍa (under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 56
- Angāravāhika—M. 22.35
- Angāreśvara—A (under VS) L. q. by T. K. pp. 55 and 98; B (under Narmadā) M. 190.9, P. I. 17.6
- Angārakeśvara—A (under Gayā) Ag. 116.29; B (under Narmadā) K. II 41.6
- Angāreśa (under Narmadā) M. 191.59 (probably the same as above)
- Āngirasatīrtha (under Narmadā) K. II. 41. 31-33, P. I. 18.50
- Āngiraseśa (under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 117
- Anitabhā (r.) Rg. V. 53.9
- Āñjalikāśrama—Anu. 25. 52
- Āñjana (a m. near Brahmagiri, under Go.) B. 84. 2. Vide under Paisācatīrtha; Br. S. 14.5 says Āñjana is m. in the east
- Āñjasī—(r.) Rg. I. 104. 4
- Ānkola (under Narmadā) highly praised in M. 191. 118-122. Probably modern town of Anklesvar in Broach District. A. G. p. 322 identifies Akṛureśvara with Anklesar on left bank of the Narmadā. Vide I. A. 54 pp. 11-12
- Ānkuśeśvara (under Narmadā) M. 194.1
- Annakūṭa (under Mathurā) Var. 164, 10 and 22-23 (Govardhana was called Annakūṭa)
- Antakeśvara (under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 75
- Antarvedi (holy land between Gaṅgā and Yamunā) SK. I. 1.17. 274-275 (where brahmahatyā due to the killing of Vṛtra fell)
- Antasīlā (r. rising in Vindhya) Vā. 45. 103
- Antikeśvara (under VS) N. II. 49. 6-9
- Anūpā (r. rising from Rkṣavat m.) Br. II. 16.28
- Anyataḥ-plakṣa—name of a lotus lake in Kurukṣetra (Sat. Br. in SBE, vol. 44 p. 70)
- Āpagā—one of the seven (or nine) very holy rivers under Kurukṣetra—V. 83. 68, Vām. 34.7, P. I. 36.1-6 and Vām. 36. 1-4 (one krośa to the east of Mānuṣa), NM 158. Is it the same as Āpayā? Vide A. G. p. 185 where it is identified with the Ayak Nadī, a small stream rising in Jammu hills to the north-east of Sialkot. Cunningham (ASR of India, vol. XIV pp. 88-89) says that Āpagā or Ogha-vatī is a branch of the Ghaggar.
- Apām-prapatana—Anu. 25. 28
- Aparanandā—(near Hemakūṭa) Ādi. 215.7, 110.1, Anu. 166.28, Dey (p. 9) says it is the same as Alakanandā.
- Āpastambatīrtha (under Co.) B. 130.1

- Āpayā—(a r. probably a tributary of the Sarasvatī between it and Drśadvatī) Rg. III. 23.4. Thomas suggests that it is the same as Aughavatī (JRAS vol. 15 p. 362 n. 5)
- Apsaras-kunḍa—(under Mathurā and Govardhana) Var. 164. 19
- Apsaresā—(under Narmadā) M. 194.16, P. I. 21.16, K. II. 42.24
- Apsaroyugasāṅgama—(under Go.) B. 147.1
- Arantuka—a dvārapāla. V. 83. 52 (vide p. 683 note 1551).
- Aravinda—(a h. under Gayā). Vā. 109. 15, N. II. 47.83 (reads Aravindavara)
- Arbuda—(m. Abu in the Aravali range in the Sirohi State) V. 82. 55-56 (there was Vasiṣṭha's āśrama), M. 22. 38, P. I. 24.4, N. II. 60.27, Ag. 109. 10. It is one of the five sacred hills of the Jainas, the other four being Satruñjaya, Samet, Sikhara, Girnar and Candragiri. It is identified with Ptolemy's Apokopa (p. 76). There was a fire-pit thereon from which arose a warrior Paramāra, founder of the Paramāra dynasty of Malwa. Vide E. I. vol. IX. p. 10 (of Vikrama 1099) and E. I. vol. 19 Appendix p. 22 No 133 of *samvat* 1116
- Arbudasarasvatī—(r. sacred to pitṛs) M. 22.38
- Ārcikaparvata—V. 125.16 (where Cyavana and Sukanyā dwelt)
- Ardhacandra—(under Mathurā) Var. 169. 3.
- Ardhakīla—founded by Darbbhin near Sarasvaty-arunā-saṅgama. V. 83. 153-157
- Arghyatīrtha—G. I. 81. 7
- Ariṣṭakunḍa—(under Mathurā) Var. 164. 30 (where Ariṣṭa was slain)
- Ārjikiyā—(r.) Rg. X. 75. 5. Nir. IX. 26 states that the river was called Vipās (modern Beas) and Vipās was originally Uruñjirā
- Arjuna—(a tīrtha sacred to pitṛs) M. 22. 43.
- Arjunīyā (r.) Devala q. by T. K. p. 249. Prof. K. V. R. Aiyangar (T. K. p. 283) following Dey p. 11 holds it identical with Bāhudā, but the passage from Devala (on T. K. p. 249) shows that Arjunīyā and Bāhudā are separately enumerated
- Arkakṣetra—same as Koṇārka
- Arkasthala-kunḍa (under Mathurā) Var. 157.11, 160.20
- Ārṣabha—see under Rṣabha
- Ārṣiṣenāśrama—Anu. 25. 55
- Arunā-sarasvatīsaṅgama—three miles to the north-east of Pṛthūdaka-P. I. 27. 39, Śal. 43.30-31 and 42, Vām. 40.43
- Aruna—(m. on the other or west side of Kailāsa where Bhava dwells) Vā. 47. 17-18, Br. II. 18.18
- Arunā—A. (r. between Sarasvatī and Drśadvatī near Pṛthūdaka) Śal. 43. 30-35. Sarasvatī joined itself to Arunā to cleanse the rākṣasas of sins and Indra of brāhmaṇa murder; B. (a branch of the Kauśikī) V.84.156; vide Journal of A.S. of Bengal, vol. 17 pp.646-649 on the seven Kosis in Nepal of which the Arunā is the most important; C. (under Go.) B. 89. 1, P. VI. 176. 59. Vide. Bom. G. vol. XVI p. 463 for Arunā stream.
- Arunā-varunā-saṅgama—(under Gautamī) B. 89.1 and P. VI. 176. 59
- Arundhatī-vaṭa—V. 84.41, P. I. 32. 6
- Arunīśa—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 60
- Āryāvarta—The Amarakośa speaks of it as the holy land (puṇyabhūmi) between the Himavat and Vindhya mountains. Vide H. of Dh. vol. II. pp. 11-16 for detailed discussion of the extent of Āryāvarta according to different works and at different times
- Āśādha—līṅga (under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 93
- Āśādhītīrtha—(under Narmadā) M. 194. 30
- Āśālīṅga—(under Sripārvata) L. 92. 148.
- Asi—(r. under Banaras) also called Suśkanadī. Vide pp. 627, 637 above



- Asiknī**—(a r. now called Chenab) Rg. VIII. 20. 25, X. 75. 5. Nirukta IX. 26 observes that it was so called because its water was dark-coloured; later it was called Candrabhāgā. This was the Acekines of the Greeks. Vide Bh. V. 19. 18
- Asikuṇḍa**—(under Mathurā) Var. 163. 13; Var. chap. 166 deals with the efficacy of Asikuṇḍa
- Asita**—(a m. in the west) V. 89. 11-12 (on this m. Cyavana and Kakṣasena had their āśramas).
- Asitā**—(r. where yogācārya Asita dwelt). A place fit for śrāddha, Vā. 77.39, Br. III. 13. 39
- Asitagiri**—(where yogācārya Asita dwelt) Br. III. 13. 39
- Āsmanvatī**—(r). Rg. X. 53. 8. The Āśv. gr. (I. 8. 2-3) provides that the first half of the verse is to be employed as a mantra when a newly married girl boards a boat and the latter half when she crosses the river and gets down. Dey p. 13 says that it is the river Oxus. He assigns no reasons and I do not accept his view.
- Āsmaprṣṭha**—(a holy stone slab in Gayā, even now called Pretaśīlā). Anu. 25. 42
- Āsokatīrtha**—(near Sūrpāraka) V. 88. 13
- Astamana**—(under Mathurā) Var. q. by T. K. p. 191
- Aṣṭavakra**—(four miles from Haridvāra) Anu. 25.41. Vide Dey p. 12
- Asthipura**—(under Kurukṣetra) P. I. 27.62. It is to the west of Thāneśvara and south of Aujasa-ghāt. Here the bodies of the warriors slain in the Bhārata war were collected and cremated. Vide A. S. R. vol. 14 pp. 86-106 and A. G. p. 336 where it is mentioned that Hiouen Tshang was shown bones of very large size.
- Āsurīśvara**—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 67
- Āśvamedha**—(under Prayāga) Ag. 111. 14
- Āśvaśiras**—(in the story of Nala). V. 79. 21
- Āśvatīrtha**—**A** (not far from Kānyakubja) V. 95.3. Anu. 4.17, Vi. IV. 7.15 (where sage Ṛcika gave 1000 horses as bride-price to Gādhi for the latter's daughter Satyavatī), Kālikā 85. 51-57; **B** (under Narmadā) M. 194. 3, P. I. 21. 3; **C** (on Go.) B. 89. 43 (where the two Āśvins were born)
- Āśvatthatīrtha**—K. II. 35.38—where Nārāyaṇa resides in the form of Hayaśiras (location is not clear)
- Āśvinī**—Anu. 25. 21 (on the Devikā river)
- Āśvinos-tīrtha**—(under Kurukṣetra) V. 83.17, P. I. 26. 15 (same words as in V).
- Āśviśvara**—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 52
- Aṭavītīrtha**—(under Narmadā) P. I. 21. 30
- Atibala**—(Mahābalesvara in Satara District) P VI. 113.29
- Ātmatīrtha**—(under Go.) B. 117.1
- Ātreyatīrtha**—(on north bank of Go.) B. 140.1
- Atri's āśrama**—(after Citrakūṭa) Rām II. 117.5
- Atriśvara**—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 43
- Aṭṭahāsa**—**A** (m. in Himālayas) Vā. 23. 191; **B** (a tīrtha sacred to pitṛs) M. 22.68; **C** (a liṅga in VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 47
- Auddālakatīrtha**—V 84. 161
- Audyānakatīrtha**—P. I. 38.68
- Aujasa**—(under Kurukṣetra) V. Dh. S. 85. 52, Vām. 22.51 and 57.51
- Aupamanyava**—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 97
- Ausaja**—**A**—V.Dh.S. 85.52 (Sūrpāraka, acc. to com. Vaijayanti). Jolly (SBE, vol. 7. p. 259 gives a different reading Aujasa, and queries whether it may not be Ausija; **B** (a boundary of Samantapañcaka) Vām. 22. 51 (Rantukād Aujasam capi)

Auśanasa—(an eminent tīrtha on Sarasvatī) same as Kapālamocana. V. 83.135, M. 22.31, Sal. 39.4 and 16-22, P. I. 27. 24-26, Vām. 39.1 and 14 (where Uśanas got sidhhi and became planet Venus), 42.24

Auśiraparvata—Vā. 77.29

Avadhūta—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 93

Avakīrṇa—(under Kurukṣetra and Sarasvatī) Vām. 39. 24-35 (story of Baka Dālbhya who begged of Dhṛtarāṣṭra and when condemned by the latter made the whole of Dhṛtarāṣṭra's country an *āhuti* in Pṛthūdaka), Sal. 41.1, P. I. 27. 41-45 (where it is Darbhīn who is mentioned as bringing the four seas)

Avanti—A (country of which Ujjayinī was capital) Pāṇ IV. 1.176 ('striyām—*avanti*-kuntī-kurubhyaś-ca'), Raghuvamśa VI. 32; S 31. 10 (Vin-dānuvindāvāvantyan), Udyoga 166.6 (same words as in S); B Avanti (river starting from m. Pāriyātra) Vā. 45.98, M. 114.24, Br. II. 16.29; C (the capital of Mālava, Ujjayinī) B. 43.24, Ag. 109. 24 (Avanti paramam tīrtham), N. II. 78. 35-36 (several names such as Viśālā, Amarāvati, Kuśasthalī, Kanakaśṛṅgā, Padmāvati, Kumudvatī, Ujjayinī). Vide also L. I. 92. 7-8 and B. 194.19 (Sāndīpani, teacher of Kṛṣṇa, dwelt in Avantipura). The Meghadūta (I. 30) speaks of Ujjayinī as Viśālā; Kāśīkhaṇḍa 7.92 'pāpād-avanti sā viśvam-avantīti nigadyate : yuge yugeśnyanāmnī kalāvujjayanīti ca'. Vide under Mahākāla

Avatodā—(r.) Bh. V. 19.18

Avighnatīrtha—(on north bank of Go.) B. 114.25

Avimukta—(same as Kāśī) V. 84. 79-80, Vi. V. 34.30 and 43. Vide pp. 618-642 above

Avimuktesvara—(līṅga in VS) L. I. 92.6 and 105, N. II. 49. 53-55 (where cocks are honoured)

Ayodhyā— (in Fyzabad District in U. P.) on the Ghāgrā. One of the seven holy cities (vide p. 678n above). It is also a place of pilgrimage for Jains, as some of their saints were born there. Atharvaveda X. 2. 31 and Tai. A. 1. 27.2 (aṣṭācakrā nava-dvārā devānām pūr-Ayodhyā tasyām hiranyayaḥ kośab svargo loko Jyoti-śāvṛtaḥ), V 60. 24-25 and 70. 2 (capital of king Rūpama and of Rāma), Br. IV. 40. 91, Ag. 109. 24 (Ayodhyā pāpanāśanī). According to Rām. I. 5. 5-7 the country of Kosala had Sarayū flowing through it; Ayodhyā, 12 yojanas long and three broad, was Kosala capital founded by Manu. Kosala was one of the 16 *mahājanapadas* of India in ancient times (vide Aṅguttara Nikāya, vol. IV. p. 252). Later on, Kosala was divided into two, viz. Uttara Kosala and Dakṣiṇa Kosala divided by the Sarjū or Ghāgrā river. The Raghuvamśa holds Ayodhyā to be capital of Uttarakosala (VI. 71 and IX. 1). Vide also Vā 88. 20 ff. for a long line of kings of Ayodhyā from Ikṣvāku and P. VI. 208. 46-47 (for Dakṣiṇa Kośalā and Uttara Kośalā). Sāketa is generally identified with Ayodhyā. Vide T. P. p. 496 (gives its boundaries from SK) and under Sāketa. Dr. B. C. Law contributes a well-documented and learned paper on 'Ayodhyā' to J. of the Ganganath Jha. R. Society, vol. I. pp. 423-443

Ayogasiddhi—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 98

Ayonisaṅgama—(under Narmadā) P. I. 18. 58

B

Babhrutīrtha—(where the Mahī river falls into the sea) SK I. 2. 13. 107

Badarī—(a holy place on Gandhamādana where there was the hermitage of Nara and Nārāyaṇa) V. 90. 25, 32, 141.23, 177.8, Śānti 127.2-3, Bh. IX. 3. 36 and XI. 29. 41 (Nārāyaṇa)



- śrama); M. 22. 73 (very fit for śrāddha), P. VI. 2. 1-7 (there is no *pūjā* in Dakṣiṇāyana as the mountain is covered with snow). Also called Viśālā. Vide I. G. I. vol. VI pp. 179-180 for description. The temple of Badrināth is on the right bank of the Alakanandā.
- Badarikā—A. Vām. 2. 42-43; B. (near Mahendra m.), P. I. 39. 13, V. 85. 13; C. (somewhere in southern Gujarat). Vide E. I. vol. 25 Ellora plates of Dantidurga (pp. 25, 29)
- Badarikāśrama—A. (Badrināth in Garhwal, U. P.) Var. 141 (7 verses from it are quoted in T. K. pp. 215-216); Parāśarasmitī I. 5 states that Parāśara, father of Vyāsa, resided in this āśrama; M. 201. 24 says Mitra and Varuṇa practised *tapas* here; Vi. V. 37. 34 (this āśrama was on Gandhamādāna and was the abode of Nara-Nārāyaṇa), Br. III. 25. 67 (same as in Vi); N. II. 67 (describes it at length and specifies the sub-tirthas); N. II. 67. 26 (says it is on Viśālā river); Bh. VII. 11. 6; B (at a short distance from Madhuvana on Yamunā) P. VI. 212. 1 and 43.
- Badarivana—P. I. 27. 66
- Badaripācana-tirtha—V. 83. 179, Sal. 47. 33 and 48. 1 and 51 (Vasiṣṭha had his āśrama here).
- Bagalā—(a Devīsthāna). Vide under Vaidyanātha.
- Bāhudā—(a river near Sarasvatī). Anu. 165, 27, P. I. 32. 31, N. II. 60. 30, B. 27. 26, M. 114. 22 and Vā. 45. 95 (say it rises in Himavat). V. 84. 67 and 87. 27. Vide Dey. p. 16 for differing views on identification. and Pargiter (pp. 291-292 note); Vā. 88. 66 states that Yuvanāśva cursed his wife Gaurī who became Bāhudā. Amarakośa gives Saitavāhini as a synonym of Bāhudā and Kṣīrasvāmin comments that it was brought down by Kārtavīrya (who was called Bahuda, one who donated much).
- Bahulavana—(under Mathura) Var. 157. 8
- Bahunetra—(a tirtha on the Narmadā to be visited on trayodaśī) M. 191. 14
- Bāhyā—(r. rising from Sahya) Br. II. 16. 35.
- Bakulāsaṅgama—(under Sābhramatī) P. VI. 133. 27.
- Bakulavana (or Bahulao)—(5th vana out of 12 under Mathurā) Var. 153. 36. Vide p. 690 above
- Balabhadraliṅga—(under VS.) L. q. by T. K. p. 46.
- Balākā—Anu. 25. 19 (kanyākūpa upas-
pr̥śya Balākāyām kṛtodakāḥ)
- Bālakesvara—(under VS.) L. q. by T. K. p. 43
- Bālakesvara—(under Narmadā) M. 191 19
- Bālāpa or Bālapendra—(on bank of Sābhramatī) P. VI. 145. 1, 24 and 37 (a Ravikṣetra)
- Balesvara—(under Srīparvata) L. I. 92. 148
- Balikunḍa—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 76
- Bānagaṅgā—(under Sālagrāma) Var. 144. 63 (Rāvaṇa exposed it by shooting an arrow to the south of Someśvara)
- Bānatirtha—A (under Go.) B. 123. 214; B (under Narmadā) K. II. 41. 9-10
- Bāneśvara-liṅga (under VS) SK, Kāśī-khaṇḍa 33. 139, L. q. by T. K. p. 48
- Baṅjulā—(probably same as Vāṅjulā, which see) Br. II. 16. 31 (Baṅjulā from Rkṣa), Br. II. 16. 34 (B. from Sahya), Br. II. 16. 37 (B. from Mahendra)
- Bārhaspatya-tirtha—(under Go.) B. 122. 101
- Bhadra—A (one of the four branches of the heavenly Ganges) Vi. II. 2. 34, Bh. V. 17. 5, Vām. 31. 52; B (the river on which Harihara is situated) Nr. 65. 18
- Bhadradoha—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 52

- Bhadrakāleśvara—(śrāddha here leads to highest goal) M. 22. 74
- Bhadrakālī—Acc. to Bār. S. III. 128 she dwells on Vindhya
- Bhadrakālīhrada—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 87
- Bhadrakarnābrada—Ag. 109. 17
- Bhadrakarneśvara—(a fit place for śrāddha) V. 84. 39, K. II. 20. 35, SK VII. 1. Arbuda-khaṇḍa—chap. 8, 1-2 (liṅga on a pool of that name on Arbuda m.)
- Bhadratīrtha—A (under Narmadā) P. I. 18. 54; B (under Go.) B. 165.1, M 22. 50
- Bhadratuṅga—V. 82. 80
- Bhadravana—(6th out of 12 vanas of Mathurā) Var. 153. 37, 161. 7
- Bhadravaṭa—V. 82. 50, P. I. 12. 10, Var. 51.2 (on the north side of the Himālaya) and 98. 6
- Bhadrāvati—(one of the four original streams of the Ganges, the other three being Sītā, Alakanandā and Sucakṣuḥ) Br. III. 56. 52
- Bhadreśvara—A (on north bank of Narmadā) M 22. 25, K. II. 41. 4; B (under VS) L. I. 92. 136, L. q. by T. K. pp. 52, 68
- Bhagavat-padī—The Ganges. Bh. V. 17.1-9
- Bhāgīrathī—M 121. 41 (which is one of the seven streams that started from Bindusaras and which following Bhāgīratha's chariot reached the sea)
- Bhairava—(a tīrtha) M. 22. 31
- Bhairaveśvara—(under VS) L. I. 92. 137
- Bhāṇḍāhrada (under Mathurā)—Var. 157. 10
- Bhāṇḍīra—(under Mathurā) Var. 153. 43 (the 11th out of 12 vanas), 156. 3: vide p. 691 above
- Bhāṇḍīraka Vaṭa—(near Vṇḍāvana) Bh. X. 18.22, X. 19.13
- Bhaṅgatīrtha—(under Narmadā) M. 191.52
- Bhānutīrtha—(under Go.) B. 138. 1, 168.1
- Bhārabhūteśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 93
- Bhārabhūti—(under Narmadā) M. 194. 18, K. II. 42. 25, P. I. 21.18
- Bharadvājāśrama—Rām. II. 54. 9-10, VI. 127. 1 and 17, V 102. 5-6, Vide Citrakūṭagiri. For a discussion of the real site of this āśrama, vide Journal, Ganganath Jha R. Institute, vol. III pp. 189-204 and 433-474 (Shri R. M. Shastri)
- Bharadvājatīrtha—(see Agastyatīrtha) Ādi 216.4
- Bharatasya-āśrama—A (under Gayā) Br. III. 13.105, M. 13.46 (Devī is here called Lakṣmī-Aṅganā), Vā 77. 98, 108. 35, and 112.24; B (under Kauśikī) K. II. 37.38, P. I. 38.48
- Bharateśa—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 66
- Bhārgaveśa—(under Narmadā) M. 192.1, P. I. 19.1
- Bhartṛsthāna—V 85.60, P. I. 39.56 (where god Mahāsena is 'nityasan-nihita'). Same words in both V and P
- Bhārūṇḍavana—(in the country of Matsya) Rām. II. 71.5
- Bharukaccha—(modern Broach) S. 51.10 (the inhabitants of Bharukaccha brought as presents to the Pāṇḍavas horses from Gāndhāra i. e. the country about Peshawar). Ptolemy and the Periplus call it Barygaza. It was called Bhṛgupura and Bhṛgu-kaccha also (the latter in SK, Kāśīkhaṇḍa 6.25). A Valabhi copperplate of Dharasena IV in Valabhi samvat 330 (648-9 A. D.) was issued from a camp at Bharukaccha. There is a Suppāraka-taka, No. 463 where Bharukaccha is mentioned as a seaport (ed. by Cowell)
- Bhasmagātraka—L. I. 92.137

Bhasmakūṭādrī—(under Gayā) Vā. 109.
15

Bhāskarakṣetra—(Koṇārka) Mit. on Yāj. III. 17 quotes a verse 'Gaṅgāyām Bhāskarakṣetre &c.' (q. on p. 574 above); T. C. p. 16 and Prāyaścittatattva (p. 493) say that Prayāga is Bhāskarakṣetra, while T.S. p. 20 says it is Koṇāditya or Koṇārka. This is the correct view. M. 111. 13 and K. I. 36. 20 say 'Prayāga is Prajāpati-kṣetra.' Vide p. 574 above. Dey p. 32 simply follows Prāyaścittatattva

Bhāvātīrtha—(under Go.) B. 153.1

Bhedādevī—(near Gaṅgodbheda)—the modern Budabror, west of Śrīnagara, in Kāśmīra; NM 1522

Bhedagiri—(sanctified by the Gaṅgodbheda spring) R. I. 35, SM. pp. 186-187

Bhillatīrtha—(on south bank of Go.) B. 169.1

Bhīmā—(r.)—same as Bhīmarathī, rising from Sahya m. and tributary of Kṛṣṇā. Devala q. by T. K. p. 250. Its source is adorned by the temple of Bhīmāśankara, one of the twelve Jyotir-līngas and it falls into the Kṛṣṇā river 16 miles north of Raichur

Bhīmādevī—(modern village Brān in Phāk Pargana on east shore of Dal lake in Kāśmīra) R. II. 135, HC. 4. 47

Bhīmarathī—same as Bhīmā. M. 22. 45, 114.29, B. 27.35, P. I. 24.32, Bhī. 9. 20, V. 87. 3, Vām. 13. 30. The Vakkaleri plate of Kirtivarman II in śake 679 (757 A. D.) mentions Bhīmarathī (E. I. vol. V. p. 200 at p. 204)

Bhīmasvāmin—Rock in Kāśmīra worshipped as embodiment of Gaṇeśa, SM. p. 148

Bhīmatīrtha—Ag. 109.12

Bhīmāyāh sthānam—V. 82. 84. Dey p. 33 identifies it with Takta-i-Bahai, 28 miles to the north-east of Peshawar

Bhīmeśvara—(tīrtha sacred to Pitrs under Narmadā) M. 22, 46 and 75, 191. 5, K. II. 41. 20 and II. 44.15, P. I. 18. 5

Bhīmacandika—(under VS) M 183. 62

Bhīmeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 66

Bhogavatī or Vāsukitīrtha—A (under Prayāga). It is called the altar of Prajāpati; V. 85.77 (tīrtham Bhogavatī caiva vedir-eṣā Prajāpateḥ), M. 106.46 and 110. 8, Ag. 111. 5, N. II. 63.95; B capital of Kakustha of the Ikṣvāku race; Kal. 50.4

Bhṛgu—āśrama (on the north bank of Narmadā) SK I. 2.3. 2-6

Bhṛgukaccha—(on the north bank of Narmadā), vide under Bharukaccha. Here Bali performed Āsvamedha; Bh. VIII. 18.2

Bhṛgukūṇḍa—(under Stutasvāmin) Var. 148.48

Bhṛgutīrtha—(under Narmadā) M 193. 23-60, K. II. 42. 1-6, P. I. 20.23-57. Dey p. 34 says it is Bheraghat containing temple of 64 Yoginīs, 12 miles to the west of Jabalpur; V. 99.34-35 (at this place Paraśurāma regained his energy taken away by Rāma)

Bhṛgutūṅga—(an āśrama on a mountain where Bhṛgu practised penance). A—Vā. 23. 148 and 77.82, V. 84.50, 90. 23, 130. 191; B V.Dh.S. 85.16, K. II. 20.33, M. 22.31 (a place very fit for śrāddha), which is near Amarakantaka acc. to Nanda Paṇḍita and acc. to others in the Himālaya; C (on the eastern bank of the Gaṇḍak) Var. 146 45-46; D (in Gurjaradeśa) SK., Kāśīkhaṇḍa 6. 25; E (near Vitastā and Himavat) Vām. 81. 33

Bṛhaspatikūṇḍa—(under Lohārgala) Var. 151.55

Bhṛṅgīśvara-līṅga—(under VS) SK. Kāśīkhaṇḍa 33. 129 and L. q. by T. K. p. 84

Bhūmicandēśvara—(under VS) Ag. 112.4

Bhūmitīrtha—Ag. 109. 12



Bhūtālayatīrtha—(under Sābhramatī) P. VI. 158. 1 (where r. Candanā becomes *prācī*). Vām. 34. 47 mentions it, but its location is uncertain

Bhūteśvara—A (in Kashmir, now called Buthiser) NM 1309, 1324, 1327, R. I. 107. II. 148, HC 4.85. This is included in Nandiksetra. Bhūteśa Sīva's residence is on a mountain spur which stretches south-east from Haramukha peaks. Ain. A. vol. II. p. 364 refers to it; B (under VS) K. I. 35.10, P. I. 37.13; C (under Mathurā) Var. 169.19

Bhuvaneśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 56

Bilapatha—(from where the Vitastā or Zhelum starts) HC 12. 15-17. Vide under Nilakunḍa

Bilvācala—A Vaiṣṇava-kṣetra acc. to Bār. S. III. 120

Bilvaka—(a very fit place for śrāddha) V. Dh. S. 85.52, M. 22. 70, K. II. 20.33, Anu. 25. 13, N. II. 40.79

Bilvapatraka—P. VI. 129.11 (one of the 12 tīrthas of Sīva)

Bilvavana—(10th out of the 12 *vanas* of Mathurā) Var. 153.42

Binduka—V. Dh. S. 85. 12 (some editions read Bilvaka)

Bindumādhava—(in VS) M. 185. 68, SK IV. 33. 148, N. II. 29. 61, P. VI. 131. 48

Bindusaras—A (on Maināka m. near Badarī) V. 145.44, Bhī. 6. 43-46, Br. II. 18. 31, M. 121. 26 and 31-32 (where Bhagīratha, Indra and Nara-Nārāyaṇa practised *tapas*), Bh. III. 21-33 and 39-44 (description); B (under VS) Siva bathed in it and the *kapāla* of Brahmā that had stuck to his hand dropped from it and it became Kapālamocanatīrtha) N. II. 29. 59-60; C (under Ekāmra) B. 41. 52-54 (it is so called because Rudra collected drops of water from all holy places and filled it therewith); D (in Kāśmīra) it is a *dikpāla* in the east of the country, according to NM 1116-1117.

Bindutīrtha—same as Pañcanada which see.

Bodhitaru—(the Bo tree at Buddha Gayā) P. VI. 117.30. Vide under Mahābodhitaru. At the Bharbut stūpa (about 200 B. C.) there is a bas-relief showing the Vajrāsana throne of Buddha with the view of the Bodhi tree and an inscription 'bhagavato Sakamunino Bodhi'; vide 'Mahābodhi' by Cunningham, p. 3. The Bodhi tree is said to have been cut down by king Saśāṅka of Bengal in 600 A. D., but restored about 620 A. D. by king Pūrṇavarman. Vide A. G. pp. 453-459 for Bodh Gayā and p. 459 for Bodhitaru.

Brahmagiri—A. (m. from which Godāvarī rises on which Gautama had his hermitage) B. 74. 25-26, 84. 2, P. VI. 176. 58; B (the highest peak of Sahya and as a tīrtha under Kṛṣṇa-venyā) T. S. p. 78

Brahmabrada—Bh. X. 28. 16-17 (probably used in a secondary sense), Br. III. 13. 52

Brahmakṣetra—(Kurukṣetra) V 83. 4-6, Vā 59. 106 and 107 and 97. 5

Brahmakunḍa—A (under Badarī) Var. 141. 4-6; B (under Lohārgala) Var. 151. 71 (where four Vedadhārās fall from Himālaya); C (under Gayā) Vā. 110.8

Brahmakūpa—(under Gayā) Vā. 111.25 and 31, Ag. 115. 37

Brahmanadī—(Sarasvatī is so called) Bh. IX. 16. 23

Brāhmaṇakundikā—(a tīrtha in Kāśmīra) NM. 1499, 1501

Brahmaṇas-tīrtha—V. 83. 113, P. I. 27.2 (Brahmaṇas sthānam), P. I. 38. 20

Brāhmaṇī—(probably the Bāmanī that falls into the Chambal) V. 84. 58

Brāhmaṇikā—(near Naimiṣa) P. I. 32.22

Brahmānusvara—(under Kurukṣetra) P. I. 26. 67



- Brahmapada—(under Gonīṣkramaṇa) Var. 147. 36
- Brahmaputra—same as Lauhitya, which see
- Brahmāranya—(under Gayā) P. I. 38.5
- Brahmasaras—**A** (near Thaṇesar) Vā. 77. 51, M. 22. 12, Vām. 22. 55-60 and 49. 38-39. This lake is known by various names, viz. Brahmasaras, Rāmahrada or Pavanasaras &c.; **B** (under Gayā) V. 84. 85 (dharmāranyopasobhita) and 95. 11, Anu. 25. 58, Ag. 115. 38, Vā. 111. 30, ; **C** (under Kokāmukha) Var. 140. 37-39; **D** (under Sānandūra) Var. 150. 20
- Brahmaśiras—(under Gayā) K. II. 37. 38, N. II. 44. 66 (there is Brahmayūpa there)
- Brahmasthāna—V. 83. 71, 85. 35, P. I. 27. 2
- Brahmasthūnā—P. I. 39. 33
- Brahmatāresvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 88
- Brahmatīrtha—**A** (under VS) K. I. 35. 9, II. 37. 28, P. I. 37. 9-12 (Viṣṇu established it in the name of Brahmā); **B** (under Gayā) P. I. 38. 69, N. II. 45. 102, Ag. 115. 36; **C** (under Go.) B. 113. 1 and 23, Br. III. 13. 56; **D** (on Sarasvatī) Bh. X. 78.19
- Brahmatuṅga—Ag. 109. 12, P. I. 24.28
- Brahmatuṇḍahrada or Brahmātūṅghrada—Br. III. 13.73, Vā. 77.71-73 (śrāddha, japa, homa yield inexhaustible results here)
- Brahmavallī-tīrtha—(under Sābhramatī) P. VI. 137.1
- Brahmavālūkā—V. 82. 106, P. I. 25. 13
- Brahmāvarta—**A** (holy land between Sarasvatī and Dr̥ṣadvatī) Manu II. 17, Kal. 49. 71. The Meghadūta I. 48 (Nir. ed.) shows that Kurukṣetra was part of Brahmāvarta. It is a holy tīrtha. V. 83. 53-54, 84. 43, M. 22. 69, Ag. 109. 17; **B** (under Narmadā) M. 190. 7, 191. 70, P. I. 17. 5
- Brahmayoni—**A** (on Sarasvatī)—same as Pr̥thūdaka, Vām. 39.20 and 23; **B** (under Gayā) V. 83, 140 and 84.95, P. I. 27.29, N. II. 47. 54, Vā. 108.83 (brahmayonim praviśyātha nirgacched yastu mānavaḥ | param brahma sa yātiha vimukto yonisāṅkaṭāt). Vide AG. p. 458 which states that a small temple now occupies the site of Aśoka's stūpa and p. 646 note 1470 above
- Brahmayūpa—(under Gayā) Vā. 111. 31-33, Ag. 115.39
- Brahmesvaraliṅga—**A** (under Sripāravata) K. II. 41.18, L. I. 92. 159-160 (also called Aleśvara); **B** (under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 115
- Brahmodara—Vām. 36. 7-8
- Brahmodaya—(to the south of Vāgmatī) Var. 215.102
- Brahmodbheda—Var. 215.91
- Brahmodumbara—V. 83.71
- Br̥hadvana—(near Gokula where Nandagopa kept his cattle) Bh. X. 5. 26, X. 7. 33
- Budbudā—(r. rising in the Himālaya) Br. II. 16. 25-26
- Budhesvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. pp. 55, 97
- C**
- Caitraka—M. 110.2
- Caitraratha—(a vana) Vā. 47.6 (on the banks of the Acchodā river), Br. II. 18. 7. Here Devī is called Madotkaṭā; M. 13.28
- Cakra—(near Sarasvatī) Bh. X. 78.19
- Cakradhara—(Viṣṇusthāna in Kāśmīra, now known in a corrupt form as Tskdar or Chākdhār) R. I. 38. It is a tīrtha of great sanctity, about a mile to the west of Bijbror (ancient Vijayēśvara). Vide K. R. p. 18 and SM. p. 171 (Cakradhara and Vijayēśa-Siva are two images located close to each other). HC calls it Cakratīrtha (7.61) and also Cakradhara (7.64)
- Cakrasthita—(under Narmadā) Var. 169.3



- Cakrasvāmin—(under Sālagrāma) Var. 145. 38 (cakraṅkitasīlās-tatra, dr-śyante)
- Cakratīrtha—A (under Saukaratīrtha) Var. 137. 19; B (under Āmalakagrāma) Nr. 66. 22; C (under Setu) SK. III. Brahmakhaṇḍa, chap. 3-5; D (in Kāśmīra) also called Cakra-dhara (which see); E (on Go.) B. 86. 1, 109. 1, 134. 1 (6 miles from Tryambaka)—though thrice mentioned, it appears to be one tīrtha; F (under Mathurā) Var. 162.43; G (under Sarasvatī) Vām. 42.5, 57.89, 81.3; vide A, G. p. 336 and under Asthipura; H (under Dvārakā) TP. pp. 536-537, Var. 159.58
- Cakravāka—(a tīrtha sacred to *pitṛs*) M. 22.42
- Cakrāvarta—(under Mandāra) Var. 143. 36-38 (a deep lake)
- Cakreśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 52
- Cakṣus—(r. from Himālaya, a branch of Gaṅgā) M. 121.23, Vā. 47.21 and 39, Br. II. 16.20, Bh. V. 17.5. Dey p. 43 holds that Cakṣus is the river Oxus or Amu Daria and relies on Matsya 120-121 (of Ānandāśrama edition), which however does not help at all. It is strange that Dey on p. 13 also holds that Aśmanvatī is the river Oxus
- Cakṣus—tīrtha (on south bank of Go.) B. 170.1
- Camasa or Camasodbheda—A (where Sarasvatī appears again after disappearing in the desert) V. 82.112, 130. 5 (eṣa vai Camasodbhedo yatra dr̥śyā Sarasvatī), P I. 25.18; B (under Prabhāsa) Sal. 35. 87, V. 88.20
- Camatkārapura—(same as Ānandapura in modern Ahmedabad District) SK. VI. chap. 1-13
- Campā—A (city on the Bhāgīrathī four miles to west of Bhagalpur and one of the six great cities of the times of the Buddha) V. 84.163, 85.14, 308.26, P. I. 38.70; M. 48. 91 (originally it was called Mālinī but later was called Campā after king Campa). According to the Mahāparinibbāna-sutta the six great cities are Campā, Rājagṛha, Śrāvastī, Sāketa, Kausāmbī, Benares (SBE vol. XI. p. 99 and p. 247). Vām. 84.12 mentions Cāmpēya brāhmaṇas. Campā is in the Varanādi-gaṇa (Pāṇ. IV. 2.82); B (river sacred to *pitṛs*) M. 22.41, P.V. 11.35 (between Aṅga and Magadha, acc. to Dey p. 43). It was the capital of Lomapāda and of Karna
- Campakāraṇya—(modern Champaran in Bihar) V. 84.133, P.I. 38.49. Vālmīki's hermitage was near Sangram-pur in the Champaran District
- Campakatīrtha—(where Gaṅgā flows to the north) N. II. 40. 86
- Campakavana—(under Gayā) Vā. 37. 16-22
- Cañcalā—(r. rising from m. R̥ṣyavat) M. 114. 26
- Caṇḍavegā—(r. sacred to *pitṛs*) M. 22. 28
- Caṇḍavegāsambheda—M. 22, 28, K. II. 44. 16, P. VI. 131. 67
- Candesa—(under Sābhramatī) P. VI. 162.1.
- Caṇḍikeśvara—L. I. 92. 166, Vām. 51.50
- Candrabhāgā—(A) the river rises in the Himālayas in two streams, one is called Candrā (which issues from a large snow-bed on the south-east side of Bāra Lācha at a height of over 16000 feet), the other called Bhāgā rises on the north-west slopes of the pass. The two join at Taṇḍi and the united stream is known as Candrabhāgā or Chenab. The five rivers of the Panjab are : Vitastā (Jhelum, the Hydaspes of the Greeks), Vipāsā (Beas, Hypasis of the Greeks), Satadru (Sutlaj), Candrabhāgā and Irāvati. In 'Questions of Milinda' (SBE vol. 35 p. 171) Candrabhāgā is one of the ten great



- of India. V.Dh. S. 85. 49, S. 9. 19, M. 13. 49, Anu. 25. 7, N. II. 60. 30, NM. 159 and 162, HC. 12.44. Vide Asiknī; B (under Narmadā) M. 191.64, K. II. 41, 35, P. I. 18. 61; C (joins Tāpī) P. VI. 70.44; D (r. that joins Sābhramatī) P. VI. 148. 12, 149.1; E (same as Bhīmā, a tributary of the Kṛṣṇā)
- Candramas-tīrtha—(on Ārcikaparvata) V. 125.17
- Candrapāda—(under Gayā) Br. III. 47. 18-19
- Candrapura—(a city in Kāśmīra) NM. 1138 and 1156-7 (Mahāpadma Nāga flooded that city and there came into existence a lake, one yojana in length and breadth)
- Candratīrtha—A (at source of Kāverī) K. II. 37.23; B (under VS) P. I. 37. 14, K. I. 35.11; C (under Narmadā) M. 193. 75, K. II. 42. 15, Br. III. 13. 28
- Candravaśā—(r.) Bh. V. 19.18
- Candravatī—(r. in Kāśmīra) NM 310 (Diti became this river, as Yamunā became Vitastā)
- Candresvara—A (on Candrabhāgā river and to the east of Dugdhesvara, on Sābhramatī) P. VI. 149.1; B (under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 49
- Candrikā—(r. Candrabhāgā, modern Chenab) M. 22.63
- Carmākhyā—(under VS) K. I. 35.4
- Carmanvatī—(r. modern Chambal that rises about 9 miles south-west of Mhow and falls into the Yamunā 25 miles south-west of; Etawah town) Ādi. 138. 74 (Drupada ruled over southern Pañcāla up to Carmanvatī), V. 82. 54, Droṇaparva 67.5 (the name is due to the heaps of the hides of animals killed in Rantideva's yajñas), P. I. 24.3, Meghadūta I. 45 (refers to Rantideva); the word Carmanvatī occurs in Pāṇ. VIII. 2.12
- Carmakoṭa—M. 22. 42
- Catuḥsamudra—(a kūpa under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 89
- Catuḥsāmudrika—(a kūpa under Ma-thurā) Var. 158. 41
- Catuḥsrota—(under Badarī) Var. 141. 17
- Caturmukha—(under Sarasvatī) Vām. 42.28
- Caturthesvara—(under VS) N. II. 49.65
- Caturvedesvara—(under VS) SK, Kāśī-khaṇḍa 33. 130
- Chāgalāṇḍa—(a very fit place for śrā-ddha) M. 13.43 (where Devī is called Pracandā), 22. 72
- Chāgalesvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 119
- Chāyākṣetra—(sacred to Lalitā) Br. IV. 44. 100 (town park of Mahā-lakṣmīpura is so called)
- Chinnapāpakṣetra—(on Go.) P. VI. 174. 15
- Ciccikatīrtha—(under Go.) B. 164.1
- Cidambara—(see under Mīnākṣī) Devī-bhāgavata VII. 38. 11. It is famous for its great Siva temple and contains the 'air līṅga' i. e. no līṅga is actually visible but a curtain is hung before a wall and when visitors enter the curtain is withdrawn and the wall is exhibited. The temple has a hall of more than 1000 monolithic pillars
- Cintāṅgadesvara—(under VS) P. I. 37. 14
- Cīramocanatīrtha—(in Kāśmīra) R. I. 149-150 (mentions the Kanakavāhinī, Nandīśa and this tīrtha together). It is the confluence of the Kanakavāhinī and the river Sind, NM 1538-1545 (so called because the seven sages left their bark garments here and then went to heaven), SM p. 211
- Citābhūmi—(Vaidyanātha or Deoghar in Sonthal pargana containing the temple of Vaidyanātha, one of the twelve Jyotirlingas) Śivapurāṇa I. 38, 55. Vide Dey p. 30
- Citrāguptesvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 102

- Citrakūṭa—(hill, 65 miles south-west of Prayāga in Banda District of Bundelkhand and a railway station on Jhansi-Manikpur branch) V. 85. 58, Rām. II. 54. 28-29 and 93. 8 (ten krośas from Bhāradvājāśrama) Rām. II. 55.9 (it is pitṛtīrtha), II. 56. 10-12, M. 22.65 and Anu. I. 25. 29, N. II. 60. 23 and 75. 26, Ag. 6. 35-36 (near Mandākinī r.) and 109. 23, P. I. 39. 54, Raghuvamśa XIII. 47; Meghadūta calls it Rāmagiri.
- Citrakūṭa—(r. rising from Rkṣapārvata) Vā. 45. 99, M. 114. 25 (where Mandākinī and this r. are both mentioned as rising from Rkṣavat)
- Citrāṅgadātīrtha—(under VS) K. I. 35.11, Vām. 46. 39 (Citrāṅgadeśvara-linga)
- Citrāṅgavadana—(under the Sābhramatī) P. VI. 141. 1
- Citresvara—(under VS) L. q. by K. T. p. 97
- Citropalā (r.) B. 46. 4-5 (rising from Vindhya and called Mahānadī)
- Citrotpalā—(probably same as the preceding) Bhī. 9. 34, M. 114. 25 (rising from Rkṣavat), B. 27. 31-32 (rising from Rkṣapāda)
- Cyavanasyāśrama—A (under Gayā) N. II. 47. 75, Vā. 108. 73. In Rg. I. 116.10 Cyavana is said to have been rejuvenated by Aśvins; Sat. Br. 1.5.1-16 (SBE vol. 26 pp 272-276 he married Sukanyā, king Saryāta's daughter and became young by a bath in a pool); B (under Narmadā) V 89. 12, 121. 19-22; V. chapters 122-124 contain the story of Cyavana, Sukanyā and the Aśvins. V. 102, 4 narrates that the Kāleyas devoured one hundred *munis* here. Dey p. 51 gives four different places as Cyavana's hermitage. Cyavana was son of Bhṛgu and the Bhṛgus are often associated with the region about the mouth of the Narmadā
- Cyavanesvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 66
- D**
- Dadhīcatīrtha—V 83.186, P. I. 27.73-74 (where Sārasvata stayed and became prince of perfect men, Siddhirāt)
- Dadhīceśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 43
- Dadhīkarneśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 94.
- Dākinī—(Bhimāśāṅkara) see note 1536
- Dakṣaprayāga—N. II. 40. 96-97
- Dakṣatīrtha—(under Kurukṣetra) Vām. 46. 2 (to the south of Sthānuvata), Vām. 34. 20 (Dakṣāśrama and Dakṣeśvara)
- Dakṣeśvara (under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 75
- Dakṣiṇa-gaṅgā—A (Godāvarī in B. 77. 9-10, 78. 77; B Kāverī (in Nr. 66. 7); C Narmadā in SK, Revākhaṇḍa 4. 24; D Tuṅgabhadra (in Vik. 4.62)
- Dakṣiṇa-Gokarna—Var. 216. 22-23
- Dakṣiṇa-Mānasa—(a tank under Gayā) N. II. 45. 74, Ag. 115. 17
- Dakṣiṇa-Mathurā—(Madurā in the Madras State) Bh. X. 79. 15
- Dakṣiṇa-pāṇcanada—V. Dh. S 85. 51 (the com. Vaijayantī says that the five rivers are Kṛṣṇā, Venā, Tuṅgā, Bhadrā and Koṇā)
- Dakṣiṇaprayāga (known as Mokṣavenī in Saptagrāma in Bengal) 'tat-Dakṣiṇaprayāgam tu Gaṅgāto Yamunāṅsgatā | snānāt tatṛakṣayam puṇyam Prayāga iva labhyate' quoted by Gaṅgāvākyāvalī p. 296, which is itself quoted by T. P. p. 355. Dey p. 52 says that it is Trivenī on the north of Hughly in Bengal.
- Dakṣiṇa-sindhu—(a tributary of the Chambal) V. 82. 53, P. I. 24. 2, Meghadūta I. 30
- Dālbyāśrama (hermitage of Baka Dālbya, half a yojana from where Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa were in the company of Sugrīva and his host) P. VI. 46. 14-15.
- Damin (masculine noun) V 82. 71-75
- Dāmodaranāga—a spring in Kāśmīra which is the upper hamlet of village



- Khunamoh (Khonamuṣa), the birth-place of poet Bilhana. Vide SM p. 166.
- Damṣṭrāṅkura (under Kokāmukha) Var. 140. 68-70.
- Danḍa—V 85. 15.
- Dandaka (name of a territory, location being vague and probably it means no more than Dandakāranya) Rām. II. 9. 12 (disām-āsthāya Kaikeyī dakṣiṇām Dandakān prati).
- Dandakāranya or Dandakavana—V. 85 41, 147. 32, Var. 71. 10 (where Gautama performed *tapas*), B 88. 18, 110. 96 (Gautamī is in Dandaka), 123. 117-120 (Gautamī was five yojanas from the beginning of D.), 129. 55 (quintessence of the world), 161. 73 (D. is the seed of dharma and of mukti), Śal. 39. 9-10 (Janasthāna is in D.), Rām. II. 18. 33 and 37, III. 1. 1, Vām. 84. 12 (refers to Dandakāranya brāhmaṇas) and 43, P V. 34. 58-59 (origin of name). Vide my paper on the 'Ancient Geography of Mahārāṣṭra' in JBBRAS for 1917 at pp. 14-15 and the note and Pargiter in JRAS for 1894 on 'the Geography of Rāma's exile' p. 242. Dandakāranya probably comprised all forests from Bundelkhand or Bhopal in Central India right down to Godāvarī or to Kṛṣṇā. Br. S. XI. 56 says that a malignant comet in Hasta nakṣatra kills the chief of Dandakāranya.
- Dandakhāta (under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 90.
- Dandīśvara (under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 90.
- Dardura or Durdura (Nilgiri Hills) V. 282. 43, Mār. 54. 12, Var. 214. 52, Raghuvaṃśa IV. 51 (near river Tāmraparṇī), Br. S. 14. 11.
- Dāruvana—K. II. 39. 66; same as Devadāruvana, which see.
- Darvīsaṅkramaṇa—V. 84. 45, P. I. 32. 9.
- Daśakanyātirtha—(under Narmadā) P. 1. 21. 14.
- Daśārnā—(r. rising in m. Rkṣa, on which śrāddha, japa, dāna most efficacious) M. 22. 34, K. II. 37. 35-36, Vā. 45. 99, 77. 93. Wilson (vol. II. p. 155) says that it is now called Dasān, which rises in Bhopal and falls into the Betwa. Mbh. cites Vārtikas 7 and 8 on Pāṇ. VI. 1. 89 which explain the formation (vol. III. p. 69). Daśārṇa is a word meaning a country having ten forts or 'a river (Daśārnā) having ten waters' The Vārtikas are 'pra-vat-satara-kambalavasanānām carṇe' and 'ṛnadaśābhyām ca'. Meghadūta I. 23-24 show that the capital of the Daśārṇa country was Vidiśā (modern Bhilsā) and the Vetravati (Betwa river) was near it. It is the Dosaron of Ptolemy (p. 71). Br. S. 10. 15 says that Saturn in Uttarāṣādhā destroys Daśārṇas.
- Daśāśvamedhika or-medhaka or-medha—A (a tirtha on the Gaṅgā) V. 83. 14, 85. 87, Vā 77. 45, Br. III. 13. 45, K. II. 37. 26, M. 185. 68 (in VS); B (under Prayāga) M. 106. 46; C (under Gayā) Ag. 115. 45, N. II. 47. 30; D (under Narmadā) M. 193. 21, K. II. 41, 104, P. I. 20. 20; vide Bom. G. vol. II. p. 348 for its sanctity; E (under Mathurā) Var. 154. 23; F (under Kurukṣetra) P. I. 26. 12; G (under Go.) B. 83. 1; H (under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 116.
- Dattātreyā-līṅga—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 113.
- Daurvāsika—(under VS) K. I. 35. 11.
- Devadāruvana—A (in the Himālayas near Badrīnāth) Anu. 25. 27, K. II. 37. 53-60, II. 39. 18 and 66, M. 13. 47 (Devī is called Puṣṭi here); B (Aundha in the Nizam's dominions) P. VI. 129. 27; C (near Vijayēśvara in Kāśmīra) HC. 10. 3.
- Devāgama—(under Go.) B. 160. 1.
- Devagiri—(a hill under Mathurā) Var. 164. 27, Bh. V. 19. 16.

Devahrada—A (under Gaṇḍakī) Var. 145. 71, Anu. 25. 44; B (under Kṛṣṇa-Venā) V. 85. 37
 Devahradā—(r. in Kāśmīra) NM 146.
 Devakūṭa—(sacred m.) V. 84. 141, P. I. 38. 57.
 Devaleśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 92
 Devāparvata—(probably Aravali hills) Devala q. by T. K. p. 250
 Devapatha—V. 85. 45, P. I. 39. 42
 Devaprabha—(under Gaṇḍakī) Var. 145. 59
 Devaprayāga—in Tehri State. Vide Alakānandā above (it is confluence of Bhāgīrathī and Alakānandā); vide U. P. Gazetteer for Garhwal, vol. 36 p. 214
 Devāranya—(a forest on r. Lauhitya) Vā. 47. 11 (devāranyam viśokam ca tasya tīre)
 Devasāla—(Viṣṇu is worshipped under name of Trivikrama here) Nr. 65. 15 q. by T. K. p. 252
 Devatīrtha—A (on north bank of Go.) B. 127. 1; B (under Narmadā) M 191. 24, 193. 81, K. II. 42. 16, P. I. 18. 24; C (under Sābhramatī) P. VI. 161. 1
 Devesa—(under VS) P. I. 37. 9
 Devesvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 65
 Devikā—A (r. rising in Himālaya and being after Sindhu and Pañcanada and before Sarasvatī) V. 82. 102–107, 222. 22 (4 yojanas in length and one-half yojana in breadth), B 27. 27, Vā. 45. 95, Anu. 166. 19, Vām. 81. 5. The Vi. IV. 24. 69 says that Vṛātyas, Mlecchas and śūdras will rule over the banks of the Sindhu, Dāvīkorvī, Candrabhāgā and Kāśmīra. Here 'Dāvīkorvī' means, as Śrīdhara says, the country on the Devikā; B (r. that joins Gaṇḍakī) Var. 144. 83, 112–13 (Devikā nāma devānām prabhāvācca tapasyatām, 1 nīyamārthā samu-

dbhūtā Gaṇḍakyā militā śubhā), Var. 214. 48; C (under Gayā) Vā. 112. 30, 77. 41 (Vṛṣa-kūpa for śrāddha on), Br. III. 13. 41. Anu. 25. 21 and 165. 19, K. II. 37. 25, P. I. 25. 9–14, N. II. 47. 27, Vi. II. 15. 6, Vām. 78. 37—all these extol Devikā, but it is not clear what river is meant. NM 152–153 say that it is holy like Irāvati, is identified with Umā and located in Madra i.e. between Rāvi and Chenab. Pāṇ. (VII.3. 1) expressly mentions the river Devikā and the Mbh. thereon gives the illustration 'Dāvīkākūlāḥ śālayaḥ' (paddy grown on the banks of the Devikā is so called). Pāṇinī probably mentions some river in the Panjab. Dey p. 55 says that the southern portion of Sarayū is called Devikā or Devā. Vām. 84. 12 refers to Devikātīrtha brāhmaṇas. SK. VII Prabhāsa-māhātmya, chap. 278. 66–67 speak of Mūlasthāna (modern Multan) as situated on the Devikā; P. I. 25. 9–14 (5 yojanas long and ½ yojana wide). In Vi. II. 15. 6 the city called Vīranagara is said to be situated on the bank of the Devikā and as founded by Pulastya. Devikā is not Sarayū, as in the Anu. 165. 19 and 21 they two are separately named. Br. S. 11. 35 says that a certain malignant Ketu would strike down even Devikā in the north. Pargiter (tr. of Mār, p. 292) identified it with the river Deeg or Degh in the Punjab, Dr. V. S. Agrawala with the Vular lake in Kashmir (J. U. P. H. S. vol. 16 pp. 21–22) and Mr. Jagannātha (in J. U. P. H. S. vol. 17 part 2 p. 78 supports Pargiter. With respect I agree with Mr. Jagannātha.

Devikātaṭa—(Devī is called Nandī here) M. 13. 38

Devipīṭhas—eight are enumerated in Kālikāpurāṇa 64. 89–91



- Devikūṭa—Kāṭ. 18. 41, where the feet of Sati's corpse fell
- Devīsthāna—Devi-Bhāgavata VII. 38. 5-30 (enumerate numerous Devīsthānas such as Kolāpura, Tulajāpura, Saptasṛṅga). The Matsya (13.26-54) enumerates 108 Devīsthānas.
- Dhanadeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 70
- Dhanuṣpāta—(under Āmalakagrāma) Nr. 66. 33.
- Dhanvatīrūpā—(r. rising in Pāriyātra m.) M. 114. 24.
- Dhānyatīrtha—(under Gomatī) B 120.1
- Dbārā—(r.) P. I. 28. 26, M. 22. 38
- Dharaṇītīrtha—(śrāddha most efficacious here) M. 22. 70.
- Dhārāpatanaka-tīrtha (under Mathurā) Var. 154. 8
- Dhārātīrtha—(on north bank of Narmadā) M. 190. 6
- Dharmahrada—(under VS) N. II. 51. 14
- Dharmanada—same as Pañcanada, which see.
- Dharmaprastha—(under Gayā) V. 84. 99
- Dharmaprṣṭha—(4 miles from Bodh-Gayā) P. V. 11. 74, N. II. 44. 54-55 and 78, K. II. 37. 38
- Dharmarājatīrtha—(on the western bank of Jumnā near Prayāga) M. 108 27, P. I. 45. 27
- Dharmāranya—(under Gayā) V. 82. 46, Anu. 166. 28-29, Vā. 111. 23, Vām. 84. 12 (brāhmaṇas of Dharmāranya), Ag. 115. 34, N. II. 45. 100; vide Dr. Barua on 'Gayā and Buddhagayā' vol. I. pp. 16-17 for the view that it is part at least of the precincts of the Bodhgayā temple representing the jungle of Uruvelā or Uruvilvā of Buddhist Literature. Rām. I 32. 7 states that Dharmāranya was founded by Asūrtarajas, a son of Kuśa, son of Brahmā; vide p. 661 about Gayā; B (near Mahākālā) P. I. 12. 6-8; Br. S. 14. 2 mentions it, but location is uncertain.
- Dharmasāstresvara—(under VS) SK. IV. 33. 133
- Dharmasīlā—(under Gayā) Vā. chap. 107 and Ag. 114. 8-28. Vide above pp. 657-58 for the story
- Dharmatīrtha—(under VS) P. I. 37. 4, Ag. 109. 16, K. I. 35. 10, P. VI. 135. 17
- Dharmāvatī—(river that falls into Sābhramatī) P. VI. 135. 16
- Dharmesvara—A (under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 53; B (under Gayā) N. II. 45. 103, Vā. 111. 26
- Dharmodbhava—(under Kokāmukha) Var. 140. 44-46
- Dhautapāpa—vide Pāpapraṇāśana
- Dhautapāpā—(r. rising in Himālaya) M 114. 22
- Dhautapāpesvara—līṅga (under VS) SK IV. 33. 156
- Dhavalesvara—(on north bank of Sābhramatī) P. VI. 144. 7 ff (supposed to be established by Indra)
- Dhenuka—(under Gayā) V. 84. 87-89, P. I. 38. 7-10, N. II. 44. 68
- Dhenukāranya—(under Gayā) Vā. 112. 56, Ag. 116. 32
- Dhenuvaṭa—(under Kokāmukha) Var. 140. 40-43
- Dhruva-tapovana—P. I. 38. 31
- Dhūmāvatī—V 84. 22, P. I. 28. 23 (Dhūmavantī)
- Dhūṇḍhi-Vināyaka—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 126 and SK. IV. chap. 57. 33 (give the etymology of Dhūṇḍhi); for 56 Gaṇeśas, vide p. 638 above
- Dhūtapāpa or Dhautapāpa or Dhautapūra.—A (on Narmadā) M. 22. 39, 193. 62, K. II. 42. 9-10; B (at Gokarna) Br. III. 13. 20 (Rudra practised tapas here); C (under Gayā) Ag. 116. 12, N. II. 47. 35. D (under Stutasvāmin) Var. 148. 58 (less than five krośas from Stutasvāmin), T. K. p. 223, Ag. p. 401 says that Dhūtapāpa is on the right bank of the Gomatī (popularly

- Gumtī) 18 miles to the south-east of Sultanpur; E (near Saṅgameśvara in the Ratnagiri District) vide I.G.I. vol. XXII. p. 50.
- Dhūtapāpā—A (r. in VS); vide p. 636 above; B (r. rising in Himālaya) Vām. 57. 80, Br. II. 16. 26
- Dhūtavāhinī—(r. rising in Rṣyavanta m.) M. 114. 26
- Dīṇḍipūnyakara—(fit for śrāddha, probably in Deccan) M. 22. 77
- Dīpeśvara—(under Narmadā) M. 191. 38, K. II. 41. 25-27 (it is Vyāsa-tīrtha-tapovana)
- Diptoda—(probably the same as Bhṛgu-tīrtha) V. 99. 69 (where Bhṛgu, great-grand-father, and the father of Paraśurāma performed most severe penance)
- Dīrghasattra—V. 82. 108-110, P. I. 25. 15-16
- Dīrgha-Viṣṇu (under Mathurā) Var. 163. 63
- Divākara—līṅga (under VS) L. q. by T. K, p. 65
- Divaukaḥ—puṣkarinī V. 84. 118, P. I. 38. 35
- Droṇa—(m. in Bhāratavarṣa) M. 121. 13, Bh. V. 19. 16, P. VI. 8. 45-46
- Droṇaśarmapada—Anu. 25. 28 q. by T. K. p. 256. (reads Droṇadharmā.)
- Droṇeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 66,
- Droṇī—(r.) M. 22. 37 (śrāddha on it inexhaustible).
- Drumakṣetra—L. I. 92. 129 (probably near Kurukṣetra).
- Dhruva-tapovana—P. I. 38. 31
- Dhruvatīrtha—(under Mathurā) Var. 152. 58 and 180. 1
- Dṛsadvatī (r.). Vide p. 682 above. In Rg. III. 23.4 it is mentioned along with Āpayā and Sarasvatī as a holy river for the worship of Agni. V. 90. 11, Manu II. 17 (calls it *devanadī*), N. II. 60. 30, Bh. V. 19. 18. It is identified by some with the Ghaggar and by others with the Chittang (Cambridge History of India, vol. I. p. 80). No trace of the river appears in any modern name. Cunningham's identification of it with Rākshī river 17 miles to the south of Thāṇesar has much to recommend it (A. S. of India, vol. XIV. p. 88).
- Drumacandēśvara—(a līṅga in VS) L. I. 92. 136
- Dugdheśvara—(under Sābhramatī) P. VI. 148. 1 (to the south of Khadga-dhara). Vide Bom. G. vol. IV p. 6.
- Durdhareśvara—(on Sābhramatī) P. VI. 146. 1 ff.
- Durgā—(acc. to Bār. S. III. 128 Durgā dwells on Vindhya).
- Durgā—sābhramatīsaṅgama—P. VI. 169. 1.
- Durgā—(r. rising from Vindhya) Vā 45. 103, Br. II. 16. 33.
- Durgatīrtha—A (under Sarasvatī) Vām. 42. 14-15; B (under Go.) B. 132. 8.
- Dvādaśāditya-kunḍa (under Badarī) Var. 141. 24
- Dvaita-vana—Sat. Br. XIII. 5. 4. 9 (Dvaita lake named after king Dvaitavana of the Matsyas); V. 11. 68, 24. 10 (commentary gives a fantastic etymology), 237. 13 (it had a lake), Śal. 37. 27 (visited by Balarāma on Sarasvatī), Vām. 22. 12, 47. 56 (it was near Sānnihatya pool).
- Dvārakā—A—the name of this holy city does not occur in the Vedic Literature but the references to it in the Mahābhārata and the Purāṇas are plentiful. It is one of the seven holy cities. Vide p. 678. It appears that there were two Dvārakās, one more ancient than the other. The ancient Dvārakā was situated near Kodinar. A little mound which rises on the sea-shore between the mouths of the rivers Śomat and Singavra

three miles from Kodinar is surrounded by the ruins of a temple which popular Hindu belief declares to be the original Dvārakā, where Kṛṣṇa resided and whence transferred himself to Dvārakā in Okhamāṇḍala. Vide Bombay Gazetteer, vol. VIII. (on Kathiawar) pp. 518-520 for Kodinar and p. 552 for Mūla Dvārakā. It was founded by Kṛṣṇa (with Rai-vataka as a park and Gomanta as a hill) owing to constant invasions and harassment by Jarāsandha; it was two yojanas long and one yojana broad. Vide Sabhāparva 14. 49-55. The Var. (149. 7-8) makes it 10 yojanas long and 5 broad. Vide p. 688 above under Mathurā. B (14. 54-56) says that the Vṛṣṇis and Andhakas left Mathurā through fear of Kālayavana, took counsel with Kṛṣṇa, ran to Kuśasthalī and built up Dvārakā: Vi. V. 23. 13-15. B 196. 13-15 say that Kṛṣṇa begged of the ocean a strip of twelve yojanas, built Dvārakā with large parks, mansions and strong walls and established the people of Mathurā there. When Kṛṣṇa passed away, the city was flooded by the sea and swept away, as stated in a prophetic vein by Mausala-parva 6. 23-24 and 7. 41-42, B 210. 55 and 212. 9. Vide also Vi. V. 38. 9 (the whole of Dvārakā except Kṛṣṇa's palace was swept by the sea) and BV IV. 129. 44 (except Rukmiṇī's palace). It is called the capital of Ānarta (Udyoga 7. 6) and was first called Kuśasthalī (Sabhā 14. 50). Vide M 69. 9 = P. V. 23. 10, B. 7. 29-32 and Ag. 273. 12 (Kuśasthalī being the earlier name of the capital). The present Dvārakā is near Okhā in Kathiawar. The Harivamśa II (Viṣṇu-parva) chapters 58 and 98 deal with the founding of Dvārakā. Some ancient Jain works like the Uttarādhy-ayanasūtra (SBE. vol. 45 p. 115) mention Dvārakā and Raivataka park

(Girnar). The Jātakas also refer to Dvārakā. Vide Dr. B. C. Law's work on 'India as described in early texts of Buddhism and Jainism' pp. 102, 239. The Prabhāsakhaṇḍa of the SK has a sub-section on Dvārakā in 44 chapters and over 2000 verses for the glorification of Dvārakā. It says 'the reward that is secured by (pilgrimage to) Vārāṇasī, Kurukṣetra and Narmadā can be secured at Dvārakā in half a twinkling (4. 52)'; "Pilgrimage to Dvārakā is the 4th means of *mukti*. Man secures *mukti* by acquiring correct knowledge about Brahman or by dying at Prayāga or by mere bath in Gomatī near Kṛṣṇa" (SK. VII. 4. 4. 97-98). The BV. (Kṛṣṇajanmakhaṇḍa, Uttarārdha chap. 103) has a hyperbolic description of the creation of Dvārakā, which is said to have been one hundred yojanas in extent. There is a work called Dvārakā-pattalaka compiled by Binābāyī (the only Ms. of which is the one at B.O.R.I. in Poona) which has been published by Dr. J. B. Chaudhuri (1940). The Ms. is dated *saṃvat* 1574 (1518 A. D.). It summarises the Dvārakā-māhātmya in SK. A pilgrim on reaching Dvārakā first worships Gaṇeśa, then Balarāma and then Kṛṣṇa; he visits Rukmiṇī's temple on the 8th, 9th or 14th *tithi*, then visits Cakra-tīrtha, then Dvārakā Gaṅgā, then Saṅkhoddhāra, then bathes in the Gomatī. The temple of Dvārakā-nātha is on the north bank of the Gomatī creek. The main temple has five stories, is about 100 feet high from the ground and is surmounted by a conical spire rising to about 150 feet. Vide Dr. A. D. Pusalkar's paper in the Dr. B. C. Law presentation volume I, pp. 218 ff. for further information on Dvārakā;

B (there is Dvārakā in Indraprastha)
P. VI. 202. 4 and 62

Dvārakā—Kṛṣṇatīrtha—M. 22. 39.

Dvāravatī—Same as Dvārakā. It contained the temple of Nāgeśa, one of the twelve Jyotirlingas. The Kāśīkhanda (7. 104-105) states: 'since in this city there are entrance gates for all the four varṇas it was named Dvāravatī by the learned. Where even the bones of beings are marked with the sign of the wheel (discus), what wonder is there if the hands (of men) are marked with the figures of a conch or wheel?' In a Dvārakā-māhātmya stated to be taken from the Skandapurāṇa (D. C. Ms. No. 49 of 82-83, copied in *sanvat* 1529 i. e. 1472-73 A. D.) it is stated that Mathurā, Kāśī and Avantī are easy of access (sulabha), but Ayodhyā, Māyā and Dvārakā are difficult of approach in the Kali age and in Ms. D. C. No. 63 of 1875-76 it is said at the end that the city is called Dvāravatī because it is the way to mokṣa. It is identified by Yule and others with Barake of the Periplus (Ptolemy pp. 187-188.)

Dvidevakula—(under Śrīparvata) L. I. 92. 158

Dvīpa—(probably the island at the mouth of the Ganges) Nr. 65. 7 q. by T. K. p. 251 (where Viṣṇu is worshipped as Ananta Kapila)

Dvīpeśvara—(under Narmadā) M. 193. 80, P. I. 18. 38 and 23. 76

E

Ekadhāra—(under Sābhramatī) P. VI. 136. 12

Ekahamśa—V. 83. 20

Ekāmra—(in Utkala, Orissa, about 20 miles from Cuttack). This is Rudra-tīrtha. Ekāmra is the ancient name, the modern one being Bhuwanesvara. It was also called

Kṛttivāsa. B (chap. 41. 10-93) describes and glorifies this tīrtha, all those verses being quoted in T. C. pp. 176-180. It is said to be the destroyer of sin, equal to Benares, and as having eight sub-tīrthas and it was so called because in former ages there was one mango tree (B. 34. 6 and 41. 10-93). Vide Hunter's 'Orissa' vol. I. p. 231-241 and Mitra's 'Antiquities of Orissa' vol. II. pp. 56-98 for history, description, daily services and festivals &c. The chief temple is 160 feet high from the base to the top of the *kalaśa*. In the Bhuwanesvara Inscription (edited by Dr. L. D. Barnett) in E. I. XIII p. 150 it is stated that Candrikā, daughter of the Gaṅga king Anaṅga-Bhīma and widow of Haihaya prince Paramardin, built a temple of Viṣṇu at Ekāmra. In that inscription among other matters there is a laudation of Utkala, of the sanctuary of Ekāmra and of the lake Bindusaras (mentioned in B. 41. 53-54). The date of the inscription is doubtful. But it is between śaka 1101-1200. There is a vast number of temples and shrines here. Vide Archaeological survey of India Report for 1902-3 pp. 43-44, Puruṣottamatattva (Jiv. I. p. 573) where Raghunandana quotes several verses of B. chap. 41. There is Ekāmrapurāṇa in five aṁśas (parts) and 70 chapters (vide Mitra's Notices vol. IV pp. 138-140 No. 1561 for detailed analysis of contents and Ekāmra Candrikā which is a guide to pilgrims visiting Bhuwanesvara and contains extensive quotations from Kapilasamhitā, Ekāmrapurāṇa, Sivapurāṇa and other works. vide Mitra's Notices, vol. IV. pp. 136-137 No. 1560 for analysis of contents)

Ekavīrā—(under Go) B. 161.



Elāpura—(probably modern Ellora) M. 22.50 (a place very fit for śrāddha). A.G. p. 319 identifies Elāpura with modern Verāval in Kathiawar. Talegaon copperplates of Rāstrakūṭa Kṛṣṇarāja I dated śake 690 (768-769 A.D.) indicate that the king built the famous Kailāsanātha temple in imitation of the Kailāsanātha temple at Kāñcī (E. I. XIII. p. 275); vide also E. I. vol. XXV. p. 25 (Ellora plates of Dantidurga of śake 663 i.e. 741-42 A. D.)

Erandīnarmadāsāngama—M. 194. 32, K.II. 41. 85 and II. 42.31, P.I. 18.41

Erandītīrtha—(r. tributary of Narmadā in the Baroda territory, called Uri or Or) M. 191. 42, 193.65, P. I. 18. 41.

G

Gabhastīsa—(under VS) SK. VI. 33. 154

Gabhīraka—(a l. under Mandāra to the south) Var. 143. 42

Gadākunḍa—(under Sālagrāma) Var. 145. 49

Gadālola—(a pool at Gayā on east side of Brahmayoni) Vā. 109. 11-13, 111 75-76, Ag. 115. 69; see above p. 665

Gajāhvaya—(same as Hastināpura) Svargā-rohanaparva 5. 34

Gajakarna—(one of many pitṛtīrthas) M. 22. 38

Gajaksetra—a Sivaksetra acc. to Bār. S. III. 122.

Gajāsaila—(m. south of Mānasa lake) Vā. 36. 24

Gajasāhvaya or Nāgasāhvaya—(same as Hastināpura) Vi. V. 35. 8, 19, 30-32, Vām. 78. 8, Bh. I. 4. 6 (com. explains 'gajena sabita āhvayo nāma yasya'); Br. S. 14. 4 calls it 'Gajāhvaya.'

Gajēśvara—(under Srisāila) L. I. 92. 156

Gālava—Vide Pāpaprāṇāśana.

Gālaveśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 98

Gallikā—(r., same as Gandakī) P. VI. 76. 2 (where the sālagrāma stones are found), VI. 129. 14

Gambhīrā—A (a r. that joins Vitastā below Vijayēśvara) HC. X. 192, SM. p. 170. Stein in note on R. VIII. 1063 says that it is the name of the lowest portion of the Viśokā river before it falls into Vitastā; B (r. in Central India) Meghadūta I. 40; Br. S. 16.15 mentions Gāmbhīrikā r. It falls into the Siprā.

Gānapatyatīrtha—(near Sābhramatī on a hill called Viṣṇu) P. VI. 129. 26, VI. 163.1.

Ganātīrtha—A (one of many tīrthas where śrāddha leads to highest goal) M. 22. 73; B (under Sābhramatī) P. VI. 133, 24

Gandakī—(rises in Himālaya and falls into Ganges at Sonapur in Bihar). It is the Kondochates of Arrian (A. I. p. 188). Ādi. 170. 20-21 (one of the seven great rivers that destroy sin), S. 20. 27, V. 84. 13, V. 222. 22 (Gandasāhvayā is probably the same as Gandakī), P. I. 38, 30, IV. 20. 12 (it has pebbles marked with cakṛa). The river is said to have sprung from the perspiration on Viṣṇu's cheek in Var. 144-106, Br. II. 16. 26. Viṣṇu gave a boon to it that he would always remain inside her in the form of Sālagrāma stone (Var. 144. 35-58) Gandakī, Devikā and a r. from Pulastyāśrama make Trivenī (Var. 144. 84). It is known in Nepāla as Sālagrāmī and in U.P. as Nārāyaṇī.

Gandhavatī—A (sacred r. near Ekām-raka, rising in the Udayagiri hills, though the Sivapurāṇa says it rises in the Vindhya). See 'Antiquities of Orissa' by Mitra, vol. II. p. 98; B (a small tributary of Siprā) Meghadūta I. 33

Gangā—Vide pp. 588-596 above

Gāṅgādvārā—(the same as Haridvārā) V. 81. 14, 90.21, 142. 9, 20, 25. 13, K. I. 15, 41 and 47 (here Dakṣa's sacrifice was destroyed by Vira-bhadra), II. 20. 33 (as one of the



- best places for śrāddha), V. Dh. S. 85. 28, Ag. 4. 7 (Vāmana approached Bali here), P. V. 5. 3 and V. 26. 103. It is a Saivakṣetra acc. to Bār. S. III. 129; M. 22. 10 (mentions Gaṅgādvāra and Māyāpurī separately in the same verse)
- Gandhakālī—(r.) Vā. 77. 74, Br. III. 13. 76
- Gandhamādāna—(m. on which Badrināth is situated) Nr. 65. 10 q. by T. K. p. 252; Vi. II. 2. 18 (to the south of Meru), Mār. 51. 19, V. 140. 22, 158. 38, Vi. V. 24. 5 (location of Nara-Nārāyaṇāśrama), M. 13. 26
- Gandharvakunḍa—(under Mathurā) Var. 163. 13
- Gandharvanagara—q. by T. K. p. 247
- Gandharvatīrtha—(under VS) P. I. 37. 13, Sal. 37. 10 (near Gargasrotah on Sarasvatī)
- Gaṅgā-Gaṇḍakī-saṅgama—T. P. p. 357
- Gaṅgā-Gomatī-saṅgama—T. P. p. 358
- Gaṅgābrada—P. I. 27. 63 (under Kurukṣetra), V. 83. 201, Anu. 25. 34
- Gaṅgā-Kauśikī-saṅgama—T. P. pp. 357-358
- Gaṅgā-Mānuṣa-saṅgama—(near Kāśmīra) NM. 1457
- Gaṅgāvat—(under Narmadā) P. I. 20. 16 (near Gaṇeśvara)
- Gaṅgāsāgara-saṅgama—V. Dh. S. 85. 28, M. 22. 11 (it is 'sarvatīrthamaya'), P. I. 39. 4, T. P. pp. 355-356 (for Māhātmya)
- Gaṅgā-Sarasvatī-saṅgama—V. 84. 38, P. I. 32. 3
- Gaṅgā-Sarayū-saṅgama—Raghuvamśa VIII. 95, T. P. p. 357
- Gaṅgā-vadana-saṅgama—(under Narmadā) M. 193. 20
- Gaṅgāvaraṇa-saṅgama—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 45
- Gaṅgā-Yamunā-saṅgama—(i. e. Prayāga, which see) V. 84. 35
- Gaṅgeśvara—A (under VS) N. II. 49. 46; B (under Narmadā) M. 193. 14
- Gaṅgodbheda—V. 84. 65, M. 22. 25, P. I. 32. 29, Ag. 109. 18
- Gargasrotas—(on Sarasvatī) Sal. 37. 14
- Gargeśvara—(under Narmadā) M. 191. 82
- Gārhapatyapada—(under Gayā) Vā. 111. 50
- Garteśvara—(under Mathurā) Var. 169. 19, 176. 6
- Gāruḍa—(under Go.) B. 90. 1
- Garuḍakeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 67
- Gaurī—(r.) Bhī. 9. 25. It is probably the Gouraios of the Greek writers. Vide Ptolemy p. 111
- Gaurīśa—(sacred to Lalitā) Br. IV. 44. 98
- Gaurīśikhara—A—V. 84. 151, M. 22. 76 (fit place for śrāddha); B (a tīrtha near Kāśmīra) NM 1448-1449 (where Umā who was in complexion like a blue lotus became fair by practising *tapas*)
- Gaurītīrtha—(under VS) M. 22. 31, K. I. 35. 3, P. I. 37. 3
- Gautama—(on Mandara m.) P. VI. 129. 8
- Gautamanāga—(in Kāśmīra, to the north of Anantanāga and on the way to Bavan) S M. p. 178
- Gautamāśrama—(near Tryambakeśvara) P. VI. 176. 58-59
- Gautama-vana—V. 84. 108-110
- Gautameśvara—A (under Narmadā) M. 22. 68, 193. 60, K. II. 42. 6-8, P. I. 20. 58; B (under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 115
- Gautamī—(= Godāvarī). Vide pp. 707-711
- Gavām-bhavana—P. I. 26. 46
- Gayā—A—see pp. 643-679; B (one of the five dhārās at Badarikāśrama) N. II. 67. 57-58
- Gayākedāraka (under Gayā) Ag. 115. 53
- Gayāniṣkramaṇa—Nr q. by T. K. p. 252 (Viṣṇu's *guhya* name is *Harī* there).
- Gayāśiras—(hill named after *rājāśira*) Gaya V. 95. 9, 87. 11, Vā 105. 29 (it is one krośa in extent), Vām. 22. 20



- (it is the eastern *vedi* of Brahmā), Ag. 115. 25-26 (it is called Phalgu-tīrtha). Acc. to Barua in 'Gayā and Buddhagayā' vol. I. p. 7 it is the modern Brahmayoni hill. Vide p. 646 note 1470 above.
- Gayāśīrṣa—(a set of rocky hills near Gayā town) V.Dh. S. 85.4; Buddha went to Gayasīsa near Gayā with 1000 bhikṣus; vide Mahāvagga I. 21. 1 (S. B. E. vol. XIII p. 134). Vide pp. 646 and 668 above
- Gayātīrtha—(under VS) P. I. 37. 5.
- Gāyatrīsthāna—V, 85. 28
- Gāyatrīśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 70.
- Gāyatrītīrtha—(under Gayā) Va. 112. 21.
- Ghaṇṭābharanaka—(under Mathurā) Var. 154. 15
- Ghaṇṭākarnahrada—(to west of Vyāseśa under VS) N. II. 49. 28-29, L. q. by T. K. p. 86.
- Ghaṇṭeśvara—M. 22. 70
- Gharghara or-rā (modern Gogra or Ghagra, a holy river that rises in Kumaon and is the great river of Oudh) P. II. 39. 43, M. 22. 35 and P. V. 11.29 (both the latter have the same words 'nadau tau Soṇa-Ghargharau'). Vide TP p. 502 for Sarayū-Gharghara-saṅgama. The combined waters of Gogra and other rivers including the Sarayū are called Gogrā or Sarjū from Bahrapur. Vide I. G. I. vol. 12 pp. 302-303.
- Ghaṭeśvara—(under Sābhramatī) P. VI. 159. 3
- Ghaṭotkaca—(under VS) K. I. 35. 8, P. I. 37. 8.
- Ghṛtakulyā—(a r. under Gayā) V. 105. 74, 112. 30.
- Girikarnikā—M. 22. 39 (Dey p. 65 identifies it with Sabarmatī).
- Girikuñja—P. I. 24. 34 (where Brahmā resides)
- Girikūṭa—(under Gayā) N. II. 47. 75.
- Girinagara—(modern Junāgaḍ in Kathiawar). The hill near it was called Ujjayanta or Ūrjayanta in former times, but now it is called Girnar. Dey has a long note (pp. 65-66) on it. The *pādukās* (stone with footprints) of Dattātreyā are shown on a spur of the hill. As there are Aśoka's edicts engraved here it follows that it was a well-known place in the third century B. C. The Junāgaḍ Inscription of Rudradāman (150 A. D.) mentions it in the very first line (E.I. vol. VIII. p. 36 at p. 42). Vide under Vastrāpatha.
- Girivraja—Capital of the kings of Magadha from Jarāsandha and his son Sahadeva; called Rājagṛha in Buddhist times. It is about 62 miles from Patna. Dey has a very long note on it (pp. 66-69); S. 21. 2-3 (it was surrounded and guarded by five hills called Vaihāra, Vipula, Varāha, Vṛṣabha, Rṣigiri). Vide under Rājagṛha. Rām. I. 32. 7 states that it was founded by Vasu, a son of Kuśa, son of Brahmā.
- Cobhileśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 94
- Gocarmeśvara—(under Sripārvata) L. I. 92 152
- Godāvarī—Vide pp. 707-711
- Godhana—(m.) Br. II. 16. 22
- Gograha—(under Viraja in Orissa) B. 42. 6.
- Gokāmuka—(m.) Bh. V. 19. 16.
- Gokarna—A (a place sacred to Siva on the western coast about 30 miles south of Goa in the Kumtā Talukā of North Kanara District) V. 85.24, 88. 15, 277. 55; Ādi., 217. 34-35 (ādyam paśupateḥ sthānam darsanādeva muktidam), Vā 77. 19, M. 22. 38, K. II. 35. 29-32, Br. III. 56. 7-21 (described as 1½ yojanas in extent in verse 7), Vām. 46. 13 (linga set up by Rāvaṇa), Br. III. 57-58 and N. II. 74 (narrate story of its

- being flooded by the sea and of people going to Paraśurāma for succour). Vide Epi. C. vol. VII Shikarpur No. 99 (of 1113 A. D.) where Cālukya Tribhuvanamalla's tributary is styled 'lord of Gokarna-pura.' The Liṅgapurāṇa speaks of two Gokarṇas (I. 92. 134-135), Kūrma II. 35. 31 mentions Uttara-Gokarṇa and the Varāhapurāṇa (213. 7) mentions a southern and a northern Gokarṇa; **B** (on Sarasvatī) Var. 170.11; **C** (under Mathurā) Var. 171-173; **D** (under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 113. M. 13. 30 says that Devī is styled Bhadrakarnikā at Gokarṇa
- Gokarnahrada—V. 88. 15-16
- Gokarṇeśvara (on a peak of the Himālaya) Var. 215. 118.
- Gokula—(a mahāranya). Vide Vraja. P. IV. 69. 18, Bh. II. 7. 31.
- Gomaṇḍaleśvara—(under Śrīparvata) L. I. 92. 162 (established by Nanda and others)
- Gomanta—(a hill). **A**—M. 13.28 (Satī is called Gomatī on Gomanta); **B** (a hill in the Sahya range near Karavīrapura, Krauñcapura and near river Venā) Harivaṃśa (Viṣṇuparva 39. 11 and 19-20); **C** (hill near Dvārakā where Kṛṣṇa and the Vṛṣṇis migrated from Mathurā through fear of Jarāsandha's attacks) S. 14. 54, V 88. 15-17, N. II. 60.27. Pargiter's identifications (p. 289 note) are unsatisfactory.
- Gomatī—(r.) **A**. In Rg. VIII. 24. 30 and X. 75. 6; it is invoked between Kubhā and Krumu (in X. 75. 6); hence it is probably modern Gomāl a western tributary of the Indus; **B** (a river near Sarasvatī) V. 87. 7, P. I. 32. 37, Vām. 63. 61 and 83. 2; **C** (near Dvārakā), SK, VII. 4. 4. 97-98 and 5. 32, P. IV. 17. 69-70 and VI. 176. 35-36; **D** (the Gumti in Oudh, rising in Himālaya and falling into the Ganges below Benares) M. 114. 22, Br. II. 16. 25, Rām. II. 49. 11
- Gomatī-gaṅgā-saṅgama—P. I. 32. 42, Bh. V. 19. 18, Ag. 109. 19.
- Gopādri—(m. in Kashmir, in the immediate vicinity of Srinagara near its southernmost corner, now known as Takht-i-Sulaiman) SM p. 157, R. I. 341 (mentions Gopādri which is modern Gopkār on the Dal lake); vide K. R. 17
- Goniṣkramaṇa—(also Gosthalaka) Var. 147. 3-4 and 52
- Gopīśvara—(under Mathurā) Var. 157. 18 (where Kṛṣṇa sported with gopīs)
- Gopracāra—(a site under Gayā) Vā. 111. 35-37 (where there is a grove of mango trees), Ag. 116. 6
- Gopratāra—(Guptar in Fyzabad in Oudh) V. 84. 70-71 (where Rāma gave up his physical body along with his army and servants), Vām. 83.8, N. II. 75. 71, Raghuvamśa XV. 101
- Goprekṣa—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 42, P. I. 37. 16, N. II. 50.43 (Goprekṣaka)
- Goprekṣaka—(liṅga under VS) L. I. 92. 67-68
- Goprekṣeśvara—(under VS) Sk. q. by T. K. p. 131
- Gorakṣaka—Var. 215.93
- Gorathagiri—(in Magadhakṣetra) S. 20. 30
- Gotīrtha—**A** (in Naimiṣa forest) V. 95.3; **B** (under Prayāga) M 110.1; **C** (under VS) K. I. 35.13; **D** (under Narmadā) M. 193.3. P. I. 20.3; **E** (under Sābhamatī) P. VI. 156. 1
- Govardhana—**A** (a hill near Mathurā) M. 22. 52, K. I. 14.18 (where Pṛthu practised austerities), P. IV. 69.39, Var. 163.18, 164. 1 and 22-23, Vi. V. 11. 16. Vide p. 691 above; **B** (a town under Gautamī established by Rāma) B. 91.1, Br. II. 16.44. Inscription of Uṣavadāta near Nasik mentions Govardhana several times (Bomb. G. vol. 16 p.569). Vide p. 710 above



Govindatīrtha—(under Go.) B. 122. 100; P. I. 38. 50 (appears to be near Campakāranya)

Gr̥dhrakūṭa—A (a hill under Gayā) Vā. 77. 97, 108. 61, 111. 22, Ag. 116. 12, N. II. 45. 95 and 47. 78; B (on the confluence of Sarasvatī and Śuddhā, where Paraśurāma's hand stained with blood became clear) NM 1394-5

Gr̥dhravana—K. II. 37. 38

Gr̥dhra-vaṭa—A (on the Gr̥dhrakūṭa hill of Gayā) V. 84. 91, Ag. 116. 12, P. I. 38. 11 (bhasmanā snāna there), N. II. 44. 72, Vā. 108. 63; the tree does not now exist; B (under Sūkarakṣetra where a Gr̥dhra became a man) Var. 137. 56

Gr̥dhreśvara-liṅga—(under Gayā on Gr̥dhrakūṭa) Ag. 116. 11, N. II. 47. 78

Guheśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 102

Gurukulyatīrtha—(on Narmadā) SK. I. 1. 18. 153 (where Bali performed Asvamedhas)

H

Hamsadvāra—(near Kashmir) NM 1464

Hamsakunḍa—(under Dvārakā) Var. 149. 46

Hamsapada—(near Viśākhayūpa) Vām. 81. 10

Hamsaprapatana—(under Prayāga) V. 85. 87, M. 106. 32 (to the east of Gaṅgā and north of Pratiṣṭhāna), K. I. 37. 24, P. I. 39. 80, Ag. 111. 10

Hamsatīrtha—A (under Gayā) Ag. 116. 30, N. II. 47. 30; B (under Narmadā) M. 193. 72; C (under Sālagrāma to its east) Var. 144. 152-155 (explain why so called). Vide Yakṣatīrtha.

Hanūmat-tīrtha—(under Go. on north bank) B. 129. 1

Hārakunḍa—(near Hārapura) L. I. 92. 164

Haramukṣa—(Harmukh in popular language in Kāśmīra) NM. 1320, 1322, 1231; peak of the Himālaya

on the east of which is lake Kālodaka and which is itself near Uttaramānasa. Vide H. C. IV. 87-88 and Vik. 18. 55. Al. (vol. I p. 207) says that the Jailam rises in the mountain Haramakot, where also the Ganges rises. Vide Stein's note on R. III. 448.

Haramuṇḍa—(a tīrtha near Kāśmīra) NM 1455

Haridvāra—(same as Gaṅgādvāra and Māyāpurī) It is in the modern Saharanpur District in U. P. and on the right bank of the Ganges. It is one of the seven holy cities (vide pp. 501 and 678) P. IV. 17. 66, VI. 21. 1, VI. 22. 18, VI. 135. 37 (Māṇḍavya practised penance here). See Beal's BRWW vol. I. p. 197, where Hiouen T'sang states that men of the five Indies call it the Gate of Gaṅgā and that hundreds and thousands of people gather to bathe and wash. I do not agree with Cunningham (A. G. p. 353) that Haridvāra is a comparatively modern name, since Alberuni mentions only Gaṅgādvāra. Both SK. IV and P. IV mention Haridvāra and it cannot be said that they both are later than Alberuni (i. e. 1030 A. D.). Probably Gaṅgādvāra was a more popular name in the 11th century than Haridvāra. Al. (vol. I. p. 199) tells us that the source of the Ganges is called Gaṅgādvāra.

Harihara-kṣetra—A (on Tuṅgabhadra) Nr 65. 18 (q. by T. K. p. 253), P. VI. 176. 46 and VI. 183. 3, Var. 144. 145 (also called Devāṭa); it is on the boundary between Mysore State and Bombay State; B (the junction of the Gaṇḍakī with the Ganges at Sonapur, where Gajendramokṣa took place) Var. 144. 116-133. Vām. 85. 4-76 places the story of Gajendramokṣa on mountain Trikūṭa

Harikeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 113



- Harikeśvara**—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 84 (probably the same as above)
- Hariscandra**—A (tīrtha under VS) M 22.52 (very fit place for śrāddha) 181.28, Ag. 112.3; B (on south bank of Go.) B 104.86 and 88
- Hariscandra**—(a m.) Devala q. by T. K. 250
- Hariscandresvara**—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. 117
- Hariparvata**—(hill in Srīnagara)—same as Sārikāparvata or Pradyumnapiṭha. K. R. p. 17, Vik. 18. 15
- Hārīta-tīrtha**—(eminent place for śrāddha) M 22. 68 (beyond Vasiṣṭhatīrtha)
- Haritakivana**—Vide Vaidyanātha p. 678 and n. 1536 above
- Haritesvara**—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. 120.
- Hariyūpiyā**—(a r.) Rg. VI. 27. 5. Probably in Kurukṣetra.
- Harodbheda**—(fit place for śrāddha) M 22. 25
- Harṣapathā**—(Śacī at Kaśyapa's prayer became H. in Kāśmīra) N M 309
- Hastatīrtha**—(v. 1. Hamsatīrtha) K. II. 42. 13 (on Narmadā)
- Hāstinapura** or **Hastināpura**—(capital of Kurus, named after king Hastin, great-grandson of Bharata Daśyanti,). It is to the north-east of Delhi. Ādi 95. 34, Rām. II. 68. 13 (Hāstinapura), Vi IV. 21. 8, Bh. IX. 22. 40. After it was swept away by Ganges, Nicaknu, grandson of Janamejaya, made Kauśāmbī his capital. Pāṇ. VI. 2. 101 (na Hāstinaphalaka-mārdeyāḥ) appears to know it as Hāstinapura. The Mbh. (vol. I. p. 380 on Pāṇ. II. 1. 16) offers the illustration 'anu-Gaṅgam Hāstinapuram'.
- Hastipādesvara**—(a Sivaliṅga to the east of Sthānuvata) Vām. 46.29
- Hastipālesvara**—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. 76
- Hāṭaka**—(removes sins of crores of murders) P. IV. 17, 67
- Hāṭakesvara**—Vām. 63.78 (on Saptagodāvara)
- Hayamukti**—(under Mathurā) Var. 160,23
- Hayasīras**—(fit place for śrāddha) Br. III. 13.46, Vā. 77.46
- Hayatīrtha**—M. 22.69
- Hemakūṭa**—(another name of Kailāsa, which see) Bhī. 6, 4, Br. II. 14.48 and 15.15 (Himavat and Hemakūṭa distinguished)
- Hetukesvara**—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. 92
- Himālaya**—see Himavat
- Himavat**—In Rg. X. 121.4 and A. V. IV. 2. 5 the plural is used (Viśve himavantaḥ). But in A. V. V. 4. 2 and 8, VI. 24.1 the singular is employed. In Kenopaniṣad III. 25 Umā Haimavatī is mentioned. In V. 158.19, Udyoga 11.12 and Pāṇ. IV. 4. 112 Himavat is mentioned and in K. II, 37. 46-49 its length is given as 1080 yojanas. It is the Varṣaparvata of Bharatavarṣa and the other seven chief mountains mentioned in note 1260 are 'Kulaparvatas'. M. 117-118 contain fine descriptions of trees, flowers, birds and beasts on it. Himālaya occurs in non-vedic works, e. g. Gītā X. 25. Himavat meant the whole mountain range stretching from Assam in the east to the mountains west of Panjab. Mār. 51.24 states that Kailāsa and Himavat stretch from east to west and are situated between two seas and that Himavat is to the north of Bharatavarṣa (which has seas on south, west, and east) like the string of a bow (Mār. 54.59)
- Himavat**—aranya-Devīpurāṇa q. by T. K. 244
- Hiraṇvatī**—(carried a girl to Kosatī) Vām. 34.8 (one of seven or nine very holy rivers), 64.11 and 19,90.32, Ann 166. 25, Udyoga 152. 7 (in Kuru)

- kṣetra, where Pāṇḍavas pitched their camp), 160.1, Bhī. 9.25
- Hiranyabāhu—(The Erannoboas of Greek writers, river *Ṣoṇa*). Vide A.I. p. 68. It falls into the Ganges near Bankipore. Arrian (A. I. p. 186) regards Erannaboas and Sonos as distinct. It was called 'golden armed' probably owing to the colour of the sand in its bed or because particles of gold were found in it.
- Hiranyabindu—(on m. Kālāñjara) V. 87.21, Anu. 25.10
- Hiranyadvīpa—(under Narmadā) M. 193. 68, P. I. 20. 66
- Hiranyagarbha—(a *līṅga* under VS) K. I. 35.13, L. I. 92. 76, P. I. 37. 16, L. q. by T. K. p. 48
- Hiranyakaśīpulinga—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 43
- Hiranyākṣa—M. 22.52 (most efficacious about *dānas* here)
- Hiranyākṣeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. 47
- Hiranyāsaṅgama—(under Sābhramatī) P. VI. 135.1
- Hiranyavāha—same as *Ṣoṇa* and as Arrian's Erannoboas, which was the third great river, the other two being Indus and Ganges (vide A. G. p. 452)
- Hiranyavatī—(r. on which stood the Sāla grove of the Mallas and the Upavattana of Kusinārā). SBE, vol. XI. p. 85. It is the same as the Gaṇḍakī. Vide A. G. p. 453
- Hlādinī—(r.) Rām. II. 71.2 (Bharata coming from Kekaya country crossed it first and then Śatadrū)
- Homatīrtha—(under VS) K. I. 35.11
- Hṛṣīkeśa—(on the Ganges about 24 miles north of Haridvāra) Var. 146. 63-64 (Viṣṇu is deemed to stay there)
- I
- Ikṣu—A (r. from Himavat) Vā. 45. 96. Dey, p. 77 identifies it with Oxus. He equates Aśmanvatī (p. 13) and Cakṣus (p. 43) with Oxus. Hence such identifications of his cannot be taken seriously; B (r. falling into Narmadā) M 191. 49
- Ikṣumatī—A (r. flowing through Kumaon and Kanoj). From Pān. IV. 2. 85-86 (*nadyām matup, madhvādibhyaś-ca*) it follows that Pāṇini was aware of this river, as 'Ikṣu' is included in the *madhvādi-gaṇa*). Rām. II. 68. 17 (going from Ayodhyā one first meets Mālīnī, then Gaṅgā at Hāstinapura, then Kurukṣetra and then Ikṣumatī), M 22.17 (favourite of the pitṛs and falls into the Ganges), P. V. 11.13; B (r. of the Sindhu-Sauvīra country) Vi. II. 13, 53-54 (there was Kapila's āśrama on it where the king of Sauvīra came and asked what is most beneficial in this *samsāra* which abounds in pain and sorrow), Bh. V. 10. 1
- Ikṣu—Narmadāsaṅgama—M 191. 49, K. II. 41.28, P. I. 18. 47
- Ikṣudā—(r. rising in m. Mahendra) M 114.31, Vā. 45. 106 (reads Ikṣulā)
- Ilāspada—P. I. 26. 73
- Ilātīrtha—(under Go.) B. 108. 1
- Ilvalapura—(same as Mañimatipurī) V. 96.4
- Indirā—(r.) Vā. 108. 79
- Indradhvaja—(under Mathurā) Var. 164. 36
- Indradyumnasaras—A (under Puruṣottama, vide pp. 694-95, 700 above) B. 51. 29-30; B V. 199.9-11, Ādi 119.50 (beyond even Gandhamādana, where Pāṇḍu practised *tapas*)
- Indradyumneśvara—*līṅga* of Mahākāla, SK. I. 2. 13. 209
- Indragrāmatīrtha—(on north bank of Sābhramatī) P. VI. 144. 1
- Indrakīla—(m. beyond Gandhamādana) V. 37. 41-42, M. 22. 53 (sacred to pitṛs), NM 1443, Bh. V. 19. 10-13
- Indraloka—(under Badarī) Var. 141. 10-13
- Indramārga—Anu 25. 9 and P. I. 27. 68
- Indranadī—(r.) Vā. 43. 26



Indrāṇītīrtha—N. II. 40. 93

Indraprastha—(the modern village of Indrapat in Delhi District on the Yamunā, Old Delhi). Ādi 217. 27, Mausala 7. 72, Vi. V. 38.34 (Yādava Vajra was crowned king here by Arjuna after Kṛṣṇa passed away), P. VI. 196. 5, 60, 75-76 (it extended up to four yojanas to the south of Yamunā), 200. 5 (it was in Khāṇḍavavana), Bh. X. 58.1, XI. 30.48, XI. 31.25. Indraprastha is only one of five prasthas, the others being Sonapat, Pānipat. Pilpat and Bāghpat

Indratīrtha—(under Go.) B 96. 1

Indratoyā—(r. on Gandhamādāna) Anu 25. 11

Indreśvara—A (under Śrīparvata) L. I. 92.152; B (under VS) L. q. by T. K. 71

Irāvati—(modern Rāvi river in Panjab called Hydroates by Greek writers). Nir. IX. 26 notes that the river Paruṣṇī invoked in Rg. X. 75. 5 was also called Irāvati; VDh. S. 85. 49, M. 22. 19 (fit for śrāddha), Vā. 45. 95 (rises in Himālaya), Vām. 79.7, 81.1, NM 149 (Irāvati tathā puṇyā sarva-kalmaṣanāśinī). The city of Lahore stands on it. The Mbh. (vol. I p. 382 on Pāṇ. II. 1. 20 cites as examples 'dvīrāvātiko deśaḥ, trīrāvātiko deśaḥ'. Vide under Candrabhāgā.

Irāvati—nadvalā-saṅgama—Vām. 79.51.

Īśānādhyuṣita—V 84. 8.

Īśāna-liṅga—(under VS) L. I. 92. 106 and 137 q. by T. K. p. 105

Īśāna-śikhara—(under Kedāra) Devī-purāṇa q. by T. K. p. 230

Īśatīrtha—(under Narmadā) P. I. 20. 69

J

Jagannātha—see under Puruṣottama

Jāhnavī—(name of Gaṅgā) Vā. 91. 54-58 (story of sage Jahnu), N. II. 41. 35-36 (Jahnu drank it and let it off through his right ear), Br. III. 56. 48 (Jahnu let it off from his belly), III. 66. 28.

Jahnuhrada—N. II. 40. 90

Jaigīṣavyaguhā—(under VS) L. I. 92. 53

Jaigīṣavyeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. 91

Jāla—a Śāktakṣetra, acc. to Bār. S. III. 124.

Jalabindu—(under Kokāmukha) Var. 140. 16

Jālandhara—A (hill) M. 13. 46 (Devī was called Viśvamukhī on it), 22. 64 (hill sacred to piṭṛs); according to Kal. chap. 18.51 Devī is called Caṇḍī on Jālandhara hill, whereon her breasts fell when Śiva carried her corpse; B (a town on the Sutlej in the Panjab) Vā. 104. 80 (Jālandhara pīṭha seen on the chest of Veda-puruṣa personified); one of the pīṭhas of Lalitā is probably Jālandhara; P. VI. 4. 19-20, Br. IV. 44. 95 (Jālandhara). Vide A. G. pp. 136-139

Jaleśvara—A (a Śivatīrtha, one of the eight sthānas) M. 181. 28 and 30, K. II. 40. 35; B (under Narmadā) M. 186. 15 and 38 (a hrada named Jaleśvara), K. II. 40. 22, P. I. 14. 3. Its utpatti in M 187; C (Jaleśvara near Śālāgrāma) Var. 144. 139-140

Jalpīśa—T. P. pp. 602-603 quoting Kālikāpurāṇa

Jāmadagnya-tīrtha—A (where the Narmadā falls into the sea) M 194. 34-35, P. I. 21. 34-35 (calls it Jamadagnitīrtha); B. M. 22. 57-58 (on Godāvarī, very efficacious for śrāddha).

Jambīra—campaka (under Mathurā) Var. q. by T. K. p. 190

Jambukeśvara—(under VS) K. I. 35.4, P. I. 37.4, L. I. 92.107, N. II. 50.67 (where demon Jambuka was killed by Śiva)

Jambulā—(r. rising from Rksapada) Vā. 45. 100

Jambūmārga—A (an āyatana) q. by T. K. 250, Vi. II. 13.33 (on the Ganges); Devala q. by T. K. p. 250



- separately mentions Jambūmārga and Kālāñjara as āyatanas ; B (near Kurukṣetra) V. 82. 41-42, 89. 13 (on Asita m.), Anu. 25. 51, 166. 24, M. 22. 21, Br. III. 13. 38; C (near Puṣkara) P. I. 12. 1-2, Ag. 109. 9, Vā 77. 38.
- Jambūnadī—(rising from Candra-prabha lake on slopes of Meru-Mandara peak) Br. II. 18. 68-69, Bh. V. 16. 19.
- Janakakūpa—(under Gayā) P. I. 38. 28, V. 84. 111
- Janakesvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. 119
- Janasthāna—Vide p. 710 above. V. 147. 33, V. 277. 42, Sal. 39. 9 (in Daṇḍakāraṇya), Vā 88. 194, B. 88. 1 (four yojanas in extent), Rām. VI. 126. 37-39, III. 21. 20, III. 30. 5-6.
- Janesvara—(under Narmadā) P. I. 13. 11 (sacred to pitrs)
- Janmesvara—M. 22. 42
- Japyesvara—(or Jāpyesvara) K. II. 43. 17-42 (near the sea Nandi performed recitation of three crores of Rudra); Ag. 112. 4 (under VS)
- Jarāsandhesvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 115
- Jatākūṇḍa—(under Sānandūra) Var. 150. 47 (to the south of Malaya mountain and north of the sea.)
- Jātismarahrada—A (near Kṛṣṇa-Veṇā) V. 85. 38; B (uncertain location) V. 84. 128, P. I. 38. 45
- Jayanta—M. 22. 73, Vām. 51. 51
- Jayantikā—Br. IV. 44. 97 (one of the 50 pīthas sacred to Lalitā)
- Jayapura—(in Kāśmīra, capital of king Jayāpīḍa, surrounded by water, also called Dvāravatī in imitation of Śrīkṛṣṇa's Dvāravatī) R. IV. 501-511, K. R. pp. 13-16, SM. pp. 197-198 (marked by the present village Andarkot).
- Jayātirtha—M. 22. 49
- Jayavana—(modern Zevan in Kāśmīra) R. I. 220, Vik. 18. 70 (1½ gavyūti from Pravaraपुरा). Zevan is mentioned in Ain. A. (vol. II p. 358 as possessing a spring and reservoir considered sacred. Takṣakanāga is worshipped to this day in the large limpid pool situated close to the village Zevan. Vide A. G. pp. 101-102 for the situation of Jayavana; under Takṣakanāga which is near Zevan.
- Jayinī—P. I. 26. 16 (where there is Somatirtha)
- Jesthila—(near Campakāranya) V. 84. 134
- Jñānatirtha—(under VS) K. I. 35. 6, P. I. 37. 6
- Jñānavāpī—SK. IV. 33 (describes the origin and greatness of it); see p. 638 above
- Jvālāmukhī—(a Devīsthāna) Devī-Bh. VII. 38. 6
- Jvālāsaras—(on Amarakaṇṭaka m.) Br. III. 13. 12
- Jvālesvara—(near Amarakaṇṭaka) M. 188. 80 and 94-95, P. I. 15. 69, 77, 78 (one of the Tripuras burnt by Śiva fell here). It appears that the reference is to jets of natural gas, which burn when ignited
- Jyesthesvara—(modern Jyethir on the Dal lake near Śrīnagara in Kāśmīra) R. I. 113, NM 1323-24. This was a form of Śiva in a temple which was built by king Gopāditya of Kāśmīra. Stein in note on R. I. 113 states that there are three places in Kāśmīra called Jyesthesvara. R. I. 124 says that Jalauka, son of Aśoka, built a shrine of Jyesthesvara, which would be the oldest temple in Kāśmīra.
- Jyesthapuṣkara—(on Sarasvatī) V. 200. 66, P. V. 19. 12, 18, 20 (it is said to be 2½ yojanas long and a half yojana in width)
- Jyesthassthāna—(near Koṭitirtha) V. 85. 62
- Jyotirathā or—rathya—(tributary of Śoṇa) V. 85. 8, P. I. 39. 8
- Jyotiṣmatī—(a tributary of Sarasvatī rising from a lake on Hemakūṭa) Vā. 47. 63, M. 121. 65, Br. II. 18. 66



Jyotsnā—(r. from Mānasa lake) Br. II. 18. 71

K

Kacaliṅga—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 112.

Kadalīnadī—(where dāna is most efficacious) M. 22. 52

Kadamba—(under Dvārakā) Var. 149. 52 (where Vṛṣṇis became purified)

Kadambakhaṇḍa—(a kuṇḍa under Mathurā) Var. 164. 26

Kadambesvara—(under Śrīparvata) L. I. 92. 161 (a liṅga established by Skanda)

Kādravati—(a holy place for śrāddha, japa, homa etc.) Vā. 77. 82

Kailāpura—(one of the 50 pīṭhas of Lalitā) Br. IV. 44. 97

Kailāsaśikhara—(a peak of the Himālaya 22000 feet above sea level, 25 miles to north of Mānasa lake) V 139. 41 (6 yojanas high), 153. 1, 158. 15-18, M. 121. 2-3; Br. IV. 44. 95 (one of the 50 pīṭhas of Lalitādevī); vide Swami Praṇavānanda's paper in J.U.P. H.S. vol. 19 pp. 168-180 and his book on 'Kailāsa Mānasarovara' and Sven Hedin's 'Trans Himālaya' (1909). Vide Dey pp. 82-83. Whether Kailāsa or the lake Mānasa is the source of four great rivers viz. Satlej, Indus, Brahmaputrā and Karnālī is a moot point

Kākahrada (eminently fit for śrāddha) Br. III. 13. 85

Kākaśilā—(under Gayā) Vā 108. 76, Ag. 116. 4

Kakubha—(a m.) Bh. V. 19. 16

Kakudmatī—(r. rising in Sahya) P. VI. 113. 25 (Koyanā in Satara District). Vide under Kṛṣṇā and TS p. 79. The Koyanā falls into Kṛṣṇā near Karād in Satara.

Kālabhairava—(under VS) L. I. 92. 132

Kālakavana—western boundary of Āryāvarta acc. to Mbh. vol. I. p.

475 (on Pāṇ. II. 4. 10) and vol. III p. 174 (on Pāṇ. VI. 3. 109). Dr. Agrawala in J. U. P. H. S. vol. 14 part 1, p. 15 says that it was part of Sāketa.

Kālakesava—(under VS) K. I. 35. 7

Kālakoṭi—(in Naimiṣa forest) V, 95. 3, Br. S. 14. 4.

Kālāñjara or Kālīñjara—A (hill and fort in Bundelkhand) V 85. 56, 87, 21, Vā 77. 93, Vām. 84 (temple of Nilakaṇṭha on it); Kālāñjara was the capital of the Chandellas; vide E.I. vol. I. p. 217, E.I. vol. IV p. 153. For Kālāñjaramaṇḍala, vide E. I. vol. 19 p. 18 (plate dated samvat 893). Ain. A. vol. II. p. 159 speaks of it as 'a stone fortress situated on a heaven-reaching hill. It contains many temples and an idol is there called Kāla Bhairava, 18 cubits high, of which marvellous tales are related. Springs rise within the fort and there are many tanks.' Vide I. G. I. vol. VI p. 349; B (as an āyatana) Devala q. by T. K. p. 250; C (under VS) K II. 36. 11-38 (story of rājarṣi Sveta who constantly muttered Satarudriya), P. I. 37. 15; D (shrine of Śiva under Go.) B 146. 1 and 43 (also called Yāyāta); E (said to be source of Narmadā called Kālīñjarī and a Śiva shrine) SK, Kālīkā-khaṇḍa q. by T. S. p. 98; F (under Mathurā) Var. 176. 18 (printed as Kālīñjara); G R. VII. 1256 (some hilly district in Kāśmīra is meant).

Kālāñjaravana—M 181. 27 (Kālīñjara, a Śiva-tīrtha) q. by T. K. p. 241

Kālāpagrāma—(probably near Badarikā) Vā. 91. 7, 99. 437 (Devāpi stays there and will be Kṛtavyuga-pravartaka when Kaliyuga will end), Bh. X. 87. 7.

Kālāpaka—(about 100 yojanas Kedāra) SK, I. 2. 6. 33-34

Kālāpavana—P. I. 28. 3



- Kalāsākhyā-tīrtha—(where Agastya sprang from a jar) N II. 40, 87
- Kālasarpis—(a mahātīrtha of Kāśyapa) K. II. 37. 34, Vā 77. 87 (very fit for śrāddha), Br. III. 13, 98
- Kalāśeśvara (under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 99, P. I. 37. 7
- Kālātīrtha—A (in Kośalā) V. 85. 11-12; P I. 39. 11 (both have same words); B (under VS) K. I. 35. 2
- Kalaviṅka—Anu 25. 43
- Kālāvimala—(one of five tīrthas in Kāśmīra) HC 4. 83
- Kāleśa—(under Gayā) Ag. 116. 23
- Kāleśvara—A (under VS) L. I. 92, 136, L. q. by T. K. pp. 45, 72; B (under Narmadā) M 191. 85. In Br. IV. 44. 97 it is one of the 50 pīthas of Lalitā.
- Kālīhrada—(under Śālagrāma) Var. 145. 45
- Kālī—A (r. flows through Saharanpur District in U. P) M. 22. 20, Vām. 57. 79; this river divides Nepal from Saharanpur; vide I. G. I. vol. XXII p. 102; B r. called Kālī Sind which falls into the Chambal
- Kālīkā—(r. sacred to *pitṛs*) M. 22. 36
- Kālīkā-saṅgama—V. 84. 156, P I. 38. 63 (same words in both), Ag. 109. 20
- Kālīkāśikhara—Devīpurāṇa q. by T. K. p. 244
- Kālīkāśrama—Anu 25. 24 (on Vipāśā) NM 148
- Kālindī—(see under Yamunā) P I. 29. 1
- Kālīyahrada—(under Mathurā) Var. q. by T. K. p. 192, T. P. p. 515
- Kallolakeśvara—(under Narmadā) K. II. 41. 88
- Kalmāśī—(Yamunā) S. 78. 16
- Kālōdaka (lake)—A V Dh. S. 85. 35 (acc. to Vaijayantī com.), Anu 25. 60; B (lake situated on eastern half of mountain Haramukuṭa at 13000 feet above sea level) NM 1231-1233
- Kālōdakā—(r. in Kāśmīrā) Anu. 25. 60, NM 1545
- Kalpagrāma—(under Mathurā) Var. 166. 12 (shrine of Varāha in U. P. there); probably modern Kālpī
- Kāma—a Śāktakṣetra, acc. to the Bār. S. III. 124.
- Kāmadhenupada—(under Gayā) Vā 112. 56
- Kāmagiri—(m.) Br IV. 39. 105, Bh. V. 19. 16, Devī-Bh. VIII. 11. 11.
- Kāmākhyā—A (a Rudratīrtha on Devikā river) V 82. 105, P. I. 25. 12 (same words in both); B (a Devīsthāna or temple of Tripurabhairavī on the beautiful Nīlācala hill overhanging the Brahmaputrā river) Devī-Bhāgavata VII. 38. 15, Kal. 64. 2 (explains the name and the whole chap. is mātmya). This last is about two miles from Gauhati and was famed even in ancient times; vide TP pp. 599-601. Vide Shri B. Kakati's paper on the Mother Goddess Kāmākhyā in 'Siddhabhārati' part II. pp. 44 ff. In Kal. 18. 42 and 50 it is said that on Kāmagiri in Kāmarūpa, the private parts of Sati fell when her corpse was carried by Śiva and Devī is known as Kāmākhyā there.
- Kāmakṣṭhaka (Kāmakoṭi)—Pītha of Tripurasundarī—Kāmākṣī. Br. IV. 5. 6-10, IV. 40. 16 (in Kāñcī), IV. 44. 94 (one of the 50 pīthas of Lalitā), Bh. X. 79. 14 (Kāmakṣṇīm purīm Kāñcim)
- Kāmākṣā—(in Ahicchatra) a Devīsthāna established by Sumada, P. IV. 12. 54-60
- Kāmākṣī—(in the east) N. II. 69 (for mātmya)
- Kamalākṣa—(here Devī is called Mahotpalā) M. 13. 34
- Kamalālaya—M. 13. 32 (here Devī is called Kāmālā)
- Kāmatīrtha—(under south bank of Narmadā) K. II. 41. 55, G. I. 81. 9.



- Kambalāśvatarau Nāgau—**A** (under Prayāga) M 106. 27, 110. 8, K. I. 37. 19 (on south bank of Yamunā), Ag. 111. 5; **B** two Nāgas (i. e. springs or pools) in Kāśmīra, NM 1052
- Kambalāśvatarākṣa—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 102
- Kambotikeśvara—(under Narmadā) P. I. 18. 60
- Kambutīrtha—(under Sābhramatī) P. VI. 136. 1
- Kāmeśvara-līṅga—(under VS) SK. IV. 33, 122
- Kāmeśvarīpīṭha—(Kal. 84 describes the yātrā)
- Kāmika—(where Gaṇḍakī river joins Devikā) Var. 144. 84-85
- Kāmodāpura—(on the Ganges) N. II. 68 (contains Kāmodāmāhātmya). Four maidens arose at the churning of the ocean viz. Ramā, Vāruṇī, Kāmodā and Varā, of whom Viṣṇu accepted three and Vāruṇī was taken away by the asuras; chap. 68. 18, it is 10 yojanas above Gaṅgādvāra
- Kampanā (r.)—V. 84. 115-116, Bhī. 9. 25
- Kāmyaka—āśrama (of the Pāṇḍavas) V. 146. 6
- Kāmyaka-saras—S. 52. 20
- Kāmyakavana—**A** (on the banks of the Sarasvatī) V. 36. 41 (where Pāṇḍavas went from Dvaitavana), Vām. 41. 30-31; **B** (under Mathurā) 4th out of the 12 vanas
- Kanādeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. 92
- Kanakā—(r. under Gayā) Vā 108. 80
- Kanaka—(under Mathurā) Var. q. by T. K. 189
- Kanakanandā—(a river to the north of Muṇḍa-prstha at Gayā) N II. 44. 62, Vā 77. 105 (Kanakanandī), K. II. 37. 41-43 (reads Brahma-prstha)
- Kanakavāhinī (r. in Kāśmīra now called Kankanai flowing past Buthser i. e. Bhūteśvara) NM 1545, R. I. 149-150 (flows into river Sind). See SM. p. 211. NM (1539-42) says that the confluence of Sindhu and Kanakavāhinī is equal to VS
- Kanakeśvera—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 104
- Kanakhala—**A** (on the Ganges about two miles from Haridvāra) V. 84.30, Anu 25.13, V Dh. S. 85.14, K. II. 37. 10-11, SK. I. 1. 2. 11 (where Rudra destroyed Dakṣayajña), Vā. 83. 21, Vām. 4.57; vide T. P. p. 377; **B** (under Gayā between Uttara and Dakṣiṇa Mānasa) Vā. 111. 7, Ag. 115.23, N. II. 46.46; **C** (under Narmadā) M. 183.69, P. I. 20.67 (where Garuḍa practised *tapas*); **D** (under Mathurā) Var. 152.40-49 (where a barber Kāmpilya in Pāñcāla country bathed in Yamunā and was born as a brāhmaṇa)
- Kāñcanākṣī—(r. near Naimiṣa forest) Vām. 83.2
- Kāñcī or Kāñcīpurī—vide pp. 711-712 above. **A**—one of the seven holy cities, capital of the Colas and a Devīsthāna called Annapūrṇā. P. VI. 110.5, Devī-Bh. VII. 38.8, Br. IV. 5.6-10 and IV. 39.15, Bh. X. 79.14, Vā. 104.76, P. IV. 17.67, Bār. S. III. 124 (a Śākta-kṣetra). In a new Inscription of Jayavarman I from Cambodia a king of Kāñcī appears to be referred to (vide 'Inscriptions du Cambodge' edited by G. Coedes, vol. I p. 8 'adhārmikajana--dhvāntam navoditavivasvatā i ākāñcīpura-nrpa...(rest lost); **B** (under Narmadā, P. I. 17.8
- Kāntipurī—vide p. 678 note 1535 above. It may be noted that the text of the Ain. A. had Kāntī. Vide Ain. A. vol. III. p 305 n. 4, SK. IV. 7. 100-102, Māheśvara Khaṇḍa, sub-section Kedāra, 27.33 (the līṅga Allālanātha therein). Kāntipurī in the Mirzapur District was the capital of the Bhāraśivas. Jayaswal in 'History of India' (150-350 A. D.) p. 123 quotes as from Vi. the passage

'Navanāgāḥ Padmāvatyām Kāntipuryām Mathurāyām...bhokṣyanti'. The Venk. ed. of Vi. omits the words 'Kāntipuryām Mathurāyām' and Dr. Hall in Wilson's translation, vol IV p. 217 notes that one of his best mss. does the same. Kāntipurī occurs in Br. III. 13. 94-95.

Kaṇvāśrama—A (on the river Mālīnī in the Saharanpur District) V. 82. 45, 88. 11, VDh. S. 85. 30, Ag. 109. 10. In the Śākuntala Act I Kaṇvāśrama is said to be along the bank of the Mālīnī; in Śat. Br. 13.5.4. 13 we read 'Śakuntalā Nāḍapityapsarā Bharatam dadhe,' on which the commentator Harisvāmin states that Nāḍapit was the name of Kaṇva's āśrama; B on Carmanvatī, four miles south-east of Koṭā in Rajputana. Vide Dey p. 89

Kanyā (on the southern sea, same as Kumārī, Cape Comorin) Bh. X. 79. 17 (Kanyākhyām Durgādevīm dadarsa saḥ); see under Kumārī

Kanyāhrada—Anu 25.53

Kānyakubja—(one of the 50 pīṭhas of Lalitā) Br. IV. 44. 94; V 87. 17 (where Viśvāmitra drank soma with Indra); M. 13. 29 (Devī is called Gaurī in Kānyakubja i. e. Kanoj); Anu 4.17, P. V. 35 (Rāma established image of Vāmana here on the southern bank of river Kālīnadi which ultimately falls into the Ganges), P. VI. 129. 9. The Mbh. (vol. II. p. 233 on Pāṇ. IV. 1.79) mentions Kānyakubjī. Rām. I. 32. 6 says Mahodaya was founded by Kuśanābha, son of Kuśa, son of Brahmā. The A. C. p. 182 states that Kānyakubja, Mahodaya, Kanyākubja, Gādhipura are synonyms (verses 973-74). Vide under Mahodaya and A. G. pp. 376-382; Ptolemy mentions it (p. 134) as Kanagora and Kanogiza.

Kanyākūpa—Anu 25. 19

Kanyā—samvedya—V. 84. 136, P. I. 38. 52.

Kanyāśrama—V. 83. 189, P. I. 12.5, 27. 75, 39. 35.

Kanyātīrtha—A (near the sea) V. 83. 112, 85. 23, K. II. 44. 9, P. I. 39. 21; B (under Narmadā) M. 193. 76, K. II 42. 21; C (in Naimiṣa forest) V. 95. 3, P. I. 27. 1

Kapālamocanatīrtha—A (in VS) V. 83. 137, SK IV. 33. 116, N. II. 29. 38-60 (Śiva cut off one of Brahmā's head, which stuck to his hand from which he became free at this tīrtha), Sal. 39, 8, M. 183. 84-103, Vām. 3. 48-51, Var. 97. 24-26, P. V. 14. 185-189, K. I. 35.15 (same story in these five purāṇas); B (on Sarasvatī, otherwise called Auśanasa) Vām. 39.5-14 (where sage Rahodara got rid of the head of a rākṣasa sticking to his neck and killed by Rāma), Sal. 39.9-22 (same story of Rahodara); vide ASR. of India vol. XIV pp. 75-76 for the situation of this (10 miles to the south-east of Sadhora), legend of Śiva being freed from sin of cutting Brahmā's head and description; C (under Avantī) N. II. 78.6; D (in Kāśmīra, modern Degām in Śūpiyan pargana) R. VII. 266 (and Stein's n), HC X. 249, XIV. 111; E (in Māyāpura i. e. Haridvāra) P. VI. 129.28

Kapāleśvara (under VS) L. q. by T. K. 58

Kapardīśvara (one of the guhya lingas in VS) K. I. 32.12, I. 33.4-11 and 28-49, P. I. 35.1

Kapaṭeśvara (on the southern side of the Kāśmīra valley close to modern Koṭhera) R. I. 32, HC XIV. 34 and 135, NM 1178, 1202, 1329-1357 (legend how Śiva shows himself in the disguise of a piece of wood); SM pp. 178-179, Ain. A. vol. II p. 358 says 'in the valley of Kotihar

is a deep spring...when its water decreases an image of Mahādeva in sandalwood appears'

Kāpila (under VS) K I, 35.9

Kāpilā—A (a stream under Gayā) Vā. 108.57-58, Ag. 116.5; B (river on the south side of Narmadā) M 186.40, 190.10, K. II. 40.24, P. I. 13.35 (same verse in last two). It joins Narmadā at Barwani in Central India.

Kapiladhārā—Vām. 84.24. Dey p. 4 (under Amarakantaka) says that the first fall of the Narmadā from Amarakantaka is called Kapiladhārā in Skandapurāṇa

Kāpiladvīpa—(Ananta is Viṣṇu's *guhya* name there) Nr 65.7 q. by TK p. 251 (which reads 'Anantam kapilam dvīpe')

Kapilahrada (under VS) V. 84.78, N II. 50.46, P I. 32.41, L I. 92.69-70. N. II. 66.35 mentions under Haridvāra a tīrtha of that name

Kapilanāgarāja—V. 84.32, P. I. 28.32 (same verse in both)

Kapilāsāṅgama—A (with Narmadā) M. 186.40, P. II. 18.1, VI. 242.42; B (under Go.) B 141.1 and 28-29

Kapilātīrtha—A (under Viraja in Orissa) B 42.6; B (on north bank of Narmadā) M 193.4, K II. 41.93-100, P I. 17.7, V 83.47, T. S. p. 100; C (on the south bank of Go.) B 155.1-2 (also called Āṅgīrasa, Āditya and Saimhikeya).

Kapilātīrtha—(under Kapateśvara in Kāśmīra) HC 14.113

Kapilāvāṭa—(near Nāgatīrtha and Kanakhala) V. 84.31, P. I. 28.31

Kapileśalinga—(under VS) SK IV. 33.158

Kapileśvara-līṅga—A (under VS) L. q. by T. K. pp. 57, 107; B (under Narmadā) P II. 85.26

Kāpiśā—(r. in Utkala i. e. Orissa) Raghu. IV. 38. May be identified with Kasai flowing through Midnapur.

Kāpiśī—(r.) Pāṇ. IV. 2.99 mentions it; it is the Kapisene of Greek writers.

Kāpota—(under Go.) B 80.5 and 92

Kāpotakatīrtha—(under Sābhramatī) P VI. 155.1 (here the r. turns to the east).

Kapoteśvara—(under Śrīparvata) L. I. 92.156

Karahātaka—(modern Karad in the Satara District on the confluence of the Kṛṣṇā and the Koyanā) S. 31.70, Vik 8.2. It is mentioned in inscriptions from about 200 B. C. Vide Cunningham's 'Bharhut stūpa' p. 131 for a donation of the guild of Karahātaka, pp. 135 and 136 for gift of pillars by certain inhabitants of Karahātaka. Coins of the Kṣatrapas ruling up to 300 A. D. were found at Karad. Vide Bom. G. vol. I part 1 p. 58; and Talegaon copperplates of Rāṣṭrakūṭa Kṛṣṇarāja I dated *śake* 690 (768 A.D.) in E. I. vol. XIII p. 275.

Kārandhama (on the south sea) Ādi 216.3

Karañjatīrtha (under Narmadā) M. 190.11

Kārantuka (under Kurukṣetra) Vām. 22.60. Vide p. 683 above

Kārapacava (on the Yamunā) Pañcavimsā Br. 25.10.23, Āśv. Sr. XII. 6, Kātyāyana Śr. S. 24.6.10

Karapāda (shrine of Śiva) Vam. q. by TK p. 235

Kārapavana (near source of Sarasvatī) Śal. 54.12 and 15

Karatoyā (r. flowing through the districts of Rangpur, Dinajpur and Bogra in Bengal and being the western boundary of Kāmarūpa) V 85.3, S. 9.22, Anu. 25.12. The Amarakośa says that Karatoyā and Sadānīrā are synonyms. Acc. to Mār. 54.25 it rises in the Vindhya while Vā. 45.100 says it rises in Rksapāda. In Sm. C. I. p. 152 the



- mantra* in invoking the river begins 'Karatoye Sadānīre' (thus identifying the two)
- Kāravatī (a place fit for śrāddha) Br. III. 13.92
- Karavīra—A (modern Kolhapur) M. 13.41 (*Karavīre* Mahālakṣmī) = P. V. 17.205, M. 22.76, Anu 25.44, P. VI. 108.3; E. I. vol. III p. 207, 210, a grant of Śilāditya Vyayāditya of śake 1065 mentions Kṣullakapura which appears to be meant for Kolhapura. It occurs as Kollāpura in Miraj plates of Jayasimha II (a Cālukya) in 1024 A. D. (E. I. vol. XII p. 303, 306). Vide I. A. vol. 29 p. 280 for the spelling of the name; B (capital of Brahmāvarta on Drṣadvatī) Kālikāpurāṇa 49.71, NM 147; C (city in Sahya near Gomanta hill) Harivaṃśa (Viṣṇuparva) 39. 50-64
- Karavīraka-tīrtha—A (under VS) L. q. by T.K p. 70; B (under Kubjāmṛaka) Var. 126.48-51
- Kardamāla—A (under Gayā) M 22.77, Ag. 116.13, N II. 60. 24; B (under Sābhramatī) P VI. 165. 7 and 10.
- Kardamāśrama—(near Bindusaras) Bh. III. 21. 35-37
- Kardamila—V. 135. 1 (where Bharata was crowned).
- Karkandha—Vām. 51. 52
- Karkoṭakesvara—(under Narmadā) M 191. 36
- Karmāvarohaṇa—(under Mathurā) Var. q. by TK p. 190
- Karmesvara—(under Śrīparvata) L. I. 92. 152
- Karṇahrada—(near Gaṅgāsaravati-saṅgama) P. I. 32. 4
- Karṇaprayāga—Vide under Alakānandā and U. P. Gazetteer, vol. 36 (for Garhwal) p. 172
- Kārtikeya—A (Devī is called Yaśaskarī here) M. 13.45; B (under Go.) B 81, I, G. I. 81. 9.
- Kārtikeya-kunḍa—(under Lohārgala) Var. 151. 61
- Kārtikeyapada—(in Gayā) Vā 109. 19, 111. 54
- Kāśī—Vide pp. 618-642 above. It is probably the Kassida of Ptolemy (p. 228). AC (p. 182) notes that Kāśī Varānasī, Vārānasī and Śivapurī are synonyms (verse 974)
- Kāśmīra-maṇḍala—The ancient name seems to have been Kāśmīra. The Mbh (vol. II. p. 119) on Pāṇ. III. 2. 114 employs this form (ābhijānāsi Devadatta Kāśmīrān gamiṣyāmaḥ). Kāśmīra as the name of a country occurs in the Sindhvādigāṇa. (Pāṇ. IV. 3. 93). In NM the country is called Kāśmīra in many verses such as 5, 11, 43, 50, but sometimes Kāśmīra also. Later works also like H. C. 14. 45 employ the form Kāśmīra; the Vik (18. 1 and 18) uses the form Kāśmīra. NM (292-93) derives the name from *ka* meaning water (kam vāri Harinā yasmād-deśād-asmād-apākṛtam | Kāśmīrākhyam tato hyasya nāma loke bhaviṣyati ||). Ptolemy speaks of it as Kaspeiria and states that the country was situated below the sources of Bidaspes (Vitastā), Sandabal (Candrabhāgā) and Adris (Irāvati). Vide Ptolemy pp. 108-109 and NM 43. The Vanaparva speaks of the whole country of Kāśmīra as holy (130. 10). Ain. A. (vol. II p. 354) notes that the whole of Kāśmīra is regarded as holy ground. Vide also V 82. 90, S. 27. 17, Anu 25. 8. According to a treaty in 1846 with the Maharaja of Kashmir and Jammu the territories of the Maharaja are 'situated to the eastward of the river Indus and westward of the river Rāvi' I. G. I. vol. XV p. 72. The Kashmir valley is approximately 84 miles in length and 20 to 25 miles in breadth (I. G. I. vol. XV p. 74). Stein (SM p. 63) says that its extent is confined to the great valley drained



by the head waters of the Vitastā and to the minor slopes of mountains that surround it. Hiouen Thsang (Beal's B R W W vol. 1. p. 148) states that 'Kāśmīra kingdom is about 7000 *li* (one *li* being equal to about $5\frac{1}{2}$ miles), that as the country is protected by a dragon it has always assumed superiority among neighbouring people, that they love learning and are well instructed and that (p. 149) the country was once a dragon lake and that afterwards it became dry'. The words of Hiouen Thsang refer to an ancient legend according to which Kashmīr was originally a lake (called Satisaras) 6 yojanas long and 3 yojanas wide and later became Satīdeśa (NM 64-66), that Umā herself is the country of Kāśmīra (NM 31), that the divine Vitastā rising in the Himālayas is like the *sīmanta* (line parting the hair) of this holy land (NM 45). The legend runs that Viṣṇu conferred a boon on Vāsuki-nāga who prayed to Viṣṇu when Garuḍa began to devour all nāgas that he should stay in the Satīdeśa along with the other nāgas, that no enemy would kill any nāga (NM 105-107) and that Nīla was made king of nāgas in the Satīdeśa (NM 110). The residence of Nīla is the famous fountain near the village of Vērṇāg in the Shahabad *pargana*. A certain demon called Jalodbhava grew in the Satī lake and killed men (NM 111-123 and Vām. 81. 30-33). Nīla approached the sage Kaśyapa the father of all Nāgas, at whose intercession Viṣṇu asked Anantanāga to pierce the hills and make the lake dry and then killed the demon Jalodbhava (R. I. 25). Then Viṣṇu asked the Nāgas to live in peace and harmony with men. Satī became the river Vitastā. Vide Kūrma II. 43. 4. Nāga in Kashmīr means the tutelary

deity presiding over the several holy springs, pools and lakes in which Kāśmīra abounds. Both NM (1130-31) and R (I. 38) state that there is not a spot in Kāśmīra even as small as a grain of sesamum which is not a tīrtha and has not a nāga as its presiding deity. In Ain. A. (vol. II. p. 354) Abul Fazl notes that there were in his day 45 shrines of Mahādeva, 64 of Viṣṇu, 3 of Brahmā and 22 of Durgā and that in 700 places there were graven images of snakes which were worshipped and about which wonderful stories were told. R (I. 72) and NM (313-314) say that the country of Kāśmīra is Pārvatī, that the king thereof should be deemed to be a part of Śiva and that none who desires prosperity should disobey (or disrespect) the king. R (I. 42) summarises in one verse the peculiar features of Kāśmīra viz. 'learning, lofty dwellings, saffron, water containing ice and grapes; these are common here, although rare in the three worlds'.

Kaśyapapada—(under Gayā) Vā. 109. 18, 111. 49 and 58

Kaśyapatīrtha—A (called Kālasarpiḥ) Vā. 77. 87, Br. III 13. 98; B (under Sābhramatī) P. VI. 157. 1

Kaśyapēśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 75

Kaṭheśvara—(near Candrabhāgā) M. 191. 63-64

Kātyāyaneśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 120

Kauberā—one of the Sārasvatatīrthas, Devala q. by T. K. p. 250

Kauberatīrtha—Śal. 47. 25 (where Kubera secured the lordship wealth)

Kaumāratīrtha—(a lake) Br. III 86

Kaunaṭa—Vām. 51. 53



- Kaundinyasaras—(Kramasāra is so K called in Kāśmīra) NM 1481-1483
- Kausāmbī—(modern Kosam, about 30 miles to the west of Allahabad on the Jumnā); Rām. I. 32. 6 states that it was founded by Kuśāmba, son of Kuśa, son of Brahmā; T.K.p. 246. The Mbh. mentions it several times (vide vol. III. pp. 50, 134 on Pāṇ. VI. 1.31 and VI. 2. 130). Vide AG pp. 391-398 and under Hastinā-pura. A. C. (p. 182) says it is the capital of the Vatsa country. Vide 'Early History of Kausāmbī' by Nagendranath Ghosh. The Kausāmbī Pillar edict of Aśoka (C. I. I. vol. 1 p. 159) mentions the mahāmātras of this city. In JRAS for 1898 pp 503-519 Vincent Smith disputes the identification of modern Kosam with Kausāmbī. Vide E. I. vol. XI p. 141 on different views about the location of Kausāmbī.
- Kausīkahrada—(on r. Kausīkī) V. 84. 142-143, P. I. 38. 58 (where Viśvāmitra obtained the highest *siddhi*).
- Kausīkī—A (r. from Himālaya, modern Kusi) Ādi 215. 7, V. 84. 132, M 22. 63, 114. 22, Rām. I. 34. 7-9, Bh. IX. 15. 5-12 (Satyavatī, daughter of Gādhi, became r. Kausīkī), Vām. 54. 22-24 (so called because it was the dark *kośa* of Kālī cast off by her when she became fair), 78. 5, 90.2, Vā. 45.94, 91. 85-88. This river was called Pārā by Viśvāmitra (Ādi 71. 30-32); B (under Gayā) V. 87. 13, Vā 108. 81 (Kausīkī brahmadā jyeṣṭhā). Here brahmadā is apparently an adjective of Kausīkī and not the name of another river as Prof. Diksitar (Purāṇa Index, vol. II. p. 507) thinks.
- Kausīkī—Kokā-saṅgama—Var. 140.75-78
- ausīkī-mahā-brada—Vā 77. 101, Br. III. 13. 109
- Kausīkī—saṅgama (with Drṣadvatī) P. I. 26. 89, Vām. 34. 18. This seems to be another Kausīkī apart from the two mentioned above.
- Kausīkī-tīrtha—(under Narmadā) M. 194. 40
- Kausīkyārunā—saṅgama—V. 84. 156, P. I. 38. 63
- Kaustubheśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K 60
- Kāverī—A (r. in south India rising in Sahya m.) V 85. 22, Anu 166. 20, Vā 45. 104, 77. 28, M. 22. 64, K. II. 37. 16-19, P. I. 39. 20, P. VI. 224. 3, 4 and 19 (is called Marudvṛdhā), Nr 66. 7 (says that Kāverī is Dakṣiṇa-Gaṅgā); there is a fine description of it in the Tamil epic Śilappadikāram (X. 102 ff, pp. 160 ff of Prof. Dikshitar's translation); B (a r. rising in the Rajpipla hills and falling into Narmadā on its northern bank opposite Śukla-tīrtha) M. 189. 12-14, K. II 40. 40, P. I. 16. 6-11 (Kubera got *yakṣāahipatyā* here), Ag. 113. 3.
- Kāverīsaṅgama—(with Narmadā) Ag. 113. 3 and vide under B above.
- Kāyaśodhana—V. 83. 42-43
- Kāyāvarohana—A (modern Kārvān, 15 miles south of Baroda and in the Dabhoi Taluka) Vā 23. 221-222 (here Nakulī or Lakulī, the founder of Pāśupata doctrines, flourished), M. 22.30, K. II. 44. 7-8 (state that this was a shrine of Mahādeva and the doctrines of Maheśvara were promulgated here). E. I. vol. XXI pp. 1-7 (Mathurā Inscription of Candragupta II dated in Gupta year 61 i. e. 380 A. D. shows that Lakulī, the founder of the Pāśupata sect, flourished in the 2nd century A. D.; B (a Śivatīrtha in Benares) M 181. 26. In M. 13.48 Devī is said to be styled Mātā in Kāyāvarohana)

- Kedāra**—**A** (one of the eight Śiva-tīrthas in Benares) V. 87. 25, M 181. 29, K. I. 35. 12 and II. 20. 34 (a very fit place for śrāddha), Ag. 112. 5, L. I. 92. 7 and 134; **B** (in Tehri Gaḍhval and called Kedāra-nātha) V Dh.S.85. 17; it is 11750 ft. above sea level; there are five Kedāras, viz. Kedāranātha, Tuṅga-nātha, Rudranātha, Madhyameśvara and Kalpeśvara. Vide U. P. Gazetteer, vol. 36 p. 173 (for Garhwal); **C** (in Kāśmīra) HC 8. 69 (one krośa below Vijayeśvara); **D** (under Gayā) N. II. 46. 46; **E** (of Kapiṣṭhala) P. I. 26. 69.
- Keśava**—**A** (in Benares) M. 185. 68; **B** (under Mathurā) Var. 163. 63
- Keśinītīrtha**—(under Narmadā) P. I. 21. 40
- Keśitīrtha**—(under Ganges) TP p. 515
- Ketakīvana**—Vide under Vaidyanātha.
- Ketumālā**—(r. in the west) V. 89. 15
- Khaḍgadhārātīrtha** or **Khaḍgadhāreśvara**—P VI. 147. 1 and 67. Vide Bom. G. vol. IV p. 6 for description
- Khaḍgapucchanāga**—(in Kāśmīra) HC. X. 251 (about 1½ krośa above Vijayeśvarakṣetra, now called Khan-bal in Anantanāg pargana)
- Khaḍgatīrtha**—**A** (under Sābhramatī) P VI. 140. 1; **B** (under Go.) B 139. 1 (on the northern bank)
- Khadiravana**—(under Mathurā) Var. 153. 39 (7th vana out of 12)
- Khaṇḍatīrtha**—(under Sābhramatī) P. VI. 137. 12 (also called Vṛṣa-tīrtha)
- Khāṇḍava** (vana)—boundary of Kuru-kṣetra in Tai. Ā. V. 1. 1. Vide above p. 681. The name occurs in Tāndya Brāhmaṇa 25. 3. 6, Ādi 223-225, Bh. I. 15. 8, X. 58. 25-27, X. 71. 45-46, P. VI. 200. 5
- Khāṇḍavaprastha**—(a city) Ādi 61. 35, 221. 15, Bh. X. 73. 32 (where Kṛṣṇa, Bhīma and Arjuna returned after destroying Jarāsandha)
- Khaṭvāṅgeśvara**—(under VS) L. q. by T. K 56
- Khonamuṣa**—(in Kāśmīra) Birth place of poet Bilhana and famous for saffron cultivation. Vik. I. 72, XVIII. 71 (reads Khonamukha), SM p. 166 (modern Khunamoh, which has two hamlets).
- Kilikileśa**—(under Gayā) Ag. 116. 31.
- Kimdatta**—kūpa—V 83. 98
- Kimśukavana**—Vā 38. 27-32 (between Vasudhāra and Ratnadhāra)
- Kimśuluka**—name of a m. acc. to Pāṇ. VI. 3. 117 (vanagiryoh sañjñāyām koṭara-kimśulukādīnām). The Kāśikā mentions five forests (including Koṭaravana) and six giris (including Kimśuluka), which cannot be identified with certainty.
- Kimyajñā**—P. I. 26. 74.
- Kindāna**—P. I. 26. 74, V. 83. 79
- Kinkinīkāśrama**—Anu 25. 23
- Kiraṇā**—(r.) Vām. 84. 5. Vide p. 636
- Kiraṇeśvara-līṅga**—(under VS) SK IV. 33. 155
- Kiṣkindhā**—(about two miles from lake Pampā to the north-east) V. 280 16, Rām. IV. 9.5, IV. 14.1 &c. Mbh. (vol. III. p. 96) on Pāṇ. VI. 1. 157 mentions 'Kiṣkindhā-guhā'. The word occurs in the Sindhvādi gaṇa (Pāṇ. IV. 3. 93). It is identified with modern Vijayanagar and Anegundi. Vide I. G. I. vol. XIII. p. 235. Br. S. 14. 10 calls Kiṣkindhā a country in south-east.
- Kiṣkindhaguhā**—Vā. 54, 116 (probably the same as Kiṣkindhā).
- Kiṣkindhaparvata**—M 13. 46 (Devī is called Tārā on that m.)
- Kokā**—(r.) Var. 214.45, B. 219.20
- Kokāmukha**—(or Varāhakṣetra, on the Trivenī above Nāthapura in Purnea District) V. 84.158, Anu. 25.52, Var. 122 (is Kokāmukha-māhātmya), 123.2, 140. 10-13 (q. by T. K. pp. 213-214), B 219. 8-10 (gods asked a damsel 'Kāśi bhadre prabhuḥ bhavatyāḥ'), K. I. 31.47, II. 35.36

- (it is a Viṣṇutīrtha), P. I. 38.65; Var. (140.60-84) says that the kṣetra is five yojanas in extent and that there is an image of Viṣṇu in the Boar incarnation. Vide E. I. vol. 15 pp. 138-139 for an Inscription of Budhagupta recording the installation of Kokāmukhasvāmin, and Dr. B. C. Law Presentation Volume I. pp. 189-191, I. H. Q. vol. XXI p. 56
- Kokila—(under VS) P. I. 37.16, P. V. 11.10
- Kolāhala—(a m.). Vā. 45.90, 106.45, Br. II. 16.21, Mār. 54.12, Vi. III. 18.73; same as Brahmayoni hill according to Dr. Mitra. Vide pp. 646, 656 above. According to the Ādi. 63.35 it is in Cedi country and barred the flow of river Śuktimatī.
- Kolāpura—(modern Kolhāpur, one of the Devīsthānas) Devī-Bh. VII. 38.5, P. VI. 176.42 (where there is a shrine of Lakṣmī), 182.1 (asti Kolhāpuram nāma nagaram Dakṣiṇāpathe) and 11. Acc. to Br. IV. 44.97, it is sacred to Lalitā. In a grant of Śilāhāra Vijayāditya of śake 1065 (1143 A.D.) occurs the word Kṣullakāpura, which is another name of Kolhapur; E. I. vol. III. p. 207 at pp. 209-210. The grantor is described as 'one who has obtained the favour of a boon from goddess Mahālakṣmī'. In the Sanjan plates of Amoghavarṣa I. of śake 793 (871 A.D.) it is stated that the king, in order to ward off some public calamity, cut off his left finger and dedicated it to goddess Mahālakṣmī (E. I. vol. 18. p. 235 at p. 241). This Mahālakṣmī appears to be the same as that of Kolhāpur. Vide I. A. vol. 29 p. 280 for Kollāpura.
- Kollā—a Sāktakṣetra acc. to Bār. S. III. 124
- Kollagiri—Ag. 110.21, Bh. V. 19.16
- Koṇārka or Koṇāditya—(in Odra i. e. Orissa, about 24 miles north-west of Jagannātha Purī). It means 'the sun of Kona'. Koṇākona appears to have been the ancient name. It is a most exquisite memorial of sun-worship. It contains magnificent ruins of a temple of the Sun, which was built by the Gaṅga king Narasimhadeva (1238-1264 A.D.). It is a glorious and most beautiful example of north Indian Hindu architecture ever erected. It had a tower over 180 feet in height and a porch (*mandapa*) in front of 140 feet high. See Mitra's 'Antiquities of Orissa' vol. II pp. 145-156 and Hunter's 'Orissa' vol. I. p. 288 and 'Sungod of Koṇārka unearthed' (with illustrations) in Modern Review for 1945 pp. 67-72. The Sun temple shows some of the finest animal sculptures executed in India. Vide B. 28, verses 2, 9.11, 47, 65 and 29.1 and T. C. pp. 180 ff. It is probably the Kannagara of Ptolemy (vide Ptolemy p. 70)
- Kośalā—(r. near Ayodhyā) P. I. 39.11, VI. 206.13, 207.35-36, 208.27. In a grant of Vākāṭaka king Narendrasena he is praised as honoured by the kings of Kośalā (Kosala), Mekala and Mālava. Vide E. I. vol. IX p. 271.
- Koṭarā-tīrtha—(under Sābhramatī) P. VI. 152.2 and 13 (associated with Aniruddha for whom Kṛṣṇa fought with Bāṇāsura.)
- Koṭarā-vana—named by Pāṇ. VI.3.117 and VIII.4.4. Vide under Kimsuluka and Pāṇ. VIII.4.4 for the names of five *vanas*.
- Koṭikeśvara—(under Narmadā) P. I.18.36
- Koṭīśvara—A (under VS) L. q. by T.K. 54; B (under Śrīparvata) L. I. 92.157; C (under Pañcanada) Vām.34.29; is it the Koṭīśvara, which is a famous place of pilgrimage on the western shore of Kachh, Close to the Indus and the ocean? A. G. pp. 303-4 and Bom. G. vol. V. pp. 229-231

- Koṭitīrtha—A (near Prthūdaka) Vām. 51.53, 84. 11-15 (where Śiva assumed one crore of forms for crores of sages eager to see Śiva); B (near Bhartṛsthāna) V. 55. 61; C (under Prayāga) M. 106. 44; D (under Mathurā) Var. 152. 62, 154. 29; E (under Narmadā) M. 191. 7, K. II. 41. 34, P I. 13. 33 and 18. 8 (a crore of asuras were killed there); F (on south bank of Go.) B. 148. 1; G (near Gaṅgādvāra) V. 82. 49, V. 84. 77, N. II. 66. 29; H (under Gayā) Ag. 116. 6; I (in Pañcanada) P I. 26. 14, Vām. 34. 28 (so called because Hara collected there the waters of crores of tīrthas); J (in Kāśmīra near Bāramūla, modern Koṭīsar) K. R. p. 12
- Koṭivaṭa—(under Kokāmukha) Var. 140. 47-50, 147. 40
- Kramasāra—(a lake in Kāśmīra, called Viṣṇupada also) NM 1481-82
- Kratutīrtha—(under Narmadā) P I. 21. 9
- Krauñcapāda—(under Gayā) Vā. 108. 75-77 (a sage in the form of Krauñca bird practised *tapas* on it), N. II. 46. 52, Ag. 116. 7
- Krauñcapadī—Anu. 25. 42
- Krauñcaparvata—(part of Kailāsa on which Mānasa lake is situated) Tai. Ā. I. 31. 2 mentions this 'm. (Sudarśane ca Krauñce ca Maināge ca mahāgirau), Rām. IV. 43. 26-31, Bhī. 111. 47 (pierced by the missile of Skanda), Śal. 17. 51 and 46. 83-84.
- Krauñcāranya—(three krośas from Janasthāna) Rām. III. 69. 5-8
- Kriyā (r. rising from Rkṣavat) Br. II. 16. 29
- Kṛkalāsātīrtha—(also called Nṛgatīrtha) T. P. p. 543. Anu. 6. 38 and chap. 70; Rām. (VII. 53) narrates how king Nṛga became a chameleon.
- Kṛmicandeśvara—(one of the eight *Sivasthānas* in Banaras) M. 181. 29
- Krośodaka—Var. 215. 87-88
- Kṛpā—(r. rising in m. Suktimat) M. 114. 32, Br. II. 16. 38
- Kṛpānītīrtha—(on hill Mundaprṣṭha in Kāśmīra) NM. 1253, 1460
- Kṛṣṇā—A (r. rising in Sahya at Mahābaleśvara) B. 77.5, P. VI. 113. 25, Vām. 13. 30; B Vām. 78. 7, 90. 2 (Viṣṇu as Hayaśīrṣa on the river); compared to its length and modern importance the river Kṛṣṇā is rarely mentioned as Kṛṣṇā, but generally as Kṛṣṇa-Veṇyā or-Veṇā. It is the third largest river of the Deccan and southern India, the other two being the Godāvarī and the Kāverī. In the Mahābaleśvara *mahātmya* (JBBRAS vol. X. at p. 16 five rivers called Gaṅgā are said to rise from the top of Sahya near Mahābaleśvara viz. Kṛṣṇā, Veṇī, Kakudmatī (Koynā), Sāvitrī (that falls into the Arabian sea near Bāṅkoṭ) and Gāyatrī (supposed to combine with Sāvitrī).
- Kṛṣṇa-gaṅgā—(under Mathurā) Var. 175. 3
- Kṛṣṇagaṅgodbhavatīrtha—(under Mathurā) Var. 176. 43 (the whole chap. deals with its *mahātmya*).
- Kṛṣṇagiri—(m.) Vā 45. 91, Br. II. 16. 22
- Kṛṣṇatīrtha—(near Kurukṣetra) Vām. 81.9
- Kṛṣṇa-Veṇā—Bhī. 9.16, M. 22. 45, Ag. 118. 7, B. 27. 35, Vā 45. 104; occurs in Emperor Khāravela's inscription in E. I. vol. XX at p. 77 as Kaṇha-beṇnā). The Anu. 166. 22 mentions Veṇyā and Kṛṣṇa-Veṇā separately. In the Alas plate of Rāṣṭrakūṭa Govind II. dated *śake* 692 (769 A.D.) the confluence of Kṛṣṇavernā and Musī is referred to (E. I. vol. VI. 208).
- Kṛṣṇā-Veṇyā—(as one river and same as above) P. VI. 108. 27 (confluence of Kṛṣṇā and Veṇyā), VI. 113. 3 and 25 (Kṛṣṇā is the body of Kṛṣṇa); Śm. C. I. p. 132 gives a mantra for the bath in Kṛṣṇā-Veṇyā. Vide, TS pp. 67-83, of which p. 70 states that all

- rivers rising from Sahya destroy sins the moment they are remembered and that Kṛṣṇa-Veṇyā is the best of all such rivers. Māhuli about four miles from Satara is at the confluence of Kṛṣṇā and Yennā (which stands for Veṇyā).
- Kṛṣṇa-Veṇī—(same as above two) M. 114. 29, Rām. V. 41. 9. In T.S. pp. 67-83 there is a *māhātmya* of Kṛṣṇaveṇī from SK.
- Kṛtamāla—(r. rising in Malaya) Vā 45. 105, B 27. 36, M 114. 30, Br. III. 35. 17, Bh.VIII.24.12, X 79. 16, XI. 5. 39, Vi. II. 3. 13. Dey p. 104 says that it is the river Vaigā on which Madurā is situated. See under Payasvinī. The Bhāgavata says Manu practised penance on this river and helped the fish (avatāra) to grow.
- Kṛtasauca—M. 13.45, 179.87, Vām. 90. 5 (has an image of Nṛsimha), P. VI. 280. 18
- Kṛttikāṅgāraka—Anu. 25. 22
- Kṛttikāśrama—Anu. 25. 25
- Kṛttikātirtha—(under Go.) B 82. 1
- Kṛttivāsa—(under VS) L. q. by T. K p. 40
- Kṛttivāseśvarāliṅga—(in VS) K. I. 32. 12 (verses 16-18 explain why it is so called), P. I. 34. 10, N. II 49. 6-9 (different names in different yugas, this being the one in Tretā yuga)
- Krumu—(r.) Rg. V. 53.9 and X. 75. 6. It is generally held to be modern Kurram that falls into the Indus on its western side near Isakhel. Vide Dey p. 105 for other views.
- Kṣamā—(r. rising from Rṣyavat) M. 114. 25
- Kṣemeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K 117
- Kṣiprā—(r. rising in Vindhya m.) M. 114. 27, Vām, 83. 18-19. Some printed works write it as Siprā (Vāyu 45. 98) or Siprā. The printed Matsya says that Kṣiprā rises from Vindhya, while in 114.24 it mentions Siprā as rising from Pāriyātra m. The printed Brahma (chap. 27) mentions Siprā twice, one rising from Pāriyātra (verse 29) and the other rising from Vindhya (verse 33). It is doubtful whether there were two rivers of the same name. The Brahmāṇḍa II. 16. 29 and 32 (Kṣiprā in both places) is just like the Brahma.
- Kṣiravati—(r.) V. 84. 68 (reached after Sarasvatī and Bāhudā)
- Kṣīrikā—(where there is Nīlakaṇṭha) Vām. q by T. K. p. 238
- Kṣudhātirtha—(under Go) B. 85. 1
- Kuberatuṅga—(a fit place for śrāddha) Vā 77. 78, K II. 37. 31, Br. III. 13. 80
- Kubhā—(probably modern Kabul river) Rg. V. 53. 9 and X. 75. 6. It is the Kophes of Ptolemy and Kophen of Arrian (A. I. p. 179). The Kabul river joins the Indus at Ohind, a few miles north of Attock. Pāṇ. V. 1. 77 (Uttarapathenā-hṛtam ca) mentions Uttarapatha (the road in the north that crossed the Sindhu near Attock)
- Kubjaka—N. II. 60. 25, G. I. 81. 10 (Kubjake Śrīdharo Hariḥ)
- Kubjāmṛaka—(it had a hermitage of Raibhya near Gaṅgādvāra) V 84. 40, M. 22. 66, P. I. 32. 5. VDh. S 85.15, K, II. 20. 33, G. I. 81. 10 hold it a very eminent place for śrāddha. Var. 125. 101 and 132 and 126. 33 appear to identify it with Māyātirtha (i. e. Haridvāra). Var. 126 contains a *māhātmya* of this place and 23 verses of it are quoted in T.K pp. 206-208 without a single word by way of comment. Chap. 126. 10-12 explain why it is so called (a mango tree was seen by sage Raibhya as informed by God and he became bent in reverence). There is doubt about its exact

- location. Var. 179. 26-31 aver that Mathurā is superior to Saukara-tīrtha, which again is superior to Kubjāmraka. Var. 140.60-64 explain how the holy place Hṛṣikeśa came to be so called. On the whole it is better to take Kubjāmraka as a sacred spot in Haridvāra itself or very near it.
- Kubjāsāṅgama—(with Narmadā) P. II. 92. 32
- Kubjāsrama—(a Viṣṇusthāna with an extent of one yojana) K. II. 35. 33-35.
- Kubjāvāna—P. I. 39. 34
- Kubjikāpīṭha—(where Satī's private parts fell while her corpse was being carried by Śiva). Kālikā 64. 53-54 and 71-72
- Kuḍmalā—(a r.) M 22. 46 (śrāddha performed here is very efficacious)
- Kuhū—(r. sprung from Himālaya) M. 114. 21, Vā 45.95, Br. II. 16. 25, Vām 57. 80, B 27. 26; In M. 121. 46 the word 'Kuhūn' occurs as the name of a people or a country after Gāndhāras and Aurasas. It cannot be definitely identified with any modern river,
- Kukkuṭeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K 98
- Kulampuna—V 83. 104, P I. 26. 97
- Kuleśvara—(under Mathurā) Var. 177. 55
- Kuliśī—(r.) Rg. I. 104. 4
- Kulyā—(r.) Anu. 25. 56 q. by T.K p. 247
- Kumāra—P. I. 38. 61
- Kumāra—dhārā—V. Dh. S. 85. 25, Vā. 77. 85, V. 84. 149 (which springs from Pitāmaha's lake), Vām. 84. 23, K. II. 37. 20 (near Svāmitīrtha), Br. III. 13. 94-95 (near Vyāsa's seat for dhyāna and Kāntipurī)
- umāra—kośalā-tīrtha—Vā. 77.37
- Kumārakoṭī—V. 82. 117, P I. 25. 23, Ag. 109. 13
- Kumārātīrtha—Nr. 65. 17 q. by T.K p. 252
- Kumāreśvaralinga—SK. I. 2. 14. 6 ff, Vām. 46. 23
- Kumārī—(Cape Comorin, where there is a temple of Kumārī Devī in which there is a fine image of the goddess as a maiden). Ptolemy mentions it as Koumaria while the Periplus refers to it as Komar or Komarei; V. 88. 14 (in the plural as 'Kumāryah' in the Pāṇḍya country), Vā. 77. 28, Br. III. 13. 28. Br. II. 16. 11 and M. 114. 10 state that the 9th dvīpa of Bhāratavarṣa extends from Kumārī to the source of the Ganges. Śabara on Jaimini, X. 1. 35 asserts that the word 'Caru' is used in the sense of *sthālī* from the Himālaya to the Kumārī country.
- Kumārila—(on the Vitastā in Kāśmīra) Vām. 81. 11
- Kumbha—(a place fit for śrāddha) Vā. 77. 47
- Kumbhakarnāśrama—V. 84. 157, P I. 38. 64 (same verse in both)
- Kumbhakona — (modern Kumbhakoṇam) in Tanjore District) SK. III. Brahmakhaṇḍa 52. 101
- Kumbhīśvara — (under VS on the eastern bank of Varanā) L. q. by T.K p. 45
- Kumudākara — (under Kubjāmraka) Var. 126. 25-26
- Kumudvatī—(r. rising in Vindhya) Vā. 45. 102, B. 27. 33
- Kuṇḍaleśvara—A (under Narmadā) M. 190. 12; B (near southern gate of Śrīparvata) L. I. 92. 149
- Kundavana—(third out of the twelve *vanas* of Mathurā) Var. 153. 32
- Kuṇḍeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K p. 68
- Kuṇḍina—Nr. 65. 19, Vām. q. by T.K p. 239; also called Vidarbha (acc. to A. C. p. 182 verse 979)
- Kuṇḍiprabha—(under Śrīparvata) L. I. 92. 148
- Kuṇḍoda—(a hill near Kāśī) V. 87. 25-26



Kuñjatīrtha—(under Narmadā) M. 194. 9

Kuraṅga—Anu. 25. 12

Kurujaṅgala—(Sirhind in Punjab, fit place for śrāddha) M. 21. 9 and 28, Vā. 77. 93, Vām. 22. 47 (it is between Sarasvatī and Dr̥ṣadvatī), 84. 3 and 17, K. II. 37. 36, Bh. III. 1.24, X. 86. 20. Vide p. 688 above

Kurujaṅgalāranya—Devipurāṇa q. by T.K. p. 244

Kurukṣetra—Vide pp. 681–686 above. The Kurukṣetra-māhātmya mentions 180 holy places in it, though popular belief is that there are 360, Vide A. G. p. 332

Kuśāplavana—V. 85. 36

Kuśastamba—Anu. 25. 28 q. by T.K. p. 246

Kuśasthala—(under Mathurā) Var. 157. 16

Kuśasthalī—A (same as Dvārakā and capital of Ānarta) Vi. IV. 1. 64 and 91, M 12. 22, 69.9, Vā 86. 24 and 88.1, Bh. VII. 14.31, IX. 3. 28 (Revata, son of Ānarta, founded this city inside the sea and ruled over Ānarta), XII. 12.36 (Kṛṣṇa founded this city), Br. III. 61. 20 (in Ānarta). Vide p. 746 above; B (capital of Kosala, where Kuśa son of Rāma began to rule) Rām. VII. 107. 17, Vā 88. 199; C (same as Kuśāvati former name of Kusinārā where occurred Buddha's Nirvāṇa). SBE vol. XI. p. 248 note

Kuśatarpaṇa—(under Go.) B 161. 1 (also called Praṇītāsāṅgama)

Kuśatīrtha—(under Narmadā) K. II. 41. 33

Kuśāvarta—A (near Naṣik Tryambakeśvara) V Dh.S. 85.11, B. 80.2. M 22. 69. Vide Bom. G. vol. 16 p. 651; B (near Haridvāra) Anu. 25 13, N II. 40. 79, Bh. III. 20. 4

Kuśāvati—(capital of Kosala on the Vindhya slopes where Kuśa ruled) Vā 88.199, Rām. VII. 107. 7. In the Mahasudassana sutta (SBE XI.

p. 248) it is stated that Kusinārā was the city of king Mahāsudassana under the name Kuśāvati

Kuśeśaya—(v. l. Kuśeśvara) M. 22. 76

Kuśikasyāśrama—(on r. Kausikī) V. 84. 131–132

Kuśivaṭa—Nr. q. by T.K p. 252

Kuśmāṇḍeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K p. 103

Kusumeśvara—(under Narmadā) M. 191. 112–117 and 125

Kūṭaka—(m.) Bh. V. 6.7 (Kūṭaka), V. 19.16 (Kūṭaka)

Kūṭasaila—(m.) Vā. 45. 92, Br. II. 16. 23 (probably the same as Kūṭaka above)

L

Lakṣmanācala—N. II. 75. 74

Lakṣmaṇatīrtha—A (under Go.) B 123. 215; B (under Setu) SK III. Brahmakhaṇḍa 52. 106–7 (tonsure of the head only at this tirtha). The tirtha is on a river rising in Brahmagiri on the southern frontier of Coorg and falling into the Kāverī. IGI vol. 16. p. 131

Lakṣaṇeśvara—(under VS) N. II. 49.64

Lakṣmītīrtha—(under Go.) B 137.1

Lalitā—(in VS) N. II. 49. 41, L. q. by TK. p. 96; M. 22. 11 mentions it, but it seems that it was on the Ganges somewhere.

Lalitaka—(tīrtha of Santanu) V 84.34, P I. 28.34, N. II. 66.37

Lāṅgala-tīrtha—(under Narmadā) P I. 18.51

Lāṅgali-liṅga—(under VS) L. q. by TK p. 105

Lāṅgalinī—(r.) S. 9.22, Mār. 54. 29 (Langulinī from Mahendra) Vām. 83. 14 q. by TK. p. 235. The town of Chicacole in Ganjam District of Madras State stands on the left bank of the Lāṅgulya, 4 miles from its mouth. I.G.I. vol. X. p. 217

Lapeṭikā—(r.) V. 85. 15

- Lauhitya—(r. Brahmaputrā) V. 85. 2, Vā 47. 11, 77. 95, M 121. 11-12 (a *nada* which springs from a lake called Lohita at the foot of Hemaś-ṛṅga mountain), Anu 25.46, P.I. 39.2 (same verse as in V 85.2) and V. 52 54, Kālikāpurāṇa 86. 26-34. From Raghuvamśa IV. 81 it appears that Lauhitya was the western boundary of Prāgjyotiṣa. Vide TP. pp. 601-602 for *māhātmya*. The form Lauhitya occurs in Yaśodharman's inscription (about 532-33. A. D.); vide 'Gupta Inscriptions' p. 142 at p. 146
- Laukika—(under VS) K. I. 35. 13
- Lavanā—r. flowing close by the city of Padmāvatī situated on confluence of Pārā and Sindhu. Vide Mālatī-mādhava, Act IX. verse 2
- Lavarnakatīrtha—(on Sarasvatī) P I, 26. 48
- Lāvidhikā—(near Campā) P I. 38. 71
- Līngasāra—(under Narmadā) M. 191, 51
- Līngi-Janārdana—(under Narmadā) K II. 41. 61
- Lohadaṇḍa—M. 22. 65, Vām. 90. 29 (Viṣṇu as Hṛṣīkeśa here). Śrāddha is most efficacious here.
- Lohajāṅghavana—(9th out of twelve *vanas* of Mathurā) Var. 153. 41
- Lohakūṭa—N. II. 60. 24
- Lohārgala—(a Viṣṇusthāna in Himālaya) Var. 140. 5 (that Mleccha kings support or resort to it), 144.10, 151. 1-83 (verses 7-8 say that thirty *yojanas* from Siddhavaṭa in the midst of mlecchas is Lohārgala). Var. 151 verses 13-14 explain why it is so called, 151. 79 says it is twenty-five *yojanas* in extent. The T. K. (pp. 228-229) quotes twelve verses on it from Var. 151. Dey p. 115 surmises that it is probably Lohāghāt in Kumaon
- Lohita—(same as Śoṇa) Anu. 166. 21; in Br. II. 16-27 Lohita seems to be meant for Brahmaputrā.
- Lohita-Gaṅgaka—(same as Lauhitya) Kal. 86. 32-34
- Lokapāla—(under Badarī) Var. 141. 28-31
- Lokapālesvara—(under VS) L. q. by TK. p. 105
- Lokoddhāra—V. 83. 45, P. I. 26. 41 (same verse in both)
- Lolārka—(under VS) M. 185. 68 (one of the five principal tīrthas in Banaras), K. I. 35, 14, P. I. 37. 17 (reads Lokārka), Vām. 15. 58-59. Vide p. 634 above
- Loṇārakuṇḍa—(in Viṣṇu-Gayā) P. VI. 176. 41. Loṇār is a salt lake in the Buldana District of Berar, the fabled den of the giant Loṇāsura whom Viṣṇu vanquished. It is a place of great antiquity and held in great veneration. Ain. A. vol. II. describes it (pp. 230-231) and states that brāhmaṇas call it Bishan Gayā. One of the best remaining examples in Berar of the medieval temples is that at Loṇār known as the temple of Daitya-sūdana. It is a Vaiṣṇava shrine. Vide Victor Cousins' 'Medieval temples of the Dakhan' (1931) pp. 68-72 for description of the great temple and of several temples around the margin of a lake in an extinct volcanic crater and plates CIII-CV.

M

- Maḍavāvartanāga—(on the Vitastā in Kāśmīra) HC. X. 252.
- Mādhavatīrtha—(on Śrīśaila) P. VI. 129. 12
- Mādhavavana M. 13. 37 (Devī is called Sugandhā here)
- Madhūdakā—(r.) Vām. 57. 80
- Madhukaitābha-līṅga—(in VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 43
- Madhūkavana—(between Agastyāśrama and Pañcavaṭī) Rām, III. 13.23
- Madhukulyā—(r. under Gayā) V. 106. 75, 112. 30.



- Madhumatī**—A (r. in Kāśmīra) NM 144 (falls into Vitastā), 1444 (shrine of Durgā established on it by Sāṇḍilya), Vik. 18. 5; B (river that flows through Nadia and Backergunge Districts of Bengal and falls into the bay of Bengal; C (r. that joins the river Sindhu in Central India); vide Mālatīmādhava, 9th Act prose passage after verse 3.
- Madhunandinī**—(r.) Vām. 81. 16
- Madhupura**—(under Prthūdaka) P. I. 27. 38
- Madhupurī**—same as Mathurā; Bh. VII. 14.31, Vi. I. 12. 2-4
- Madhurā**—A (the same as Mathurā, capital of Sūrasena country) Br. III. 49.6, Vi. I. 12. 4. Vide pp. 687-690 above and Rām. VII.70,5; B (modern Madurā, the ancient capital of the Pāṇdyas, called Dakṣiṇa-Madhurā). Vide 'Manimekhalai in its historic setting' (p. 20) by Dr. S. Krishna-swamy Aiyangar. Madhurā is only the Tamil way of pronouncing Mathurā. Vide Journal, Mythic Society, for 1942, vol. 32 pp. 270-275 for Madurā and Tamil literary tradition and Prof. Dikshitar's translation of the Śilappadikāram pp. 201-208 for a fine description of it and p. 255 for the conflagration in Madurā due to the curse of Kannaki
- Madhurātīrtha**—(under Sābhramatī) P. VI. 135. 18
- Madhusravā**—(r.)—A (under Gayā) Vā 106. 75, 112.307 34, N. II. 47. 27; B (under Sarasvatī) Vām. 34. 7, 39. 36-38, V 83. 150 (both read Madhusrava)
- Madhuvana**—A (under Mathurā) V. I. 12, 31 so called because demon Madhu occupied it), K. II.36.9, Var. 153. 30, Vām. 83.31, 90. 14, Bh. IV. 8. 42 (on the banks of Yamunā) IX. 11. 14 (Śatrughna founded Mathurā in Madhuvana). Growse in 'Mathura' identifies it with Maholi five miles to the south-west of present Mathurā (pp. 32, 54); B (one of seven *vanas* in Kurukṣetra) Vām. 34. 5
- Madhuvatī**—(a Devīsthāna) P. I. 26.88
- Madhvatīrtha**—G. Uttarakhaṇḍa, Brahmakāṇḍa 26.46-47. This is rather suspicious
- Madhuvilā**—(r.) same as Samaṅgā. V. 135.1
- Madhyama-Puṣkara**—(see Puṣkara), P V. 19. 38, Vām. 22. 19.
- Madhyameśvara-līṅga**—A (under VS) K. I. 32. 12, K I. 34. 1-2, L. I. 92. 91, 135, P. I. 34. 10 (one of the five main līṅgas in Banaras); B (under Śrīparvata) L. I. 92. 151
- Madhyandinīyaka-tīrtha**—(under Mathurā) Var. 177. 46 (to the west of Vaikuṇṭha tīrtha)
- Madotkaṭa**—P VI. 129. 9 (9th among 108 tīrthas of Jambudvīpa)
- Madrā**—(r. rising in Vindhya) Vā 45. 102
- Madravā**—(a hill) Br. III. 13. 52 and 57. This probably is the same as Maṇḍavā below
- Māgadharānya**—K. II. 37. 9, Vām. 11. 7, 84. 35
- Mahābala**—A (Mahableshwar in Satara District) P VI. 113. 29. Vide JBBRAS. vol. X, pp 1-18, for Mahābaleśvara mātmya; B Mahābaleśvara of Gokarna. Vide Gokarna plates of Kadamba king Kāmadeva in *śake* 1177 (1236 A. D.) in E. I. vol. 27 p. 157.
- Mahābhairava**—(one of eight Śiva-tīrthas) M. 181. 29, K. II. 44. 3 Devala q. by T. K. p. 250
- Mahābodhitaru**—(the pippala tree at Gayā under which Buddha obtained Enlightenment) Ag. 115. 37, M. 22. 33, N. II. 45. 103, Vā. 111. 26; verses 27-29 of Vā 111 are addressed to the tree. P.VI. 117. 26-30 explain how Bodhitaru became touchable on Saturday and untouchable on other days. Vide Dr. Barua in *Gayā*

- and Buddha-Gayā' vol. I. p. 234 as to the invocation in Vā 111. 27-29 being to the Bo-tree and vol. II. pp. 2-9 for the vicissitudes of this tree and Cunningham's 'Mahābodhi' p. 3 for the mention of Mahābodhi in Dharmapāla's Inscription dated 850 A. D.
- Mahā-Gaṅgā—Anu. 25. 22 q. by T.K. p. 246, V Dh. S. 85. 23 (com. says it is Alakanandā).
- Mahāgaurī—(r. from Vindhya) M 114. 28, Vā 45. 103
- Mahāhrada—(near Badrināth) K II. 37. 39, Anu 25. 18 q. by T. K. pp. 245-246
- Mahākālā—A (Śiva in Ujjayinī, one of the twelve Jyotirlingas) V. 82. 49, M. 13. 41, 22. 24, 179. 5 (fight of Śiva with Andhakāśura took place in Mahākālavana in the country of Avānti), B. 43. 66, SK. IV. 1. 91; B (a liṅga in VS) L. I. 92. 137
- Mahākālavana—(in Avānti territory) M. 179. 5
- Mahākāśī—Vām. q. by T. K. p. 239
- Mahākūṭa—(a hill fit for śrāddha) Vā. 77. 57, Br. III. 13. 58. It is doubtful whether it is the same as the collection of temples on the hills to the east of Badāmī known even now by the name of Mahākūṭa. The local tradition connects this spot with the destruction of the demon brothers Vātāpi and Ilvala. Vide I. A. vol. X. pp. 102-103 for an inscription of about 696-734 A.D. here
- Mahālakṣmeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 69
- Mahālaya—V. 85. 91 (dānam dadyāt Mahālaye), V Dh. S. 85. 18, M. 181. 25, K. II. 20. 33 (very fit for śrāddha), II. 37. 1-4 (where Pāśupatas worship Mahādeva), P. V. 11. 17, Br. III. 13. 82-84, Vām. 90. 22, P. I. 37. 16
- Mahālayakūpa—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 63
- Mahālaya-liṅga—(under VS) I. 92. 134
- Mahāliṅga—(sacred to pitṛs) M. 13. 33, 22. 34 (Devī is called Kapilā here and śrāddha here is most efficacious)
- Mahāmunda—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 56
- Mahāmundeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 56
- Mahānāda—M. 22. 53 (dāna is most efficacious here)
- Mahānadī—A (r. starting from Vindhya, flowing in Orissa near Cuttack and falling into the Bay of Bengal). Br. 46. 4-5, K. II. 35. 25; Br. II. 16. 28 says it rises in Pāriyātra; B (r. under Gayā, probably Phalgu) P. I. 38. 4, Vā 108. 16-17, 110. 6, Ag. 115. 25, V. 84; C (in Dravida) Bh. XI. 5. 40
- Mahānala—a liṅga established by Mr̥tyu (under Go.) B 116. 1
- Mahānandā—(r. in north and east Bengal rising in Himālaya near Darjeeling and joining the Ganges in Māldā District). Vide I. G. I. vol. XX. pp. 413-414 (under Purnea)
- Mahāpadmanāga—(a lake in Kāśmīra) NM 1120-1122, 1157 (one yojana in length and width). It is same as Ullola and modern Vollur lake. Vide R. IV. 591 for one story, NM 1123-1159 for the story of the wicked Śaṅgulanāga and K. R. pp. 9-10 for both
- Mahāpāśupatesvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 105
- Mahāpura—(a tīrtha) Anu 25. 26
- Mahārudra—M. 22. 34
- Mahāśāla—M. 22. 34, P V. 11. 27
- Mahāśālanadī—M. 22. 42
- Mahāsaras—Mahābhārata q. by T. K. p. 246
- Mahāsthala—(under Mathurā) Var. 160. 22; one of five *sthalas*, the other four

- being Arkasthala, Vīrasthala, Kuśasthala and Puṇyasthala.
- Mahāśrama—V 84. 53, P. I. 32.17
- Mahāśoṇa—same as Śoṇa—S. 20. 27
- Mahatkunḍa—(under VS) L. by T.K. p. 70
- Mahatī (r. from Pāriyātra) M. 114. 23, Vā 45. 97.
- Mahāvana—(the 8th *vana* out of 12 at Mathurā)—same as Vraja. Var. 153. 40, 161. 8. Modern Mahaban town is near the left bank of the Yamunā. Kṛṣṇa spent his childhood here.
- Mahātīrtha—K.II.37.12 (tatrābhyarcya Hṛṣīkeśam śvetadvīpam sa gacchati).
- Mahāveṇā—P. V. 11. 27
- Mahendra—(a m. range extending from the mouths of the Ganges or Orissa to Madurā) Bhī. 9. 11, Udyoga 11. 12, M 22. 44, P. I. 39. 14 (inhabited by Paraśurāma), V. 85. 16, Bh. V. 19. 16, Vām. 13.14–15, 83.10–11, K. I.47.23–24. A Śāktakṣetra according to Bār. S.III.124. In the Ganjam District there is a peak called Mahendragiri about 5000 feet high. Rām. IV, 67.37 shows that Hanūmān used it as a springing board when he jumped off towards Laṅkā. Raghuvamśa (IV.39–40) shows that Kālīṅga country had some portion of Mahendra in it. Pargiter (p. 284 n) holds that it is the portion of the Eastern Ghats between Godāvarī and Mahānadī and hills in Berar. I do not agree. Rām, IV 41.19–21 speak of Mahendra after Paṇḍyakavāta and as entering the ocean, while Bh. X. 79.11–12 speak of it after Gayā and before Saptagodāvarī, Veṇā, Pampā. Allahabad stone pillar Ins. of Samudragupta mentions it (C. I. I. vol. III. at p. 7)
- Māheśvarapura—(where Vṛṣadhvaṇa i.e. Śiva was to be worshipped) V 84. 129–130.
- Māheśvara—(modern town in the Indore State on the north or right bank of the Narmadā) M. 188. 2; P. I. 15.2. I. G. I. Vol. 17. p. 9 asserts that it is the ancient Māhiṣmatī.
- Māheśvara-dhārā—V. 84. 117, P. I. 38. 34
- Māheśvarakunḍa—(under Lohārgala) Var. 151, 67
- Māheśvarapada—P. I. 38. 36, V 84.119
- Mahī—One of the ten great rivers that flow from the Himālaya, mentioned in 'Questions of Milinda' SBE vol. 35 p. 171; Mahī occurs in the Nadyādi-gaṇa (Pān. IV. 2. 97); B (a r. rising in Gwalior state and falling into the sea southwards near Cambay) SK I 2.3.23, I. 2.13.43–45 and 125–127, V. 222. 23, Mār. 54.19 (rising from Pāriyātrā). It is the Mophis of Ptolemy (p. 103) and Mais of Periplus.
- Mahīsāgarasaṅgama—SK. I. 2. 3. 26.
- Māhītīrtha—Vām. 84. 36
- Māhiṣmatī—(on Narmadā). Pargiter identifies with Omkāra Māndhātā (an island) while Mr. Halder and others hold that it is Māheśvara. Māndhātā island is attached to Nemad District of Central Provinces. Udyogaparva 19. 23–24, 166. 4, Anu. 2, 6, P. II. 92. 32, VI. 115. 4, Bh. IX. 15. 22 (Sahasrārjuna imprisoned Rāvaṇa); the Mbh (vol. II. p. 35, Ujjayinyāḥ prasthito Māhiṣmatyām sūryodgamanam sambhāvayate) on Vārtika 10 to Pān. III. 1. 26; in the Suttanipāta (SBE vol. X part 2 p 188) the disciples of Bāvarī going to the north to meet Buddha first go to Patitthāṇa of Ataka and then to Māhissatī; vide 'Mahisamaṇḍala and Māhiṣmatī' by Dr. Fleet in JRAS for 1910 pp. 425–447 and Barwani plate of king Subandhu in E. I. vol. XIX. p. 261 of the year 167 issued from Māhiṣmatī (It belongs to the end of the 3th century).
- Mahodaya—(generally identified with Kanoj) Vām. 83. 25, 90. 13 (Haya-

grīva here). Vide Daulatpur plate of Bhojadeva I in Harṣa *saṁvat* 100 (corresponding to about 706 A.D.) in E. I. vol. V. p. 208 at p. 211. It was also called Kūśasthala; vide E. I. vol. VII. pp. 28, 30 where Rāṣṭrakūṭa Indra III. is said to have devastated Mahodaya; but in Bara copperplate of the Gurjar Pratihāra Bhojadeva dated *saṁvat* 893 (836-7 A.D.) Mahodaya is said to be a skandhāvāra (encampment) and Kānyakubja is separately mentioned in the same record, thereby showing that the two were not quite identical (E.I. vol. 19 at p. 17) Maināka—(m. near Badarī) A. V. 139. 17, V 145. 44, Anu. 25. 59, Br. III. 13. 70, Bh. V. 19. 16; B (m. in west near Gujarat) V. 89. 11; C (m. near Sarasvatī) K. II. 37. 29. Both Dey p. 121 and Prof. Aiyangar p. 29 (of T.K) hold that it is the Sewalik range. Vide Pargiter pp. 287-288 note, which makes out three mountains named Maināka, that are slightly different from those stated here.

Maitreyī-linga (under VS) L. q. by T.K p. 47

Makrupā (r. rising from Rkṣa) Vā 45.101. Mālā (a river) S. 20. 28

Malada—(in Kāśmīra) P. I. 25.4

Malandarā—(r.) M. 22. 41 (śrāddha on it inexhaustible)

Malaprahāriṇī or Malāpahāriṇī—(r. rising from Sahya about 22 miles south-west of Belgaum) modern Malaprabhā; SK.q. by T.S. pp. 80 and 101. Vide Bom. G. vol. XXI. on Belgaum District p. 12 for legend. The famous village of Ayyāvole or Aivalli or Aihole is on this river, 16 miles to the east of Badāmi. Vide I. A. vol. VIII. p. 243 for Aihole Inscription of 634 A.D. Paraśurāma is said to have washed his blood-stained axe in the Malaprabhā here. Vide Bom. G. vol. 23 p. 545.

Malāpahā—(r. in the south). There is

a town called Muniparnā on its bank where there is 'pañcalinga Mahēśvara'.

Mālārka—(shrine of the Sun under Sābhramatī) P. VI. 141. 1 and 142.1

Malaya—(one of the 7 principal mountains of India) V. 282. 43, 313. 32, Bhī. 9. 11, K. I. 47. 23 (the sea could be seen from its top.), Vā. 45. 88, B 27. 19. Raghu. (IV. 45-51) shows that Malaya was on the Kāverī where it falls in the sea and that cardamom and sandalwood grew thereon; and also on Tāmraparnī. It is the mountain of the Pāṇḍya country (Raghuvamśa IV. 49-51). Agastya had his hermitage on it.

Malayaja—P. VI. 129. 12 (one of the numerous tīrthas where Viṣṇu and Siva resided).

Malayārjunaka—tīrtha (under Mathurā beyond Yamunā) Var. 157. 1.

Mālinī—(r. on which was situated Kaṇvāśrama) Ādi. 70. 21 and 72.10. According to Hiouen Thsang it was on this river that the District of Maḍāwar in west Rohilkhand was situated. Vide A. G. pp. 349-350.

Mallaka—(on western bank of Ganges) P. V. 5. 74 (where Satī burnt herself)

Mallikākhyā—(a great m.) P. IV. 17. 68

Mallikārjunaka—(under Śrīparvata) L. I. 92. 155

Mallikeśvara—(under Narmadā) P. I. 18. 6

Mālyavat—(The Anegundi hill on Tuṅgabhadra.) Rām. III. 49. 31, IV. 27. 1-4 (on north of it in a deep cave on Prasavaṇa Rāmā dwelt for four months in the rainy season), V. 280. 26, 282. 1 (not far from Kiṣkindhā)

Mālyavatī—(r. near Citrakūṭa) Rām. II. 56. 38.

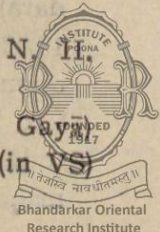
Mānasa—A (lake in Himālayas embedded between Kailāsa on the north and Gurla Māndhātā on the south) V. 130. 12, Br. II. 18. 15 and M. 121



- 16-17 (from which the Sarayū rises), Vām. 78.3, 90. 1 (where Viṣṇu appeared in the Matsya form); vide under Kailāsa. Sven Hedin in vol. III. of his Trans-Himalaya (1913) p. 198 says 'there is no finer ring on earth than that which bears the names of Manasarowar, Kailas and Gurla Māndhātā; it is turquoise set between diamonds'. The Mānasa lake is at a height of 14950 feet above sea level; **B** (under Kubjāmraka) Var. 126. 29; **C** (to the west of Mathurā) Var. 154. 25; **D** (near Prayāga on the north bank of the Ganges) M. 107.2; **E** (in Kāśmīra, modern Mānasbal) Vik. 18. 55, K. R. p. 9; **F** (under Narmadā) M. 194.8, P. I. 21. 8; **G** (under Gayā, there are two pools, Uttaramānasa and Dakṣiṇa-mānasa) Vā. 111. 2, 6, 8, 22
- Mandagā—(r. rising from Suktimat) M. 114. 32, Vā. 45. 107
- Mandākinī—**A** (near mountain Citrakūṭa and rising from Rkṣavat) V. 85. 58, Anu 25. 29, Rām. II. 93. 8 and III. 5. 37, Vā. 45. 99, Ag. 109. 23, Br. II. 16. 30, M. 114. 25; **B** (a sub-tīrtha under VS.) L. q. by T.K p. 86; **C** (r. springing from a lake Mandodaka at the foot of Kailāsa) M. 121.4, Br. II. 18. 1; **D** (near Kiṣkindhā) Rām. IV. 1. 95
- Maṇḍaleśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K p. 66
- Mandara—(m.) Vi. II.2.18 (it is to east of Meru) and Mār 51 19; V 139. 5, 142.2, 163.4 (extended up to the sea in the east), and 31-33, Udyoga 11. 12, L. I. 92. 187 and 188. 6-12 (gods afraid of Andhaka took refuge on Mandara), N. II. 60. 22, Vām. 51.74 (from Prthūdaka Śiva came to Mandara), and practised tapas), M. 184.18. 13. 28 (Devī is styled Kāmacārīṇī on m. Mandara), Bh. VII 3. 2 and VII. 7. 2 (Hiranyakaśipu here)
- Mandāra—Var. 143. 1-51 (Mandāra-māhātmya). Var. 143. 2 says it is a sacred place on the south bank of the Ganges and situated on Vindhya and dear to all Bhāgavatas. It puts forth flowers only on dvādaśī and caturdaśī (verse 13). T.K. (pp. 217-218) quotes ten verses from Var. 143 without any comment. A. G p. 508 conjectures it to be south of Bhagalpur in Bihar.
- Maṇḍavā—Vā. 77. 56 (a hill very fit for śrāddha)
- Mandavāhinī—(r. from Suktimat m.) M. 114. 32, Vā 45. 107.
- Māṇḍavya—(a tīrtha where Devī is styled Māṇḍavyā) M. 13. 42.
- Māṇḍavyeśa—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 119
- Maṇḍodaritīrtha—M. 22. 41 (removes sins at sight and śrāddha most efficacious)
- Maṅgalā—(a Devīsthāna in Gayā) Devī-bhāgavata VII. 38. 24
- Maṅgala-prastha—(hill) Bh. V. 19. 16
- Maṅgalā-saṅgama—(under Go.) B 122. 94 and 100 (otherwise called Govinda)
- Maṅgaleśvara—(under Narmadā) P II. 92. 33
- Maṇikarṇī or Maṇikarṇikā—(under VS) M. 182. 24, 185. 69, N II. 40. 87 and 49. 44, P VI. 23. 44; vide p. 635 above
- Maṇikarṇīśvara—(under VS) N. II. 49. 45, L. q. by T. K p 103
- Maṇikuṇḍa—(under Stutasvāmin) Var. 148. 52
- Māṇikyeśvara—(in Kāśmīra) P. VI. 176. 80-82
- Maṇimat or Maṇimanta—(near r. Devikā) V 82. 101, P. I. 25. 8 (same words in both), Vām. 81. 14
- Maṇimati—(r.) M. 22.39 (very efficacious for śrāddha); Br. S. 14. 20 says Maṇimat is a m.
- Maṇimatibrada—Vām. 90. 7 (Śiva was called Śambhu here)
- Maṇimatipuri—(the same as Vṛtapi.



- purī and Durjayā) V 96. 1 and 99. 30-31.
- Mañināga—V. 84. 106, P. I. 38. 24 (same verse in both)
- Mañipūragiri—(under Stutasvāmin) Var, 148. 63 ff.
- Mañjulā—(a r.). Bhī. 9. 34
- Māṅkunikā—(near Malaya) Vām. 83. 16
- Maṅkutī—(r. from Rkṣavat) Br. II. 16. 31
- Manohara—(under Narmadā) M. 194. 7, K. II. 42. 20, P. I. 21. 7 (the same verse in all three)
- Manojava—P. I. 26. 87, V. 83. 93 (same verse in both)
- Mantresvara—(under VS) SK. IV. 33. 137
- Manujesvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 104
- Manuliṅga—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 114
- Mānuṣa—(under Kurukṣetra) P I. 26. 60-63, Vām. 35. 50-56
- Manyutīrtha—(under Go.) B. 162. 1, Bh. X. 79. 21 (puts it somewhere between Māhiṣmatī and Prabhāsa)
- Mārīcesvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 71
- Mārjāra—(under Go.) B. 84. 19
- Mārkaṇḍeya-hrada—A (under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 67; B (near Puruṣottamatīrtha) B. 56. 73, 57. 2, 60. 9 (bath in it on Caturdaśī specially destroys all sins), N. II. 55. 20-22
- Mārkaṇḍeyatīrtha—A (on the Gomatī-Gaṅgāsaṅgama) V. 84. 81, P. I. 32. 41-42. Prof. Aiyangar's note on p. 291 of T.K. that it is at the junction of the Sarayū and Gaṅgā is not correct; B (under Go.) B 145.1
- Mārkaṇḍeyesvara—A (under VS) SK. IV. 33. 154-155; B (under Gayā) Ag. 116. 11; C (under Puruṣottama) N. II. 55. 18-19
- Markaṭīrtha—(in Tripurī i. e. modern Tevar on the Narmadā, 7 miles to the west of Jabalpur) mentioned by T. S. p. 101
- Mārtāṇḍa (temple of the Sun in Kāśmīra) Modern Martan or Maṭan, 5 miles to north-east of Islamabad. Its popular name is 'Bavan' (Bhavana). It overlooks the finest view in Kāśmīra. The temple originally built by king Lalitāditya in the 1st half of 8th century is now in ruins. There are two magnificent springs traditionally called Vimala and Kamala about a mile from the temple. Vide R IV. 192, NM 1073 (for Vimalanāga), Stein's translation of R. vol. I. p. 141 and II. pp. 465-466. Ain. A. (vol. II. pp. 358-359) describes Maṭan. The tīrtha has remained to this day one of the most celebrated places of pilgrimage in Kāśmīra.
- Mārtaṇḍapādamūla (under Gayā) Brahmapurāṇa q. by T.K. p. 166
- Marudgaṇa—Anu. 25. 38
- Marudvṛdhā—A (r.) Rg. X. 75. 5. The Nir. IX. 26 takes it as an attribute of all rivers named in Rg. X. 75. 5, meaning 'that are swollen or lashed up by the wind or Maruts'. It appears that it is a river in Kashmir called Maruwardwan, a tributary of the Chenab, as Stein says (vide JRAS for 1917 pp. 93-96); Bh. V. 19. 18; B Kāverī is called Marudvṛdhā in P. VI. 224. 4 and 19
- Marusthala (under Puruṣottama) N. II. 60. 22
- Mārutālaya (under Narmadā) M. 191. 86, K. II. 41. 41 (to the west of Mātṛtīrtha), P. I. 18. 81 (same verse)
- Māseśvara—(under Narmadā) P. I. 18. 77
- Mātalīśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 76
- Mātaṅgakṣetra—(under Kokāmukha) Var. 140. 58-59 (a stream that falls into Kauśikī)
- Mataṅgapada—(under Gayā) N. II. 44. 57, Vā. 108. 25
- Mataṅgasya-āśrama—A (under Gayā) V 84. 101, Ag. 115. 34; B (in VS) V. 87. 25



- Mataṅgasya Kedāra—V 88. 17, P. I. 39.15 (same verse in both)
- Mataṅga-vāpī—A (under Gayā) Vā. 111. 23-24, Ag. 115. 34, N. II. 45. 100, V Dh.S 85.38; B (in Kosalā) Vā. 77. 36; C (on Kailāsa) Br. III. 13. 36
- Mataṅgeśa—(under Gayā) Ag. 115. 35
- Mataṅgeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K p. 87
- Mātharavana—(near Payoṣṇī) V.88.10, Vā. 77.33, Br. III. 13.33
- Mathurā—Vide pp. 682-692 above and A. G. pp. 373-375 for Mathurā and Vṛndāvana
- Mātr—Śal. chap. 46 enumerates numerous Mātr̥s
- Mātrgrha—(where śrāddha yields *ānantya*) M. 22. 76
- Mātrtīrtha—A (under Kurukṣetra) V. 83. 58, P. I. 26. 54; B (under Narmadā) K II. 41. 40; C (under Go.) B 112.1
- Matsyanadi—(holy r.) M 22. 49
- Matsyaśilā—(under Kokāmukha) Var. 140. 79-83
- Matsyodapāna—Nr. q. by T. K p. 251
- Matsyodārī—(near Omkāreśvara and to the south of Kapileśvara in VS) L. q. by T.K pp. 58-59, SK. IV. 33. 120 and IV. 73. 155. The Tri. S. p. 140 remarks 'matsyākāram Kāśikṣetram udare yasyā iti vyutpattyā Gaṅgaiva Matsyodārī-sāñjña'
- Māyāpurī—(same as Gaṅgādvāra and Haridvāra) M. 13. 34 (Devī is called Kumārī here), 22. 10, Vā 104. 75, G. I. 81. 7, SK. IV. 7. 114 (kecid-ūcur-Haridvāram mokṣadvāram tataḥ pare | Gaṅgādvāram ca kepyāhuḥ kecin-Māyāpuram punaḥ ||). Māyā occurs in the Nadyādigāṇa (Pāṇ. IV. 2. 97). It is one of the seven holy cities of India. Vide p. 678 above and p.762 under Kanakāla. Hiouen Thsang mentions it as Moyulo (Māyura). Māyāpura is now a ruined site at the head of the Ganges canal. Vide A.G. pp. 351-354
- Māyātīrtha—(under Kubjāmraka and on the Ganges) Var. 125. 101, 126. 33
- Medhātithi—(a holy river) V. 222. 23
- Medhāvāna—P. I. 39. 52 (place for śrāddha)
- Medhāvika—V. 85. 55
- Meghakara—M. 22. 40, P. V. 11. 34
- Meghanāda—(under Narmadā) P. II. 92. 31
- Meghaṅkara—(a town on r. Pranītā) P. VI. 181. 5
- Megharāva—(under Narmadā) P. I. 17. 4
- Mehatnu—(r.) Rg. X. 75.6 (a tributary of the Krumu, which see)
- Mekala—(a range of hills in C. P.). Narmadā is called Mekalakanyakā (daughter of Mekala)
- Mekalā—P. V. 11. 34 (is it a river?)
- Mekalā—is a country or people in Rām. IV. 41.9, Br. S. 14. 7 and 16.2
- Mekhalā—(a tīrtha in Meghaṅkara town) P. VI. 181. 16, M. 22. 40-41 (from this it appears that Mekhalā here means probably the middle part of the town Meghaṅkara)
- Merukūṭa—Nr. 65 q. by T. K. p. 253
- Meruvara—(under Badarī) Var. 141. 32-35
- Minākṣī—(temple of, is situated in Madurā) Devī-Bh. VII. 38. 11
- Mirikāvāna—(near Mekala regions) Br. III. 70. 32
- Mīśraka—(under Kurukṣetra) P. I. 26. 85-86 (Vyāsa mixed all tīrthas here), V. 83. 91-92. It is possible that the Mīśrakavana occurring in the Koṭarādi-gaṇa (Pāṇ. VI. 3. 117) refers to this.
- Mitrapada (a tīrtha on the Ganges) M. 22. 11
- Mitravana (Konārka or Sāmbapura in Orissa) SK. Prabhāsakhaṇḍa I. 100. 3 (there are three Ādityasthānas, Mitravana, Muṇḍira and Sāmbāditya)
- Mitrāvaruṇa (under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 47



- Mitrāvaruṇayor—āśrama (on r. Yamunā near Kārapavana) Śal. 54. 14-15
- Modāgiri (m.) S. 30. 21
- Mokṣakeśvara (under VS.) L. q. by T.K. p. 112.
- Mokṣarāja—(under Mathurā) Var. 164. 35
- Mokṣatīrtha—(under Mathurā) Var. 152. 61 (to the south of Rṣitīrtha). T. S. p. 101 quotes three verses from Revākhaṇḍa about it.
- Mokṣeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 48
- Mṛgadhūma—(there is Rudrapada) P.I. 26. 94, V. 83. 101 (it is on the Ganges)
- Mṛgakāmā—(r. from Mānasa lake) Br. II. 18. 71
- Mṛgaśṛṅgodaka—(on r. Vāgmatī) Var. 215. 64
- Mṛtyuñjaya—(under Viraja) B 42. 6
- Mucukunda—(under Mathurā) Var. 158. 28
- Mucukundeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. 114
- Mukti-kṣetra—(under Sālagrāma) Var. 145. 105
- Muktimat—(a m.) Br. III. 70. 32. Is it a misreading for Śuktimat?
- Muktisthānas—26 sthānas such as Prayāga, Naimiṣa, Kurukṣetra, Gāṅgādvāra, Kāntī, Tryambaka, Sapta-godāvara are named in SK, Kāśī-khaṇḍa 6. 21-25
- Mukuṭā—(r. from Rṣyavanta) M. 114. 26, M. 13. 50 (Devī is worshipped here as Satyavādinī)
- Mūlasthāna—(modern Multan)—ancient capital of the Mallas. A. G. pp. 220-224 and 230-236. It was known under various names such as Kāśyapapura, Sāmbapura, Prahlādapura, Ādyasthāna (Al. Sachau I. 298)
- Mūlatāpī—(river Tāpī is so called, from its source at Multāi, which is a corruption of Mūlatāpī) M. 22. 33 (Mūlatāpī Payoṣṇī ca). Multai is a village in Betul District, C. P. and contains a sacred tank which is popularly deemed to be the source of the Tāpī. In the printed Padma V. 11. 25 the words 'Sūlatāpī Payoṣṇī' are a misreading of 'Mūlatāpī Payoṣṇī'. Vide I. G. I. vol. 18 p. 21 for Multai.
- Mūli—(r. rising from Mahendra) M. 114. 31
- Muṇḍapṛṣṭha—A (a hill situated on the western bank of the Phalgu river at Gayā) K. II. 37. 39-40, N. II. 45. 96, Ag. 115. 22 and 43-44, Vā 77. 102-103, 108. 12 and 111. 15, Br. III. 13. 110-111 (Mahādeva practised severe tapas here). It is no other than the hill on which there is Viṣṇupada, the very centre of Gayāyātrā. On this hill, according to the legend of Gayāsura, the back of the giant's head rested. Vide pp. 656, 665 above; B (a hill in Kāśmīra) NM 1247-1254
- Muṇḍeśa—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 116
- Mūjavat—A (a m.) In Rg. X. 34. 1 soma plant is called Maujavata and the Nir. IX. 8 explains that Mūjavat is a mountain on which soma grows. In A. V. the form Mūjavat occurs and *takman* (evil spirit of disease) is asked to go to Mūjavat and to Bālhikas beyond it. In A. V. 22. 5 the form is Mūjavantaḥ. It appears to be some m. far to the north-west of India.
- Muñjavat—(m. in Himālayan range) Āśvamedhika-parva 8. 1 (where Siva practises penance), Br. II. 18. 20-21 (where Siva resides and from which rise Śailoda lake and Śailodā river), Var. 213. 13 (to the north of Mandara)
- Muñjavaṭa—(on the Ganges, which is Śivasthāna) V. 85. 67, P. I. 39. 63 (same verse in both)

Murmurā—(one of the several rivers that are the mothers of fires) V. 222. 25

N

Nābhi—(under Gayā) N. II. 47. 82

Naḍantikā—V. Dh. S. 85. 19 (very fit place for śrāddha).

Nādeśvara—A (under VS) L. q. by T.K p. 127; B (probably same as Bindusaras) N I. 16. 46 (on Himavat, where Bhagīratha practised *tapas*)

Nadīśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K p. 103

Naga—(a hill under Gayā) Vā. 108.28

Nāgadhanvan—(not far to the south of Sarasvatī) Śal. 37. 30 (Vāsuki's image is established there)

Nāgakūṭa—(included under Gayāśiras) Vā. 111. 22, N. II. 45. 95

Nāgapura—Hastināpura, V. 183. 36

Nāgasāhvaya—Hastināpura, on the right bank of the Ganges, 22 miles to north-east of Meerut. Vā. 77.271, M. 50. 78, Nr. 65. 11 q. by T.K p. 252 (Govinda is *guhya* name of Viṣṇu here). The printed text (Govindam nāma sāyake) is corrupt. It should be 'nāgasāhvaye.' Vide under Hastināpura.

Nāgatīrtha—A (under VS) M. 22. 33, K I. 35. 7, P I. 28.33; B (under Go.) B 111. 1; C (under Tripuṣkara) P V. 26. 51; D (under Mathurā) Var. 154. 14; E (location uncertain) V. 84. 33

Nāgeśvara—(a *tapovana* on Narmadā) M. 191. 83

Nāgodbheda—(where Sarasvatī is seen, though lost in the desert elsewhere) V 82. 112, Ag. 109. 13

Nahuṣeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K p. 115

Naimiṣa or Naimiśa—(a forest) A country round Nimsār on the Gomatī, 45 miles from Lucknow. In Kāthaka Sambhitā X. 6 we have

'Naimiṣyā vai sattram-āsata'; while in Pañcavimsā Br. 25. 6, 4 occurs Naimiṣiya and Kauṣītaki Br. 26. 5 has Naimiṣiyānām' and 28. 4 also. In the great Epic and Purāṇas it is mentioned very often; vide V. 84. 59-64 (all tīrthas on the earth are centred in Naimiṣa), V 87. 5-7 (on Gomatī in east), M. 109.3 (most holy on the earth), K. II. 20. 34, K. II. 43. 1-16 (very dear to Mahādeva), Vā 2.8, Br. I. 2.8 (both derive it as 'bhramato dharmacakrasya yatra nemir-aśīryata' from 'nemi' rim of a wheel and śr. 'to be shattered'), B 1.3-10 (fine description); Vāyu (I. 14-15) makes it clear that the great sattra of the sages of Naimiśāranya was in Kurukṣetra on the Dṛśadvatī. But Vā. 2.9 and Br. I. 2.9 say that it was on the Gomatī. It is possible that Gomatī is only an adjective. It was here that enmity between Vasiṣṭha and Viśvāmitra flourished, Kalmāṣapāda was cursed by Śakti and Parāśara was born. Vi. III. 14.18 states that by a bath in Gaṅgā, Yamunā, Naimiśa-gomatī and other rivers and by honouring piṭṛs one destroys all sins. B—Br. S. XI. 60 says that a malignant Ketu in Uttarā-Bhādrapadā destroys king of Naimiṣa,

Naimiṣa—kuñja (on Sarasvatī) V. 83. 109, P. I. 26. 102

Nairṛteśvara—(under VS) L.q. by T.K. p. 117

Nakulagaṇa—(under Kurukṣetra) Vām. 46.2. This probably refers to the followers of Lakulīśa (often written as Nakulīśa). Vide E. I. vol. XXI. pp. 1 ff (Mathurā inscription of Candragupta II dated Gupta-samvat 61 i.e. 380 A. D.) which shows that Lakulī founder of Pāsupata sect flourished in 1st quarter of second century A.D.; compare Vāyu. 23. 22-25 for Nakulī and Kāyārohana as his siddhikṣetra.

- Nākuleśatīrtha—(Lakulīśatīrtha?) M. 22. 77, Vām. 7. 26 (Nākuleśvara on Narmadā where Cyavana bathed).
- Nakulī—(r. rising from lake Viṣṇu-pada) Br. II. 18. 68
- Nakulīśa—(under VS) L. q. by T.K p. 107
- Nakulīśvara—K II. 44. 12
- Nalakūbareśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 103
- Nalinī—A—one of the three streams of Gaṅgā proceeding east, Vā. 47. 38 and 56, M. 121. 40, Rām. I. 43. 13; B (a r. in Kāśmīra) HC 14. 101
- Nandā—V 87.27. Vā. 77.79. Ādi. 215. 7, V 110. 1 (near Hemakūṭa), Anu. 166. 28, Bh. VII. 14. 32, Var. 214. 47. Even all these passages do not convey the exact position. Bh. IV. 6.24 (in the context) indicates that it was near Kailāsa and Saugandhikavana. Bh. (IV. 6. 23-24) places Nandā and Alakanandā near Saugandhika-vana
- Nandanā—(r. rising in Rkṣavat m.) M. 144. 25, Vā 45. 97, B 27. 28 (both last read *candanā*, which seems to be a misreading)
- Nandanavana—(under Mathurā) Var. q. by T.K p. 187
- Nandāsarvasvatī—the r. Sarasvatī came to be so called. Vide P, V. 18. 456
- Nandāvarī—(r.) Devala q. by T.K p. 249 mentions after Kauśikī. Prof. Aiyangar (TK p. 289) takes it to be the Mahānandā in U. P. east of the Kosī river
- Nandigrāma—(where Bharata as representative of Rāma during latter's exile guarded the kingdom) V. 277. 39, 291. 62, Rām. II. 115. 22, VII. 62. 13, Bh. IX. 10. 36. It is Nundgaon in Oudh about 8 miles to the south of Fyzabad.
- Nandigubā—(under Mathurā) Var. q. by T.K. p. 193
- Nandikṣetra—(in Kāśmīra) R. I. 36, NM 1204-1328 (story of Nandin being born as son of Silāda). It is the high valley at the east glaciers of Haramukha peaks which contain the sacred Kālodaka lake
- Nandikeśa—(under Narmadā) M. 191.6
- Nandikuṇḍa—A (in Kāśmīra) Anu. 25. 60, NM. 1459, Ag. 219. 64; B (from which Sābhramatī rises) P. VI. 132. 1 and 13
- Nandikūṭa—(v. 1. Nandikuṇḍa) Anu. 23. 60 q. by T.K. p. 248
- Nandinī—(r.)—V. 84. 155, P I 38.62
- Nandinī-saṅgama—(under Go.) B 128.1 and 73-74
- Nandiparvata—(in Kāśmīra) HC. 4. 30 and 32 (near Haramukūṭa-Gaṅgā)
- Nandīśa—(Śiva worshipped in Nundkol in Kāśmīra, but in its extended sense applied to the whole sacred territory from the lakes on Haramukūṭa down to Bhūteśvara) R. I. 124
- Nandīśeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 57
- Nandītaṭa—(under Go.) B. 152.1 and 40 (also called Ānanda)
- Nanditīrtha—(under Narmadā) M. 191. 37, K. II. 41. 90, P I. 18, 37 (same verse in latter two)
- Nāradaḥ—(under Lohārgala) Var. 151. 37.
- Nāradaṭīrtha—(under Narmadā) K II.41. 16-17, P.I.18. 23 (same verse in both)
- Nāradeśvara—A (under Narmadā) M. 191. 5; B (under VS) L. q. by T.K p. 53
- Naraka—V. 83. 168 (some mss. read Anaraka and some 'Naraka')
- Naraka—(under Narmadā) P I. 18. 36, 20. 1-2
- Nārasimha—(under Gayā) N II. 46.46
- Narasimhāśrama—(in Kāśmīra) NM 1520
- Nārasimhatīrtha—A (on the north bank of Go.) B 149. 1; B (destroys sin at very sight) M. 22. 43

- Nārāyaṇasaras—(at the mouth of the eastern branch of Indus called Kori) Bh. VI. 5. 3 and 25, Śivapurāṇa II. 2. 13. 13. It is Sindhu-samudra-saṅgama. It is 81 miles north-west from Bhuj, capital of Cutch and between Koteswar and the sea. There was a great lake in ancient times and a temple of Ādi Nārāyaṇa. Vide Bom. G. vol. V. pp. 245-248
- Nārāyaṇāśrama—(near Badarī) V. 145. 26-34, 156. 14 (Naranārāyaṇasthānam Badarītyabhiviśrutam), Bh. VII. 14.32, IX. 3.36 (Badaryākhyam gato rājā Nara-nārāyaṇāśramam), X. 87. 4-7
- Nārāyaṇasthāna—V. 84.122, P. I. 38. 39
- Nārāyaṇatīrtha—A (under VS) P. I. 37.5; B—B 167.1 and 33 (also called Vipratīrtha under Go.)
- Nārītīrthāni—(in the Draviḍa country on the sea) V. 118. 4, Ādi. 217. 17 (dakṣiṇe sāgarānūpe pañca tīrthāni santi vai). Vide Pañcāpsaras
- Narmadā—Vide pp. 703-707 above
- Narmadā—Eraṇḍī-saṅgama T.P. p. 383
- Narmadāprabhava—TP p. 383, P. I. 39.9; V. 85. 9 reads 'Śonasya Narmadāyāśca prabhede'
- Narmadeśa—(under Narmadā) M. 191. 73, P. I. 18. 69
- Narmadeśvara—(under Narmadā) M. 194. 2
- Nāsikya—(modern Nasik) Vide pp. 709-710 above and Vā 46. 130
- Naubandhana—(mountain peak to the west of Kāśmīra) NM 62-63
- Naubandhanasaras—(on the border of Kāśmīra and Panjab) NM 64-66, 165-166 (also called Viṣṇupada and Kramasāra), HC 4. 27
- Nepālā—(modern Nepal) Var. 215. 38, Vā 104. 79, Devī—Bh. VII. 38. 11. (Guhyakālī is a mahāsthāna in). Vide A.G. pp. 450-452; Br. IV. 44. 93 (one of the fifty pīṭhas), Br. S. 4. 22. The country is named in Allahabad Ins. of Samudragupta (C. I. I. III. p. 14).
- Nigamodbhodhaka—(one gavyūti to the west of Prayāga) P. VI. 196. 73-74, 200. 6 (in Indraprastha). Dey p. 140 says that it is Nigambod Ghāt in old Delhi on the Yamunā.
- Nihkṣīrā—(a lotus pool on Krauñcapada in Gayā) Vā 108. 84, N. II. 44. 64, 47. 35, Ag. 116. 8 (reads Niscirā)
- Nihkṣīrā-saṅgama—N. II. 47. 35.
- Nīlācala—A (a small hill or mound at Purī in Orissa on which the temple of Jagannātha is deemed to be situated) Vide Nīlaparvata; B (hill near Gauhati on which temple of Sati stands)
- Nīlagangā—(under Go. and rising in Nīlaparvata) B 80. 4
- Nīlakaṇṭhalinga—(under VS) L. q. by T. K p. 118
- Nīlakaṇṭhatīrtha—(under Sābhramatī) P VI. 168. 1
- Nīlakuṇḍa—A (a pītṭīrtha) M. 22. 22; B Nīlakuṇḍa, Vitastā and Sūlaghāta are three names of the same tīrtha or spring in Kāśmīra. NM 1500, HC 12. 17.
- Nīlanāga—(king of Nāgas and protector of Kāśmīra) NM 295-301, R. I. 28, HC. 12. 17, SM p. 182. It is to the south of Bring in Shahabad *pargana*; popularly known as Vērnāg, the traditional source of Vitastā. Ain. A. vol. II. p. 361 describes Vērnāg as the source of Bihat (Vitastā) and remarks (p. 363) 'Nīlanāg, the basin of which measures 40 bighas. Its water is exquisitely clear and is considered a sacred spot and many voluntarily perish by fire about its border'
- Nīlaparvata—A (near Haridvār) Anu. 25. 13 'Gaṅgādvāre Kusāvarte Dilvake Nīlaparvate tathā Kāśmīrale snātvā dhūtapāpmā divam vrajet' L. q. by T. K. p. 245, Vā 85. 13.

- M. 22. 70, Bh. V. 19. 16, K. II. 20. 33, Devī-Bh. VII. 38 (Devīsthāna Nīlāmbā); **B** (mound on which Puruṣottama shrine stands) P. IV. 17. 23 and 35, IV. 18. 2, SK. q. by T. P. p. 562
- Nilatīrtha—Vām. q. by T. K. p. 238
- Nīlavana—Rām. II. 55. 8 (one krośa from Citrakūṭa)
- Nilotpalā—(r. rising from Rkṣa m.) Vā. 45. 100
- Nimbārkātīrtha—(on Sābhramatī) P. VI. 151. 1 and 14 (near Pippalādatīrtha)
- Nimnabheda—(on north bank of Go.) B 151. 1
- Nīrajeśvara—(under Narmadā) P. I. 18. 6
- Nirañjana—(An Ādityatīrtha on the north bank of Yamunā near Prayāga) M. 108. 29, T.K. p. 149 (reads Nīrūjaka)
- Nirañjanā—a river which has Mohanā as tributary and after confluence it flows past Gayā; it is famed in Buddhist works. They are Magon and Errhenysis of Arrian (Ptolemy p. 97)
- Niravindaparvata—Anu. 25. 42
- Nirjareśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 103
- Nirvindhya—(river rising in Vindhya and falling into Chambal) B. 27. 33, M. 114. 27, Mār. 113. 33, Br. II. 16. 32, Meghadūta I. 28. Acc. to Bh. IV. 1. 17-19, Vi. II. 3. 11, the river starts from m. Rkṣa and sage Atri had his hermitage on it; Mār. chap. 113 narrates the story of Vidūratha whose capital was near Nirvindhya and Vatsapri, son of Bhalandana
- Nirvīrā—(r.) V 84. 138-139 (it had Vasiṣṭhāśrama on its bank)
- Niṣadha—(m.) V. 188. 112; Al. (vol. II. p. 142) says that near the mountain Niṣadha is the lake Viṣṇupada whence comes the river Sarasvatī. Therefore Niṣadha seems to be a part of the great Himālayan range. Vide also Vāyu 47. 64
- Niṣadhā—(r. rising in Vindhya) Br. II. 16. 32. Vā 45. 102
- Niṣākaraliṅga—(under VS) L. q. by T.K p. 65
- Niścīrā—appears to be a variant reading for Nirvīrā; M. 114. 22 reads 'niścalā'
- Niṣphaleśa—K. II. 41. 8
- Niṣṭhāsaṅgama—(where there was Vasiṣṭhāśrama) P I. 38. 56
- Niṣṭhāvāsa—P. I. 38. 54
- Niṣṭhivī—(r. rising in Himavat) Br. II. 16. 26
- Nivāsaliṅga—(under VS) L. q. by T.K p. 89
- Nūpā—(r. rising from Pāriyātra m.) Br. II. 16. 28, Mār. 54. 23 (reads 'Nūpi')
- O**
- Oghavatī—(r. in Punjab) Bhī. 9. 22, M 22. 71 (śrāddha and dāna very efficacious here), Vām. 46. 50, 57. 83, 58. 115; Pṛthūdaka (modern Pehoa) was situated on it. From Śal. 38. 4 and 27 it appears that it was a name of Sarasvatī. Vide Dey p. 142 for different views about identification
- Ojasa—(under Kurukṣetra, probably same as 'Aujasa' above) Vām. 41. 6, 90. 17
- Omkāra—**A** (one of five guhya liṅgas in VS) K I. 32. 1-11, L. I. 92. 137, P I. 34. 1-4; **B** (Omkāra Māndhātā, one of the twelve Jyotirliṅgas on an island in Narmadā about 32 miles north-west of Khandwa) M 22. 27, 186. 2, P. II. 92. 32, VI. 131. 67, SK. I. 1. 17, 209. In the Halāyudha-stotra engraved in the Amareśvara temple at Māndhātā on the left bank of the Narmadā dated in samvat 1120 (1063 A.D.) in E. I. vol. 25 p. 173 it is said that Omkāra dwells in Māndhātā on the confluence of Narmadā and

Kāverī. Vide above under Māhiṣ-
matī

Omkāreśvara—(under VS) SK. IV. 33.
118

P

Padmāvati—Sal. 46. 9 (one of the
Mātr̥s); the city is called Narwar.
Vide A. G. p. 250 and the Khajurāho
Inscription of *saṃvat* 1058 (1001-2
A. D.) for a description of the town
which was the scene of Bhava-
bhūti's Mālatī-Mādhava (E. I. vol. I.
p. 147 at p. 151). Narwar is
supposed to be the home of Nala,
king of Nisadha

Paisācatīrtha—(On the south bank of
Go.) B 84. 1-2 and 18 (also called
Āñjana). B. 150. 1 speaks of a Paisāca-
tīrtha on the *north* bank of Go.
It is doubtful whether these two are
entirely different tirthas.

Paitāmahatīrtha—(under Narmadā) M.
194. 4-5, K. II. 42. 18

Pālamanjara—(near Śūrpāraka) Br.
III. 13. 37

Pālapanjara (m.) Vā 77. 37 (śrāddha
here most efficacious), Br. III. 13.
37 (reads Pālamanjara)

Palāsaka—(where Jamadagni performed
sacrifices) V. 90. 16 (Palāsakeṣu
puṇyeṣu)

Palāśinī—(r.) A (near Girnar in Kathi-
war). Vide under Raivataka and
Rudradāman's Junagadh Inscription
(E. I. vol. VIII. p. 36 at p. 43) and
Skandagupta's Ins. of 457 A. D. (C. I. I.
III. at p. 64); B (r. Paddair which
falls into the sea near Kaliṅgapatam
in Ganjam) Mār. 54. 30 (rising from
Suktimat), Vā. 45. 107

Pāleśvara—(under Sābhramatī) P. VI.
134. 2 (where image of Caṇḍī is
established)

Pampā—(r. tributary of Tuṅgabhadra)
Bh. X. 79. 12, Vām. 90. 16

Pampā—(v. l. Japā or Jayā) P. I. 26.
20-21 (said to be the door of Kuru-
kṣetra)

Pampāsaras—(Lake Pampā near
R̥śyamūka in the District of Bellary)
V. 279. 44, 280. 1, Rām. III. 72, 12,
73. 11 and 32, VI. 126. 35, Vanaparva
280. 1, Bh. VII. 14. 31, X. 79. 12
(saptagodāvarim Veṇām Pampām
Bhimarathīm tataḥ)

Pampātīrtha—M. 22. 50, Bh. VII. 14.
31

Pañcabrahma—(under VS) L. q. by
T. K p. 62

Pañcagaṅgā—The five rivers called
Gaṅgā are Bhāgīrathī, Godāvarī,
Kṛṣṇā, Pinākinī (Pennar) and Kāverī.
But in Droṇa 54. 23 (Pañcagaṅgāsu
sā puṇyā) only northern rivers seem
to be meant

Pañcakeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by
T. K p. 65

Pañcālakesvara—(under VS) L. q. by
T. K p. 65

Pañcakunḍa—A (under Dvārakā) Var.
q. by T. K. p. 226; B (under Lohārgala)
Var. 151. 43 (where five *dhārās* from
himakūṭa fall)

Pañcanada—(the five rivers in Punjab)
V 82. 83, Mausala 7. 45, Vā. 77. 56,
K II. 44. 1-2, L I. 43. 47-48 (near
Japyeśvara), Vām. 34. 26, P. I. 24. 31.
The Mbh. (vol. II. p. 239 on Pāṇ. IV.
1. 88) derives Pāñcanadaḥ (Pañcanade
bhavaḥ) from Pañcanadam. The
five rivers in Vedic times were
Sutudrī, Vipās, Paruṣṇī, Asiknī and
Vitastā and in modern times they
are called Sutlej, Bias, Rāwī,
Chenab and Jhelum. The union of
these five rivers is called Panjnad
in modern times and then the com-
bined stream unites with the Indus
a few miles above Mithankot. Br. S.
XI. 60 states that a malignant Ketu
in Dhanīṣṭhā kills the king of Pāñ-
canada and Br. S. 14. 21 states that it is a
country in the west. Vanaparva 22.
22 mentions the Sindhu (Indus) and
Pañcanada separately
nadam Pañcanadam

- Sarasvatī). For Pañcanada as a country, vide Sabhāparva 32.11
- Pañcanadatīrtha—(under the Ganges) Br. III. 13. 57, N II. 51. 16-36. Vide p. 636 and note 1458 above.
- Pañcanadī—(near Kolhapur) P VI. 176 43 (the image of Mahālakṣmī near it).
- Pañcanadīśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K p. 96.
- Pañcapīṇḍa—(under Dvārakā) Var. 149. 36-40 (where a man of good deeds sees lotuses of silver and gold, but not an evil-doer). T.K p. 326 reads Pañcakūṇḍa.
- Pañcaprayāga—Dey p. 146 mentions (1) Devaprayāga (confluence of Bhāgīrathī and Alakanandā), (2) Kānaprayāga (Alakanandā and Pindara), (3) Rudraprayāga (Alakanandā and Mandākinī) 18 miles from Śrīnagar, capital of Tehri, (4) Nandaprayāga (Alakanandā and Nandā), (5) Viṣṇuprayāga near Joshimaṭha (Alakanandā and Viṣṇugaṅgā).
- Pañcāpsaras-tīrtha—(on the southern sea) Bh. X. 79. 18 (Śrīdhara-svāmī, com. of Bh., says that this tīrtha is in Phālguna which is Anantapura in the Madras State, Ādi. (216. 1-4) names them as Agastyatīrtha, Saubhadra, Pauloma, Kārandhama and Bhāradvāja. They were shunned by all, but Arjuna plunged into them and relieved the Apsarases who had been reduced to pools by a curse. SK, Māheśvara-khaṇḍa, Kaumārikā section, chap. 1 is Pañcāpsaraḥ-samuddharana (by Arjuna).
- Pañcārūṇakṣetra—(to north of Stuta-svāmin) Var. 148. 45
- Pañcasaras—A (a pool under Lohār-gala) Var. 151. 34; B (a pool under Dvārakā) Var. 149. 23
- Pancasīkha—(under Badarī) Var. 141. 14-16
- Pañcasīkhiśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K p. 67
- Pañcasīra—(under Badarī) Var. 141. 39-44.
- Pañcāśvamedhika—Vā 77. 45, Br. III. 13. 45
- Pañcatapa (a Sivatīrtha where pīṇḍa-dāna gives inexhaustible results) K. II. 44. 5-6
- Pañcatīrtha—(in Kañcī) Br. IV. 40. 59-61.
- Pañcatīrthakūṇḍa—(under Mathurā) Var. 164. 37.
- Pañcavana—(under Gayā) Vā 77. 99
- Pañcavaṭa—(under Kurukṣetra) Vām. 41. 11, P I. 27. 50 (probably same as Pañcavaṭī in V. 83. 162)
- Pañcavaṭī—A (in the north) V. 83. 162; B (on the Go.) Rām. III. 13. 13 (calls it 'deśa'), III. 13. 19 (two yojanas from Agastya-āśrama), N II. 75. 30, Ag. 7. 3. Vide pp. 709-710 above
- Pañcayakṣa—(location uncertain) V 84. 10
- Pañcāyatana—(five tīrthas on the Narmadā) M. 191. 5-6
- Pāṇḍarakavana—(very fit for śrāddha) Vā 77. 37
- Pāṇḍaveśvaraka—(under Narmadā) P I. 18. 58, M. 191. 61-62
- Pāṇḍukūpa—Br. III. 13. 37 (near the sea) very fit for śrāddha
- Pāṇḍupura—Vide Pāṇḍarikapura
- Pāṇḍura—Vā. 45. 91 (a minor m.)
- Pāṇḍisahya—(one of the guhya-kṣetras of Viṣṇu) Nr. 65. 9 q. by T.K. p. 251
- Pāṇḍuvisālātīrtha—(under Gayā) Vā. 77. 99; Vā. 112. 44-48 (read Pāṇḍu-silā); T.K. p. 168 quoting Vā. reads Pāṇḍuvisālyā
- Pāṇikhyāta—P. I. 26. 84, V. 83. 89 (-khāta)
- Pañkajavana—(under Gayā) N. II. 44. 58, Vā. 112. 43 (Pāṇḍusilā was in this vana)
- Pāpamokṣa—(under Gayā) Ag. 116. 8. N. II. 47. 79
- Pāpaprāmocana—(under Kokāmukha) Var. 140. 51-54

- Pāpaprāṇāśana**—**A** (on Yamunā) P I. 31. 15; **B** (under Go.) B 92. 1 and 48-49, also called 'Dhautapāpa' and 'Gālava')
- Pāpasūdanatīrtha**—(a spring in Kāśmīra) R. I. 32, H. C. 14. 36. Kapaṭeśvara, Saṅkarṣana Nāga and Pāpasūdana are the same. Śiva is worshipped as Kapaṭeśvara at the sacred spring
- Pārā**—**A** (Viśvāmitra gave that name to Kauśikī) Ādi 71. 30-32; **B** (r. rising in Pāriyātra and falling into Sindhu in Malwa) Vā. 45. 98, M. 13. 44 and 114. 24, Mār. 54. 20. Printed Vāyu reads Parā, though some Mss. read Pārā. In M. 13. 44 it is said that Devī is styled Pārā on the bank of Pārā. Vide Mālatī-Mādhava 4th Act at end, and 9th Act, first verse and Br. S. 14.10
- Paribhāsapura**—(modern Paraspur in Kashmir) built by the great king Lalitāditya. R. IV. 194-195 refer to silver and gold images of Viṣṇu
- Pārāśaryeśvaralinga**—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 59
- Pāriplava**—(under Sarasvatī) V. 83.12, P. I. 26. 10 (same verse as in V), Vām. 34. 17
- Pāriyātra**—(or Pāripātra, one of the seven main mountain ranges). It must be deemed to be the western part of Vindhya, as the rivers Chambal, Betwa and Śiprā are said to rise from it. Vide K. I. 47. 24, Bh. V. 19.16, Vā. 45.88 and 98, B.27.29. It is mentioned in the Nasik Inscription No. 2 of Gotamīputa Śāta-karni in the words rendered into Sanskrit (from Prākṛit) as विन्ध्यऋक्षवत्पारियात्रसह्यकण्ठगिरि—मच्छिसिरितनमलय-महेन्द्र...पर्वतपतेः, Bom. G. vol. 16 p. 550 and as Pāricāta in Nāsik Ins. No. 10 (Bom. G. vol. 16 p. 569) and in Mahābhāṣya as the southern boundary of Āryāvarta (vol. I. p. 475 on Pān. II. 4.10) and also in Baud. Dh. S. I. 1. 27
- Parjanyaśvara**—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 115
- Parnāśā** (or Varnāśā)—**A** (r. Banās in Rajputana which rising in Udaipur State falls into the Chambal) S. 65. 6 (yatkindid anu Parnāśām prāk Sindhorapi Saubala 1 etan mama dhanam &c). Parnāśā would mean 'the hope of foliage'. Vā. 45. 97, Var. 214. 48, M. 114. 23, S.9. 21; **B** a river of Western India that falls into the Runn of Cutch. The first is mentioned as Bārnāśā in Usavādāta's Nasik Inscription No. 10 (Bom. G. Vol. 16 p. 569 and p. 633); in Ins. No. 14, at Nasik it is spelt as Banāśā (Bom. G. Vol. 16 p 577) and also in Karle cave Inscription No. 13 in E. I. vol. VII. at p. 57. Vide for this river Bom. G. vol. V p. 283.
- Paruṣṇī**—**A** (modern Rāvi in Punjab) Rg. V. 52.9, VII. 88.8-9 (Sudās met his enemies Kutsa and the latter's allies on this river), VIII. 74. 15, X. 75. 5. Nir. IX. 26 states that Irāvati was called Paruṣṇī; **B** (a tributary of the Go.) B 144. 1 and 23.
- Paruṣṇī-saṅgama**—(under Go.) B 144.1.
- Parvatākhyā**—(under VS) K I. 35. 8, P I. 37.8 (same verse in both)
- Parvateśvara**—(under VS) M 183. 62
- Pārvatikā**—(śrāddha on this river most efficacious) M 22. 56. It is a river rising in Vindhya and falling into Chambal
- Pāsā**—(r. rising from Pāriyātra m.) Br. II. 16. 28. Is it a misreading for Pārā?
- Pāśānatīrthā**—(r.) Devala q. by T.K. p. 249
- Pāśinī**—(r. rising from Śuktimanta) M 114. 32
- Pāsupatatīrthā**—M. 22. 56 (śrāddha at this very efficacious)
- Paśupateśvara**—(under VS) I. 92. 135



- Paśupatiśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K p. 93
- Pāṭalā—(very sacred to pitṛs) M 22.33
- Pātandhama—(m.) Vā. 45. 91
- Patatritīrtha—(under Go.) B 166. 1.
- Pathīśvara—(in Kāśmīra beyond Bharatagiri and Vitastā) NM 1245 (temple of), 1398
- Patresvara—(on north bank of Narmadā) P I. 17. 1
- Paulastyatīrtha—(under Go.) B. 97. 1
- Pauloma—(vide Pañcāpsarastīrtha) Ādi. 216. 3
- Paundarika—(a Viṣṇukṣetra, seems to be Pandharpur from context) P VI. 280. 18-19 (Kṛtasauce haret pāpam Paundarika ca Daṇḍake; Māthure Venkaṭādrau ca)
- Paundra—(Devadāruvane Paundram) P VI. 129. 27
- Paundravardhana—Vā. 104. . 79 (sacred pīṭha), Br. IV. 44. 93
- Pauṣka—(in Kāśmīra-maṇḍala) P VI. 129. 27
- Pavanasya—hrada V. 83. 105
- Pāvanī—(r.) The Ghaggar in Kurukṣetra (Ambala District) Rām. I. 43. 13. Vide Dey p. 155
- Payasvinī—(r.) Bh. V. 19. 18, XI. 5. 39 (persons who dwell on this and other rivers of the south are great devotees of Vāsudeva).
- Payodā—(r.) Br. II. 18. 70, Vā. 47.67 (rising from lake Payoda).
- Payoṣṇī—(r. rising from Rkṣa or from Vindhya). Wilson says that it is (vol. II. p.144 n 37) the Pain-Gaṅgā that joins the Waradā or Wardhā river in Central Provinces. V. 85. 40, V. 88. 4, 7-9 (it is superior to all rivers including Gaṅgā and is the river of king Nṛga), 121. 16, Vi. II. 3. 11. Tāpī and Payoṣṇī are separately mentioned in most Purāṇas e. g. Vi. II. 3. 11, M. 114. 27, B 27. 33, Vā 45. 102, Vām. 13. 28, N II. 60. 29, Bh. X. 79. 20, P. IV. 14. 12 and IV. 16. 3 (sage Cyavana had his āśrama on it). Vide under Mūlatāpī. V 121. 16 shows that after Payoṣṇī the Pāṇḍavas came to Vaidūrya-parvata and Narmadā. Hunter in I. G. I. vol. XX. p. 412 holds that Payoṣṇī is the modern Puṇḍā river in Berar rising in the Gavilgadh hills and falling into the Tāpī. The Nalacampū VI. 29 says (Parvatabhedī pavitram...Harimiva...vahati payaḥ paśyata Payoṣṇī).
- Payoṣṇīsaṅgama—(śrāddha yields inexhaustible results) M. 22. 33
- Phalakivana—(under Kurukṣetra, probably modern Pharal, 17 miles to south-east of Thanesar) V. 83. 86
- Phalgu—(r.) flows towards the north past the town of Gayā and ultimately joins a branch of the Pūnpūn. Vide District Gazetteer of Gayā p. 8. Ag. 115. 27 derives it from *phala* and *go* (yasmin phalati śrīr-gaur-vā Kāmadhenur-jalam mahī | Drṣṭiram-yādikam yasmāt Phalgutīrtham na phalguvat). Vā 111. 16 says it is superior to Gaṅgā since the latter is only water from the foot of Viṣṇu while the former is Adi-Gadādhara himself. Vide pp. 648 n, 653, 660 n, 661-62, 664 n
- Phālguna—Bh. VII. 14. 31, X. 79. 18 (Śrīdhara says it is Anantapura)
- Phālgunaka—(to the south of Mathurā) Var. 157. 32
- Phālguneśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 105
- Phenā—(r. falls into Go.) B. 129. 7
- Phenā-saṅgama—(with Go.) B. 129 1, 7-8
- Pinḍāraka—(in Khambhalia Mahal of Kathiawar) V. 82. 65-67 (where coins were found marked with lotus), 88. 21, M. 13. 48, 22. 69, Anu. 25 57, Vi. V. 37. 6, Bh. X. 1. 11 (Kṛṣṇa's son Sāmba dressed as a pregnant woman was cursed here by sages), Var. 144. 10 (as Viṣṇusthāna), P I. 24. 14-15.

- p. 157 says it is 16 miles to the east of modern Dvārakā. Vide Bom. G. vol. VIII (Kathiawar) p. 613 for legend connected with Pindar
- Piṅgāyāh-āśrama—Anu. 25. 55
- Piṅgātīrtha—V. 82. 57 (Piṅgātīrtha), P. I. 24. 6 (same verse in both)
- Piṅgaleśvara—(under Narmadā) M. 191. 32, K. II. 41. 21, P. I. 18. 32 (same verse in last two)
- Pippalā—(r. rising from Rkṣavat) Br. II. 16. 30
- Pippalādatīrtha—(on Sābhramatī near Dugdheśvara) P. VI. 150. 1
- Pippalatīrtha—(under Go. near Cakra-tīrtha) B. 110. 1 and 226 (Pippaleśvara in this verse)
- Pippaleśa—(under Narmadā) M. 190. 13, P. I. 17. 10
- Pippalī—(r. rising from Rṣyavat) M. 114. 25; probably same as Pippalā
- Piśācesvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 114
- Piśācamocana-kunḍa—(under VS) K. I. 33. 2 and 13-14, P. I. 35.2 ff (almost same verses in both)
- Piśācamocana-tīrtha—(in Prayāga) P. VI. 250.62-63
- Piśācikā—(r. rising in Rkṣavat) Br. II. 13. 30
- Pitāmahasaras—same as Puṣkara—A V. 89.16; B Śal. 42.30 (the source of Sarasvatī), V. 84. 149
- Pitāmahatīrtha—(under Narmadā) M. 194. 4, P. I. 21. 4
- Pīthas—fifty are enumerated in Br. IV. 44. 93-100 such as Nepāla, Ekavīrā, Ekāmra
- Plakṣā—(r.) Vām. q. by T. K. p. 239 (from that river pilgrim goes to Kuṇḍina and then to Śūrpāraka)
- Plakṣaprasravaṇa or prasra—(the source of Sarasvatī) Śal. 54. 11, K. II. 37. 29, Br. III. 13. 69, Vā. 77.67 (very efficacious for śrāddha)
- Plakṣatīrtha—(sacred tank probably in Kurukṣetra where Purūravas found Urvaśī) Vā. 91. 32
- Plakṣāvatarāṇa—V. 90. 4 (where sacrificers performed Sārasvata-sattras); V. 129. 13-14 (Yamunātīrtha where those who performed Sārasvata sacrifices came for the final ceremonial bath called avabhṛtha), K. II. 37. 8 (a Viṣṇutīrtha), Mār. 21.29-30 (in Himavat)
- Prabhāsa—A (in Saurāṣṭra near the sea, had a famous temple of Somanātha, one of the twelve Jyotirlingas, broken by Mahmud of Gaznī) also called Somanāthapaṭṭana, SK. VII. 1. 2. 44-53 (several origins of the name suggested), V. 82. 58, 130. 7, V. 88. 20, 118. 15, 119. 3, Ādi. 218. 2-8, Śal. 35. 42 (the moon was cured of consumption here), K. II. 35.15-17, N. II. 70.1-95 (māhātmya), G. I. 4.81, Vām. 84. 29 (Sarasvatī falls into the sea near it). It is mentioned as a holy place in Usavadāta's Inscription at Nāsik (Bom. G. vol. 16 p. 669 and in Cintra prasasti of Sāraṅgadeva dated *saṁvat* 1343 (1287 A. D.)). Prabhāsa is styled Devapattana and it is said that it is on the confluence of the Sarasvatī and the sea [E. I. vol. I. p. 271 at p. 283 and Śrīdhara's prasasti of *saṁvat* 1273 (1216 A. D.)]; B (on the Sarasvatī) Śal. 35.78, SK. VII. 1. 11-14; C (a hill near Gayā) Vā. 108. 16, 109. 14, Ag. 116. 15; D (under VS) K. I. 35. 16, P. I. 37. 15; E (under Dvārakā) Mausala 8. 9, Var. 149. 29-33 (there are alligators there but they do no harm), SK. VII. 1 chap. 35-36 (māhātmya of Sarasvatī and Prabhāsa), Bh. XI. 30. 6 (there is pratyak-Sarasvatī there i. e. S. flowing westwards, while in Kurukṣetra it is prācī). Usavadāta's Inscription states that the prince bore the expenditure of the marriages and secured brides for eight brāhmaṇas at Prabhāsa (Prabhāsa Puṇyatīrthe). It was here that Lord Kṛṣṇa left his mortal coil. Vide The life and

- times of Sultan Mahmud of Gazni' by Dr. M. Nazim pp. 209-214 for origin, legends and sanctity of Somanātha and for date of invasion by Mahmud (about 1025 A. D.), pp. 219-224 for stories connected with the expedition, and pp. 117-119 for attack on the fort of Somanātha, for the death of 50000 devotees in defence, for the destruction of the līṅga with pickaxes and fire and for the immense booty of 20 millions of dīnārs of those days (i. e. about ₹10,500,000 in present money); F (in Kāśmīra) HC. 14. 111; G (one of the five *dhārās* near Badarikāśrama) N. II. 67. 57-58.
- Prāci-Sarasvatī—(same as Sarasvatī) A-Bh. VI. 8. 40, Vām. 42. 20-23; B (under Gayā) Vā. 112. 23
- Pradyumnagiri or—pīṭha (same as Hariparvata in Śrīnagara) R. III. 460, VII. 1616, Vik. 18. 15, SM. p. 148 and K. R. p. 17
- Pradyumnatīrtha—N. II. 40. 96. Dey p. 158 says that it is Paṇḍuā in the District of Hughly in Bengal
- Prahasitesvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 89
- Prahlādesvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 48
- Prājāmukha—(Viṣṇu to be worshipped as Vāsudeva here) Vām. 90. 28
- Prajāpatikṣetra—M. 104. 5 (limits defined). It is Prayāga; vide p. 599 note 1358.
- Prājāpatya—(under VS) K I. 35.4, P I. 37. 4 (same verse in both)
- Pranītā—(r. falling into Godāvari) B. 161. 1, P VI. 181. 5 (on the bank of Go. there was a town called Meghaṅkara); same as Praṇahitā
- Prāntakapāniya—(near Pañcanada) Var. 215. 100
- Prāpaṇa—(to the north of Mandāra) Var. 143. 17
- Prasravaṇa-giri—A (in Janasthāna) Rām. III. 49. 31; B (on the Tuṅga-bhadra) Rām IV. 27. 1-4 (in a cave of which Rāma resided for some months)
- Praticī—(a great r.) Bh. XI. 5. 40 (persons dwelling on this are devotees of Vāsudeva)
- Pratiṣṭhāna—A (near Prayāga) V 85.76, 114, 1, Vā. 91. 18 (capital of Purūravas), 91. 50 (on the north bank of Yamunā), M 12. 18, 106. 30 (on the eastern side of the Ganges), Mār. 108. 18 (given to Aila Purūravas at Vasiṣṭha's request) Vi. IV. 1. 16, B 227. 151, Bh. IX. 1. 42; B (modern Paithan on the left bank of the Go.) B 112. 23, Var. 165. 1, P VI. 172. 20, VI. 176. 2 and 6 (refers to sporting Mahārāṣṭra women at). The Pitalkhora Buddhist pillar Inscription records the gift of a pillar by the family of a perfumer Mitadeva of Patīthān; A. S. W. I. IV. 83.
- Vide A.G. pp. 553-554 for Pratiṣṭhāna being the capital of Mahārāṣṭra in Hiouen Thsang's times. Ptolemy mentions it as Baithana and the Periplus as 'Plithāna.' In the 13th edict of Aśoka at Shahabazgarhi and elsewhere we have 'Bhoja-Pitinikeśu', which last word probably stands for Pratiṣṭhānakas (C. I. I. vol. I. p. 67).
- Pravarā—(r. that joins the Godāvari) B 106. 46-54 (on which is situated Nivāsapura, modern Nevāse or Nevās). It joins Godāvari at Toka in Ahmednagar District, Bom. G. vol. 17 p. 6
- Pravarapura—(see under Śrīnagara) R. III. 336-349
- Pravarā-saṅgama—(with Go.) B 106. 1. Vide Bom. G. vol. XVII. p. 740 for Toka and Pravarāsaṅgam, two holy towns on the left and right banks of the Pravarā at its meeting with the Godāvari, 7 miles north-east of Nevāsa
- Prayāga—A (modern Allahabad) Vide pp. 596-617 above and A. G. pp. 388-391 quoting Hiouen Thsang
- B (the confluence of the

- and Vitastā i. e. Zhelum) NM 394-395 (Sindhu is deemed Gaṅgā and Vitastā Yamunā)
- Prayāgeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 45
- Pretakuṇḍa—(under Gayā) Vā 108. 68-69, Ag. 116.15. It is now known as Brahmayoni at the foot of the Pretaśilā hill
- Pretakuṭa—(a hill under Gayā) Vā. 109. 15
- Pretaparvata—(under Gayā) Vā 83. 20.
- Pretaśilā—(under Gayā) Vā 110. 15, 108. 15. It is a peak 580 feet in height situated 5 miles north-west of Gayā. Vide Gayā District Gazetteer p. 235.
- Pritikeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 111
- Priyamelaka—(pre-eminent for śrāddha) M. 22. 53
- Priyavatesvara-liṅga—(in VS) SK. IV. 33. 159
- Prthivītīrtha—P. I. 26. 11 (near Pāriplava)
- Prthūdaka—(on south bank of Sarasvatī, modern Pehoa) Vide p. 685 above. It was called Brahmayoni in Vām. 39. 16-17 and 23. Vide A. G. pp. 336-337
- Prthutuṅga—N. II. 60. 25
- Pulahāśrama—Bh. VII. 14. 30, X. 79. 10 (near Gomatī and Gaṇḍakī and same as Śālagrāma)
- Pulastya-pulahāśrama—(near source of Gaṇḍakī river) Var. 144. 113, Bh. V. 8. 30 (near Śālagrāma)
- Pulastyesvara—(under VS) L. by T.K. p. 116
- Punahpunā—(r. under Gayā, modern Pūn-Pūn) Vā. 108. 73, N. II. 47. 75
- Punarāvartanandā—(r.) Anu. 25. 45
- Pundarīka—A (under Kubjāmraka) Var. 126. 57, P. I. 26. 78; B (near Kurukṣetra) Vām. 81. 7-8
- Pundarīkā—(r. rising from a lake called Payoda) Br. II, 18. 69-70
- Pundarikakṣetra—(modern Pandharpur) T. S. pp. 7-21
- Pundarikamahātīrtha—(śrāddha most efficacious here) Br. III. 13. 56, Vā. 77. 55
- Pundarikapura—M. 22. 77, N. II. 73. 45
- Punyasthala—(under Mathurā, one of the five sthalas) Var. 160. 21
- Purāṇeśvara—(in VS) SK. IV. 33. 132
- Pūrṇā—A (r. in Berar); it falls into the Tāpī on its left bank. Vide Ain. A. vol. II. p. 224; Changdev is a village near this confluence and a great tīrtha called Chikar-tīrtha (muddy); B Pūrṇā in Surat District falls into the sea (Bom. G. vol. II, p. 26); C Pūrṇā which falls into the Godāvari in Parbhani District. Vide I. G. I. vol. XII. p. 297. Is it the same as the Pūrṇatīrtha in B 105. 22?
- Pūrṇamukha—(under Kubjāmraka) Var. 126. 40-41
- Pūrṇatīrtha—(on north bank of Go.) B 122. 1
- Puru—(m.) V 90. 22 (where Purūravas went)
- Purūravasatīrtha—(under Go.) B. 101. 1 and 19-20 (also called Sarasvatī-saṅgama and Brahma-tīrtha)
- Puruṣottama—(Jagannātha or Purī in Orissa) B. chapters 42, 48, 68, 177, 178; M. 13. 35, K. II. 35. 27, N. II. chapters 52-61 (māhātmya). Vide pp. 692-703 above
- Pūrvāmukha—(a variant reading for Pūrṇamuka in Var. 126. 40)
- Puṣkara—(town, lake and place of pilgrimage, six miles from Ajmer). One of the few temples of god Brahmā exists here. There are three kuṇḍas called Jyestha, Madhyama and Kaniṣṭha (N. II. 71. 12, P. V. 28. 53). Usavadāta's Nasik Ins. No. 10 mentions gifts made by him at three pools (Puṣkareṣu). Vide Bom. G. vol. 16 p. 570. Vā. 77. 40, K. II. 20. 34 and VDHS. 85. 1-3 state that śrāddha at Puṣ-

kara yields inexhaustible results. This is one (western) of the five Vedis of Brahmā (P. V. 15. 150), Vām. 22. 19. Br. III. 34. 11 and Vām. 65. 31 mention Madhyama Puṣkara and Br. III. 35. 39 says that Kaniṣṭha Puṣkara was $1\frac{1}{2}$ yojanas from Madhyama Puṣkara, and Jyestha Puṣkara was one krośa to the west of Madhyama Puṣkara. It is said that the sacred Sarasvatī flowed to the ocean from here (P. V. 19. 37). P. V. 15. 63 and 82 explain how this place was called Puṣkara from the lotus (puṣkara) that Brahmā cast here. Br. (III. 34. 7 ff) states that the hero Paraśurāma practised *tapas* here along with his disciple Akṛtavraṇa for 100 years. The T. K. pp. 182–185 quote verses 20–39 of Vanaparva chap. 82 and twelve verses from P. V. 27 relating to Puṣkara. Al. (vol. II. p. 147) states: 'Outside the town in three places they have constructed ponds which stand in high veneration and are places of worship'. The principal temples are five, but all of them are modern, the earlier ones having been destroyed by Aurangzeb. There are several sub-tīrthas under it (V. 82). Puṣkara is in the Varanādigana (Pān. IV. 2. 82); B (Puṣkara, on Sarasvatī, called Suprabha, m.) Ādi. 221. 15, Śal. 38. 13–15; C HC. 14. 111 (in Kāśmīra among the group of tīrthas at Kapateśvara); D (one of the five *dhārās* at Badarikāśrama) N. II. 67. 57–58

Puṣkarāraṇya—P. V. 18. 217, S. 32. 8 (Prācī Sarasvatī flowed through it), Br. S. XI. 35

Puṣkarāvātī—a r. probably known to Pān. (IV. 2. 85, on which the Kāśikā mentions it and also several others)

Puṣkarinī—A (under Narmadā) M. 190. 16, K. II. 41. 10–11, F. I. 17. 12; B (under Gayā) Ag. 116. 13

Puṣpabhadra—(r. on the northern slopes of Himālaya) Var. 51. 2. 98. 5, Bh. XII. 8. 17, XII. 9. 10, Nr. q. by T. K. p. 253

Puṣpabhadra (r.) Bh. XII. 9. 10

Puṣpagiri—(one of the lesser mountains in Bharatavarṇa) Vā. 45. 92, Br. II. 16. 22. Vide I. G. I. vol. 23 pp. 114–115 for this

Puṣpajā—(r. rising from Malaya) M. 114. 30, Vā 45. 105 (reads Puṣpajāti, which means the same thing)

Puṣpadanteśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 117

Puṣpasthala—(under Mathurā) Var. 157. 17 (a Śivakṣetra)

Puṣpavahā—(r.) Bh. XII. 9. 30 (near Himālaya)

Puṣpavātī—(r.) V. 85. 12, P. I. 39. 12 (same verse in both)

Putratīrtha—(under Go.) B. 124. 1 and 137

R

Rādhākunḍa—(under Mathurā) Var. 164. 34

Rāghaveśvara—M. 22. 60 (śrāddha renders inexhaustible results)

Raivataka—(hill at Junagadh opposite to Girnar) Ādi. 218. 8 (near Prabhāsa) and chap. 219 (festivities on it by Vṛṣṇyandhakas), S. 14. 50, Var. 149. 66 (q. by T. K. p. 227), SK. VII. 2. 1. 68 (western part of Udayanta hill near Somanātha in Vastrāpatha), M. 22. 74. Raivataka i. e. present Girnar is very sacred to the Jains (vide Uttarādhyayanāsūtra, SBE. vol. 45 p. 115). But the present Dvārakā is about 110 miles from it. The original Dvārakā, which was swept away by the sea, was much nearer. Pargiter (p. 289) was not aware of two Dvārakās and hence proposes to identify Raivataka hills with Baradā hills in Hālār, the western corner of Kathiawad. In the Junagadh Inscription of Skandagupta of 136–138 Gupta era



i.e. 455-458 A.D. the river Palāśinī is said to spring from Ūrjayat which (C.I.I. vol. III. at p. 64) is opposite to vataka

Rājagrha—A (Rājgir, the ancient capital of Magadha) V. 84. 104, Vā. 108. 73 (punyam Rājagrham vanam), Ag. 109. 20, N. II. 47. 74, P. I. 38. 22; vide A. G. pp. 467-468 and I. G. I. vol. XXI. p. 72 for the five hills surrounding it; it was also known as Girivraja and was the capital of Jarāsandha under this name; B (in the Punjab) P. I. 28. 13 (it is a Devīsthāna)

Rājakhadga—(on Sābhramatī) P. VI. 131. 116 and 134

Rājāvāsa—(Viṣṇu shrine established by Paraśurāma in Kāśmīra) NM. 1384, 1447

Rajeśvara—(under Śrīparvata). L. I. 92. 156

Rāmādhivāsa—(śrāddha and dāna most efficacious here) M. 22. 53

Rāmagiryaśrama—G. I. 81. 8, Meghadūta 1 and 12 (Rāmagiri is Rāmtek, 28 miles north-east of Nāgpur in C. P. and two miles from Vākāṭaka capital Nandivardhana)

Rāmagrha—(under Sānandūra) Var. 150. 10

Rāmahrada—(five lakes on the north of Thaneswar) V. 83. 26-40, Anu. 25. 47, Bh. X. 84. 53, P. I. 26. 23-37 (where Paraśurāma filled five lakes with the blood of kṣatriyas killed by him and his pitṛs transformed them into tīrthas at his request), NM. 1387-99 (it is Brahmasaras where Bhārgava Rāma practised tapas after washing his bloodstained hands), Bh. X. 84. 53. Also called Cakra-tīrtha (vide p. 742 above)

Rāmajanma—(to the east of Saraka) P. I. 26. 76

Rāmalinga—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 113

Rāmasaras—(under Sānandūra) Var. 150. 14-18 (one krośa in extent)

Rāmatīrtha—A (under Gayā) Vā. 108. 16-18, M. 22. 70 (anantam śrāddha-dānayoḥ), Ag. 116. 13; B (in Śūrpāraka) V. 85. 43, Śal. 49. 7 (where Bhārgava Rāma gave the earth as dakṣiṇā to Kaśyapa in Vājapeya and Aśvamedha sacrifices). Vide Usavādāta's Nasik inscription recounting the gifts he made at Rāmatīrtha in Śorpāraka in Bom. G. vol. 16 p. 570; C (under the Ganges) N. II. 40. 85; D (on Gomatī) V. 84. 73-74, P. I. 32. 37; E (under Go.) B. 123. 1; F (under Mahendra) P. I. 39. 14

Rambhālinga—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 105

Rambheśvara-līnga—(under Sarasvatī) Vām. 46. 39.

Rāmeśvara—A (one of the twelve Jyotir-līngas, said to have been established by Rāma himself) M. 22. 50, K. II. 30. 23 (bath at R. saves from sin of brahmahatyā), G. I. 81. 9. Vide T. Sp. 47 which quotes passages from Vi., K. and Ag. It is situated on the island of Pāmban. It is one of the most venerated shrines in the whole of India. Vide I. G. I. vol. XXI pp. 173-175 for a brief description of the great temple; B (under Śrīparvata) L. I. 92. 149 (established by Viṣṇu himself).

Ratneśvara-līnga—(under VS) SK. IV. 33. 165

Rantuka—(one boundary of Kurukṣetra) Vām. 22. 51 and 33. 2. Vide p. 683 n 1551 above

Rantukāśrama—(on Sarasvatī) Vām. 42. 5

Rasā—(a river) Rg. V. 53. 9, X. 75. 6. It is difficult to identify it. It appears to have fallen into the Indus. But from Rg. 108. 1 (katham Rasāya atarah payāsi) in which the Panis ask Sarāma how she crossed the waters of Rasā, it

- appears to be a mythical river. It is identified with Panjkora by E. Thomas in JRAS. vol. 15 p. 361 (n. s.)
- Rathacaitraka—(a tīrtha) P VI. 129. 9
- Rathaspā—(r.) It was included in the Pāraskarādigaṇa (Pān. VI. I. 157). The Mbh. (vol. III p. 96) mentions 'Rathaspā nadī.' In Mb. (Vanaparva 170. 20) a river Rathasthā is mentioned between Gaṅgā, Yamunā and Sarasvatī on the one hand and before Sarayū and Gomatī on the other. Rathākhyā r. is mentioned in Br. S. 16. 15. Vide Ādi 170. 20.
- Rāvaṇeśvaratīrtha—A (under Narmadā) M. 191. 26; B (under VS) L. q. by T. K p. 98.
- Ravistava—(under Narmadā) P. I. 18. 19
- Reṇukāsthāna—(one of the Devīsthānas) Devī-Bh. VII. 38.5 (probably at Paraśurāma, in the Ratnagiri District.)
- Reṇukāṣṭaka—(under Sarasvatī) Vām. 41. 5
- Reṇukātīrtha—V 82.82, P. I. 24.30 and 27.47. Dey (p. 168) says it is about 16 miles north of Nahan in the Panjab. Nahan is the capital of Sirmur State,
- Retodaka—(under Kedāra) Devīpurāṇa q. by T.K p. 230
- Revā—(Narmadā). Vide pp. 703–707 above
- Revanteśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 96
- Revatī-saṅgama—(under Go.) B. 121. 1 and 22
- Rkṣa or Rkṣavat—('abounding in bears', one of the seven main mountain ranges of Bharatavarṣa) Vā 45. 99–101 and 95.31, M. 114.17, B. 27. 32, Var. 85 (prose). Rivers like Śoṇa, Narmadā, Mahānadī are said to rise from it. Hence it is the eastern part of Vindhya from Bengal to the sources of Narmadā and Śoṇa. Rkṣavat is mentioned in the Nasik cave Inscription No. 2 (Bom. G. vol. 16 p. 550 as विन्ध्यवत् i. e. विन्ध्य-ऋक्षवत्. It is the Ouxention of Ptolemy (p. 76). Wilson (vol. II. p. 128) holds that Rkṣa is the mountain of Gondawana. There is great difficulty in identification, since the same rivers that are said to rise in Rkṣa in M and V are said to rise from Vindhya in Mār. 54. 24–25.
- Rṇamocana or Rṇapramocana—A (under Kurukṣetra) Vām. 41.6. Vide A.S.R. of India, vol. XIV p. 76 (which says that it is situated to the south of Kapālamocanatīrtha on the Sarasvatī); B (near Prayāga) M. 22. 67 (śrāddha gives inexhaustible results), 107. 20; C (under Go.) B 99. 1; D (a sub-tīrtha under Āmalakagrāma) Nr. 66. 28 q. by T. K p. 255; E (under VS) SK. IV. 33. 117
- Rṇamokṣa—(under Gayā) N II. 47. 79, Ag. 116. 8
- Rṇāntakūpa P. I. 26. 92
- Rṇatīrtha—(under Narmadā) M. 191. 27, K II. 41. 19 and 29.
- Rodhasvatī—(r.) Bh. V. 19. 18
- Rohitaka (m.) S. 32. 4
- Rṣabha—(m. in Pāṇḍya country) V. 85. 21, Bh. V. 19. 16, X. 79. 15, M. 121. 72 and 163. 78. Dey p. 119 suggests that it is the Palni hills in Madurā
- Rṣabhā—(r. rising in Vindhya) M. 114. 27
- Rṣabhadvīpa—V. 84. 160, P I. 38 67
- Rṣabhatīrtha—A (under VS) K. I. 35. 3, P. I. 37. 3; B (in Kosālā i. e. Dakṣiṇa-Kosālā); vide the Guṇji Rock Inscription of Kumāravaradatta read by M. M. Prof. Mirashi in E. I. vol. 27. p. 48 where it is recorded that at Rṣabhatīrtha of the Bhagavat (probably meaning Śiva) an amātya of the king made a grant of two thousand cows to brāhmaṇas. Prof. Mirashi points out that Guṇji is a small village 14 miles north-west of Sakhi

- in the Chhatisgarh Division of C.P., that at the foot of a hill near that village there is a kunda (pool) called Daman Dahrā, that the record is engraved on a rock on one side on this pool, that not many miles from Guñji inscriptions of centuries before and after the Christian era have been found and that the Guñji Inscription is to be assigned to the 1st century A. D. Vanaparva 85. 10 states that the pilgrim who fasts for three days at Rṣabhatirtha secures the rewards of Vājapeyayajña. Vide V. 85, 10, P. I. 39. 10
- Rṣabhañjanakatirtha or Uṣātirtha—(under Mathurā) Var. q. by T. K. p. 191
- Rṣikā—(r. from m. Suktimat) Vā 45. 107.
- Rṣikanyā—(under Narmadā) M. 194. 14
- Rṣikulyā—(r.) V 84. 49, P. I. 32. 12, M. 114. 31, B. 27. 37, N. II. 60. 30 (rising from Mahendra m.). Vā 45. 106 reads 'Rtukulyā. It is the river of Ganjam, acc. to A. G. p. 516. The famous Jaugada fort in the midst of which on a huge granite mass thirteen edicts of Aśoka are inscribed is on this river.
- Rṣisaṅghesvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 54
- Rṣisattra—(under Go.) B. 173. 1
- Rṣyamūka or Rṣyamūke—(m.) Rām. III. 72. 12, III. 75. 7 and 25 (on the borders of lake Pampā), Bh. V. 19. 16, V. 280. 9, V. 147. 30 (on which Sugrīva resided), 279. 44 (near Pampā lake). Vide Pargiter (p. 289 note) for identification which is rather vague.
- Rṣitirtha—A (under Narmadā) M. 191. 22 and 193. 13 (sage Tṛṇabindu became free from curse here), K. II. 41. 15, P. I. 18. 22; B (under Mathurā) Var. 152. 60
- Rṣyaśiṅgesvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 115
- Rṣyavanta or Rṣya—(m.) M. 114. 26, Vā. 45. 101, B. 27. 32
- Rucikesvaraka—L. I. 92. 167
- Rudragayā—(near Kolhapur) P. VI. 176. 41
- Rudrakanyā—(under Narmadā) P. I. 20. 76
- Rudrakara—(under Kurukṣetra) Vām. 46. 11
- Rudrakarṇa—(under VS) M. 181. 25
- Rudrakarṇahrada—(under VS) P. I. 37. 15
- Rudrakoti—A (under Kurukṣetra and Sarasvatī) V. 82. 111-124, Vām. 46. 51, P. I. 25. 25-30, K. II. 36. 1-8 (where Hara assumed a crore of Rudra forms for the competing sages); B (under VS) M. 181. 25; C (under Narmadā) P. I. 13. 12, V. 17. 103, M. 186. 16-17
- Rudramahālaya—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 63, Devala q. by T. K. p. 250
- Rudramahālayatirtha—(under Sābhramatī) P. VI. 139. 1
- Rudrapada—A (under Gayā) Vā. 111. 64-67, Ag. 115. 48; B (under Kurukṣetra) P. I. 26. 94
- Rudraprayāga—on confluence of the Mandākinī and Alakanandā in Garhwal district (I. G. I. vol. XXI p. 338)
- Rudrāvarta—(after Sugandhā) V. 84. 37
- Rudravāsa—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 62
- Rukminīkunda or Rukmikuṇḍa—(under Gayā) Vā 108. 57, Ag. 116. 5
- Rūpadhārā—(Viṣṇu's form on Irāvati) Vām. 90. 5
- Rurukhaṇḍa—(under Sālāgrāma) Var. 145. 105; chap. 146 explains why it is so called.
- S
- Sabarītirtha—(on Go.) P. VI. 269. 277-78
- Sābhramatī—(modern Sābarmatī river that rises in the Mewar hills and falls into the gulf of Cambay) The original of Sābarmatī is given as Svabhṛavatī in I. G. I. vol. XXI p. 344.

Vide P. VI.131. Up to chap. 170 of P. various sub-tīrthas of the river are described at great length. Verses 2-6 of chap. 133 speak of seven streams of it, viz. Sābhramatī, Seṭikā (Śvetakā), Bakulā, Hiraṇmayī, Hastimatī (modern Hathimati) Vetravatī (modern Vātrak) and Bhadrāmukhī Sābhramatī-sāgara-saṅgama — P. VI. 166. 1

Sacīśvara-linga—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 105

Saḍaṅgula—(Sthāna of a nāga in Kāśmīra) NM. 1133-1140

Sadānīrā—(r.) Śat. Br. I. 4.1, 17 states 'even now this river is a boundary of Kosalas (Oudh) and Videhas. This river came rushing from the northern mountain and though all other rivers were burnt up, this was not burnt'. Sāyaṇa explains Sadānīrā as Karatoyā. Bhī. (9. 24 and 35) keeps the two distinct. S. 20. 27 indicates that it was between the Gaṇḍakī and Sarayū, while B. (27. 28-29) states that it rises from Pāriyātra m. Vā. 45. 100 states that Karatoyā comes from Rkṣa range. Pargiter (Mār. chap. 57 p. 294) says that it is the Raptī. The Amarakośa regards Sadānīrā and Karatoyā as synonyms

Sagareśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K p. 51

Sāhasrakatīrtha—V. 83. 158, P I. 27. 46 (same words in both)

Sahasrākṣa—M. 22. 52 (dāna most efficacious here)

Sahasrakuṇḍa—(under Go.) B. 154. 1, q. by T.S p. 59

Sahya or Sahyādri—(one of the seven main mountains of Bharatavarṣa) B. 161. 2, M. 13. 40, Br. III. 56. 22, Ag. 109. 21

Sabyāmalaka—Vide Āmalaka

Sahyāranya—Devīpurāṇa q. by T. K. p. 244

Saileśvara—(under VS) L. I. 92. 86, Var. 216 23, N. II. 50. 57, SK. IV. 33. 135

Saileśvarāśrama—Var. 215. 57 and 83-84

Sailoda—(lake at the foot of m. Aruṇa) Vā. 47. 20, Br. II. 18. 21-23


Sailodā—(r. which springs from Sailoda lake) Vā. 47. 21, Br. II. 18. 22.

Vide Dey p. 172 for identification

Saindhavaranya—(where Cyavana resided with Sukanyā) V. 125. 13, Vām. q. by T.K. p. 239. V. 89. 15 speaks of S. as being in the west

Sākambharī—A (Sāmbhara salt lake in Western Rajputana on the borders of the Jaipur and Jodhpur States) V. Dh. S. 85. 21; in an inscription of Cāhamāna Vigharāja dated Vikrama era 1030 (973-74 A. D.) Sākambharī is mentioned (E. I. vol. II, p. 116 at p. 124). Vide I. G. I. XXII pp. 19-20 for legends about it. Near the south-eastern extremity of the lake there is Sāmbhar town which is an ancient one and was once the capital of Chauhān Rājputs; B (in Kumaon on the road from Haridvāra to Kedāra) V. 84. 13, P. I. 28. 14-16 (a Devīsthāna, where Devī subsisted on vegetables alone for 1000 years)

Sāketa—(same as Ayodhyā). It is the Sāgeda of Ptolemy. Vide Br. III. 54. 54. The Mbh. (vol. I, p. 281 on Pān. I. 3. 25) has 'this road leads to Sāketa' and vol. II. p. 119 (on Pān. III. 2. 111) 'arunad-Yavanaḥ Sāketam' (the Yavana besieged Sāketa). The Yavana referred to is deemed to be Menander. The Suttanipāta (SBE. vol. X part 2 p. 188) mentions it as existing in the time of Buddha. Fa Hien (about 400 A.D.) refers to it as 'Sha-chi' and Hiouen Thsang as Visākha. Vide A.G. pp. 401-402. The Raghuvamśa (XIII. 79, XIV. 32, XV. 38) treats Sāketa and Ayodhyā

- as synonyms). The *Kāśikā* on Pān. V. 1. 116 cites 'Pāṭaliputravat Sākete parikhā'. This shows that in the 7th century Sāketa was a flourishing town with a wide ditch. A. C. (p. 182) notes that Sāketa, Kośalā and Ayodhyā are synonyms (verse 975)
- Sakrarudra—(three *krośas* from Kokā-mukha) Var. 140. 65
- Sakrasaras—(under Sānandūra) Var. 150. 33
- Sakratīrtha—**A** (on the south bank of Narmadā) M. 22. 73, K. II. 41. 11-12, P. I. 24. 29; **B** (under Kubjā-mraka) Var. 126. 81
- Sakrāvarta—V. 84. 29, P. I. 28. 29
- Sakreśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 75
- Sālagrāma—(a sacred place near the source of the Gaṇḍakī river) V. 84. 123-128, Vi. II. 1. 24, II. 13. 4 (king Bharata, a yogin, and a devotee of Vāsudeva resided there), M. 13. 33 (Umā was called Mahā-devī in Sālagrāma), 22. 62, P. I. 38. 41, Var. 144. 3 and 14 (all stones there are to be worshipped, particularly those marked with *cakra*); verse 29 says 'the Sālagrāma hill is Viṣṇu'; v. 145 says it is also called 'Devāṭa', that it is twelve yojanas in extent (v. 159). The sacred stones called Sālagrāma and worshipped as Viṣṇu are found in the bed of the Gaṇḍakī towards its source. It was also called Pulahāśrama (Vi. II. 1. 29). T. K. (pp. 219-221) quotes verses of Var. and V. 84. 123-128
- Sāligrāma—(same as above) K. II. 35. 37, Nr. 64. 22-26 (Punḍarīka came to this Mahākṣetra)
- Sālagrāmagiri—Var. 144. 13 and 29
- Sālakāṭaṅkaṭeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 48
- Sālisūrya—V. 83. 107, P. I. 26. 100 (a tīrtha probably established by Sālihotra)
- Sālūkinī—(under Kurukṣetra) V. 83. 13. The Mbh. (vol. I. p. 474 on Vārtika 2 to Pān. II. 4. 7) speaks of Sālūkinī as a village)
- Sālvikinī—(probably the same as above) P. I. 26. 11
- Sāmalanātha—(same as Śyāmalanātha) M. 22. 42, P. V. 11. 35. Dey p. 200 identifies with Sāmālji in Mahī kāṇthā Agency.
- Samaṅgā—(a r. also called Madhuvilā) V. 134. 39-40, V. 135. 2 (where Indra was freed from the sin of Vṛtravadha). Samaṅgā is so called because it makes all limbs as they should be. Aṣṭāvakra's limbs became straight after a bath in it.
- Samantapañcaka—(same as Kurukṣetra) Ādi. 2. 1-5 (five pools of kṣatriya blood that were transformed into holy pools of water), Śal. 37. 45, 44. 52, 53. 1-2 (the northern Vedī of Brahmā), P. IV. 7. 74 (written as Syamanta—), Br. III. 47. 11 and 14. Vide pp. 682-83 above. Vām. 22. 20 (printed as Syamanta—), 51-55 (lake is called Sannihita and it is half a yojana all round, but Vām. 22. 16 says it is five yojanas)
- Samasrotah—(under Mandāra) Var. 143. 24-26
- Sāmbapura—**A** (under Mathurā) Var. 177. 55 (also called Kuleśvara); **B** (on the banks of Candrabhāgā) Bhav., Brahma 140. 3. It is modern Multan
- Sāmbhalagrāma—B. 213. 164 (Kalkin Viṣṇuśaśas will be born here to destroy mleccas), P. VI. 269. 10-12 (speaks of Sāmbhalagrāma), G. I. 81. 6, Bh. XII. 2. 18. Vā. 98. 104-109, M. 144. 51, Br. II. 31. 76, Vi. IV. 24. 98 speak of the future exploits of Kalkin or Pramati (but all don't mention Sāmbhalagrāma). The I. G. I. vol. XXII p. 18 identifies it with the town Sambhal in the Moradabad District,  many

- ancient mounds, temples and sacred spots exist in the neighbourhood.
- Sammūrtika—(a tīrtha in VS) P. I. 37. 6
- Sampīṭhaka—(under Mathurā) Var. 157. 37
- Samsāramocana—(śrāddha here yields inexhaustible results) M. 22. 67
- Sāmudraka—(near Brahmāvarta) V. 84. 41
- Samudrakūpa—(under Prayāga) M. 106. 30
- Sāmudratīrtha—(under Go.) B. 172. 1-20, about ten verses of which are q. by T.S pp. 63-64 (though with variant readings)
- Samudreśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 105
- Samvartaka—(under VS) K. I. 35. 6
- Samvartavāpī—V. 85. 31, P. I. 39. 29 (same verse in both)
- Samvarteśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 99
- Samvidyatīrtha—V. 85. 1, P. I. 39. 1
- Samyamana—(under Mathurā) Var. 153. 3
- Śanaīścaresvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 67
- Sanaka—Yama q. by T.K. p. 248
- Sanakesvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 67
- Sanandesvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 67
- Sānandūra—Var. 150. 5 ff. Its exact location cannot be stated. It is between the southern sea and Malaya. An image of Viṣṇu was established there, some saying that it was made of iron, others saying of copper, lead or stone and so on. Dey does not notice it
- Sanatkumāresvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 67
- Sandhyā—A (r. in Kāśmīra) NM. 1471, R. I. 33 and Stein's note. Vide Trisandhyā; B (river Sindh in Malwa, which falls into the Yamunā) S. 9. 23, P. I. 39. 1; C (another r., location uncertain) V. 84. 52, P. I. 32. 16
- Sandhyāvaṭa—(under Prayāga) M. 106. 43
- Śāṇḍilī—(r. in Kāśmīra) NM. 1445
- Śāṇḍilī—Madhumatī—saṅgama—NM. 1446
- Śāṇḍilyeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 68
- Saṅgamana—(under Dvārakā) Var. 149. 41
- Saṅgamanagara—(under Dvārakā) Var. q. by T.K. p. 226
- Saṅgameśvara—A (under VS) N. II. 50. 63-64; B (at confluence of Sābhramatī and Hastimatī) P. VI. 138, 1; C (on the south bank of Narmadā) M. 191. 74, K. II. 41. 36, P. I. 18. 53; D (at confluence of Gaṅgā and Varuṇā) L. I. 92. 88
- Śaṅkha-hrada—(under Go.) B. 156. 1
- Śaṅkha-likhiteśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 93
- Śaṅkha-prabha—(under Śālagrāma) Var. 145. 48
- Śaṅkhatīrtha—A (on Sarasvatī) Śal. 35. 87; B (under Narmadā) K. II. 42. 17 (Śaṅkhi—); C (under Āmalaka-grāma) Nr. 66. 23
- Śaṅkhiṇī-tīrtha—(under Kurukṣetra) V. 83. 51
- Saṅkhoddhāra—(an island situated at south-western extremity of the gulf of Cutch) Bh. XI. 30. 6 (Kṛṣṇa directed that women, children and old men should go to this, when terrible portents were seen in Dvārakā) M. 13. 48, 22. 69 (śrāddha is *ananta* here). It is a very sacred place, particularly for Vaiṣṇavas. Vide I. G. I. vol. 8. p. 18
- Śaṅkukarna—(under VS) M. 181. 27, K. I. 31. 48, P. I. 24. 18
- Śaṅkukarneśvara—(a liṅga on the southern boundary of VS) K. I. 31. 48, L. I. 92. 135, N. II. 48. 19-20
- Saṅkunīkā—Vām. q. by T.K. p. 36

Sannihitā—(a tract more extensive than Kurukṣetra, but including it) Br. III. 13. 68 (pumsām Sannihitāyām tu Kurukṣetre viśeṣataḥ | arcayitvā pitṛmś-tatra sa putrast-vanṛṇo bhavet). TP. p. 466 reads 'Sannihata', states it is a lake eight krosās in extent and that there are four lakes called Sannihata, Sannihatyā, Sānnihatya and Sannihatā.

Sannihatī—(another name of Kurukṣetra, according to several works) V. 83. 190-195 (Nīlakaṇṭha explains that Sannihatī is another name of Kurukṣetra). Verse 195 derives as 'tīrtha-sannihanād-eva Sannihatyeti viśrutā' i. e. all tīrthas gather together here every month on Amāvāsyā; P.I. 27. 77-78 (same verses as in V), Vām. 41. 9 and 45. 29, Ag. 109. 15 (employs the word Sannihitī 'Sarasvatyām Sannihityām snān-akṛd-brahmalokabhāk')

Sannihatya-saras — (in Kurukṣetra) Vām. 47. 56, 48. 23, 49. 6 (on the north bank of Sarasvatī and near Dvaitavana)

Sannīti—(in Kurukṣetra) NM. 168-169 (seems to be the same as Sannihatī above)

Sāntesvara—(under VS) L. q by T. K. p. 66

Saptacarutīrtha—see 'Vaḍavā'

Saptadhāra—(under Sābhramatī) P VI. 136. 16 (same as Saptasārasvata)

Saptagaṅga—V. 84. 29, Anu. 25. 16, P I. 28-29 (same verse as in V). The seven Gaṅgās are Gaṅgā, Godāvarī, Kāverī, Tāmaparnī, Sindhu, Sarayū and Narmadā. Acc. to NM, 720 the seven Gaṅgās are Bhāgīrathī, Pāvanī, Hrādinī, Hlādinī, Sītā, Sindhu, Vaṅkṣu.

Saptagodāvara—V. 85. 44, Vā. 77. 19, M. 22. 78, Bh. X. 79. 12, P. I. 39. 41, IV. 108. 39, Br. III. 13. 19, SK. IV. 6. 23. See Khairha plate of king Yaśaḥkarna in Kalacuri year 823

(i. e. 1071-2 A.D) in E. I. vol. XII. p. 205 ff. where in verse 23 the seven streams are named; in the Godāvarī District Gazetteer p. 6 the seven mouths of the Godāvarī are said to be sacred to seven sages viz. Kāśyapa, Atri, Gautama, Bharadvāja, Viśvāmitra, Jamadagni, Vasiṣṭha. R. VIII. 3449 speaks of Godāvarī as falling into the sea with seven mouths.

Saptanada—Br. III. 13. 58 (deyam Saptanade śrāddham Mānase vā viśeṣataḥ).

Saptakoṭīśvara—T. P. p. 557 quoting SK. VII.

Saptapuṣkarinī—(seven springs at Thid in Kāśmīra) SM. p. 160. It is also called 'Stanakuṇḍa' in HC. IV. 45. Ain. A. (vol. II p. 361) refers to it: 'In the village of Thid is a delightful spot where seven springs unite'.

Saptārṣa—V. Dh. S. 85. 39 (śrāddha very efficacious at it). Dr. Jolly identifies it with Sātārā.

Saptarṣikuṇḍa (under Lohārgala) Var. 151. 46 (where seven dhārās fall from Himavat).

Saptasāgara-līnga—(under VS) SK. IV. 33. 136.

Saptasāmudraka—(under Kubjāmraka) Var. 126. 91.

Saptasāmudraka-kūpa (under Mathurā) Var. 157. 12

Saptasārasvata—(in Kurukṣetra) where sage Maṅkanaka pierced his hand with the tips of kuśa grass when vegetable fluid began to flow from it and he danced with joy. V 83. 115, Śal. 38. 4-31 (where seven names, for which p. 686 above may be referred to, are mentioned), K. II. 35. 44-76 (story of Maṅkanaka), P. I. 27. 4 ff. (follows V. 83). Vām. 38. 22-23 (story of Maṅkanaka), N. II. 65. 101-102 (seven rivers are named).

- Saptavatī—(r.) Bh. V. 19. 18.
- Sarabhaṅgakunḍa (under Lohārgala)
Var. 151. 49.
- Sarabhaṅgāśrama—V 85. 42 and 90. 9,
Rām. III. 5.3, P. I. 39. 39, Raghu-
vaṁśa XIII. 145 (near Sutikṣṇā-
śrama).
- Sarabindu—(under Āmalakagrāma)
Nr. 66. 34
- Sārādātīrtha—(in Kāśmīra) M. 22. 74,
R. I. 37. Foremost among tīrthas
of Kāśmīra is modern Sardi on the
right bank of river Kisangaṅgā. In
front of the temple sacred Madhu-
matī falls into Kisangaṅgā. Vide
SM. p. 206. Ain. A. (vol. II. pp.
365-66) says that the temple of
Sārādā dedicated to Durgā is on the
bank of the Padmatī river which
comes from Dardu country and that
on every 8th day of the bright half
of a month it begins to shake.
- Saraka—(under Kurukṣetra) V. 83.
75-76, P. I. 26. 76, N. II. 65. 62-63.
Vide p 684 above
- Sarastamba—(near Devadāruvana),
Anu. 25. 28
- Sārasvata—A (śrāddha very efficacious
here) M. 22. 63; B (under VS) K. I.
35. 12, P. I. 37. 15
- Sārasvata—līṅga (under VS) SK IV.
33. 134
- Sārasvatatīrtha—Sal. 50 (story of
Asita Devala and Jaigīṣavya), 51
(birth of Sārasvata from Sarasvatī,
who taught the Vedas to sages in a
drought for twelve years)
- Sarasvatī—(modern Sarsuti). A—The
river starts from Brahmasaras, acc. to
Śalya 51. 19, from Badarikāśrama
acc. to Vām. 2.42-43 and from Plakṣa
tree acc. to Vām. 32. 3-4, P. V. 18.
159-160 (say that Sarasvatī was
asked to cast the Vādava fire into the
sea in the west). This is probably an
allusion to volcanic action whereby
Sarasvatī disappeared. Vām. 3. 8
says that as Saṅkara guilty of
Brahmabatyā plunged into it, it dis-
appeared, while elsewhere (e g. in
V. 130. 3-4) it is said that it dis-
appeared through fear of the touch
of śūdras, Niṣādas and Ābhīras and
Anu. (155. 25-27) states that Saras-
vatī went to Marudeśa owing to curse
by Utathya and became dry and un-
holy. After disappearing it becomes
visible at Camasodbheda, Śivodbheda
and Nāgodbheda. The Sarasvatī
in Kurukṣetra was called prācī
Sarasvatī (P. V. 18. 181-182).
See Dey pp. 180-181 for several
Sarasvatīs. V 130. 1-2 state that
those who die on the Sarasvatī go
to heaven and this was the blessing
conferred by Dakṣa when he per-
formed a sacrifice there. Vide
Oldham's paper in JRAS for 1893
pp. 49-76; B—There is another holy
river of the same name rising in the
south-west end of Aravali hills and
flowing south-west through the dis-
tricts of Palanpur, Mahikantha and
Baroda and past the ancient cities of
Anhilvād and Siddhapur and falling
into the lesser Runn of Cutch. Vide
under Prabhāsa.
- Sarasvatī-Arunā-saṅgama—V. 83. 151,
K II. 30. 22, Śal. 43. 31 and chap.
44.
- Sarasvatīpatana—(under Mathurā) Var.
154. 20.
- Sarasvatī-sāgara-saṅgama—V. 82. 60,
P. I. 24. 9, Vām. 84. 29.
- Śarāvati—(Probably Rāpti in Oudh)
Bhī. 9.20; Pāṇ. VI.3.120 (Śarādīnām
ca) knew the river Śarāvati; Kṣīra-
svāmin (in com. on Amara 'Śarāva-
tyāstu yogyadvahē') quotes a verse
'prāgudañcau vibhajate haṁsaḥ kṣīro-
dake yathā | viduṣāṁ śabdāsiddh-
yartham sā naḥ pātu Śarāvati ||'. Dr.
Agrawala in (J.U.P.H.R.S. vol. 16
p. 15 surmises that it is the Ghag-
ghar flowing through Ambala dis-
trict. I have grave doubts about

this. It is possible that when the Sarasvatī became dried and only a marshy bed was left it was called Śarāvati, but that in the times of the Amarakośa, Śarāvati is probably the river Śarāvati which falls into the sea near Honavar (North Kanara District) on which are the famous Gersappa falls. In the Raghuvamśa (XV. 97) Śarāvati is said to have been the capital of Lava, son of Rāma.

Sarayū—(r.) Rg. IV. 30. 18, V. 33. 9, X. 64. 9 (Sarasvatī, Sarayu and Sindhu are mentioned together). In all these places the word is Sarayu, while in classical Sanskrit it is Sarayū or Sarayū (M. 22. 19, Vā 45. 94, N II. 75. 71, Raghuvamśa 15. 95 and 100). M. 121. 16-17 and Br. II. 18. 70 show that Sarayū springs from the Mānasa lake situated at the foot of the Vaidyutagiri. Ayodhyā was situated on the Sarayū (Rām. II. 49. 15). Sarayū rises from Himālaya (Vā 45. 94, M. 114. 21). According to Pāṇ. VI. 4. 174 (Dāṇḍi-nāyana—) the water of Sarayū was called Sārava (Kāśikā says 'Sarayvām bhavam sāravam udakam'). In the Cullavagga (SBE vol. XX p. 302) it is one of the five great rivers of India and in 'Questions of Milinda' (SBE vol. 35 p. 171) it is one of ten great rivers, but in both places it is written as Sarabhū. Vide T.P pp. 500, 501 where it is stated that it rises from the left toe of Viṣṇu and is joined by Ghargara. It is the Sarabos of Ptolemy (p. 99). It is also called the Ghogra or Gharghara.

Sārdūla—a Śaivakṣetra, according to Bar. S. III. 122.

Sargabindu—(under Narmadā) K. II. 42. 23.

Sarkarāvartā—(r.) Bh. V. 19. 18.

Sarvahrada—V 85. 39 (uncertain location)

Sarvatīrtha—P. II. 92. 4 and 7 (Prayāga, Puṣkara, Sarvatīrtha and Vārāṇasī) are the four tirthas that remove all sins including *brahma-hatyā*.

Sarvatīrtheśvara—(under VS) SK. IV. 33. 134.

Sarvātmaka—(under Kubjāmraka) Var. 126. 37.

Sarvāyudha—(under Śālāgrāma) Var. 145. 56.

Śaśāṅkeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K p. 97

Śaśayāna—(under Sarasvatī) V. 82. 114-116, P I. 25. 20-23 (same verses in both). Some mss read 'Śaśapāna'.

Śaṣṭīhrada—Anu 25. 36

Śatadru—(Sutlej) same as Śutudrī which see; Ādi. 177. 8-9 (derivation given), M. 22. 12, Bh. V. 19. 18. The Amarakośa gives Śutudrī and Śatadru as synonyms.

Śatakumbhā—(under Sarasvatī) V. 84. 10. P I. 28. 11 (same verse in both).

Śatarudrā—M. 22. 35 (śrāddha here is inexhaustible).

Śatasahasraka—(under Sarasvatī) P. I. 27. 45, Vām 41. 3, V 83. 157 and 84. 74 (Śatasāhasraka).

Śataśṛṅga—(m.) Devala q. by T.K p. 250.

Śātātapeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K p. 92.

Śatikatīrtha—(under Sarasvatī) Vām. 41. 3.

Satyavati—(became river Kauśikī) Vā 91. 88.

Saubhadra—Ādi. 216. 3 (one of the five Nārītīrthas on the southern sea).

Saukarava—(as printed in Var. 137. 7 of the Venkaṭeśvara press edition) is a misreading for Saukaraka. Vide under Sūkaratīrtha.

Śaurpāraka—Br. III. 13. 37 Vide Sūrpāraka.



- Saugandhikagiri—M. 121. 5 (to north-east of Kailāsa)
- Saugandhikavana—V. 84. 4, P I. 28. 5-6 (same verse in both)
- Saumitrisaṅgama—(very fit for śrāddha) M. 22. 53
- Saunakeśvara-kunḍa—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 122
- Sāvāṇīśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 60
- Sāvitrapada—(under Gayā) V. 84. 93. Vide p. 649 above
- Sāvitrī—(r. boundary between modern Ratnagiri and Kolaba Districts). P VI. 113. 28
- Sāvitrīśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 70
- Sāvitritīrtha—(under Narmadā) M. 194. 6, K. II. 42. 19, P I. 21. 6
- Śeṣatīrtha—(under Go.) B 115. 1
- Setu—the supposed bridge (called Adam's Bridge) between Rāmeśvara and Ceylon said to have been built by Rāma with the assistance of Sugrīva and his monkey hosts; Bh. VII. 14. 31, X. 79. 15 (Sāmudrasetu), G. I. 81. 8, N. II. 76 (contains *setu-māhātmya*). Adam's Peak in Ceylon has a famous foot-print which is venerated by Hindus, Buddhists, Christians and Moslems alike. Vide T. P. pp. 557-560 for *māhātmya*
- Setubandha—same as above. Vide T. S. pp. 1-4 and Tīrthaprakāśa pp. 557-560, Rām. VI. 22. 45-53, VI. 126. 15 (etat-tu dr̥syate tīrtham sāgarasya mahātmanah | Setubandha iti khyātam &c), P. V. 35, 62 (says that Setu was built in three days), SK. III Brahmakhaṇḍa, chapters 1-52 on Setu-māhātmya, its subsidiary tīrthas and *Setuyātrākrama*. Vide p. 94 above for visit to Setubandha as an expiation.
- Siddhakeśvara—(one of the eight tīrthas under Virajatīrtha) B. 42, 6
- Siddhapada—(a kṣetra on Sarasvatī) Bh. III. 33. 31
- Siddhapura—(64 miles to north of Ahmedabad) M. 13. 46 (Devī is called Mātā here); what Gayā is for Pitṛs, Siddhapura is for the mother. It is on the Sarasvatī river
- Siddhatīrtha—(under Go.) B. 143. 1
- Siddhavana—M. 22. 53 (śrāddha here most efficacious)
- Siddhavaṭa—A (under Lohārgala) Var. 151. 7; B (under Śrīparvata) L. I. 92, 153
- Siddheśvara—(līṅga on south bank of Narmadā) Vām. 46. 34, P. II. 20. 34.
- Siddheśvara—A (under VS.) M. 32, 43 and 181. 25 q. by T.K. pp. 88, 117 and p. 241; B (under Narmadā) P. I. 18. 100; C (on the south bank of Go.) B. 128. 1
- Siddhikūṭa—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 88
- Sikhitīrtha—(under Narmadā) M. 193. 82, P. I. 20. 78
- Silātīrtha—(under Gayā) Vā. 108. 2
- Silākṣeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 46
- Simha—a Vaiṣṇava-kṣetra acc. to Bār. S. III. 120. Probably the same as Simhāchalam temple of Nṛsimhāvātāra of Viṣṇu about 6 miles north-west of Vizagapattam. Vide I. G. I. vol. XXII. p. 375
- Sindhu—A (the modern Indus, Greek Sinthos) Rg. II. 15. 6 (he made the Sindhu flow northwards), V. 53. 9, VIII. 20. 25 (the medicine that is in Sindhu, in Asiknī and the seas), X. 75. 6. The seven Sindhus (i. e. Indus, five Panjab rivers and Sarasvatī) are mentioned in Rg. II. 12.12, IV. 28. 1, VIII. 24. 27, A. V. VI. 3. 1; Drona 101. 28 (Sindhuṣaṣṭhāḥ samudragāḥ), R I. 57 (Stein's note), NM. 394 (Sindhu is Gaṅgā and Vitastā is Yamunā). Vide for description I. G. I. vol. I. pp. 29-34. It rises in Tibet north of Kailāsa. Sindhu is also the name of the country through which the river flows.

vide Pāṇ. IV. 3. 93. On Pāṇ. IV. 3. 83 (prabhavati) the Kāśikā gives the example 'Dārādī Sindhuḥ' (the river Sindhu rises in Darat). Some mss. of Kāśikā include 'Darat' in Sindhvādigaṇa. Sindhu country is mentioned in Rudradāman's Junāgaḍh Ins; B (a r. rising from Pāriyātra and falling into Yamunā) Vā. 45. 98, M. 114. 23, B. 27. 28. It is the same as Kālisindhu between the Chambal and Betwa Mālatimādhava refers to its confluence with Pārā (Act IV end) and with Madhumatī (Act IX prose passage after verse 3). Padmāvatī, the scene of the drama, was situated on the confluence of Pārā and Sindhu.

Sindhuprabhava—(source of Sindhu) V. 84. 46, P. I. 32. 10 (same verse in both)

Sindhusāgara—Nr. 65. 13 q. by T. K. p. 252

Sindhusāgarasāṅgama—V. 82. 68, Vā. 77. 56, P. I. 24. 16 (same verse as in V)

Sindhūttama—(a lake) V. 82. 79

Siphā—(r.) Rg. I. 104. 3 (in which the two wives of Kuyava met death)

Siprā—(r. from Pāriyātra, flowing past Ujjayinī) M. 22. 24, 114. 24, Vā. 45. 98. Every mile of the river is marked by sacred spots, the reputed haunts of ṛṣis or the scenes of miraculous incidents; the river is said to have sprung from the blood of Viṣṇu and is believed to flow with milk at certain periods. Vide Ain. A. vol. II. p. 196 for this.

Sitā—(a branch of Gaṅgā) Vā. 47. 21 and 39, Bh. V. 17. 5

Sitatīrtha—(under Mathurā) Var. 179. 28

Sitavana—(under Kurukṣetra?) P. I. 26. 55

Śivadhāra—M. 22. 49

Śivahrada—Br. III. 13. 52

Śivakāñcī—(at Conjeeveram in South India) P. VI. 204. 30

Sivanadī—Nr. 65. 23 q. by T. K. p. 253
Sivasarasvatī—a Saivakṣetra acc. to Bār. S. III. 122

Sivodbheda—(where Sarasvatī reappears after disappearing) V. 82. 112, P. I. 25. 19

Skandatīrtha—(under Narmadā) P. I. 18. 49, M. 191. 50

Skandēśvara—(in VS) SK. IV. 33. 125, L. q. by T. K. p. 68

Sleṣmātakavana—(on Himavat) Var. 214. 24-26, 215. 12-13 and 115. Dey. p. 188 says that it is Uttara Gokarṇa two miles to north-east of Paśupatiṇātha in Nepāl. For two Gokarṇas, north and south, vide p. 754 above.

Smaśāna—Avimukta, which see; M. 184. 19

Smaśānastambha—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 54.

Snānakunḍa—(under Mandārā) Var. 143. 18-20

Sodaranāga—(in Kāśmīra) NM 13-14. It is modern village Sudarbal situated on a deep inlet of the Dal lake. Vide R. I. 123-26 and II. 169 and SM p. 164. Stein notes that Sodara is an ancient name of the spring now called Nārān Nāg situated close to temple ruins at Bhūteśvara. NM mentions it in connection with Bhūteśa and Kanakavāhinī and the distance from Bhūteśvara to Śrīnagara is about 32 miles.

Somakunḍa—(under Gayā) Ag. 116. 4.

Somanātha—A (in Saurāṣṭra near Verawal) Ag. 109. 10 (Somanātham Prabhāsakam), P. VI. 176. 37; vide A. G. p. 319 and under Prabhāsa; B (under Gayā) Ag. 116. 23. A popular verse is 'Sarasvatī samudraś-ca Somaḥ somagrabaḥ-tathā darsanam Somanāthasya-sakaraḥ pañca durlabhāḥ'.

Somapada—V 84. 119



Somapāna—M. 22. 62.

Somāśrama—V. 84. 157

Somatīrtha—A (on the banks of Sarasvatī) Vām. 41.4, V. 83. 114, M. 109. 2; B (under Narmadā) M. 191. 30, P. I. 18. 30 and 27. 3, K. II. 41. 47; C (under VS) K. I. 35. 7, P. I. 37. 7 (same verse in both); D (under Go.) B. 105. 1, 119. 1; E (under Mathurā) Var. 154. 18; F (under Kokāmukha) Var. 140. 26-28; G (under Viraja) B. 42. 6; H (under Sūkara) Var. 137. 43 (where Soma secured highest *siddhi*); I (under Sābhramatī) P. VI. 154. 1

Somesā—(under VS) K. I. 35. 9

Somesvara—A (removes all diseases) M. 22. 29, K. II. 35. 20; B (under Sālagrāma) Var. 144. 16-29

Sona—(a *nada*, also called Hiranyavāha, rising in m. Rkṣa in Gondwana according to the Purāṇas and falling into the Ganges some miles from Bankipore) M. 22. 35 (a *nada*), 114. 25, B. 27. 30, Vā. 45. 99, Br. II. 16. 29. It is the Soa of Ptolemy (p. 99) and Sonas of Arrian. It rises near where the Narmadā rises in the Amarakantaka hill. Vide AG pp. 453-454 for its confluence with the Ganges.

Sona-Jyotīrathā-saṅgama—V. 85. 8, P. I. 39. 8, V. Dh. S. 85. 33 (reads Sona-Jyotīśaṅgama, while the com. Vaijayantī notes the v. l. Sona-Jyotīrathā)

Sonaprabheda—(prabhava?) V. 85. 9, P. I. 39. 9

Ṣoṇitapura—(capital of Bāṇāsura, where Aniruddha was kept in confinement for his intrigue with Uśā) B. 206. 1, Harivamśa, Viṣṇuparva 121. 92-93. Dey p. 189 says that it exists under the same name in Kumaon and that several other places claim to be the Ṣoṇitapura of Bāṇāsura. In the Harivamśa it is said that Ṣoṇitapura was 11000

yojanas from Dvārakā. BV. (Kṛṣṇa-janmakhaṇḍa, Uttarārdha, 114. 847) mentions Ṣoṇitapura as capital of Bāṇāsura. A. C. (p. 182) states it was also called Koṭivarṣa (v. 977)

Śrāvastī—(Sāhet-māhet on the Rāpti in Oudh) said to be the capital of Lava in Uttara Kosala. It is 58 miles north of Ayodhyā; Rām. VII. 107. 4-7, Vā. 88. 200 and A. G. p. 409; but some mss. of Raghuvamśa (XV. 97) state that Śrāvastī was the capital of Lava. Vide Marshall's article in JRAS for 1909 pp. 1066-1068 for the reasons for identifying Śrāvastī with Saheth-Maheth and the Saheth Maheth plate of Govindacandra in E. I. vol. XI. p. 20. In JRAS for 1898 pp. 520-531 Vincent Smith disputed the identification of Saheth-Maheth with Śrāvastī and holds that Śrāvastī was near Nepalganj in Nepalese territory. B. 7. 53 says that it was called after Śrāvasta of Ikṣvāku race.

Śrīkṣetra—Jagannātha Purī.

Śrīkuṇḍa—V. 82. 86 (now called Lakṣmīkuṇḍa, in VS) L. q. by. T.K. p. 62

Śrīkuṇḍja—(under Sarasvatī) P. I. 26. 19, V. 83. 108

Śrīmādaka—(the guardian nāga in the south of Kāśmīra) NM 1117

Śrīmukhi—(guhā) L. q. by T.K. p. 60 (under VS).

Śrīnagara—A (capital of Kāśmīra). It has a long history. R. I. 104 states that Aśoka built Śrīnagarī with 96 lakhs of houses. Stein in note on this says that Cunningham (A. G. p. 93) located Śrīnagarī of Aśoka at the site of the present village Pandrethan (Kalhaṇa's Purāṇādhiṣṭhāna) on the right bank of Vitastā three miles above modern Śrīnagar. Pandrethan is at the foot of the Bil Takhta-i-Sulaiman. Pravarasena erected the shrine of Pravaresvara



and Pravarasena II built the new capital in the beginning of the 6th century. Hiouen Thsang speaks of the new city (Pravarapura). Vide Beal's B. R. W. W. vol. I. pp. 96, 148 and 158 and A. G. pp. 95-96. Ain. A. (vol. II. p. 355) states that Koh-i-Sulaiman is to the east of Śrīnagara. Al. (vol. I p. 207) notes that Addiṣṭhan (adhiṣṭhāna the capital of Kāśmīra) is built on both banks of the Zhelum. For the Dal lake close to Śrīnagara and one of the most beautiful spots in the world, vide. I. G. I. vol. XI. pp. 124-125; **B**—a town in Garhwal District on the left bank of the Alakanandā (U. P. Gazetteer vol. 36 p. 200).

Śrīngātakeśvara—(under Śrīparvata) L. I. 92. 155.

Śrīngatīrtha—(under Narmadā) P. I. 21. 31.

Śrīngaverapura—(or Śrīngibera) V. 85. 65, P. I. 39. 61 (same verse in V and P), Rām. II. 113. 22, VI. 126. 49, Ag. 109. 23. Here Rāma crossed the Ganges when going from Ayodhyā into exile. It is modern Srīngaur or Singor on the left bank of the Ganges about 22 miles north-west of Prayāga.

Srpā—(r. rising from Vindhya) Br. II. 16. 32.

Śrīparnī—(dāna most efficacious here) M. 22. 49

Śrīparvata or Śrīsāila—**A** (hill situated in Karnal District on the south side of the Kṛṣṇā river 50 miles from Kṛṣṇā station). There are numerous līngas here including the famous Mallikārjuna (in L. I. 92. 155), one of the twelve Jyotirlingas; many are named in L. I. 92. 147-166. Vide V. 85. 18-20 (Mahādeva with Umā is there), Vā 77. 28, M. 13. 31 (Devī is called Mādhavī here), 181. 28 (one of the eight main Śivasthānas), 188.

79 (one tripura of Bānāsura burnt by Rudra fell here), P. I. 15. 68-69 (same story as in M. 188), Agni 113. 4 (Gauri, assuming the form of Lakṣmī practised penance here). Pargiter (p. 290 n) does not correctly interpret Ag.; K. II. 20. 35 (Śrāddha most efficacious here), II. 37. 13-14 (religious suicide allowed here), P. I. 39. 17, VI. 20. 15 (a great place for yogins and those practising penance). It is a Śāktakṣetra acc. to Bār. S. III. 124. The Mālatīmādhava mentions it several times. Vide E. I. XX. p. 9, E. I. IV. p. 193 (Chikkulla plate of Viṣṇukunḍin Vikramendravarman). In the Nāgārjunikoṇḍa Inscription F of about 3rd century A. D. edited by Dr. Vogel, Śrīparvata is mentioned (E. I. vol. XX p. 1 at p. 23); **B** (a līnga in VS) Ag. 112. 4; **C** (under Narmadā) Ag. 113. 3.

Śrīpatitīrtha—(śrāddha here leads to highest goal) M. 22. 74.

Śrīraṅga—(modern Śrīraṅgam, an island between Kāverī about 2 miles north of Trichinopoly and Coleroon) M. 22. 44 (śrāddha here yields inexhaustible results), Bh. X. 79. 14, P. VI. 280. 19, Bār. S. III. 120 (a Vaiṣṇava-kṣetra). It is mentioned in the Śilappadikāram chap. X. (tr. by Prof. Dikshitar p. 163). Rāmānuja, the founder of the Viśiṣṭādvaita philosophy died here. Vide I. G. I. vol. XXIII. pp. 107-108 for a brief description of the temple of Viṣṇu (called Raṅganāthasvāmin here).

Śrītīrtha—(under VS) V. 83. 46, K. I. 35. 8, P. I. 37. 8.

Stambhatīrtha—(modern Khambayat situated on the gulf of Cambay) K. II. 41. 51, P. I. 18. 93 (both speak of it under Narmadā). **A** Stambhatīrtha is mentioned in T. S. p. 101. Vide I. A. vol. 54, p. 47.

- Stambhākhyatīrtha—(near Mahīsā-gara-saṅgama) SK. I. 2. 3. 27. Probably same as above.
- Stambheśvara—SK. I. 2. 3. 40
- Stanakunḍa—V. 84. 152, Var. 215. 97 (Stanakunḍe Umāyās-tu)
- Sthaleśvara—(a Śivatīrtha) M. 181. 27
- Sthāneśvara—(a līṅga in VS) L. I. 92. 136
- Sthāneśvara—(modern Thaneswar 25 miles south of Ambala) M. 13. 3 (Devī is called Bhavānī here). Vide A. G. pp. 329-332. It was sacked by Mahmud of Gazni in 1014 A. D. In Harṣacarita Bāṇa mentions Sthānviśvara country.
- Sthānutīrtha—(under Sarasvatī where Vasiṣṭha had his āśrama) Śal. 42. 4 (Vasiṣṭha had his āśrama to the east of this tīrtha and Viśvāmitra had his on the west), Vām. 40. 3 (on the north bank of the Sarasvatī), 42. 30 (it has one thousand līṅgas), 49. 6-7 (it is on the lake called Sānnihatya). Vām. chapters 47-49 deal with the mātīrmya of this tīrtha. Dey p. 194 says it is the same as Sthāneśvara.
- Stritīrtha—(under Narmadā) M. 194. 31.
- Stutasvāmin—(a Viṣṇukṣetra on Maṇipūragiri) Var. 148. 8-81. T. K. pp 222-224 quote about twenty verses from Var. 148 without a word of comment. Verses 75-76 explain the name (as the god was *stuta* by other gods and the sages Nārada, Asita and Devala). Dey does not notice it and Prof. Aiyangar does not identify it.
- Subhadra-sindhu-saṅgama P. VI. 129. 25.
- Subhūmika—(a tīrtha on Sarasvatī) Śal. 37. 23 (visited by Balarāma)
- Sucakra—(under Sarasvatī) Vām. 57. 89.
- Suddheśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 122
- Sudina—V. 83. 100.
- Sugandha—(under Sarasvatī) P. I. 32. 1.
- Sugandhā—V. 84. 10, V. Dh. S. 20.10 (according to com. it is a river near Saugandhika m.), P. I. 28. 1 (under Sarasvatī). P and V have same verse.
- Sugrīveśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 51.
- Sūkaratīrtha—(Soron on the west bank of the Ganges between Bareilly and Mathurā (according to A. G. pp. 364-365). Vide I. G. I. vol. 23 pp. 88-89. Var. chapters 137-139; TK pp. 209-212 quote 37 verses from Var. 137 for this tīrtha and from no other source. N. II. 40. 31. and 60. 22 (Acyuta in the form of Varāha appeared here), P. VI. 121. 6-7 (the extent is four yojanas). Some texts read Sūkaratīrtha.
- Sukasya—āśrama V. 85. 42, P. I. 39. 39 (same verse in both)
- Sukeśvara—(on north Gokarna) Var. 173. 9
- Suklatīrtha—(on the north bank of Narmadā about ten miles north-east of Broach) K. II. 41. 67-82, M. 192. 14, SK. I. 2.3.5. Vide p. 706 above for Cāṇakya's association with it; also I. G. I. vol. 23 p. 128 and Bom. G. vol. XI. pp. 568-569 for legend of Cāṇakya's connection; P. I. 19. 2-35 (about Cāṇikya rājarsi having obtained *siddhi* here)
- Sukratīrtha—(on north bank of Go.) B. 95. 1, M. 22. 29
- Sukreśvara—(under VS) K. I. 35. 15, L. I. 92. 93, N. II. 50. 65
- Suktimat—(one of the seven great mountains of India, being a portion of the Vindhya) K. I. 47. 39, Vā. 45. 88 and 107, N. II. 60. 27, Bh. V. 19. 16. Vide Dr. B. C. Law on 'Mountains and rivers of India' in Department of Letters, Calcutta University, vol 28 pp. 20-21 for different identifications. It is the least

known of the seven principal mountains, and the rivers that flow from it are few and their names are mutilated in the texts. Vide Dr. Ray Chaudhari's 'Studies' etc. pp. 113-120 for discussion and Dr. B. C. Law on 'Mountains and Rivers of India' in Journal of Department of Letters, Calcutta University, vol. 28 pp 20-21 for different identifications.

Suktimatī—(r. obstructed by m. Kolāhala in Cedi) Bhī. 9. 35. Vide Dey p. 196 for different identifications. B. 27.32 and M. 114. 101 say that it rises in Rkṣa mountain, while Mār. 57. 23 says it flows from Vindhya

Sukumārī—(r. rising from Suktimat m.) Vā. 45. 107

Sūlabheda—(under Narmadā) M. 191. 3, K. II. 41. 12-14, P I. 18. 3

Sūlaghātā—(in Kāśmīra) Vide under Nilakūṇḍa

Sūleśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T K. p. 52

Sumantu-līṅga—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 97

Sunandā—(r.) Bh. VIII. 1. 8

Sundarikā—(r.) P I. 32. 21. It is one of the seven holy rivers quoted in a Pāli couplet (SBE, vol. X, part 2, p. 74)

Sundarikāhrada—Anu. 25. 21

Sundarikātīrtha—V. 84. 57, Anu. 25. 21 (after Devikā), Var. 215. 104

Sundika—(tīrtha in Kāśmīra) NM. 1459

Sunīla—(under VS) P. I. 37. 3

Suparnā—(a tributary of Go.) B. 100.1

Supārśva—P. VI. 129. 16

Suprayogā—(one of the rivers that are mothers of fires) V. 222. 253, Mār. 54. 26, Vā. 45. 104. It cannot be identified, though it is said that it rises in Sahya (Br. II. 16. 35). Some identify it with the Pennar. Vide E. I. vol. 27 p. 273

Surabhivana—(in the Himālaya on river Śilodā) Br. II. 18. 23

Surabhikeśvara—(under Narmadā) P I. 18. 36

Surasā—(r.) Vi. II. 3. 11 (rises from Vindhya), Br. II. 16. 29 (rising from Rkṣavat), Bh. V. 19. 18

Sureśvarī-kṣetra—(present village of Isabar in Kāśmīra, two miles north of Dal lake shore) R. V. 37, NM. 1532, S. M. p. 161. The chief attraction here is a sacred spring known as Gupta-Gaṅgā

Śūrpārakatīrtha—(modern Sopara near Bassein) V. 85. 43 (resorted to by Paraśurāma), 88. 12 (in it was the Vēdi of Jamadagni), 118. 8-10, Śānti 49. 67 (reclaimed from the sea by Jamadagni's son Paraśurāma), Anu. 25. 50, Harivaṁśa, Viṣṇuparva 39. 29-31 (in Aparānta Śūrpāraka city was five hundred *dhanus* long and 500 *iṣus* broad and was established by discharging an arrow by Paraśurāma), Br. III. 58. 17-18 and 32-33 (the strip taken by Paraśurāma from the sea is 400 *yojanas* from north to south), Bh. X. 79. 20, B. 27. 58 (Śūrpāraka is mentioned as the first of the Aparānta countries). It is mentioned as 'Śōrpāraka' in Nasik Inscription No. 10 q. in Bom. G. vol. 16 on p. 569. The Nāṇāghāt Ins. No. 9 (A S. W. I. vol. V. p. 64) mentions a Govindadāsa Sopārāyaka. There is a Suppāraka-jātaka (No. 463, vol. IV p. 86 ed. by Cowell), where we are told of the seaport called Bharukaccha and a kingdom named Bharu. It is probable that the Ophir of the Old Testament is Śūrpāraka, though some scholars dispute this. A. G. (pp. 497-499 and 561-562) argues that Ophir or Sophir (in the Septuagint translation of the Bible) is the country of *Sanvira* and not Śūrpāraka as many scholars hold. Ptolemy mentions it as

- Soupara. Some eminent scholars hold that Ophir is Abiria (i. e. Ābhīras) of Ptolemy (p. 140). Vide JRAS for 1898 pp. 253 ff. for discussion and JBBRAS vol. 15 p. 273 for a long note on Sūrpāraka.
- Sūryatīrtha—A (under VS) V. 83. 48, K. I. 35. 7, P. I. 37. 7; B (under Mathurā) Var. 152.50, 156. 12 (where Bali, son of Virocana, propitiated the Sun)
- Susartu—(r., tributary of the Indus on the west of it) Rg. X. 75. 6. Keith does not know which tributary of of the Indus it was.
- Suṣkanadī—(under VS)—same as Asi, M. 183. 62, L. q. by T. K. p. 118.
- Suṣkeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 118.
- Suṣomā—(r) Rg. VIII. 64. 11. In Rg. X. 75. 5 also it is probably the name of some river, though the Nir. IX. 26 takes it to be Sindhu; Bh. V. 19. 18; Stein in Dr. R. G. Bhandarkar Commemoration volume pp. 21-28 ('River names in Rgveda') says (on p. 26) that Suṣomā is Sohan (Suwan) flowing through the Rawalpindi District and reaching the Indus to the north of the Salt Range.
- Suṣumnā—A (r. under Gayā) N II. 47. 36; B (under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 35 (same as Matsyodari)
- Sutikṣṇāśrama—Rām. III. 7, Raghuvaṃśa XIII. 41 (at some distance from Agastyāśrama)
- Sutīrthaka—V. 83. 56
- Sutudrī—(same as Sutilej in the Punjab, the Śatadru of classical Sanskrit works) Rg. III. 33. 1, X. 75. 5. It is the Greek Hupanis or Huphasis (A. I. p. 65), which formed the limit of Alexander's march in India. It rises on the southern slopes of Kailāsa and once issued from the Mānasa lake. Pargiter (p. 291 n) says that in ancient times this river did not probably join the Beas as it does now but pursued an independent course and that it formerly flowed along the dry bed now called Hakra or Ghaggar at a distance of 30 to 50 miles south of its present course.
- Suvarṇa—V 84. 18, Ag. 109. 16, P. I. 28. 19 (where Viṣṇu sought for the favour of Rudra)
- Suvarṇākṣa—(under VS) M. 181. 25, K. II. 35. 19.
- Suvarṇarekhā (holy river near Raivataka) SK VII. 2. 1. 1-3 (probably same as the next). There is a river of same name in Bengal. Vide I. G. I. vol. XXIII. p. 114.
- Suvarṇasikatā—(in Jungadh Inscription of Rudradāman to be assigned to 150 A.D., E. I. VIII. p 36 at p. 42) now called Sonrekha in Kathiawad
- Suvarnatilaka—(under Narmadā) P. I. 18. 46.
- Suvāstu—(r., modern Swāt that falls into Kabul river) Rg. VIII. 19. 37 (*Suvāstvā adhi tugvani*). The Nir. IV. 15 explains that Suvāstu is a river and 'tugvan' means 'tīrtha'. It is the Soastos of Arrian (A. I. p. 191). Pāṇ. IV. 2. 77 (*Suvāstvā-dibhyosin*) knew Suvāstu and makes it the first word of '*Suvāstvādi-gaṇa*'. Inscriptions in Sanskrit containing famous Buddhist gāthās have been found near Swāt. Vide E. I. vol. II. p. 133 for three Buddhist inscriptions in Swāt.
- Suvratasya—āśrama (on Drṣadvatī) V. 90. 12-13
- Svacchoda—(lake) Vide Acchoda
- Svacchodā—(r.) Br. II. 18. 6 (rising from lake Svachchoda on m. Candraprabha)
- Svāmitīrtha—M. 22. 63, K II. 37. 19-21 (Skanda is always present there). Dey p. 107 identifies it with the temple of Kumārasvāmī situated about a mile from Tiruttani on the M and S. M. Railway on a hill called Krauñca-parvata

- Svargabindu—(under Narmadā) P. I. 21. 15
- Svargadvāra—A (under Kurukṣetra) P. I. 27. 55; B (under VS) K. I. 35. 4, P. I. 37. 4; C (under Gayā) Ag. 116. 4 (the word here is 'Svargadvāri'); D (under Puruṣottama) N II. 56 31
- Svargamārgahrada—Anu. q. by T. K. p. 248
- Svarga-mārga-pada—V. DH. S 85. 41
- Svargatīrtha—Anu. 25. 33
- Svargēśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 48
- Svarlīnēśvara—(under VS) L. I. 92. 78, SK. IV. 33. 123 (explains why it is so called)
- Svarṇabindu—(under Narmadā) Anu. 25. 9, M. 194 15
- Svarṇalomāpanayana—P. I. 26. 58
- Svarṇarekhā—(r. in Vastrāpathakṣetra i. e. modern Girnar and surrounding territory) SK. VII. 2. 3. 2 and VII. 2. 10. 209
- Svarṇavedi (r.)—Vā. 77. 95, K. II. 37. 37
- Svastipura—(near Gaṅgāhrada and Gaṅgākūpa) V. 83. 174
- Svatantreśvara—(under Narmadā) M. 191. 6
- Svayambhūrtīrtha—(modern Suyam in Kāśmīra in the Machipur *pargana*) R. I. 34, HC. 14 80. Volcanic phenomena are observed here and sometimes vapours rise from fissures in the ground sufficiently hot to boil śrāddha offerings placed by pilgrims.
- Svāvilomāpaha—V. 83. 61
- Svetā—(r. that joins Sābhramatī) P. VI. 133. 19–20
- Svetādri—(m.) P. VI 280. 19, M. 113. 38 (eastern part of Meru is so called).
- Svetadvīpa—G. I. 81. 7; K. I. 1. 49, I. 49. 40–47, Vām. 25. 16 and 60. 56, Śānti 336 8 ff, 337. 27 ff. In most of these texts it is a mythical country to the north of Kṣīrodadhi
- Svetamādhava—N. II. 55. 3
- Svetatīrtha—(under Go.) B 94. 1
- Svetayāvarī—(r.) Rg. VIII 26. 18
- Svetēśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 99
- Svetī—(r., tributary of Indus on the west) Rg. X. 75. 6. Lit. it would mean the white one. It is difficult to identify it with Suvāstu
- Svetodbhava—(under Sābhramatī) P. VI. 133. 15
- Syandika—(r. Sai, seven miles south of Jaunpur, mentioned after Gomatī) Rām. II. 49. 12
- Śyāmāyāh-āśrama—Anu. 25. 30
- Syenī—(r. rising in Rkṣaparvata) M. 114. 25. Dey p. 200 identifies it with Ken in Bundelkhand

T

- Taijasa—(to the west of Kurukṣetra where Skanda was crowned commander of the gods) P. I. 27. 52–53.
- Takṣasilā—(modern Taxilā) Svargā-rohaṇa-parva 5. 34, Vā 88. 189–90, Br. III. 63. 190–91 (established by Takṣa son of Dāśarathi Bharata as his capital in Gandhāra); in the Jātakas Takṣasilā is mentioned as a seat of learning (as in Bhīmasena-Jātaka, Fausböll's ed. vol. I. p. 356). Vide Ptolemy p. 118–121 for its history from Alexander's time onwards. Ptolemy calls it Taxila. It is mentioned in the Dhāuli first separate Rock Edict of Aśoka (C. I. I. vol. I. p. 93) and the word occurs in Pāṇ. IV. 3. 93. Vide for description of its ruins A. G. pp. 104–113, Marshall's 'Guide to Taxilā' and other works.
- Takṣaka-nāga (sacred spring in Kāśmīra near Jayavana, modern Zeval). V. 82. 90. R. I. 220, P. I. 25. 2 (says Vitastā is the home of Takṣaka-nāga). It is worshipped to this day in the large pool close to the village Zeval. Vide S. M. p. 166, K. R. p. 5
- Tālakarṇēśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 72.
- Tālatīrtha—(under VS) P. I. 37. 2
- Tālavana—(to the west of Mathurā) Var. 157. 35



- Tamasā**—A(r., modern Tonse, flowing 12 miles west of the Sarayū and falling into the Ganges) Rām. I. 2. 3, II. 45, 32, Raghuvamśa IX. 20, XIV. 76 (on which stood Vālmiki's āśrama). Vide C.I.I. vol. III, p. 128 where a village Āśramaka on Tamasā is granted in A.D. 512–13; B (r. rising from Rkṣa), M. 114. 25, Vā. 45. 100; C (r. falling into Yamunā) Devī Bh. VI. 18.12
- Tāmrāparṇī**—(r. in Pāṇḍya country rising from mountain Malaya and falling into the sea) B 27.36, M 114. 30, Vā 45.105 and 77. 24–27, V. 88. 14, Rām. IV. 41. 17–18, K. II. 37. 21–22, Br III. 13. 24, Bh. X. 79. 16 and XI. 5. 39. The Taprobane of Megasthenes (A. I, p. 62) and Tāmrāparṇī of Aśoka's Girnar Inscription II; it is said to be Ceylon but that may refer to the river as well; E. I. XX at p. 23 (Nāgārjunikoṇḍa Ins.); Br III. 13. 24 and 25, Raghuvamśa IV.49–50 show that pearls were found there
- Tāmrāprabha**—(under Mathurā) Var. q. by T. K. p. 191
- Tāmrārūṇa**—V. 85. 154
- Tāmravati**—(one of the rivers that are mothers of fires) V. 222. 23
- Taṇḍulikāśrama**—(near Puṣkara and Jambūmārga) V 82. 43, Ag. 109. 9, P.I. 12. 3
- Tāpaseśvara**—(under Narmadā) K II. 41.66, P. I. 18. 96
- Tapastīrtha**—(under Go.) B 126. 1 and 37 (it is also called Sattratīrtha)
- Tapatī**—(r.) M.22.32–33 (Tapatī seems to be Tāpī here as distinguished from Mūlatāpī). In Ādiparva chapters 171–173 Tapatī is a daughter of the Sun whom king Saṁvarana married and had a son Kuru from her; Mār. 105. 26 (younger daughter of the Sun became river).
- Tāpeśvara**—(under Narmadā) M. 191. 104
- Tāpī**—(r. rising from Vindhya and falling into the Arabian sea at Surat, also called Tapatī) M 114. 27, B 27. 33, Vā. 45. 102, Ag. 109. 22. Tāpī is mentioned in Usavadāta's Nasik Inscription No. 10 (Bom. G. vol. 16 p. 569). Vide under Payoṣṇī above and TP pp. 544–547 (for mātmya and sub-tīrthas)
- Tāpikā**—same as Tāpī. Devīpurāṇa q. by T. K. p. 242
- Tāpī-samudra-saṅgama**—T.P. p. 547
- Tapovana**—A (on south bank of Go.) B 128.1; B (in Vāṅga country) V. 84. 115, P. I. 38. 31. 'Tato vanam' is a misreading in Vanaparva
- Tārakeśvara**—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 104. Tārakeśvara is also a village in Hooghly District of Bengal famous for its shrine of Śiva, Vide I.G.I. vol. 23 p. 249
- Taraṇḍa or Tarantuka**—(a dvārapāla of Kurukṣetra) V. 83. 15, P. I. 27. 92 (reads 'Taraṇḍa), Vām. 22.60. Vide p. 683 note 1551 above.
- Timi**—(to the right of Śaṅkukarṇeśvara) P. I. 24. 20–23
- Tirthakoṭi**—V 84.121, P.I. 38.38 (same verse in both)
- Toṣalaka**—(the *guhya* name of Viṣṇu is Garuḍadhvaja here) Nr. q. by T.K. p. 252. Is it the same as Ptolemy's Tosalei (p. 230) and the Tosali in Aśoka's Dhāuli Inscriptions (C. I. I. pp. 92 and 97) and the Nāgārjunikoṇḍa Inscription (E. I. vol. XX. at p. 23)? Tosali (modern Dhāuli in the Purī District) was the chief city of northern Kalinga in the days of the Mauryas.
- Toyā**—(r. rising in Vindhya) M. 114.28, Vā 45 103
- Traiyaṁbaka-tīrtha**—A (under Go. and sacred to Pitṛs) M. 22.47, K. II. 35. 18; B (under Narmadā) P. I. 18. 112
- Trastāvātāra**—(an āyatana) Devī Bh. q. by T. K. p. 250

- Tribhāgā—(r. rising from Mahendra) M. 114. 31, Vā 45. 104
- Tridaśajyoti—(under Narmadā) M. 194. 11
- Tridivā—A (r. rising from Himavat) Br. II. 16. 26; B (r. rising from Mahendra) M. 114. 31, Vā. 45, 106, B 27. 37; C (r. rising from Rkṣavat) Br. II. 16. 31.
- Tridivābalā—(r. from Mahendra m.) Br. II. 16. 37. Probably Tridiva and Balā.
- Trigaṅga—V 84, 29, Anu 25. 16, P. I. 28. 29
- Trigartēśvara—(under Mathurā) Var. 176. 16.
- Tribalikāgrāma—(where śrāddha is very efficacious) V. Dh. S. 85. 24 (com. Vaijayantī says it is Sālagrāma).
- Trijaleśvara-līṅga—(where Gaṇḍakī and Devikā join) Var. 144. 83
- Trikakud—(m. part of Himavat) A. V. IV. 9. 8 and 9 (for a salve therefrom), Maitrāyaṇī Samhitā III. 6. 3, Śat. Br. III. 1. 3. 12 (all these mention Traikakuda or Traikakubha āñjana), Pāṇ. V. 4. 147 (trikakut-parvate) teaches that Trikakud is the name of a mountain and the name is a Bahuvrīhi compound (trīni kakudāni kakudākārāṇi śṛṅgāṇi asya) Vide Br. III. 13. 58 where it is Trikakudagiri (very eminent place for śrāddha), Vā. 77. 57-63.
- Trikoṭi—(a r. in Kāśmīra) NM 308, 386-87. At Kaśyapa's request Aditi became Trikoṭi. It joins Vitastā.
- Trikūṭa—(m.) Vām. 85. 4, (son of Sumeru), Nr. 65. 21, P VI. 129. 16. In Bh. VIII. 2. 1 Trikūṭa m. appears to be mythical. From Raghuvamśa IV. 58-59 it follows that Trikūṭa was in Aparānta. Dey p. 205 specifies three hills as Trikūṭa. Kālidāsa's Trikūṭa appears to be the Tirahnu or Tirasmi hill at Nasik. Vide Bom. G. vol. 16 p. 633 and E. I. vol. 25 p. 225 at p. 232 (copper-plate Ins. discovered at Anjaneri near Nasik of about 709 A. D. mentions 'Pūrva-Trikūṭaviṣaya'). The Khana-pur plates of Mādhavavarman (about 510-560 A. D.) speak of him as the 'lord of Trikūṭa and Malaya' (E. I. vol. 27 p. 312 at p. 315)
- Trilinga—country which has three famous lingas viz. Kālahastin, Śrī-saila, Drākṣarāma.
- Trilocana-līṅga—(in VS) SK. IV. 33. 120, K. I. 35. 14-15, P. I. 37. 17.
- Tripadī (Tirupati)—in the District of north Arcot at a short distance from Reṇigunta Station. It is the same as Veṅkaṭagiri on the top of which is the celebrated temple of Veṅkaṭeśvara or Bālāji.
- Triplakṣa—(śrāddha most efficacious here) Br. III. 13. 69
- Tripura—A (a very fit place for śrāddha) M. 22. 43; B (capital of Bānāsura) P. I. chapters 14-15, Karmaparva 33.17 ff and 34. 113-114, M. chapters 129-140 (give the story of Tripuradāha at great length). Vide also Anu. 160. 25-31 and an interesting paper on 'The Tripura episode in Sanskrit literature' in Journal, Ganganath Jha R. I. vol. VIII. pp. 371-395 by Miss Bhakti Sudhā Mukhopādhyāya.
- Tripurāntaka—(near eastern gate of Śrīparvata) L. I. 92. 150.
- Tripureśvara (modern village Triphar in Kāśmīra, three miles from Dal lake) R. V. 46, HC. 13. 200. Some identify it with Jyeṣṭheśvara.
- Tripurī—(on the Narmadā) T. S. p. 100 quotes three verses about it. It is modern Tewar, six miles west of Jabbalpur. It was the capital of the Kalacuris or Cedis. Vide Jabalpur plate of Yaśaḥkarnadeva in 1122 A.D., E. I. vol. II. p. 1 at p. 3 and E. I. XIX. p. 75 (for extent of Mahākosala) M. 114. 53, Sabhāparva 21. 60 and Br. S. 14.9 mention Traipura country as situated

on the back of Vindhya. Tripurī is known from very ancient copper coins of early 2nd century B. C. Tripurī-*viṣaya* occurs in Betul plates of Saṅkṣobha as situated in Dabhālā country. Vide R. D. Banerji's 'Haihayas of Tripurī' p. 137.

Tripuṣkara—Vide Puṣkara.

Trisāmā—(r. rising from Mahendra) Vā 45. 106, Vi. II. 3. 13, Bh. V. 19. 18 (does not mention source).

Trisandhyā or Trisandhyam) A-M. 22. 46 (sacred to pitṛs); B (spring of goddess Sandhyā) one of the holiest Kāśmīra tīrthas. It is modern Sundabrār in Bring *pargana*; NM 1471, R. I. 33, SM. p. 181.

Tristhāna—(probably same as Vārānasī) Anu. 25. 16

Trisikhara—(m.) Vā. 42. 28, M. 183. 2.

Trisūlagangā—(under Śālagrāma) Var. 145. 84 (confluence of Gaṇḍakī and Kṛṣṇā)

Trisūlakhātā—V. 84. 11. It is probably the same as the Kāśmīra tīrtha Sūlaghātā

Trisūlapāta—(under Sarasvatī) P. I. 28. 12. Probably the same as above

Tritakūpa—a tīrtha visited by Balarāma, Bh. X. 78. 19 (after Prthūdaka and Bindusaras). Rg. I. 105. 17 speaks of Trita who had been thrown into a well and was helped by Brhaspati. Vide Nir. IV. 6

Trivenī—A (at Prayāga) Var. 144. 86-87; vide p. 602 above; B (confluence of three rivers, viz. Gaṇḍakī, Devikā and another r. called Brahmaputrā) Var. 144. 83 and 112-115. It was here that Gajendra was drawn into water by the grāha (crocodile), Var. 144. 116-134.

Trivistapa—P. I. 26. 79 (where there is Vaitaranī river)

Tṛṇabindusaras—(in Kāmyakavana) V. 258. 13.

Tṛṇabinduvana—Nr. q. by T. K. p. 252.

Tryambakesvara—(near Nasik, at the source of the Godāvarī) N. II. 73. 1-152 (is the mātmya), SK. IV. 6. 23, P. VI. 176. 58-59, B. 79. 6.

Tulajāpura—(a Devīsthāna) Devi-Bh. VII. 38. 6

Tuṅgā—(r. that falls into the Kṛṣṇā) Nr. 66. 7 (reading differs) q. by T. K. p. 254 (Tuṅgā ca dakṣiṇe Gangā Kāverī ca viśeṣataḥ.).

Tuṅgabhadra—(The two rivers Tuṅgā and Bhadrā rise in the Mysore state and join to form the Tuṅgabhadra near Kudli in Mysore State. The river falls into the Kṛṣṇā near Alampur in the Raichūr District) M. 22. 45, Nr. 66. 6 q. by T. K. p. 254, Bh. V. 19. 18, M. 114. 29, B. 27. 35, Vā 45. 104 (last three say that it rises in Sahya). From E. I. vol. XII at p. 294 and Vik. IV. 44-68 it is clear that Cālukya king Someśvara I, being attacked by a malignant fever, perished by entering Tuṅgabhadra in 1068 A.D.

Tuṅgakūṭa—(under Kōkāmukha) Var. 140. 29-30.

Tuṅgāranya—V. 85. 46-54, P. I. 39. 43 (where Sārasvata instructed sages).

Tuṅgavenā—(one of the rivers that are the sources of fire) V. 222. 25

Tuṅgesvara—(in VS) L. I. 92. 7

Turāsaṅga—(a tīrtha under Narmadā) M. 191. 29.

Tvaṣṭresvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 96

U

Udabhānda—was the residence of Sāhi kings and identified by Stein with capital of Gandhāra; vide R. V. 152-155, VI. 175. It is the Wayband of Alberuni and Ohind or Und of modern times (on the right bank of the Indus 15 miles above Attock).

Udapāna—V. 84. 110, P. I. 38.

Udayanta—(m. near Somanātha in Kathiawar) SK. VI. 2. 11. 11



- Uddālakesvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 59
- Uddiyāna—Kāl. 18. 42 (where the two thighs of Sati's corpse fell).
- Udicitīrtha—(under Gayā) Vā 111. 6. Vide p. 663 above
- Udyantaparvata—(the Brahmayoni hill in Gayā to the left of the Silā) V. 84. 93, Vā 108. 43-44, N. II. 47. 51, P.I. 38.13. Vide p. 647 note 1472 above
- Ugra—(under VS) P. I. 37. 15; also called Kedāra
- Ugreśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 70.
- Ujjānaka—(where Skanda and Vasistha secured peace of mind) V. 130. 17, Anu. 25. 55. It is probably a corrupt form of Udyantaka or Udyānaka.
- Ujjayanta (Girnar in Saurāṣṭra and near Dvārakā) V. 88. 21-24, Vā. 45. 92 and 77. 52, Vām. 13. 18, SK. VII. 2. 11. 11 and 15 (southern boundary of Vastrāpathakṣetra). Vide A. G. p. 325.
- Ujjayinī—(modern Ujjain in Central India) B. 43. 24 (called Avantī), 44. 16 (capital of Mālava.) Vide under Avantī and Māhiṣmatī above. Ujeni is mentioned in the Dhauī first separate Rock edict (C. I. I. vol. I. p. 93) of Aśoka. The Mbh. (vol. II. p. 35 on Vārtika 10 on Pān. III. 1. 26 mentions it. It is famous for the shrine of Mahākālā, one of the twelve Jyotir-līngas and is situated on the Sīprā river. Kālidāsa immortalizes it in the Meghadūta and Raghuvamśa VI. 32-35. A. G. (pp. 489-90) gives the boundaries of the kingdom of Ujjayinī in the 7th century. A. C. (p. 182) gives Viśālā, Avantī and Puṣpakaraṇḍinī as synonyms of Ujjayinī. 'Puṣpakaraṇḍakajirṇodyāna' is mentioned in the Mṛcchakaṭika. The Periplus and Ptolemy speak of it as Ozene. Vide Ptolemy pp. 154-155. Vide J. A. O. S. vol. 66 for 1946 p. 295 for Jaina sources on Udayana and Vāsavadattā and I. A. vol. III. p. 153 for inscription of Śravana Belgōla about migration of Jains under Bhadrabāhu from Ujjayinī and S. B. E. vol. X part 2 p. 188 (Suttanipāta)
- Umābaka—(under Narmadā) K. II. 41. 57
- Umākunḍa—(under Lohārgala) Var. 151. 64
- Umātuṅga—K. II. 37. 32-33, Vā. 77. 81-82 (best place for śrāddha, japa, homa)
- Umāvana—(where Śaṅkara assumed the Ardhanārīśvara form) Vā. 41. 36. Dey p. 211 says that it is Kotalgad in Kumaon. A. C. p. 182 says it is also called Devikōṭa
- Upajalā—(r. near Yamunā) V. 130. 21
- Upamanyulīṅga—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. 97
- Upasāntaśiva—(under VS.) P. I. 37. 17, L. I. 92 107
- Upavenā—(one of the rivers that are mothers of fires) V. 222. 24
- Urantā—(in Aparānta) Br. III. 13. 53 (here are Yogesvarālaya and Vasisthāśrama)
- Ūrjayat—m. in Rudradāman's Junāgadh Inscription (in E. I. VIII p. 36 at p. 42) and in Gupta Inscriptions at p. 45
- Urvaśīkunḍa—(under Badarī) Var. 141. 51-64, N. II. 67. 65
- Urvaśīlīṅga—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 66
- Urvaśīpulina—(under Prayāga) M. 22. 66 and 106. 34-35, Anu. 25. 46. Vide p. 615 note 1399 above
- Urvaśīśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 72
- Urvaśītīrtha—A (under Prayāga) V. 84, 157, M. 106. 34, P. I. 38. 64; B (under Go.) B. 171. 1
- Uṣṇatīrtha—M. 13. 42 (Devī is called Abhayā in tīrthas of hot water)

- Uṣṇigaṅga (a tīrtha for bathing) V. 135. 7
- Utkocaka-tīrtha—V. 183. 2
- Utpalāvana—V. 87. 15 (in Pāñcāla country), Anu. 25, 34. Dey p. 213 says that it is Bithur, 14 miles from Kānpur in U. P.
- Utpalāvartaka—(a forest) N. II. 60. 25, Vanaparva q. by T. K. p. 244
- Utpalāvati—(r. rising from m. Malaya) Vā. 45. 105, M. 114. 30
- Utpalinī—(r. in Naimiṣa forest) Ādi. 215. 6
- Utpātaka—Anu. 25. 41
- Uttameśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 102
- Uttara—(under VS) K. I. 35. 14, P. I. 37. 17
- Uttara-Gaṅga — (Gangabal in Lar pargana of Kāśmīra) HC. IV. 54. It is also called Haramukūṭa-gaṅgā and Mānasottaragaṅgā
- Uttaragokarna—Var. 216. 22, K. II. 35. 31
- Uttarajāhnavī—H. C. XII. 49. When the Vitastā takes a turn towards the north it is so called.
- Uttaramānasa—A (in Kāśmīra) Anu. 25. 60, NM. 1118 (the guardian nāga of the north of Kāśmīra). The Gaṅgabāl lake is popularly so called. See Stein's note on R. III. 448 and H. C. IV. 87; B (near Gayā) Vā. 77, 108, 111. 2, V. Dh. S. 85. 36, Śānti 152. 13, M. 121, 69, K. II. 37, 44, R. 115. 10. Vide pp. 650-651 above
- V
- Vaḍavā—(also called Saptacaru) V. 82. 92-99, 222. 24, V. Dh. S. 85. 37. The com. Vaijayantī says that it is some tīrtha in the southern part of India, but Vanaparva points to north-west. Dey p. 220 identifies with Bāku on the west coast of the Caspian sea.
- Vadhūsarā—(r. on bathing in which Paraśurāma recovered his tejas taken away by Rāma) V. 99. 68
- Vāgīśvari—(under Go.) B 135. 26
- Vāgmātī—(r. Bāgmātī of Nepal which rises in Himālaya) Var. 215. 49 (says that it is 100 times holier than Bhāgīrathī)
- Vāgmātī—Manivatī-saṅgama—Var. 215. 106 and 110
- Vāhā—Vām. 57. 78
- Vāhinī—Bhī. 9. 34
- Vaidarbhā—M. 22. 64, Nalacampū VI. 66 (Dakṣiṇasaravatī sā vahati Vidarbhā nadī yatra). Probably the same as Varadā
- Vaidūrya—(a hill in Ānarta) V. 89. 6, 121. 16 and 19 (to which Pāṇḍavas came after crossing Payoṣṇī). Pāñ. IV. 3. 84 teaches the derivation of Vaidūrya precious stone (Beryl) from Vidūra in the sense 'tasmāt prabhavati'. Mbh. (vol. II. p. 313) quotes a verse on this which says that grammarians denominate the mountain Vālavāya as Vidūra. Probably it is the Sātpuḍā range which has Beryl mines. Vide Pargiter pp. 287 (n), 365 (n). It may be the Oroudian mountain of Ptolemy (pp. 80-81)
- Vaidyanātha—A-M. 13. 41, 22. 24, P. V. 17. 205 (same words as in M 13. 41); B (under VS) L. q. by T. K. pp. 84, 114; C (under Sābhramati) P. VI. 160. 1; D (Devī is called Bagalā here) Devī-Bh. VII. 38. 14; E—temple of Vaidyanātha, probably one of the 12 Jyotirliṅgas, at Deoghar in Santhal Pargana. Vide I. G. I. vol. XI p. 244 for the great temple of Vaidyanātha, which is the oldest of the 22 Śiva temples at Deogarh
- Vaihāra—(one of the five hills that surrounded and guarded Girivraja) S. 21. 2
- Vaibhāyāsī—(r.) Bh. V. 19. 18
- Vaijayanta—(a Sārasvata-tīrtha) Devī q. by T. K. p. 250
- Vaikuṇṭha-kāraṇa—(under Mandara) Var. 143. 21-23

- Vaikuṇṭhatīrtha—**A** (under Gayā) M. 22. 75, N II. 47. 75; **B** (under Mathurā) Var. 163. 1-4 and 10-12
- Vaimānika—Anu. 25. 23.
- Vaināyakatīrtha—M. 22. 32, G. I. 81.8.
- Vairā—(r.) M. 22. 64
- Vairocanaśvara—(under VS) SK. IV. 33. 140.
- Vaiśakha—(under Śrīparvata) L. I. 92. 156 (established by Viśakha i. e. Skanda).
- Vaiśravaṇeśvara—(under Śrīparvata) L. I. 92. 148
- Vaiśvānara-kunḍa—(under Lohārgala) Var. 151. 58
- Vaitaraṇī—**A** (r. in Orissa rising in Vindhya) V. 85.6, 114. 4, Vā. 77. 95, K II. 37. 37, P. I. 39. 6, Ag. 116. 7, M. 114. 27, B 27. 33; Jāipur (i. e. Yayātipura) stands on this river, which is the boundary between Balasore and Cuttack (I. G. I. vol. VI. p. 223). Sometimes Utkala and Kalinga are held to be separate as in B 47. 7 and Raghu-vaṁśa IV. 38. Utkala is said to be derived from Utkaliṅga (what is outside Kalinga); **B** (in Gayā) Vā. 105. 45, 109, 17, Ag. 116. 7; **C** (in Phalakīvana) Vām. 36. 43-44, P. I. 26. 79; **D** (a well in VS) L q by T. K. p. 63.
- Vaivasvatatīrtha—(under Sūkara) Var. 137. 240 (where the sun practised *tapas* for a son), Anu. 25. 39
- Vaivasvateśvara—(under VS) L. q by T. K. p. 104.
- Vajrabhava—(under Kokāmukha) Var. 140. 61 (the water falls into Kausikī).
- Vajreśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 104
- Vālakhilyeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 66.
- Vālīśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 51.
- Vālmīkeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 66
- Vālmīki—āśrama (on the Ganges) Rām. VII. 47. 15-77. Vide under Sthāṇutīrtha and Tamasā.
- Vāmana or Vāmanaka—(under Kuru-kṣetra) V. 84. 130, V. 83. 103, Ag. 109. 20, P. I. 26. 96 (Vāmanaka), I. 38. 47; **B** (under Gayā) N. II, 46. 46; **C** (under Sābhramatī) P, VI. 153.2 (where seven rivers flow). Vide I A. vol. 54 (at end) p. 41 where it is said that Vanthali about 8 miles south-west of Junāgad is the Vāmana-tīrtha of the Mahābhārata.
- Vāmanaśvara—(under Narmadā) P. I. 18. 26
- Vamśadharā—(r. rising from Mahendra) Vā. 45. 106, Mār. 54. 29 (reads Vamśakarā) and Var. 85 (prose) reads Vamśavarā. Pargiter (p. 305n) says that it is the modern Bamsdharā on which Kalingapatam stands, 17 miles from Chicacole. Vide Santa-Bommali plates of Indravarman (E. I. vol. XXV p. 194) issued from Kalinganagara
- Vamśagulma—(on confluence of Narmadā and Soṇa) V. 85. 9
- Vamśamūlaka—P. I. 26. 38
- Vamśodbheda—M. 24. 25
- Vānaraka—(under Gayā) Ag. 116. 6. It may be a misreading of 'cānarake'.
- Vandanā—(r) Bhī. 9. 18
- Vāṇī-saṅgama—(under Go.) B. 135. 1 and 23
- Vāñjarā—(r. on south bank of Go.) B. 159.45. It is probably the modern Manjarā river that falls into Godāvari in Nander District
- Vāñjarāsaṅgama—(under Go) B. 159. 1
- Vāñjulā—**A** (r. rising from Sahya and falling into Go.) M. 114. 29, Vā. 45. 103, Vām. 57. 76; **B** (r. rising in Mahendra) B. 27. 37
- Vaṅkṣu—(modern Oxus) Sabhā 51. 20 (*rāsabhas* were brought as presents)
- Varadā—(the Vardhā river in C. P) Rām. IV. 41. 9, Ag. 109. 22, Nalacampū VI. 66 (Vīrapurāṣam tad-

- etad Varadātatanāmakam Mahārāṣṭram) See under Varadāsaṅgama.
- Varadāna—V. 82. 63-64, P. I. 24. 12 (both contain story about Durvāsas conferring a boon on Viṣṇu)
- Varadā-saṅgama—V. 85. 35, P. I. 39. 32
- Varāhamūlakṣetra or Varāhakṣetra—(modern Bāramūla in Kāśmīra). It is on the right bank of the Vitastā at the head of the western entrance to the Kashmir valley and is sacred to Ādivarāha; R. VI. 186, H.C. XII. 43, K. R. pp. 11-12 and SM. pp. 201-202
- Varāhaparvata—(probably Bāramūla in Kāśmīra) V. Dh. S. 85. 7
- Varāha-sthānas—(places sacred to the Great Boar incarnation of Viṣṇu are Kokāmukha, Badarī and Lohārgala) Var. 140. 4-5
- Varāhatīrtha—A (under Kurukṣetra) Vām. 34.32, P. I. 26. 15; B (under VS) P. I. 37. 6, K. I. 35.5; C (under Mathurā) Var. 166. 23 (there were four golden images of Varāha, Nārāyaṇa, Vāmana, Rāghava); D (on Vitastā in Kāśmīra) NM 1559; E (a sub-tīrtha of Sahyāmalaka) Nr. 66 34; F (under Sābhramatī) P. VI. 165. 10; G (on Narmadā) M. 193. 74, K. II. 42. 14, P. I. 20.71; H (on Payoṣṇī) V. 88. 7 and 9 (king Nṛga performed yajña here and the tīrtha is holiest of all rivers), K. II. 20. 32, Vām. 90. 4; I (under Go.) B 79. 6.
- Varāheśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 98.
- Varanā—(r. northern boundary of Banaras) M. 22. 31, 183. 62. Vide pp. 625-626 above; L. I. 92 87 calls it Varuṇā.
- Vārānasī—Vide pp. 618-642. Though Kāśī and Vārānasī are treated as synonyms almost everywhere (pp. 624-626) still it seems to me that Kāśī was on the eastern side of the Ganges and Vārānasī on the western.
- Varaṇāvati—(r.) Atharvaveda IV. 7.1.
- Vārāṇeśvara—(under Narmadā) P. I. 18. 29.
- Vardhanadruma—(in Kāśmīra, an āyatana of Vināyaka Gāṅgeya) NM 1161
- Vāridhāra—(m.) Bh. V. 19. 16
- Varnāsā—(r. Banas in Rajputana rising from Pāriyātra and falling into Chambal) Br. II. 16. 28; see under Parnāsā.
- Varṇu—(r.) Pāṇ. IV. 2 103 (varṇau vuk). Kāśīkā explains that the country on Varṇu was also called Varṇu. This appears to be modern Bannu. Varṇu occurs in Suvāstvādi-gaṇa. (IV. 2. 77).
- Vārtraghnī—(r. rising in Pāriyātra and falling into the sea) P. VI. 131. 56, 68, VI. 164, 1 and 71, Mār. 57. 19; Vā. 45. 97 reads Vṛtraghnī and B. 27. 28 Vātagnī.
- Varuṇasrotasa—(m.) V. 88. 10
- Varuṇā—(r. tributary of the Go.) P. VI. 176. 59
- Vārūnatīrtha—V. 83. 164, 88. 13 (in Pāṇḍya country), Bār. Sūtra III. 88 (on the shores of the eastern sea).
- Varuṇeśa—A (under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 66; B (under Narmadā) M 191. 6.
- Vārūneśvara—A (under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 103; B (under Narmadā) P. I. 18. 6
- Vāsiṣṭha-kunḍa—(under Lohārgala) Vār. 151 40. There is a Vasiṣṭha-kunḍa on the Alakanandā at Deva-prayāga. Vide I.G.I. vol. XI. p. 274.
- Vasiṣṭhāpavāha—(on Sarasvatī) Śal. 42. 41.
- Vasiṣṭhāśrama—A (near Jyeṣṭheśvara in Kāśmīra) R. I. 107 (and Stein's note thereon in vol. I. pp. 20-21), NM 1323; B (on mount Arbuda (which see) V. 102. 3; C (on Badarīpācana, which see) V. 102. 3 (narrates that in Vasiṣṭhāśrama Kāleyas devoured 188 brāhmaṇas)

- and 9 *tāpasas*. The location is uncertain.
- Vasiṣṭhatīrtha—M. 22. 68 (śrāddha and dāna most efficacious here).
- Vasiṣṭheśa—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 47.
- Vāsiṣṭhī—V. 84. 48, P. I. 32. 12 (same verse in both, but P. reads Vāsiṣṭham).
- Vasordhārā—V. 82. 76, P. I. 24. 24 (same verse in both, P. reading Vasudhārā).
- Vastrāpathakṣetra—(territory round about Girnar in Kathiawad) SK. VII. 2. 2. 1-3 (it is quintessence of Prabhāsa, Raivataka-kṣetra is so called), VII. 2. 11. 16 (it is four yojanas in extent). The holy river therein is Suvarṇarekhā (which see)
- Vāsuka—(under Viraja in Orissa) B. 42. 6
- Vāsukīśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 48.
- Vāsukītīrtha—A (under VS) P. I. 39. 79, L. q. by T. K. p. 48; B (under Prayāga) V. 85. 86 (also called Bhogavatī)
- Vāsuprada—M. 22. 72 (śrāddha here makes a man reach highest goal).
- Vasutūṅga—(Jagatpati is the *guhya* appellation of Viṣṇu here) Nr. q. by T. K. p. 251
- Vaṭa—A (in Prayāga) M. 104. 10, 111. 10; B (in Gayā) V. Dh. S. 85. 5.
- Vāṭanadī—M. 22. 37 (śrāddha here yields inexhaustible fruit).
- Vāteśvara—A (under Narmadā) M. 191. 27, K. II. 41. 19, P. I. 18. 27 (same verse in K and P), Ag. 109. 20; B (under Gayā) Ag. 115. 73, P. I. 38. 46, N. II. 47. 59; C (under Prayāga) M. 22. 9; D (under Puruṣottama) N. II. 56. 28
- Vāteśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. pp. 66
- Vāteśvarapura P. I. 38. 46
- Vātika—(in Kāśmīra) NM. 1459.
- Vātodakā (r. in Pāṇḍya country) Bh. IV. 28. 35
- Vatsakrīḍanaka—(under Mathurā) Var. 156. 1
- Vāyavyatīrtha—(under Kubjāmraka) Var. 126. 75
- Vāyutīrtha—A (under VS) K. I. 35. 5, P. I. 37. 5 (same verse in both); B (under Mathurā) Var. 152. 65; C (under Gayā) Ag. 116. 5.
- Vedadhārā—(under Badarī) Var. 141. 20.
- Vedagiri (hill in Sahya range to the south of Brahmagiri and a sub-tīrtha under Kṛṣṇa-Venya) TS. p. 78
- Vedaśiras—(most efficacious for śrāddha) M. 22. 71.
- Vedasmṛti—(r. rising from Pāriyātra) Anu. 165. 25, M. 114. 23, Vā. 45. 97, Br. II. 16. 27. Dey p. 223 opines that it is the river Bosuli in Malwa and a tributary of the Sindhu; Br. S. 16. 32 mentions it.
- Vedaśruti—(r. after Kosala towards the south) Rām. II. 49. 10
- Vedavatī—(r. rising from Pāriyātra) M. 114. 23, Br. II. 16. 27, B. 27. 29, Anu. 165. 25; this and the above two rivers cannot really be identified. There is a river called Vedāvatī or Hagarī which rises in Mysore and ultimately falls into the Tūṅga-bhadra. Vide I. G. I. vol. XIII p. 5.
- Vedeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 44.
- Veditīrtha—(v. 1. Devitīrtha) P. I. 26. 92.
- Vegavatī—(r. modern Vaiga or Baiga on which Madurā in south India is situated) Var. 215. 58, Vām. 84. 6, P. VI. 237. 9. Vide E. I. vol. XIII p. 194 where there is a gift of Ambikāpura on north bank of Vegavatī to the Śaṅkarācārya of Kāmakoṭī pīṭha. The form Vaigai appears in the Silappadikāram (Prof. Krishnar's tr. p. 270).
- Venā—A (r. rising from Vindhya) B. 27. 33, M. 114. 27. This is the Wain-Gangā in C. P. and falls into Godāvarī; B-r, rising from Sahya m.

near Mahabaleshwar. The Pengāṅgā falls into Wardha, acc. to I. G. I. vol. V p. 22, vol. XIII. p. 229, vol. XX. p. 102 and the united stream of the Waingāṅgā and Wardhā is known as Prāṇahitā which ultimately falls into the Godāvarī. Vide I. G. I. vol. 24 p. 349, Bhī. 9. 20, 28, V. 85. 32, 88. 3, 222. 24, Anu. 165. 20, Bh. X. 79. 12, Venā is often mentioned as Kṛṣṇavenā or—Venṇā or—Venī as in M. 114. 29. Rājasekhara in Kāvya-mīmāṃsā p. 94 mentions 'Venā' and 'Kṛṣṇavenā' separately in the first quarter of the 10th century. Vide Pargiter p. 303n for the various forms of this name.

Venāsaṅgama—V 85. 34, P. I. 39. 32

Venī—A (confluence of Gaṅgā and Yamunā) Vide above p. 603 n 1369. Vide Banaras Ins. of Karnaḍadeva in Kalacuri year 793 (i.e. 1042 A.D.) in E. I. vol. II. p. 297 at p. 310 (Venṇām snātvā...Trilocanam...sambharyā), Kamauli plate of Jayacandra in E. I. IV. at p. 123 (dated samvat 1230 i. e. 1173 AD); B (r. rising in Sahya from the root of an āmalaka tree and falling into Kṛṣṇā) TS. p. 78

Veṅkaṭa—(m. in Draviḍa country, Arcot District, near Tirupati) G. Brahmakhaṇḍa, chap. 26 deals with Veṅkaṭagiri-māhātmya, Bh. V. 19. 16, X. 79. 13 (in Draviḍa), R. VI. 280. 19, SK. III. Brahmakhaṇḍa, 52. 102; SK. I. Vaiṣṇavakhaṇḍa is Veṅkaṭācalamāhātmya. The shrine was once considered so holy that till 1870 no Christian or Moslem was allowed to ascend the hill of Tirumala.

Venumatī—(śrāddha thereon most efficacious) M. 22. 20

Venṇā—(r. rising from m. Sahya and falling into the Kṛṣṇā) Vām. 13. 30, Anu. 165. 22 (Godāvarī ca Venṇā ca

Kṛṣṇavenā tathāpi ca), Bh. V. 19. 18, P. VI. 113. 25 (Mahādeva became Venṇā)

Vetasikā—(r.) V. 84. 56, P. I. 32. 20, P. VI. 29. 20 (speaks of Vetasi—Vetravati-saṅgama)

Vetravati—A (modern Betwa river, which rises in the Bhopal State and falls into the Yamunā) M. 22. 20, 114. 23 (rises from Pāriyātra), Br. II. 16. 28 (rises from Rkṣavat), K. II. 20. 35; Meghadūta (I. 24) says that Vidiśā (modern Bhilsā), the capital of Daśārṇa, was situated on Vetravati; B (a tributary of the Sābhramatī) P. VI. 130 and 133. 4-5. In 'Questions of Milinda' (S. B. E. vol. 35 p. 171) among ten great rivers flowing from the Himālaya Vetravati is one. This must be different from the above two

Vibhāṇḍeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 115

Vidarbhā-saṅgama—(under Go.) B. 121. 1 and 23; acc. to AC p. 182 Vidarbha is the name of Kuṇḍinapura (v. 979)

Vidhiśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 116

Vidiśā—A (r. rising from Pāriyātra m.) B 27. 29, Br II. 16. 28, Mār. 54. 20. Vide Vetravati above; B—A city mentioned in Raghuvamśa 15. 36 (Rāma gave to the two sons of Śatrughna, Śatrughātina and Subāhu, the cities of Madhurā and Vidiśā); Meghadūta I. 24 states that Vidiśā was the capital of the Daśārṇa country. In the Mālavikāgnimitra (V. 1) Agnimitra is shown as enjoying himself on the banks of the Vidiśā river and later on Puṣyamitra refers to his son Agnimitra as Vaidiśastha (Vaidiśā would mean a city on the Vidiśā). Vide Vaḍnera plates of Kaṭacchuri Buddharāja in 360 of the Kalachuri era (i. e. about 600 A.D.) issued from 'Vaidiśa-vāsaka'



- skandhāvārāt' (E. I. vol. XII. at p. 30
 Vidyādhara—(under Gaṇḍakī and Śāla-
 grāma) Var. 145. 62
 Vidyādhareśvara—(under VS) K. I. 35.
 11, P. I. 37. 14
 Vidvara—(m.) Devala q. by T. K. p.
 250. Is it Vidūra?
 Vidyātīrtha—(same as Sandhyā) V. 84.
 52, P. I. 32. 16
 Vidyeśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K.
 p. 49
 Vihāṅgeśvara—(under Narmadā) P. I.
 21. 1
 Vihārātīrtha—(of Madana, under
 Sarasvatī) Vām. 42. 10
 Vijayeśvara—(modern Vijabror in
 pargana Vular in Kāśmīra) HC. X.
 191-195 (HC calls it mahākṣetra).
 Ain. A. vol. II. p. 356 refers to this.
 Vitastā is to its east and north,
 Gambhīrā to the west and Viśvavati
 to the south
 Vijaya—(a līṅga) M. 22.73, K. II. 35.21
 Vijaya-līṅga—(under VS) L. q. by T. K.
 p. 112
 Vijayeśa—(in Kāśmīra) NM. 1240, R.
 I. 38, SM. p. 173; one of the
 most famous tīrthas in Kāśmīra. It
 is less than two miles above Cakra-
 dhara
 Vijayeśvara—A (in Kāśmīra) R. I. 105
 and 113; B (under VS) L. q. by T. K.
 p. 76
 Vijvareśvara—(under VS) L. q. by
 T. K. p. 43
 Vikīrṇātīrtha—(under Sābhramatī) P.
 VI. 133. 7
 Vimala—V. 82. 87 (where silver and
 golden-coloured fish were found),
 P. I. 24. 35 (same verse in both)
 Vimalā—(a city) P. IV. 17. 67 (destroys
 sins. of numerous murders, just as
 Avantī and Kāñcī do)
 Vimala—(a famous spring near Mār-
 tāṇḍa temple in Kāśmīra), Vide
 Mārtāṇḍa p. 780 above
 Vimalāsoka—V. 84. 69-70, P. I. 32. 33
 (almost same verse in both).
 Vimalēśa—(under VS.) L. q. by T. K.
 p. 56
 Vimalēśvara—A (under Narmadā) M.
 190. 14, 194 38-39, 22. 8, K. II.
 41. 5 and II. 42. 36, P. I. 17. 11;
 B (under Sarasvatī) Vām. 34. 15,
 P. VI. 131. 50
 Vimocana—V. 83. 161, P. I. 27. 49
 Vinaśana—(where Sarasvatī disappears
 in the great desert in Ambala and
 Sirhind in Punjab). It was known
 from Brāhmaṇa period; vide
 pp. 682 and 684 above and V.
 82. 111, 130. 3-4. Śal. 37, 1
 (śūdrābhīrān prati dveṣāt yatra
 naśtā Sarasvatī), K. II. 37. 29, Br.
 III. 13. 69. Manu II. 21 mentions it
 as the eastern boundry of Madhya-
 deśa. Devala q. by T. K. p. 250 speaks
 of it as one of the Sārasvatatīrthas.
 Mbh. (vol. I. p. 475 on Pāṇ. II. 4.10
 and vol. III. p. 174 on Pāṇ. VI. 3.
 109) speaks of it as 'ādarsa' and as
 eastern boundary of Āryāvarta. The
 Kāśikā on Pāṇ. IV. 2. 124 speaks of
 Ādarsa as a Janapada (country). As
 Oldham says (in JRAS for 1893 at
 p. 52) the exact position of Vinaśana
 is unknown, but Oldham surmises that
 it was not far from Sirsa.
 Vināyakakuṇḍa—(under VS) L. q. by
 T. K. p. 53
 Vināyakeśvara—(under VS) SK. IV. 33.
 126
 Vindhya—one of the seven great moun-
 tain ranges of Bharatavarṣa) V. 313.
 2, Bhī. 9. 11, Vā. 77.34, M. 13. 39,
 Bh. V. 19. 16. It is the Ouindion
 of Ptolemy (p. 77)
 Vindhyaśinī—(a Devīsthāna) M. 13.
 39, Devī—Bh. VII. 38. 8.
 Vipās—(modern Beas river in Punjab
 and Hyphasis or Hypasis of Greek
 writers) Rg. III. 33. 113. IV. 30. 11.
 The Nir. IX. 26 explaining Rg. X.
 75. 5 states that Vipās was originally
 called Uruñjirā, and then Arjikiyā
 and that when Vasistha threw him-

- self into it bound by ropes through grief he rose up from the river with the ropes rent asunder. Pān. (IV. 2. 74 'udak ca Vipāsah') mentions Vipās in connection with hills to the north of it; Ādi. 177. 1-5 refer to Vasiṣṭha's attempt to commit suicide, V. 130, 8-9 (Vipāsā here), Anu. 3. 12-13 refer to the same story. Vide Rām. II. 68. 19, Vām. 79.6, N II 60. 30
- Vipratīrtha—(under Go.) B 167. 1 and 33 (also called Nārāyaṇa)
- Virabhadreśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 87.
- Viraja—A (country round Jāipur in Orissa) V 85. 6; B (acc. to Tīrthendusekhara p. 6) it is Loṇāradeśa and lake i. e. in Buldana District in Berar; C (on Sahya m. near Godāvarī and Bhīmā) B 161. 3,
- Virajā—(r. in Orissa) K II. 35. 25-26, Vām. q. by T. K. p. 235
- Virajamaṇḍala—(northern boundary of Odradeśa) B. 28. 1-2
- Virajatīrtha—(on Vaitaraṇī river in Orissa) V. 85. 6, P. I. 39. 6, I. 45. 28-29, (it is an Ādityatīrtha), B. 42. 1 (Viraje Virajā mātā brahmāṇī sampratīṣṭhitā), Vām. 22. 19 (the southern vedī of Brahmā), Br. III. 13. 57. Vide T. P. pp. 598-599 for Viraja-kṣetra, which is the popular name of Jāipur in Orissa
- Virajādri—(under Gayā) Vā. 106. 85 (Gayāsura's navel rested on it)
- Virapatnī—(r.) Rg. I. 104.4
- Virapramokṣa—V. 84. 51, P I. 32. 14 (same verse in both); probably near Bhṛgulinga
- Virāśrama—V. 84. 145 (where Kārtikeya resides).
- Vīrasthala—(under Mathurā) Var. 157. 14, 160.20
- Virūpākṣa—A (Hampī) P V. 17. 103, SK., Brahmakhaṇḍa 52. 102; B (under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 102
- Viśakhayūpa—(near Kurukṣetra) V 90. 15, 177. 16, Vām. 81. 9, Nr. 65. 14
- (Viṣṇu's *guhya* name is Viśvesa here)
- Viśālā—A—same as Ujjayinī; Megha-dūta I. 30; vide under Avantī and Ujjayinī. A. C. says 'Ujjayinī syād—Viśālāvantī Puṣpakaraṇḍinī'; B (*āśrama* near Badārī) V 90.25, 139. 11, Anu. 25. 44, Bh. V. 4.5, XI. 29. 47; C (under Gayā) Vām. 81. 26-32 (a river), Ag. 115. 54, P. I. 38.33
- Viśālākhyavana—Mār. 106. 57 (on a mountain in Kāmarūpa)
- Viśālākṣ—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 115
- Viśalyā—A (r.) V. 84. 14; B (under Narmadā) M. 186.43 and 46-48 (also called Viśalyakaraṇī), K. II. 40. 27, P. I. 13. 39, Br. III. 13. 12
- Viśaprastha—(hill) V 95. 3 (near Gomatī probably)
- Viṣṇucaṅkramaṇa—(under Dvārakā) Var. 149. 80 q. by T. K. p. 227
- Viṣṇudhārā—(under Kokāmukha) Var. 140. 17
- Viṣṇu-Gayā—P. VI. 176. 41 (where there is Loṇārakuṇḍa)
- Viṣṇukāñcī—P. VI. 204. 30
- Viṣṇupada—A (under Kurukṣetra) V. 83. 103, 130.8, NM 1238; B (lake on Niśadha mountain) Br. II. 18. 67, Vā 47. 64; C (under Gayā) vide pp. 645, 646, 653 and note 1471 above and R. D. Banerji's 'Pālas of Bengal' (Memoirs of A. S. B. vol. V pp. 60-61 for Viṣṇupāda temple Inscription of the 7th year of Nārāyaṇapāla's reign; D (under Śālagrāma) Var. 145. 42
- Viṣṇupadī—(name of Gaṅgā, as it is said to rise from the left toe of Viṣṇu) Bh. V. 17. 1. Amarakośa mentions it as a synonym of Gaṅgā (Gaṅgā Viṣṇupadī Jahnu-tanayā)
- Viṣṇusaras—A (under Kokāmukha) Var. 140. 24; B (under Gomakṣaṇa) Var. 147. 43
- Viṣṇutīrtha—A (under Kokāmukha) Var. 140. 71-74; B (under Narmadā)



- M 191. 99, K. II. 41.52 (it is Yodhī-puram Viṣṇusthānam); P I. 18. 94 (known as Yodhanīpura); C (under Go.) B. 136. 1 and 41 (also called Maudgalya).
- Viṣṇutīrthas—(108 enumerated) P. VI. 129. 5-36.
- Viśokā—(r. in Kāśmīra) modern Veśan NM. 307, 373, 381, 1493, HC. XII. 35. NM. 307 says that Lakṣmī at the request of sage Kaśyapa became Viśokā; NM. 381 says that it formed Vitastā below Vijabror; NM. 1491-1493 speak of the confluence of Kauṇḍinī rising from lake Kramasāra with Viśokā.
- Viśrāntitīrtha—A (the most sacred spot in Mathurā) Var. 163. 162, 167.1 ff, P. VI. 209.5 (on the bank of Yamunā where Kamsa was killed by Kṛṣṇa); B (a different kṣetra from the above in Madhuvana, where Viṣṇu assumed the form of Varāha) P. VI. 209. 1-3 and 5
- Viśvā—(r.) Bh. V. 19. 18
- Viśvakarmesvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 55
- Viśvakāya—P. VI. 129, 8
- Viśvāmitranadī—V. 89. 9, Bhī. 9. 26 (has Viśvāmitrā as a river)
- Viśvāmitra—mabānada (in Punjab) NM. 151
- Viśvāmitrāśrama—Rām. I. 26. 34
- Viśvāmitratīrtha—A V. 83. 139; B (under Go.) B 93. 4 and 27 (where Rāma honoured Viśvāmitra), P I. 27. 28
- Viśvamukha—(tīrtha on Jālandhara) Vide under Jālandhara p. 758 and P. VI. 129. 26
- Viśvapada—(a pitṛtīrtha) M. 22. 35
- Viśvarūpa—(under VS) P. I. 37. 2
- Viśvarūpaka—P. VI. 129. 14 (in Māyāpurī, it appears)
- Viśvavati—same as Viśokā HC. X. 192 (it is southern boundary of Vijayēśvara)
- Viśvedevesvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 87.
- Viśveśvara—(one of five līngas in VS) K. I. 32. 12 and II. 41.59, P. I. 34. 10, N II. 51. 4; vide pp. 632-33 above; B (in Girikarṇa) P. VI. 129.10.
- Viśvāvasveśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 116.
- Vitamsā—one of the ten great rivers that flow from the Himālaya, mentioned in 'Questions of Milinda' (S. B. E. vol. 35 p. 171). Dey p. 40 identifies it with the Vitastā without assigning any reason.
- Viṭāṅkā—saṅgama (with Narmadā) P. II. 92.33.
- Vitastā—(r. in Kāśmīra, now known as Zhelum) Rg. X. 75. 5. Vide under Kāśmīra and Takṣakanāga; V. 82. 88-90 (Vitastā is the home of Takṣakanāga), 130, 20, K. II. 44. 4, Vām. 90. 7, NM 45, 305-06 (Umā became Vitastā), 336-341 (Śaṅkara struck with his trident and made a hole as big as *vitasti* i. e. 12 aṅgulas and Satī came bubbling forth as a river which is called Vitastā from the word Vitasti). R. V. 97-100 inform us that the great and self-taught engineer Suyya in the days of king Avantivarman of Kāśmīra (9th century) changed the course of the Vitastā and the spot of its confluence with the Sindhu. Vide Stein's note I in translation of R. vol. II pp. 329-336 and the note of Mr. J. C. Chatterji challenging the correctness of Dr. Stein's remarks (in 'confluence of the Vitastā and the Sindhu', 1906)
- Vitastā-Gambhīrā-saṅgama—SM. pp. 101, 110
- Vitastā-madhumatī-saṅgama—NM 1442
- Vitastā-sindhu-saṅgama—(exceptional sanctity) R. IV. 391, V. 82. 97-100, NM 394-95. The place where these two rivers meet enjoys among Kāśmīra people the same sanctity as the confluence at Prayāga.

Vitastātra—(spring of Vithavutur, one mile to the north-west of Vernag spring in Kāśmīra) R. I. 102-103. Aśoka is said to have built many stūpas here. This spring is traditionally considered to be the main source of the Vitastā. Vide SM p. 182
Vraja—(village of Nand-Gopa) Bh. X. 1. 10. Vide Gokula above.

Vṛddhakanyātīrtha—(sage Gālava's son married an old spinster who had practised *tapas* for a husband worthy of her) Śal. 52.1-25, Devala q. by T.K. p. 250 (as one of the Sārasvatatīrthas)

Vṛddhapura—(where there is a lake of Sanaīścara i. e. Saturn) P. VI. 34. 53-55

Vṛddhāsāṅgama—(under Go.) B 107.1

Vṛddhi-Vināyaka—(under Gayā) Ag 116. 31

Vṛndāvana—(last of the twelve vanas of Mathurā) M 13. 38 (Devī is Rādhā here), Var. 153, 45, 156.6 (the demon Keśin was destroyed here), Bh. X. 11.28 and 36, X. 20, X. 21. 5 and 10, P. IV. 69 9, IV 75. 8-14 (esoteric interpretation), IV. 81. 60 (is the best place in Mathurā), VI. 16. 72 (where Vṛndā gave up her mortal body), BV (Kṛṣṇajanmakhaṇḍa) chap. 17. 204-222 (explain how Vṛndā performed *tapas* and how Vṛndā is one of the 16 names of Rādhā. A G. identifies Klisoboras of Arrian with this

Vṛṣabhāñjaka—(under Mathurā) Var. 157 33

Vṛṣabheśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 43.

Vṛṣadhvaṇa—(under VS) K. I. 35, 13, L. I. 92, 106, N II. 50. 48

Vṛṣākapa—(under Go.) B. 129. 1.

Vṛṣotsarga—(under Narmadā) K. II. 42. 8

Vṛtraghnī—(r. that springs from Pāriyātra) Br. II. 16. 27, Mār. 54. 19. Dey p. 42 says that it is a tributary of the Sābhramatī

Vṛtreśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 96

Vyāghreśvara—(under VS) K. I. 35.14, P. I. 37. 17, L. I. 92. 109, N. II. 50. 56

Vyāsakuṇḍa—(under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 86

Vyāsasaras—Vā. 77. 51, Br. III. 13.52

Vyāsasthali—(where Vyāsa resolved to die on the loss of his son), N II. 65. 83-84, P. I. 26. 90-91

Vyāsātīrtha—A (in Kurukṣetra) K. II. 37. 29, Br. III. 13. 69; B (under Narmadā) Vā. 77. 67, P. I. 18. 38; C (under Go.) B 158. 1

Vyāsavana—(near Miśraka) P. I. 26. 87

Vyoma-Gaṅgā—(under Gayā) N II. 47. 57

Vyoma-līṅga—(under Śrīparvata) I. I. 92. 161

Vyoma-tīrtha—(under VS) P. I. 37.14

Y

Yajana—V. 82. 106

Yājñavalkya-līṅga—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. pp. 47, 88

Yājñavarāha—celebrated temple of Varāhadeva at Yājñapura or Jājpur on Vaitaraṇī in Orissa

Yakṣātīrtha—(later called Hamsatīrtha) Var. 144. 155-156

Yakṣiṇī-saṅgama (under Go.) B. 132. 1.

Yamalārjunakuṇḍa—(under Mathurā) Var. q. by T. K. p. 188.

Yamatīrtha—A (under VS) K. I, 35 6, II. 41. 83; B (under Go.) B 125. 1 and 131. 1; C (under Narmadā) P. I. 37. 6.

Yamavyasanaka—(under Kokāmukha) Var. 140. 55.

Yamunā—(r.) Rg. V. 52. 17, VII. 18. 19, X. 75. 5. For Yamunā-māhātmya, vide P. VI. chapters 195-197. It is the Jomanes of Pliny

Yamunāprabhava—(Yamnoti) K. II. 37, 30, Br. III. 13. 71 (where there are hot springs and very cold water)

Yamunāsaṅgama—Var. 174 deals with its power.

Yamunātīrtha—Sal. 49. 11-16 (where Varuṇa performed Rājasūya). M. 108. 23-24 (as the daughter of the sun), P. I. 29. 6.

Yamuneśvara—A (under VS) L. q. by T.K. p. 66; B (under Mathurā) Var. 154. 12

Yantresvara—(on north bank of Narmadā) M. 190. 1.

Yaṣṭi—(under Gayā) N. II. 47.82. Dey p. 215 says it is 'Jethian' about two miles north of Tapovana in Gayā

Yavatīrtha—(under Narmadā) M. 191. 88.

Yāyātātīrtha—A (under Sarasvatī) Vām. 39. 36; B (under VS) Sal. 41. 32, P. I. 37.9

Yayātipatana—V 82. 48, P. I. 12. 8 (same words in both)

Yayātipura—(modern Jāipur) on the Vaitaraṇī river in Orissa; A.G. p. 512.

In E. I. vol. XI. p. 189 there is a Yayātinagara. It is doubtful whether it is the same as Jāipur.

Yayātīśvara—(under VS) L. q. by T. K. p. 115.

Yogitīrtha—(under Sūkara) Var. q. by T. K. p. 210

Yonidvāra—(on the Brahmayoni hill in Gayā) V. 84. 94-95, P. I. 38. 15 (same words in both), N. II. 44. 76-77

Yugandhara—A—a country or people acc. to Pāṇ. IV. 2. 130 and the Kāśikā mentions it as one of Śālvā-vayavas; B (a m.) acc. to Kāśikā on Pāṇ. III. 2. 46. Vām. 34. 47 'Yugandhare dadhi prāṣya uṣitvā cācyutasthale tadvad-Bhūtālaye snātvā saputrā vastum-icchasi'. Br. S. 32. 19 appears to mention Yaugandhara as the name of a people or country.



CONCLUDING REMARKS ON TĪRTHAS

At the end of this long list of tīrthas a few words, as promised on p. 722 above, must be said about the attitude that we Indians of the 20th century should adopt towards the mountains, rivers and other holy places in Bhārata. Modern secular education and the prevailing economic conditions, stresses and trends leave hardly any room for moral and spiritual uplift. We are surrounded on all sides by anxiety, want, misery, hardness of heart and crime. Therefore, the endeavour of all those who have the good of our country at heart must be to cherish all such institutions as tend to lift the mind out of narrowness and to make it concentrate for some time at least on noble thoughts and aspirations and on detachment from the all-engrossing pursuit of money. Pilgrimage is one of such institutions. Those who have faith in pilgrimages as enabling a pilgrim to attain heaven, to collect merit and reach release from saṃsāra should give pilgrimages a new orientation, should see that their charity is not wasted on indolent, ignorant and vicious priests, should improve the methods of worship at holy places in such a way as will satisfy all hygienic requirements. The priestly class at holy places should remember that in the coming generations they are likely to find their occupation gone, unless they improve themselves, unless they try to be less ignorant and indolent than they are at present and really serve as honest business agents or Travelers' Guides. The number of people visiting holy places in the belief of accumulating merit is sure to become less and less, as modern secular education spreads. But it would be a calamity for the moral and spiritual greatness of India if pilgrimages to holy mountains and rivers came to be stopped altogether. I would very strongly recommend to all men, however highly educated, the undertaking of pilgrimages to certain hallowed spots. Our country has recently secured independence and it now rests entirely with us to make or mar the character of the teeming millions of this our land. All things that tend to create in Indians the deep feeling that amidst diversities of physical features, food, dress and habits, all of them are one people, that there is no part or district of this vast land which cannot claim to have made some substantial contribution in religious and philosophical thought, in abiding literature, in works of art and in holy places, that the destinies of the Indians



of one part of Bhārata are bound up with the destinies of all others. Frequent visits to distant places in Bhārata, mixing up among people of other parts and understanding their peculiar good points, needs and failings is absolutely necessary if we are to keep our freedom. India is thrice blest in the mountain ranges of the Himālaya, which contains the highest peaks in the world and is full of large and life-giving rivers and of numerous shrines associated with the names of the greatest sages and heroes of antiquity. Every Indian who is proud of the great religious and spiritual heritage of our country must make it a point to devote some part of his time to frequenting holy mountains, rivers and other places of pilgrimage. When we see even from a distance the purity, the whiteness and the serenity of the snow-capped peaks of the Himālaya, the play of delicate and exquisite hues and tints of blue, mauve, and pink when the sun begins to shine on them, a sense of wonder, joy and elevation comes upon us. The glorious view of a peak like Kinchinjunga, which is an unforgettable experience, lifts up the whole life of the onlooker to a higher plane for long. Similarly, the sight of the holy Ganges at night or at sunrise in Haridvāra or on the majestic Ghats in Banaras surely empties our minds of meanness and for the moment at least fills our hearts with a sense of nature's beauty and with purity, and brings us in tune with the Infinite. I may state here that the talk of the conquest of Everest in which some members of European expeditions indulge jars on my ears. This great peak has so far vanquished (physically) all those who attempted the conquest. § But in a figurative sense Everest and other high peaks have been for ages conquering the hearts of men. Even the members of these expeditions will admit that Everest and its brethren have drawn men to themselves from all parts of the world, made them give up their usual uneventful and placid activities, have evoked in those who attempt the climbing of these giants unbelievable courage, endurance, resourcefulness and self-abnegation and have been instrumental in exhibiting to the world what unknown powers the human spirit possesses. Therefore, these silent but awe-inspiring peaks should be looked upon as teachers of mankind and not as material things to be conquered and dealt with by human beings as they please.

§ While these pages were passing through the Press, news was broadcast on the very morning of the coronation of Queen Elizabeth II that Sherpa Tensing Norkay and Mr. Edmund Hillary, two members of Col. Hunt's British Expedition, had successfully climbed to the top of Mount Everest.

APPENDIX—of long Sanskrit Passages

Page 118 Note 267. On pp. 117–118 above reference has been made to the re-admission into the Hindu fold of those that had been converted to Christianity or Islam by force or fraud or even voluntarily. Not only was there re-admission of those that were converted, but non-Hindus, such as Yavanas, Kirātas, Śakas, were absorbed into the Hindu fold and were induced to adopt the practices of Hindus (such as śrāddhas and gifts to brāhmaṇas). Vide Śāntiparva chap. 65. 13–21 quoted above in note 830 (p. 364). A Greek ambassador of king Antalikita (Antialkidas) named Heliadora, son of Diya (Dion), was accredited to the court of king Bhāgabhadra, called himself Bhāga-vata and raised a column in honour of Vāsudeva in the 2nd century B. C. (JRAS 1909, pp. 1053 and 1087 and JBBRAS vol. 23 p. 104). Uṣavadāta, son of Dīnika and son-in-law of Kṣatrapa Nahapāna, is described in one of the Nasik inscriptions (No. 14a in E. I. vol. VIII at p. 85) as a śaka, but made very extensive donations to brāhmaṇas at Broach, Prabhāsa and other places. Part of one of his inscriptions is cited on p. 710 note 1618 above. Though the name Uṣavadāta (Rṣabha-datta) is a Sanskritized one the two names Dīnika and Naha-pāna of the Kṣaharāta race appear to be non-Indian. Ābhiras, Hūṇas and Gurjaras became absorbed into the Hindu community. People, after being made Moslems, returned to their original communities and gods. Moslem writers make this clear. Vide Elliot and Dowsons' 'History of India' vol. I. p. 126 ('the people of India had returned to idolatry, excepting those of Kasa') and Alberuni's India (tr. by Sachau) vol. II. pp. 162–163 where he refers to the return of Hindu slaves in Moslem countries to their country and religion. Prof. D. R. Bhandarkar in 'Some aspects of Ancient Indian Culture' (1940) pp. 59–65 presents a very lucid and informing summary of the evidence on this point of the re-admission of those that were converted and of the absorption of non-Hindus. But it is not known what procedure was followed for this purpose. Therefore, a model rite for the return of a convert is set out here.

परावर्तिष्णुः (एकः अनेके वा पुरुषाः स्त्रियो वा) स्नात्वा धौतं शुभ्रं वासः परिधाय
(स्त्रियस्तु यथायोग्यं यथाचारं वा परिधाय) चन्दनादिभिस्तिलकं कृत्वा (स्त्रियस्तु कुङ्कुमादि-
द्रव्येण तिलकं कृत्वा) शिष्टसभां प्रार्थयेत् । सर्वे धर्मविवेक्तारो ज्ञानशीलसमन्विताः । विधिश्चाह
परावर्त्य संग्राह्यः स्यां मनीषिभिः । इति । अथ शिष्टाः परावर्तिष्णोः (परावर्तिष्णुना वा)

देशकाल-कामाकामशक्त्यादि विचार्य अत्यल्प-अल्प-गुरूणामन्यतमं प्रायश्चित्तं निश्चित्य 'ओं तथा । अमुकप्रायश्चित्तं कृत्वा परावर्तनविधिना भवान् संगृहीतो भविष्यति' इति ब्रूयुः । परावर्तिष्णवे नूतनं वासश्च दद्यात् । स च तत्परिदध्यात् । ततः परावर्तिष्णुरासने पूर्वाभिमुख उपविश्य आचम्य प्राणानायम्य 'इह पृथिव्यां जम्बूद्वीपे भरतवर्षे दक्षिणापथे ('आर्यावर्ते' इति नर्मदाया उत्तरतः) अमुकग्रामे अद्य अमुकनामसंवत्सरे अमुकमासे अमुकपक्षे अमुकतिथौ अमुकवासरे अमुकनक्षत्रे हिन्दुधर्मे परावर्तिष्णुरहं शिष्टैरुपदिष्टं प्रायश्चित्तं करिष्ये' इति सङ्कल्प्य प्रायश्चित्तं कुर्यात् । सङ्कल्पोत्तरमाचार्य आसने प्राङ्मुख उपविश्य स्वदक्षिणतः परा-

वर्तिष्णुमुपवेश्य आचमनं कारयित्वा स्वयं द्विराचम्य पवित्रपाणिः प्राणानायम्य गणपतिं ध्यायेत् । 'ओं गणानां त्वा गणपतिं हवामहे कविं कवीनामुपमश्रवस्तमम् । ज्येष्ठराजं ब्रह्मणां ब्रह्मणस्पत आ नः शृण्वन्नतिभिः सीद सादनम् ॥' इति प्रार्थयेत् । 'ओं महागणपतये नमो नमः । निर्विघ्नं कुरु' इति नमेत् । ततो देशकालौ संकीर्त्य 'इह पृथिव्यां... नक्षत्रे अस्य परावर्तनेच्छोः परावर्तनविधिं करिष्ये' इति सङ्कल्प्य पुण्याहवाचनं कुर्यात् । 'अस्य परावर्तनेच्छोः परावर्तनाख्यस्य कर्मणः पुण्याहं भवन्तो ब्रुवन्तु' इति प्रार्थयेत् । शिष्टाः 'ओं पुण्याहम्' इति ब्रूयुः । आचार्यः 'अस्य परावर्तिष्णोः करिष्यमाणपरावर्तनाख्याय कर्मणे स्वस्ति भवन्तो ब्रुवन्तु' इति ब्रूयात् । शिष्टास्तु 'ओं स्वस्ति' इति प्रतिब्रूयुः । आचार्यः 'अस्य परावर्तिष्णोः करिष्यमाणपरावर्तनाख्यस्य कर्मण ऋद्धिं भवन्तो ब्रुवन्तु' इति ब्रूयात् । शिष्टाः 'ओं कर्म ऋध्यतात्' इति प्रतिब्रूयुः । ततः शिष्टान्सत्कृत्य प्रणम्य च विसर्जयेत् । तत आचार्यो गोमयालिप्ते शुद्धे स्थले शुद्धमृदा चतुर्विंशत्यङ्गुलमात्रं समचतुरस्रं चतुरङ्गुलोज्जतं स्थाण्डिलं कृत्वा अभ्युक्ष्य तत्र, ओं भूर्भुवः स्वः प्रवेशकनामानमग्निं प्रतिष्ठापयामीत्युक्त्वाग्निं प्रतिष्ठापयेत् । प्रोक्षितेन्धनानि निक्षिप्य धमन्यादिना प्रज्वालय 'अग्ने वैश्वानरं शाण्डिल्यगोत्रं मेघध्वजं मम संमुखो वरदो भव' इति प्रार्थयेत् । अग्निं परिस्रमुद्य परिस्तीर्य पर्युक्ष्य प्रादेशमात्रं पञ्च-दशमिधं प्रादेशमात्रं बर्हिश्च संनह्याग्नेरुत्तरतो निदध्यात् । तत आत्मनोऽग्रतो भूमिं प्रोक्ष्य तत्र बर्हिरास्तीर्य तत्राज्यस्थालीमाज्यस्य पूर्णं निदधाति । दक्षिणेन हस्तेन दर्वीमग्नौ निष्टप्य वामहस्तेन गृहीत्वा दक्षिणेन हस्तेन दर्भाग्रैर्दर्वीबिलं संमार्ष्टि दर्भमूलैश्च दर्वीमूलम् । पुनर्निष्टप्य प्रोक्ष्य आज्यस्थालया उत्तरतो बर्हिषि निदधाति । संमार्गदर्भानग्नौ प्रहरेत् । इधमबन्धनरज्जुं भूमौ निधाय तत्रेधमं संस्थाप्य दर्व्याज्येन मूलमध्याग्रेण्वभिधार्य दक्षिणेन हस्तेन गृहीत्वा 'ओं, अयं त इधम आत्मा जातवेदस्तेनेधयस्व वर्धस्व चेन्धि वर्धय चास्मान्प्रजया पशुभिर्ब्रह्मवर्च-सेनान्नाद्येन समेधय स्वाहा' इति मन्त्रेणाग्नावभ्याधाय 'जातवेदसेऽग्नय इदं न मम' इति त्याजेत् । दर्व्याज्यमादाय स्थाण्डिलस्य वायव्यकोणमारभ्याग्नेयकोणपर्यन्तमखण्डधारयाऽग्नौ जुहोति । पुनर्दर्व्याज्यमादाय नैऋतकोणमारभ्य ऐशानकोणपर्यन्तं तथैव जुहोति । तूष्णीमेतावाधारहोमौ । पुनर्दर्व्याज्येन 'ओं अग्नये स्वाहा' इत्यग्नावुत्तरभागे जुहोति । अग्नय इदं न ममेति त्यागः । पुनर्दर्व्याज्येन 'ओं सोमाय स्वाहा' इत्यग्नौ दक्षिणभागे जुहोति । 'सोमायेदं न मम' इति त्यागः । अस्मिन्काले परावर्तिष्णुराचार्यस्य दक्षिणतः प्रहः कृताञ्जलि-स्तिष्ठन् आचार्यं प्रार्थयते । 'हिन्दुत्वमागाम् । हिन्दुरसानि' इति । आचार्यः 'ओं तथास्तु' इति ब्रूयात् । तत आचार्यः अभ्याग्निं कृताञ्जलौ तिष्ठति प्रविविक्षौ (अथवा कृताञ्जलिषु प्रविविक्षुषु) दर्व्या आज्येन चतुर्भिर्मन्त्रैश्चतस्रः प्रधानाहुतीर्जुहोति । 'ओं भूः स्वाहा । अग्नय इदं न मम । ओं भुवः स्वाहा । वायव इदं न मम । ओं स्वः स्वाहा । सूर्यायेदं न मम । ओं प्रजापतये स्वाहा । प्रजापतय इदं न मम' । अथासीनः प्रविविक्षुः अग्नौ समिधमाधाय प्रदीप्तायां तस्यां दर्व्या आज्येन पञ्च प्रधानाहुतीर्जुहोति । ओं उद्वयं तमसस्पतिं पश्यन्तो ज्योतिरुत्तरम् । देवं देवत्रा सूर्यमगन्म ज्योतिरुत्तमं स्वाहा । सूर्याय ज्योतिष इदं न मम ॥ ओं उद्यन्नद्य मित्रमह आरोहन्नुत्तरां दिवम् । हृद्गोमं मम सूर्य हरिमाणं च नाशय स्वाहा । सूर्यायेदं न मम । ओं असतो मा सद्गमय स्वाहा । परमात्मन इदं न मम । ओं तमसो मा ज्योतिर्गमय स्वाहा । परमात्मन इदं न मम । ओं सृत्योर्माऽमृतं गमय स्वाहा । परमात्मन इदं न मम इति ।

अथाचार्यः प्रविविक्षुं स्वदक्षिणत उपवेश्य होमशेषं समापयेत् । ओं यदस्य कर्मणाऽस्यरोचिं यद्वा न्यूनमिहाकरम् । अग्निष्टत् स्विष्टकृद्विद्वान् सर्वं स्विष्टं सुहुतं करोतु मे ॥ अग्नये स्विष्टकृते सुहुतं हुते सर्वहुत आहुतीनां कामानां समर्धयित्रे स्वाहा इति स्विष्टकृतं जुहोति । अग्नये

स्विष्टकृत इदं न मम' इति त्यागः । इधमबन्धनरज्जुमग्नावभ्याधाय संस्त्रावं जुहोति । 'ओं विश्वेभ्यो देवेभ्यः स्वाहा' इति । 'विश्वेभ्यो देवेभ्य इदं न मम' इति त्यागः ।

तत आचार्यः प्रविविक्षुणा (अथवा प्रविविक्षुभिः) सह कृताञ्जलिस्तिष्ठञ्जपति । 'ओं च मे स्वरश्च मे यज्ञोप च ते नमश्च । यत्ते न्यूनं तस्मै त उपयत्तेऽतिरिक्तं तस्मै ते नमः । श्रद्धां मेधां यशः प्रज्ञां विद्यां बुद्धिं श्रियं बलम् । आयुष्यं तेज आरोग्यं देहि मे हव्यवाहन ।' इति ।

ततो होमावशिष्टं गोघृतं पात्रान्तरेण प्रविविक्षवे (अथवा प्रविविक्षुभ्यः प्रत्येकं) दद्यात् । प्रविविक्षुश्च 'ओं मित्राय स्वाहा' इति मन्त्रेण प्राश्नीयात् । ततः स्थण्डिलस्थां विभूतिमाचार्यः प्रविविक्षुश्च ललाटे धारयेताम् ।

तत आचार्यस्तिष्ठन् दर्व्या तीर्थोदकं गृहीत्वा 'ओम्' इत्यभिमन्त्र्य तेन आसीनप्रविविक्षुशिरसि 'ओं आप उन्दन्तु जीवसे दीर्घायुत्वाय वर्चसे' 'ओं' इति मन्त्राभ्यां सकृत् प्रोक्षेत् ।

ततः शिष्टैः प्रविविक्षोर्व्यावहारिकं किञ्चिन्नाम कार्यम् । ततः प्रविविक्षुहस्ते भगवद्गीता-पुस्तकं दत्त्वा साधारणधर्मः, दैवासुरसम्पत्तिः, अध्यात्मं चोपदेष्टव्यानि । ततः प्रविविक्षुः कृताञ्जलिस्तिष्ठन् वदेत् । 'भवद्भिरनुगृहीतोऽहं धर्मे मनो निधाय प्रवर्तिष्ये । ओं ओं ओं ।' ततो भगवन्तं सूर्यं दृष्ट्वा नमस्कृत्य प्रार्थयेत् । 'ओं सा मा सत्योक्तिः परिपातु विश्वतो द्यावा च यत्र ततनक्षहानि च । विश्वमन्यन्निविशते यदेजति विश्वाहापो विश्वाहोदेति सूर्यः ॥' इति ।

तत आचार्योऽग्रेः पश्चात् प्रविविक्षुणा (प्रविविक्षुभिः वा) सहोपविश्य 'अनेन विधिना सर्वोद्धारकः श्रीसूर्यनारायणः प्रीयताम्' इति कर्मसमाप्तिं सोदकं ब्रूयात् । 'ओं तत्सत्' इत्युक्त्वा द्विराचामेत् । ततः सर्वेभ्यः प्रसादं दत्त्वा सभां विसर्जयेत् ।

This procedure is based on the हिन्दूकरणविधि prepared by the Dharmānirṇayamaṇḍala, Lonavla. The late Lala Lajpat Rai in his work on the Aryasamaj gives (on pp. 221-222) a much briefer rite adopted by that body,

N. B.—These hymns are translated and annotated above at pp 191-201.

Note 441. ऋ. १०. १४. परेयिवांसं प्रवतो महीरनु बहुभ्यः पन्थामनुपस्पृशानम् । वैवस्वतं सङ्गमनं जनानां यमं राजानं हविषा दुवस्य ॥ १ यमो नो गातुं प्रथमो विवेद नैषा गव्यूतिरप-भतवा उ । यत्रा नः पूर्वेपितरः परेयुरेना जज्ञानाः पथ्या ३ अनु स्वाः ॥ २ मातली कव्यैर्यमो अङ्गिरोभिर्वृहस्पतिर्ऋक्कभिर्वावृधानः । यांश्च देवा वावृधुर्ये च देवान्स्वाहान्ये स्वधयान्ये मदन्ति ॥ ३ इमं यम प्रस्तरमा हि सीदाङ्गिरोभिः पितृभिः संविदानः । आ त्वा मन्त्राः कविशस्ता वहन्वेना राजन् हविषा मादयस्व ॥ ४ अङ्गिरोभिरा गाहि यज्ञियेभिर्यम वैरूपैरिह मादयस्व । विवस्वन्तं हुवे यः पिता तेऽस्मिन्यज्ञे बर्हिष्या निषद्य ॥ ५ अङ्गिरसो नः पितरो नवग्वा अथर्वाणो भृगवः सोम्यासः । तेषां वयं सुमतौ यज्ञियानामपि भद्रे सोमनसे स्याम ॥ ६ प्रेहि प्रेहि पथिभिः पूर्व्येभिर्यत्रा नः पूर्वे पितरः परेयुः । उभा राजाना स्वधया मदन्ता यमं पश्यासि वरुणं च देवम् ॥ ७ सं गच्छस्व पितृभिः सं यमेनेष्टापूतेन परमे व्योमन् । हित्वायावद्यं पुनरस्तमेहि सं गच्छस्व तन्वा सुवर्चाः ॥ ८ अपेत वीत वि च सर्पतातोऽस्मा एतं पितरो लोकमक्रन् । अहोभिरङ्गिरक्तुभिर्व्यक्तं यमो ददात्यवसानमस्मै ॥ ९ अति द्रव सारमेयौ श्वानौ चतुरक्षौ शबलौ साधुना पथा । अथा पितृन्सुविदत्राँ उपेहि यमेन ये सधमादं मदन्ति ॥ १० यौ ते श्वानौ यम रक्षितारौ चतुरक्षौ पथिरक्षौ नृचक्षसौ । ताभ्यामेनं परि देहि राजन्स्वस्ति चास्मा अनमीवं च धेहि ॥ ११ उरूणसावसुतृपा उदुम्बलौ यमस्य दूतौ चरतो जनाँ अनु । तावस्मभ्यं दृशये सूर्याय पुनर्दातामसुमद्येह भद्रम् ॥ १२ यमाय सोमं सुनुत यमाय जुहुता हविः यमं ह यज्ञो गच्छत्याग्निदूतो अरंकृतः ॥ १३ यमाय घृतवद्धविर्जुहोत प्र च तिष्ठत । स नो देवेभ्यः यमददीर्घमायुः प्रजीवसे ॥ १४ यमाय मधुमत्तमं राज्ञे हव्यं जुहोतन । इदं नमः कृषिभ्यः पूर्वजेभ्यः पूर्वैभ्यः पथिकृद्भ्यः ॥ १५ त्रिकद्रुकेभिः पतति षड्वीरकमिदहत् । त्रिण्डुग्वायज्ञं छन्दंसि सर्वा ता यम आहिता ॥ १६



ऋग्वेद १०. १५. उदीरतामवर उत्परास उन्मध्यमाः पितरः सोम्यासः । असुं य ईयुरवृका
 ऋतज्ञास्ते नोऽवन्तु पितरो हवेषु ॥ १ इदं पितृभ्यो नमो अस्त्वद्य ये पूर्वासो य उपरास ईयुः ।
 ये पार्थिवे रजस्या निषत्ता ये वा नूनं सुवृजनासु विश्वे ॥ २ आहं पितृन्सुविदत्रां अविस्ति नपातं
 च विक्रमणं च विष्णोः । बर्हिषदो ये स्वधया सुतस्य भजन्त पित्वस्त इहागमिष्ठाः ॥ ३ बर्हिषदः
 पितर उत्यर्वागिमा वो हव्या चकृमा जुषध्वम् । त आ गतावसा शंतमेनाथा नः शं योररपो
 दधात ॥ ४ उपहृताः पितरः सोम्यासो बर्हिष्येषु निधिषु प्रियेषु । त आ गमन्तु त इह श्रुवन्त्वाधि
 ब्रुवन्तु तेऽवन्त्वस्मान् ॥ ५ आच्या जानु दक्षिणतो निषद्येमं यज्ञमभिगृणीत विश्वे । मा हिंसिष्ट
 पितरः केनचिन्नो यद्वा आगः पुरुषता कराम ॥ ६ आसीनासो अरुणीनामुपस्थे रयिं धत्त दाशुषे
 मर्त्याय । पुत्रेभ्यः पितरस्तस्य वस्वः प्र यच्छत त इहोर्जे दधात ॥ ७ ये नः पूर्वे पितरः सोम्यासोऽ-
 नूहिरे सोमपीथं वसिष्ठाः । तेभिर्यमः संरराणो हवींष्युशन्नुशद्भिः प्रतिकाममत्त ॥ ८ ये तातृषुर्दे-
 वत्रा जेहमाना होत्राविदः स्तोमतष्ठासो अर्केः । आग्ने याहि सुविदत्रेभिरर्वाङ् सत्यैः कव्यैः
 पितृभिर्धर्मसद्भिः ॥ ९ ये सत्यासो हविरदो हविष्पा इन्द्रेण देवैः सरथं दधानाः । आग्ने याहि
 सहस्रं देववन्दैः परैः पूर्वैः पितृभिर्धर्मसद्भिः ॥ १० अग्निष्वात्ताः पितर एह गच्छत सदःसदः सदत
 सुप्रणीतयः । अत्ता हवींषि प्रयतानि बर्हिष्यथा रयिं सर्व वीरं दधातन ॥ ११ त्वमग्न ईळितो
 जातवेदोऽवाङ्मन्यानि सुरभीणि कृत्वा । प्रादाः पितृभ्यः स्वधया तेऽक्षच्छद्भि त्वं देव प्रयता
 हवींषि ॥ १२ ये चेह पितरो ये च नेह यांश्च विद्म याँ उ च न प्रविद्म । त्वं वेत्थ यति ते
 जातवेदः स्वधाभिर्यज्ञं सुकृतं जुषस्व ॥ १३ ये अग्निदग्धा ये अनग्निदग्धा मध्ये दिवः स्वधया
 मादयन्ते । तेभिः स्वराळसुनीतिमेतां यथावशं तन्वं कल्पयस्व ॥ १४

ऋ. १०. १५. मैनमग्ने वि दहो माभि शोचो मास्य त्वचं चिक्षिपो मा शरीरम् । यदा शृतं
 कृणवो जातवेदोऽथेमेनं प्रहिणुतात्पितृभ्यः ॥ १ शृतं यदा करासि जातवेदोऽथेमेनं परि दत्तात्पितृभ्यः ।
 यदा गच्छात्युसुनीतिमेतामथा देवानां वशनीर्भवाति ॥ २ सूर्यं चक्षुर्गच्छतु वातमात्मा द्यां च गच्छ
 पृथिवीं च धर्मणा । अपो वा गच्छ यदि तत्र ते हितमोषधीषु प्रति तिष्ठा शरीरैः ॥ ३ अजो भागस्त-
 पसा तं तपस्व तं ते शोचिस्तपतु तं ते अर्चिः । यास्ते शिवास्तन्वो जातवेदस्ताभिर्वहैनं सुकृतासु
 लोकम् ॥ ४ अव सृज पुनरग्ने पितृभ्यो यस्त आहुतश्चरति स्वधाभिः । आयुर्वसान उप वेतु शेषः
 सं गच्छतां तन्वा जातवेदः ॥ ५ यत्ते कृष्णः शकुन आतुतोद पिपीलः सर्प उत वा श्वापदः ।
 अग्निष्टद्विश्वाद्गदं कृणोतु सोमश्च यो ब्राह्मणां आविवेश ॥ ६ अग्नेर्वर्म परि गोभिर्व्ययस्व सं प्रोर्ण्व
 पीवसा मेदसा च । नेत्वा धृष्णुर्हरसा जर्हषाणो दधृग्विधक्ष्यन् पर्यङ्क्याते ॥ ७ इममग्ने चमसं मा
 वि जिह्वरः प्रियो देवानामुत सोम्यानाम् । एष यश्चमसो देवपानस्तस्मिन्देवा अमृता मादयन्ते ॥ ८
 ऋग्व्यादमग्निं प्र हिणोमि दूरं यमराज्ञो गच्छतु रिप्रवाहः । इहैवायमितरो जातवेदा देवेभ्यो हव्यं
 वहतु प्रजानन् ॥ ९ यो अग्निः ऋग्व्यात्प्रविवेश वो गृहमिमं पश्यन्नितरं जातवेदसम् । तं हरामि
 पितृयज्ञाय देवं स धर्ममिन्वात्परमे सधस्थे ॥ १० यो अग्निः ऋग्व्यावाहनः पितृन्यक्षदतावृधः ।
 प्रेदु हव्यानि वोचति देवेभ्यश्च पितृभ्य आ ॥ ११ उशन्तस्त्वा नि धीमह्युशन्तः समिधीमहि ।
 उशन्नुशत आ वह पितृन्हविषे अत्तवे ॥ १२ यं त्वमग्ने समदहस्तसु निर्वापया पुनः । कियाम्बवत्र
 रोहतु पाकदूर्वा व्यल्कशा ॥ १३ शीतिके शीतिकावति ह्लादिके ह्लादिकावति । मण्डूक्या
 सु सं गम इमं स्वर्गिर्हर्षय ॥ १४

ऋ. १०. १७ त्वष्टा दुहित्रे वहतुं कृणोतीतीर्दं विश्वं भुवनं समेति । यमस्य माता पर्युह्य-
 माना महो जाया विवस्वतो ननाश ॥ १ अपागूहन्नमृतां मर्त्येभ्यः कृत्वी सवर्णामददुर्विवस्वते ।
 उताश्विनावभरद्यत्तदासीदजहादु द्वा मिथुना सरण्यूः ॥ २ पूषा त्वेतश्चयावयतु प्र विद्वाननष्ट-
 पशुर्भुवनस्य गोपाः । स त्वैतेभ्यः परि ददत्पितृभ्योऽग्निर्देवेभ्यः सुविदत्रियेभ्यः ॥ ३ आयुर्विश्वायुः
 परि पासति त्वा पूषा त्वा पातु प्रपथे पुरस्तात् । यत्रासते सुकृतो यत्र ते ययुस्तत्र त्वा देवः सविता
 दधातु ॥ ४ पूषेमा आशा अनु वेद सर्वाः सो अस्मां अभयतमेन नेषत् । स्वस्तिदा आघृणिः सर्व-
 वीरोऽप्रयुच्छन्पुर एतु प्रजानन् ॥ ५ प्रपथे पथामजनिष्ट पूषा प्रपथे दिवः प्रपथे पृथिव्याः । उभे अभि-
 प्रियतमे सधस्थे आ च परा च चरति प्रजानन् ॥ ६ सरस्वतीं देवयन्तो हवन्ते सरस्वतीमध्वर-
 तायमाने । सरस्वतीं सुकृतो अह्वयन्त सरस्वती दाशुषे वार्यं दात् ॥ ७ सरस्वति या सरस्वती
 स्वधाभिर्देवि पितृभिर्मदन्ती । आसद्यास्मिन् बर्हिषि मादयस्वानमीवा इष आ भेदस्मिन् ॥ ८
 सरस्वतीं यां पितरो हवन्ते दक्षिणा यज्ञमभिनक्षमाणाः । सहस्रार्धमिलो अत्र भागं यजमानेभ्यः

यजमानेषु धेहि ॥ ९ आपो अस्मान्मातरः शुन्ध्यन्तु घृतेन नो घृतप्वः पुनन्तु । विश्वं हि रिपं प्रवहन्ति देवीरुदिदाभ्यः शुचिरा पूत एमि ॥ १० द्रप्सश्चस्कन्द प्रथमां अनु यनिमं च योनिमनु यश्च पूर्वः । समानं योनिमनु संचरन्तं द्रप्सं जुहोम्यनु सप्त होत्राः ॥ ११ यस्ते द्रप्सः स्कन्दति यस्ते अंशुर्बाहुच्युतो धिषणाया उपस्थात् । अध्वर्योर्वा परि वा यः पवित्रात्तं ते जुहोमि मनसा वषट्कृतम् ॥ १२ यस्ते द्रप्सः स्कन्नो यस्ते अंशुरवश्च यः परः स्रुचा । अयं देवो बृहस्पतिः सं तं सिञ्चतु राधसे ॥ १३ पयस्वतीरोषधयः पयस्वन्मामकं वचः । अपां पयस्वदित्पयस्तेन मा सह शुन्ध्यत ॥ १४

क. १०. १८ परं भृत्यो अनु परोहि पन्थां यस्ते स्व इतरो देवयानात् । चक्षुष्मते शृण्वते ते ब्रवीमि मा नः प्रजां रीरिषो मोत वीरान् ॥ १ मृत्योः पदं योपयन्तो यदैत द्राघीय आयुः प्रतरं दधानाः । आप्यायमानाः प्रजया धनेन शुद्धाः पूता भवत यज्ञियासः ॥ २ इमे जीवा वि भूतेरा-ववृत्रक्षभृद्भद्रा देवदूतिर्नो अद्य । प्राञ्चो अगाम नृतये हसाय द्राघीय आयुः प्रतरं दधानाः ॥ ३ इमं जीवेभ्यः परिधिं दधामि मैषां नु गादपरो अर्धमेतम् । शतं जीवन्तु शरदः पुरुचीरन्तर्मुत्स्युं दधतां पर्वतेन ॥ ४ यथाहान्यनुपूर्वं भवन्ति यथ ऋतवः ऋतुभिर्यन्ति साधु । यथा न पूर्वमपरो जहात्येवा धातरायूषि कल्पयैषाम् ॥ ५ आ रोहतायुर्जरसं वृणाना अनुपूर्वं यतमाना यतिष्ठ । इह त्वष्टा सुजनिमा सजोषा दीर्घमायुः करति जीवसे वः ॥ ६ इमा नारीराविधवाः सुपत्नीराजनेन सर्पिषा सं विशन्तु । अनश्रवोऽनमीवाः सुरत्ना आ रोहन्तु जनयो योनिमग्रे ॥ ७ उदीर्ष्व नार्यभि जीवलोकं गतासुमेतमुप शेष एहि । हस्तग्राभस्य दिधिषोस्तवेदं पत्युर्जनित्वमभि सं बभूथ ॥ ८ धनुर्हस्तादाददानो मृतस्यास्मे क्षत्राय वर्चसे बलाय । अत्रैव त्वमिह वय सुवीरा विश्वाः स्पृधो अभिमातीर्जयेम ॥ ९ उप सर्प मातरं भूमिमेतासुरुच्यचसं पृथिवीं सुशेवाम् । ऊर्ण-प्रदा युवतिर्दक्षिणावत एषा त्वा पातु निर्ऋतेरुपस्थात् ॥ १० उच्छृञ्चस्व पृथिवि मा नि बाधथाः सुपायनास्मै भव सूपवञ्चना । माता पुत्रं यथा सिचाभ्येन भूम ऊर्णहि ॥ ११ उच्छृञ्चमाना पृथिवी सु तिष्ठतु सहस्रं मित उप हि श्रयन्ताम् । ते गृहासो घृतश्रुतो भवन्तु विश्वाहास्मै शरणाः सन्त्वत्र ॥ १२ उक्ते स्तभ्नामि पृथिवीं त्वत्परीमं लोगं निदधन्मो अहं रिषम् । एतां स्थूणां पितरो धारयन्तु तेऽत्रा यमः सादना ते मिनोतु ॥ १३ प्रतीचीने मामहनीष्वाः पर्णमिवा दधुः । प्रतीचीं जग्रभा वाचमश्वं रश्नया यथा ॥ १४

Note 693a आशौचदशक of विज्ञानेश्वर

मातुर्गर्भविपत्स्वधं त्रिदिवसं मासत्रयेऽतो यथा
मासाहं त्रिषु सूतिकाविधिरतः स्नान पितुः सर्वदा ।
ज्ञातीनां पतनादि जातमरणे पित्रोर्दशाहं सदा
नाम्नः प्राक् तदपैति सूतकवशाद् भ्रातुर्दशाहं परम् ॥ १

ज्ञातीनां दशनात्क्षुराद् व्रतविधेः प्रागाह्वोऽहस्यहं
चौलात् प्राग्दहनाश्रये परमहर्नाम्नोत्र दन्तात् त्र्यहम् ।
त्यागे चैवमथ व्रताद्दशदिनं जन्मन्यपीत्थं सदा
मासं पुंस्प्रसवे तु मातुरपरत्रैतद्दशाहाधिकम् ॥ २

कन्यास्वाफुतिराक्षुरादथ दिनं दाने त्र्यहं चोभयो—
जात्युक्तमृतसम्भवे पितृकुलस्योदासु भर्तुर्भवेत् ।
सूतास्वासु मृतासु वा पितृगृहे तस्य त्रिरात्रं दिनं
तत्पक्षस्य पराश्रयास्वपि तथा भर्त्रोश्च तत्पक्षयोः ॥ ३

दाहाद्याहितवह्निकेषु मरणाद्यन्येषु तेषां पुनः—
संस्कारे त्र्यहमाहिताग्निविषये तस्मिन्दशाहं त्वघम् ।
शिष्टाहं विदितेन्तरा दशदिनेतीते त्र्यहं त्वाह्वोऽ
त्यब्दे स्यादतिकालजं न जनने नैवानुपेतात्यये ॥ ४



श्रुद्धिः पूर्वसमाप्तिः सदृशयोर्योगेऽग्निदं सूक्तिकां
 हित्वैवं मृतजन्मनोमृतवशाद्दुर्बलपयोर्दीर्घतः ।
 अल्पात्पञ्चदिनाधिकाद्दशदिनीं गच्छेद्दशहागमः
 पूर्वस्यान्यदिने यदि द्विदिवसाच्छुद्धयेत्प्रभाते त्रयहात् ॥ ५
 उत्पन्ने त्रिदिनं मृतेष्युपनयादूर्ध्वं समानोदके
 पुत्रे चैवमनौरसेऽन्यपितृजे प्रेते तथा सोदरे ।
 मातृभ्रातृपितृस्वसृश्वशुरतत्पत्न्यस्त्रिगाचार्यतद् —
 भार्या-तत्सुतयाज्यशिष्यगृहसंप्राप्तेषु वा ज्ञातिषु ॥ ६
 पित्रोस्तत्सहजेषु तत्सुतपतिष्वन्योन्यतः पक्षिणी
 स्यादेकाध्ययनेपि सा गुरुसुहृद्भूपस्वसुर्येण्वहः ।
 स्पृष्ट्वास्थिनं त्रिदिनं दिनं तु विरसेऽबुध्या फ्लाचामकौ
 शिष्टं भोक्तुरधेनश्चुद्धयवाधिकं मोहाद्दिनं चापदि ॥ ७
 सद्यः स्यान्नपकारुदासभिषजां कृत्येष्वमात्यस्य वा
 कष्टापत्सु च पूर्वसम्भृतमखोद्वाहोत्सवादिष्वपि ।
 कुच्छादिष्वगृहाश्रमेषु वसतां प्रेते यतौ निन्दिते
 गोप्रायादिभिरिच्छतां च मरणे तत्रापि वैधे त्रयहम् ॥ ८
 निर्हारे मृतवन्मृतान्नरहिते त्रीण्यन्यवासे दिनं
 सज्योतिस्तु बहिर्भृतौ द्विगुणितं धर्मे सचैलाकृतः ।
 रोदे स्नानमनस्थि वाचमनकं हीनेषु रात्र्याकृतौ
 शूद्रे तु त्रिदिनं निशाप्यनुगतौ बहून्यादियुक्तं च तत् ॥ ९
 क्षत्रे द्वादश विंशतिर्विंशि निशाः त्रिंशच्च शूद्रे क्रमाद्—
 विप्राद्द्वित्रिचतुर्गुणा वयसि सच्छूद्रे तु पञ्चाशुरे ।
 प्रत्तास्त्रीसुतशिष्यदासभृतका भर्त्रादिवद् बान्धवे
 हीने स्वं लघु वा तदीयमधिके शूद्रेः समाः सङ्कराः ॥ १०

The text of the आशौचदशक here printed is based on three mss. from the Deccan College collection (now at the Bhandarkar Oriental Institute, Poona), viz. No. 216 of 1879-80 copied in *samvat* 1539 (1482 A. D.), No. 196 of 1884-1887 copied in *samvat* 1578 (1521 A. D.) and No. 85 of 1895-1902 copied in *samvat* 1780. All these mss. contain the *bhāṣya* of Harihara, which ascribes the work to विज्ञानेश्वर. In the first ms. the commentary on the first three verses is wanting. I intended at first to give explanations in Sanskrit of these verses (as p. 308 will indicate) but owing to considerations of space I omitted the Sanskrit explanations.

The text of the manuscript here printed is based on three main sources: the Deccan College collection (now at the Bhandarkar Oriental Institute, Poona), viz. Nos. 216 of 1875-80 copied in 1880 (1182 A. D.), No. 196 of 1871-82 copied in 1880 (1181 A. D.) and No. 45 of 1807-1902 copied in 1880. The text was written in the hand of the scribe, which accounts for the fact that the text is given in commentary on the text of the text. I intended at first to give explanations in Sanskrit of some verses (as p. 302 with footnote) but owing to considerations of space I omitted the Sanskrit explanations.

GENERAL INDEX

OF

Vol. IV (of the History of Dharmasāstra)

(N. B. This Index deals with pages 1-727 only. As the list of tīrthas from p. 730 onwards is arranged alphabetically, no entries from these pages are included in this Index, except in very rare cases for special reasons. When the name of a person or work occurs both in the body of the book as well as in the foot-notes on the same page, only the page is entered and nothing else).

Abhijit, a Vedic sacrifice, as prāya-
ścitta, 91. 92n

Abhilasitārthacintāmaṇi 566n

Abhiṣṭut, a Vedic sacrifice deemed to
remove even intentional sins 62n,
91

Ābhyudayaika-śrāddha 359n, 525-529 ;
see under Mātṛs and Nāndīśrāddha;
Āśv. gr. mentions only four śrāddhas
by name of which this is one 525;
darbhas to be employed are straight
526; even number of brāhmaṇas to
be fed 526; followers of Sāmaveda
do not perform mātṛśrāddha in this
rite 527; *homa* is made on the hand
of the brāhmaṇa 526; is a modifica-
tion of pārvaṇaśrāddha 526; is made
of three parts, viz. mātṛśrāddha,
pitṛśrāddha and mātāmahaśrāddha
528; is to be performed in the
morning 526 (except on birth of a
son when it is to be performed at
once); is treated as synonymous with
Vṛddhiśrāddha, but has wider im-
port 528; performed when there is a
lucky event such as the birth of a
son, or the latter's upanayana or
there is a marriage or the commen-
cement of *pūrta* acts such as the
dedication of a tank or park to the
public 525; piṇḍas are offered to the
mātṛs, the paternal ancestors and

the three maternal ancestors, while
some do not offer piṇḍas in this
śrāddha 527, 529; pitṛs called Nāndī-
mukha are invoked 526, 528; pro-
cedure of 526-527; sacred thread is
worn by the performer in the usual
form 526; *sankalpa* of 526n; while
brāhmaṇas are dining holy texts
may be recited (except the mantras
addressed to pitṛs, viz. Rg. X. 15.
1-13) 527; word 'svadhā' not to be
used 526; yavas are to be used in-
stead of sesame 526

Ācamana, has to be performed after
one sneezes 454

Actions, are of three kinds, *nitya*,
naimittika and *kāmya* 60n

Adābhya, cup, used in Jyotiṣtoma 157

Adam's Fall 8n

Ādhaka, see under 'drona'.

Ādiparva, 51, 161, 223, 614, 615, 687

Ādipurāṇa, 215, 234, 288, 291n, 296,
299, 303n, 306, 604, 652n, 685.

Ādityapurāṇa, 574n

Ādityas, are twelve 490

Adopted son, conflict between Nirnaya-
sindhu and Dharmasindhu as to his
priority in being an *adīkārī* for
Antyeṣṭi rites, in opposition to grand-
son of the deceased 258n, is sup-
posed by the High Courts and by the
Privy Council, relying on Manu IX.

- 142, to become totally severed from the family of birth, but this is not quite accurate, since Nirṇayasindhu, Dharmasindhu and the Dattakacandrikā state that the adopted son can perform the śrāddha of his natural father if the latter has no son at the time of his death 538-539; to whom should he offer pinḍas 538
- Adultery, prāyaścitta for a, by men and women 105; prāyaścitta for a. was only half when the lapse was due to mistake 105
- Afsā stone Inscription of Ādityasena 605n
- Aghamarṣaṇa, hymn (Rg. X. 190) as purifier from sins 45, 46n, 126, 130, 578
- Aghamarṣaṇa-vrata, 130
- Aghoramantra, set out 699n
- Agnes, Saint, was canonized primarily for her refusal to bathe 311
- Āgneya-kṛcchra, means subsisting on sesame alone for 12 days 131
- Agnicayana, 115, 249n
- Agnihotrits, even in modern times perform their nitya-śrautahoma during āsauca 240
- Agnipurāṇa, 17, 18n, 19, 25, 30, 32, 35, 42, 53n, 54, 74, 75, 76n, 80, 81, 88, 104, 107, 109, 150-51, 160, 162-63, 168, 174-75, 265n, 266, 282n, 287, 290, 293n, 300, 301n, 310, 334, 335, 370, 371n, 374-75, 389n, 445n, 448, 449n, 512-13, 531n, 562n, 566, 467n, 574n, 579, 585, 588n, 595, 597n, 599n, 600n, 601, 606n, 609, 614, 615, 617, 623, 625n, 626n, 628, 649, 651, 654n, 655n, 656n, 657n, 660, 661n, 663n, 665, 666, 667, 669, 670n, 677, 689, 705n, 710
- Agniṣṭut, a vedic sacrifice 62n, 91, 92n
- Āhāva, meaning of 503n
- Ain-i-Akbari, 605n, 627, 642
- Altareya Āraṇyaka, 46n
- Altareya Brāhmaṇa, 8, 57-58, 63, 100n, 146, 160, 196n, 224, 269, 274, 275n, 310, 344n 345, 464n, 502n, 546, 550n, 558, 585, 643, 680, 681
- Aiyangar, Prof. K. V. Rangaswami 705
- Aiyangar, Dr. S. Krishnaswami 712
- Ājyabhāgas, 357
- Alberuni on India 641.
- Allan, James, author of 'Catalogue of the coins of Ancient India' 688
- Altekar, Prof. A. S., author of 'History of Benares' 618 n, 622.n, 632 n, 633, 636n, 639n, 642
- Āmantraṇa, distinguished from 'nimantraṇa' in some ancient works 408.
- Amarakaṇṭaka, mountain, whence Narmadā rises 703, 704.
- Amarakośa, 11n, 217n, 278n, 387, 394n, 590n, 703n,
- Āmaśrāddha (Śrāddha with uncooked grains) 514-515; can be offered by him alone who is eligible for offering pārvana-śrāddha 514; is always prescribed for śūdras 514; is performed in the forenoon 515; to be performed when a brāhmaṇa or materials are not available or when one is on a journey or one's wife is in her monthly illness or on the birth of a son 514
- Amāvāsyā, is of two kinds, sinivālī (on which an āhitāgni should perform śrāddha) and kuhū, on which those who have not kept śrauta fires and śūdras should offer śrāddha 369; derivation of 369n
- Ānanda, favourite disciple of Buddha arranged for elaborate funeral rites for his master through the Mallas of Kusinārā 234-235
- Anākulā, commentary of Haradatta on Āp. Gr. 354n, 357n, 426n, 433.
- Ancestor, only three rites for departed a. in very ancient times, viz. pinḍa-pitryjaṇa, the mahāpitryajña and Astakās 349-350; 353
- Ānarta, country through which Narmadā flowed acc. to Vanaparva and in which Dvārakā was situated 704n
- Angiras, smṛti of 41, 47, 59, 75, 78, 81, 83, 84, 85, 86n, 90, 95n, 98



- 105, 109, 123, 146n, 148, 150, 223, 262n, 263, 270n, 271, 291n, 292n, 293n, 294n, 296n, 301, 326, 331, 321n, 464n, 478, 562n, 575.
- Angirases; vide Navagvas and Dasagvas; are a class of pitrs in the Rgveda, associated with Yama 341; Vairūpas are a sub-division of 192, 192n
- Anguttara-nikāya 659, 668n, 677, 697
- Annals, of Bhandarkar Oriental Research Institute 182n.
- Annasūktas (Rg. I. 187 and others) 494.
- Antyakarmadīpaka, 183, 184n, 185n, 217n, 262
- Antyeṣṭi, see 'funeral rites'; is one of the 16 saṃskāras performed for dvijas with vedic mantras 189-190
- Antyeṣṭipaddhati, of Nārāyaṇabhaṭṭa 183, 184n, 185n, 217n, 262
- Arūpātakas, enumerated by Viṣṇu Dh. S. are treated by Manu and Yāj. as equal to or like those that are mahāpātakas 106; persons guilty of, were purified by Aśvamedha or by pilgrimages 106.
- Anuśāsanaparva, 54, 164, 166, 180, 185n, 223, 311, 347n, 348, 364, 371, 372-74, 380, 385, 390, 392, 400n, 411, 419, 423, 434n, 466, 480, 481, 535, 539n, 545, 555, 585, 586, 588n, 594n, 597, 604n, 617, 620, 649, 651, 707
- Anustaraṇī, cow or goat 206, 209n
- Anvaṣṭakā or Anvaṣṭakya 358; acc. to Āp. gr. and Sāh. gr. procedure of A. is the same as that of piṇḍapitryajña 358; explanation of the word 359n; most notable characteristic of A. is that female ancestors are invoked and liquor, scum of boiled rice, collyrium and garlands are offered 358, 474; performed after each Aṣṭakā 360; procedure of, from Āśv. gr. 359-360; some say that Aṣṭakā is the model on which the procedure of other śrāddhas is based while others say that Aṣṭakā and Anvaṣṭakā are modelled on the monthly śrāddha 358
- Apāmārga, a plant used for cleaning the performer of religious rites 250
- Apāṅkteya, 391-392
- Aparāhṇa, three views about what is 376
- Aparārka, 11n, 25n, 34n, 41n, 50n, 53n, 54, 55n, 65n, 66n, 83n, 87n, 88, 89, 93, 94, 96, 97, 99n, 104n, 105n, 108, 114n, 121, 124n, 125n, 127n, 128n, 131n, 133, 139, 142, 147n, 161n, 199n, 210n, 215, 216n, 218, 220n, 221, 222n, 224-26, 227n, 237, 238n, 255n, 256n, 261n, 262n, 274n, 285n, 289n, 294, 297n, 301n, 304n, 305n, 309, 310, 312-14, 317, 322n, 323n, 324, 351n, 364, 369n, 371n, 376, 377n, 378n, 394n, 395n, 397, 399n, 400, 413n, 417n, 418n, 422n, 424, 440n, 443n, 444n, 445, 447n, 448n, 449n, 450n, 453, 455n, 456n, 457n, 471, 476n, 478, 479n, 480, 483n, 514n, 515n, 517, 518, 519n, 521, 526, 528n, 529, 530, 531n, 547n, 548n, 604, 669
- Apasavyam, meaning of, 487n.
- Āpastamba—dharmaśūtra, 10-14, 17-19, 21-23, 37n, 40, 41, 50, 54, 64, 65, 70, 71, 73, 74, 82, 88, 89, 91, 94-96, 101, 103, 104, 107, 110-112, 120, 132, 162, 175, 211, 217, 218n, 238, 282, 312, 315, 322, 329, 331, 335n, 349, 365, 370, 372, 375, 379, 384, 387, 388, 392, 394n, 401, 404, 406, 412, 422, 468, 459, 604
- Āpastamba—grhyasūtra 353, 358, 384, 438, 469, 471, 472
- Āpastambamantrapāṭha, 353, 357n, 438, 439, 444n, 461n, 469, 474, 476, 496n, 498
- Āpastamba-smṛti (in verse) 28, 79n, 98, 114, 117, 123, 126, 131, 143, 263, 288, 314n, 323, 324n, 375
- Āpastamba-srautasūtra, 45, 184n, 312, 426n, 462n, 468n, 479, 490n, 537n, 558

Apātrīkarāṇa sins, 15, 35; expiation for 118-119
 Aponaptrīya hymn (Rg. X. 30) 558
 Apratiratha hymn, 439, 507
 Archaeological Survey of Western India, reports of 678n
 Archaeological Survey Reports of Mysore 716n, 717
 Archeological Survey of India, reports of 683, 685, 686
 Ardhakṛcchra, 131
 Arghya, respectful offering of water or water with unhusked rice grains, flowers etc. to gods or venerable persons 435n, 441n
 Arthavāda (laudatory passage), may in some cases be construed as a vidhi (injunction) 62
 Āryasamāja, objects to the institution of śrāddha 339
 Āśauca; vide under 'adopted son', 'death', 'food', 'kāyasthas', 'men', 'pratiloma', 'sapinda', 'śuddhi', 'sūtaka', 'wife', 'women', 'yati'; *agha* is used often as a synonym for ā. 267-268; *atikrāntāśauca* 282-284; birth and death are causes of ā. only when they become known to the person to be affected 276; brāhmaṇa who has studied the vedas and kept vedic fires becomes free from impurity in one day, one who has only mastered the veda in three days, one devoid of both in ten days 270; defined by Mitākṣarā 268; derivation from the word 'śuci' 267; differing views in ancient times as to explanation of the origin of ā. for ten days on birth and death 309; explanation of varying provisions on ā 288; impurity on birth 275; exceptions to rules about atikrāntāśauca 284; five classes of cases in which rules about ā. do not operate 296; for adopted son in case natural father or adoptive father dies or for natural father and adoptive father when the adopted son

dies and for sapindas 280-281; for carrying a dead body for money 289; for father and sapindas on abortion, still-birth or after the birth of a child 275; for mother when there is abortion in the first four months of pregnancy or in later months of pregnancy or on still-birth or after birth 275; for slaves when masters die 292; form 'āśucya' is found in Devala and other smṛtis 267; general rules about ā. 276-277; great divergence of views on question about the periods of ā., if a sapinda's death comes to one's ears more than ten days after death 283; Haradatta's definition of ā. 268; in the case of an *āhitāgni* or non-*āhitāgni* dying in a different country, whose bones even are not found and whose effigy is cremated 286; intensity of impurity was arranged on a descending scale in the following order viz. a *sūtikā* (a freshly delivered woman), *rajasvalā* (a woman in monthly illness), death and birth 274; king's death required the residents of the country to observe ā. up till the advent of the day or night next after the king's death 281-282; Manu and others mention several optional periods of impurity 270-271, 307; Manu and others urge men not to increase through laziness the number of days for which ā. is to be observed 271; meaning of *āśaucasannipāta* 292 ff; meaning of life-long impurity 274; medieval brāhmaṇas attached exaggerated importance to ceremonial purity after ā. 273; Mitākṣarā says that dicta of Parāśara on periods of impurity should be discarded as opposed to several smṛtis and popular usage 272; most important subject under the head of *śuddhi* is ā.. 267; no atikrāntāśauca for sapindas birth 283; no periods of ā. prescribed



for pratiloma castes, but some say that they are like śūdras 288; no unanimity among smṛtis as to periods of ā. on death 277ff; on birth ā. lasted ten days even in the Vedic period 274; on death of a child for parents and sapindas before ten days from birth or before the striking of teeth, before cūḍā or upanayana or after upanayana 277-278; on death of a person after upanayana all sapindas had to undergo ā. for ten days and all samānodakas for three days 277; on death of a girl after three years of age and before betrothal or after betrothal but before marriage and after marriage 278; period of ā. depended on several circumstances, such as the varṇa or on whether deceased was an infant or a male or a female or whether death was before or after upanayana or on the vicinity or otherwise of the deceased, the degree of relationship, the time that elapsed after birth or death 271-273, 286-287; periods of ā. for relatives in the case of anuloma or pratiloma marriages 488; periods of ā. for four varṇas were respectively fixed at 10, 12, 15 days and a month 271; periods of 10 days of ā. were fixed for men of all varṇas by some smṛtikāras such as Aṅgiras and Śātātapa and the reason for such fixation 271, 307; period of ā. for less than ten days on the ground of vedic learning was included among Kalivarjya 271; rules about ā. on death of bandhus such as maternal grand-father, grand-mother or maternal uncle, daughter's son and father-in-law, mother-in-law, son-in-law, wife's brother 279-280; rules about ā. on the death of an ācārya, his wife or son or of a guru or pupil 281; rules about ā. apply only when times are easy and peaceful 306; rules about the period of ā. when the knowledge

of birth or death comes to a man after the periods fixed 282-284; sannipāta or sampāta of ā. (another āśauca supervening while one is being undergone), rules of 292-294; several printed works and mss. on ā. are in verse 272-273; ten varieties of impurity, according to Dakṣa 274; things that could be taken without taint from the house of one undergoing ā. though not from his hand 291-92; two characteristics of ā. viz. taking away the privilege of performing religious acts and rendering a person untouchable to others for some time, 268-269; two kinds of ā. viz. jananaśauca or sūta (arising on birth) and śavāśauca or mṛtakāśauca (arising on death) 269; two varieties in each kind of ā. viz. for a short period and for a long period 269; two views as to the day from which period of ā. is to be calculated, if a man died at night or news reached at night 287-288; usage of the country the most important in matters of ā. 306; when calculating the period of ā. the day of cremation in the case of an āhitāgni and the day of death in the case of a non-āhitāgni is the first day 276; when a solemn sacrifice (like Somayāga) is begun or a marriage rite or festival in honour of mātṛs has started or the foundation or dedication of a temple or image is begun, supervening cause of ā. does not matter 291; why birth and death should cause impurity to relations has not been discussed by most writers 269-270; woman's delivery or death at her father's or brother's house and at her husband's makes a difference as to ā. 276, 278; women of all varṇas become touchable after ten days from delivery but they are not fit to take part in religious rites 30 or 40 days from birth according as a son or daughter is born 276; words like 'ahaḥ' and 'patriḥ'

mean day and night in texts on ā.
276

Āśaucadaśaka, attributed to Vijñāneśvara, deals with āśauca in ten Śārdūlavikrīḍita verses, 273,; text of 276, 277, 290

Āśaucāṣṭaka, attributed to Vararuci, deals with āśauca in eight Sragdharā verses 272-273.

Ascetics, see under 'Nārāyaṇabali', 'yati'; general rule for, is that for eight months they must move from place to place and may spend four months of rainy season in one place, but this rule was abrogated when a. entered Kāśī 641; great emphasis laid in some works on inviting them at a śrāddha dinner 388, 399; had to tonsure the whole head when undergoing prāyaścitta 123; have not to undergo the condition of *preta* and no ekoddiṣṭa nor sapindikaraṇa is to be performed for them, but only pārvana on 11th day after death 519; is not affected by āśauca 298; mahālayaśrāddha for, is to be performed on 12th day of Bhādrapada dark half 533; Vasiṣṭha and others insist that an a. must partake of flesh served at a śrāddha 423

Asoka, in times of, a branch of the *bodhi* tree was transplanted to Ceylon 667; tradition that Asoka dug up seven out of the eight mounds of the relics of Buddha and distributed the contents in 84000 boxes throughout India and built stūpas over them 236 n.

Āśramavāsikaparva, 223, 451n, 534

Association, see under 'samsarga'; even 4th or 5th in a series of persons guilty of a. with one guilty of *mahā-pātaka* is liable to some expiation 27

Asthisañcayana, see under 'sañcayana'

Aṣṭakāśrāddhas, see Anvaṣṭakā; 353-360; cow is sacrificed acc. to Khādira-grhya 355; days of A. were four or

three or one only 354; derivation of Aṣṭakā from aṣṭan 354n; first among seven pākayajñas, acc. to Gautama and one of the 40 samskāras 353; five A. acc. to Bhaṭṭoji 361; flesh to be offered in all acc. to some writers 354; great variations on almost all points connected with A. such as the number of days and the months in which they were to be performed, the deities to be worshipped, the offerings to be made and the procedure 353; many options are given as to offerings acc. to several grhya-sūtras 355; meaning of A. was 8th *tithi* in any month after full-moon day 353; not performed now 361; offerings made on the three Aṣṭakās differed in different sūtras 355; pitṛs are the deities of A. according to Vārtika on Pāṇini and Kāṭhaka-grhya, but great divergence on the devatās, acc. to others; 355-56; procedure of, comprises three parts viz. *homa*, inviting brāhmaṇas for dinner and the rite called Anvaṣṭakya or Anvaṣṭakā 356; procedure of A. in several grhya-sūtras, but the shortest is that of Āp. gr. which is set out 356-358; A. śrāddhas known to early Vedic literature 194n, 350n; twelve A. in a year 383n; were modifications (vikṛtis) of monthly śrāddha on Amāvāsyā 361-362, 434

Astrology, a brāhmaṇa subsisting by the practice of, is unfit to be invited at a śrāddha 393; Yama states that if brāhmaṇas that do not declare (or advise on) the auspicious nakṣatra, *tithi* or day or *muhūrta* and other auspicious matters eat śrāddha food, the reward is inexhaustible 400

Asucikara, sins so called 12, 14

Asuras, like Prahlāda, Bāṇa and Bali, though good and decent, are described as fighting with gods 659; usage of, about burial of dead bodies



- Āśvaghoṣa, author of Buddhacarita 621
 Āśvalāyana (in verse) 381n
 Āśvalāyana-grhya-pariśiṣṭa 219, 262 n, 524, 526, 527,
 Āśvalāyanagrhyasūtra, 46n, 58, 98, 111, 112n, 149n, 190, 194n, 199n, 200n, 203n, 204, 205, 209, 218, 238, 240, 241, 244, 245n, 262, 353, 354, 355, 356, 357n, 358, 359, 360, 384, 389, 402, 412 n, 417, 433, 460, 463, 470, 491, 493n, 496n, 506n, 525, 527n
 Āśvalāyana-śrauta-sūtra, 45, 57, 58, 62n, 92n, 127, 184n, 200n, 202, 203 n, 346 n, 436 n, 463, 472, 477 n, 480, 494, 498, 499, 500 n, 511, 558, 681
 Āśvamedha, as a prāyaścitta 91, 92; deemed to have freed even gods from all sins, even including brāhmaṇa murder 37, 62; even a murderer of a brāhmaṇa becomes free from that sin by a bath at end of A. along with the king and priests after announcing his sin and after permission 94, 131; to be performed only by a king 91, 131; verses recited at time of making crowned queen get up from dead horse 200n.
 Āśvamedhikaparva 535
 Āśvapati Kekaya, a king, boasts that no drinker of *madya* dwelt in his kingdom 20
 Atharvans, a class of piṭṛs 192
 Atharvaśiras, purifies from sins 45, 46n
 Atharvaveda, 5, 11n, 57, 155, 157, 159, 174n, 182n, 184n, 192n, 194n, 198, 204, 205n, 206n, 207n, 211, 232, 233, 242, 252n, 254, 321, 342, 345, 346, 347n, 351, 353, 433n, 462n, 555, 556, 645, 680
 Atheists, touch of 115
 Atikṛcchra, an expiation 130; how constituted 130; purifies a man of all sins except mahāpātakas 15, 88
 Atipātakas, no prāyaścitta for these except entering fire acc. to Viṣṇu
 Dh. S. but Manu and Yāj. differ 88
 Atirudra, for reversal of a disease 178
 Atisāntapana, defined variously by smṛtis 130-131
 Atithi, who is, at a śrāddha 396
 Atri, smṛti of, 42, 48, 67n, 75, 94, 97, 124, 128, 138, 139, 141, 142, 145, 147, 149, 152, 173, 270, 271, 277, 287, 295, 298, 302, 310, 313, 324n, 392, 401n, 420, 421, 471, 545, 577, 604, 611n, 653
 Audgāhamāni, 354
 Aulāna, son of Śantanu 189n
 Aurnavābha, 645
 Ausānasasmṛti 222n, 301n, 339, 340, 386, 399, 400n, 411, 422
 Avadānaśataka, 176
 Avakīrṇin, see under 'brahmacārin'; has to offer to Nirṛti an ass according to procedure of pākayajñas 212
 Avanti, is name of country and Avanti was its capital 619
 Avidhavānavamīśrāddha, 533-534; performed for one's mother or other woman of one's family who died during her husband's lifetime, on the 9th day of Bhādrapada dark half 533
 Avimukta-nirukti-sāra, a work in 15 verses with commentary thereon, explaining the purport of a Jābālopaniṣad passage 610n
 Bahiṣpavamāna, sāman 46n
 Bahvṛca-grhya-pariśiṣṭa 443n
 Baijavāpa, 238
 Bālācārya Khuperkar, Pandit of Kolhapur 717 n
 Bālakṛcchra, see under Śiśukṛcchra
 Bālambhaṭṭī, 59, 60n, 140n, 142n, 391, 398, 574n
 Bali, grandson of Prahlāda and a devotee of Viṣṇu 144, 659
 Bāṇa, 371n, 625n (Vāmana-purāṇa exhibits similar style)
 Bāṇa, an asura, son of Bali, fought with Kṛṣṇa with the help of Śiva 659

- Bandhus, are of three kinds 280;
rules about āśauca on death of 280
- Banerji, R. D. on 'History of Orissa'
693, 694n, 698n
- Barbour, author of 'Sin and the new
Psychology' 1n
- Bārhaspatya-sūtra 560n, 679, 712
- Barley, see under 'yava'
- Barua, Dr. Benimādhava, author of
'Gayā and Buddha-Gayā' 643, 644,
647, 649, 650, 651, 653n, 659, 664n
- Bath, as an easy substitute for some
expiations 127; daily bath for all
insisted upon by ancient and
medieval Indians 311; prescribed
after sexual intercourse with one's
wife, for vomiting after sunrise,
after shaving, after a bad dream or
foul touch 311; prescribed on touch-
ing certain persons and substances
such as a seller of Veda, a sacrificial
post, a *patita*, a dog, a *cāṇḍāla*
331-332
- Baudddhas, touch of, required expia-
tion 115
- Baudhāyana-dharma-sūtra, 13, 14, 25n,
32, 40n, 42, 43, 45, 46n, 48, 54,
71, 75, 82, 96, 103, 106, 113, 120,
122, 123, 130, 132, 134-138,
142-145, 147, 149, 150, 229n, 231,
275, 292, 310, 312, 313n, 316, 317,
322, 325-328, 331, 339, 350, 354,
355, 358, 365, 368, 384, 385, 387,
403, 418, 443n, 448n, 450n, 463,
464n, 467, 538, 560
- Baudhāyana-gr̥hya-sūtra, 111, 474, 525
- Baudhāyana-gr̥hya-śeṣasūtra, 229n,
304n, 305, 319n, 516, 542.
- Baudhāyanagr̥hya-paribhāṣāsūtra, 399n
- Baudhāyana-pitr̥medhasūtra, 182, 189,
190, 191n, 199n, 200n, 204, 205n,
207n, 208n, 209n, 223, 229, 238,
240, 244, 246n, 251, 253, 254n,
255, 263, 467n, 520, 521
- Baudhāyana-smṛti, 64, 217n, 261,
280n, 312, 316
- Baudhāyana-srautasūtra, 346
- Beal's 'Buddhist Records' of the
western world' 608, 612, 629, 631,
650, 683, 688, 711
- Beginning, of certain acts such as a
sacrifice or marriage how settled
291.
- Belvalkar, Dr. S. K. 648n.
- Bhagavad-gītā, 9, 46n, 68, 83n, 158,
186, 188, 236n, 265n, 335, 373, 496,
587, 611, 614, 683; some verses of,
occur in Viṣṇudharmasūtra 236n
- Bhāgavatapurāṇa, 163, 168, 349, 560,
690, 691n, 704n, 707
- Bhaktūpādhyāya, 59n
- Bhandarkar, Prof. D. R. 271
- Bhandarkar, Dr. R. G. 713n, 716
- Bhāradvāja, 387
- Bhāradvāja-gr̥hya-sūtra, 58, 355, 476,
520, 522n
- Bhāraśivas, an imperial dynasty in
ancient India that performed Aśva-
medha sacrifices 634
- Bharata, author of Nāṭyaśāstra 217n
- Bharata Dauṣṣanti 585
- Bhārgava, 79n
- Bhārhut stūpa, 709
- Bhāskarakṣetra, is Prayāga, according
to some and Koṇārka according to
others 217n, 574n
- Bhaṭṭācārya, (explanation of what are
mantras) 61, 268 (definition of
śuddhi).
- Bhaṭṭoji, 262n, 361, 372n, 519n, 520n,
521, 568n, 573, 609n
- Bhavadeva, author of Prāyaścittapra-
karaṇa 24
- Bhaviṣyapurāṇa, 15, 19, 21, 39, 40, 50,
53, 54, 56, 88, 90, 91, 93, 94, 96n,
124, 129, 131, 163, 225, 361, 375,
380n, 381n, 382n, 391, 396, 402,
413n, 468n, 478, 528, 529, 530, 531,
532n, 536, 541, 586, 587
- Bhaviṣyottara-purāṇa, 540n
- Bhīṣma, story of, who waited for Uta-
rāyaṇa as the proper time for death,
is eulogistic of arcirādi path and
not to be taken literally 188, 189;
popular belief that death in Uta-
rāyaṇa is best still persists 189
- Bhṛgu, smṛti of, 290n, 409, 546
- Bhṛguś, a class of pitṛs 192

Birth, good or evil future b. depends on good or evil conduct in this life 158

Bloch, T. in Z. D. M. G. vol. 60, for excavations at Lauriya 234n

Bloomfield, author of 'Religion of the Veda' 2n, 171

Body, importance of, for dharma 127

Bombay Act 35 of 1947, 320

Bombay Gazetteer volumes 303n, 571n, 686, 705n, 709, 710, 713, 714, 715, 721

Boy, whose upanayana has not been performed and who drinks *madya* through foolishness may undergo expiation through a *pratinidhi* (brother, father, friend), when he is himself unable to do so or is between the ages of 5 to 11, 98; whose upanayana was not performed was not to repeat Vedic mantras except the mantras that are required for the funeral rites and *śrāddha* of his father or mother 258

Brahmā, is said to have created in the beginning four classes, viz. gods, asuras, pitṛs and men 342

Brahmabandhu, six kinds of 400

Brahmacārin, had to observe *āśauca* for three days after he returned from his *guru* for all relatives that died during the period of his studenthood 293; *prāyaścitta* for having sexual intercourse 112-113; is styled *avakīrṇin*, if he has sexual intercourse 112; may carry the corpse of his parents, maternal grandfather, *upādhyāya* and *ācārya* and perform funeral rites for them, but if another *adhikārin* is available he should not do so 260, 298; on death of, *sapinda*s had to observe *āśauca* 305; should not give up vedic studies and *vratas* even on death of parents 298

Brahmamedha, procedure of, employed only for an *ācārya* or *śrōtriya* and

the mantras called *caturhotāraḥ* were recited therein 254

Brahmāvartā, country between *Sarasvatī* and *Drṣadvatī* 557n

Brāhmaṇa, *āhitāgni* may, if his wife dies, marry again and establish fresh sacred fires or remain a widower and perform his *Agnihotra* with an effigy of the dead wife made of gold or *kuśa* grass 225-226; all deities reside in b. who knows the *veda* 488; becomes unfit for invitation at *śrāddha* by practising medicine, by teaching dancing or by going on the stage 14n; carrying the dead body of a person who is not a *sapinda* or carrying dead body of his mother's *sapinda*s became pure after three days 289; could be liable to death as *prāyaścitta* for a heinous sin, though not as punishment 73; could perform as *pratinidhi* of women and *śūdras* *homa* in ordinary fire 78; one drinking *surā* intentionally had to undergo an expiation viz. drinking boiling milk, cow-urine, water, which ended in death 96; expiation for threatening to beat or strike a b. 96; fighting for saving a brāhmaṇa's life or for saving twelve cows as expiation for murder of b. 93; following the funeral procession of a brāhmaṇa, *kṣatriya* or *vaiśya* or *śūdra* had to undergo a bath and also *āśauca* and expiation in the last three cases 290; general rule that *prāyaścitta* for intentional murder of b. was to end in death 88; guilty of grave sins committed intentionally was to be banished but was allowed to take his wealth with him and if guilty of the same unintentionally to be punished with middle amercement 72; guilty of theft was to go to a king with an iron club and ask him to smash his head as punishment 73; invited for *śrāddha* should

not refuse and after accepting invitation if he breaks the promise incurs sin 410; killing a b. woman is upapātaka except in two cases acc. to Manu and Yāj. 18; one killing one's own parent, brother, teacher of veda, or a brāhmaṇa who has studied the veda or kept vedic fires had to undergo expiation till death 94; Manu speaks of 13 prāyaścittas for murder of b. 88-93; Manu first prescribes twelve years of begging alms, carrying a bone in hand and on a staff 88; murder of, gravest of sins 10; not to be punished with death for any crime or sin but may be banished 31; prāyaścitta, extent of, when taken once for all for several murders of b. 90; prāyaścitta for murder of a person who is a brāhmaṇa without vedic learning 93; rules about a b. staying in the house of one dying or partaking of food there 289; should not violate, even when a knower of brahmavidyā, the injunction against eating unclean food when there is no distress or danger to life 100; three causes of a person being called a brāhmaṇa are *tapas*, vedic learning and birth from brāhmaṇa parents according to the Mahābhāṣya 400; twelve years *vrata* as prāyaścitta for unintentional brāhmaṇa murder 90; twenty-four years *vrata* for intentional b. murder 90; vedic sacrifices of Aśvamedha, Gosava, Abhijit, Viśvajit or Agniṣṭut as expiation for murder of b. 91; weeping with the family of a deceased person who is not a sapinda or who belonged to another varṇa had to undergo varying periods of āśauca and purifications which depended on the fact whether he went before or after the collection of bones 290; b. whether could be killed in self-defence 19-20; who drinks surā prepared from raw sugar, flour and honey should undergo Taptakṛccha, Parāka and Cāndrāyana

respectively, acc. to Bṛhaspati 97; who drinks any intoxicant (except surā prepared from flour) had to undergo light expiation 97; who has studied the veda and is afflicted with bodily defects (which ordinarily exclude him from a row of diners) is acc. to Yama a paṅktipāvana 401; who remembers the Ṛgveda studied by him is not tainted by any guilt 47

Brahmakṛccha, an expiation 147

Brahmakūrca, an expiation, 146-147; is same as pañcagavya acc. to some smṛtis 147

Brāhmaṇasarvasva, of Halāyudha 346n, 434n, 504, 506n

Brahmāṇḍapurāṇa, 114n, 168, 311, 342, 344, 347n, 348, 349, 351, 372, 374, 375, 378n, 388n, 389, 390, 391n, 392, 395n, 399n, 414, 415n, 417n, 420, 421n, 443n, 448, 457n, 458n, 460, 463, 471, 473n, 479n, 481, 484n, 531n, 539n, 540, 560, 578, 587, 590n, 593n, 600, 623, 685n, 689n, 708n, 712

Brahmāṇḍa-dāna, one of the 16 mahā-dānas 166

Brahmapurāṇa, 41n, 50, 51, 84n, 109, 127, 133, 139, 146, 152, 163, 164, 166, 170, 174, 176, 180, 214, 217, 222n, 223-225, 227, 255, 257n, 265n, 266, 271, 277, 296n, 299, 301, 334, 337n, 340, 348, 371n, 372, 374, 378-379, 381n, 385, 388n, 392, 411, 414-416, 421, 423, 440n, 441n, 443n, 450n, 471, 473, 478, 479n, 481, 483, 518, 520, 528, 531n, 539n, 560n, 562n, 564, 567, 568, 570, 572, 573n, 582, 587, 592n, 595, 598, 608, 620, 622, 659, 688, 696, 699, 700, 702, 707, 708, 711; contains hymn to Viṣṇu which when repeated was deemed to free a man from all sins 51, states that even when a person remembers Viṣṇu through roguery, he goes to Viṣṇuloka after death 51

- 227; difference of view as to the age at which burial or cremation was to be resorted to in the case of a child on its death 227-228; of dead bodies not unknown in ancient India 232; procedure on b. of child 227-228; of yati 229-231; references to, in early Vedic Literature 232-233
- Caine, W. S., author of 'Picturesque India' 692, 712n
- Caitanya, great Vaiṣṇava saint, settled at Purī and lived there for 18 years till his death in 1533 A. D. 702; is said to have converted the Gajapati king Pratāparudradeva to his new faith 702; visited Vṛndāvana 692; was worshipped along with Viṣṇu at Jagannātha, being described as *narabrahma* while Jagannātha was said to be *dārubrahma* 702
- Caitanyacandrodaya, a drama by Paramānandadāsa 692, 700-701, 702
- Caitanyacaritāmṛta, a poem by Paramānandadāsa 692, 702
- Caland, Dr., author of 'Altindischer Ahnencult' 57, 58 190, 231, 253n, 355, 435n, 439, 461n, 474
- Cambridge History of India 619, 688
- Cāṇḍāla, sixteen castes were treated as, in matters of sight, touch, and speech 115
- Cāṇḍrāyaṇa, derivation of word c. 134; divided into *mukhya* and *gauna* 136; five varieties of 135-136; is the *prāyaścitta* for all lapses for which no specific penance is prescribed in *smṛtis* 135; may be undergone not as penance, but also for accumulating merit 35; prescribed as expiation for drinking any of the twelve excretions of the body or any of the several kinds of *madya* 99; prescribed as expiation for dining at a *śrāddha* on the birth of a son or at a *navasrāddha* 388; prescribed as expiation for incest in certain cases 103; prescribed as expiation for *apātrikarāṇa* and *saṅkarikarāṇa* acts 118; procedure of, described in Gautama and others 137-138; rules about the size of the morsels to be taken in 137; sacrificial food to be employed in 138; *sāmānya* c. described 136; tonsure necessary if c. undertaken as *prāyaścitta* 137; two varieties of 134-135
- Caraka-sambhitā 175
- Carrel, Dr. Alexis, author of 'Journey to Lourdes' 561
- Cārvāka, 34; views of the followers of 1n
- Caste, exclusiveness declared that a *dvija* even of bad character is to be honoured and not a *śūdra* though of good character 85; excommunicated a sinner if he refused to perform *prāyaścitta* 76; one guilty of a sin or crime had to give in some cases a dinner to men of his c. 76; persons of 16 castes were treated as *cāṇḍālas* as regards sight, touch or speech 115
- Caturhotārah, mantras beginning with 'cittiḥ sruk' 230, 254
- Caturvargacintāmaṇi, of Hemādri 314n, 582; vide under Hemādri
- Caturvimsatimata, 59n, 81, 85, 125n, 128, 143, 262n, 313, 361, 372n, 519n, 520n
- Chāgaleya, *smṛti* of 26, 64, 302, 525
- Chandogapariśiṣṭa, (same as Gobhila-*smṛti*) 269n
- Chāndogya-upaniṣad, 8, 12, 20, 39, 42, 100, 158, 186-188, 232, 333, 449n, 613n, 681
- Chapekar, Mr. N. G. 551
- Chattopādhyāya, Prof. Kṣetreschandra 556n, 608n
- Chaudhuri, Dr. J. B. 574n, 583
- Childe, Prof. V. G., on disposal of corpses in Paleolithic, Neolithic and bronze ages 234n
- Child, if dead, after upanayana, was to be cremated with ordinary fire and the procedure was same as for *ābhiṣā* 228; before upanayana may do

- as it pleases as regards behaviour, speech and eating 98; death of, before the appearance of teeth or before cūḍā entailed no āśauca except undergoing a bath 298-299; various views as to cremation or burial of a child according to age or the performance of cūḍākarana or upanayana 227-228
- Christ, gave model prayer to his disciples for daily bread, forgiveness of sins and deliverance from evil 38n
- Christians, held fast by burial as the mode for the disposal of a dead body till end of 19th century relying upon literal interpretation of some Biblical passages and did not permit cremation 233; Roman Catholics allow only burial and no cremation even now 233; some early C. regarded dirt and absence of bath as one of the insignia of holy poverty 311
- Cities, seven holy, enumerated as Ayodhyā, Mathurā &c. 501, 678; some authorities include Kāntī instead of Kāñcī among the seven holy cities 678n, 762
- Citrāgupta, chief assistant of Yama 160; recommends to Yama the fate that the soul of a dead man deserves 160
- Clothes, purification of 330-331; purification of c. extremely polluted 330; silken c. are always pure 330; white c. are not defiled by the touch of anybody 330;
- Confession, as a means of removing the effects of sins 40-41; in Christianity 41
- Conflict, in case of, among smṛtis and purāṇas one should follow the usage of one's country, Vedic śākhā or family 519
- Conversion, see under 'uddhi; to Hindu fold made by performing Vratyastoma in ancient times 118
- Converts, re-admission of Hindus forcibly made converts by Mlecchas 117
- Cooking food, for oneself only, condemned as an upapātaka 34
- Corinthians 171
- Corn, kinds of, recommended for use in śrāddha 413-414; cereals that were forbidden in śrāddha 414-415
- Corporal punishment to be moderate 19
- Corpus Inscriptionum Indicarum, vol. I p. 696; vol. III p. 705
- Coulton, G.G., author of 'Five centuries of religion' 52n
- Country, extent of, varied from age to age 682n; what circumstances make one country distinct from another (desāntara) 285-286
- Cow, gift of, came to be the substitute for many expiations 127; gift of cow called Vaitaraṇī 545; gift of one cow in lieu of Prājāpatya, of two cows for Sāntapana &c 128; gold or money as a substitute for gift of cows in prāyaścitta 127-128; legend about the reason why kapilā cow is the best 545; prices of, in medieval times in India 129; procedure of gift of a cow on 2nd day after āśauca ends 545
- Cremation, see under 'effigy' 'death,' 'burial' 'fires,' 'dead bodies,' 'funeral rites,' 'sacrifice,' 'tonsure'; acc. to Brahmapurāṇa great noise should be made with four kinds of musical instruments when taking a corpse for 217; at end of c. relatives take a bath, offer water to deceased and on entering house touch a stone, a bull, fire, cowdung, fried barley 210; bamboo staff with a bundle of grass at its top was carried to cremation ground acc. to Kāt. Śr. 205 n; bath for all relatives on mother's and father's side up to 7th degree (except for a child less than one year old) necessary on c. 211; brahmacārin was not to carry

the dead body of a person or relative except of his own parents or of guru or ācārya 214; brahmacārin carrying dead body of a person other than that of a parent or guru had to undergo expiation for *vratalopa* 215; carrying the dead body of a brāhmaṇa who is poor and without relatives is highly extolled as equal to a sacrifice at each step 215; cow or goat was taken to c. ground with its left fore-foot tied with a rope, was killed and corpse covered with its body 206; corpse should be first bathed and then cremated but not naked 216; dead body was not to be carried through a village when being taken for c. 216; dead body was carried to c. ground in a cart drawn by oxen acc. to Atharvaveda or by men, acc. to Sat. Śr. 205n, 206, 212; duty to carry dead body is on the sapinda of the deceased 215; *dvija* not to carry the dead body of a śūdra 214; fuel for the pyre was not to be carried by śūdras if deceased was *dvija* but if so carried the pyre should be made by the castemen only 216; ground for c. to be open on all sides 205; how relatives are to act and show grief after c. 211; long list of persons who should not be cremated 223; Mitākṣarā prescribes that if a brāhmaṇa carries a śūdra's corpse the period of impurity for a brāhmaṇa is a month but if a śūdra has to carry the corpse of a brāhmaṇa the impurity is only for ten days 216; c. of bones of āhitāgni, if he died away from home 223; c. of effigy if a man gone to a distant land is unheard of for 12 or 15 years 225; c. of sacrificer with sacrificial implements is *pratipattikarma* of the implements 208n, 334n; parts of the body on which the several sacrificial implements are placed at time of c.

207-208; performer of c. rites had to undergo tonsure as an *āṅga* (ancillary part) 217; procedure of c. in modern times follows that in Āśv. gr and in Garuḍapurāṇa 212; procedure of, from Antyeṣṭipaddhati, which is now followed by Rgvedins in Western India 212-214; procedure where a man returns alive after his effigy is cremated under the belief that he was dead 225; rites of, described frequently in Mahābhārata and sometimes in Rāmāyaṇa 223; rites of an effigy made with 360 palāśa leaves bound with yava flour and woollen thread, if even the bones of the deceased could not be found 224; Romans regarded c. as honourable way of the disposal of the dead body and reserved burial for murderers and those guilty of suicide 233; rules about periods of impurity on carrying dead body and staying with and eating the food of the family of the deceased 215-216; rules about impurity on carrying a dead body for a fee or from an interested motive 216; rules about selection of site for 204n, 205; rules about who were to carry the dead body to c. ground 214-215; rules for those who not being relatives carry a dead body to c., such as taking bath, touching and drinking ghee 215; sacrificial fires and vessels of āhitāgni are carried to c. ground 206-208; small pieces of gold or drops of clarified butter are cast on seven vital parts of the corpse 207n; special rules for c. of women dying in or immediately after childbirth or while in monthly illness 231; śūdras not to carry the dead body of a *dvija* if members of the deceased's varṇa are available 214; to be carried out at a



- sacred spot or at least after invoking the presence of tirthas like the Ganges in the water to be used for washing dead body 217; tonsure necessary in, on first day of death and also after end of impurity acc. to Madanapārijāta, others holding that it depends upon the usage of each country 218; varying views about the distribution of leaves to represent different parts of the body when an effigy is cremated 224-225; weeping permitted when body is burning, but none after cremation is finished and water is offered 218; wife of deceased made to lie down on wood pile arranged on c. ground and then made to rise up 207; wife of āhitāgni dying before him had c. performed with his vedic fires and sacrificial implements 225
- Cremation Act, passed in 1902 in England 233
- Crusades, Gibbon's cynical references to crusaders 532; launched to free holy land of Christians from the domination of Moslems 552
- Cunningham, General, on 'Mahābodhi' 643; on 'Ancient Geography of India' 683n, 696, 723; on 'Bharhut stūpa' 709
- Cyavana, 18, 23, 80 n
- Dadhikṛcchra, described 140
- Dakṣa, smṛti of 34 n, 53, 94, 119, 122, 220 n, 267, 269-271, 274, 288, 295, 306, 307, 310, 417
- Dakṣiṇā, (fee or gift) to be given to brāhmaṇas at the end of all prāyaścittas 121; to be given towards end of śrāddha rite 446, 451, 501
- Dakṣiṇāgni, homa in several śrāddhas by Agnihotṛins performed in 461-462
- Dānas, see under 'gifts'; in making dānas at death Kāmastuti is to be recited 184
- Dānavākyāvali, of Queen Dhīramati 583n
- Dandakāranya, 745; that part of it through which the Godāvarī flows is most holy 708
- Dandaviveka, of Vardhamāna 71
- Dandekar, Dr. R. N. 160n
- Daradas, placed the bodies of dead relatives on trees 234
- Darbhas, sprang from the hair and perspiration of Viṣṇu in the Boar incarnation 418
- Darśapūrṇamāsa, sacrifice to be offered by him who desires heaven 168
- Daśagvas, a sub-division of pitṛs called Angirases 192n; identified with seven sages 341
- Daśahotārah, 230n
- Datta, Dr. B. N. on 'Vedic funeral customs and Indus Valley Culture' 241
- Day, divided into two, three or five or fifteen parts 376
- Dāyabhāga, 22n, 366, 404, 483n, 510; theory of, about sapinda 510
- Dāyatattva, 366n, 368n
- De, Prof. S. K., author of 'Vaiṣṇava faith and movement in Bengal' 692, 702, 718
- Dead, bodies, disposal of, in ancient India had four stages, cremation, collecting charred bones and depositing underground in an urn, Śāntikarma, erection of a monument over the urn 255; embalming of, not unknown in ancient India 233; general rule in India of cremation of, from the times of the oldest literary monuments 232; methods of disposal differed at different times and among different peoples 231-232; preserved in caves, as in Rome 232n; cult of the dead, prominent feature in primitive societies 339
- Death, see under 'man', 'vratodyāpana', 'soul'; attitudes towards d. by men 180; generally looked upon with awe and terror 179; causes of premature 180; in Uttaraśākhā best 187; if date of death of a man dying in a distant land not known,

then certain tithis had to be accepted as the dates of his d. and śrāddha performed on those dates 306; indications of the immediate approach of 181; of son, pupil or wife due to corporal punishment no sin, when punishment moderate 19; man near death should be made to give gifts 182; rites after (see funeral rights); rites after first day of cremation and collection of bones begin in modern times on 10th day after d. 263; signs indicative of the approach of 181; sentence of death for theft, carried out by cāṇḍālas 74; times when it is best to die 187-188; to whom d. is happy and easy 180; terror of death was due to several causes 179; three classes of rites after death, acc. to Viṣṇupurāṇa 261; various views even among those who say there is survival after d. 180; was presumed after a man was unheard of for 12 or 15 or 20 years and effigy was cremated and āśauca observed 225, 256; d. while treating a brāhmaṇa or a cow medically does not amount to sin 109; worst indications of the approach of death are not being able to hear humming sound in the ear when closed with fingers and not being able to see the light in the eye 181

Debts, see 'father'; one of the fundamental conceptions of the Hindu faith has been the idea of d. owed to sages, Gods and pitṛs 550; whoever took the estate of a man had to pay latter's d. 570

Decalogue, 11n

Deceased, goat was carried along with the body of 196; parts of the body of, such as eye, breath were supposed to merge in the sun, wind 196; does not become free from condition of being a *preta* till navaśrāddhas are performed 263; piṇḍas offered for ten days after death built up a subtle body for the departed 263

Defamation, fines or punishment for, depended upon the caste of the offender as well as of the person defamed 81

Deśas, holy, are all mountains, all rivers, lakes, places of pilgrimage, the dwellings of sages, cowpens and temples 560

Devakṛcchra, 140-141

Devala, 11n, 24, 26, 29, 53, 55, 64, 70, 75, 77n, 78, 79n, 81n, 86, 90, 108, 115, 117, 119, 132n, 133, 138, 142, 143, 147, 149, 151, 181, 210, 215, 217n, 267, 276, 283, 284, 292, 295n, 298n, 314, 317, 318, 322, 327, 339, 352, 383n, 384n, 394n, 405, 415, 446n, 453n, 469, 478, 483, 484, 514, 535, 542n, 559, 584, 593n.

Devapāla, commentator of Kāṭhaka-gr̥hya (or Laugākṣigr̥hya) 53n, 140n, 358n, 359n,

Devāpi and Santanu were brothers and sons of king Kuru 681.

Devayājñika, commentator of Kātyāyanaśrautasūtra 219, 568,

Devayāna and pitṛyāna paths 198; described in the Gītā 188; explanation of the word 'light', 'day' 188; of hoary antiquity 189n;

Devī-Bhāgavata 712.

Devīpurāṇa, 560n, 578n, 616n,

Dhāmas, four, viz. Badrināth, Jagannātha, Rāmeśvara and Dvārakā 678

Dey, Nandolal, author of 'Geographical Dictionary of ancient and medieval India' 678n, 691n, 723-724

Dhanada-kṛcchra 141

Dharma, body being the all-in-all (or only source) of d., should be saved by all efforts 127; is in its pristine glory in Kṛtayuga and has four feet but loses one foot in each succeeding yuga 540n

Dharma-dvaita-nirṇaya 28n

Dharmapradīpa 482

Dharmaśāstra writers, very fond of divisions, sub-divisions and classifications and elaborate rules on āśauca



- 307-308
- Dharmasindhu, 219, 230, 258n, 259, 263, 275, 276, 282, 283, 284, 286, 287n, 288, 292n, 294, 298, 300, 305, 319, 533n, 711n
- Dhaumya 388, 473
- Dhavana, meaning of, in procedure of building up of a sepulchral mound acc. to Satyāsādhā śrauta 252, 253-255; now followed nowhere in India 254-255
- Dhruva-śrāddha, 517
- Diddā, cruel but energetic queen of Kashmir 571
- Dikshit, S. K. on 'Mother Goddesses' 529n
- Dikshitar, Prof. V. R. Ramchandra, author of 'Purāṇa Index' 726
- Dīpakalikā, commentary on Yāj, 18n, 96n, 105n, 134n, 142n, 163, 221n, 227n, 314n, 324n, 334n, 377n, 422n, 517n
- Diseases, evil, were said to be eight 394n; no complete agreement among smṛtis as to what sins lead to which diseases 175; particular diseases removed by particular gifts 178; procedure of driving out disease by means of images of the sun and of the disease and offering worship to the images 178; were believed by ancient Indians and other peoples to be the consequences of sins 174-175;
- Divākara, a. of Prāyaścittamuktāvali 15
- Divodāsa and Indra in the R̥gveda 619; founded Vārāṇasī on the northern bank of Gomati 620; ruler of Kāśī 620; great-grandson of Dhanvantari king of Kāśī 620;
- Divodāsiya, 548n
- Divyāvadāna, 235n
- Doctor, incurred no sin when patient died, though proper treatment given 19
- Droṇa, a measure of capacity, generally held equal to four āḍhakas 330n
- Dvīta, (see Ekata) 11
- Eclipse, eating during course of e. of sun or moon forbidden, but that applies only to the brāhmaṇa who eats, but not to the giver of food, who reaps good results thereby 375
- Edgerton, Prof 182n
- Effigy, burning of, when even bones of a person could not be found 224-225; burning of, recommended by Vaikhāṇasa-smārta-sūtra as meritorious in the case of everyone and was not restricted to cases where the dead body was not found 225
- Egyptians, ideas of, about Heaven and Hell were similar to those of most ancient and medieval Indians 170
- Ekabhakta, an expiation 132
- Ekāṣṭakā, is the 8th tithi after full moon of month of Māgha 353-54; said to be the wife of the year 353-355
- Ekata, story of 11
- Ekoddiṣṭa, (see 'navasrāddha', 'navamīśra') 516-520; is śrāddha offered to one deceased person alone whereas in pārvaṇasrāddha three paternal ancestors are invoked 380, 516; is a modification of pārvaṇasrāddha 516; place of performing (not in the house) 520; points of difference between pārvaṇasrāddha and e 516-517; suitable words have to be substituted in mantras 517; to be performed every month for a deceased dvija till sapindīkaraṇa 517; three kinds of, viz. nava, navamīśra and purāṇa 517; what are E. śrāddhas 520
- Elliot and Dowson's 'History of India' 631, 632, 692n, 699
- Encyclopaedia, of Religion and Ethics 1
- Enemies, of man, such as anger 9
- Ephesians, 171
- Epigraphia Carnatica, 572n
- Epigraphia Indica, 52, 182n, 555, 572n, 580n, 634n, 636, 637, 639n, 685, 688, 689, 700, 709, 710n, 711



- Eschatology, meaning of 179; subject of, is what happens to a man after bodily death 179; two aspects of, destiny of individual after death and the ultimate end of all things 179.
- Eween, J. author of 'Benares, a hand-book for visitors' 618
- Excommunication (Ghaṭasphoṭa), process of 105
- Expiation, for acts said to be equal to mahāpātakas is half of that for the latter 29-30
- Fa Hien, Chinese Traveller (399-413 A. D.) 235n, 650,
- Fast, vide 'upavāsa'; all religions (except Zoroastrianism) emphasize as a discipline the necessity of 54: f. for a day is the penance for omitting rites ordained by Veda or for neglecting duties of a snātaka 53; Gautama includes f. under *tapas* 52; Mlecchas even think highly of f., according to Mahābhārata 51; observer of, had to give up certain actions such as chewing tāmbūla 53; Sāntiparva says that merely emaciating body by f. is not *tapas* 54
- Father, debts of, should be paid acc. to Yāj. by the sons or grandsons, even when they receive no ancestral property, but the great-grandson need not pay even the principal if he has received no ancestral property 366-367
- Fergusson and Burgess, authors of 'Cave temples of India', 678n
- Fine, disposal by king of, imposed and recovered from one guilty of mortal sins 71
- Fires, disposal of, in the case of an *āhitāgni*, if he became *patita* or committed suicide in one of various ways 227; employed in the cremation of a widower, a widow, brahmacārin, unmarried girl, a boy whose upanayana was not performed or an ascetic 226; five fires are Gārhapatya, Āhavanīya, Dakṣiṇāgni, Āvasathya (or Aupāsana) and Sabhya.
- Fire-temple, called Jvālāji near Baku 118
- Fleet, Dr. 235n, 634n, 706
- Flesh-eating, at śrāddhas by brāhmaṇas 424; Mitākṣarā and Kalpataru written about 1100-1120 A.D. do not expressly say that flesh-eating is forbidden in the Kali age 424; Vasiṣṭha and Manu appear to be in two minds about 425
- Food, cooked along with hair or insects (like ants) or that is polluted by contact with a woman in monthly illness should not be partaken of but if food already cooked is polluted then it should be used after purifying it with ashes, water and the like 329
- Food, cooked in marriages, festivals in honour of a deity or in a sacrifice may be served through others, if an āśauca on birth or death intervenes 291; exceptions to prohibition about food 100; gift of cooked f. highly eulogised 534n; offered as sacrifice to gods and manes must be given only to a brāhmaṇa who has studied the veda and what is presented to most worthy brāhmaṇas brings greatest reward 386; one requiring inner purity should avoid forbidden f. or vomit it if he takes it through ignorance and take same prāyaścitta 100; purification of polluted cooked f. 328-329; rules about f. in expiations 124; rules about, for relatives after the performance of funeral rites for three days and twelve days 238-239; seen by dogs, cāṇḍālas, those guilty of mahāpātakas and a woman in her monthly illness or by a sonless woman or by one suffering from white leprosy becomes unclean 379-380; unclean food even may be taken in case of distress or danger to life 100; wealthy men should not throw away polluted f. if it is more than a

- drona in quantity and poor men should not throw away more than an ādhaka 330
- Force, enjoyment or gift of property or a transaction brought about by, is void 118
- Forest, a large f. is invoked as a deity in R̥gveda 561; seven holy forests of Kurukṣetra 561
- Francis of Assisi, saint, considered dirt as one of the signs of holy poverty 311
- Fraud, consequences of, are the same as those of force in cases of gifts and other transactions 118
- Fravashis of Parsi scriptures, see under pitrs 341n
- Funeral monuments; erection of a laṣṭi (a staff) in the Andhau Inscription of the time of Rudradāman (2nd century A. D.) 255; planting of a puṣkaraka tree on the site of cremation or building of an *edūka* 255
- Funeral rites, see under 'Agnihotrin', 'cremation', 'child', 'deceased', 'mantras', 'satī', 'water'; animal in, may be killed or donated or let off acc. to Āśvalāyana-gr̥hya 209n; are same for all whose upanayana has been performed except that āhitāgni is cremated with the three Vedic fires, except that one who has smārta fire only is cremated with that fire and one who has neither of these with ordinary fire 210; couch on which corpse was carried was to be of *udumbara* wood 204, 206n; description of death and funeral rites of Gautama Buddha 234-235; differ in each Vedic Śākhā, though certain matters are common to all 190; earthenware vessel filled with water continuously and cooked rice at mid-day to be offered for the deceased's benefit 219; ethereal body was supposed to be built up by the piṇḍas offered to the deceased for ten days after death 221; for an *āhitāgni* in general 204-208; for one who had undergone consecration for a *soma* sacrifice or *sattra*, acc. to śrauta sūtras 202-204; for ten days after death, a handful of water mixed with sesame was to be offered to deceased on the stone called *aśmā* placed on kuśas and one large piṇḍa also on kuśas every day 262; for Yati 229-231; funeral pyre is to be made of the wood of sacrificial trees 211; great importance attached to the incident of a crow seizing or eating the piṇḍa offered on the 10th day after death 264; king to arrange for funeral rites of the deceased in the absence of all relatives 256-257; lamp fed with sesame oil to be kept burning for ten days after death 219; milk and water to be placed in space for ten nights after death for reducing torments of thirst to the spirit of the deceased 340; no funeral rites for those who start in anger on the Great Journey (to the Himālayas) or who commit suicide in one of various ways 222-223; order of persons who are *adhikārin* for performing f. r. is generally the same as the *adhikārins* for śrāddha, but varies in different works 256-260; person who begins the funeral rites on the first day has to carry them on till the 10th day even if a nearer relative becomes available after the former has begun 221; piṇḍas to be offered to deceased on day of cremation and for ten days more in addition by the son or nearest sapinḍa 219-221; procedure of, according to Āśv. gr. 208-210; procedure of, became more elaborate in medieval and later times 190; procedure of offering water to deceased after cremation 218, 219; procedure of what to do after returning to the house on cremation 237; procedure for ten days after death 262; procedure on 10th day after death 263-264; procession of relatives returning after

cremation arranged according to age, the elder coming first 199n; relatives after performing f.r. should touch *dūrvā* tendrils, fire and bull and should offer a *piṇḍa* to the departed 237; relatives should, for one day after rites on death, purchase or obtain food from another (house) of one kind only and without salt 238; rules of conduct to be observed by relatives (male and female) after they return from cremation and for three days after 238-239; slaves and attendants were buried with the corpses of the master in Babylon and Celtic Britain but no such practice mentioned even in early Vedic literature 256; some persons, such as the impotent, thieves of gold, women that kill their foetus or husbands, or drink *surā* were forbidden to offer water to deceased relations 222; some works allow a man to perform his own *antyeṣṭi*, while living 261; the mantra '*asmā-tvam*' is not to be repeated in f.r. when deceased had not kept *śrauta* fires 210-211; toes and thumbs of the corpse were tied with a white thread or the fringe of a garment in, 204; throwing of *aśmā* into water after anointing it with oil 264; urn containing bones was supported by wooden post 201n; varied acc. to the *śrauta* or *gṛhya* sūtra, or acc. as the deceased was an *āhitāgni* or not, or acc. as the deceased was a woman or child or an ascetic or died in a distant land or by accident or committed suicide 190; verses of *Rgveda* X. 14-18 were employed by most of the sūtras, are used even now in cremation rites and occur in other Vedic *samhitās* 191; views differ as to the stoppage of certain actions for ten or twelve days after death by relatives 239-240; what fire cannot be used in f. r 210; what the relatives and those who carried

the corpse though no relatives were to do on day of cremation and one day thereafter 238; what is stopped for ten days after death is performance of *kāmya* rites, giving and accepting gifts, *homa* and *vedic* study, but *nitya* and *naimittika* acts to be performed in *vedic* and *smārta* fires are to be performed through another 239; women could, in default of son or male *sapiṇḍas* of the deceased, perform f. r. of their husbands or father, father-in-law, brother but without *vedic* mantras, acc. to some 256-257, 259; words of condolence and comfort were to be addressed to the relatives of the deceased according to several works, after they have offered water, expatiating on the grip of *Kāla* on everything, on the certainty of death for every one born, on *dharma* alone following the soul in its wanderings and on the futility of mere lamentations 236-37

Führer, Dr. 297n

Gadādhara on *Śrāddhasūtra* 507n

Gadre, Mr. N. K., author of a Marāṭhi work 719n

Gāhadvāla Inscriptions 572n, 636-37, Gajacchāyā 171n, 532

Gāṇagāri, view of, on *śrāddha* 511

Gaṇahoma, 43n, 44

Gaṇeśa is called *Dhūṇḍhi* at *Kāśī* and derivation of the word 638

Gaṅgā (Ganges) 585-596; G. and *Kurukṣetra* were the most sacred spots acc. to *Manu* 587; as long as a particle of the bones of a man lies inside the G. so long does the man remain happy in heaven 586; casting of the ashes of a cremated person in the Ganges 594-595; countries, hermitages, mountains through which G. flows are pre-eminent in purity 586; defining the extent of the *kṣetra* of G., the *tīra* (bank) and the *garbha* 589-90; derivation of word



'Gaṅgā' 589; eulogy of, in Viṣṇu-purāṇa 587-588; four different streams of G. in four directions 587; grand eulogy of, in Vanaparva chap. 85 verses 86-97, 586; G. does not forsake even the most sinful or wicked man 589; G. is equal to all the 35 millions of holy places declared by Vāyu, says Kūrma 588; G. water and residence thereon are said to be superior to Vedic sacrifices, *tapas*, and *yoga*, since they yield heaven and mokṣa 588; G. represents Viṣṇu who represents all gods 589; God Nārāyaṇa is the owner of the strip of land within four cubits from the flowing water of G. 590; interpretation of the story of Gayāsura by Mitra, O'Malley and Barua 359-360; invocation of the clay in the bed of G. 591-592; kṣetra extends to two krośas on each bank of G. 590; mantras to be recited at the time of a bath in the Ganges 594; mūlamantra about G. 589; names of the seven streams of the G. 587; no tonsure on, according to Vācaspatimiśra 575; on G. all times are auspicious and all men are fit for receiving gifts 589; one thousand names of, in Skandapurāṇa, Kāśikhaṇḍa, chap. 29, 565; procedure of a bath in the G. prescribed by Matsyapurāṇa chapter 102 for all varṇas and all students of the several vedas, 591-594; Purāṇas contain hundreds of verses eulogising the sanctifying activity and greatness of, 585; Purāṇas say that G. springs from toe-nail of Viṣṇu and that Śiva let it off from his matted hair in seven streams 587; residence on the bank itself of G. is not desired 590; saṅkalpa to be made at time of bathing in G. 590n; some purāṇas say that the G. is easy of access everywhere except at three places viz. Gangādvāra, Prayāga and where it joins the sea 588; special merit

accumulated by bath in the Ganges on certain days 596; supposed to flow in heaven as Mandākinī, on the earth as Ganges and in Pātāla as Bhogavatī 587; *tarpaṇa* on G. after one bathes with water for the gratification of the three worlds 592; waters of, burn all bad deeds 586; waters of, are white, while those of Yamunā are dark 596n Gaṅga kings of Orissa built magnificent temples at Bhuvaneśvara, Koṇārka and Purī 699 Gaṅgā-bhaktitarāṅginī of Gaṇapati 576n, 586, 587n, 588n, 592n, Gaṅgākṛtyaviveka of Vardhamāna 585 Gaṅgāpattalaka of Gaṇeśvara 586 Gaṅgāvākyāvali of Viśvāsadevī, queen of king Padmasimha of Mithilā 586; 587n, 588n, 574n, 576n, 577n, 590n, 591, 595n, 601, 609, 615n, 616n; said to have been really composed by Vidyāpati in honour of his patroness 583n

Garga 398n

Gārgya 373

Garuḍapurāṇa 53, 166, 168, 174, 182n, 184n, 212, 216, 218, 219, 221, 224, 225, 231, 236-38, 240, 262n, 263, 265n, 266n, 268, 302n, 304, 338n, 401, 418, 419, 440n, 445, 448, 458n, 483, 488n (verse 'apavitraḥ pavitro vā'), 517, 578, 520-22, 523n, 524n, 535, 536n, 541, 547n, 577n, 579, 580n, 588, 649, 651 (same verses as in Vāyu 110. 34-60), 663n, 666n, 668n, 669n, 678n.

Gāthās sung by piṭṛs 653

Gautama, views of, on śrāddha, 354, 511

Gautama, Dharmasūtra of, 9, 14, 16n, 19, 21, 23-25, 30-32, 35, 39-42, 45, 49-52, 59n, 61, 62n, 70, 72, 74, 75, 76, 77, 79, 82, 84, 88, 89, 91, 93-97, 98, 99, 103, 107, 109, 110, 111, 113, 114, 119, 122, 125, 130, 132, 133, 135, 136, 137, 138n, 150, 161, 214, 215, 218, 222, 223, 238, 240, 246n, 256, 261, 268-71, 277, 290, 292,



297, 298, 300, 301, 310, 314-15, 329, 331, 353-54, 379, 384, 387, 388, 400, 402, 410, 426n, 444, 466, 521, 606

Gautamapitṛmedhasūtra 185, 189, 204, 207n, 208n, 218n, 220n, 222, 224, 236, 240

Gautama-smṛti 174, 175

Gavyūti is equal to two krośas 186n

Gayā, pp. 643-679; see under Gayāśīras, Viṣṇupada, Akṣayavaṭa at 661n; Akṣayavaṭa śrāddha at G. and honouring Gayā brāhmaṇas established by Brahmā 666, 676; sages did not prohibit *kṣaura* even at Gayā but only *munḍana* 575; all sins are destroyed by performance of śrāddha at Gayā 654; ancestors to whom śrāddha is offered at G. are either six, nine, or twelve 669; Anuśāsanaparva mentions three spots in Gayā that are not mentioned in Vanaparva chap 84, 649; ascetic has to offer no śrāddha, but should put down his staff on Viṣṇupada 655; bath of Gadādhara with pañcāmṛta explained 664; bathing of Gadādhara with pañcāmṛta is obligatory in Fañcatīrthī rites and the rest may be done according to one's ability 675; Brahmā, it is stated by Vāyupurāṇa and Agni, bestowed upon G. brāhmaṇas 55 villages, Gayātīrtha, well-appointed houses &c. but he enjoined on them not to beg or accept gifts from others, but they being greedy officiated at a sacrifice of Dharma and begged of him fees whereupon Brahmā cursed them and deprived them of everything and when they bewailed he pitied them and told them to maintain themselves at Gayātīrtha 55, 579, 657; by performing śrāddha and offering piṇḍas on Viṣṇupada pilgrim saves one thousand families and takes them and himself to the world of Viṣṇu 665; comprehended, when Buddhism

waned, all the tract from Pretasīlā to Mahābodhi tree 650; conduct of modern Gayā brāhmaṇas 405; description of rites performed for seven days after entering Gayā 662-668; Dhāmins are a special but lower class of priests at, 668; Dharmāranya was founded by Asūrtarayas, says Rāmāyaṇa 653n; enumeration of the principal holy rivers, peaks and hills, bathing places, sacred sites and trees in G. 660-664; expenses on Gayāśrāddha to be on a profuse scale 404-405; full pilgrimage at Gayā lasts for seven days 662; Gadālola, why so called, 665n; Gadālola, śrāddha at 676; Gaya is not a demon in Rgveda 59n; G. named after king Gaya who is mentioned in even Buddhist and Jaina works 646; Gayā-kṣetra has an extent of five krośas and Gayāśīras of one krośa 655, 677; Gayāśīras is the centre of Gayā, the most holy spot and smaller than Gayā 665n, 677; Gayāśīras and Gayā were well-known places in Buddha's days 668, 677; Gayāyātrā described in Vāyu 110, 661-662; Gayāls or Gayāwals are priests who make profit from Gayā pilgrimage their business 580; great divergence of views as to the ancestors to whom śrāddha is to be offered at Gayā 668-669; if one out of many sons goes to G. and performs śrāddha, the pitṛs secure *mukṭi* 539; great divergence of views among modern scholars about the antiquity of the Gayāmāhātmya 644; hill called Muṇḍapṛṣṭha 658; if pilgrim unable to perform all details of Gayāśrāddha at Phalgu, Pretasīlā and other spots he may offer only piṇḍas 671, 673; in whose soever name a piṇḍa is offered at Gayā that person if in hell goes to heaven and if in heaven secures release from saṁsāra 665, 670; is spoken of as

pitṛtīrtha 654; king Gaya, son of Amūrtarayas, performed a sacrifice in which food and fees were distributed in plenty 653; Krauñcapāda is the hill Muṇḍapṛsthā 665; literature on the History and Antiquities of 643; Mahābodhi tree, verses addressed to 664, 667; mahānādī in Vāyupurāṇa on Gayā generally means Phalgu 676; mātṛmāyā of G. in Vāyupurāṇa is a patchwork made between 7th and 10th centuries 951-952; mango tree at G, famous verse about 661n; mātṛśoḍaśī described by Raghunandana with 16 mantras which do not occur in Vāyu 677; most important work on G. relied upon in medieval digests is the Gayā-mātṛmāyā i. e. Vāyupurāṇa chapters 105-112, 644; not a spot in G. that is not a tīrtha 656; numerous sub-tīrthas of G. are mentioned in Vanaparva chapters 77 and 82; occupies a unique place in the hearts of all pious Hindus even now 643; on entering G. pilgrim bathes in Phalgu river, performs tarpaṇa and śrāddha and on same day performs śrāddha on Preta-sīlā and offers piṇḍas whereby the persons for whom this is done become free from the position of *pretā* 662-663; one may offer piṇḍa to oneself but without sesame 670; one may offer to pitṛs at G. piṇḍas of *pāyasa*, boiled rice, barley flour, fruits, roots, sesame Cake, jaggery or honey 653; order in which several tīrthas at G. are to be visited 662ff.; *padas* (stone slabs with foot-prints thereon) at G. and śrāddhas at them 661n, 676; pañcatīrthī (five tīrthas) of Gayā and rites there 663n, 675; passed through several vicissitudes 650; pilgrim should gratify the Gayā brāhmaṇas 656; Preta-sīlā adjoins the west bank of Phalgu river and is to the north of Gayā 671; procedure of offering

a piṇḍa to oneself while living 670; procedure of śrāddha, acc. to Vāyupurāṇa 653-656; procedure of Gayā śrāddha acc. to Raghunandana 671-677; Rāmatīrtha (i. e. Prabhāsahrada), bath, śrāddha and piṇḍas at, free pitṛs of pilgrim from condition of being *pretā* 674; references to Gayā from Ṛgveda downwards 645-647; rites from the first to the seventh day of entering Gayā described 672-676; river Vaitaraṇī in G. 656; rules of conduct to be observed while one is in Gayā 655-656; Samārohaṇa, meaning of, in Aurnavābha's explanation of the three padas of Viṣṇu 647; saṅkalpa acc. to Raghunandana, before a bath in Phalgu 671n; seven gotras to whom śrāddha may be offered at G. 662; six Gayās that confer *mukti* by worship and piṇḍadāna at them, enumerated 667; size of piṇḍas to be offered at Gayā-śrāddha 662; Śoḍaśīkarma at G. described 672-673; special characteristics of śrāddhas at G. 669-670; śrāddha may be performed at G. at all times, even in an intercalary month, even when Jupiter and Venus are invisible 370, 655; śrāddha at G. is made without arghya and āvāhana 661; śrāddha at Preta-sīlā is the first and that at Akṣayaṇa is the last and the rest of the śrāddhas should be performed in the order set out in Vāyupurāṇa or, if one does not know it, in any order 666; story of Gayāsura 656-657; story of the mace manufactured from the bones of an asura called Gada 660; story of Sīlā, that was placed on the head of Gayāsura 657-658; story of Viśālā, a sonless king and of a person who offered one-sixth of his property to a trader and who was saved from remaining *pretā* 666; tarpaṇa of ancestors at G. 671n; tax was levied on Kashmirians performing śrāddha at Gayā 571; the

unmanifest forms (such as hills like Prabhāsa) and manifest forms (such as image of Ādi-Gadādhara) of Viṣṇu 660-661; though there are numerous tīrthas at Gayā, visit to three alone is absolutely necessary viz. to Phalgu river, Viṣṇupada and Akṣaya-vaṭa 666; Uttaramānasa tank 650-651, 653; Vedīs, at which the leisured pilgrim may offer piṇḍas in G. are forty-five 667; very sublime formula repeated at the time of offering piṇḍa and water at, 550; Viṣṇupada is Ādi-Gadādhara himself 665; Viṣṇupada is deemed to be the foot-print of God Viṣṇu 667; was named according to Agni and Vāyu after Gaya who performed a sacrifice there 654; was all emptiness and desolation in Fa Hien's time, while in Hiouen Tshang's time it was a flourishing town with 1000 brāhmaṇa families 650; why Hari is Ādi-Gadādhara at G. 657, 660; works dealing with procedure of śrāddha at G. 670-671; Yājñavalkya says that whatever a man gives in Gayā leads to inexhaustible rewards 653

Gayāls or Gayāwals are notorious for their indolence, ignorance and are a dying race 644; function of, at Akṣaya-vaṭa in Gayā 580, 668; have become a guild or close corporation and resent the intrusion of a stranger 580; have got books in which they enter the names and addresses of pilgrims who are asked to sign themselves and recommend to their descendants to honour them when the descendants might come to Gayā 581; Nārāyaṇabhaṭṭa limited the injunction about honouring Gayāwals alone to śrāddha at Akṣaya-vaṭa 670; pilgrims to Gayā must honour Gayāls alone and not other brāhmaṇas however learned they may be 670; profess the Vaiṣṇava faith established by Madhva 644; referred to in a copperplate grant of

Lakṣmaṇasena in 1183 A. D. 580; strange practice among them of adopting the same person in several families at the same time and yet allowing the son so adopted to retain his rights in the family of birth 580-581; the number of, is being gradually reduced 581

Gayāśīras, extent of, according to Nārada-purāṇa 647; is the Brahma-yoni hill according to some modern scholars, while Dr. Mitra holds it is not 646n; named in the Vanaparva, in several Purāṇas and in ancient Buddhist works such as the Mahāvagga 646

Gayāśrāddhapaddhati of Raghunandana 583

Gayāśrāddhapaddhati of Raghunātha 671

Gayāśrāddhapaddhati of Vācaspati 670

Gāyatrī, inaudible *japa* of, highly eulogised 47; repeating of, as secret expiation for sins 126-127; repeating of, in śrāddhas 507, 543; to be recited while performing expiation 120

Ghaṭajātaka 668

Ghoṣasānti 178

Ghose, Dr. J. C. on 'Antiquity of Gayā', criticized 643

Gibbon, author of 'Decline and fall of the Roman Empire' 129n, 552

Gifts, see 'dakṣiṇā', 'food'; acceptance of gifts from kings is terrible in its consequences 549; as removers of the consequences of sins 51-52; one or more of ten g. should be made by a dying man 182; of gold, cow, clothes, horse, land, clarified butter and food destroy sin 51; of all wealth or of a large portion as expiation of brāhmaṇa murder 92

Goat was carried with the dead body 196n

Gobhilaḡṛhya, 53, 64, 346, 354, 348n, 355, 358, 417, 525, 526



- Gobhila-smṛti (often cited as Chandogopariśiṣṭa of Kātyāyana) 149n, 182, 207n, 218n, 223, 224, 225, 226, 237, 239n, 240, 269, 297, 321, 355, 356, 361, 417, 418, 440n, 441n, 443n, 455n, 464n, 473, 475n, 476, 477, 480, 482, 487n, 513, 517n, 518, 521, 524, 529, 537; quotes some verses of Yājñavalkyasmṛti and a verse from Mahābhārata 237
- Godāvarī (or Gautamī) 707-711; see 'Daṇḍakāranya'; bath in G. when Jupiter enters Leo highly regarded even up to the present day 711; Brahmapurāṇa, chapters 70-175 laud Godāvarī and about 100 sub-tīrthas at great length 707-708; Ganges is called Gautamī in the south and Bhāgīrathī in the north 707; Gautama brought Ganges from Siva's matted hair to Brahmagiri where he had his hermitage 708; G. is said to be 200 yojanas long and to have 35 millions of tīrthas on it 707-708; G. is pre-eminently a place for performing śrāddha 708; holiest spot in Nasik is Rāmakuṇḍa 710; Govardhana (6 miles to west of Nasik), history of 710; Nasik on G., history of, from 200 B. C. 709; Pañcavaṭī on G. 709-710; referred to generally as Gautamī in the Brahmapurāṇa 707; story of Bāvarī who resided on the Godāvarī and sent several disciples to Buddha, acc. to Suttanipāta 707; Tryambakeśvara is the hill on which Gautama had his hermitage 708; two epics and purāṇas contain numerous references to it 707; Vana-parva speaks of it as a holy river in the south 707; verse occurring in several purāṇas says that G. is on the Sahya mountain and the country through which G. flows is the most charming in the world 708
- Gods, see under pitṛs; Gods like Mitra and Varuna are implored to confer immortality 156; of Vedic pantheon described as guardians and promoters of ṛta 3; distinction drawn in Sat. Br. about what is done for g. and for pitṛs 249n
- Gomatīvidyā, an expiation for go-vadha, 108-109
- Gomūtrakṛcchra 134
- Gopalan R., author of 'History of the Pallavas of Kāñci' 712
- Gopatha-brāhmaṇa 618
- Gosava, a strange Vedic rite 62n, 434; deemed by Vasiṣṭha to be a destroyer of sin 62n
- Goṣṭhīśrāddha 381-382
- Govadha is at the head of all upapātakas 107; different prāyaścittas for, in different smṛtis 107-109; expiation for, is same as one for killing a vaiśya or śūdra 107; four expiations prescribed for by Yāj. 107; was no sin, if a cow or bull died while being medically treated 109
- Govindacandra, emperor of Kanoj 634n, 636, 637, 639
- Govindānanda, commentator of Prāyaścittaviveka 39n, 86n, 88, 92, 222n, 265
- Govindarāja, a commentator of Manu-smṛti 481
- Govrata, as prāyaścitta 134
- Grants, Brhaspati's rules about g. of land 52; of land and villages state that they are made for the increase of the merit of donor and his parents 52
- Graves, or sepulchral mounds 246-250; at Lauriya Nandangarh resemble in many respects the mounds described in Śrauta-sūtras 254; clods or baked bricks were employed in building mounds over charred bones of deceased persons 254; difference between g. of godly people and of asuras 247-248; ground, should not be visible from the village 248; height of, depended on the varṇa of persons whose ashes were to be buried 250; pegs of different kinds of trees are fixed in different directions

- of these 250; performer of rites about graves return to their houses holding the tail of an ox 250; placing of bricks silently without mantras 249-250; procedure of the erection of a mound with *dhavana* and without *dhavana* including dialogue, dancing and singing acc. to Sat. śrauta 251-252; procedure for making sepulchral mounds for those who had performed *agnicayana* 248-251; proper time for making 247-248; shape of, should be four-cornered and not round (which is practised by Asuras and Eastern people) 247-248; not too large, but broader behind and on north side 248; should not be erected near certain plants and trees 248; size of, should be just the size of the man whose bones were to be deposited 248; size of mounds differed among 'devadarsins' and Śaunakins 253; various measurements in the sūtras provided for constructing a mound over the charred bones deposited in a pit 253; verses were recited while piling up layers of clay or bricks, which refer to pillars and posts 254; were in ancient India generally quadrangular, but sometimes also round 254
- Greece, some ancient writers in, held theory of transmigration of souls 180
- Gr̥hastharatnākara 25n, 48n, 226n
- Gr̥hyāgnisāgara, of Nārāyaṇabhaṭṭa Ārde 360n
- Gr̥hya-kārikās 286
- Gr̥hya-parīṣiṣṭa 219, 221, 546
- Growse, F. S. on 'Mathurā' 688, 692
- Guild, brāhmaṇa who is a member of a g. or who officiates at a sacrifice on behalf of g. is unfit to be invited at a śrāddha 393, 394
- Guṇas, in Sāṅkhya philosophy 9
- Gupta Inscriptions 16n, 605n, 634n, 646n, 712
- Guru, eleven males so called 24; meaning of 24
- Gurvaṅganāgama, (sexual intercourse with *guru's* wife), see under 'incest'; a mahāpātaka 23-25, 103; prāyaścitta for 103-104; sexual intercourse with maiden of higher varṇa, with friend's wife, sister, son's or sagotra's wife or with *antyaja* woman equal to g. 103
- Hades, the Greek word for Hebrew Sheol 170
- Haj and Haji 552n
- Halāyudha, commentator of Śrāddha-sūtra of Kātyāyana, 443n, 450n, 455n, 470n, 484n, 516n
- Hall, Dr. Fitz-Edward 623n
- Haracaritacintāmaṇi, 724
- Haradatta, 11n, 46n, 49n, 50n, 53, 59n, 62n, 64n, 71, 79n, 90, 93n, 96, 108n, 111, 114n, 124, 126, 130, 135, 136, 138n, 144n, 149n, 150, 161n, 218, 222n, 223, 268, 271, 275n, 278n, 289, 292, 293n, 301, 305n, 335n, 349, 353, 360n, 384, 392n, 394n, 397n, 402n, 404, 406, 410n, 437n, 444, 482
- Hārālatā, 215, 216, 221n, 222n, 234, 240, 241n, 267n, 269n, 270n, 271, 273, 274n, 276n, 288, 291n, 293n, 296n, 297n, 298n, 299, 300, 305n, 306, 307, 310, 315n
- Haraprasad, Shastri, M. M. 458, 542n, 572n, 697n,
- Harihara, commentator of Āśaucadaśaka, mss. of which are dated 1482-83 and 1522-23 A.D., 273, 460
- Hariṇi, verses from Atharvaveda 242
- Hārīta, 16, 40, 60, 83, 88, 106, 114, 119, 124, 126, 143, 173, 175, 215, 224, 270, 333, 385, 514, 515n, 523n, 536-537, 546, 548, 604
- Hārīta-saṁhitā (on medicine) 176
- Harivaṁśa 117, 350, 445n, 620, 690
- Harṣacarita, 371n
- Harshe, Dr. R. G. 181.
- Hastings, Encyclopaedia of Religion and Ethics by, 1
- Havell, E. B., author of 'Benares the sacred city,' 618n, 631, 632n,
- Haviṣya, food, what is 149n, 412, 414n

Hayaśirṣa-pañcarātra, 319n

Heaven, see under 'Hell', 'karma', 'Yama', 'worlds', 'svarga'; ancient machinery of Heaven and Hell has largely failed to keep people moral in these days 172n; calculating and bargaining spirit of smṛtis and purāṇas about actions that lead to, 166; descriptions of the pleasures of, 165-166; glowing descriptions of, in Mahābhārata and purāṇas 165; generous donor or worshipper goes to it and mixes among gods 156; history of idea of 154-158; idea that h. is a place or state of eternal bliss to which the spirits of the religious or of warriors go is common to many ancient peoples 158; idea of heaven in post-vedic literature 161-164; in heaven, acc. to Atharvaveda, there are beavies of women, ponds of ghee, streams of milk and honey, wine flows like water and there is no disease 157; is devoid of fear or old age, or hunger or thirst or sorrow acc. to Upaniṣads 158; is placed in the north by Śāntiparva, in which there is no hunger or thirst or old age or sin 166; life in h. is said in Rgveda to be full of joys and delights 156; pious dead become united in h. with their *iṣṭāpūrta* and their forefathers 156; theory of, came to be modified by the doctrine of *karma* and *punarjanma* 158; said to be the abode of Yama in the Rgveda and full of music and song 156; theory that pleasures of h. have a time limit 167; three heavens mentioned in Rgveda 156; warriors killed in battle were supposed even in the Rgveda and generally in the Gītā and later to ascend to h. and there had the society of beautiful damsels 158

Hell, see 'Naraka', 'Yama' and 'Citragupta'; Buddhists took over the idea of hell 164; h. called *put* 161;

clear references in Atharvaveda to, 155; description of the torments of 167-168; different views about whether it is a place 161; different numbers of hells 162-164; eighteen evil actions which lead to h. 173; four hells named in Taittirīya Āraṇyaka 155; is a man's lot when he transgresses his dharma 162; names of hells 162-163; no clear or express references in Rgveda to h. 154; in Jain literature 163; land of everlasting fire for the devil and his myrmidons 170; no mention of tortures of hell in Rgveda 155; periods for which several sinners undergo torments of 164; Quranic ideas of 171n; seven hells, acc. to Vedāntasūtra and Viṣṇupurāṇa 162; some Purāṇas state that the number of hells is crores 164; twenty-one hells mentioned by several works 162; torments in, described 167-168; task before modern Indian leaders is how to build up virtues of tolerance and respect for life apart from ideas of heaven and hell 172

Hemādri 59, 77, 115, 147, 148, 151, 304, 309n, 343, 351n, 352n, 361n, 376, 378n, 385, 386, 388, 389, 390n, 392n, 394n, 395n, 396, 397, 398n, 399n, 400n, 403n, 407n, 408, 409, 411, 413, 414n, 415n, 416, 418n, 422n, 424, 433n, 441n, 442n, 444n, 445, 449n, 450n, 453, 455n, 457, 458, 459n, 460, 463, 466, 467n, 468, 471, 472n, 475, 476, 477n, 479, 480n, 481n, 482, 484, 507n, 508n, 513n, 514, 523n, 528, 530n, 536, 542, 545, 582n, 669, 717

Hemaśrāddha (śrāddha with gold i. e. money) 515; if the person who has to perform a śrāddha cannot offer even āmaśrāddha, he should perform h. 515; occasions when it is allowed 515

Herodotus 180

Hibbert Journal, 1n, 8n



Himālaya, all parts of, said to be holy in the Purāṇas 560; mentioned in the Atharvaveda 559; spoken of as 'devatātmā' by Kālidāsa 560; vide list of tīrthas

Hinduism, spread of, in Java, Bali and other countries of south-east Asia 118

Hiouen Tshang 608, 629, 631, 683, 688, 711, 766

Hiranyakeśi-grhya-sūtra 58, 353, 354, 355, 361, 384, 385, 439, 471, 474, 559, 619

Hiranyakeśi-pitr-medha-sūtra 185

History of Dharmaśāstra, vol. I—582, 586, 610n, 651n, 721n; vol. II—11, 13n, 19, 24n, 36n, 42, 46n, 47, 48n, 52, 54, 62n, 76, 82, 85, 91n, 92n, 93n, 111, 112, 115, 117, 118, 120n, 131, 133n, 141, 144n, 168n, 184n, 199n, 200n, 207n, 222n, 229n, 230n, 231, 239n, 249n, 275n, 302, 309, 311, 327n, 331, 332, 349n, 357n, 359n, 369, 384, 397, 412, 415, 417, 422, 425, 434n, 435n, 440n, 442n, 443n, 501n, 510, 529, 536n, 543n, 553n, 554, 555n, 558n, 571n, 592n, 593n, 604, 605, 676n, 722n, 734; vol. III—11, 13n, 19, 21, 25, 51n, 69, 74, 76, 80, 82, 89n, 92, 100n, 105, 106, 118, 129, 164n, 257, 258, 271, 275n, 280n, 286, 302, 330n, 331, 364, 380n, 424, 425, 439, 453n, 454, 473n, 510, 525, 538, 540n, 550n, 590n, 604, 608, 628

Holy cities, seven enumerated 678

Holy places, what are 55n, 555

Homa, as a means of removing consequences of sins 43-44; could be performed in ordinary fire 78n; for women and śūdras to be performed through a brāhmaṇa as a *pratidinidhi* acc. to some digests 78n; general procedure of 543n; number of oblations of clarified butter is either 28, 108 or 1008, 543; one lakh of homas with sesame accompanied by Gāyatrī recitation as substitute for heavy

expiations 128; should be performed in all expiations 120.

House, see under 'purity,' 'purification'; constructed with burnt bricks is purified by wind and the Sun 323-24

Hunter, W. W., author of work on 'Orissa,' 692, 695n, 696, 697, 698, 699, 702, 750.

Image, see under 'purification,' 'purity,' 'temple'.

Impurity, see 'Āśauca'; observed by man for ten days, when he performs his own śrāddha while living 544; some persons are free from, not at all times, but only when they are engaged in some peculiar actions such as sacrifices while engaged in sacrifice 298

Incest, see under 'gurvāṅganāgama'; prāyaścittas for, acc. to Parāśara 104; punishment and prāyaścitta for, are same viz. excision of testicles 72

Indian Antiquary, 271, 451n, 572n, 612n, 642, 650, 702, 716, 726, 765

Indian mind revels in divisions and classifications 344

Indische Studien 449n.

Indian Historical Quarterly 610n, 716n

Indra, consigned yatis to śālāvṛkas 63; invoked to strike down evil-doers 154

Indradyumna, a *cakravartin*, mentioned in Maitrāyaṇyupaniṣad 695

Inheritance, close connection between the right to perform funeral rites and taking i. 257; Mitākṣarā and Dāya-bhāga doctrines on 257; whoever takes i. has to offer piṇḍa to the deceased 257

Inscriptions, see 'Epigraphia Indica'; Andhau Inscription 255; in a fire temple at Baku on the Caspian see 118; of Hoysala king granting revenues of a village for meeting taxes levied on pilgrims to Benares 572; recording gifts of lands and houses,



- coins and gold as *prāyascitta* for benefit of deceased 182n
- Intercalary month 546-547; all *śrāddhas* that come after *Sapindana* were not to be performed in 546; is called by various names such as *Amhasaspati*, *Adhimāsa*, *Malamāsa*, *Malimluca*, *Samsarpa* 546; is to be discarded for all rites in honour of gods and pits 546; *purāṇas* call it *Puruṣottamamāsa* 546; the *sāmvatsarika-śrāddha* of one who dies in an intercalary month may be performed in the same intercalary month, but if there be no i. m. of that name, then in ordinary month of same name 446-447; thirteenth month and vendor of *soma* were condemned as *pāpa* (sinful) 546; was known even in the times of the *Rgveda* 546; what religious actions could be done in 546
- Isāvāsyopaniṣad* 606
- Israelites, ancient, customs of, concerning the relatives of the dead 309
- Iṣṭiśrāddha* is *Karmāṅgaśrāddha*, 9th among twelve classes of *śrāddhas* 457n
- Jābāla*, *smṛti* of 60n, 61, 136, 140, 146, 147, 152
- Jābāli*, *smṛti* of 64, 121, 134, 139, 142
- Jābālopaniṣad*, 610n, 625
- Jaimini*, a of *Pūrvamīmāṃsāsūtra* 9n, 20n, 24, 27n, 40n, 45, 53, 58, 61-63, 66n, 89n, 92, 112, 137n, 168n, 169, 208n, 310n, 353, 373, 419, 439, 440n, 442n, 447, 453, 454, 481n, 554n, 602n, 670, 672n, 687
- Jaimini-gr̥hya* 355, 418
- Jaiminiya-samhitā*, of *Sāmaveda* 46n
- Jains, accept the doctrine of *tapas* as a destroyer of sins 43; though they emphasized 'ahimsā', they encouraged religious suicide called *Sallekhanā* under certain circumstances 612
- Jalakṛcchra*, see '*Toyakṛcchra*' 138
- Jamadagni*, *smṛti* of 43, 94, 163n, 464n
- James, Prof. E. O. in '*Christian Myth and Ritual*' 234n
- James, William, author of '*Varieties of religious experience*' 171n
- Janasthāna* (in *Dandakāranya*), said to be four *yojanas* in extent and *Pañcavati* was part of it and it was so called after *Janaka* 710
- Japa*, a means of removing consequences of sin 44-51; distinguished from *stuti* 45; demands three things 46; food on which one should subsist, when engaged in 49; is expiation for sins unintentionally committed 46-47; original idea of, spiritual 46; of mantras, a hundred times where no particular number is specified 47; three kinds of 44-45; superiority of, over Vedic sacrifices and *pākayajñas* 47; *upāṃśu* J. described and praised 45; way in which *sūdras* and women were to engage in 49
- Jātibhramśakara* sins 15, 35; expiation for, is *Sāntapana* and *Prājāpatya* 118
- Jātūkarnya*, *smṛti* of 98, 182n, 190, 206n, 209n, 225, 389n, 390, 469, 512, 531n
- Jayaswal, K. P. author of '*History of India*' (150-350 A.D.) 634, 689n, 762
- Jerusalem, holiest place for Christians 552
- Jesus, miraculously cured a blind man 174n
- Jikana, 80n
- Jivat-śrāddha* or *Jivaśrāddha* 542-545; effigy representing a human figure is to be made of threads and *palāśa* stalks on which the performer sleeps, then rises up and on the 4th day it is burnt 543-544; one cannot perform one's *Sapindana* 544; performed by a man himself while alive for the benefit of his soul after death once every month up to 12 years and then he stops 544; procedure of, according to *Baudhāyana-gṛhyasūtra* 542-544; procedure of acc. to *Līṅga-purāṇa*, is substantially different 544; this *śrāddha* is a perversion of the

- ancient idea of *śrāddha* 545; water and *pinḍa* are offered to himself with a mantra 544; word 'preta' is not to be used in this rite 544
- Job, book of, in Old Testament 170
- John, epistle of 41n
- John, Gospel of St. 233
- Jolly, Dr. 540n
- Journal Asiatique 176n
- Journal, of American Oriental Society 154n
- Journal, of Asiatic Society of Bengal 643, 644, 659, 664n, 688n
- Journal, of Benares Hindu University 160n
- Journal, of Bihar and Orissa Research Society 643
- Journal, of Bombay Branch of Royal Asiatic Society 376n, 678n, 687n, 707, 745
- Journal, of Department of Letters, Calcutta University 556n, 610n, 726
- Journal, of Ganganath Jha Research Institute 736, 738
- Journal, of Oriental Research, Madras 698
- Journal, of Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain 176, 235n, 636, 696, 706, 730, 767
- Journal, of U. P. Historical Research Society 608n, 720n, 746, 760
- Judicial function, separated early from the executive function of the king 69
- Jyesthasāmāni* 46n, 384, 386, 450
- Jyotirlingas, twelve, names and locations of 678-679; divergence of views about identifications of some J. 678n; each J. has an Upalinga 678n
- Jyotiṣṭoma, 157 cups (*grahas*) used in, were to be cleansed with a strainer of wool, but not the *camasas* 310; one who offers the *Adābhya* cup in, goes to heaven while still living 157
- Kadalivana, 178
- Kailāsa, temple at Ellora is not one of the twelve Jyotirlingas 678n
- Kākinī, value of 129
- Kalanos, an Indian Gymnosophist from Taxila, accompanied Alexander and burnt himself to death at the age of 70, 612
- Kāla, see under Time
- Kālidāsa 60, 605, 691, 706
- Kālikāpurāṇa, 467
- Kalivarjya acts 65, 271, 302, 424, 425, 608
- Kalpa, 164
- Kalpataru, 21, 98, 108, (*prāyaścitta*), 131, 136, 148, 181 (*mokṣakāṇḍa*) 187n (*mokṣakāṇḍa*), 222n, 238n, 270n, 273, 274n, 289, 292n, 293n, 297, 305n, 315n (*śrāddha*), 334 (*śrāddha*), 339 (*śrāddha*), 368n, 371n (*on śrāddha*), 377n (*śrāddha*), 378 (*śrāddha*), 380n, 381n, 383, 385, 386, 391, 392, 396n, 398n, 400n, 401n, 424, 441n, 444n, 445, 455n, 457n, 458n, 463n, 468n, 469n, 471n, 473, 475, 477, 479, 481, 512, 514n, 517n, 518, 523n, 524n, 528, 529, 531, 532n, 536n, 537, 538n, 542, 555n, 559n, 560n, 561n, 569n, 610n (*on āśauca*), 623n; held that an *anupānīta* boy and unmarried girl incurred no sin by drinking *surā* 21, 98; its date 624n; verses quoted by it from *Skandapurāṇa* are not found in the printed *purāṇa*, but are found in the *Līṅgapurāṇa* 624n
- Kāmastuti, repeated in many ceremonies such as marriage, adoption, gifts made on approach of death 184n; repeated when making a gift of a cow on 2nd day after *āśauca* ends 545
- Kāmya rites should be undertaken only when one is able to perform all parts of them 373
- Kāñcī, 711-712; famous temples of 712; history and antiquity of 711-12; Kāśī and K. are the two eyes of Śiva and K. is a famous Vaiṣṇavakṣetra 712; one of the seven holy cities of India and one of the most ancient towns in south India 678, 712



regions around K. were frequented by Buddha, acc. to Hiouen Thsang and K. had a stūpa 100 feet high built by Aśoka 711

Kane Festschrift, 648n

Kāntipurī, one of the seven holy cities acc. to some 678, 762; divergent views about its location 678

Kaṇva, 26n, 544

Kapadia, Dr. on 'Hindu Kinship' 368

Kapardin, 392n, 482

Karkabhāṣya, 447n, 482, 507n, 508n

Karma, see under 'birth,' 'soul'; basis of, 39; doctrine of, is inextricably mixed up with that of *punarjanma* 38-39; doctrine of, appears to be in conflict with that of *śrāddha* 335; doctrine of, is opposed to the theory of the transference of merit (*puṇya*) from one man to another 66n; doctrine that there is no final release from the cycle of births and deaths by performance of meritorious deeds alone 167; doctrine of, illustrated in the Jain Uttarādhyāyanasūtra by the story of brothers 445n; knowledge (true) destroys all k. 68, 611; main propositions of the doctrine of 38-39 and 612-613; modified by the theory of expiations for sins 40; three kinds of viz. *sañcita*, *prārabdha* and *kriyamāṇa* and their explanation 612-613; whether good or evil does not perish without bringing forth its consequences 39

Karmāṅgaśrāddha, 382

Karmavipāka, (fruition of evil deeds), see under 'sins', 'disease', 'actions'; Āpastamba-dharmasūtra says that a dvija who murders a brāhmaṇa is born after undergoing torments of hell as cāṇḍāla, paulkasa and other sinners are born as animals 175; doctrine of, was well-known to Buddhist philosopher Nāgārjuna 176; doctrine of, is not, acc. to some writers, to be taken literally but is an arthavāda 177; diseases arising

from sinful acts subside by recitation of vedic texts, *homa*, gifts 173; physical marks indicative of sins committed in previous lives disappear on repentance and on undergoing expiation 173; residual consequences of sinful deeds in the form of deformed bodies or bodies with condemned signs or diseases 173; human beings alone are subject to doctrine of 176-177; smṛtis and purāṇas state into what animals, trees and creepers sinners are born after undergoing hell torments 173-174; some smṛtis say that the murderer of a brāhmaṇa in a later life suffers from leprosy, while others say that he suffers from pthisis 175; Yogasūtra says K. is of three kinds viz. birth (as a worm or animal), life (short), and experiencing torments of hell 176; treatment of K. is the longest in Prāyaścittasāra 176; teaching of works on, comes to this that no man however sinful need despair 177; women guilty of theft and other sins become the wives of men guilty of same offences 177

Kārṣṇājini, 484

Kāśī (Vārāṇasī, Banaras) 618-642; see under 'Sārṇāth', 'sins', 'oṅkāra' 'līṅgas', 'ascetics'; Ādikeśava-ghāṭ 636; after repairing to K. one should smash one's feet with a stone so that one may not be tempted to go to another place 566-567; Alberuni expressly states that Mahmud Gaznavi had not reached Banaras 623n; almost all Hindu temples at Kāśī were demolished by Moslem rulers from 1194 to 1670 A.D. 631; ancient history of Banaras from the Sat. Br., the Gopatha Br., the Upaniṣads, epics and purāṇas and Buddhist works 618-623; Avimukta is said by some to be that part of the holy place which is represented by a radius of 200 *ahanus* (i. e. 800

hastas) in all directions from the shrine of Viśveśvara 628; āyatanas, fourteen named 640; belief that dying in Banaras freed one from samsāra, led the old and decrepit to crowd in K. and persons about to die were removed to the banks of the Ganges 626; called Jitvarī by traders 621; construction and endowment of *maṭhas* at K. highly eulogised 639; conclusions drawn from the stories in the Epic and Purāṇas that Banaras was once a centre of non-Aryan worship criticized 622-623; *Daśāśvamedha-ghāṭ* famed for centuries 634-635; derivation and significance of the name *Kāśī* 625; eulogies of greatness and uniqueness of K. cover thousands of verses 629; famed for the qualities of its cloth in the second century B. C. 619; first called *Ānandakānana* and then *Avimukta* 624; five questions about K. asked by sages to Bhṛgu in the *Padmapurāṇa* 623; for devotees of Śiva there is no other remedy even in great calamities or incurable diseases than touching the water of the feet of the image of God 641; *Gaṇeśas* are 56 at K. 638; *ghāṭs* in Banaras for at least a thousand years 634-637; hardly any other city in the world can claim greater antiquity, greater continuity and greater popular veneration than Banaras 618; hyperbolic descriptions of the results of bathing and dying in *Kāśī* in the *Purāṇas* 629-630; in the times of Buddha, Banaras was a great and famous city like *Rājagṛha*, *Śāketa*, *Śrāvastī* 621; individual *tīrthas* in K. described 632-640; it is said that mere residence in K. till death not only frees a man from such sins as *brāhmaṇa*-murder, but also frees him from the cycle of births and deaths 566; is called *Ānandakānana* because it gives joy to Śiva 626; *Jābālopa-*

niṣad gives an esoteric meaning to *Avimukta*, *Varaṇā* and *Nāśī* 625-626; Jain works like the *Kalpasūtra* say that *Arhat Pārśva* was born in Banaras 621; *Jñānavāpī*, origin and importance of 638; *Kapālamocana-ghāṭ* at K. is ancient 639; *Kāśīkhaṇḍa*, a part of *Skandapurāṇa*, devotes 15000 verses to Banaras and sub-*tīrthas* 623; known under five names from ancient times viz. *Vārāṇasī*, *Kāśī*, *Avimukta*, *Ānandakānana* and *Śmaśāna* or *Mahāśmaśāna* 624; lauded and described at great length in several *Purāṇas* 623; *lingas* and *tīrthas* at K. mentioned in some *purāṇas* are numerous 639-40; *Lolārka* is one of the twelve shrines of the Sun in K. 633n, 634; *Manikarnikā* pool is the most holy among *tīrthas* at K. 635; mantras recited when contemplating *Manikarnikā* 633; *Mlecchas*, insects, birds, beasts, worms after death in K. find happiness 630; by identifying *Asi* and *Varaṇā* with *Idā* and other *nāḍīs* mystic flavour is imparted to those names 631; name *Avimukta*, derived and explained in two ways 626; name *Śmaśāna* or *Mahāśmaśāna* due to various causes 626-627; name *Vārāṇasī* is derived from the two rivers *Varaṇā* (modern *Bārṇā*) and *Asi*, which are respectively the northern and southern boundaries of the modern city 625; name was spelt as *Benares* up to recent times, but now it is spelt as *Banaras* 618; *Nāradyapurāṇa* says that Banaras was at first the city of *Mādhava*, but later on became a *Śaiva-kṣetra* 622n; *Nārāyaṇabhāṭṭa* says that in the case of *Viśveśvara-linga* there is no blemish due to the touch of the untouchable 633; *sin* should not commit the slightest *sin* in K. as punishment is relatively heavier 638; *Pañcagaṅgā-ghāṭ*, so called because five rivers, *Kīrāṇā*

Dhūtapāpā, Gaṅgā, Yamunā and Sarasvatī are supposed to meet there 636; Pañcakrośī pilgrimage by road is held the most meritorious of all and is described in detail 637; Pañcatīrthī (five essential tīrthas) named and described 633-634; present temple of Viśvanātha was built by Ahalyabai Holkar 633; questions about Banaras asked in the Skandapurāṇa 624; residents of K. must repair to the river every day, take a bath in Maṇikarnikā and visit Viśveśvara 640; rules of conduct (particularly moral) for those who dwell in K. 638-639; results of sins committed outside K. but sinner dying in K. and of sins committed in K. by one who dies outside K. 640-41; several images of Keśava existed at K. 636n; śrāddha should be performed at K. 639; stotra of Durgā called Vajrapañjara 638; sub-tīrthas at K. are numerous 638; temple of Bhairavanātha, supposed to be *kotwal* of K., who wields a thick stone cudgel 638; temple of Durgā at K. very popular and much frequented 638; temple of Sākṣi-Vināyaka 637; temple of Tārakeśvara near Maṇikarnikā 635; temple of Viśvanātha re-established by Nārāyaṇabhaṭṭa about 1585 A. D. was desecrated by Aurangzeb 631-32; there are about 1500 temples in K. built during the last 225 years, 632; there is in Kāśī a holy place at every step and there is not even as much space as a sesamum grain which has not a *linga* 631; there were one hundred temples in K. in Hiouen T'sang's time and in one of them there was a copper image of Mahādeva about 100 feet high 631; though cremation of corpses is continually going on, yet Banaras, owing to the Ganges, is held purest 626; though Kāśī, Vārāṇasī and Avimukta are generally

used as synonyms, sometimes a distinction is made in their extent 627-629; traditions of great learning associated with K. as vouched for by Kāśīkhaṇḍa, Alberuni and Ain-i-Akbari 641-642; Vācaspati held that Avimukteśvara-linga is the same as Viśvanātha, but the Skandapurāṇa treats them as distinct 633; Vana-parva states that by visiting Avimukta and by a bath there pilgrim becomes free from the sin of brāhmaṇa murder and by dying there secures mokṣa 629; Vārāṇasī was burnt by Nikumbha, a gaṇa of Śiva and was re-established by Divodāsa 620; Viṣṇu is said by Kāśīkhaṇḍa to have assigned a place called Dharmakṣetra to the north of Kāśī and stayed there in the form of Buddha 641; Viśveśvara or Viśvanātha is the tutelary deity of Banaras and the principal temple in it and every resident is required every day to take a bath in the Gaṅgā and visit Viśveśvara 692; was burnt by Kṛṣṇa with his *cakra* in pursuit of a *kṛtyā* 622; was the capital of Brahmadatta kings according to the Jātakas and Purāṇas 621; was the capital of the Kāśīs 619; was the name of a country long before the Śat. Br. was composed 619; yātrās of great lingas should be celebrated every month from the first *tithi* onwards 640

Kāśīkā, com. on Pāṇini 162

Kāśīkhaṇḍa, part of Skandapurāṇa, which see

Kāśīmṛtimokṣavicāra of Sureśvarācārya 583, 612, 613n

Kāśīnātha Upādhyāya 721

Kāśyapa 75, 94

Kāthaka-grhya-sūtra 53, 55, 358, 461n, 463, 479n, 523n, 539

Kāthakasambhitā, 10, 11, 20, 65, 160n, 343, 419n, 461n, 479n, 522n, 523n, 546

Kāthakaśruti 225, 371n



- Kāthopaniṣad 39, 155, 158, 162n, 165, 180, 350, 384n,
- Kātyāyana 104, 149, 259n, 263, 513n, 514, 517, 530n, 569; divided sins into five classes 15; on prices of cows, calves etc. 129; prescribes half fine for women 80; smṛti of, on steṃya 22; smṛti of, on govadhā 109
- Kātyāyana, author of Chandogapariśiṣṭa or Gobhilaśmṛti 297-298, 454; author of śrāddhasūtra (which see), 426
- Kātyāyanaśrauta-sūtra 37n, 63n, 203-204, 206n, 207n, 208n, 209n, 223, 224, 226, 246, 248, 249n, 250n, 255, 346n, 432, 433n, 511, 558, 681
- Kauśika, smṛti of 67, 241
- Kauśika—sūtra 53, 54, 58, 182, 198, 204, 206n, 207n, 208n, 238, 240, 242, 247n, 252n, 253n, 345, 346n, 355, 474, 479n
- Kauṣītaki—brāhmaṇa 57, 155-156
- Kauṣītaki-brāhmaṇopaniṣad 8, 9n, 158, 165, 619
- Kauṣītaki-grhya 354, 402, 516, 520, 521, 525, 539
- Kauṭilya, 74, 75
- Kautsa, 354
- Kautsa hymn. 48n
- Kavaṣa, story of 558-559
- Kavīndracandrodaya, edited by Dr. Sharma and Dr. Patkar 572
- Kavīndrācārya, pleaded with Shah Jehan for remission of taxes on Hindu pilgrims at Prayāga and Kāśī and was given the title of 'Sarvavidyā-nidhāna' and was felicitated by people throughout India 571-572
- Kavya verse is Rg. X. 14.3, 503n
- Kāyasthas, of Bengal, still observe āśauca for a month owing to social tyranny 271
- Kielhorn, Dr. 643, 645, 650
- Keith, Prof. A. B., a. of 'Religion and philosophy of the Veda' 2n, 38, 154n
- Kenopaniṣad, 756
- Khādiragrhyasūtra, 53, 54, 112n, 346n, 354, 355, 358, 476, 487n, 574n
- Khare, Mr. G. H., on 'Śrīvītthala and Pandharpur' in Marathi 716n, 717, 719n, 720
- Khoh, copperplate 16n
- Kikāṭa, same as Magadha, supposed to be beyond pale of Aryanism 187n
- King, vide 'fine', 'prāyaścitta'; had not to observe periods of impurity 297; had jurisdiction to punish sinners, if they refused to undergo prāyaścitta prescribed by pariṣad 70-71; had to make good from his treasury or from officers stolen property if it could not be recovered from thief 74; had to be informed in carrying out expiations for govadhā or sins higher than it 70-71; helped in carrying out prāyaścittas prescribed by pariṣad 70; not to appropriate to himself fine recovered from one guilty of heavy guilt 71; neglect of penances was included among prakīrnaka matters by Nārada which were solely dependent on the king 70; was to inflict branding and fine on those guilty of one of the first four mahā-pātakas and that did not undergo expiation for same 71; was the ultimate heir and also performer of śrāddha for a person who has no relatives left 369
- Kirste, Dr. 361
- Kratu, smṛti of 226, 291n
- Kṛcchra, means Prājāpatya 132; expiation for theft 101; method of performing described 120; general term for several expiations 132; word for several kinds of expiations 132-133
- Kṛcchra—samvatsara 133
- Kṛcchrātikṛcchra, 133-134
- Krośa, measure of distance 590n
- Kṛṣṇa, meditation on, is the highest means for removing sins 50-51
- Kṛṣṇa, Dr. of Mysore Archaeological Survey 717
- Kṛtyaratnākara, 149n, 321n, 352n, 371n, 374n, 375n, 419



- Kṣatriya, alone could perform Aśva-medha 131; killing of, when amounted to brāhmaṇa murder 18
- Kṣetraja son, defined 536n; to whom and in what order he offers pinḍas in a śrāddha 536, 537
- Kṣetras, eight, each of Viṣṇu, Śiva and Śakti 679n
- Kṣīrasvāmin, commentator of Amarakośa 112n
- Kullūka, commentator on Manusmṛti 88, 90, 91, 93, 104n, 106, 131, 163, 271n, 276n, 305n, 330n, 461n, 464n, 481n, 537n, 606n
- Kuṇḍapāyinām ayana, rule of 136
- Kumāra, a. of smṛti 79, 98n
- Kumāragupta, king of Magadha, entered the fire of cowdung cakes at Prayāga 605
- Kumārasambhava, of Kālidāsa 560
- Kūrmapurāṇa 55, 186, 210n, 216, 220, 222n, 224n, 241, 274n, 276, 277, 283, 288, 290, 291n, 292, 293n, 298, 300, 301, 351, 370, 372, 374, 375, 377, 380, 381, 385, 387, 392, 395, 398, 402, 403, 404n, 409, 410, 411n, 419, 423, 448, 455, 466n, 468, 469n, 480, 483, 560, 566, 567n, 568, 570, 576, 586, 588, 594n, 597, 598n, 599n, 600n, 601, 605n, 606n, 607, 614, 615, 617, 623, 625n, 639n, 640, 653n, 654, 659, 683, 685n, 691, 695, 703, 704n, 705, 708
- Kurujaṅgala, 682
- Kurukṣetra, (25 miles east of Ambala) 680-686; see under 'Vinaśana', 'Samantapañcaka', 'Prthūdaka'; all beings in K. are freed from all sins and also those that say 'I shall go to K.' 684; Asthipura is a sub-tīrtha 685; boundaries of, in Tai. Ā. 681; called Brahmāvarta 682; country south of Sarasvatī and north of Drśadvatī was included in K. 682; eulogy of the greatness and sanctity of Kurukṣetra in the Epic and purāṇas 684; exhaustive list of tīrthas in K. 686n; explanation of the word K. occurring in the Jābālopaniṣad 610n; extent of, was five yojanas in radius 683; fanciful derivation of K. 684n; history of, from Ṛgveda onwards 680-681; in the times of the Brāhmaṇas, Sarasvatī flowed through Kurukṣetra 682; is so called after king Kuru who ploughed the land with a golden plough for seven krośas all round 682n; lake Brahma-saras or Pavanahrada in K. 684-685; is referred to under several names 683; limits of, described in a somewhat corrupt verse 683; said to have been the vedī of Brahmā 682; seven holy forests of 561n, 686; sub-tīrthas of 684-686; those dying in K. do not come to the earth again 566, 682n, 683, 684; Vyāsasthali (modern Basthali, 17 miles south west of Thanesar) is a sub-tīrtha where Vyāsa resolved to die on the loss of his son 685; was called Samantpañcaka and then Kurukṣetra 682; was called Sannihatī or Sannihatya 686; was centre of Vedic culture in Brāhmaṇa period and was called Dharmakṣetra 610, 683-684
- Kūsmāṇḍa—homa, as a remover of sins 43; procedure of 43-44
- Kūsmāṇḍa mantras 43, 46n; as purifiers from sins 45; employed in Vṛṣotsarga 540
- Kutapa. meanings of 376-377; derivation of 376
- Laghu-Āśvalāyana 221n, 225, 284, 285n, 287, 303, 421n, 480, 487n
- Laghu-Atri 292n
- Laghu-Hārīta 19n, 44, 45n, 79n, 98, 214, 288, 293n, 294n, 306, 313n, 316n, 411
- Laghu-kṛcchra, as prāyaskṛitta 150; same as Śiśukṛcchra 150
- Laghu-Saṅkha 19n, 401n, 411n, 518n, 539n
- Laghu-Sātātapa 104, 146n, 246n, 376n, 386, 464n



- Laghu-Viṣṇu 79n, 148n, 291n
 Lakṣmaṇasena, king of Bengal, mentions in a grant a Gayāl brāhmaṇa 580
 Lakṣmaṇasāstri, Pandit, of Wai 717n
 Lalitavistara 650
 Lātyāyana-srauta-sūtra 62n, 681
 Laugākṣi-grhya 121, 130, 132, 140n, 147, 228, 518
 Laukāyatikas, touch of 115
 Lauriya Nandangarh, excavations at are supposed to show Vedic burial mounds 254
 Law, Dr. B. C. 164, 688n, 726, 736, 749
 Lefever, Dr. Henry, author of 'Vedic idea of sin' 2n
 Legge's translation of Fa Hien's work 619, 650
 Lepabhājah or lepabhujah-see under śrāddha
 Leviticus 309, 327n
 Likhitasmṛti 266n, 411, 518, 654
 Līlāvati 129
 Liṅga-purāṇa 51, 124, 181, 261, 298, 310, 325, 542, 544, 566n, 608, 623, 626, 628, 629n, 630n, 631, 639, 640
 Liṅgas, numerous in Kāśī 640; two lists of 14 great l. in Kāśīkhaṇḍa 640; 36 principal l. referred to in Kāśīkhaṇḍa 640
 Lodge, Sir Oliver, in 'Christian Doctrine' 1n, 8n
 Lourdes (in France), miraculous cure of diseases at 561, 641
 Luke, Gospel of 38n, 41n, 171, 233
 Ma-A'sir-i-Alamgiri 632, 692n
 MacDonell, Prof. A. A. 154n, 157
 MacDonell and Keith, authors of 'Vedic Index' 726
 Mādālā-pañjī, Oriya chronicle 698
 Madana-pārijāta 10, 23, 24, 27n, 30n, 45n, 60n, 64n, 70n, 73, 76n, 78, 79n, 91, 97, 98n, 101, 103, 106n, 108, 119n, 121, 122, 126n, 127n, 133n, 134, 136, 137n, 139, 140, 142n, 143n, 145n, 147, 149n, 150, 151, 152, 162, 163n, 164, 175, 216n, 217n, 218, 221n, 258n, 259n, 261n, 262n, 270, 275, 280n, 288, 291n, 293n, 294n, 295n, 314n, 374n, 375, 381n, 408n, 425n, 441n, 443n, 445, 457n, 463n, 471, 514, 519, 520, 528n, 532, 536, 547n
 Madanaratna, a work 52n, 82
 Madhubrāhmaṇa is same as Madhu vidyā, which see, 449n
 Madhumatī verses 46n, 437, 496, 497, 507, 524
 Madhūni, texts called, as purifiers from sins 45
 Madhuvidyā, stated in Br. Up. and Chān. Up. 449n
 Madhva, conflict about the dates of the birth and death of, 64 4n; wrote Mahābhārata-tātparyanirṇaya in gatakali 4300, 644n
 Madhyadeśa, boundaries of 557-558n
 Madhyamāṅgiras 88n
 Madya (intoxicant), see under 'surā', and 'brāhmaṇa'; forbidden to brāhmaṇas at all stages of life 21; ten kinds of 21
 Magas buried their dead underground 234
 Māghyāvarṣa rite 360-361; doubt about the real name 360; two views about the time of its performance 360; probably the precursor of the later Mahālayaśrāddha 361
 Mahābhārata 164, 180, 181, 187, 188, 223, 237, 363, 371n, 450 (should be recited in Pārvaṇaśrāddha as it is dear to pitṛs), 561, 562, 585, 607, 608, 649, 682, 703, 709
 Mahābhārata śrāddha performed in Bhādrapada dark half when the moon is in Bharanī nakṣatra and is equal to Gayāśrāddha 533
 Mahābhāṣya, of Patañjali 16n, 22n, 58, 295n, 400n, 408, 449n, 619, 621, 687, 706, 709, 711, 746, 756, 758, 763, 768
 Mahādivākīrtiya, sāman 46n
 Mahākassapa, disciple of Buddha 235



- Mahālayaśrāddha, see 'ascetics'; follows procedure of pārvaṇaśrāddha 532; is so called because it is the abode (ālaya) of the *maha* (festival for pitṛs) 531; is the most eminent among all śrāddhas 532; latter half of Bhādrapada when the sun is in Kanyā is called Mahālaya and Gajacchāyā 532; to be performed in the dark half of Bhādrapada when the sun is in the zodiacal sign Kanyā or Tūlā 530-531; is performed not only for benefit of paternal and maternal ancestors, but also for several deceased relatives together with their wives (such as son, uncles, aunts, sisters, father-in-law, friend, pupil) 533; various views as to the exact date on which M. should be performed 532; when the sun enters the sign of scorpion and no śrāddha is performed the pitṛs lose hope, pronounce a curse on their descendant and return to their abode 531
- Mahānāmni, verses, as purifiers from sins 45, 46n
- Mahāparinibbāna-sutta 234, 235n, 552, 621
- Mahāpātakas, see 'brāhmaṇa murder'; first among them is brāhmaṇa murder 88; Śaṅkha prescribes prāyaścitta of twelve years for one guilty of one of the m. 87-88
- Mahāpitṛyajña, performed in the Cāturmāsya called Sākamedha 350, 426-27
- Mahāraurava, Pāṇini teaches accent of 162
- Mahārudra 178
- Mahāprāsthānika-parva of the Mahābhārata 607
- Mahārṇava, 133n, 134n
- Mahārṇava-karmavipāka, a work, 43, 121, 146n, 172n, 175, 178 (brief analysis of contents of)
- Mahārṇavaprakāśa, 460, 479
- Mahāsāntapana, an expiation 147
- Mahāsudassana-sutta 721
- Mahā-taptakṛcchra, 147
- Mahāvagga, 668n, 677
- Mahāvairāja, sāman 46n
- Mahāyajñas, five daily, prescribed for each householder of which sacrifice to the pitṛs was one 369
- Maheśvara-kṛcchra, 148
- Mahīdhara, commentator of Vājasaneyā-samhitā 433n
- Māhiṣmatī, capital of Anūpa on the bank of the Revā 703; about the exact location of which scholars differ 706-707
- Maitrakṛcchra 148
- Maitrāyaṇī-samhitā, 230, 426n, 427n, 428n, 433, 680
- Maitrayaṇī Upaniṣad 695
- Maitrāyaṇīya-sūtra, 468, 478
- Majjhima, 687
- Malāvaha sins 15-16, 35; expiation for 118-119
- Man, see under 'death'; entertains a belief even in the Upaniṣads that the thoughts that dying man has at time of death determine what will happen to his soul 185-186; dying man taking sannyāsa was supposed to be free from the cycle of births and deaths 185; dying man should be made to give one or more of ten gifts 182; dying man, after one or more out of ten gifts, should donate a cow with calf and another cow called Vaitaraṇī 183; dying m. should repeat such mantras as 'Om namo bhagavate Vāsudevāya' or listen to Vedic texts or *sāmans* or the Gītā and other works 185; dying near Śālagrāma reaches highest abode of Viṣṇu or Vaikuṇṭha even though he be a mleccha 187; dying in a garden of Tulasī (basil) plants or with a basil leaf in his mouth attains mokṣa even if guilty of crimes of sins 187; enemies of, according to Śānti-parva 9; how m. incurs sin 10; m. on whose death no *pinda* was offered

or the sixteen śrāddhas were not performed remained for long in the condition of a piśāca 265-266; if man dying is a knower of *brahma*, in his ear should be uttered Tai. Up. II. 1 and III. 1, 185; practice of taking down from the bedstead a dying m. and placing on a bed of kuśa grass or of sand on the earth 182; polluted by certain actions 51; sarvaprāyaścitta for dying man 184; son or other relative of dying m. should perform or make him perform vrata dyāpana, sarva prāyaścitta and gift of ten dānas 183; should, when dying, be taken near a holy place (like the Ganges) 186; various views about the fate of the departed m. in Upaniṣad times 155 Manasvatī verses are Rg. X. 57.3-5, 499

Mānava-gr̥hya-sūtra 46n, 53, 354

Maṇḍalabrāhmaṇa is an Upaniṣad 449n

Māndhātṛ, author of Mahārṇava-karmavipāka 172n, 178

Māndhātṛ, legendary king who was instructed by Indra 364

Man Mohan Chakravarti 698

Manimekhalai 712

Mantra, mūla m. of Śiva 699; of five letters (namaḥ Śivāya) 51; of eight letters (om namo Nārāyaṇāya) 51, 700; of twelve letters (om namo bhagavate Vāsudevāya) 51, 700; to be recited at the commencement and completion of expiations 124-125

Mantras, see under Japa; from the several Vedas, how repeated 45; from several Vedas become powerful purifiers when accompanied by *tapas* 49; meaning of, need not be understood in smārta rites 51; of two kinds, Vaidika and Āgamokta 51; same mantras often occur in different Vedic saṃhitās 433; to be repeated at the time of making gifts for a dying man 183; to be repeated on entering a house and touching śamī

leaves, fire and stone (āsmā) 238

Manu, as the promulgator of śrāddha rites and styled śrāddhadeva 349

Manu, as father of mankind in the Rgveda 349

Manu, (smṛti of) 10, 11n, 14n, 15, 16, 18-25, 30-32, 34, 35, 40-44, 46, 47, 50, 52-54, 60n, 61-66, 71, 72, 74-78, 82-84, 88, 90-107, 110, 111, 113-116, 118-120, 123 (not in printed text), 124-125, 129, 130, 132, 134, 135-138, 141, 142, 145, 147, 149, 150, 153, 161, 163, 173, 176, 190, 214-216, 222, 225, 227, 228, 238, 240, 258, 261, 267-269, 271, 275, 276n, 277, 278n, 281, 282n, 283, 286-288, 290, 292, 296-298, 300, 301, 305, 307, 309, 311, 312, 314, 316, 317, 321, 322, 325, 326, 327n, 328-331, 334, 339, 340, 343, 344, 348, 352, 358, 360, 361, 365, 366, 369, 370, 371, 375, 377, 379, 381, 383, 385, 387, 389, 390, 391n, 392, 394, 398n, 401, 403, 406, 407n, 408-410, 412, 413, 422n, 423, 424, 425, 434n, 435n, 437n, 439, 443-445, 447, 449n, 450n, 453, 454, 456, 461, 463, 464, 466, 468-470, 473n, 477n, 479-481, 483, 484, 487n, 497n, 509n, 510, 511n, 512, 517, 524, 525, 536n, 537, 538, 540n, 549, 557n, 587, 604, 606, 682.

Manvādī tithis 375

Manvantara 164

Marīci, smṛti of 275n, 292, 306, 322, 351, 478, 514n,

Mārjana, (splashing water on head and other limbs with kuśas dipped in water) 120, 133

Mark, Gospel of 41n, 233

Marks branded on the forehead of one guilty of first four mahāpātakas 72

Markaṇḍeyapurāṇa, 39, 127n, 134, 143, 146, 148, 151, 163, 164, 177, 181, 256, 261, 265n, 266, 312, 322, 335, 336, 337n, 338, 340n, 342, 350n, 352, 371-372, 374, 379, 380, 388, 392, 396, 409, 411, 415, 420, 448, 462, 463n, 470n, 483, 517, 518n, 521, 523n, 524, 528, 532, 524, 535n, 708n

Marshall, Sir John, on Mohenjo-daro 234

Maskarin, a. of bhāṣya on Gautama-dharmasūtra 45n, 46n, 59n, 273 (m. in com. on Āśaucāṣṭaka)

Mātāmahaśrāddha or Dauhitra-pratipat-śrāddha 533

Matthew, Gospel of, 38n, 41n, 171, 233

Mathurā, (or Madhurā) 686-692; antiquity of, discussed 687-689; esoteric interpretation on Kṛṣṇa, Gopīs, Kālindī 691n; established by Śatrughna 688; eulogy of M. in the purāṇas 690; Govardhana hill 691; Gokula or Vraja or Mahāvana 691; inscription of Khāravala refers to 688; inscriptions of Kuṣāṇa rulers that refer to it 689; Kṛṣṇa left M. owing to the constant attacks of Jarā-sandha and established the Yādavas in Dvārakā 688; Megasthenes knew its connection with Heracles (Hari-Kṛṣṇa) 687; nine Nāga kings that ruled over M. 689; old temples of Mathurā were destroyed at Aurangzeb's order 692; Pāṇini includes it in Varanādi-gaṇa 687; Ptolemy calls it 'Modoura of the gods' 687n; spoken of, as Śauryapura in Jaina works 687; twelve *vanas* (forests) of M. 690-691; Vallabhācārya founded new Gokula 692; Vṛndāvana, highly eulogised in Purāṇas and by Kālī-dāsa, 691-92; centre of Caitanya's movement 692; Vṛṣṇis and Andhakas left M. through the fear of Kālayavana, acc. to Brahmapurāṇa 688

Matsyapurāṇa, 19, 23, 55, 72, 102, 129, 166, 176, 221, 271, 310, 335, 336, 338, 340, 344, 374, 375, 381, 385, 387, 389, 390, 392, 396, 403, 407, 410, 413, 414, 418, 420, 421, 422n, 423, 445n, 446n, 447, 448, 450n, 464n, 468, 470, 478, 480, 482, 484, 497n, 519, 533, 535, 539n, 540n, 560n, 561n, 564, 565n, 566,

567, 568n, 574n, 576, 582, 585, 587, 589, 594n, 597, 601, 602n, 605, 606n, 611, 613, 614, 615, 617n, 621, 623, 624n, 625n, 626n, 627, 629, 630n, 638, 639n, 641n, 653n, 654, 691, 703, 706, 708n

Mausalaparva, 223

Max Muller 8

Maxims, see under 'nyāyas'; 'caturdhā-karaṇa' 670; 'Daṇḍavat prāyaścittāni bhavanti' 75-76, 81; of the power of an authoritative śruti or smṛti text 66n, 67; of Kuṇḍapāyinām-ayana 136, 137n; of niṣāda-sthapati 24; of 'phalavat-sannidhau aphalam tadaṅgam' 481; of 'Rātrisattira' 62-63, 602n; of sarvasākhā-pratyaya 89-90, 453-455; of viśaya-vyavasthā 87

McCrindle, Mr. J. W., on 'Invasion of India by Alexander the Great' 612; on 'Megasthenes and Arrian' 687n, and 'Ancient India as described by Ptolemy' 187n

Measures of capacity, such as *ādhaka* and *drona* 330

Measures of length or distance 590n

Medhātithi, commentator of Manu, 10, 16n, 52, 63, 75, 93, 102, 103, 124, 286, 316, 325, 326n, 327n, 362n, 365, 377, 386, 391, 394n, 401n, 416n, 444, 453, 464, 477, 483, 604, 606n, 611n

Meghadūta 619

Men; in case of m., guilty of suicide by fire, poison or the like, or who are patita, no cremation, no offering of water and no āśauca are prescribed by Manu, Yāj, 301; water and pinda offered to men who die in angry fights with cāṇḍālas or with a brāhmaṇa or a snake, from animals or lightning do not reach them and perish in mid air, but this does not apply to those who die from inadvertence in this manner 301

Meru mountain 169

Mettasutta 550n

Mīmāṃsā, see 'Jaimini', 'maxim', 'Pūrvamīmāṃsā', 136, 481

Mitākṣarā discards the dicta of smṛtis and of Parāśara on periods of āśauca as contradictory and as opposed to popular usage 272; rules of M. as to āśauca became unacceptable in 500 years to Nirṇayasindhu 272; theory of, about sapinda relationship 510

Mitākṣarā, (com. on Yājñavalkya-smṛti) 10, 11n, 16-19, 21-24, 25n, 26, 28n, 30n, 32, 35, 42, 43n, 44, 49, 50, 60, 61n, 63n, 65, 66, 68n, 72-74, 77n, 78n, 79-81, 83, 86n, 89, 90, 93n, 94-98, 101, 102n, 103, 104, 105n, 106n, 108n, 109n, 111, 114n, 117, 119, 122n, 125-127n, 128, 130, 131, 134, 136-138, 141-143, 146, 148, 149, 151, 152, 174, 175, 177, 210n, 215, 216, 217n, 218, 219, 220n, 221n, 223n, 227n, 228, 231, 237, 238n, 239, 240, 262n, 268, 270, 271, 275n, 276n, 280, 282n, 283, 284, 285n, 288, 289n, 291n, 292-294, 295n, 298, 299n, 301-303, 305n, 316, 317, 322n, 324n, 326, 334, 336n, 366-368, 371n, 375, 381, 387, 394n, 402n, 407n, 408, 411, 414n, 422n, 423n, 424, 440n, 441n, 442n, 443n, 444, 446n, 448n, 449n, 453, 457, 461, 510, 512, 516n, 518n, 519, 520, 521n, 523n, 524, 525, 528, 537n, 574, 575, 604

Mitra, Dr. Rajendralal on 'Buddha-gayā' 643, 644, 646n, 650, 659; on 'Antiquities of Orissa' 693, 695, 696, 697, 698, 699, 750, 751,

Mleccha, divergence of views about meaning of 117; how Sagara dealt with Śakas, Yavanas Kāmbojas and other Mlecchas, as to dress and hair 117; M. country is one in which the system of four varṇas is not established 378

Mohenjo-daro, date of ruins of, not certain 234; funeral customs at 247n

Mokṣa, results from correct knowledge of the supreme Reality 613; results in four ways viz. by knowledge of

brahma, by śrāddha at Gayā, on death in a fight for preventing seizure of cows and by residence in Kurukṣetra 566, 654

Monasteries, founding of, in Europe, for atonement of the sins of the founder and his progenitors 52n

Moral order in the world is upheld by the king and the profoundly learned brāhmaṇa 70

Mortmain, statute of, in England, to prevent accumulation of large estates with the Church 52n

Mother Goddesses, worship of, is oldest and most widely spread form of religion 529n

Mountains, see under 'Parvata'; are included among holy localities and as destroyers of sin 560; Bhāgavata-purāṇa names 27 holy m. and Brahmāṇḍa thirty 560; held by most ancient people to be the abodes of gods 559; Ṛgveda holds valleys of m. and confluences of rivers holy 559; seven great m. called 'kula-parvatas' of India (Bhāratavarṣa) 560n

Mūlakṛcchra 148

Muṇḍaka-Upaniṣad 42, 613n

Muṇḍana (shaving the hair on the head as well as the moustache and beard) 575; no m. on the Ganges except at Prayāga 575n

Munshi, Diamond Jubilee Volume 181

Murder of brāhmaṇa regarded as gravest of sins in early Vedic times 10; of *bhrūṇa*, worse than even murder of brāhmaṇa 11; of kṣatriya amounted to brāhmaṇa murder in certain cases 18; one may be guilty of, in five ways 17; of women placed on same footing as murder of kṣatriya, vaiśya or śūdra males, except in the cases of an Ātreya or a pregnant woman etc. 96 terrible secret expiation prescribed by Gautama for brāhmaṇa m. 120

Musical instruments, four classes of 217n



- Nāciketa fire 384n
 Naciketas, dialogue of, with Yama, in the Kaṭhapaniṣad 180
 Nāḍapit, 585
 Nāḍistuti hymn is Rg. X. 75
 Nāgārjuna, a Buddhist philosopher who well knew the doctrine of karmavipāka 176
 Nagna; people defined as n. should not be allowed to see a śrāddha 395
 Nagnapracchādana-śrāddha 220
 Naimiṣa, the best tīrtha on the earth acc. to Vanaparva 565
 Nairāñjanā, river on the banks of which the future Buddha dwelt for some time 646
 Namaskāravati verse is Rg. X. 15.2, 502
 Nandana, park of Indra 166
 Nanda-paṇḍita, commentator of Śaḍaśīti 268
 Nandipurāṇa 343
 Nāndiśrāddha, same as Vṛddhiśrāddha 527; procedure of 528
 Nandā tithis are 1st, 6th and 11th, 373
 Nārada, smṛti of 19, 31, 66n, 67, 70, 72, 74, 76, 162, 540n
 Nārada-purāṇa, 95n, 123n, 163, 392, 407, 411, 419, 424, 425, 449n, 456, 459n, 463, 555n, 560n, 564n, 570n, 573n, 574n, 575n, 576n, 585, 586, 588, 589, 592n, 594n, 595, 601n, 604, 605n, 606n, 607, 615n, 616n, 617, 623, 626n, 628, 629n, 635n, 636, 647, 649, 651, 653, 655n, 660, 661n, 665, 666, 667n, 668n, 670n, 677, 678n, 682n, 683n, 684, 685, 686, 690, 691, 695n, 696n, 699n, 700n, 701n, 703, 704n, 708, 710
 Naraka, see under 'hell'; meaning of 161; *nārakaloka* is mentioned in Atharvaveda 155; supposed to be a place below the earth 168
 Narasimbapurāṇa, 600
 Nārāyaṇa, commentator of Āśv. gr 58, 205n, 245n, 402n, 412n, 435n, 436n, 437n; commentator of Āśv. śr. 58
 Nārāyaṇa, author of Antyeṣṭipaddhati 185n, 212, 296n; author of Tristha-līsetu 633, 638
 Nārāyaṇabali, described in Sholapur District Gazetteer 303n; procedure of, from different works 302-305; procedure of, when performed on 12th day after death for ascetics 304; should be offered one year after the death of those who commit suicide in any way not sanctioned by śāstra and thereafter śrāddhas may be performed for such persons 302, 525
 Narmadā, (Namados of Ptolemy) 703-707; Amarakāṇṭaka dispels all sins 706; Bhṛgutīrtha on N. 10 miles to the east of Broach a bath in which leads to heaven and death at which to mokṣa 706; earliest inscriptional reference is of 484-85 A.D. 705; is said to be holy everywhere and to purify the sinner by its very sight 704; is said to be 100 yojanas in length and two yojanas in breadth 705; Jāmadagnya-tīrtha where N. joins the sea and where Janārdana secured perfection 706; Kalpataru quotes only about 70 verses from Matsyapurāṇa (and from no other work) on N. 703; Maheśvara (i. e. Omkāra) is a famous tīrtha on N. whence Rudra burnt the cities of Bānāsura 706; mantra addressed to N. frees one from danger of snakes 705; most sacred rivers after the Ganges are Narmadā and Godāvari 703; most important place on N. is Māhiṣmatī 706-7; one who commits suicide by fire or water or fast at soma tīrtha on N. or on Amarakāṇṭaka does not return to saṃsāra 705; Purāṇas, such as Matsya, Kūrma and Padma deal at length with the greatness of N. and say that there are crores of tīrthas on N. 703; Revā is a synonym of N. but the Bhāgavata and Vāmana-purāṇa seem to hold that they are distinct

- 703-704; rises from Amarakantaka which is the abode of Śiva and is said to have started from Śiva's body 704-705; several rivers such as Kapilā, Eraṇḍī, Kāverī join N. 705; Suklatīrtha, where Rājarsi Cāṇakya attained perfection 706; Viṣṇu-dharmasūtra includes all places on banks of N. as eminently fit for śrāddha 704
- Nasik, Antiquity and temples of 709-710; cave Inscriptions 710; twenty five temples were destroyed by the Viceroy of Aurangzeb in 1680, 709
- Nāṭyaśāstra of Bharata 690n; prefers dialect of Śūrasena for dramas 690n
- Navagraha-yajña 178
- Navagvas, a sub-division of pitṛs called Āngirases 192n; sometimes identified with seven sages 341
- Navamiśra-śrāddhas 262, 517
- Navasrāddhas 262-263, 517; characteristics of 519-520; one should not partake of food at n. but if one does one must undergo prāyaścitta 263
- Navya-Vardhamāna, 296n
- Nayapāladeva, Pāla king of Bengal who died in 1045 A. D. 643
- New Indian Antiquary 610n
- Nighaṇṭu 352
- Nīlakaṇṭha, contradiction between his Vyavahāramayūkha and his Prāyaścitta-mayūkha 78n
- Nīlakaṇṭha, commentator of Mahābhārata 565n, 570n, 608, 649n, 684n
- Nīlmaṭapūrāṇa 560n, 724
- Nīlāmbaradāsa, author of 'Deul-tola' 701
- Nimi, dead body of, being covered with oil and fragrant substances was not decomposed for long 234
- Nirgranthas, called heretics by Hiouen Thsang dwelt in Kāñcī in the time of the Chinese pilgrim 711
- Nirṇayasindhu 29, 190, 230, 231, 238n, 243, 256n, 258, 259, 261n, 262n, 263, 272, 282, 293, 294, 298, 301, 302n, 304, 318, 319n, 338n, 381n, 382n, 388, 398n, 405, 408, 425n, 473n, 482n, 493n, 512, 514n, 519, 521, 524, 534, 536, 538n, 541, 546n, 547n, 548n
- Nirukta, 2n, 7n, 10, 48n, 161, 187n, 191n, 192n, 193n, 194n, 198, 200n, 342, 344n, 345, 351, 554, 557n, 561, 645, 681
- Niṣka as a substitute for prāyaścittas 127-128; is gold weighing 32 raktikās 129; value of, 128n, 129
- Nitya (obligatory) acts (such as Agnihotra, Darśapūrṇamāsa) must be performed even though one may be unable to perform a subsidiary part thereof 373
- Nityācārapaddhati 51, 149n, 240
- Nityopavāsa-kṛcchra 141
- Nivāsapura (modern Newasa on the Pravara) 709; Jñāneśvara wrote his great commentary on the Gītā here 709n
- Niyamas; meaning of 124; to be observed while undergoing expiation 121, 124; śauca as one of the, in Yoga 311
- Non-Aryar peoples like Śakas 117
- Nṛsimhapurāṇa, 45n, 51, 391, 565, Numbers 309
- Nyāyas, 75n; 'sarvāṅgopasamhāranyāya' 373n, 'yathā kanyā tathā haviḥ' 397; yathāśaktinyāya 373n
- Oldenberg, 193n, 245, 260
- O'Malley, L. S. S. in 'District Gazetteer of Gayā,' 643, 644, 659, 664n,
- Om, employed before reciting a Vedic verse 50; expresses the idea of God 50; mystic syllable, said to be the door to heaven 50; repetition of, leads to concentration of mind 50, 69
- Omkāra, and other lingas at Kāśī 639n

- Ordeal of fire, mentioned in Tāṇḍya Brāhmaṇa
- Osiris, Egyptian legend of, resembles Yama 342n
- Ownership, private, none in forests, holy mountains, holy places, temples 377
- Pāḍakṛcchra, 143
- Padārthāḍarsa 319n
- Padmapurāṇa, 163, 221n, 263, 266, 310, 338n, 344, 348, 361n, 372, 374, 375, 376n, 401, 403, 404, 407, 410n, 413n, 414, 418, 420, 423, 445n, 447n, 448, 449n, 468n, 480, 483n, 484n, 497n, 518, 521, 528, 530, 535, 536, 539n, 548, 549, 555n, 560, 561n, 562n, 563, 564, 565n, 566n, 568, 573, 576, 578n, 582, 585, 588, 591n, 594n, 597, 598n, 599, 600, 601, 603n, 605, 606n, 608, 614, 615, 616n, 617, 623, 625n, 626, 627, 628, 630n, 639 (dozens of verses are the same as those in Kūrma), 640, 648n (borrows from Vanaparva), 649, 651, 653, 659, 661n, 664n, 682n, 683n, 685, 690, 691, 703, 707, 713
- Pāḍonakṛcchra, 143 ; is $\frac{3}{4}$ ths of Prājāpatya 143
- Paṅgya 272n
- Paithīnasi 17, 71, 110, 218, 239, 240, 276, 284, 291, 484, 519, 577n, 578
- Paitṛka mantras are Rg. X. 15. 1-13
- Pākayajñas or Mahāyajñas, five in number 47n
- Pākayajñas are seven acc. to grhya-sūtras and dharma-sūtras 112n
- Pakṣadhara-misra 59
- Pakṣiṇī, meaning of 278
- Pala, quantity of 139n
- Palāśa leaves, number of, used in making an effigy of a person for cremation 224-225
- Pana, is copper weighing 80 *raktikās* 129
- Pañcagavya, could be taken by a śūdra without mantras in medieval times though forbidden in early works 143; to be taken at the end of each
- prāyaścitta 121; ingredients of 141; materials of, taken with separate mantras 146; same as Brahmakūrca acc. to some smṛtis 147; to be offered into fire with mantras and drunk for the removal of several sins of a petty nature 141
- Pañcāgnividya 188
- Pañcajanāḥ, meaning of 344-345
- Pañcāla, country of, was divided into north and south 682
- Pañcaviṃśa Brāhmaṇa 602
- Pandharpur 712-722; all attendants in Viṭhobā's temple, except *Badves*, are called *sevādhāris*, who have hereditary duties to perform and are of seven sorts viz. Pujāri, Beṇāri, Paricāraka, Haridas, Dingre, Divte and Dange 714; chief temple in P. is that of Viṭhobā and behind it is the temple of Rakhumāi 713; derivation of name Viṭṭhala 721; description of Viṭhobā's image in Skandapurāṇa agrees with the present image and in the description by Tukārām are mixed up actual, legendary and ideal elements 720; description of the image of Viṭhobā at P. 714-715, 720; had risen in sanctity and importance in the 15th century follows from the fact that both Caitanya and Vallabhācārya visited it 718; image of Viṭhobā was the same before Hemādri as it is now 718; image of Viṭhobā is neither Buddhist nor Jain 722; is called Paṇḍarīkakeśetra on Bhīmarathī in an inscription of 1249 A. D., Pāṇḍuraṅgapura in another of 1270 A. D., Paṇḍarage in an inscription in the Viṭhobā temple itself of 1237 A. D., where god Viṭṭhaladeva and Puṇḍarīka are both referred to and Paṇḍaraṅgapalli 716-717; large staff of priests and attendants in temple of Viṭhobā, the chief of whom are the *Badves* who are held to be trustees and guardians of the temple by the



Bombay High Court 713; modern P. lies along the right bank of the Bhīmā river 713; one of the most popular places of pilgrimage in the the Bombay State 712; ordinary and special services in the Viṭhobā temple treat the image as if it were some high personage requiring bath, dress, food, songs, sleep &c. 714; P. cannot claim great antiquity 713; Padmapurāṇa mentions the image of Viṭṭhala Viṣṇu on the Bhīmarathī 713; pilgrims to P. may be divided into two classes, regular visitors and occasional visitors and the first class comprises those called Vārkaris 722; pilgrims formerly used to embrace the image of Viṭhobā and also touched the feet, but since about 1873 the feet alone are allowed to be touched 715, 721; priests of the goddess Rakhumāi are known as *utpāts* 714; river Bhīmā is called Candrabhāgā within Pandharpur limits and its water is believed to possess sin-purifying powers 716; scheme of management for Viṭhobā temple at P. 713n; several controversial questions arise as to Viṭhobā's temple viz. date of the installation of the image, whether it is an old one, the ancient name of P. and derivation of the word Viṭṭhala 716; story of Puṇḍlik 715; temple of Puṇḍlik, who is not a god but a devotee of Viṭhobā, is in the bed of the Bhīmā river about 500 yards east of Viṭhobā's temple 715; temples at P. are numerous and are described in Bombay Gazetteer, vol. 20 pp. 434-468, 716; tradition that the image of Viṭhobā was removed several times by the Badves and brought back 719; Vārkarī cult, characteristics of 722; Viṭhobā's image is variously called viz. Pāṇḍuraṅga, Paṇḍhari, Viṭṭhal, Viṭṭhala-nātha 721

✓ Pāṇḍuraṅga-māhātmya, 717n

Pāṇini, 10, 16n, 22n, 58, 86n, 134, 360n, 384n, 391n, 400n, 408, 410n, 460n, 555, 561n, 619, 681, 703, 706, 707, 709n, 711, 731, 736, 743, 746, 756, 757, 765, 768

Pāṇḍulēnā caves at Nasik 710n

Pañktipāvana, (those who sanctify by their presence a company of diners) 384-386, 389; long lists of pañkti-pāvana brāhmaṇas in Anusāsana-parva and some purāṇas and in Śaṅkhalikhita and other works 385-386; qualifications of, acc. to Hārīta, are that he must be born in a good family, must be endowed with vedic learning, good character and decent conduct 385-386, 389; yogins are specially p. at śrāddha 388

Pārādārya (adultery with another's wife), expiation for 110; is a minor sin 110; excludes Gurutalpagamana 110

Parāka is called Kṛcchra by some 132; removes all sins 142

Parāśara, smṛti of 22n, 24, 26, 40, 55, 70, 71, 74, 78, 84-86, 95, 97, 107, 109, 110, 112, 114n, 115n, 117, 121, 123, 127, 130, 136-139, 142, 143, 147, 208n, 214, 215, 227, 267, 270, 271, 275, 287, 289, 292, 295, 298, 299, 306, 307, 313, 323, 324, 326n, 327-329, 331, 332, 575

Parāśara, an ancient astronomer that preceded Varāhamihira 168

Parāśara-mādhaviya 26, 28, 39n, 53, 55n, 59, 60, 61n, 64, 66, 67, 70, 75, 76n, 80, 81, 84, 85, 86n, 87n, 88n, 90n, 94, 95n, 98, 99n, 109n, 111n, 113, 114, 121, 123, 124n, 125n, 126n, 127n, 128n, 131n, 132, 134, 139, 140, 141n, 142, 143, 144n, 147n, 149, 152, 153n, 173, 175, 177, 210n, 214, 215, 217n, 218n, 227, 237, 238n, 256n, 257n, 258n, 261n, 274n, 280n, 284n, 290, 291n, 292n, 293n, 294n, 298n, 299n, 302n, 306, 326, 334n, 373, 375, 377n, 380n, 383n, 519n, 548, 575



Pāraskara 287n

Pāraskara-gr̥hyasūtra 46n, 57n, 113, 210, 211, 220, 221, 227, 238, 239, 277, 282n, 283, 300, 313, 354, 355, 358, 361, 539, 574n

Parārvartana, see under 'suddhi' 118

Parekh, Mr. Manilal C., author of 'Vallabhācārya' 692

Pargiter, translator of Mārkaṇḍeya-purāṇa 726, 745

Paridhikarma 244-246

Pārijāta 296n

Parīṇah, in Kurukṣetra 558, 681

Parisaraka 558-559, 680

Parīṣad, vide under prāyaścitta; details of constitution of 85; even a learned man, when guilty of a sin should approach a p. of learned brāhmaṇas and after declaring his guilt ask them to prescribe penance 84; had jurisdiction to decide what expiation should be prescribed and the king did not probably interfere 69-70; duty of p. to take compassion on the weak, boys and old men 86; incurred sin if through affection, greed or ignorance expiation was reduced 86; not to prescribe expiation that would end in death 76, 126-127; of a number of brāhmaṇas proficient in Dharmasāstra alone entitled to reduce expiation through compassion and not one man alone 86; of learned brāhmaṇas knowing proper expiation and not declaring it incurred sin, 86; procedure before p. 84-85; unanimous decision to be given by p. as far as possible 86

Parnakūrca, an expiation 142

Parsi scriptures on Yima (i. e. Yama) 192n

Pārvaṇa-śrāddha, see under 'piṇḍas'; ācamana required in six items at, 459; agnaukarana in Āp. gr̥, 436, 438; agnihotrin cannot perform p., except on amāvāsyā, acc. to Manu 462; apātraka-pārvaṇaśrāddha in Mithilā explained 486-486; Āśv. gr̥,

omits several details of p. found in some sm̐tis 438n; brāhmaṇa is the āhavanīya fire in, 444n; conflict of views about the ancestors to whom piṇḍas are to be offered at śrāddha on amāvāsyā 472-476; dakṣiṇā was to be given to brāhmaṇas in p. according to the ability of the performer, 446, 451, 501; darbhas are double-folded in p. 434, 441, 505; details of p. vary in modern times according to the country, the veda or śākhā of the performer or acc. to the eminent writer the performer follows or according as he is a Śaiva or Vaiṣṇava 485; difference of views as to the stage at which piṇḍas were to be offered in p. 470-472; different manuals on śrāddha have been followed in medieval and modern times 486; divergence of views from very early times as to the number of āhutis in p., as to the deities, as to the order of naming the deities and the form of words to be used 462-463; eleven brāhmaṇas are invited in Mithilā villages even by poor men, but it is often difficult to secure a very learned man (called pātra or mahāpātra) to officiate 483; epigraphic evidence about gifts of land made at p. and other śrāddhas 451n; feeding of daiva or vaiśvadeva brāhmaṇas at p. not mentioned in Āśv. gr̥ though mentioned by Manu, Vas. and Yāj. 435n; food offered on the hand of brāhmaṇas was to be mixed with the food served in the plates placed before them and then eaten by them 443n; food served to the brāhmaṇas in p. should be rich and steaming hot and should be silently eaten by them and its good qualities should not be declared by them while they are eating 465; formula of presentation if the performer does not know

the names of his ancestors 477; gradual addition of details to p. from ancient vedic times to modern times illustrated 485; great divergence of views from the sūtras onwards as regards *mantras*, details and order of items in p. 426; holy texts should be repeated while brāhmaṇas are engaged in dining at p. 439, 449-50; holy texts to be repeated varied from writer to writer 444-445; if gotra of ancestors be not known, the performer should employ the gotra name Kāśyapa 477; if holy texts to be repeated not known to performer, he should recite Gāyatrī mantra 450n; if one is unable to perform p. every month, Śrāddha-tattva recommends that one should perform it thrice a year or at least once a year when the sun is in the sign of Kanyā 510; if performer has no smārta fire he is to offer *homa* food on the hand of the brāhmaṇas invited at p. 436-437, 443n, 461; important differences of other sūtras from Āśv. gr. on p. 438; in all cases where a question is to be put or permission taken, the performer addresses the most eminent among the brāhmaṇas invited or all of them together, 442n, 505; in southern and western India brāhmaṇas invited at śrāddha are worshipped, while in Bengal effigies made of darbhas are worshipped 458; is the pattern or norm of other śrāddhas 426; Kātyāyana and some others say that everyone has to follow his own sūtra as to the words 'svāhā' and 'svadhā namaḥ', as to the mode of wearing the sacred thread, as to the number of āhutis and as to the stage at which piṇḍas are to be offered 426, 462, 471; larger the number of brāhmaṇas invited for p. the greater the fruit or reward acc. to Āśv. gr. 434; Mahābhārata was among the

texts to be recited when brāhmaṇas were engaged in dinner at p. 450; *mantras* for invoking Viśve-devas in p. 458; *mantras* at moistening of piṇḍas given by Āpastamba-mantra-pāṭha differ from those in Baud. gr. and Vaikhānasa gr. 438; *mantras* to be recited at the time of offering each of the piṇḍas in p. differed from ancient times 476-477; method of *padārthānusamaya* is the rule, but sometimes that of *kāṇḍānusamaya* has to be followed 442n; most of the fundamental conceptions and items of p. as performed in modern times are clearly brought out even in the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa 431-432; names and gotras of the ancestors should be mentioned in offering *pādya*, *arghya*, *gandha*, *piṇḍa* etc. 443n, 449, 451; number of āhutis in *agnaukarana* differs in different works 462; order in which the brāhmaṇas invited at p. are to be dismissed at the end 447; performer of p. and brāhmaṇas invited at it should abstain from sexual intercourse on the night of the śrāddha day 448; performer collects portions from all kinds of food cooked for śrāddha, puts water over them and spreads them on darbhas for the benefit of various deceased persons 450-51; performer has to refer to ancestors in a certain order about his relationship to them, their names and gotras and the case relation in which the words are to be used 459; piṇḍa is offered to each ancestor after mentioning his gotra, his relationship to performer and name (all in vocative) 476; piṇḍas should be offered to male ancestors near the remains of the food eaten by the brāhmaṇas and the procedure mentioned in piṇḍapitryajña is to be followed 446, 451; piṇḍas were to be separately offered to mother's paternal ancestors 473; procedure



of p. acc. to Āśv, gr. 434-438; procedure of p. acc. to Śrāddhasūtra of Kātyāyana 439; procedure of p. acc. to Yājñavalkya-smṛti 440-448; procedure of p. acc. to Padmapurāṇa 448-452; procedure of p. in modern Bengal for Sāmavedins, Yajurvedins and Ṛgvedins is respectively that laid down in the *paddhatis* of Bhavadeva, Paśupati and Kālesi 486; procedure of pratisāmvatsarikaśrāddha (which differs very little from p.) for Ṛgvedins in Western India 487-503; procedure for maternal ancestors is the same as that for paternal ancestors 446; procedure of p. for Yajurvedins of the Mādhyandina Sākhā in Bengal set out in Yajurvediśrāddhatattva is based on Śrāddhasūtra of Kātyāyana 504; ṛtus (seasons) are identified with six ancestors and offered salutation 450n, 479; rules about making *mandalas* in front of performer's house for receiving daiva and pitrya brāhmaṇas 456-457; rules of etiquette about serving food and eating śrāddha dinner and related matters 463-464; rules of piṇḍapitryajña are extended to p. acc. to Āśv. gr. and Śrāddhasūtra of Kātyāyana 434, 505; *saṁsthājapa* 494; saṅkalpa in pratisāmvatsarikaśrāddha in Western India in modern times 387n; several options about the number of brāhmaṇas to be invited if three paternal and three maternal ancestors are to be invoked in p., 440n; several purāṇas add details not included in sūtras, Manu and Yāj. 456; several purāṇas contain detailed description of p. 448; some hold that śrāddha for maternal ancestors is to be performed separately while others say that śrāddha is to be offered at the same time for paternal and maternal ancestors 473; some smṛtis emphasize the participa-

tion of the wives of paternal ancestors in p., 475; some verses from the purāṇas are to be recited, while brāhmaṇas are engaged in dinner at p. 445; some writers proposed that nine piṇḍas should be offered, three to *pitrvarga*, three to *mātrvarga* and three to *mātāmahavarga* 508n; three *āhutis* are to be offered according to some and two according to others in Dakṣiṇāgni or smārta fire or on brāhmaṇas' hand 443n; three piṇḍas are prescribed for paternal ancestors and three for mothers' paternal ancestors by Kātyāyana and Gobhila 472-473; thumbs of brāhmaṇas invited for śrāddha in p. should be moved in the food served in the plates 444, 467; *tila* water offered in the midst of mango trees serves two purposes 449n; vaiśvadeva brāhmaṇas are to be seated facing east and pitrya ones facing north 458; vaiśvadeva brāhmaṇas have precedence in all items except two viz. in washing the hand smeared with remnants of food and the final send-off at the end of śrāddha 458; Vedic works refer generally to the three paternal ancestors as the *devatās* of p. and not to any other relatives, male or female, 380, 472; verses called *saptavyādha* are to be recited at p. while brāhmaṇas are dining 445; Viśvedevas Purūrava or Purūravas and Ādrava are the two to be invoked in p. 457; water is offered to pitṛs in p. with the Pitṛtīrtha 435n; when the wives of ancestors came to be associated with them in p. cannot be satisfactorily solved, but they had certainly become associated in the sūtra period 476; where paternal ancestors are honoured there maternal ancestors must be honoured acc. to Dharmya and others 473; where *yavas* are employed in the daiva part of the p.

rite, sesame are to be employed for all purposes in the pitrya part 442n; whether daily *vaiśvadeva* and *balihoma* should be performed before or after p. 452; wives of paternal ancestors i. e. the mother, paternal grand-mother and paternal great-grandmother were not associated with their husbands in the times of the Vedas (except probably in one passage of Vāj. S.) and Brāhmaṇas and in almost all sūtras 472

Parvata, is a dual duty with Indra in the Rgveda 559; rivers Vipāś (Beas) and Sutudrī are described in the Rgveda as issuing from the lap of mountains 559

Pāśupatas, touch of, required bath with clothes on and they were not to be invited for śrāddha dinner 395

Paśus, (animals) of two kinds, grāmya and āraṇya 110

Pātaka, derivation of 10

Pataniya meaning of 10; sins called 12-13

Patañjali, author of Mahābhāṣya on Pāṇini's Aṣṭādhyāyī 16n

Pathak, Prof. K B. 716

Patil, Dr. D. R. on 'Cultural History of Vāyuyurāṇa' 558n

Patita, son of, was Condemned, but not daughter 106

Pativratā, miraculous power of, extolled 237

Patrakṛcchra-same as Parnakūrca, but a title less severe 142

Paundarīka-māhātmya 717n

Pavamānasūkta 330

Pāvamānī verses (Rg. IX. 1. 1-10) as purifiers 45, 244; verses to be repeated in śrāddha 444

Pavitravatī verses 120, 133 (beginning with 'pavamānaḥ suvarjanaḥ')

Pavitreṣṭi, prescribed for one desirous of śuddhi 312

Penal Code, Indian 17

Penances, in Europe 129n

Persons, cremating *patitas* through affection or offering water or śrāddha to them had to undergo prāyaścitta 301; declared by express texts as not liable to observe āśauca 305; that should be abandoned for certain actions of theirs 32n; that do not cause impurity to others while performing certain services to the community (such as physicians, barbers, craftsmen), although they may themselves be in āśauca 299-300; (persons) to whom some taint attaches (such as those who kill themselves by starting on the great journey to the Himālaya or by fast) do not cause periods of āśauca 300

Phalakṛcchra 146

Pilgrimage, vide under Tīrthayātrā; as purification for anupātakas 106; merit of, may be collected vicariously such as by some one dipping an effigy made with kuśas in holy water or by engaging a man to go to a tīrtha for money 577-578; p. to a place supposed to be holy for the curing of diseases is not rare even in these days 561; to Benares as the only superior expiation for all sins 55; was prescribed in some cases as expiation by the Peshwas for brāhmaṇa murder 55

Piṇḍas, middle one of three was to be eaten by the performer's wife, if she desired a son 480, 500n; materials from which they were to be made 478, 498n; paurāṇic mantra to be repeated when p. are placed on line drawn on the ground or altar 479; rules about size of 478; were to be placed on *darbhas* spread on the ground or on an altar 478

Pindar 180

Pindapitryajña (performed on amāvāsyā of each month by an āhitāgni) was known to early Vedic Literature 349, 358; is a śrāddha 349n; not performed by *agnihottrins* in the Deccan or performed only once



- a year, 362; description of, in Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa 427-28; description of, from Satapatha Brāhmaṇa 429-431; rules about, are set out in Āśv. Śr. S. 435n
- Pipīlikā-madhya, variety of Cāndrāyana 135
- Piprahava vase, Inscription, the oldest found up to date (375 B. C.) 235n; seven hundred articles found in the vase were not relics of Buddha, acc. to Fleet, but of his kinsmen 236n
- Pitryākarma, described 203n
- Pitrbbhakti of Śrīdatta, 334n, 335n, 412, 447n, 486.
- Pitrdayitā, 182, 210, 261, 526, 527, 541
- Pitrgāthās, 388n, 405, 539
- Pitrmedha in Satyāsādhā-śrautasūtra 254
- Pitrs, see under 'soul', 'yama'; afternoon is the proper time for 345; ancient Vedic texts and practice sharply distinguish between gods and p. 345; are sometimes identified in the Rg. with seven sages 341; are identified with Vasus, Rudras and Ādityas 334, 335, 337, 339; belief that p. move about as birds 339; belief that p. assume an aerial form and enter the brāhmaṇas invited for dinner at śrāddha 340; called Agniṣvāta and Barhiṣad in Rgveda 195, 201; called aśrumukha and nāndīmukha 528; created by Brahmā along with gods, asuras and human beings 342; derive sustenance and water when a bull let loose digs up earth or drinks at a pool 541; differences in the procedure of the rites for gods and p. (such as wearing the sacred thread, the direction to be faced, circumambulation, use of svāhā for gods and svadhā for pitrs) 345-6; different classes of, are Kāvyas, Āngirases, Rkvas, Vairūpas, Atharvans, Bhṛgus, Navagvas and Daśagvas 192, 341, 593; division of pitrs into Somavantaḥ, Barhiṣadaḥ and Agniṣvātaḥ 343; earlier and later p. 341; element of the fear of pitrs is not wanting even in the Rgveda 347; enjoy delight in the company of Yama 193; fire is supposed to take the spirit of a cremated person to the pitrs 342; Fravashis of Parsi scriptures correspond to pitrs of ancient Indian works 341n; idea of, is Indo-Iranian 341n; identified with Rtus (seasons) in Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa and Manu 428, 430, 450n; interpretation of the word p. by the Āryasamāja 339; in many passages of the vedic literature pitrs mean three deceased male ancestors 347; invocation of, in Rgveda X. 15, 194-195; invocation of, after mentioning their gotra and names 348; invoked for conferring various boons such as happiness, wealth and heroic sons even in the Rgveda, 346; in Vṛddhi-śrāddha are called Nāndimukha 359n; love soma drink 194, 342; man becomes free from debt due to p. by offering water mixed with sesame, by letting loose a bull and by lighting lamps in the rainy season 541; Manu says gods sprang from p. 344; meanings of the word p. are two, viz. a man's three immediate male ancestors and the ancient ancestors of the human race supposed to reside in a separate world 340-41; names of the pitrs of brāhmaṇas and the other varṇas 343-44; number of classes of, changed in later times 348; of him who does not offer śrāddha on amāvāsya even with water or vegetables go away after cursing him 351; of three grades in the Rgveda, lower, middling and higher 341; presentation formula in Sat. Br. differs from that of Tai. S. 347-348; regale themselves in the company of gods particularly of Yama 341-42; several classes of,

named by Manu who connects them with varṇas 344; seven classes of acc. to some Purāṇas 344, 348; Skandapurāṇa speaks of nine classes of, 344; spoken of as mortal by Śat. Br. while gods are spoken of as immortal 346; sometimes sages are said to be distinct from pitṛs 347; supposed power of p. to benefit or harm the living led to the cult of the dead in ancient societies 339; three classes of p. 348; three male ancestors of a man are called p. and identified with the deities Vasus, Rudras and Ādityas 335; took the south 345; twelve groups of pitṛs mentioned by Śātātapa 344; water is offered to pitṛs like Aṅgiras, Kratu, and Kaśyapa while piṇḍas are offered to three male immediate ancestors 347; Vāyu and other purāṇas distinguish between p. who are above and p. who are *laukika* viz. father, grand-father and great-grand-father 348; were in a class apart from the gods 344-345; were supposed to have some divine characteristics though they are placed in a class apart from gods 346; when gratified by śrāddha bestow on their descendants long life, progeny, wealth, learning, all happiness, heaven, and mokṣa 335, 337

Pitṛtīrtha, part of the hand between the thumb and forefinger 435n

Pitṛyajña, the word occurs even in the Rgveda X. 16. 10 and in Śat. Br. 201, 369; means *tarpaṇa*, acc. to Manu 369

Pitṛyā verses are Rg. X. 15, 1-3, 503n Planets, Navagrahaśānti, in which each planet is assigned a country and a gotra 178

Plato 180

Pollution, see *purity, purification, suddhi*; excreta, urine, semen, blood, fat, marrow, intoxicants were held to be causes of great p. while dogs, village swine, cats, wax from ear,

nails, phlegm, discharge from eyes and perspiration were the causes of insignificant p. 316; three kinds of soil when polluted, viz. *amedhyā* (impure), *duṣṭā* (soiled), *malinā* (dirty) with illustrations and means of purification 317-18

Prābhākara, mīmāṃsā school 170

Prabandhacintāmaṇi 571n

Pracetā, smṛti of, 216n, 218, 219, 276, 409, 413, 521

Prācināvitin, meaning of 487n

Prahlāda, a devout asura, fought with Nṛsimha 659

Prajāpati 95n, 295, 374, 376, 386, 407, 409, 411, 413, 417, 419, 420, 465, 531n, 532, 533n, 669

Prajāpati, a God 345, 352; is the devatā of all rites where none is specified 357n

Prājāpatya kṛcchra 103, 132, 145-146; expiation for sin of gurvāṅganāgama by mistake 103; for jātibhramśakara acts if done unintentionally 118; substitutes for several varieties of p. 127-128, 145; kṛcchra if used without qualification means p. 145

Prakaraṇapañcikā, of Śālikanātha, a Mīmāṃsā work 170

Prakīrṇaka, sins called 36; expiation for 119

Prāṇāhuti mantras 138

Praṇavānanda, Swāmi 760

Prāṇāyāma, as a means of removing the consequences of sins 42; as substitute for other severe expiations 127

Praṇītā water 209, 501

Praśna-upaniṣad 186

Prasṛti-yāvaka (or Prasṛta-yāvaka) 143-145; results of drinking the gruel in pr. for 6, 7, 11, or 21 days, 145

Pratiloma castes, are for purposes of āśauca like śūdras acc. to some, while the Mit. says that there are no periods of āśauca for them 288-289; saṃskāras like *upanayana* were not to be performed for, 50; to be treated as śūdras 50n



Pratisāmvatsarika or Pratyābdika śrāddha 487-503, 529-530; no pr. in intercalary month 530; partakes of the character of pārvana in the case of one's parents but of ekoddiṣṭa in the case of other relatives 530; to be performed every year on the day of death 529

Pratyamnāyas, meaning of 127; various p. for prāyaścittas 127-128

Pratyavasita, meaning of 113; nine kinds of 95, 113

Pravarādhya, 537

Pravaramaṇjarī 538n

Prayāga, see 'suicide at P.', 'tīrtha,' 'śrāddha'; 596-617; Agnitīrtha, a sub-tīrtha 615; Akṣaya-vaṭa is the most famous sub-tīrtha at P. death at the foot of which or suicide from which was believed to lead to highest worlds 614; at the very sight of P. or by taking its name or by applying its clay to the body a man becomes free from sins 597; bath in month of Māgha at P. highly praised 617; Bhogavatī, vedī of Prajāpati, sub-tīrtha of P. 614; boundaries of P. 599; confluence of three rivers at P. came to be associated with *om* and with Pradyumna, Saṅkarṣaṇa, Hari 601; Daśāśvamedhaka, a sub-tīrtha of P. 614; derivation of the word Prayāga in various ways 598; distinction between Prayāga-maṇḍala, Prayāga and Veṇī or Trivenī, each subsequent one being smaller in extent but holier than each preceding one 598-599; gift of kapilā cow and the marriage of a daughter in ārṣa form at P. highly eulogised 600; gifts made according to one's ability at P., in Kurukṣetra, on Gaṅgā, at Puṣkara, Setubandha, Gaṅgādvāra, Naimiṣa produce inexhaustible results 600-601; greatest holiness in, 586; greatness of the confluence of Gaṅgā and Yamunā occurs in a *khila* verse 596-597; greatness of, described in the Mahā-

bhārata and some Purāṇas 597; is called Tīrtharāja in some Purāṇas 597; is said to be the middle vedī for Brahmā and is called Prajāpatikṣetra 597; is known as Trivenī; is not destroyed at the end of a *kalpa* and Brahmā, Viṣṇu (as Veṇī-mādhava) and Rudra as the sacred Vaṭa stay there at the end of kalpa 600; Kalpataru quotes on P. only Vanaparva and Matsya and no other Purāṇa 601; mantra to be recited when women offer their cut hair at P. 603; meaning of the statement 'those who die at P. are not born again' discussed 611-614; officers were appointed in Kashmir for supervising suicide by fast 605; one dying at P. becomes immortal 547; one dying on the way to P. reaps great benefit even without reaching it 615; practice of suicide at P. has great antiquity 612; procedure prescribed by Tristhalīsetu for a man committing religious suicide at P. 610, 611; Pratiṣṭhāna or Sāmudrakūpa, a sub-tīrtha of P. 614; reference to a bath at P. in the purāṇas generally means a bath at the confluence of the two rivers 599; removal of sin is the only result of tonsure at P. 602; sub-tīrthas under Prayāga 614-615; śrāddha has to be performed at most famous tīrthas 616; theory of medieval writers was that at the time of death in Prayāga or Vārāṇasī the Lord Himself whispers in the ears of the dying man higher knowledge or the Tāraka mantra and that mokṣa does not result directly by dying at a tīrtha, 612-613; three rivers, Gaṅgā, Yamunā and Sarasvatī (between the other two) are believed to meet at 597; tonsure at P. discussed and great importance attached to it by digests 601-602; Urvasīputana, a sub-tīrtha of P. 614-615, Venikṣetra is within the limits of P. and is twenty bows in length 599; waters of the

Ganges are white, while those of the Yamunā are dark at P. 596n; whether suicide at P. and other tīrthas would involve no sin 603-611; widows have to tonsure their head at P. but women whose husbands are living are to cut off only two finger-breadths of tresses according to most writers and all boys whose cūḍā ceremony has been performed are subjected to tonsure 602; word P. generally means the Venī or confluence of the rivers in all passages except where there are express words to the contrary 603n

Prāyaścitta (expiation); see under *brāhmaṇa*, caste, *cāndrāyana*, incest, *mahāpātakas*, *pātaka*, penance, punishment, sinners, theft, tonsure, touch; *adhikārin* for 77 ff; all persons including even *cāṇḍālas* are liable to 77-78; amusing examples of mishaps for which p. is provided in *Brāhmaṇa* texts 58; p. and punishment were same for some misdeeds, such as incest 72; baths with ashes, clay, cowdung, *pañcagavya* in 124; boy over five and less than eleven years had not to undergo p. personally but through father, brother or the like 78-79; branding on forehead, if p. for the first four *mahāpātakas* not undergone 72; called *Sāntapana* 118; cases in which both p. and punishment were given 72; caste of sinner and of the person sinned against made a difference in p. and punishment 80-81; child less than five years is not liable for any crime or liable to p. according to some 79; conventional meaning of, acc. to the *Mitākṣarā* 60; consequences of not performing p. for sins 153-154; derivation of the word p. 59-60; destroys sins unintentionally committed 61; discriminatory treatment about p. depending on caste gradually became obsolete 82; does not destroy sin

intentionally committed but makes the sinner fit for association with others 63; easier p. came to be prescribed in course of time 127; ending in death destroys sin 64; ending in death is forbidden in Kali age acc. to digests 65; for adultery 43, 111; for *brāhmaṇa* murder by *kṣatriya*, *vaiśya* or *śūdra* 91, 95; for eating the flesh of certain birds and certain fish was fast for one day or three days 101; for grave sins there was difficult p. and easy p. for trivial lapses 84; for *guru-talpa-gamana* 103-105; for intentionally committed sin is double of that for unintentioned sin 64, 80, 83; for killing any animal other than a cow or bull 110; for particular sins 87-116; for persons kidnapped by *mlecchas* or raiders, sold or treated as slaves, made to kill cows or eat forbidden food and returning to their own country depended on the caste of the person so treated 117-118; for *prakīrṇaka* (miscellaneous) lapses 119; for *pratyavasita* (ascetic reverting to the life of an householder) 113; for *surāpāna* 96-98; for theft of *brāhmaṇa*'s gold of a certain weight or of non-*brāhmaṇa*'s gold 101-102; for unintentional *brāhmaṇa* murder 92; for thefts of various articles were different 102; for touching certain men, certain unclean objects like bones, women in monthly illness or recently delivered, animals like dogs or crows 114; for *upapātakas* 84, 107; for woman guilty of adultery 104-105; gift of one, two, three or four cows to be made at the end of each p. acc. to the *varṇa* of the sinner 121; *homa* to be performed in all p. 120; if not performed for one year, then double p. to be prescribed 75; in cases of sins described as equal to *brahmahatyā* or *surāpāna* p. is half of what is



prescribed for latter 95; in medieval times came to be gifts and dinner to brāhmaṇas 128; is either *kratvartha* or *puruṣārtha* 58; is hardly ever performed now except in the form of gifts of cows or money to brāhmaṇas, pilgrimages, recitation of vedic texts or *japa* of the names of a deity 87; Kṛcchra, Atikṛcchra and Cāndrāyana are p. prescribed for all sins 84; king's position as to punishment and p. in ancient times 71-72; liability to p. depended on usages of countries 82; lesser p. for abettor or inciter of brāhmaṇa murder than the actual murderer 90; Literature on 77; many p. prescribed for grave sins were terrible and were to be self-inflicted 76; mantras to be recited in p. and in beginning and at the completion 124-125; matters to be considered in prescribing p. or punishments were the same, viz intention or its absence, first lapse or repeated lapse, time, place, age, caste, learning, wealth, āśrama 75-83; may be administered to śūdra but without *japa* and *homa* 78; meaning of 57; means also doing something to get rid of the fault arising from some accidental happening or mishap 57; p. mentioned in śrauta works are passed over in this volume 58-59; Mitākṣarā solution of conflict about efficacy of p. 65; sinner not to ignore pariṣad and not to prescribe p. himself 71; numerous prāyaścittas prescribed for same sin in smṛtis 87; pañcagavya to be taken in each p. 121; p. partakes of the character of naimittika and kāmya actions, 60-61; Pātimokkha meetings of Buddhists 165; pariṣad may prescribe p. for lapses for which no particular expiation is prescribed 84; person drinking through ignorance intoxicants, human urine and the like had

to undergo p. of Tapta-kṛcchra and also punarupanayana if he was dvija 97; persons of different āśramas were prescribed different p. 83; persons over 80 years old and boys less than 16, women and diseased men are liable to only half of ordinary p. 79-80; persons who were to resort to secret p. 125; prescribing the giving of cows by Āp., Baud., Manu and Yāj. on killing kṣatriya, vaiśya or śūdra explained 71; procedure as prescribed for taking p. after consulting pariṣad has varied in details from time to time 119-121; proper times for performing p. 119; purposes of, as conceived by the smṛtis are purging of sin, satisfaction of sinner's mind, admission to intercourse with others 63-64; rahasya (secret) p., rules about 125-126; reason why it should be conceded that sins are destroyed by p. 68; recitation of the Gāyatrī verse ten thousand times is p. for all sins, acc to Parāśara 84; relation of p. to punishment. 69, 71; role of king, king's officers, learned men and sinner in relation to 70-71; same vrata for striking a brāhmaṇa with intention to kill as for brahmahatyā though victim recovers 95; rules as to food and other matters to be observed in p. 124; severity of, depended on whether the lapse was the first one or was repeated 82-83; should be sought from pariṣad at once after a sinful act 119; slight p. could be carried out without informing king 70; smṛtis provide that if a sinner died in the midst of the period for which p. was prescribed he became free from sin here and in next world 83; smṛtis prescribed some terrible p. 126; stages (four) in the matter of expiation 85; śūdras had to take p. without mantras and *homa* 146; to be moulded on the lines of punishment 75; thirteen p. for brāhmaṇa murder

88-93; p. for twelve years had a sliding scale of substitutes in medieval times 128; two forms of the word p. 57; two kinds of, acc. to Śabara, in śruti texts 58; two meanings of the word in old Vedic texts 57; varied according to rules for śauca laid down for the several āśramas 83; various kinds of p, prescribed by smṛtis for eating and drinking what ought not be eaten or drunk or for drinking from a cāṇḍāla's pot 99; Vedic indications in support of view that even sins intentionally committed are destroyed by p 62-64; were of two kinds, viz. those undergone openly and those that were undergone secretly 125; when a man attempts suicide by fire, water, poison or the like and is saved or recovers p. is for three years 95; when no specific p. prescribed for a lapse, then recitation of vedic texts, *tapas*, fast and gifts may be resorted to 84; when one is bitten by a harlot, a dog, monkey, ass, jackal or the like p. is prāṇāyāma 110; whether rules on p. were made earlier than the rules about punishments, where the same act is liable to both 69-70; while undergoing p. the sinner has to observe certain rules such as ahimsā, truthfulness 120-121, 124; women had to take p. without vedic mantras 146

Prāyaścittamayūkha, 24, 25, 30n, 59n, 67n, 78n, 83n, 84n, 86n, 121, 122, 123n, 128n, 129, 130, 137n, 142, 146n, 150n

Prāyaścitta-muktāvali (ms.) 15, 65, 112, 113, 117n, 128n, 150

Prāyaścitta-prakarana, 21n, 23, 24, 25n, 26, 28, 59n, 74n, 75n, 79n, 80n, 81n, 82, 94, 95, 96n, 97, 98, 106, 109, 114, 132, 134, 142n, 149

Prāyaścittaprakāśa, (part of Viramitrodaya, ms.) 16n, 21, 22, 25n, 26, 27n, 28n, 41n, 45n, 47n, 51n, 55n, 56, 60n,

61, 64n, 65n, 67n, 70n, 76n, 78n, 84n, 85, 87n, 88n, 90, 91, 95n, 98, 104n, 107, 108n, 116n, 121, 122, 124, 128n, 131, 132, 134n, 136, 137, 138, 139, 140, 141, 146, 148, 149, 150n, 151, 152

Prāyaścitta-sāra, 65n, 70n, 76n, 78n, 84, 86n, 94n, 101, 106, 113n, 121, 123n, 125n, 127n, 128n, 129, 130, 131n, 132n, 134, 139, 140, 143n, 147, 148, 149n, 150, 152, 176, 177

Prāyaścitta-tattva, 17n, 28, 40, 50n, 51, 60, 67, 75, 79n, 84n, 86n, 90, 108, 109, 117, 119, 121, 122, 123n, 127n, 129, 131, 132n, 217n, 576n, 577n, 578, 589n, 590, 594, 602n, 603

Prāyaścittaviveka, 10, 17, 18n, 19n, 21, 22n, 23-26, 28, 32, 40, 41, 50, 55n, 59n, 60, 61n, 63n, 75n, 77n, 79n, 80n, 81n, 83n, 86, 87n, 88, 90n, 94, 95, 97, 98, 99n, 101, 103, 104n, 105n, 106, 108, 111n, 114, 115n, 121, 123n, 125n, 129, 131, 132n, 134n, 142n, 146n, 148n, 150n, 153n, 162, 163n, 265n, 313n

Prāyaścittenduśekhara of Nāgojibhaṭṭa 77, 119, 121, 129, 152

Predestination, doctrine of 9

Pretaśrāddhas, 262n; eighteen details omitted in 262n

Priyolkar, Mr. A. K. 715n, 721

Pringle-Pattison, author of 'Idea of immortality' 171n

Prthūdaka (modern Pehova) is called Brahmayonitīrtha 685; is the holiest of tīrthas, acc. to Vanaparva 566, 685; religious suicide at, mentioned by Vanaparva 608, 685

Ptolemy 765

Prthvīcandrodaya 351n, 406n, 424n, 425n, 459n, 464n, 503n, 513n, 515n, 520n, 529n, 535, 547, 555n, 574n, 578n, 580n, 616n, 652n

Puckle, Bertram S., author of 'Funeral customs,' describing funeral customs of England, France, Jews and peoples of Europe 191n, 232n

Pūjāratnākara, 187

Fulastya, 351n, 424, 481



Punaḥstoma, a śrauta sacrifice which removes sine 62

Punarjanma, doctrine of, apparently conflicts with the theory of śrāddha 335; doctrine of, very succinctly put forth in Br. Up. and Bhagavadgītā 335

Punarupanayana; details that are done or omitted from those of upanayana 98

Punishment, and expiation for certain acts are the same 31, 72; based on considerations of the castes of the offender and the person aggrieved had ceased to be operative by about 12th century A.D. 82; by king with a fine of the first or second kind can offenders allow to associate with other members of the society, but not those awarded the highest fine 67, 76; by king was deemed in some cases to have purged a man of sin 73; depended on the caste of offender and person aggrieved acc. to smṛtis 81; for incest viz. excision of testicles and death was for non-brāhmaṇa offenders 72; for many acts was light in India as compared with western countries probably owing to the liability of the perpetrator to undergo expiation 68; of brāhmaṇas guilty of one of the first four mahāpātakas 72; of persons other than brāhmaṇas guilty of the first four mahāpātakas 72; some acts not liable to be punished by the king or State made the authors liable to prāyaścitta 68; some acts punishable by the king entailed no prāyaścitta 69

Punpun, sacred river where orthodox pilgrims get shaved before proceeding to Gayā and perform śrāddha also 580-581

Purāṇa, a coin equal to sixteen paṇas in value 129

Purāṇas 243, 272, 302; abound in stories that appear to modern minds absurd and puerile 659; contain thousands of verses on śrāddha 262;

contain stories that may be divided into several classes and many of them were meant to satisfy the cravings of the human mind for the marvellous, the unusual and the horrible 622-623; closely follow gr̥hyasūtras, Manu and Yāj., and contain numerous verses that are identical with those of Yāj. and often employ the same mantras and formulæ 448, 452; often describe the quarrels and bickerings among high gods and sages 623; procedure for śrāddha is the same in all purāṇas 448; proposed an easy way for all to remove consequences of sins, viz. remembering the name of Nārāyaṇa 50; several p. devote considerable space to āśauca 272; state that gods like Indra and Kṛṣṇa fought, that Gaṇeśa's tooth was shattered by Paraśurāma who wanted to fight with Rāma and that sages cursed Viṣṇu, Indra and Dharma 623; state that even gods like Viṣṇu, sages like Vasiṣṭha and great kings attained their positions by pilgrimages 56

Purāṇa, śrāddhas 262

Purification, see under 'food'; of things, (*dravyas*) 312-333; divergence of views about p. of various objects 316; five to seven means of p. of land, acc. to Vasiṣṭha, Yāj. and others 317; general rule for p. of large quantities of corn, clothes and many other articles is that sprinkling with water suffices but if quantity small then washing with water necessary 329; of house when polluted, by sweeping or cowdunging, but far more p. necessary if a dog, a śūdra, mleccha, cāṇḍāla or patita dies in it or cāṇḍāla stays in it 321-322; of gold and silver by water or fire (if pollution slight) 325; of cloth and yarn 330; means of purification of metallic things, earthenware, wooden things, of cloth, bones, iron 315; none for infants up to the time of *anna*

prāśana (taking cooked food for the first time), or up to one year or up to upanayana 312; matters to be considered in prescribing p. of polluted things are time, place, the body, the thing to be purified, the purpose for which the thing is to be used, origin of defilement, condition (of the thing) 316; of metals and precious stones 325-326; of idols or images made of iron or other metal or of stone 318-319; of temples when polluted 318-319; of water 322-323; of body by ācamana, bath etc. 331-332; of small quantities of liquids (oil, ghee etc.) by two kuśas dipped in water and of large quantities by sprinkling water 330; of substances depended on many circumstances such as being metallic or not, solid or liquid, being large or small in quantity 331; of polluted corn and cooked food 328; procedure of p. of images polluted in various ways 319-320; procedure of p. of a well in which the dead body of an animal with five nails (man or beast) is found or it is extremely polluted 323; some birds or animals were always pure or deemed to be pure as to certain parts of the body such as a cow except as to its mouth, goats and horses as to their mouths 312-313; sprinkling with water is the mode of p. when large quantities of corn or clothes are polluted 314; substances that bring about p. of all polluted things are water, clay, paste of soap berries, bilva fruit, rice, mustard cake, salts, cow's urine and dung 314; of vessels and pots when slightly or extremely polluted 326-327; of vessels and implements used in Vedic sacrifices 327-328; water deemed even in the R̥gveda to be a means of p. 321; water and earth are to be employed for p. of things or bodies smeared with foul matter till the foul

odour is removed 314; ways of p. of ground 316-317; what things do not need p. and are always pure 312-14. Purity, see under 'bath,' 'śauca,' 'śuddhi'; causes of, are time, fire, religious rites, clay, wind, mind, spiritual knowledge, expiations, water, repentance and fast 315; extremely exaggerated importance attached by medieval brāhmaṇas to ceremonial p. on births and death and led to such prescriptions as the one that if a śūdra, patita or mleccha died in a brāhmaṇa's house, the latter became impure for months 273, 282; great care taken for the purity or cleanliness of vessels used in sacrifices and of offerings in early vedic times 310; great emphasis laid by ancient and medieval Indians on p. of mind, body, place where they resided or performed religious rites, of food 332; ground in a brāhmaṇa's house, in a temple and in cowpens is held to be endowed with p., unless it has been polluted 322; inner p. and the food that one eats 100, 332-333; Manu declares that mental purity is the highest of all kinds of p. 311; of the body effected by various means such as rinsing the mouth, bath 311; of sacrificer's body in śrauta rites was effected by the *adhvaryu* priest rubbing the sacrificer's body twice with three bunches of seven *darbhas* each 311

Puronuvākya (invitatory prayer) 543 (in Jīvat-śrāddha), is recited by the hotṛ priest while seated 543n

Puruṣagati, a sāman 46n

Puruṣasūkta (R̥g. X. 90), is deemed to be a hymn that purifies one of sins 45, 48, 304, 320; is of 18 verses in Vāj. S. and Tai. Ā. 543; to be repeated at pārvana-śrāddha 439, 444, 449n, 488, 507; to be repeated in Vṛṣotsarga 540

Puruṣottama-tīrtha (Jagannātha Purī) 692-703; see 'Caitanya'; army of



attendants at temple of Jagannātha divided into 36 orders and 97 classes 699; Brahma and Nāradiya purāṇas deal exhaustively with P. 693; Caitanya settled at Purī in 1515 and died there in 1533 A. D., 702; conflict of views about the builder of the great temple at, 698; description of the car festival of Jagannātha which is the most important of the 24 high festivals at Purī 697-698; five important tīrthas at 699; Guṇḍīcā-yātrā for seven days 700-701; indications showing that P. was a place of Buddhist sanctuary 695-696; legend of Indradyumna who established wooden images of Kṛṣṇa, Balarāma and Subhadrā 694-695; Mitra surmises three periods in history of P. viz. early Hindu period, Buddhist period and Vaiṣṇava period 695; not described by Kalpataru on tīrthas 693; no truth in the stories about suicide by falling before the car of Jagannātha 698; one of the four most important tīrthas in Orissa, the other three being Bhuvaneśvara, Koṇārka and Jāipur (Yayātipura) 693; peculiar features of P. are that no distinction of caste is observed, holy cooked rice, car festival 697; pool called after Indradyumna 694-695, 700; pool of Mārkaṇḍeya, story of 699; P. was probably called Nīlācala in ancient times, Kṛṣṇa worship was introduced from northern India and three images of wood were established early 695; religious suicide at, recommended to *dvijas* by Brahmapurāṇa 608; regrettable feature of Jagannātha temple is the existence of obscene sculptures on the walls 702; Rgveda X. 155.3 is supposed by Sāyaṇa to refer to P., 693; sacred enclosure of Jagannātha with 120 temples and the pagoda of Jagannātha in four chambers described 696-697; sacred *vaṭa* at P. 699-700; story of Jagannātha in the

Brahmapurāṇa 694-695; three images described by Hunter and Mitra which are supposed to correspond to Buddha, Dharma and Saṅgha 695n, 696; *veśyās* (dancing girls) at temple of, referred to in Brahmapurāṇa 702-703; works on 692-693 Puruṣottamakṣetratattva of Raghunandana 583, 693,

Pūrvamīmāṃsā, see under 'Mīmāṃsā'
Pūṣan, protects cattle and hands over the departed to pitṛs 198; worshipped in Vṛṣotsarga rite 540

Puṣkara, all ten thousand crores of tīrthas are present in, 565

Puṣpakṛcchra, 143

Puṣṭiśrāddha 282

Putra (son); all three descendants of a man were deemed to confer equally great spiritual benefit upon him 366; Manu says that by the birth of a son man wins the worlds, secures immortality by a grandson and reaches the abode of the sun by a great-grandson 366; Mitākṣarā included the great-grandson also in the extended meaning of the word 367-368; who deserves to be called p. 365

Putrikāputra, 473, 474, 536n; to whom does he offer piṇḍas in a śrāddha and in what order 537

Quack, liable to be punished, if person treated by him died as a result 19

Raghavan, Dr. V. 701n

Raghavānanda, commentator of Manu 93

Raghunandana, author of Śrāddhatattva, Gayāśrāddhapaddhati and other works 594; closely follows Tīrtha-cintāmaṇi of Vācaspati in his Tīrthayātrātattva 671

Raghunātha, commentator of Tīrthaslokī 255n, 276n,

Raghuvamśa 158, 596n, 685, 691, 703, 706,

Rājata, a *sāman* 46n

Rājatarāṅgiṇī 52, 571, 605, 724



- Rājvāde, Khaṇḍa 56n
 Rākṣoghna hymns (Rg. IV. 4. 1-5 etc.), 439, 449n, 450n, 497, 507
 Raktikā, weight of 129
 Rāma, performed sacrifices accompanied by a golden image of Sītā 226; when an exile in Daṇḍakā forest gratified his pitṛs by offering inguda, badara and bilva fruit 416
 Rāmāyaṇa, 214, 223, 233, 237, 416, 534, 597, 647n, 653n, 688, 707, 710
 Rāmātāpanīya-upaniṣad 614
 Ramprasād Chanda 247n
 Rathantara, a sāman 46n, 450
 Ratnāvali, of Nāgārjuna 176
 Rātrisattra, see under 'maxim'; meaning of 62-63
 Raubhīna, a sāman 46n
 Raurava, a sāman 133
 Raurava, a hell supposed to be below the earth 168
 Rāyamukuṭa, 117n
 Raychaudhuri, Dr. Hemcandra 726
 Repentance, as a means of removing the consequences of sins 41-42; by itself not sufficient to destroy effects of sins, acc. to some digests 42
 Report on the 'Doctrine of the Church of England' 171
 Reynolds, Reginald, author of 'Cleanliness and godliness' 311
 Rgveda, 2, 6, 10, 11n, 20, 34, 36, 37, 42, 43n, 45, 46n, 48, 49, 98, 100n, 112n, 120, 126, 127, 133, 140, 141, 144n, 145, 146, 154, 156, 159, 162n, 165, 182n, 185n, 187n, 189n, 191-201 (translation of Rg. X. 14-18 with notes), 192n, 193n, 194n, 196n, 198n, 203, 205n, 206, 214, 227, 229, 230, 231, 232, 241-246, 249n, 250, 254, 266, 267, 269n, 304, 307, 320, 321, 341-344, 346, 347, 349, 351, 376, 384, 429n, 434, 435n, 437, 439, 441, 442, 444, 446n, 447n, 448, 449, 450n, 452, 457, 458, 460, 468, 487n, 488-496, 499, 500, 501, 502, 503, 507, 523, 524, 527, 540, 543, 544, 554, 555, 556, 558, 559, 561, 578, 585, 603n, 607n, 619, 643, 645, 680, 681, 693n; occult powers came to be attributed to the words of 49
 Rgvidhāna, prescribes numerous hymns and verses of the Rgveda for the removal of sins and diseases and the destruction of enemies 49; provides that one should repeat at the time of death the sūkta 'nānānam' (Rg. IX. 112), 185
 Rhys Davids, Mr. 235, 236n, 628
 Rivers, invoked and named in the Rgveda and other Vedas 555-558; said to be ninety-nine in some passages of the Rgveda 556; falling into the sea are holy 560; some great rivers are said to be specially holy at certain times 560n; some great rivers are seen by most Indians in two aspects, physical and spiritual or divine 585; three principal r. of three groups of seven each are Sarasvatī, Sarayū and Sindhu 556; what are the seven r. of the Rgveda 557
 Rkṛvans, a class of pitṛs associated with Brhaspati, Viṣṇu, Soma and other gods 192n
 Rṣicāndrāyaṇa 132
 Rṣyaśṛṅga 221, 547n
 Rta, different from sacrifice 3; distinguished from satya 4; had a three-fold aspect 2; meaning of, in the Rgveda 2; moral imperative is 4
 Rudradāman 255
 Rudradhara, author of Śuddhiviveka 269
 Rudraikādaśinī 178
 Rudras, *anuvākas* of Tai. S. called r. as purifiers 45, 46n; are eleven 490; are employed in Vṛṣotsarga rite 540
 Rudraskanda, commentator of Khādīra gr. 359n
 Sabara, author of bhāṣya on Jaimini's Pūrvamīmāṃsāsūtra, 9n, 24n, 27n, 40n, 45n, 53n, 58, 62n, 66n, 89n, 112n, 137n, 168n, 169, 170, 208n



- 310n, 353, 419n, 440n, 453n, 454n, 481n, 687n
- Sabdakalpadruma 87
- Sabhāparva, 622, 688, 692
- Sacrifices, Vedic, are supposed by some European writers to be magic 38; implements used in, were burnt with the body of the sacrificer on his death except those of copper, iron and clay 197n, 207-208; in smārta s animals are not killed now but only māṣa grains are used 362; some āhitāgnis also do not offer meat but only piṣṭapaśu (flour effigy of animal) 362; were originally propitiatory 44
- Sacred Books of the East Series 8, 37, 43; vol. IV, 192n, 231n, 341n; vol. VI, 171n, 552n; vol. VII, 540n; vol. IX, 171n; vol. X, 176, 707; vol. XI, 204, 235, 552, 621, 742; vol. XII, 321, 574n; vol. XIII, 165, 621, 64n5, 646, 668n, 677, 753; vol. XIV, 170, 403n; vol. XVII, 621; vol. XXI, 176; vol. XXIII, 241n; vol. XXVI, 559n, 680, 744; vol. XXIX, 245n, 277, 360, 574n; vol. XXX, 540n, 559, 619; vol. XXXIII, 69; vol. XLIV, 680, 703; vol. XLV, 165, 646, 687, 749; vol. XLIX, 621, 646
- Saddharmapundarīka 176
- Ṣaḍasīti, a work on āśauca in 86 Anu-ṣṭubh verses by Kauśikāditya 268, 270n, 274n, 285, 293, 294, 295; commentary on, called 'Suddhicandrikā' by Nandapaṇḍita 273
- Sādhana, by Tagore 852n
- Sadyaḥśauca, see under 'ascetic', 'brahmacārin', 'king'; meaning of 295-296; occasions of (where one becomes pure by a mere bath on a relative's death) 297-299
- Sages, of the R̥gveda had some faint glimmerings of a dark pit for wicked persons 154-155; prayed to Varuṇa, Ādityas and Agni to free them from sin 36; say that they violated the *dharma*s and *vrata*s of gods and implore forgiveness 36-37
- Sāhasa, divided into three kinds (when meaning fine for offences) 76; divided into four kinds (when meaning offences) 81n
- Sakas 117
- Sākalahomas 48
- Sākamedha, one of the Cāturmāsyas; piṇḍapitryajña performed in 201
- Sākapiṇi 645
- Sakuntalā, an Apsaras, is said in a gāthā in Śat. Br. to have conceived Bharata at Nāḍapit 595
- Saletore, Prof. B. A. 716n
- Sālikanātha, author of Prakaraṇa-pāñcikā 170
- Salt, manufactured, condemned for use in śrāddha but natural salt from a lake allowed 416; was not to be directly served to dining brāhmaṇas in a śrāddha 466
- Salyaparva, 237, 582, 683n, 684n, 685, 686, 710
- Sāmans, as purifiers of sin 45; should be repeated from 10 to 100 times for removal of sins as expiation 49
- Samantapañcaka, represents the five pools of kṣatriya blood that Paraśu-rāma collected in revenge for his father's murder, subsequently turned into holy pools 682
- Sāmaveda, 46n, 110, 116, 133n, 203n, 307
- Sāmavidhāna Brāhmaṇa 18, 23, 49, 60, 95, 96, 100, 107, 110, 116, 130, 132, 133.
- Samsarga, a mahāpātaka, when 25-29, 105-106; expiation for association with one guilty of mahāpātaka was not death but an observance extending over years 106; extension of, in medieval works 27; half expiation if s. was due to ignorance 106; nine kinds of 25-26; results of, in the four yugas 26; three kinds of 26
- Samskāra-ratnamālā of Gopīnātha, 482, 509

Saṁskāras, all were once performed for women also but without Vedic mantras except at marriage 190; are performed for śūdras but without Vedic mantras 190; two saṁskāras, viz. at birth and at death are absolutely necessary for all 190
Samudrakara, author of bhāṣya on Śrāddhasūtra 406n

Samvarta, smṛti of, 19n, 23, 24, 40, 48, 51, 74, 88, 99, 103, 107, 109-111, 115, 123, 127, 222n, 238, 240, 276n, 322

Sanatkumārasaṁhitā, 633

Saṁcayana (collection of the charred bones of a person cremated) 240-244; bones of a male are collected in an urn without protuberances and of a woman in an urn with protuberances 241; collected charred bones should be cast into the Ganges or some holy river or into the sea, since the deceased would remain in heaven as long as even a particle of the bones remains in the Ganges 234; of the dead are cast at Prayāga 243; even in modern times, particularly in towns and cities, the collection of charred bones is done immediately after cremation 242; four modes of the disposal of charred bones, acc. to Sat. śr. 246n; great divergence of views about the day on which this is to be done, but many works lay down 4th day after cremation 240-241; Kauśika-sūtra and Satyāsādhya-śrautasūtra differ in details, the most important being that the urn is deposited at the root of a tree 242; men and women (but not mixed up together) may collect 241; no S. for one whose upanayana has not been performed 244; procedure of, in Āśv. gṛhya-sūtra 241; procedure of, acc. to Antyeṣṭi-paddhati 242-243; rattling noise should not be made in collecting 241; relatives return to house without looking back, bathe and offer śrāddha to deceased alone 241;

rite of casting ashes into the Ganges described 243-244; some smṛtis made the day of S depend on the *varṇa* of the person deceased 241; some prescribed certain *tithis* and *nakṣatras* for S. 241; some sūtras prescribe a śānti rite called *paridhi-karma* after S. while others do so after āśauca ends 240; urn (in which bones are collected) to be put in a pit 241

Sandhyā; though Gobhila prohibits performance of S. during days of impurity, Mit. says that a man in days of impurity may offer water to the Sun in worship and that mantras (except those of *prāṇāyāma*) may be revolved in the mind 240

Śāṇḍilya, smṛti of 243n

Śāṇḍilyavidyā 186

Saṅghātasrāddha 547; meaning of 547; when several people die at the same time on the same day, the order in which the śrāddhas are to be performed is determined by the nearness of relationship to the performer 547

Saṅgraha, a work on Dharmasāstra 217n, 268, 455n, 541n

Saṅkalpa for taking expiation should be made on 14th tithi and actual expiation may be done on amāvāsya, 119

Saṅkarācārya, 20n, 53n, 66n, 67n, 68, 100n, 158, 162n, 165, 186n, 188, 189, 344n, 384n, 481

Saṅkarīkaraṇa sins 15, 35; expiation for 118-119

Saṅkha, smṛti of 10, 11n, 24, 32, 42, 47n, 48, 74, 78, 79n, 83, 84, 87, 93, 94, 99, 108, 121, 123, 126, 127n, 130, 132, 138-140, 142, 145-149, 151, 175, 220, 237, 238, 256, 271, 277, 281, 282n, 283, 286, 287, 292, 293, 294n, 312, 313n, 314, 322, 325, 326, 328, 330, 350n, 377, 378, 381, 403, 414n, 415, 416, 441n, 466, 470, 514, 519, 560n, 562n, 653



- Saṅkha-Likhita 99, 116n, 142, 150, 162, 163n, 221, 243n, 297, 300, 314, 368, 386, 463, 467, 578n
- Sāṅkhāyana-brāhmaṇa 45, 345, 354, 559n
- Sāṅkhāyana-grhya-sūtra 54, 354, 355, 357n, 358, 359n, 360, 362, 384, 402, 463, 470, 474, 516, 521, 525, 539, 574n
- Sāṅkhāyanaśrautasūtra 57, 127, 200n, 203, 204, 205n, 207n, 208n, 209n, 224, 225n, 238, 240, 244, 267, 271, 463, 511n, 537
- Sāṅkhyā philosophy, tenets of 9
- Sannavatiśrāddha of Raghunātha 381n, 382; of Sivabhaṭṭa, son of Govinda 382
- Sannyāsin, reverting to the life of a householder is to be treated as a *cāṇḍāla* even after undergoing penance and his children born after his lapse are to dwell among *cāṇḍālas* 113
- Sāntapana, is expiation for acts called Jātibhramśakara 118; is same as Brahmakūrca, according to some digests 147
- Sāntika chapter is Vāj. S. 36. 10 ff. 151
- Sāntiparva 9, 10, 25, 54, 74, 100n, 104, 164, 166, 170, 181, 185n, 187, 237, 349, 350, 364, 387n, 534, 540n, 570, 685n
- Sānti rite, after saṅcayana 244-246; at the end of āśauca 306-307; mantras in, for followers of different Vedas 307
- Sapinda, two meanings of 510
- Sapinda relationship extends to seven generations 483
- Sapindas, had to observe no āśauca, but only *sadyah-śauca* for those who met death in defence of cows or brāhmaṇas, or met death through king's wrath, or for those that were killed in battle 305
- Sapindikarāṇa or Sapindana śrāddha 520-525; conflict of views about

mother's s. 524; could be performed at the end of a year after death or at the end of four, six or eleven months or three fortnights or on 12th day after death or on the happening of a lucky event (birth of a son or marriage) 520; different times after death prescribed for this śrāddha in ancient works 520ff; even if s. be performed within one year, still for one year food and a jar of water should be given to a brāhmaṇa 521; four piṇḍas are to be prepared, one for the *preta* and three for his deceased paternal ancestors and then the performer divides the *preta*-piṇḍa into three parts and puts each third into each of the three piṇḍas with the two mantras 'ye samānā' 522; mantras differ in different works 523-524; means the reception of a deceased person into the community of *pitṛs* to whom piṇḍas are offered 520; navaśrāddhas, 16 śrāddhas and s. must be performed by one heir alone, though there be many heirs, but after a year śrāddha may be performed by each heir separately 526; no auspicious rite like marriage can be performed until sapindana of a deceased family member has been performed 525; no sapindana for a person unless he had upanayana performed 524-525; no sapindana for those who left off their faith or committed suicide or became ascetics or were born of mixed unions, or for patita women 525; number of brāhmaṇas to be invited 522; on completion of s. the *preta* ceases to be so and becomes one of the *pitṛs* 523; of woman who became a *satī* or was made a *putrikā* or was married in the āsura form 524; partakes of both *ekoddiṣṭa* (applying to *preta*) and *pārvaṇa* (applying to three ancestors) 523; procedure of, described 522 ff; saṅkalpa in s. 521n; this śrāddha

and ekoddīṣṭa-śrāddha are performed for women also 524; to be performed in the afternoon 523; twelfth day is generally commended for several reasons 520-521; twelfth day after death is the only day for s. for śūdras, acc. to some 521; two meanings of the word *preta* 523; was to be performed after the sixteen śrāddhas 520, 521; widow dying sonless has no s. performed for her, but only ekoddīṣṭa 524

Saptārcis mantra 450n, 458n, 459

Saraka, a tirtha on Sarasvatī 559

Sārasvatasatras, described 558-559, 681; the country between Vinasāna and Plakṣa Prasravaṇa was the proper locality for 558; three S. 557-558

Sārasvata-tīrthas 559, 681

- ✓ Sarasvatī, see under 'Sindhu'; described in some purāṇas as springing from Plakṣa tree, as flowing through Kurukṣetra and Dvaitavana 556n, 686; Alberuni's account of another S. that falls into the sea near Somanātha 686; description of in the Rgveda 556-557; disappeared in the desert sands in the times of the Brāhmaṇa texts 557; following the course of, from the sea to its source was an expiation 93; has a two-fold character as a river and as a divinity 198n; is now identified with Sarsutī which is lost in the desert sands near Bhatnair 557; question whether S. is the same as Sindhu discussed 556n; seven Sarasvatīs that encompass the world 686; seven very holy rivers connected with S. 686; the *dīkṣā* of the Sārasvata satras was to be performed on the south bank of the dry bed of S. 557; three hymns are addressed to S. as a deity in the Rgveda 556; Vāj. S. says that five rivers fall into the S. 557

Sarasvatīvilāsa, a work 82

Śarayū, river 556

Sārṇāth, about five miles north of Banaras where Buddha delivered his first sermon 641

Sarvādhāna, method of Agnihotra 461

Sarvajña-Nārāyaṇa, commentator of Manu 93, 362n,

Sarvānukrama 619

Sarvaprāyaścitta, for dying man 184

Sārvarājñyah (ṛcaḥ) 203n

Śatapatha-Brāhmaṇa 8, 10, 20, 37, 39,

44, 54, 57, 58, 62n, 70, 117, 155, 157, 168, 189n, 194n, 196n, 203n, 204n, 205n, 206n, 207n, 208, 209n, 210, 223, 225n, 246, 248, 249n, 266, 321, 339, 343, 345-348, 353, 369, 376, 383n, 402n, 417, 418, 429, 462, 472, 476, 477n, 559n, 574n, 585, 606, 618, 680, 703

Śātātapa, smṛti of 40, 108, 115, 172,

174, 178, 220, 280n, 295n, 305, 311, 324n, 325, 332n, 344, 348, 399, 475, 515n, 519n, 528; on Karmavipāka 172n

Satī, see under 'wife'; wife burning herself on her husband's funeral pyre or burning herself some time after her husband's death 237, 604ff; brāhmaṇa woman was to burn herself along with her husband's body, but not after its cremation, but women of other classes could do so 237; Nārada-purāṇa does not allow a woman to burn herself if she has a young child or if she is pregnant or if she has not attained puberty or she is in her monthly illness 237, 604-605; practice of, was common to all women including cāṇḍāla women 237; Rgveda X. 18. 7 slightly changed was recited at the burning of, 199n

Saṭ-trimśan-mata, 18n, 102n, 114, 128n, 293, 332n, 364, 414, 541n, 548n

Satya, vide under ṛta

Satyāśādhā-srauta-sūtra, 191n, 204, 206n, 207n, 208n, 211, 212, 218



- 224, 225, 226n, 233, 240, 242, 244, 245n, 246, 248, 251-254, 361
- Satyavrata, 419n
- Śāṭyāyani 383n
- Śauca, see under 'purity', 'śuddhi'; consists in avoiding *abhakṣya* (what ought not to be eaten), by association with those only who are uncondemned, and firmly abiding by one's prescribed duties 310; four kinds of, acc. to a *smṛti* viz. monetary, mental, bodily and of speech 310; is one of the five *niyamas* of Yoga 311; means removal by means of clay, water, cowdung and the like of the besmearing, the oiliness and odour of a thing that causes impurity 314; mental attitude is the highest thing in, acc. to *Padmapurāṇa* 310; of two kinds, *bāhya* (of the body) and *ābhyantara*, the latter being superior to the former 310; *Vanaparva* speaks of three kinds of, viz. in speech, actions and that brought about by water 310
- Saumyakṛcchra 152
- Śaunaka, 243, 540n, 544; condemned the begetting of a son by a *dviija* from a *śūdra* woman 14n; procedure of *Nārāyaṇabali* from, 304
- Śaunakātharvaṇasrāddha-kalpa 479
- Saurapurāṇa, 51, 371n, 375, 388, 392, 396, 443n, 456n, 471n, 514
- Sāvitrī, (*Gāyatrī* verse), as purifier of sins 45
- Savyam; meaning of 487n
- Sāyana, 193n, 194n, 197n, 228n; *bhāṣya* of, on *Rgveda* 556, 559n, 693n; *bhāṣya* of, on *Sāmavidhānabrāhmaṇa* 59n; *bhāṣya* of, on *Tai. Br.* 427n, 462n; *bhāṣya* of, on *Tai. Ā.* 39n; *bhāṣya* of, on *Tai. S.* 426n
- Sea, every, is holy 560
- Sea voyage; a *brāhmaṇa*, who undertakes sea voyages, is unfit to be invited at *śrāddha* 393
- Setu, 55, 94; pilgrimage to, as an expiation for the murder of a *brāhmaṇa* who has studied four *Vedas* 94
- Sewel, on image of *Jagannātha* 696
- Sheol, was the name the Hebrews gave to the gloomy abode of the dead 170
- Sherring, M.A., author of 'The sacred city of the Hindus' 618n, 631, 632
- Siddhāntaśekhara, 319n
- Siddharāja, king of *Anāhilavād-Vide* under *Somanātha*
- Silappadikāram 767
- Silver, said to be produced from the eye of *Śiva* and therefore dear to *pitṛs* 420
- Sin, *apātrikaraṇa* 15, 35; *Aśvamedha* deemed to free from all 37; confession of, supposed to remove effects of 37; how s. arises has been a difficult problem 8-9; idea of, bound up with conception of *rta* in the *Rgveda* 2; idea of original s. not accepted by many people 8n; idea of, varies at different ages, in different countries and different religions 1; is difficult to define 1; is transferred from man to man by sitting or sleeping together, by dining in same row or by using same conveyance 26; means of removing consequences of 37, 40, 41-56; most frequent words in the *Rgveda* for sin are *āgas* and *enas* 5; murder of *brāhmaṇa*, gravest 10; potentialities and consequences of, are two-fold 65; *Rgvedic* sages acutely conscious of 5; seven kinds of, named in the *Nirukta* 10; source of, is the Devil, acc. to Christianity 8n; water was supposed to remove 37; what is s. 1; words for s. in *Rgveda*, discussed 5-8
- Sindhu, question whether *Sarasvatī* is really *Sindhu* 556n; seven *Sindhus* spoken of in some passages of *Rgveda* and *Atharvaveda*, 556
- Sinners, see under '*karmavipākā*'; enumerated in *Tai. Br.* 11; had to undergo three burdens 76; guilty of

mahāpātakas may become pure by Aśvamedha or by visiting all tīrthas 91-92; three classes of, acc. to Vasiṣṭha 13; who feel no repentance and do not perform prāyaścitta fall into terrible Hells and after undergoing tortures in hells are born again as men suffering from deformities or diseases or as animals, insects, trees and shrubs 153, 154, 172

Sins, are removed not by prāyaścitta alone but also by confession to others, gifts, meditation on God 50; bodily sins 173; difference in punishments or expiation based on intention or absence of it or on repetition 17; divergence among sūtras as to classification of 12; five classes of, acc. to Kātyāyana 14; five enumerated in Chāndogya Upaniṣad 12,16; homas and mantras may purify a man from sins that have not become public 125; many s. are punishable by the king as crimes, though penances are provided for them 68; mental sins 173; nine classes of, acc. to Viṣṇu Dh. S. 15; redemption of, by monetary payments or bequests of property to churches in Christian belief 52n; supposed to be centred in the hair 122, 574; three classes of, acc. to Baud. Dh. S. 13; three classes of, acc. to Manu 173; three kinds of viz. bodily, in words and mental 173; classes of, acc. to Āp. Dh. S. 12; two kinds of, viz. intentionally committed and unintentionally committed 61; unintentionally committed s. are destroyed by repeating Vedic texts 63; views differed as to whether all sins committed in past lives are destroyed by entering Kāśī or whether only those of the present life 638; vocal sins 173; which diseases arise as the results of which sins 173

Sirkar, Dr. D. C., 698

Śiśucāndrāyaṇa 150

Śiśukṛcchra, same as Bālakṛcchra, 150

Śīta-kṛcchra 150

Śivadharmottara 396

Śivapurāṇa 445n, 519, 678n, 679

Śivasāṅkalpa, sacred Vedic texts from Vāj. S. 48

Skandapurāṇa 164, 187, 337n, 351, 352n, 363n, 369n, 370n, 371n, 372, 374, 375, 376n, 380, 381n, 382n, 385, 389, 391, 392, 394n, 399, 405, 407, 409n, 413, 416n, 418, 440n, 442n, 448, 450n, 452 (closely follows Āśv. gr. and Yāj.), 458n, 466, 468, 469, 478, 484, 512, 514, 517, 530, 531, 539n, 547n, 555, 562, 563, 564n, 566n, 573n, 577n, 578n, 579n, 589, 595, 596n, 597, 598, 603n, 607, 612, 613n, 616-625, 627, 630n, 631, 633-639, 640, 641n, 678n, 695, 725; is said to have 81000 verses acc. to Matsya-purāṇa 624n

Sloka-Gautama 531n

Smith, Vincent, author of 'History of Fine Arts in India and Ceylon' 720n

Smṛtis, conflict of, on the periods of impurity, resolved in various ways by Madanapārijāta 270n; contain varying details of the same rite 89; one view is that details of all smṛtis should be combined, if not in conflict 89-90; prescribe prāyaścittas for brāhmaṇas partaking of śrāddha food 387; put uncleanness on birth and that on death on the same level 309; 'sarva-śākhā-pratyaya-nyāya' applied to 89-90; some authors like Viśvarūpa held the view that details about a prāyaścitta in each smṛti should be kept separate and not combined 90

Smṛticandrikā 45n, 48n, 53n, 54, 82, 114n, 115n, 149n, 220, 227n, 231, 243n, 256n, 257n, 261n, 262n, 268, 270n, 273 (on āśauca), 275n, 276n, 282n, 285, 287n, 291, 292n, 305n, 311, 332n, 338n, 350, 369n, 370n, 372n, 374n, 375, 376, 377n, 381n, 382n, 383n, 394n, 395n, 404n, 405n



- 406n, 407n, 409n, 412, 415n, 416, 417n, 419n, 420, 421n, 422n, 423n, 443n, 444n, 446n, 455n, 457, 458, 459n, 460, 462n, 463, 464, 468n, 469n, 473n, 475n, 477n, 478, 481, 484n, 514n, 520, 523n, 524, 531n, 532n, 546n, 547n, 569n, 578n, 591n, 651, 652n
- Smṛtimuktāphala of Vaidyanātha 18a, 22n, 29, 60n, 67, 90n, 94, 95n, 101, 107, 148, 164n, 220, 240, 268n, 269, 273, 282, 288, 290, 296, 302n, 383n, 399n, 486 (followed by Madras smārta brāhmaṇas on śrāddha), 532, 546n
- Smṛtisāgara 119n
- Smṛtiratnāvalī 670n
- Smṛtisamuccaya 574
- Smṛtisāra 296n,
- Smṛtyarthasāra 27, 56, 91, 92, 95n, 101, 129, 175, 177, 229, 230, 257, 272n, 286, 289, 291n, 304, 316, 318, 325, 365, 374n, 375, 416, 459n, 473n, 508n, 521, 526, 532n, 668n, 669
- Snakes, supposed to subsist on wind 335
- Soma, *camasas* filled with s., can be drunk by priests one after another without incurring any blemish 328; distinguished from *surā* 20; extent of period of s. sacrifice 96; is food only of brāhmaṇas 196n; is king of brāhmaṇas 196n; throws in a pit those who do not observe Soma's ordinances 154
- Somanātha, tax on pilgrims going to, was levied by Siddharāja, king of Anahilavād, but was later remitted at the intercession of his mother 571
- Somāyana, an expiation 151-152
- Son, of patita was condemned and excluded from inheritance 106; saved father from hell called *put* 161; what makes a son a real son 654n
- Sons, one should desire to have many sons, so that at least one may visit Gayā 652-653; twelve kinds of, recognized in ancient times, of whom the kṣetrajā, the putrikāputra and dattaka most important 536
- Soul, at time of death of one body enters into another new one 335; eight qualities of, mentioned in Gautama and others 310; *śauca*, one of the eight qualities of the soul 310; was supposed to become, after death of body, associated with Yama and pitṛs 342
- Souls, see under 'funeral rites', 'pindaś'; after the death of the body are supposed to assume a body called *ātivāhika*, that such a body is secured by human beings alone and not by other beings 265; bodies that s. secure after death are called *ātivāhika* by some and *yātaniya* by others 266; of departed persons who offered sacrifices when living become shining stars in the firmament 157, 166; supposed to take on a new bright body on cremation in R̥gveda 193, 342; survival of, after death of body, is emphatically asserted in Tai. Br. 157
- South Indian Inscriptions 712n
- Śraddhā, is addressed as a deity in the R̥g. 351, 496-497; various definitions of 352
- Śrāddha, see *āmaśrāddha*, *aparāhṇa*, *Āryasamāja*, *brāhmaṇas*, *corn*, *eclipse*, *food*, *hemaśrāddha*, *jivatśrāddha*, *kutapa*, *Māghyāvarṣa*, *pañktipāvana*, *pārvaṇaśrāddha*, *pinda-pitṛyajña*, *pindas*, *pitṛs*, *putra*, *salt*, *soul*, *śraddhā*; afternoon preferred for ś., except for Vṛddhi-śrāddha and Āmaśrāddha 370; *agnaukarāṇa*, discussion about 461-462; *āhitāgni* should not perform ś. on any day except *darsa*, acc. to Manu 371n; among the brāhmaṇas invited at ś., two are meant for gods (and are called *daiva* or *vaiśvadeva* brāhmaṇas) and three for pitṛs 403,

407; an *atithi* must be fed at a ś. 404; ancestors upwards from 4th viz. father, grandfather, great-grandfather of the performer's great-grandfather, are entitled only to the *lepa* (wipings of the particles of food sticking to the hand of the performer) 482-483; brāhmaṇas alone are to be invited for dinner at ś. 383; brāhmaṇas should pronounce blessings at ś. after they dine and sip water, 468; brāhmaṇas who are *paṅktipāvana* should be invited at ś. 385-386; called *anvāhārya* performed formerly on the same day after *pindapitryajña*, but not now 362; child whose *upanayana* has not been performed is not eligible to repeat Vedic mantras and cannot perform ś. but an exception is made in the case of a son as to funeral rites for a parent 365; classification of śrāddhas, 380-381; confers long life, happiness, fame, prosperity, sons, and heaven on the performer, 350; consequences that follow from disposal of the piṇḍas in śrāddha in each of the several modes of disposal 481; daily ś. prescribed by Manu for all householders to be performed with food or water or milk or fruits and roots 369; dakṣiṇā has to be given profusely towards the end of each ś. and it is supposed that whatever may be wanting in mantras or the proper time or procedure is cured and made perfect by it 534-535; dark half of a month preferred for, 370; definitions of ś. by Brahmapurāṇa, Mitākṣarā and others emphasize its connection with śrāddhā 334, 351; denotes, according to some, three things viz. *homa*, offering of piṇḍa and gratification of brāhmaṇas invited to dinner, 335; derivation of word ś. from śrāddhā 351-52; description of piṭṛs as Vasus, Rudras and Ādityas is only for purposes of contemplation, 348;

Devala recommends that an elaborate ś. should be performed only once a year, 383; differences in many details of ś. had arisen in the days of the Purāṇas, 363; differences among sūtras whether young or old learned brāhmaṇas were to be invited 388; digests on ś., utilized in this volume, 363; discussion of the question what Hindus of the 20th century should do about śrāddhas 549-551; discussion whether a performer of ś. should perform the rite strictly in accordance with the gr̥hyasūtra of his own Veda or Śākhā or may include details found in other works, 452-455; discussion whether performer of ś. studying one recension of the Veda must invite brāhmaṇas studying the same recension or could invite one who had studied any of the three Vedas, 397-398; discussion whether the daily Vaiśvadeva is to be performed before the starting of ś. rites or after they are finished 483-484; divergent views as to the stage when *ānvāhana* of piṭṛs is to be made and about the mantras to be employed at ś., 460-461; doctrine of, carried to excess 383, 513; doctrine of offering balls of cooked rice to ancestors at ś. presupposes or requires that the ancestors are even after 50 or 100 years from their deaths capable of enjoying in an ethereal body the flavour or essence of the balls wafted by the wind 335; doctrine underlying the conception of ś. is apparently opposed to the dogma of *karma* and *punarjanma*, 335; eight matters to be avoided by brāhmaṇas invited at ś., 411; emphasis on inviting very learned brāhmaṇas became practically nugatory by the rules of some smṛtis that one should not partake of śrāddha for three years after sapindāna and that laid down various prāyaścittas for dining at śrāddha in the first, second or third

year after Sapindana 548; enumeration of 96 śrāddhas to be performed in a year 382-383; even in modern times learned brāhmaṇas are unwilling to dine at a ś., particularly within a few years of death 387, 548; examination of the explanation of the doctrine of ś. offered by Purāṇas and medieval digests 338-339; exclusiveness and pride of sub-castes even among brāhmaṇas go so far that Bālabhāṭṭi recommends that Mahārāṣṭra brāhmaṇas should not invite for ś. brāhmaṇas of other castes even if very learned and particularly Kōṅkaṇas-thas and that men of one's own sub-caste should be preferred even if they are of blemished character 398; explanation how *masiśrāddha* came to be called the *prakṛti* (the norm) of all śrāddhas 258; explanation given by Purāṇas and digests how food offered into fire or eaten by brāhmaṇa invitees at ś. is enjoyed by the departed whatever form they might have attained after death (such as a god or *daitya*, beast, or snake or grass) 335-337; five classes of, acc. to Bṛhaspati and others 381; flowers allowed and condemned for employment in ś. 416; food offered in ś. is believed to be enjoyed by departed spirits in the world of *pitṛs* 340; frugal or poor dinner not to be offered in certain śrāddhas and on certain occasions 406; gift of bedstead used by the deceased to a brāhmaṇa and his wife with appropriate mantra and other details recommended by some purāṇas but severely condemned by the Padmapurāṇa 535-536; gifts of wealth, lands and houses on death of kings and great warriors and eulogies of such gifts and particularly of cooked food 534; guests coming by chance, while ś. rites are in progress, should be honoured, since *yogins* wander over

the earth for the good of people in various forms 396; if a brāhmaṇa, who is *pañkṭipāvana* and fulfills the conditions laid down in Manu III. 132-146 be not available, one may invite as the next best course even a *bandhu*, father-in-law, son-in-law, one's teacher of the Veda or pupil, daughter's son, wife's brother, a *sagotra* or even a brother 387; if a performer can afford to invite at ś. only one brāhmaṇa, then he should prefer a chanter of the whole of Sāma-veda 399; if it is not possible to perform all śrāddhas (except Sapindīkaraṇa) according to detailed procedure, they may be performed by the procedure called 'sāṅkalpavidhi' 532; if no brāhmaṇa be available on śrāddha day, effigies with *darbhās* should be made, śrāddha offered and fees and materials may be given later to other brāhmaṇas 406, 514; if primary procedure for a rite as laid down in śruti or smṛti cannot be carried out, then one may resort to some substituted procedure 513-514; in eclipses the appropriate time for ś. is *sparsakāla* 372; inquiry into the learning and qualities of brāhmaṇas to be invited at ś. was allowed but not as to those who came by chance uninvited 391; in ś. on the birth of a son or in ś. offered by even a good *sūdra* there is no feeding of brāhmaṇas 482; institution of, had a hoary antiquity even at the time of the Āp. Dharmasūtra 349; inviting Bauddhas, Nirgranthas or those who espouse the Pāñcarātra or Pāsupata or Kāpālika doctrines forbidden 395; *kāmya* ś., examples of, 373; *kuśas* to be used in ś., rules about 417-418; *leavings* of food in the plates of the invited brāhmaṇas and the *vikira* on *darbhās* were the share or lot of persons of the family dying young and the *leavings* fallen on the ground were the lot of deces-



ed slaves of the family 470n, 500; leavings of food in the plates of brāhmaṇas should not be removed or swept away till sunset, as the spirits of those that were offered no water regale themselves with them 468; leavings of food cooked for śrāddha dinner should not be given to a person inferior in qualities or to a śūdra 468; literature on ś. is enormous in extent 362-363; long lists of persons not to be allowed near a ś. 380; Mahālayaśrāddha 530-533; main underlying conception of śrāddha viz. a tender and affectionate regard for one's relatives, is admirable 550; *mantra* to be repeated at the beginning and end of all śrāddhas 458; *mantras* at āvāhana in ś. 460; *mantras* repeated in ś. are deemed to carry food to the pitṛs that are invoked by their names and *gotras* and as accompanied by Vasus, Rudras and Ādityas 338; many works disapprove of extravagance in inviting a large number of brāhmaṇas at ś., since a large company affects five *desiderata*, viz. respectful treatment of brāhmaṇas, securing a proper place, proper time, purity and meritorious brāhmaṇas 403-404, 550; *māṣa* preparations highly recommended in ś. 421-422; may be performed on any day, if particularly appropriate materials or holy brāhmaṇas are available or the performer is near a sacred place 370; meant originally a sacrifice for the pitṛs on *amāvāsyā* 369; method of giving invitations to brāhmaṇas for a ś. 406-409; milk, which was allowed and which was condemned for use in ś. 315; mokṣa results from performance of ś. 350; monthly ś. on *amāvāsyā* was the *prakṛti* (norm or model) of which Aṣṭakā and other śrāddhas were modifications 361-362; *nai-mittika* ś. 373, 381; non-Aryans (called *dasyus* in the Mahābhārata)

like Yavanas, Mlecchas, Kirātas, Śakas, Cīnas may perform śrāddhas 364; no legal machinery exists to enforce the liability to perform śrāddha of the deceased whose wealth was inherited by an heir 510; no piṇḍadāna on certain śrāddhas, such as āmaśrāddha and on *yugādi* days 481; no scrutiny should be made about a brāhmaṇa of whom nothing is known, since *siddhas* roam on the earth as brāhmaṇas 389; no ś. to be offered to father or mother if he or she became a mleccha (by forcible or voluntary conversion) and the piṇḍa to be offered to him or her should be offered to Viṣṇu 483; no ś. for deceased ascetics except pārvana on the 11th day after death and every year afterwards 519; not to be performed on 14th of the dark half of a month for anyone except for those killed by poison or snakes or beasts or in battle or by brāhmaṇa's wrath 370n; number of brāhmaṇas to be invited did not depend on the means of the inviter, but on whether he could honour them all well 403; number of brāhmaṇas to be invited differed acc. to the views of different authors and works 402-404; observances for inviter and invitee 410-412; offerings at ś., acc. to some Purāṇas, become transformed into that kind of food that the pitṛs require in the new bodies they might have assumed acc. to doctrine of *karma* and offerings due to wealth acquired by unjust means gratify pitṛs that are born as cāṇḍālas 352; on *amāvāsyā* is *nitya* (obligatory) 426n; on 11th day after death, two views about 519; on thirteenth day of dark half of Bhādrapada highly eulogised 360; one can offer piṇḍas only to three ancestors beginning with one's father and not to 4th, 5th or 6th ancestor even if one or more of the first three ancestors



be alive, 365, 511; one knowing only the Gāyatrī verse but leading a well-regulated life was to be preferred at ś. to one who knows the three Vedas but whose conduct is not well-regulated 389; order of preference among invitees at ś. viz. first ascetics, then a brāhmaṇa who has studied the four Vedas and *itihāsa* and so on 389; origin of the institution of ś. from Manu or from the Boar incarnation 349; pārvana ś. 431-514; performance of ś. at night or twilight or when the sun has just risen is forbidden (except in eclipses) 375; performed at a holy place and on *yugādi* or *manvādi tithis* yields inexhaustible gratification to the pitṛs 374; performer of ś. calls the pitṛs to be present at the rite after taking permission of the invited brāhmaṇas for the invocation 348; performer of, should as a rule invite a brāhmaṇa who has studied some recension of the Veda and who is not of same gotra as the performer, who is not connected by marriage or who is not a teacher or a pupil or a friend, though some exceptions were recognized 385; performer of, should not observe a fast on śrāddha day, but should partake of the food left after being served to the invited brāhmaṇas or should at least smell it 469-470; performer of, should wash house floor, should cowdung it, should wash the clothes and cleanse vessels the previous day 409; persons (of over 50 kinds) to be shunned at a ś. according to Gautama, some of whom could be invited at a rite for gods according to others 400-401; persons and animals that should be ejected from the place of ś. or should not be allowed to look at it or disturb it 379-380; piṇḍas are made by the performer or by his wife with the food that remains after agnaukarana and mixed with

sesame, honey and ghee and are offered by the *pitṛ-tīrtha* 498n; piṇḍas offered to the great-grandfather, the grand-father and father are declared to be identical respectively with Vāsudeva, Sankarṣaṇa and Pradyumna and the offerer of piṇḍas with Aniruddha 350-351; piṇḍas of cooked rice or flour were not to be offered in śrāddha performed on equinoctial days, on saṅkrānti, on solstitial days, on ekādaśī or trayodaśī or on Maghā and Kṛttikā nakṣatras 481; pitṛs assuming aerial forms were supposed to hover round and enter the brāhmaṇas invited at ś. 390, 401, 407; pitṛyā verses are each repeated loudly with āhāva at the end of ś. rite 502; place that is full of insects or is arid or burnt by fire or terrific in aspect or gives out painful sounds or fetid smell is unfit for ś. 379; points in which modern Madras manuals differ from those used in Western India 504; polluted by *asuras* is purified by sesame and by tying a goat near the place 419; poor man may offer, instead of sumptuous food, uncooked corn, or some vegetables or some slight fee or a few grains of sesame to a brāhmaṇa with water or may offer grass to a cow or raise his arms and repeat loudly that he has nothing 425-426; practice of presenting the clothes, ornaments, bedstead, the horse and the like used by the deceased to the brāhmaṇa invited for śrāddha and also of donating an umbrella and sandals on the completion of śrāddha 535; praise of the importance and benefits of, 349-351; pratisāmvatsarika or pratyābdika ś. 529-530; *prāyaścittas* prescribed by smṛtis for dining at a pārvanaśrāddha, or vṛddhiśrāddha, sapīḍana and other śrāddhas 387-388, 548; *prāyaścittas* prescribed for partaking of food at Navaśrāddhas, monthly śrāddhas

and yearly ones 548; principal act in ś. rites is the feeding of brāhmaṇas 349; procedure if only one brāhmaṇa could be invited or was available 403, 513; procedure applicable to śrāddha by one whose father was alive was extended by Viṣṇu to one's mother's paternal ancestors 513; procedure if the performance of a śrāddha on a particular day is rendered impossible by an obstacle such as āśauca 547-548; proper places for the performance of 377-379; qualifications of brāhmaṇas to be invited were few in the gṛhyasūtras, but smṛtis and purāṇas add many more and enlarge the lists of those that should not be invited 384-390; question how śrāddha was to be performed if one or more of the three paternal ancestors were alive was discussed from ancient times and opinions varied 511-513; rewards for performance of śrāddha in an eclipse 375; rewards for performing ś. on 28 nakṣatras from Kṛttikā to Bharanī (including Abhijit) 374; rewards for performing ś. on the several week-days 373-374; rewards for performing ś. from the first to the 15th tithi of the dark half 372; rewards for performing ś. on even tithis and even nakṣatras and uneven tithis and nakṣatras 370; rewards of piṇḍa-dāna 503; right to inherit is based under the Dāyabhāga on the capacity to offer piṇḍas to the deceased owner and not on actually offering them 510; rules as to the day (tithi) on which sāmvaśarika śrāddha is to be performed if the day or month of death or both are not known 530; rules for testing the brāhmaṇas to be invited at a ś. 390-391; rules of conduct for the performer of ś. 401-402; rules on removal of particles of food left in plates from which brāhmaṇas dined 468-469; sapinḍi-karaṇa, 520-525; several

views about the final disposal (*pratipatti*) of piṇḍas 480-481; should be begun on *Kutapa* (8th out of 15 *muhūrtas* of the day) and should not extend beyond *Rauhiṇa* (12th *muhūrta* of the day) 376; should be performed when one dreams an evil dream or when evil planets affect the nakṣatra on which a man was born 372; should not be performed in *mleccha* localities 378; should not be performed in the *Triśaṅku* country and in the countries of *Kāraṣkara*, *Kaliṅga* and others and in countries to the north of the *Sindhu* river 378-379; should not be performed on *Nandā* tithis, on Friday, on 13th of the dark half, on the nakṣatra of one's birth 373; sixteen śrāddhas are laid down by numerous works as necessary to free the spirit of a deceased person from the condition of being a *pretā* and *piśāca* 518; sixteen śrāddhas, divergence of views about what they are and particularly whether *sapinḍi-karaṇa* is included therein or not 518-519; sixteen śrāddhas were and are now performed on the 11th day after death 520; some authorities allow anyone to perform śrāddhas (except *sapinḍi-karaṇa*) for any relative, particularly at *Gayā* 364-365; some *Purāṇas* condemn scrutiny into the character and learning of brāhmaṇas to be invited but digests explain away such passages as referring to śrāddhas at *tirthas* 391; some *purāṇas* inculcate the performance of śrāddha on a profuse scale, particularly at *Gayā* 404-405; some *smṛtis* laid down very strict rules about the qualifications of brāhmaṇas for a ś. 399-400; some *smṛtis* recommend lavish expenditure on ś., *Bṛhaspati* requiring an heir to spend on ś. half the property inherited by him 404; some writers hold that in

agnaukarāṇa, piṇḍadānā and feeding of brāhmaṇas are all principal 482; some works lay great emphasis on inviting ascetics or yogins at ś. and say that a yogin is superior to a hundred brāhmaṇas 388; some works state that rites for pitṛs deserve pre-eminence over those for the gods 483-484; specific times most proper for performing ś. 371; spot chosen for ś. should be clean, should slope towards the south, should be cowdunged, covered on all sides and should be unfrequented and not owned by another person 377; śrāddhā is the mainspring or root of, 351; ś. may be separately offered to the mother in the Anvaṣṭakā rites, in Vṛddhiśrāddha, at Gayā and on the anniversary of the day of death, but in other cases it is performed along with her husband 475, 662; śrāddhādhikārin, general rule about, was that husband should not offer piṇḍa to his wife, nor father to his son, nor elder brother to younger one, but exceptions to this were recognized 364-365; substances and utensils proper for being used at śrāddha and those not proper 412-413; śuddhi (purity) should be specially secured in seven matters in ś. viz, the body (of the performer), the materials, the wife, the place (of performance), the mind, the mantras and the brāhmaṇas 413; sugar is sacred and may be employed in sacrifices to gods and manes 414; texts support both views, viz. that food is offered direct to the deceased ancestors in ś. and also that Vasus, Rudras and Ādityas are the pitṛs and devatās of ś. 339; three classes of, viz. *nitya*, *naimittika* and *kāmya* 369-370; three sanctifying things in ś. are *dauhitra*, a Nepal blanket and sesame 413; three views as to what is the principal item in ś., whether feeding of brāhmaṇas, or offering of

piṇḍas or both 481-482; tilas (sesame), great importance of, in ś. 418-419; times for performing ś. 360, 369-377; times on which ś. was obligatory (*nitya*) according to Viṣṇu Dh. S. 372; times proper for *kāmya* ś. are eclipses, days of solstice, equinoctial days, Vyatipāta, saṅkrānti and śrāddhas performed on them give infinite pleasure to pitṛs 372; times for which pitṛs are gratified by the offering of the flesh of several animals 422-424; tīrtha-śrāddha, see under Tīrtha; treated under five heads viz, how, where, when, by whom and with what materials 340; to whom should the sons of two fathers, such as kṣetraja, putrikāputra and dattaka offer piṇḍas 536-538; twelve kinds of, according to Viśvāmitra 381-382; two classes of, viz., *ekoddiṣṭa* and *pārvaṇa* 380; use of flesh in ś., great divergence of views on 422-425; use of plantain leaves as plates was allowed by some and forbidden by others 421; use of wealth obtained by bribery or from *patita* persons, or arising from bride-price or declared unlawful is condemned 412; Vaiśvadeva is to be performed before piṇḍadāna in such śrāddhas as Navaśrāddha and after piṇḍadāna in yearly śrāddha, in mahālaya acc to some, while Hemādri gives more elaborate rules depending upon whether the performer was an āhitāgni or one who had no śrauta fires 471-72, 484; variation in the names of Viśve-devas 457n; vedic benediction finely worded and comprehensive to be uttered by brāhmaṇas on accepting an invitation for ś. 409; vegetables, fruits and roots recommended and condemned for use in ś., 415-416; vessels of iron condemned for use in ś. 421; vessels of metals, particularly of silver, should be used in śrāddha, 420; vessels to be used in offering

arghya water, for cooking śrāddha food, for dining and for serving 419-421; vessels to be used in ś. may be made from sacrificial wood or from palāśa or from a sea product (conch-shell) 420; views differed as to whether mother included step-mother in Pārvaṇa 475; Viṣṇu is to be regarded as dwelling in the three piṇḍas for the father, grand-father and the great-grand-father 349, 351; Viśve-devas are generally mentioned in Manu and Yāj., but later smṛtis enumerated ten of them, two of them being assigned to each of five classes of śrāddhas 457; Vṛddhiśrāddha, meaning of, 359n, and it is same as Nāndiśrāddha 527; was offered to three immediate ancestors, father, grandfather, great-grandfather 365; water, quality of, to be employed in ś. 415; what food is of the nature of *havis* and fit for ś. 412; what men and women should engage in cooking ś food 462-466; when ś. is performed at a tīrtha the piṇḍas should be cast into the sacred water, otherwise they may be cast into fire or water or handed over to a brāhmaṇa or may be allowed to be eaten by a cow or goat 480-481; who are entitled to offer śrāddha (śrāddhādhikārin) 364-365; who are *lepabhājah* or *lepabhāginah* 483; who are the deities of ś., the three male ancestors or Vasus, Rudras and Ādityas 348; whoever took the wealth of the deceased had to offer śrāddha and piṇḍas to the deceased even under the Mitākṣarā system 364, 510; who should be invited for śrāddha dinner according to the grhya and dharma sūtras 384-385; who was the real recipient of the offerings made in śrāddha viz. the brāhmaṇas or pitṛs 460; women and sūdras should get ś. performed through a priest or they may them-

selves perform ś. without mantras but only mention the name and gotra of the deceased 365; word śrāddha does not occur in any authentic and ancient vedic work, but only in the Kathopanīṣad 349-50; worship of ṛtus (seasons) in ś. provided for in some digests 433n.

Śrāddhacandrikā of Divākara-bhaṭṭa 363

Śrāddhakalikā, 381n, 412, 459n

Śrāddhakalpa of Śrīdatta for sāmavedins 486

Śrāddhakalpalatā of Nandapaṇḍita, 334n, 336, 337, 371n, 381n, 382n, 387n, 398n, 403n, 409, 481, 483, 531n, 533, 535n, 540n, 541n

Śrāddhakārikā, 548n

Śrāddhakriyākaumudī, 266n, 334n, 376n, 380n, 407n, 408, 409n, 410n, 417n, 418n, 455n, 457n, 473n, 476n, 512, 514n, 518n, 519n, 520n, 523n, 524n, 531n, 532n, 546n, 547n, 548n

Śrāddhamayūkha, 544

Śrāddhaprakāśa, 261, 269n, 334, 343n, 349n, 350, 351n, 377n, 378, 379n, 386n, 388n, 389n, 391n, 398n, 399n, 401n, 408, 409, 410n, 411, 414n, 421, 457n, 458n, 460, 463, 467n, 471, 473n, 475n, 476n, 477n, 478n, 479, 529, 542, 544, 569n

Śrāddharatna of Lakṣmīpati 486, 535n

Śrāddhasaṅgraha, 459n

Śrāddhasāra 335n, 338n, 350, 471, 532, 533

Śrāddhasaukhyā (part of Toḍarānanda) 455n, 457n, 475, 476n

Śrāddhasūtra of Kātyāyana 352, 408, 409, 411, 419, 423, 424, 435n, 439, 442n, 466, 470, 472, 478, 486, 504, 516, 521, 525

Śrāddhatattva of Raghunandana 263, 336n, 351n, 352n, 370n, 380n, 406, 407n, 408, 409n, 445, 446n, 450n, 457n, 458, 464n, 475n, 476n, 479n, 486, 510, 516n, 520n, 527, 530n, 546n



Śrāddhaviveka of Rudradhara 334, 380n, 381, 396 (one of the longest lists of persons unfit to be invited at śrāddha), 406, 416, 486 (description of *apātraka* pārvanaśrāddha), 524n, 526n, 540n, 541, 545n, 548n
 Śridatta, author of *Pitr̥bhakti* 335n, 447n, 460, 486

Śrīsūkta, 444

Śrotriya, meaning of 384n

Srughna, modern Sugh on the old Jumnā about 40 miles from Thanesar 631n

St John, Gospel of, 174n

Stein, Sir Aurel, translator of the *Rājataranginī*, 725, 755, 759

Steya (theft), becomes mahāpātaka only when brāhmaṇa's gold of a certain quantity is stolen 22-23, 101; meaning of, acc. to Āp. 22; none in certain cases, even if one appropriates without owner's consent 23; of two kinds, viz. accompanied with force (such as robbery or dacoity) and effected clandestinely 101; prāyaścitta for theft of brāhmaṇa's gold weighing 80 raktikās or more was death for all offenders except brāhmaṇas 101; prāyaścitta for brāhmaṇa guilty of the mahāpātaka steya same as for surā of flour 101; prāyaścitta for, depended on various circumstances 101

Story, of Ajigarta, who agreed to slay his own son when famished 100; of Bharadvāja, who, when famished, accepted many cows from Bṛbu, a carpenter 100; of Ekata, Dvita and Trita, 11, 11n; of the birth of Yama and Yami from Vivasvat 198; of Indradyumna, 694-695; of Kavaṣa and Sarasvatī 558-559, 680; of Naciketas 384n; of Nimi who performed śrāddha for his predeceased son 364; of Paundraka Vāsudeva, who challenged Kṛṣṇa with the help of king of Kāśī 622; of Sagara's sons reduced to ashes by the wrath of Kapila 595;

of 'saptavyādhas' 445n; of Sunahṣepa 274; of ten Viśve-devas to be invoked in five classes of śrāddhas 457n; of Tulādhāra and Jājali 570; of Uṣasti Cākrāyana and his partaking of forbidden food 100, 681; of Vāmadeva, who desired to eat dog-flesh when famished 100; of Viśvāmitra, who proceeded to take the haunch of a dog from the hands of a Cāṇḍāla, 100; of Vyāsa, who, when on the point of cursing Kāśī, was ordered by Śiva who had assumed the form of an householder not to enter Kāśī except on the 8th and 14th tithis, 638-639

Strīparva 223

Sudarśana, commentator of Āp. gr̥ 472

Suddhi (re-conversion) modern movement of, for taking back those converted by force, fraud or otherwise, 118

Suddhi, see under 'āśauca', 'purity,' 'śauca'; āśauca most important subject under 267; comprehensive term including purification after āśauca, purification of a person after contact with an impure object or person or certain evil occurrences and purification of food, pots, wells, temples &c. after they are deemed to be polluted 267; emphasis on, laid as early as R̥gveda 310; is an attribute, acc. to Suddhiviveka, that confers a capacity or privilege for the performance of all dharmas 269; literature on, is very extensive 270; Manu divides it into two, viz. suddhi after death (pretasuddhi) and s. of things (dravyasuddhi) 267, 309; means of purification 315-316; of *dravya*, is of two kinds, viz. purification of the body and of an external object 309; one desirous of, should perform Pavitresī 312; smṛtis contain extremely contradictory dicta, particularly on periods of impurity, with the result that the



Mit. remarks that the usages in its day were altogether different from those in the smṛtis 270

Suddhicandrikā, com. on Saḍaśīti 270; by Vināyaka alias Nandapāṇḍita 273, 276n, 295n

Suddhikaumudī of Govindānanda 212n, 264n, 267, 269n, 270n, 273, 277, 296, 306, 313n, 317n, 318n, 322n, 323n, 324n, 326n, 328n, 332n

Suddhimayūkha of Nīlakaṇṭha 273

Suddhipañji, 296n

Suddhiprakāśa (part of Vīramitrodaya) 182, 183, 185n, 187n, 212n, 217, 218, 219n, 222n, 224, 225, 226n, 227, 229, 237, 262n, 263, 267n, 273, 275n, 278n, 282n, 284, 285n, 290n, 291n, 292n, 293n, 294n, 296, 299, 300n, 301, 304n, 311, 313n, 317n, 322n, 323n, 324n, 326, 327n, 330, 332n, 348, 540n, 541

Suddhiśrāddha 382

Suddhitattva of Raghunandana, 186n, 187n, 238, 256n, 265n, 273, 282, 290n, 295, 296n, 299, 306

Suddhiviveka of Rudradhara 269, 285, 306n, 319n

Sūdra, see under 'samskāras'; could drink any kind of intoxicant without incurring sin 21; could not drink pañcagavya in early times, though allowed to drink without mantras in medieval works 142; disability of a sūdra who does not wait upon or serve a dvija 50; how to perform *japa* for removal of sin 49; homa could be performed for, in ordinary fire through a brāhmaṇa, acc. to some digests 78; prāyaścitta for killing a crow, hamsa, dog or the like same as for killing a sūdra 110; prāyaścitta for, was only 1/4th of that for a brāhmaṇa sinner, except as to offences of violence against a dvija 81

Sūdrakamalākara 142, 364n, 477n

Sugatisopāna of Pratihastaka 486

Suicide, 604-613; see under 'satī'; Alberuni's remarks on religious s. 610; by starting on the Great Journey (mahāprasthānagamana) or by falling in fire or from a precipice forbidden in Kali age 302, 308; Dharmaśāstra writers generally condemn s. as a great sin 604; divergent views of Hārīta and Manu as to allowing s. as a prāyaścitta for grave sins like incest 604; every kind of s. was not condemned by the ancient smṛtis 525; exceptions to the condemnation of suicide are found in the epics, smṛtis and purāṇas 302, 525, 604-605; five meritorious kinds of suicide mentioned in Ain-i-Akbari 605n; gradually there was a revulsion of feeling against suicide at Prayāga or other tīrthas and against starting on the Great Journey in the Himālaya 608; great poets like Kālidāsa believed that those who killed themselves at Prayāga or Vāṭa became free from the cycle of births and deaths even though they had not correct knowledge of the Supreme Reality 605; historical examples of kings committing religious suicide at holy places 605; householder was allowed to commit s. even if all right, by fall, or fire or drowning if his life's work was done, or if he does not desire the pleasures of life and is a Vedāntin 604; important verse found in Vanaparva and some purāṇas relied upon for the approval of religious suicide at Prayāga 606; Kūrma-purāṇa recommends four modes of religious s. and promises residence in heaven for thousands of years 607; an old man or a man unable to observe rules of bodily purification or a man so ill as to be beyond medical skill was allowed by some smṛtis to kill himself by jumping from a



precipice or by fire or by drowning or fasting or jumping from Vāṭa tree at Prayāga 604; one who, knowingly or unknowingly, wilfully or unintentionally, dies in the Ganges, secures on death heaven and mokṣa (according to Padma) 607; psychology behind religious s. 611; religious suicide at Puruṣottama is referred to in Brahmapurāṇa 701; religious suicide was allowed at Prayāga, or at the Vāṭa there or at some other tīrthas 604, 608; some medieval digests allowed religious s. to all varṇas while Tīrthaprakāśa restricts it to members of castes other than the first 609; some smṛtis, the Mahābhārata and some Purāṇas do recommend religious s. at Prayāga and other holy places 607-608; some writers of medieval times combat the view that religious s. is permitted 608-609; Tristhalīsetu refuses authority to commit s. at Prayāga to any person abandoning his old parents, young wife and children and to women who are pregnant or have young children or have no permission from husband 609; wife was allowed to die on her husband's death by *sahagamana* or *anumarāṇa* 604

Śūlapāṇi 104n

Sumantu 18n, 80, 258, 350, 415, 616n

Surā, kṣatriyas and vaiśyas incurred no sin by drinking any intoxicant other than surā prepared from flour 97; meaning of, 20-21; sharply distinguished from Soma 20; śūdra incurred no sin by drinking even surā prepared from flour 97-98; uninitiated boys and unmarried girls had to undergo 1st prāyaścitta (i.e. 3 years) for drinking surā and, if intentionally done, for six years 98; word, occurs in the Rgveda 20

Suracāndrāyana 151

Surāpāṇa (drinking of surā) 20-22; a mahāpātaka, when 20; alternative

prāyaścitta for 96-97; forbidden to boys whose upanayana has not been performed and to unmarried girls 21; means taking surā down the gullet and not merely touching it with the lips 22; prāyaścitta for kṣatriya or vaiśya guilty of 97; twelve years' prāyaścitta for, is meant for one who drinks surā (from flour) through ignorance or force 97

Śūrasena, country, the capital of which was Mathurā 682n

Sureśvara, author of Kāśīmṛtimokṣavivāra 614

Suśruta 415n

Sūtaka, employed in the Ait. Br. 269; three meanings of, in smṛtis, viz. (1) impurity on birth, (2) impurity on death alone, (3) impurity on both birth and death 269

Suttanipāṭa 176, 550n, 707

Suvarṇa, meaning of 23, 129, 139n

Suvarṇakṛcchra 151

Suvāstu (modern Swat), a river mentioned in the Rgveda 534

Svarga, actions that lead to, enumerated in Anuśāsanaparva 166; ancient astronomical works located svarga thousands of yojanas above earth 168; description of the pleasures of 165-166; definition of svarga in an oft-quoted verse 169-170; great drawback is that no new merit is accumulated there and that when the store of merit is exhausted one has to fall down from heaven and to be born again 166; is a place for those who die in battle 165; is not directly seen by any one, but one has to believe in its existence 170; means unsurpassed joy in another life, according to Śabara, Kumārila and a few others 169; varying views about what is meant by 168-170; Vedas, smṛtis and purāṇas hold view that s. is a place above the earth 168

Svargārohanika-parva 164



- Sven Hedin 760
 Sviṣṭakṛt 357n
 Syrians, customs of, about impurity on death 309
Tabus (or taboos), most important in all ancient and modern primitive societies are those concerning the dead, women in child-birth and women in monthly illness 309
 Tagore 552n
 Taittirīya Āraṇyaka 43, 45n, 112, 113, 146, 155, 184n, 191n, 200n, 211, 212, 227n, 230, 242, 245n, 246, 252, 304, 369, 384n, 441, 469n, 488, 496n, 540, 543, 681, 736, 768
 Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa 11, 37n, 38, 40, 62n, 69, 122, 133, 137, 157, 184n, 189n, 230, 254, 266, 275, 329, 342, 343, 345, 365, 384n, 394n, 409n, 426n, 427, 428, 433, 434n, 446n, 462n, 472, 543, 680
 Taittirīya-Prātiśākhya 45
 Taittirīya-saṃhitā 10, 20, 37, 43n, 44n, 45n, 46n, 48, 52, 57, 62n, 63, 69, 110n, 124n, 133, 145, 155n, 157, 159, 160, 168n, 197n, 201, 229, 230, 266, 309, 345, 347n, 348, 352, 353, 365, 384, 409n, 419, 426, 428n, 433, 435n, 439, 441, 442, 444, 447, 450n, 452, 460, 466n, 468, 472, 476, 477n, 497n, 499n, 539n, 540, 543, 546, 550n, 554, 555, 593n, 607n
 Taittirīya-Upaniṣad 8, 158, 614
 Tāṇḍya-brāhmaṇa, 62n, 69, 557, 768
 Tantra, meaning of, 440n
 Tantravārtika, 20n, 387n, 453n, 687n
 Tapas, see *fast*; as a means of removing consequences of sins 42-43; means 'niyamas' (restraint or strict observances) 400n; periods for which it is to be practised 43; what constitutes 42, 54
 Taptakṛcchra, expiation for brāhmaṇas for selling things and animals that should not be sold by them 117; great divergence of views about 138-139
 Tāraka, mantra variously explained as *om* or the mantra 'Śrī-Rāma-Rāma-Rāmeti' 613n, 614, 635
 Tarpaṇa (satiating with water) 120, 133; if one cannot perform an elaborate t., one may offer three handfuls of water with sesame and kuśas and the three mantras from Vāyupurāṇa 120, 592n; is either principal or subsidiary (aṅga), the first being performed every day by a dvija householder for gods, sages and pitṛs and the second as part of snāna or of brahmayajña 592n; sannyāsin has not to do it but a widow has to perform it for her husband and his relatives 592n; must be done, even if day be not auspicious, at a tīrtha, in Gayā, in the dark half of Bhādrapada with water mixed with sesame 592n; one whose father is living has not to perform tarpaṇa 592n; was called pitṛyajña by Manu 369; water is poured with both hands in t. 592n
 Tattvārthakaumudī, com. on Prāyaścitta-viveka 266n
 Tātparyadarsana, com. on Āp. gr 354n
 Taulvali, views of, on śrāddha 511
 Teacher, a brāhmaṇa who is t. for hire or who is taught by a hired t., or whose teacher is a śūdra is unfit to be invited at a śrāddha 393
 Temples, see under 'polluted', 'purification,' 'purity'; are holy 560; throwing open of, to all people held to be untouchable, by Legislative action in Bombay and C. P. 320-321
 Text, nothing too heavy for a text 66n
 Theft, see 'stea'; punishment for, was death in some cases 69; misappropriation of deposit was like t. and misappropriator was punished as a thief and had to return deposit or its price 72; person guilty of had to restore thing stolen or its



- price 74, 102; person guilty of, approached king with club 73, 101; *prāyaścitta* for, was to be double if the thief could not restore thing stolen or its price 102; *prāyaścitta* and punishment for, were same in some cases 73-74
- Thomas, Dr. F. W., editor of *Bārhaspatya-sūtra* 679; volume of Indian and Eastern studies presented to, 648n
- Tilas, four kinds of, 419; great importance of the use of, in *śrāddha* 418-419; supposed to have sprung from body of Viṣṇu 419
- Tilak, author of 'Arctic Home in the Vedas' 192n; far-fetched explanation of Navagvas and Daśagvas by, 192n
- Time, for any religious act is of two kinds, *mukhya* (principal or proper) and *gauna* (inferior) 377; in conflict between proper time for a religious act and the complete means or materials for it the former should be preferred 377
- Tīrthacintāmaṇi of Vācaspati, 563n, 566n, 567n, 568, 570, 572n, 573n, 574, 576, 577n, 579, 582, 584, 586n, 587n, 588n, 589n, 590n, 595, 596n, 601n, 602, 609, 616n, 628n, 629, 631n, 633n, 648n, 652n, 662n, 667n, 668n, 672-673n, 674n, 675n, 699n, 700, 701n
- Tīrthakalpataru of Lakṣmīdhara, 561n, 562n, 563n, 565, 566n, 567n, 570n, 572n, 573, 575, 577n, 578n, 579, 582, 584, 587n, 589n, 599, 601, 607n, 608, 613n, 616n, 629n, 630n, 637 (takes no notice of Pañcakrośī pilgrimage at Kāśī), 639n, 641n, 651, 653n, 668n, 683n, 684n, 685n
- Tīrtha-prakāśa, 10, 560n, 561n, 562n, 565n, 567, 568, 569n, 570, 572n, 573n, 574, 575, 576, 577, 578n, 579, 582, 595, 596n, 601, 609n, 612, 627n, 628n, 633, 655n, 662n, 683, 684n
- Tīrtharatnākara of Anantabhaṭṭa, probably the largest work on tīrthas, is yet in Ms. at Bikaner, 582
- Tīrthas, forests, mountains, holy rivers and t. have no owner and cannot be possessed by a person as owner 590; do not occupy a prominent place in the sūtras, in Manu and Yāj., but are highly lauded in Mahābhārata and Purāṇas and declared superior to sacrifices in several respects 561-562; Literature on t., is far more extensive than on any other topic of Dharmaśāstra 581-582
- Tīrthasāra (part of Nṛsimhaprasāda) deals mostly with tīrthas in the Deccan and Southern India, 565, 582, 707, 717n, 718
- Tīrthasaukhyā, part of Toḍarānanda, 582
- Tīrthatattva of Raghunandana 582
- Tīrthenduśekhara of Nāgeśa, 575, 582
- Tīrthayātrā (pilgrimage to holy places) 552-722; see 'Gayā', 'tīrtha', 'woman', 'tonsure'; advantages of t. to the community and to the individual pilgrim 553; all religions lay great emphasis on the sanctity of certain places and enjoin pilgrimages to them 552; ancient Dharmaśāstra works lay emphasis on visits to tīrtha because of the benefits derived therefrom 553; as a means of removing the consequences of sins, 55-56; brāhmaṇa born and bred at a tīrtha like Mathurā or Gayā should be preferred to a stranger, though the latter may have mastered all the Vedas 579; brāhmaṇa should wander about tīrthas acc. to Brahmapurāṇa after his capacity to perform yajñas has come to an end 570; classification of tīrthas into four, *vaiśvadeva*, (established by gods), *asura* (associated with asuras like Gayā), *ārṣa* (established by sages such as Prabhāsa) and Mānuṣa (established by kings like Manu, Bṛhadratha, 567;

dharmas common to all men include truthfulness, restraint of mind, charity, ahimsā and t. 553-554; digests on tīrthas follow a process of selection, i. e. each describes only a few tīrthas known to it 565; digests have a tendency to make every religious act more elaborate and harder 573; fast at a tīrtha is optional according to Kalpataru but if observed it confers special rewards 473, 584; five classes of people do not reap the rewards of pilgrimage 563; four places of pilgrimage for Buddhists 552; fourteen acts which a pilgrim had to give up after reaching the Ganges or other tīrtha 578; held superior to Vedic sacrifices in several respects by the Mahābhārata and Purāṇas 561-562; honouring the pitṛs at the time of starting on t. is specially obligatory on rich men 574; house-holder whose wife is chaste must go on a pilgrimage with her, otherwise he would not reap the fruit of t. 568; idea in the Mahābhārata and some Purāṇas was that t. may help those who have no high moral qualities in removing their sins while those that possess moral qualities gain a great store of merit by t. 562-563; kārpati-veśa on t. 573; large rivers, mountains and forests have always been venerated in India as sacred and as the abodes of gods 552; literature on, is more extensive than on any other single topic of Dharmaśāstra 580-582; Mahābhārata lays the greatest emphasis on the cultivation of high moral and spiritual qualities if the full reward of t, is to be reaped 562; Mahābhārata and some purāṇas emphasize that a pure mind is the real tīrtha and that it is better to stay at home and perform one's duties including performance of vedic sacrifices than undertaking t.

570; Mahābhārata and Purāṇas contain at least 40000 verses on t. 582; meaning of tīrtha in the R̥gveda and other vedas is either 'road' or 'ford' and rarely a holy place 554; meaning of tīrtha in this section 555; meaning of tīrtha is sometimes extended to places where Agnihotra and śrāddha are performed, to temples, to house where Veda is being studied, to cowpens, parks, where an aśvattha tree exists, where a teacher stands or a chaste woman dwells 564; mode of travel, use of conveyances, horses, bullock carts, wearing of shoes, rules about these in Purāṇas and digests 576-577; mundaṇa and kṣaura distinguished 575; not only men of all varṇas but also women and even cāṇḍālas have adhikāra for t. 567-568; number of tīrthas declared by Vāyu, according to Matsya, Padma, Nāradiya and other Purāṇas, is 35 millions in the sky, the aerial regions and the earth 564; number of tīrthas, acc. to Varāhapurāṇa, is 60 thousand crores 564n; one should not enter upon an examination of the worth of brāhmaṇas at a tīrtha 578-579; one who wants to undertake t. should pay off his three debts, should provide means of maintenance for his sons and consign his wife to their care 571; rewards promised for baths at tīrthas 727; rites to be performed when a person undertakes a t. 572-73, 583; rivers in general, certain named rivers and waters are referred to with great veneration as early as R̥gveda 555; sacred places for Moslems 552; sankalpa to be made at starting on t. 577; Shah Jehan, emperor, remitted the tax levied on pilgrims at Prayāga and Kāśī owing to eloquent pleading of Kavindra cārya 571; six rivers having their sources in the Himālaya and six to the south of Vindhya are declared



to be most holy devatīrthas by Brahmapurāṇa 567; some digests state that a pilgrim has to wear the *kārpāṭi* dress at all tīrthas when he is actually travelling, while others say that he has to do so only at Gayā 573; some purāṇas say that some virtues may be called mental tīrthas and purity of mind is the highest tīrtha 563; some say that tonsure and fast are necessary at all tīrthas except at Kurukṣetra, Viśālā, Virajā and Gayā 574; śrāddha has to be performed at most famous tīrthas, but from the procedure of śrāddha are omitted arghya, āvāhana, entering the thumb of the invited brāhmaṇa in the food served, the question about being satiated and vikira 616; śrāddha may be performed at any time after a pilgrim reaches the tīrtha 616; śrāddha at tīrthas consists, if the whole procedure cannot be followed, in offering piṇḍas of barley meal or rice cooked in milk, cake of sesame or jaggery and one should offer a single piṇḍa to all relatives after pārvaṇaśrāddha and another piṇḍa for servants, slaves, cattle, trees etc. 616-617; tended to foster the idea of the fundamental unity of India and Indian culture 553; tended to level up all men by bringing them together to the same holy rivers and shrines 553; three grounds on which tīrthas are said to be holy 554-555; tonsure and fast are not obligatory but only kāmya according to Kalpataru but otherwise according to others 573-575; t., sacrifices and various gifts are the means of cleansing the mind 563; t. yields full fruit only if performed bare-footed 576; t. yields fruit to men of all varṇas and āśramas 563; use of bullock-cart condemned in Matsya-purāṇa as leading to hell and of other conveyances (not drawn by

bulls) as fruitless, but Kūrma recommends to those who are unable to walk conveyances drawn by mules, horses or men 576; use of a conveyance is according to Kalpataru condemned only in pilgrimage to Prayāga 576; use of a vessel allowed 577; view that the institution of t. was first started by Buddhists and Jains is wrong 558; was deemed very early to be a way of redemption of sins for men and women 569; was favoured by writers on Dharmaśāstra by prescribing that no money was to be demanded by a ferryman or a toll officer from a pilgrim, from a pregnant woman, from a vedic student, forest hermit or ascetic, but this was not followed even by Hindu kings 571; whether tonsure at the time of starting on a pilgrimage is obligatory 573; who are eligible for or have adhikāra for t. 567-571; widows, ascetics and śūdras have to cut all hair on pilgrimage 575; women could not undertake t. without husband's permission 569; works on, repel by their over-statements and exaggerations, when they state that pilgrimage to a particular tīrtha will yield all one's desires in this world and the next, that even gods secured perfection at Puṣkara, that Pṛthūdaka is the holiest of tīrthas etc. 565-566

Tīrthayātrātattva, of Raghunandana (published in Bengali characters) 669n, 670, 673n, 674n

Toḍarānanda, 59, 376n (on śrāddha), 382n, 398n, 408n, 417n, 457n, 461n, 462, 475, 476n, 484n, 582

Tolappār, followed by Maṇḍana Vaisnavas on śrāddha, 486

Tonsure (vapana or muṇḍana) made under Prayāga; Āp.Dh.S. provides that all sapīṇḍas younger than the deceased had to undergo tonsure 218, differ-

ence between muṇḍana and kṣaura 575; differed according to extent of expiation 123; forbidden in the case of one whose wife was pregnant 122-123; in prāyaścittas, 122-124; in case of married women whose husbands were alive was restricted to cutting off two finger-breadths of hair 123, 574, 575; may take place on 2nd, 3rd or other day up till śrāddha on 11th day after death 217; mode of, in daiva form declared in Tai. Br. 122; mode of daiva t. prescribed for ādhāna, iṣṭi and soma sacrifices 122; necessary because sins were supposed to resort to the hair of those that became pilgrims 574; not insisted upon in expiations for king, prince or learned brāhmaṇas, but then they had to undergo double the usual penance 123; no tonsure in cāndrāyana performed solely for accumulating merit 135; no tonsure if cremation took place at night 217; none at Gayā 669; occasions when t. should be undergone 122, 574; of performer of cremation rites 217; three kinds of, āsura, daiva and mānuṣa, of which only the last two are allowed 122; religious occasions for tonsure 573-575; restricted to hair on the head and lips generally (the top knot, hair on eyebrows and on the trunk being excepted) but in expiations the exception was not enforced 122-123; seven cases where t. is obligatory 217, 574; unnecessary acc. to some, in expiations other than cāndrāyana 124; whether obligatory when starting on a pilgrimage 573-74; widows, śūdras, and ascetics had to submit to t. of all hair in prāyaścitta and tīrthayātrā 123, 575

Touching, prāyaścitta for t. certain men, women in certain conditions, animals &c 114; included indirect touching also for purposes of prāya-

ścitta 114; t. cāṇḍālas, mleccas, bhīllas and Pārasīkas, entails a bath with clothes on 114; t. Bauddhas, Pāsupatas, Laukāyatikas and atheists required expiation by bath with clothes on 115; t. shoemaker, washerman, fisherman, hunter, dog, naṭa and several others requires sipping water as purification 115

Toyakṛcchra (also called Varuṇakṛcchra), a prāyaścitta, described 140.

Traikakuda, a peak of the Himālaya, from which an eye salve was brought 559

Trikāṇḍamaṇḍana, 226, 311, 377, 399n

Trimadhu, 384, 449n,

Trimśat-śloki 255n, 273, 276n, 281n, 286n, 290, 292, 300; com. on, by Raghunātha 273, 285n, 286n, 296n

Trita, see 'Ekata'

Triṇāciketab, explanations of 384n

Triśaṅku, boundaries of the country of 378-379

Tristhalī, means the three holy places of Prayāga, Kāśī and Gayā 596

Tristhalīsetu of Nārāyaṇabhaṭṭa 365n, 405, 565, 577, 582, 596, 598, 599, 600n, 601n, 602, 603, 607n, 609, 613n, 614, 615n, 617, 624n, 625n, 626n, 627n, 628n, 631n, 632, 633, 635, 638, 639n, 640n, 648n, 652n, 654n, 655n, 657n, 661, 662n, 663n, 666, 667, 668n, 669, 670, 673n, 676n, 677n

Tristhalīsetusārasaṅgraha, 568n, 582, 609n, 616n

Trisuparṇa, explanations of 384n, 449n

Tulāpuruṣa, an expiation 139

Tulasī, leaves should be avoided in śrāddha acc. to Smṛtyarthasāra, but others allow them 416-417

Tup-ṭikā of Kumārila on Jaimini's Pūrvamīmāṃsāsūtra 169

Turuṣka (Turk), treated as low cāṇḍāla 115



- Turuṣka-daṇḍa, means, in Gāhādvala inscriptions, money levies imposed by Moslem rulers and raiders 572n
- Tylor, author of 'Primitive culture' 585
- Uddālaka-vrata, described 111; expiation for vrātyatā 111
- Udyogaparva, 704n, 707
- Ūha, substituting another word or words in place of a part of a mantra or the like 514-515, 517
- Untouchability, no question of, arises when bathing in holy waters, in marriages, in religious festivals, in a battle, in case of invasion, when a town or village is on fire 569-570
- Untouchables, no purification required even for dvijas for touch of, on certain occasions such as battle, fire, religious festivals and marriage processions 115, 332
- Unvala, Dr. J. M. 118
- Upacāra, meaning of, 489; 5 and 16 upacāras in worship 583n, 676
- Upahavya, a sacrifice 63n
- Upaniṣad texts, *jaṭa* of, as purifier from sins 45; repeating or uttering into the ear of a dying man Up. texts 185; speak of the soul proceeding by the path of *arcis*, day, etc, 265
- Upapātakas, derivation of word upapātaka 35; expiation for all u. is same as for *govadha* or it is Cāndrāyana, Parāka, Gosava or subsisting on milk for a month 107; fifty-one u. enumerated by Yāj. set out 33-34; *govadha* stands at the head of all u. 107; if a brāhmaṇa killed a kṣatriya, vaiśya or śūdra, it was an upapātaka, unless the kṣatriya or vaiśya was engaged in soma sacrifice 95; if repeatedly committed, make a man patita 35; number of, varies from smṛti to smṛti and from time to time and was very large 32, 106; purification for, by repeating Veda thrice while fasting 107; what are u. acc. to Baud. Dh. S. 14
- Upavāsa (fasting), as a means of removing sins 52-54; meaning of, 52
- Upavītin, meaning of, 487n
- Usages, of countries, marrying a maternal uncle's daughter prevalent in Deccan and Southern India but condemned by Manu and Baudhāyana 82; to be considered in giving decisions 82
- Uśanas, smṛti of, see Auśanasa smṛti; 323n, 409, 470n, 519n, 521, 524n
- Usurer, a brāhmaṇa who is u. is unfit to be invited at śrāddha 393
- Utpala, commentator of the works of Varāhamihira 168
- Uttarādhyanasūtra 43, 165, 445n (story of seven brothers), 646, 687
- Uttararāmacarita 601
- Uttarāyana, those who die in, proceed by the Devayāna and do not return 188; waiting for, on the part of Bhīṣma explained 188-189
- Utthāpinyah, verses 200n, 242
- Uvaṭa, commentator of Vājasaneyasaṃhitā 433n
- Vācaspati, on dharmasāstra 282n, 575; author of bhāṣya on Yogasūtra 22, 50n (different from preceding)
- Vācaspati, author of Candanadhenu-dāna 542n
- Vaidhṛti-yogas, 13 in a year, 383n
- Vaidya, Mr. M. V. 648n
- Vaidya, Dr. P. L. 176n
- Vaidikasārvabhauma's works on *pūrva* and *āpara* kriyās, followed by Vaiṣṇavas in Madras 486
- Vaijayantī, com. on Satyāsādha-śrautasūtra 265n, 253n, 254; com. on Viṣṇudharmasūtra
- Vaikhānasa-smārtasūtra 112n, 223, 225, 227, 231, 240, 241, 304, 355, 474, 491n
- Vaikhānasa-śrautasūtra 57n, 191n, 233, 365n
- Vaiṣṇavāmṛta, a work 187n
- Vaiṣṇavī ṛk is Rg. 1. 22. 17 (adam Viṣṇu-vi-cakrame), 466n



- Vaiṣṇavī yajus is Tai S. I. I. 3.1 (Viṣṇo havyam rakṣasva), 466n
- Vājasaheya-samhitā 20, 37n, 38, 43-44, 46n, 48, 57, 69, 124n, 137, 138, 146, 155, 182, 197n, 209-211, 229, 240, 248-251, 296, 298n, 300n, 306, 317, 346, 348, 352, 357n, 384, 409n, 419, 426n, 427n, 429, 430, 432, 433, 435n, 439, 441, 442, 443n, 444, 447, 449, 450n, 452, 460, 464, 466n, 468, 472, 477n, 479, 480, 486, 497n, 498, 502, 505, 506, 507, 508, 509, 515, 522, 540, 543, 546, 554, 557, 559n, 606
- Vaiśvadeva 144
- Vaitaraṇī, river in the nether world, full of foul smell and blood 163n
- Vajra, a prāyaścitta 149
- Vajrapañjara, a Durgāstotra in Kāśī-khaṇḍa 638
- Vākyabheda, fault of 226
- Vāmadevyagāna 307
- Vāmadevya verses 307
- Vāmanapurāṇa 240, 296, 298n, 302n, 306, 317, 324n, 325, 535n, 556n, 560n, 564 (fine rūpaka about the soul being a river full of the water of control), 565n, 566n, 568, 625n, 626, 655n, 659, 682, 683, 684, 685, 686, 704n, 712; chapter 12 of, is called Karmavipākā 177
- Vanaparva 165, 166, 310, 371n, 559n, 561, 562, 565, 567, 582, 589n, 595, 598, 601, 603n, 606n, 608, 614, 629, 647, 649, 651, 653, 682, 685, 704, 707
- Vānaprastha (forest hermit), has to observe no āśauca on a relative's death (except bath) 298; no āśauca for relatives on death of 305; three daily baths prescribed for 311
- Vapana, see 'tonsure'
- Varāha (coin) was equal to five rūpakas 151
- Varāhapurāṇa, 160, 212, 348, 360, 371, 374, 385, 387, 388, 392, 396, 399, 401, 405, 409, 425, 445, 448, 456, 458, 460, 463, 473, 480, 482, 483, 484, 564n, 579, 582, 587, 589, 594n, 666n, 690, 691, 708, 711
- Varāhamihira (see Bṛhat-samhitā) 168, 376n
- Vārāṇasī, see under Kāśī
- Varāṇikā (cowrie) 129
- Vārka-khaṇḍi 354
- Vārtikas, on Pāṇini 354n, 619, 687, 703, 707, 745
- Varuṇa, as lord of waters even in the Rgveda 140; called king in the Rgveda 193
- Varuṇakṛcchra, a prāyaścitta 140
- Varuṇapraghāsa, one of the cāturmās-yas 37-38; was a rite in which the sacrificer's wife had to confess directly or indirectly whether she had a lover 40
- Vasiṣṭhadharmasūtra, 13, 14, 16, 18, 21, 22n, 23, 25, 32, 35, 40, 42, 44, 46n, 47, 48, 51, 54, 61, 62n, 68, 72, 73n, 74, 75, 77, 83, 88, 91, 93, 95, 96, 97, 99, 103-107, 110-112, 121, 122, 125, 128, 130, 135, 138, 142, 145, 150, 172n, 174, 175, 214, 218, 219, 223, 239, 258n, 281, 297n, 314n, 315, 316n, 317, 325, 327, 360, 365, 366, 368, 370, 392, 394n, 398, 401, 403, 410, 411n, 413, 423, 425, 435n, 440, 454, 464n, 467, 468, 524, 536n, 560, 606, 653
- Vasus, are eight 490
- Vāyupurāṇa, 181, 339, 343n, 344, 345n, 348, 349, 364, 368n, 372, 373n, 374, 378, 380, 385, 388n, 390, 392, 395n, 396n, 397, 399, 404, 405, 411, 412, 414-416, 417n, 418-420, 423, 446n, 449n, 458, 464, 479, 481, 484n, 519n, 539n, 541n, 545, 550n, 560, 563, 566n, 573, 579, 590n, 592n, 607n, 617, 620, 622, 644, 649-651, 653-656, 660, 661, 662, 668-676, 683, 688, 689, 704, 708n
- Vāyavya-kṛcchra, 150
- Vedāṅgas, six 386
- Vedāntasūtra, 20n, 53n, 66n, 67, 68, 100, 158, 161, 165, 186n, 188, 189, 265, 344, 481n, 613

- Vedānta texts, japa of, as purifier from sin 45-46
- Vedas, japa of the saṃhitās of all, as purifier from sin 45-46, 128; japa of single verses or prose passages of, efficacious to remove sins, acc. to some smṛtis 48; study of, consumes all guilt 47; views differ as to stopping of Veda study and performance of śrauta rites by relatives during days of impurity 240, 300
- Vedīs, five, of Brahmā are Samantapañcaka (northern), Prayāga (middle), Gayāśīras (eastern), Virajā (southern) and Puṣkara (western) 682n
- Vendidad (Parsi scriptures) 192n, 231n
- Vidyāpati, author of or helper of the author, queen Viśvāsadevī, of Gaṅgā-vākyāvalī 583n
- Vidyānivāsa, author of Dvādaśyātrā-prayogapramāṇa 697n
- Vidyāsūkta, 444
- Vijñāneśvara, author of Mitākṣarā 129, 368
- ✓Vinaśana, place where river Sarasvatī disappeared in the sands, was holy 682, 684
- Vināyaka-sānti 178
- Viraja or Virajā 574n
- Virajākṣetra, extends a little beyond Jajpur in Orissa 694n
- Vīrāsana, a posture 148
- Viśālā, is Ujjayanī or Badarikā 574
- Viśamaśrāddhas 263
- Viṣṇu 544, 574; explanation of the Rgveda verse stating that V. took three steps 645; repeating one thousand names of, as a means of driving away a disease 178; repeating one thousand names of Viṣṇu in the ear of one dying 185n
- Viṣṇudharmasūtra; the commentator states that it is the Kāthakiyaśrāddhaprayoga that the sūtra sets out in chap. 73, 461n; some verses of, are the same as Bhagavad-gītā 236n; 9n, 15, 16, 19, 25, 27n, 30-32, 35, 40-42, 46n, 47, 48, 51, 53, 55, 66, 70, 72, 74, 75, 79n, 83, 84, 88, 96, 99, 101, 102, 104, 107, 110, 111, 116, 118, 119, 121n, 125, 126, 128, 130, 131, 133-143, 144n, 145, 147-151, 153, 154, 161, 162, 164, 166, 173, 174, 214, 218, 219n, 220, 227, 236, 238, 240, 241, 243, 244, 256, 257, 258n, 271, 278, 281, 287, 288, 290, 291, 292, 297n, 298, 300, 303, 306, 311, 312, 314-317, 321, 323-331, 339, 340, 348, 358, 360, 364, 365, 366, 372, 375, 378, 380, 386, 388, 390, 392, 401, 414, 416, 418, 420, 421, 423, 424, 447, 450n, 460, 463, 464n, 466-469, 470, 472, 477, 479, 482, 483, 497n, 512, 517, 519, 521, 523, 533, 539, 560n, 571, 646, 653
- Viṣṇudharmottara-purāṇa 47, 76n, 117, 131, 140, 141, 149, 150, 153, 164, 177, 265, 344, 349, 350, 378n, 397, 411, 418, 422n, 423, 441n, 447, 448, 452, 453, 458n, 459, 461, 463, 466, 480, 481, 482, 521, 528, 539n, 540n, 541n, 553n, 561n, 563, 576n, 578
- Viṣṇupada, hill of this name existed near Delhi at Meharauli 646n; occurs in the Nirukta and Viṣṇudharmasūtra 645, 653; south of river Vipāśā 647n
- Viṣṇupurāṇa, 41, 50, 51, 84n, 122, 153, 162, 163, 168, 170, 216, 234, 238n, 239n, 241, 256, 261, 296, 302, 349, 350, 353, 368, 372, 374, 380, 387, 392, 395, 396n, 403, 404, 405n, 409, 413n, 414, 415, 419, 423, 425, 440n, 443, 448, 460n, 473, 482, 516, 520, 521, 528, 534, 576, 587, 595, 622, 623, 641n, 659, 682n, 688, 689, 690, 691, 705
- Viśvajit, a vedic sacrifice, as prāyaścitta for brāhmaṇa murder 91, 92n
- Viśvāmitra, smṛti of 23, 105, 108
- Viśvarūpa, commentator of Viṣṇuvalkya-smṛti, 10, 18, 19n, 23, 32, 33, 35, 66n, 75n, 90, 107n, 108n, 111n,

- 161n, 225n, 274n, 313n, 316n, 321, 324n, 330n, 336, 371n
- Viṭṭhalabbhūṣaṇa of Gopālācāryā 717-718
- Viṭṭhala-rñ-mantra-sāra-bhāṣya of Kāśīnātha Upādhyāya 721
- Vivādaratnākara, 69, 109n
- Vivāgasuyam (Vipāka-śrutam) 176
- Vivasvat, marriage of, with daughter of Tvaṣṭi 198; Yama and Yamī are children of, 198
- Vrata, three ways of observing v. on Darśa-pūrṇamāsa iṣṭi 52
- Vratodyāpana, description of, at time of a man's death 183-184
- Vrātya, is one whose *upanayana* has not been performed at proper time 111; prāyaścitta for being a, 111-112
- Vrātyastoma, a Vedic sacrifice 62; prescribed in the case of him whose *upanayana* was not performed at the proper time 62n; used for bringing into *āryan* fold persons not born into it 118
- Vṛddha-Atri 292n
- Vṛddha-Bṛhaspati 25n
- Vṛddha-Gautama 112n, 137, 174, 386, 389, 392
- Vṛddha-Hārīta 15, 32, 36, 65n, 75, 123, 164, 216, 225, 226, 304, 575
- Vṛddha-or Vṛddhi-kṛcchra 150
- Vṛddha-Maṇu 222n, 285n, 371n, 390, 532
- Vṛddha-Parāśara 113, 503n
- Vṛddha-Śātātapa 441n
- Vṛddha-Vasiṣṭha 263, 383, 372, 470, 529, 547
- Vṛddha-Viṣṇu 80
- Vṛddha-Yājñavalkya 114n, 210n, 302, 509n 525
- Vṛddhiśrāddha-see Nāndimukha-śrāddha; mātṛśrāddha is a part of it and if a sufficient number of brāhmaṇas is not available then women who have a son and whose husbands are alive may be invited for groups of mātṛs and mātāmahīs 529
- Vulliamy, C. E., author of 'Immortal man' 180, 232n, 342n, 347n
- Vṛṣotsarga (letting loose a bull) 539-542; if a bull be not available on 11th day after death an effigy of a bull made of darbhas and flour or clay may be employed 541; great importance of, 541; none for a woman, but a cow together with its calf may be donated for her benefit 542; procedure of Viṣṇudharmottara closely follows that of Viṣṇudharmasūtra 541n; procedure of, according to Viṣṇudharmasūtra 539-541; qualities of the bull to be let loose for the benefit of pitṛs 539-540; underlying idea of this rite 542
- Vyāghra 59n, 75, 517, 520
- Vyāghrapāda 477n
- Vyāhṛtiḥoma, should be of 28 or 108 oblations 121
- Vyāhṛtis (mystic syllables 'bhūr, bhuvaḥ, svaḥ') 121, 490
- Vyāsa 22, 28, 54, 80, 83n, 105n, 106, 187n, 369n, 469, 514, 520, 546
- Vyāsakṛcchra, same as Maitrakṛcchra 150
- Vyatipāta, defined 171n; thirteen v. yogas in a year 383n
- Vyavahāracintāmaṇi 119n
- Vyavahāramayūkha 257n, 280, 535n, 538n, 569
- Vyavahāranirṇaya 280n
- Water, all deities are centred in waters 553; at a prapā or from a jar placed near a well or from a leather bag, should not ordinarily be drunk except in distress 325; difference of opinion as to the number of handfuls of water to be offered after cremation, viz. 10, 55 or 100, 218-219; duty of sapinḍas and samānodakas to offer water to deceased 221; held to be a great purifier even so early as the Ṛgveda 321; hymns and verses in the Ṛgveda addressed to waters as divinities 321, 555; invoked for carrying off sin 7, 555

mixed with gold over which the Gāyatrī verse had been recited employed as purification of cooked food 328; no pollution recognized in large reservoirs 324; number of handfuls of water to be offered to deceased depended upon the usage of the country or on caste 219; offered to a deceased person after cremation by any or all sapinda 218-220; of a flowing river, spring and deep tank is always pure 322-323; w. and mud on roads, though trodden by low castes, dogs and crows become pure by the wind and sun 323-324; person could, if he chose, offer water to his deceased married sister or daughter or to a friend, to father-in-law on their death 221; procedure of offering water to deceased 219; purification of 322-323; purification of, is brought about by the sun, moon and wind and by means of the urine and dung of cows 324; rain water deemed to be impure for ten days 324; symbolic dialogue between person offering water to deceased and that person's relatives or brother-in-law or with a king's officer, 221-222; should be sipped or touched when a man engaged in religious rites hears a mantra addressed to pitṛs, scratches his body, looks at a low caste man, or allows wind to escape from his abdomen, laughs loudly or utters an untruth, touches a cat or a mouse, uses harsh words or has a fit of anger 321; what water is deemed to be pure 322-23

Well, purification of static water in wells and small reservoirs is same 324; when a well or a reservoir with a dam is constructed by men of the lowest class no prāyaścitta is prescribed for bathing or for drinking that water 3-4; when deemed to be extremely polluted 323

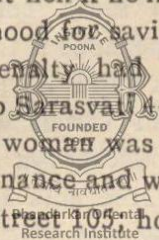
Wife, see under pativrata; even a kṣatriya wife of a brāhmaṇa āhitāgni, if she died before him, was to be cremated with his sacred fires, acc. to Viśvarūpa 226; husband had to observe a brief āśauca on the death of a wife who had left him or had intercourse with another of the same or higher varṇa, but had to observe no āśauca if she lived with one of lower varṇa 290; of āhitāgni was cremated with his sacred fires and sacrificial implements if she died before him 225; of āhitāgni dying after him was to be cremated with *nirmanthya* fire 226; of brāhmaṇa, even of the śūdra caste, was not to drink surā 22; of dvija was forbidden the drinking of surā 21; of deceased dvija was made to lie on the wooden pile in cremation ground and then made to get up, acc. to sūtras 207; of sacrificer in Varuṇapraghāsa had to confess whether she had a lover 37-38, 40; virtuous w. alone was cremated with śrauta or smārta fire 226; was given only two alternatives by Viṣṇudharma-sūtra and others on husband's death, viz. becoming a *satī* or leading a life of perfect celibacy 256; was authorised to perform funeral rites and yearly and other śrāddhas for her husband with Vedic mantras by some late works, though some purāṇas were against this 259

Wilson, translator of Viṣṇupurāṇa 726, 763

Winternitz, Dr. M., author of 'History of Sanskrit Literature' 646n

Witness, bearing false w. was like drinking surā 72; is promised heaven if he tells the truth but hell if he lies 161; w. telling a falsehood for saving a man from death penalty had to offer a rice oblation to Sarasvatī 144

Woman, even a patita woman was to be given bare maintenance and was not to be cast on the street 105; how



to perform japa for removal of sins 49; Hindu w. succeeding as heir to her husband has a qualified ownership over inherited property, she could alienate validly a small part of her deceased husbands' estate on pilgrimages to Gayā, Pandharpur and some other tīrthas 569; no expiation for killing a woman intentionally, acc. to Viśvarūpa 18; whatever a woman does relating to benefits to be derived by her after death without the permission of her husband or husband's father or her son becomes fruitless 569; who became patita and did not undergo expiation could be excommunicated by process called *Ghaṭasphoṭa* 105

Women, āśauca for married w. in the case of the death of parents or brother or in case they hear of it beyond ten days, within a year or after a year from death or of death of grandfather 278-279; in case of married w. if they were delivered or died at father's house then only the father has to observe āśauca for one or three days, but none otherwise, acc. to Viṣṇu 278; four classes of, that were to be altogether abandoned and not given even starving maintenance 105; guilty of offence liable to death sentence are to be punished with cutting off a limb 80; married w. had to observe āśauca for three days for death of parents or step-mother if ten days had not elapsed from death or for the remaining days out of ten 278; may perform prāṇāyāmas and give gifts as penances in secret 125; of dvija classes guilty of adultery with a śūdra could be purified by a penance if they do not give birth to a child of the intercourse 105; of all varṇas were allowed to drink pañcagavya as remover of sins 142; three acts specially condemned in women, viz. sexual intercourse with

a man of lower varṇa, causing abortion, killing husband 105; rules about uncleanness for women in monthly illness are older than Tai. S. 309; that have adopted heterodox views and practices, that are thieves of gold and the like, that attempt to kill husbands, that are unchaste, that drink liquor or attempt suicide should not be offered water on death and no āśauca should be observed for them 301; tonsure of entire head prescribed for all women at Prayāga by Raghunandana, though others did not agree 603; were regarded as unclean on child birth, the duration of impurity depending on the sex of the child 309

Worlds, of Indra, Prajāpati, Varuṇa, Vāyu and other gods promised in the Upaniṣads 165; three w. 165, 342, 343; three lokas of devas, pitṛs and of worms and creeping beings in the Upaniṣads 188

Yajña, was dharma par excellence in the Brāhmaṇa period 680

Yajñakṛcchra 148

Yajñapātras, cremation of sacrificer with, is *pratipattikarma* of the pātras, 208n; some were either donated or thrown into water on the death of the agnihotrin 208

Yajñasvāmin, 148n

Yājñavalkya-smṛti, 9, 10, 14n, 16, 18, 23, 25, 29 30, 33, 35, 42, 44, 48, 50, 59, 60n, 61, 63, 65, 66, 68, 71, 83, 84, 86n, 88, 99, 101, 103, 105, 106, 107, 108n, 109, 110, 111, 113, 114, 116, 118, 119, 121, 122n, 123, 126, 127n, 128, 133, 135, 143, 145, 152, 161n, 162, 163, 173, 178, 189, 190, 210n, 211, 214, 215, 217n, 218, 220, 223, 225n, 227, 228, 236, 240, 257, 258, 267, 268, 270, 271, 272, 274n, 275, 276n, 277, 280, 281, 282n, 283, 284, 285n, 287, 288n, 290, 292, 294, 303, 305n, 312, 313n, 314, 317, 321, 322, 323, 324n, 325, 331, 334, 335, 336, 339, 350, 359n, 360, 366, 367, 368



- 370n, 371, 372, 374, 375, 377, 381, 385, 387, 392, 403, 407n, 408, 410, 411, 414n, 419, 420, 422n, 423, 435n, 439, 440, 446n, 447n, 448, 449n, 456, 457, 458, 460, 461, 463, 467, 469, 470, 471, 473n, 478, 480, 502, 506n, 512, 516, 519, 521, 523n, 524, 525, 527, 528, 537, 549, 574, 575, 604
- Yajñāyudhas (implements of sacrifice) are ten 168n
- Yājñikadeva, commentator of Kātyāyana-śrautasūtra 206n
- Yajñopavīta, the prācīnāvīta mode of wearing 407
- Yajñopavītin, explained 487n
- Yajurvedi-śrāddhatattva of Raghunādana 486, 504, 509n, 516
- Yājyā (offering prayer), 543 (in jīvat-śrāddha)
- Yama, called king in Ṛgveda 193, 343; Citragupta, chief assistant of, 160; descriptions of the abode of Yama and his assistants in the Purāṇas 160; fierce servants of, drag sinners to various tormenting hells 167; gradually came to be looked upon as a dreadful punisher of men for evil deeds 160, 343; heaven as abode of, in Ṛgveda 156, 342; identified with Mṛtyu even in the Ṛgveda 159; Y. in the Veda 159-160; in jīvat-śrāddha Y. and his servants are gratified 543, 544; is at least Indo-Iranian deity 159; is lord of men and drinks Soma with gods 159; is really a god of the middle region 342; is supposed to allow departed souls and pitṛs to visit the world of men at time of śrāddha 401; is styled king in the Ṛgveda and the gatherer of people 159, 342; is said to have been the first mortal and to have made a way to Heaven 159, 192n; mentioned as a god by himself in Ṛg. X. 135, 343; names of Yama 593, 594n; pitṛs are said to enjoy delight in the company of Y. in Ṛgveda 160; pitṛs called Aṅgīrasas are particularly associated with him 341; son of Vivasvat, the sun and brother of Yamī 159, 192n, 198; soul of departed man was supposed in the Ṛg. to become associated with Yama and pitṛs 342; though Y. is a beneficent god in Ṛgveda and Atharvaveda, there is still an element of fear 159; two dogs of, that are sons of Saramā, guard the way and mark the doings of men 159, 193
- Yama, smṛti of, 19n, 40, 44, 64, 65n, 95, 108, 113, 119, 121, 124, 125n, 131, 133, 139, 140, 142, 147, 148n, 150, 164, 175, 216, 219, 227, 228, 240, 266n, 289n, 313, 324n, 350, 368, 377, 386, 400n, 401, 408, 444, 464, 477, 479, 518n, 525, 575, 590, 669
- Yamagāthās, what are, 227n
- Yamasūkta, Ṛg. X. 14
- Yamas, meaning of 121, 124; to be observed while undergoing expiation 121
- Yāmī verse is Ṛg. X. 14. 4
- Yāmya, a prāyaścitta 149
- Yaudhājapa, a Sāman 132-133
- Yava, boiled and offered to Varuṇa, deemed to be destroyer of taint due to partaking of the food of guilds, harlots, śūdras and others and of other sins 144
- Yavamadhya, variety of Cāndrāyana 135
- Yavanas, 117
- Yāvaka, a prāyaścitta 149
- Yati (ascetic) burial of, from ancient times to modern times 229-231; disposal of the bodies of four kinds of, 229; no cremation is done, nor water offered nor āśauca observed by sons and sapinḍas on death of, 230, 305; on death of, his sapinḍas have simply to undergo a bath and nothing more and a yati and brahmachārī have to observe no āśauca (except a bath) in all cases and at all times 281, 298; paraphernalia of, 229n; procedure of

- rites on death of, 229-230; procedure added by the Nirṇayasindhu and Dharmasindhu 230; reason why yatis were buried and not cremated 231
- Yaticāndrāyaṇa 149
- Yatisāntapana 149
- Year, beginning of, in very ancient times 354
- Yima (Yama) in Parsi scriptures 192n
- Yogas, 27 in a month, 383n
- Yogasūtra, 22, 50, 176, 311, 352; bhāṣya on 352
- Yogayājñavalkya or Yogi-Yāj. 134n, 140n, 243n, 324, 473n
- Yogin, superior to 100 brāhmaṇas and so should be invited at a śrāddha for dinner 388, 398-399
- Yojana, extent of 92, 286, 590n, 628
- Yuga 164
- Yugādi tithis, what are 374, 636n
- Zoroastrianism, idea of hells in 165; regards burial of a human body in the earth as a grave sin 231n
- Zoroastrians, disposed of the dead by exposure of dead bodies to vultures and other birds 231n

INDEX OF IMPORTANT WORDS

- | | |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <p>Abhicāra 35
 Abhidroha 5
 Abhisasta 13
 Abhivānyā 426n
 Ābhyudayikaśrāddha 359n
 Ācārya, 281n
 Ādhāna 574n
 Ādya (śrāddha) 518n
 Āgas 5-6
 Agha (sin) 6
 Agha (āśauca) 267-268
 Agniśvāta 195n, 343
 Agradidhiṣu 11
 Agredidhiṣu 11n, 394n
 Āgrabhāyaṇi 354
 Āhāva 503n
 Akalkaka 562n
 Ākṛtidabana 225
 Akṣayyodaka 508n
 Āmantrana 408
 Amātya 199n
 Amhas 6
 Amhati 7
 Anādya 402n
 Anāśaka 42
 Anavasthā 61n
 Anṛta 5, 7
 Anugrābaka 17
 Anukalpa 387, 513
 Anupātaka 15
 Anustaraṇi 206
 Apāṅkteya 391
 Aparāhṇa 376
 Apośana 496n
 Āprīta 315n
 Aratni 470n
 Arghya 419, 435n
 Aranyāni 561n
 Ārūḍhapatita 114
 Āśaucasampāta or āśauca-sannipāta 292
 Āsmā 238
 Aṣṭakā 354n
 Āśucikara 12, 14
 Asutrpa 193n</p> | <p>Ātatāyin 19
 Ātivāhika 160n, 265
 Atideśa 95
 Atithi 396
 Ātreya 13
 Āturasannyāsa 185
 Atyantopahata 315n
 Audumbara 73n
 Avakīrṇin 112
 Avibhaktadāyā 365-366
 Barhiṣad 343
 Bijin 536n
 Brahmabandhu 400n
 Brahmamedha 228n, 254
 Brāhmaṇabruva 270n
 Brāhmaṇāgrya 400n
 Brahmodya 464n
 Bhrūna 11n
 Caityavṛkṣa 115, 332
 Cāṭa 263
 Cāndrāyana 134
 Caturhotārah 230
 Citi 115, 332
 Citrikaraṇa 706n
 Daṇḍakalita 145
 Darbha 417n
 Dauhitra 376n, 413n
 Deśāntara 285
 Dhruvaśrāddha 517
 Didhiṣu or—ṣu 11n, 394n
 Didhiṣupati 11n
 Dimbāhava 305n
 Drugdha 5
 Durbrāhmaṇa 399n
 Durita 7
 Duṣkṛta 7
 Ekāha 295
 Ekoddiṣṭa 380
 Enas 5-6
 Enasvin 13
 Gajacchāyā 371n
 Gavyūti 590n
 Ghaṭasphoṭa 105</p> |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|

Ghoṣasānti 178
 Goṣṭhīśrāddha 381-382
 Gotraja 266n
 Guru 24
 Gurutalpaga 23
 Hatyā 17
 Haviṣya 149
 Hiranyaprāśana 49n
 Iṣṭāpūrta 193
 Jartila 419n
 Juṅgita 105n
 Kāmya 60n, 369-370
 Kāṇḍānusamaya 442n
 Kāpālika 395
 Karmavipāka 172-173, 176
 Kārpatīveśa 573n
 Karṣūsamānvita 473n
 Kauravya 681n
 Kṛcchra 145
 Kriyā 261
 Kṣettrī 536n
 Kumbhīpāka 163
 Kūrca 491n
 Kutapa 376-377, 413n
 Lepabhājah 483
 Loka 165
 Loṣṭaciti 251
 Madhūni, 45n
 Madhyama (kriyā) 261
 Māghyāvarṣa 360
 Mantha 426n
 Manvādi 375
 Mārjana 120, 133
 Mātarah 529
 Maukha 27n
 Mekṣaṇa 443n
 Mūlakarma 35
 Nagna 395
 Nagnapracchādāna 220
 Naimittika 60n, 369
 Nalada 202, 203n
 Nāndī 528n
 Nāndīmukha 359n
 Napāt 347n
 Navamiśra 262-63, 517
 Navasrāddha 262-63, 517
 Nilavṛṣa 540n

Nimantraṇa 408
 Nimittin 18
 Nirākṛti 394n
 Nirgrantha 395
 Nirhāra 289n
 Nirmālya 418
 Nirmanthya 226
 Niśāda 174
 Niskraya 40n
 Nitya 60n, 369
 Niyama 121
 Padārthānusamaya 442n
 Pākayajña 112n
 Pakṣiṇī 278n
 Pañcajanāḥ 344n
 Pañcāmṛtasnāna 364n
 Pāpa 8
 Parāvartana 118
 Paridhi 199n
 Paridhikarma 244
 Parisamūhana 213
 Paristarāṇa 213
 Parivedana 33
 Parivinna 11n, 12
 Parivitta 11n
 Parivividāna 11n, 12
 Parṣad 86
 Pārvaṇa 380
 Paryāhita 12
 Paryukṣaṇa 213
 Pāta 275
 Pātaka 1, 10
 Pataniya 10, 12
 Pātheyasrāddha 219
 Pāvamānī 45
 Pavitra 440n
 Pindānvāhārayaka 362n
 Pipilikāmadhya 135
 Piṭṛmedha 228n, 254
 Piṭṛtīrtha 435n
 Piṭṛyajña 201
 Prājāpatya 145
 Pranapāt 347n
 Prāsāṅgika 15
 Prasava 275
 Prāśitraharaṇa 207n
 Prasṛtiyāvaka 143
 Prasūti 275

- Pratipattikarma 208n, 334n
 Pratyavasita 95, 113
 Prāyaścitta 57-60
 Prāyaścitti 57
 Preta 523
 Pṛṣadājya 292, 205, 527n,
 Pūm-ṣoḍaśī 673
 Pulkasa 174
 Pūraka-piṇḍa 262
 Pūrva (kriyā) 261
 Puronuvākya 543n
 Puṣkaraka 255
 Puṣṭiśrāddha 382
 Putra 161
 Ratni 417n
 Rta 2
 Rtvik 281n
 Sadyaḥ-sauca 295-296
 Sajyotiḥ 282n
 Sakulya 366
 Sallekhanā 612n
 Samānodaka 260n
 Sampradāna 460n
 Samsrava 447n
 Samsthājapa 494
 Sāmyoḥ 194n
 Sañcayana 240
 Saṅgava 376
 Sankalpavidhi 532
 Sāntapana 225n
 Satya 4, 5
 Śāvāsauca 269
 Sesas 196n
 Smaśāna 205n, 247n,
 Ṣoḍaśīkarma 672
 Śparsakāla 372
 Sprṣṭāsprṣṭi 332
 Śraddhā 352
 Śrāddhika, śrāddhin 352, 410n
 Śrat 352
 Srauva 27n
 Srāva 275
 Śrottriya 384n
 Steya 22, 23
 Stottriya 202n
 Striṣoḍaśī 673
 Śuddhavatī 48
 Śuddhi 118, 267
 Śumbala, 225n
 Sūryābhinimrukta 11
 Sūryābhyudita 11
 Sūtaka 269
 Suvarṇa 23
 Svarga 169-170
 Svasthānavivṛddhi 145
 Svaśurya 281n
 Tantra 440n, 445n
 Tantu 269
 Tapas 42-43
 Tata 347n
 Thaka 115n
 Tīrtha 202n, 554
 Trikadruka 194n
 Triṇāciketah 384n
 Trisuparṇah 384n
 Tugvan 554
 Turuṣkadanḍa 572n
 Upasparśa 114n
 Ūha 514n
 Upavāsa 52-53
 Upavasatha 54
 Utkrānti-dhenu 183
 Utpavana 330n
 Uttapanā ni 227n
 Uttara (kr yā) 261
 Vadha 17
 Vādhriṇasa 355
 Vaitaraṇī cow) 183
 Vapana 122
 Vāpana 318n
 Varṇasaṅkara 288
 Vardhrāṇasa or Vardhrīṇasa 422n
 Veṇa 115, 174
 Vibhaktadāyāda 366
 Vikira 484, 500, 507n
 Vīrahan 11, 155
 Viśamaśrāddha 263
 Viṣṭara 440n
 Vratatopa 112
 Vratodyāpana 183
 Vratya 33, 111, 222
 Vratyatā 111

Vṛddhiśrāddha 359n

Vṛjina 6-7

Vṛṣali 104n, 394n

Vṛtra-śaṅku 250n

Vyāma 205n

Vyatīpāta 371n

Yājñyā 543n

Yama 121

Yātaniya 160n, 266

Yauna 27n

Yavamadhya 135

Yāyāvara 571n

Yugādi 374





Bhandarkar Oriental
Research Institute

